

# ZHAN LONG

THE GRANDMASTER



# Zhan Long

**The Grandmaster**

**Author: Shi Luo Ye**

**Translate: [Gravity Translations](#)**

**Epub: [Henkanepubs](#)**

# Table of Contents

[Zhan Long](#)

[Chapter 501 The First Wave](#)

[Chapter 502 To and From](#)

[Chapter 503 Numb to Killing](#)

[Chapter 504 The Three Guilds Ally Together Again](#)

[Chapter 505 Facing Death God Arrows Again!](#)

[Chapter 506 \[Vanguard\]'s Goal](#)

[Chapter 507 The Knights Templar](#)

[Chapter 508 Reckless Soldier](#)

[Chapter 509 Crushing the Ambush](#)

[Chapter 510 Incomparable Confidence](#)

[Chapter 511 The Sacrifice for Justice](#)

[Chapter 512 Sad News](#)

[Chapter 514 A True Bro](#)

[Chapter 513 Guarding Green Qilin Abyss](#)

[Chapter 515 Death by Stoning](#)

[Chapter 516 A Crow Drinking Water](#)

[Chapter 517 Come at me!](#)

[Chapter 518 Joining Forces](#)

[Chapter 519 Determined to Break In](#)

[Chapter 520 Rhino Cavalry](#)

[Chapter 521 Use Your Best Men for Battles of Power](#)

[Chapter 522 The Three Man Rear](#)

[Chapter 523 Mine](#)

[Chapter 524 A Battle of Words](#)

[Chapter 525 Dragon's Den Reborn](#)

[Chapter 526 Power of a Hundred](#)

[Chapter 527 Slaughtering the Slave Owner](#)

[Chapter 528 Zhen Yue Sword](#)

[Chapter 529 Qin Dan](#)

[Chapter 530 New Storyline](#)

[Chapter 531 Ten Thousand Man Quest](#)

[Chapter 532 Climbing the Mountain](#)

[Chapter 533 Level 1 Hybrid Demon](#)

[Chapter 534 Earth Demons](#)

[Chapter 535 The True Red Blade](#)

[Chapter 536 King of the Barbarians](#)

[Chapter 537 Demon Heart Necklace](#)

[Chapter 538 Hell's Battlesong – Lin Han](#)

[Chapter 539 Crushing an Ant](#)

[Chapter 540 The Rebirth of Despair](#)

[Chapter 541 Frost's Tears](#)

[Chapter 542 Dark Moon Elves](#)

[Chapter 543 Cleansing Rain](#)

[Chapter 544 The Tang Family Head](#)

[Chapter 545 Li Meng Yao](#)

[Chapter 546 The Nouveau Riche Gold Model](#)

[Chapter 547 For the Fame!](#)

[Chapter 549 The Fire Beacon](#)

[Chapter 550 Grave Digger Demon](#)

[Chapter 551 A Successful Defense](#)

[Chapter 552 I stand while my City Stands](#)

[Chapter 553 Demon's Shadow](#)

[Chapter 554 Death God's Elegy](#)

[Chapter 555 Wind Ripper](#)

[Chapter 556 Fire God's Shield](#)

[Chapter 557 Mushroom Demons](#)

[Chapter 558 Wu Ji](#)

[Chapter 559 Thousand Man Slash](#)

[Chapter 560 Successful Fifth Advancement](#)

[Chapter 561 Heavenly Tier Level 1](#)

[Chapter 562 Surprise Attack](#)

[Chapter 563 Hellhounds](#)

[Chapter 564 Getting Senile](#)

[Chapter 565 Forest Giants](#)

[Chapter 566 The Terminator](#)

[Chapter 567 Shuddering Earth, Swaying Mountains](#)

[Chapter 568 Wintry Clothes of a Minstrel](#)

[Chapter 569 For My Ratings](#)

[Chapter 570 Despair Again](#)

[Chapter 571 The Power of the Strongest Sword Saint](#)

[Chapter 572 Cursed Weapon](#)

[Chapter 573 Fantastical Beast Armor](#)

[Chapter 574 Luo Lin's Transformation](#)

[Chapter 575 Bloody Holy Domain](#)

[Chapter 576 Heavenly Flame Tiger](#)

[Chapter 577 Dragon Turtle Armor](#)

[Chapter 578 Ancient Heavenly Tiger](#)

[Chapter 579 Who to Trust](#)

[Chapter 580 Battle's Silence](#)

[Chapter 581 Flying Scythe War Horse](#)

[Chapter 582 Goodbye Forever](#)

[Chapter 583 Thundering Heavens](#)

[Chapter 584 The Future of Dragon City](#)

[Chapter 585 Herb Picker](#)

[Chapter 586 Odelia](#)

[Chapter 587 Poison Dragon Bait](#)

[Chapter 588 Dragon God Essence](#)

[Chapter 589 Dragon Spit Pill](#)

[Chapter 490 The Red Dragon Queen](#)

[Chapter 591 The Stormy Abyss](#)

[Chapter 592 Lanais](#)

[Chapter 593 If You Love Me then Please Give Me Money](#)

[Chapter 594 A Chase by an Absolute Force](#)

[Chapter 595 \[The Lament of the Gods\]](#)

[Chapter 596 Kill the Gods and Destroy the Demons](#)

[Chapter 597 Blade of Hell](#)

[Chapter 598 Body of a Virgin](#)

[Chapter 599 A Single Wish](#)

[Chapter 600 Superior God](#)

[Chapter 601 The Power of a Superior God](#)

[Chapter 602 \[Grip of the Sealed God\]](#)

[Chapter 603 A Period of Living Together](#)

[Chapter 604 Leaving a Window Open For You](#)

[Chapter 605 A Dick Headed Bird](#)

[Chapter 606 Hercules](#)

[Chapter 607 Hero's Wings](#)

[Chapter 608 Ming Jun](#)

[Chapter 609 Hidden Dragon Armor](#)

[Chapter 610 Thousand League Moonlight](#)

[Chapter 611 I Am a General of Shu](#)

[Chapter 612 A Life Long Friend](#)

[Chapter 613 No Retreat](#)

[Chapter 614 Rising Dragon Shot](#)

[Chapter 615 Qin Wen](#)

[Chapter 616 Hero's Meet](#)

[Chapter 617 Living in the Martial World](#)

[Chapter 618 Journey to Tian Ling City](#)

[Chapter 619 Earth Dragon Canyon](#)

[Chapter 620 Fire Qilin Halberd](#)

[Chapter 621-Beautiful Lady Dragon](#)

[Chapter 622 - Yuan Rong Combat Boots](#)

[Chapter 623 Magic Dragon's Nest](#)

[Chapter 624 Dragon Crystal](#)

[Chapter 625 Hilbert](#)

[Chapter 626 Nation Suppressing Sword](#)

[Chapter 627 - The Taste of Defeat](#)

[Chapter 628 The Brilliance of the Pulse Break Style](#)

[Chapter 629 Qualified Girlfriend](#)

[Chapter 630 Autonomous Team](#)

[Chapter 631 Pangu Abyss](#)

[Chapter 632 No Entrance](#)

[Chapter 633 Successful Skill Break](#)

[Chapter 634 - Strength of Li You](#)

[Chapter 635 Pig Gets the Good Food](#)

[Chapter 636 Reincarnation Slash](#)

[Chapter 637 Enchanted Painting](#)

[Chapter 638 Killing the BOSS with Zero Damage](#)

[Chapter 639 - Chi You Horsemen](#)

[Chapter 640 Combat of Chi You](#)

[Chapter 641 The Startling Skill Break](#)

[Chapter 642 Hand of Hell](#)

[Chapter 643 Brilliant Fire Emperor](#)

[Chapter 644 - A Duel Between Experts](#)

[Chapter 645 Retrieving Some Face](#)

[Chapter 646 Intimate Experience](#)

[Chapter 647 - Absolute Tyrant Under Heaven](#)

[Chapter 648 Martyr For the Ages](#)

[Chapter 649 - Simple Violence](#)

[Chapter 650 Dawn of Puragtory](#)

[Chapter 651 \[Ice Domain\]'s Weakness](#)

[Chapter 652 Training the Soldiers for Battle](#)

[Chapter 653 - Star Scar](#)



[Chapter 654 - Miss, Please have more modesty](#)

[Chapter 655 - The Tyrannial 10:0](#)

[Chapter 656 - Slaying Xiang Yan](#)

[Chapter 657 - Team Li Mu's Defeat](#)

[Chapter 658 Turn into a Kiss\\*ss](#)

[Chapter 659 - Fighting Gong Zi Ying](#)

[Chapter 660 - Four out of Eight](#)

[Chapter 661 - Spring of Spirit Ruins](#)

[Chapter 662 - A Tactic for Defeat](#)

[Chapter 663 - A Fight of a Million Dollars](#)

[Chapter 664 - Revenge](#)

[Chapter 665 - Semifinals](#)

[Chapter 666 - Simple's Taunt](#)

[Chapter 667 - The Final Three](#)

[Chapter 668 - Another Tactical Battle](#)

[Chapter 669 - Brutal Battle](#)

[Chapter 670 - 1v4](#)

[Chapter 671 - A Step Away](#)

[Chapter 672 - Hatred of Marriage](#)

[Chapter 674 - Mission Failed](#)

[Chapter 675 - Scapegoat](#)

[Chapter 676 - Precious Blood Markings](#)

[Chapter 677 - A Night in Her Embrace](#)

[Chapter 678 - Greedy Wolf Brigade](#)

[Chapter 680 - Rebound](#)

[Chapter 680 - Firewolf Valley](#)

[Chapter 681 - Fiery Greedwolf](#)

[Chapter 682 - Secret Troops](#)

[Chapter 683 - Magma Falls Mountain Range](#)

[Chapter 684 Battle of Magma Falls](#)

[Chapter 685 - The Shamelessness of \[House of Prestige\]](#)

[Chapter 686 - Iron Blade Mountain](#)

[Chapter 687 - You're Mine!](#)

[Chapter 687 - The Birth of the Steel Blade Mount](#)

[Chapter 689 - A Call from Mu Rong Jun](#)

[Chapter 690 - Three Thousand Elite Troops](#)

[Chapter 691 - "Call Me Master"](#)

[Chapter 692 - Courageous Victory](#)

[Chapter 693 - Wang Ze Cheng's Rage](#)

[Chapter 694 - Training](#)

[Chapter 695 - New Quest](#)

[Chapter 696 - Entering the Dragon Territory Again](#)

[Chapter 697 - The Red Elder Dragon](#)

[Chapter 698 - King Level Robber](#)

[Chapter 699 - Proof of Marriage](#)

[Chapter 700 - Invincible Body](#)

[Chapter 701 - Like A Fierce Flame](#)

[Chapter 702 - Fishing](#)

[Chapter 703 - A Group of Maniacs](#)

[Chapter 704 - The Wolf Brigade's Violent Battle](#)

[Chapter 705 - Strike of the Deep Freeze Cavalry](#)

[Chapter 706 - The Evolution of \[Turmoil Sword\]](#)

[Chapter 707 - Earth Bane Ox](#)

[Chapter 708 - Broken Blade Canyon](#)

[Chapter 709 - War God River](#)

[Chapter 710 - Enemy from Afar](#)

[Chapter 711 - A Champion from Another Country](#)

[Chapter 712 - Honor for the Country](#)

[Chapter 713 - General Appointment Stage](#)

[Chapter 714 - The Crown Prince's Rule](#)

[Chapter 715 - Drunken Spear's Provocation](#)

[Chapter 716 - Top Bow Maker](#)

[Chapter 717 - I Won't Miss You](#)

[Chapter 718 - Blood Demon Forest](#)

[Chapter 719 - Black Flame Set](#)

[Chapter 720 Good Walks, Evil Leaps](#)

[Chapter 721 - Verdant Pear](#)

[Chapter 722 - Abuse of Power](#)

[Chapter 723 - So Scared!](#)

[Chapter 725 Who's the Scumbag!?](#)

[Chapter 726 - Provoking the Wrong Man](#)

[Chapter 727 - Compromise](#)

[Chapter 728 - Twenty Horsemen from \[Zhan Long\]](#)

[Chapter 729 - Arriving at Moon City](#)

[Chapter 730 - Bad News](#)

[Chapter 731 - The Hand of Waterloo](#)

[Chapter 732 - Rubble Forest](#)

[Chapter 733 - Stone Tigers](#)

[Chapter 734 - Holy Dragon Cauldron](#)

[Chapter 736 - Defeat the Many with the Few](#)

[Chapter 737 - Losing A Treasure to Carelessness](#)

[Chapter 738 - Shield of the Prideful](#)

[Chapter 739 - Zhen Yue Blade](#)

[Chapter 740 - Frost Forest](#)

[Chapter 741 - Desert Chase](#)

[Chapter 742 - Millennial Dynasty](#)

[Chapter 743 - Caught off Guard](#)

[Chapter 744 - The Treasure Blade is Mine!](#)

[Chapter 745 - New Attack Style](#)

[Chapter 746 - Media Company](#)

[Chapter 747 - Internship](#)

[Chapter 748 - Flame Hawk Archers](#)

# Chapter 501 The First Wave

“Earth to you all, hurry up and enter Green Qilin Valley!” I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword.

Wang Jian, Li Mu, and Wan Er all nodded and began to usher everyone forward. Dancing Forest, Dong Cheng, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands, Lian Po and Fox took around 500 people to bring up the rear. All of [Zhan Long]’s top tier players were at the rear, so that the enemy players behind us wouldn’t be so quick to chase after us.

We sprinted for 10 minutes and finally crossed the borders of Green Qilin Valley. The originally green and fertile ground was replaced by a collapsed valley floor. Standing on the border of Green Qilin Valley, I could see a steep rocky hill around 10 meters below me. This kind of terrain made it impossible to bring cavalymen to the battle. Furthermore, it also made it so that it would be impossible for a large army to try and overwhelm us. In addition, our [Zhan Long] players were familiar with the area, and could easily create our own unique formations that complemented the terrain. You could just imagine the possibilities and advantages we had now that we were in Green Qilin Valley.

.....

I leapt up and pierced my sword into the cliff to slide down the side. Li Mu and Wang Jian also brought people down with them. Before us, there was already a group of [Zhan Long] players waiting for us. Now with the main guild, the defense guild, and a few divisions, we had over 20,000 players online, ready to battle. Against such a strong [Zhan Long], killing us wouldn’t be so easy anymore.

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and pointed forward. “Over there is the Green Qilin Abyss, and it is very deep. Chi Yu Han, why don’t you take Chi Yu Qing and go in there to take shelter? When I and my brothers really can’t hold off the enemy any longer, then we’ll retreat and find a new place to hide ourselves. The command only lasts for 24 hours. As long as we can stick through those 24 hours, we’ll have won!”

Chi Yu Han tightened his grip on his Heaven's Spite sword, and his eyes were filled with a desire for battle, "No, let me fight alongside you. I can already feel that at least 10% of my strength has recovered!"

I shook my head, "No, it's too dangerous. I gathered together such a large force for the sake of protecting you. If anything were to happen to you, I don't even want to know what the consequences are. Besides, Chi Yu Qing is too frail right now, you have to be by her side and protect her. You must understand that right now, there's just too many people out there that want to kill you. Everyone in Ba Huang City, including adventurers and bounty hunters, they all want to take your and Chi Yu Qing's head."

Chi Yu Han gritted his teeth and nodded, "Alright, I understand. I will take Yu Qing and find shelter in the Green Qilin Abyss. You guys must be careful, you have to come back to us alive!"

"Yes!"

Chi Yu Han reached out and picked up Chi Yu Qing, and then disappeared into the thorny brush. Feeling a weight lift off my shoulder, I reached out behind my back and pulled out my Cold Iron Sword. With a sword in each hand, I was ready for battle!

.....

Glancing through my friends list, I found Han Bei Song's name and sent out a message, "You understand [Zhan Long]'s dangerous situation!"

Han Bei Song quickly replied, "Naturally, I do. [Blood Contract] has 14,000 players who are all meeting together in the Magic Tracking Forest. I will then create a line of defense for you guys on the western side of Green Qilin Valley. Not even a fly will get through there. Also, Misty Clouds has already started acting, and the 24,000 [Enemies at the Gate] players have created a defensive line on the eastern side. He and I have talked it over and decided that we wouldn't join any army, so we won't have red names. Those small guilds wouldn't dare touch us at random. The main attack you will get is from your southern side. You will soon take more pressure than any normal pressure can take, so good luck.... I don't even know, just what kind of trouble you have gotten yourself into....."

I smiled. “What I have promised, I will keep to it for life...”

Han Bei Song seemed relieved, “Haha, I got it. This is kinda like when I met Li Xiao Yao for the first time. No matter what you have done to anger Luo Lei, even if you had “Pa pa pa pa” with his precious daughter Angela, brother I will help you. For love, right!?”

I was speechless. Finally I said, “I wouldn’t have the courage to do that to Angela. I’m just defending a promise that I made to a main quest BOSS. Thank you all. If the battle ends up in our favor, then [Blood Contract] should join Chi Yu Han’s battle camp. That way you’ll be able to get the battle points, and it wouldn’t seem as though you had wasted all your efforts for nothing.”

“Understood. Let’s just watch out for each others backs for now. Don’t worry about the northern side of Green Qilin Valley. [Enemies at the Gate] and [Blood Contract] will be watching over it. There shouldn’t be any problems.”

“Great!”

.....

I raised my sword and walked towards the southernmost side of the Green Qilin Valley. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Matcha, and One Second Hero all helped create the front line of the formation. There was around 100 meters between us and the steep hill. They had chosen a good position. This way, we would be on a flat land, while the enemy would have to struggle on the rocks and thorns while taking fire from [Zhan Long].

Wan Er’s Purple Kirin Dragon spiraled in the sky and roared. That dragon seemed to have become a symbol of our guild, after all, few Ba Huang City camps have dragons. I didn’t specifically ask, but I can imagine that for the sake of this dragon, Wan Er and Dong Cheng must have spent a lot of effort to get it.

“Keng!”

I leaned my Dragon Reservoir Sword on the side of the cliff as I stood at the front of the formation. I looked at the distant hill and said, “Who knows which guild will be the first to come hit us.”

“No matter which guild, it’ll probably just be trash...” Wan Er smiled. “Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao Warrior aren’t stupid enough as to be the first to attack

[Zhan Long]....”

I looked at the time and took a deep breath, “There’s still 22 hours... this battle has only just begun!”

Dong Cheng flew up in the air and looked into the distance, “They’re here!”

“Who?!”

“You’ll see!”

Just as she said that, I saw on top of the cliff of Green Qilin Valley, a group of people were charging towards us. It wasn’t just one guild, but a combination of two guilds, [Thousand Burial]+[Valley of the Gods]. God knows how these two guilds got together. Lu Dong Bing had a Guild Master insignia on his shoulder. He raised his staff and smiled. “Such a big formation from [Zhan Long]! There has to be at least 10,000 people there welcoming our attack. Guild Master Ordinary, do you have faith that we will be able to crush them!”

Not Ordinary raised his battle axe, his eyes held a chilling gaze, “We [Thousand Burial] have over 13,000 players online, while you have over 11,000 players. Xiao Yao has but 10,000 players in that valley. Even though [Zhan Long] is talented, that doesn’t mean that just one of them can hold off ten right? Besides, our goal isn’t to crush [Zhan Long]. We just have to kill most of them. The more players we kill, the higher chance we have of getting the legendary Saint Tier equipment from the system as a reward! Rumor has it... that the Saint Tier equipment that the system would reward us is better than any Saint Tier that a BOSS would drop. There’s more than a 70% chance that the equipment will have a special skill. This is a great opportunity for us. Goddamn, I don’t have even a single piece of Saint Tier equipment on me....”

Lu Dong bing narrowed his eyes, “But, I feel like [Zhan Long] had displayed its strength at the city battle and the camp battle. They truly do wield the strength to overcome any obstacle that comes at them. The ability for one player to defend against ten isn’t that strange. Are you actually sure that the 24,000 players that we have are enough to crush their 10,000?”

Not Ordinary smiled. “What are you worried about, it’s all in our hands!”

“Alright....”



I held my hand up and looked over at the distant Not Ordinary and Lu Dong Bing and smiled. I then shouted, “If you want to fight us, then fight. Stop wasting your breath. My brothers are itching to fight....”

You Yi gave a cold grunt, “Why so arrogant. You’re just hiding behind your godly armor. Go cut down Xiao Yao that bastard!”

Bai Mo Yan grinned, “Really? All males who just know how to talk bad about others are the true ones who have no skill. I, however, have yet to hear Xiao Yao Zi Zai say anything like ‘If something, then I’ll something’, he usually does as he act....”

You Yi scratched his nose, “Sister Mo Mo, why don’t I understand what you’re saying, do you not love me?”

Bai Mo Yan stuck her chest out and raised her long bow and glared into You Yi’s eyes, “Love you? What do you have to make me feel that way? Is your bow even as big as this bow’s string? If so, then I’ll love you!”

You Yi was speechless.

Bai Mo Yan fell into silence for a few seconds and I received a message from her, “Yo, young one, don’t underestimate this first wave of attacks. Not Ordinary and Lu Dong Bing aren’t idiots, they won’t let [Zhan Long] get too much sweetness. Beside the 24,000 that you see, right behind us, Ba Huang City’s Fierce Tiger Army has created a flying cavalry. They might launch an attack while we’re fighting. At that point, you’ll be facing an attack from the sky and the ground. Make sure you prepare yourselves!”

I couldn’t help but gasp. I turned around and looked at Wan Er and said, “If we end up getting attacked from both the sky and ground, how should we deal with them?”

Wan Er’s clever eyes darted around and she fluttered her eyes a bit before saying, “Looks like the NPC Sky Cavalrymen are going to launch their attack, right?”

“Yup!” I gave a slow nod.

Wan Er bit her lip and thought about it for a second before saying, “That’s easy, we’ll just push our Archer camp forward 20 yards and have them set their

targets to their air. After that, we'll have them retreat and drag the aggro back. This way, the Sky Cavalrymen will appear within our range of attack. At that moment, we'll have our heavy armor's use [Flying Sword] and [Battle Axe Throw] to draw the aggro to themselves. The Mages and Musketeers in the back would then activate their area attacks. The Musketeers especially have to concentrate their fire in the sky, they have better damage dealing when shooting a target in the air. This way, we should be able to deal with them."

I broke into a grin and walked over and gave a soft hug to Wan Er and then smiled into her ear and softly said, "Wan Er, having you in [Zhan Long] really is good..."

That short 3 second intimate action left our little miss blushing all the way to her ears. Even when I had turned around to prepare for battle, she was still standing there, blushing. Dong Cheng softly smiled. "Are you feeling really lucky now?"

Wan Er looked up from her shoes and didn't seem to know what to say. Finally she cried out, "Wu wu, hurry up and prepare for battle.... Little Dance, Tang Xue, come here and listen to our battle plans...."

.....

Finally, after ten minutes, [Thousand Burial] and [Valley of the Gods] were unable to hold back.

"Shua!"

Not Ordinary swung his battle axe over his head and yelled, "[Thousand Burial], begin your attack! Our target—— the [Zhan Long] battle camp. Push forward step by step, and don't go too fast! Let's crush these arrogant bastards!"

# Chapter 502 To and From

“Prepare for battle!”

Li Mu suddenly pulled out his sword, Tian Chen. “Keng keng keng” the rest of [Zhan Long] pulled out their weapons. One after another, these swords and battleaxes started to glow as they readied their skills. [Zhan Long] didn’t just have above average battle power, we also had 120 warriors that were equipped with Garrison Outfits. All of them were elite warriors with over 10,000 health, 4,000 defense, and 5,000 attack. They were our best chance at protecting Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing!

“Ji ji ji....”

Behind us, I could hear our Archers pulling back their bowstrings, increasing the tension in the air, while we waited for our target to enter firing range.

On the hill, Not Ordinary and Lu Dong Bing both led their guilds in a frontal charge. All of their players raised their battle axes and long swords and started off with high morale. However, once they hit the uneven terrain, several players who didn’t have a good sense of balance ended up falling and rolling down the hill. By the time they hit even ground, they were already within 40 yards of us.

Dancing Forest let loose an arrow, “Open fire!”

“Sou sou sou....”

Countless arrows flew right into the enemy lines. “Keng keng keng”, it pierced through their armor. One after another, [Thousand Burial] and [Valley of the Gods] players were made into pincushions. Rays of white light shot into the sky and in the blink of an eye, over a hundred people had been killed by the volley of arrows. Not Ordinary was dumbfounded, “F\*ck, what kind of attack power is that? All Knights, activate [Heavenly Shield Wall]! When the distance is right, use [Fierce Ram] to break through their defensive formation!”

[Fierce Ram] was a skill that used a ram type of attack on any target within 10 yards. This skill has a 70% chance of interrupting a skill. To use this skill for the sake of rushing through a defense was too wasteful. As for [Heavenly Shield

Wall], that was just a skill that could increase physical defense.

“[Heavenly Shield Wall], will that work?”

Dong Cheng Yue stood behind me and grinned. She raised her Mage staff and cast a [Magma Abyss] into the enemy formation. The red hot magma flames burned all of the Knights of [Thousand Burial]. Magic attacks were unaffected by physical defense. In the blink of an eye, a whole crowd of Knights ended up with critical health. With another [Magma Lance], the crimson magma rocks broke through the ground with a “Pa Pa” and all of those Knights with critical health fell to their knees. Dong Cheng Yue then opened her hand and lightning flashed between her fingers. She didn’t give the enemy a single chance to recover, and those Knights who used [Cleansing Wind] to save themselves from the first attack, died under this next attack!

“Pa ts!”

Lightning shot through the crowd, invoking agonizing screams. For Dong Cheng Yue, this killing machine, to join our [Zhan Long] was an incredible help. Thousand Suns over Snowy lands lead a group of Mages to deal damage. Hundreds of [Magma Abyss]s locked onto the enemy lines and activated, killing several hundred heavy armor players.

“Shua shua...”

Quite a few Knights had gulped down a potion and managed to survive and fight their way through the fire. When they were within 10 yards of us, they all activated [Fierce Ram] and charged right for us!

“Sha sha....”

I slightly bent my knees, preparing for my chance to attack. I then swung both my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Cold Iron Sword and spun around. Spinning twice, both of my swords sliced through everything in my range. “Peng peng” I blew away 7 Knights who were in the middle of [Fierce Ram]. With my understanding of sword based skills, it was extremely easy to figure out the best way to interrupt [Fierce Ram].

Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K all charged forward with their own skills. After a few days of training, all of the players that had lost 10 levels more or less had

recovered their strength again. Furthermore, their equipment was still top tier, losing a few levels was nothing.

Wan Er raised her Dragon's Kiss daggers and walked up to the frontline. She crossed the two daggers and killed a Knight with a single blow. However, she then caught the attention of a few other Berserkers. One of them was a Barbarian with a hairy chest. He raised his battle axe and shouted, "F\*ck, Cang Tong has appeared! Brothers, follow me! Let us kill Fan Shu City's number one goddess!"

"Vice Guild Master, be careful!" One Second Hero quickly cautioned.

Wan Er glanced at me and said, "Don't come over, I can deal with them!"

As she finished talking, Wan Er advanced forward without hesitating. "Keng!" Her Dragon's Kiss dagger parried the blow from the Barbarians battle axe. Her other dagger then flashed from her hip and hit the Barbarian directly in the stomach, letting fresh blood spurt out. She then spun around with her Dragon's Kiss and threw a [Blade of the Death God], killing a Berserker in three blows. Drops of blood dripped onto her snow white cloak, but our little miss didn't seem to care. Instead, she lunged forward and thrust her Dragon's Kiss dagger. "Pu Chi!" She killed a half health Knight in one stab. She then turned around and jumped, kicking another Berserker who tried to use [Skyshaker Slash] on her. She threw out her Dragon's Kiss and activated [Flying Dagger]+ [Ice Pick Whirlpool]. "Hong!" She instantly killed all of the [Thousand Burial] heavy armor players that surrounded her.

One Second Hero was stupefied and his jaw dropped. He would never underestimate Wan Er the Assassin. With such an enormous explosive power, and her superb mobility, the beautiful little miss wasn't just a pretty face but even more so a goddess of —Cang Tong, ranked 6th on CBN's Battlenet List. This ranking didn't come from her beauty, but rather her skill and talent.

Old K began to roar and he threw a [Whirlwind Slash] into the enemy crowd. In one explosive attack, it cleared out a whole crowd of people. I followed the attack with a [Sword Tempest], while Wang Jian activated [Halberd Whirlwind]. In the blink of an eye, the lights from three blade skills flashed over [Zhan Long]'s formation and blew away the enemy troops. The sight made it such that

Lu Dong Bing and the others all wanted to die.

Even though [Zhan Long]’s frontlines were strong, there were just too many enemies. Very soon, a large number of [Thousand Burial] and [Valley of the Gods] players all rushed into our frontline, and our swords began to clash. We still held the advantage with the shape of our formation, since our Archers, Musketeers, and Mages were completely protected, while the enemy, on the other hand, didn’t have a complete formation while they charged, leaving the heavy armor players vulnerable to our attacks.

Dancing Forest raised her long bow and used a [Meteor Shot] that sliced through the crowd, killing several Archers and piercing right into the hill. After our adventure through the Sword Saint Abyss, our number one Archer obtained an attack that could even kill Archers that were on the same level as her in one shot. This was a substantial leap for her. This also meant that she would be able to become a top tier expert in long range instant kills. The enemy would have no way of dealing with her!

.....

The battle was extremely fierce and both sides steadily lost players. Not Ordinary waited 200 meters away from the frontlines, and avoided making contact with our close combat players. Instead, he continuously used his battle axe time after time to cut down the players that had critical health. Lu Dong Bing followed the same battle plan. While those two bastards remained spectators, they didn’t seem to plan on actually crushing [Zhan Long]. All they wanted to do was kill as many of our players as possible, and then get the system’s Saint Tier Equipment reward.

That, however, was a great opportunity for us. [Thousand Burial] and [Valley of the Gods] weren’t fighting for their lives, but [Zhan Long] was. That also meant that we would have the advantage, and that we would be able to minimize our own losses, while killing the enemy.

“Sha sha....”

My Cloud Stepping Boots stepped into the bloody grass and I began to move across the battlefield, looking for the enemy’s flag bearers and team leaders and began to specifically target them, killing all of their officer level players.

Soon the 24,000 enemy players would be tossed into chaos.

“Pig....”

Wan Er’s snow white cloak was already dyed red. Right now, the sun was high, leaving her at a disadvantage because she was part of the Moon Elf tribe. She held the iron umbrella up in one hand, and used the other dagger to attack. This was the only way for her, or else she would’ve been seriously burned by the sun. Her health was continuously rising and falling. All of the Moon Elf girls on the battlefield faced the same difficulties. Only nighttime was their true spring. Wan Er shouted and signaled to someone near her, “Come over and kill You Yi. Let’s cut down Not Ordinary’s right arm!”

“Alright!”

Without another sound, I charged over. You Yi was cutting down one of [Zhan Long]’s Monks. That bastard’s bald head was covered in injuries, but he still managed to swing his staff as he stabbed You Yi. “Peng!” The sharp point of his staff pierced right into You Yi’s lower body. He immediately shouted, “F\*ck, my treasure, it hurts!”

I couldn’t help but smile and opened my left palm, [Dragon’s Hook]!

“Peng!”

My Dragon’s hook flew out and “Pu Chi” pierced through You Yi’s thigh. I then pulled it back towards myself, dragging him right to me. No matter what he tried to use, even [Blade Rush], it wouldn’t let him escape. My Dragon Reservoir Sword flashed and I threw a [Wind Blade]. Wan Er dashed over and with one dagger, she threw out a [Combo]. “Shua shua shua” six attacks flew out and You Yi grunted and fell to his knees.

.....

Li Mu laughed, “Very good, you killed a team leader. Let’s have these [Thousand Burial] players fall into chaos. Let’s kill them all, charge!”

The frontlines were covered in piles of bodies. The fierce fight lasted for 30 minutes and at least 7,000 [Thousand Burial] and [Valley of the Gods] players had died in the abyss. In other words, half of their heavy armor players were killed by us and their formation was starting to lose its shape. Now, as long as

[Zhan Long] launched a counter attack, then both guilds would be finished.

Lu Dong Bing shouted from a distance, “Not Ordinary, we can’t keep this up, our foundation has pretty much been destroyed!”

Not Ordinary only raised his blood battle axe and said, “Let’s wait for a little longer, our opportunity is almost here!”

.....

Before he even finished talking, a hawk screech rang through the air. Enormous black birds that had a 5 meter wing span, were clad in iron feathers, and had sharp beaks. On their backs were strong knights armed with halberds with a deadly look in their eyes.

“Oh no....” Qing Qian looked up into the sky and said, “It’s the Wolf Hawk Knights, Ba Huang City’s most elite cavalry. Wu, these are Lv 90 Thunder Tier monsters. They have around 5,000 attack and are a long range type!”

Wan Er revealed a beautiful smile, “Melon, don’t get anxious. We can hold them off, you just need a little more confidence...”

Dancing Forest raised her longbow. She waved her hand and teams of [Zhan Long] Archers all moved forward and pulled open their bows, targeting the Wolf Hawk Knights in the air. She then shouted, “Fire!”

“Sou sou sou.....”

Countless arrows flew into the sky and in the blink of an eye, these Wolf Hawk Knights’ were turned into porcupines. We had successfully dragged the aggro to us and making them charge at us. F\*ck, the Ba Huang City army had finally arrived!



## Chapter 503 Numb to Killing

Thousands of Wolf Hawk Knights charged towards the players in our back row. We needed to drag the aggro away from them, or else these Wolf Hawk Knights would charge right at our Archers, and the damages would be too great.

“Pa....”

I immediately halted my Cloud Stepping Boots, and looked up into the sky. Flames suddenly started rising around me and in the next second, both of my blades swung around me, creating a fierce wind. My Dragon Reservoir Sword and Cold Iron Sword flew along the winds and shot straight into the crowd of Wolf Hawk Knights. In the blink of an eye, I lured the aggro of at least 40 Wolf Hawk Knights towards myself. With a screech, they all darted right towards me!

“Sha sha....”

I quickly calculated the angle of attack and immediately retreated as I activated [Wall of Dou Qi]. I then swung Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] into the air. Afterwards, I let my Cold Iron Sword fly straight into the Wolf Hawk Knights. “Hong!” It dealt seven different attacks. The first wave of Wolf Hawk Knights were already right before me. The cavalymen on the the backs of the hawks all raised their halberds and through a [Skyshaker Pierce] that smashed into my Flame Prison Armor!

“Peng Peng Peng...”

“737 ! ”

“682 ! ”

“704 ! ”

.....

One after another, damage numbers flew up, and all came at the same time. My health dropped to 30% in seconds. Darling Duck immediately used a [Grip of Compassion] to keep me alive. As I retreated backwards, I threw another [Combo] and forcefully held off the Wolf Hawk Knights. Behind me, Dong Cheng

raised her palm and activated [Thunderbolt Finger]. At that moment, the Wolf Hawk Knights continuously screeched in pain, and a dozen of the monsters died under that single attack, decreasing the pressure on me!

On the frontlines, Wang Jian's [Halberd Whirlwind], Li Mu's [Covering Sword Slash], and Old K's [Whirlwind Slash] ravaged the enemy armies. At the same time, a [Flying Sword] flew out and cut into the monsters. [Zhan Long]'s frontline clashed with these Wolf War Hawk Knights, despite all of the odds against us. Dying screams rang throughout the battle field. Not everyone in [Zhan Long] had a high enough defense, and not long after, several hundred people died in battle.

“Keng!”

The Wolf Hawk Knight's halberd was parried by Wan Er's Dragon's Kiss dagger. Sparks flew and Wan Er took the chance to go into [Stealth]. She then activated [Hermit God's Arrival], and flew into the sky. The winds circled around her body and she began to wave both of her hands. These daggers struck their targets, creating bloody flowers. The strength of the [Hermit God's Arrival] spun around the beautiful little miss' body, greatly increasing her defense and attack power. When she descended, she waited for the skill to finish the cool down, and very soon, began her second barrage of attacks. Of [Zhan Long]'s entire guild, there wasn't a single other Assassin that could kill so many players in one attack.

At the same time, the Purple Kirin Dragon screamed in pain. It had finally been ripped apart by the Wolf Hawk Knights. Once it died, it turned into a flash of light and returned into Wan Er's pet dimension. Even ants can bite an elephant to death, much less when those ants had an attack power as high as the Wolf Hawk Knights.

“One Second Hero, now is the time. Protect everyone!” Li Mu shouted.

Cheng Young Jie immediately rammed his Flaming Sun Shield into the ground. “Peng!” A fiery light spread from the shield——[Flaming Sun Wall]. It increased the physical and magical defense of all friends within 1000 yards by 50% and lasted for 30 seconds!

At that moment, a ray of light fell upon our armies and everyone's health

immediately increased. That wasn't all, I turned around and threw a glance at Old K, "Old K, use [Fierce Sun]!"

Old K laughed and threw his Fierce Sun battle axe into the air and "Shua!", it flew into the air. When it reached its peak, it spun around, forming flaming circle. "Hong!" It fell on the ground and created an enormous wave. This was an 1000 yard range attack by an extremely strong weapon. Within seconds, over a hundred [Thousand Burial] and [Valley of the Gods] players that had critical health died under the attack. That bastard's ability to kill people is just too great!

.....

However, the fact that they outnumbered us was still a problem. Besides the ambush from the skies, [Thousand Burial] and [Valley of the Gods] also charged at us from the ground. After a round of fierce attacks, nearly a thousand [Zhan Long] players lie in puddles of blood.

After holding out like this for an hour, nearly 20,000 Wolf Hawk Knights turned into piles of equipment and experience that fell into the [Zhan Long] formation. All that was left to worry about was [Thousand Burial] and [Valley of the Gods]!

"Ka Cha..."

When I cut down a Wolf Hawk Knight with my blood Dragon Reservoir Sword, I turned around and started sprinting towards Not Ordinary. As he cut down one of our Knights, I shouted, "Now it's your turn!"

I gripped my sword and lunged at him. My Cold Iron Sword also flew out from its sheath and cut through the people in front of me. I then raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. Added on to that, I set up an [Azure Dragon Crossbow], killing several dozen of the enemy in seconds. Not Ordinary also raised his battle axe and started to retreat. At that moment, Li Mu, Dong Cheng, and Wan Er all came to give support. One after another, [Zhan Long]'s elite all lunged at Not Ordinary!

At that bottom of the hill, Yao Yan raised her long sword and lead 1000 of [Zhan Long: Defense Army]'s men and shouted, "Cut straight towards the enemy and cut off their retreat. Let's trap them inside Green Qilin Abyss! If they

dare come here, then they better not plan on going back!”

These warriors had entered a whole new level of killing. Yao Yan was truly an outstanding leader. Of the players that Wan Er brought from Fan Shu City, only Yao Yan managed to reach Li Mu and Wang Jian’s, but that was enough. [Zhan Long: Defense Army] was destined to become [Zhan Long] main guild’s right arm.

When their retreat was cut off, the 6000 players of [Thousand Burial] and [Valley of the Gods] all panicked and immediately turned around to break through. With that, they revealed their back to [Zhan Long]’s main guild 7000 players, and suffered great losses.

“Kill Not Ordinary!”

With a shout, Wolf raised his dagger and charged over. He activated [Absolute Step] and quickly accelerated forward. From a distance, he activated [Flying Dagger] and cut down 3000 of Not Ordinary’s health. He then slid forward and “Shua!” brushed past Not Ordinary’s shoulder. In that split second, he had already stunned Not Ordinary. Wolf then followed the attack with a poisonous skill, decreasing Not Ordinary’s heal recovery by 50%. He then crossed both daggers in front of his chest and “Keng!” Parried an attack from a Berserker and retreated into the crowd.

I aimed my target on Not Ordinary and leaned backwards slightly. I then threw my Dragon Reservoir Sword out and activated [Blade Spin]!

“Pu Chi!”

“13744 ! ”

That attack dealt critical damage. Not Ordinary, that unlucky bastard was killed instantly. He grunted and fell to his knees. Like that, the only officer level player left in [Thousand Burial] was Bai Mo Yan. She raised her long bow and retreated while softly saying, “We’ve been defeated. Retreat, we’ve already killed quite a few of [Zhan Long]’s players. Let’s quit while we’re ahead!”

At the same time, she also sent me a message, “Youngster, say something and let me and my sisters out of here. That way, I can at least let you know more enemy intel!”

I nodded and sent a message to Yue Yao. Very soon, Yue Yao pretended to make a mistake, allowing Shen Bing and the others to charge their way out of the abyss. Afterwards, we continued to kill the rest of the players.

.....

At the top of the mountain, the Fierce Tiger army leader Lachlan raised his battle axe and appeared. With a furious expression on his face, he shouted, "F\*ck, these bastards actually managed to annihilate my Wolf Hawk Army. I will crush them!"

On the side, a flag bearer said, "My lord, this group of adventurers are extremely fierce. We cannot continue fighting them head on like this. Otherwise, all of our people would die before we even manage to bring back Chi Yu Han. If we keep this up, then our position in Ba Huang City will be even lower than Luo Lin, Angela, and Forgotten Sea. The Fierce Tiger Army might even end up being disbanded. At that point, what can my lord use to fight?"

Lachlan trembled and shouted, "Alright, then we'll wait to make our move. We'll charge when the time is right. Why don't we just let these ignorant adventurers battle these bandits first!"

"My lord is wise!"

.....

After harvesting lives for an hour, Green Qilin Valley was covered in corpses. Very few players from [Valley of the Gods] and [Thousand Burial] managed to escape. Of the 24,000 enemy players that initially came charging at us, 20,000 of them were now corpses lying at our feet. They had underestimated [Zhan Long]'s defense and explosive power. In a formation battle, in terms of close combat, we had Wan Er, Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K, while in terms of long range, we had Dong Cheng, Dancing Forest, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands, and General Lian Po. Even if [Legend] were to try and come at us, we wouldn't easily fall, much less [Thousand Burial] or [Valley of the Gods] those third rate guilds. This time, we truly sealed our position as the fifth ranked guild in the Chinese Server.

Everyone spread out to clean up the battlefield. I stood at the border of the map with my sword and carefully watched out for any movements in our

surroundings.

Matcha raised her sword and walked over, “Boss, this battle’s results have come out, do you want to hear me talk about them?”

I nodded, “Yup, tell me now....”

Matcha bit her lip and said, “In this battle, we had killed in total 21067 of the enemy’s players. We ourselves lost 3714. Most of our losses came from elites in the main guild, Division One and the Defense Army. Right now, there are 16249 of [Zhan Long]’s players online. If we were to take on another two waves of attacks, then we might end up with less than 10,000 players left. What should we do? Boss, are we just going to defend ourselves like this?”

I nodded, “What else can we do? We have no other choice. If we were to leave Green Qilin Valley, then we might end up being surrounded. If it comes to that, then we’ll suffer even greater losses. At this point, even if we were to all get killed in battle, at least we’ll get a lot of experience and rewards from the system from killing so many people.”

“Ok, alright. There doesn’t seem to be any other method...” Matcha smiled. Her beautiful eyes looked up at me as she said, “Boss, you always do things that surpass a normal person’s imagination. Hoho, as one of [Zhan Long]’s members, I feel like I will never be bored...”

I was speechless and finally responded, “Are you sneering at me?”

“Not at all, what are you talking about Boss....”

“Let’s continue getting everybody ready for battle. The next wave of players should be coming at us soon. They definitely won’t let us rest up for too long.”

“Ok.”

.....

I stood at a high place in Green Qilin Valley. I looked into the distance, and then opened up the system rankings. Yup, after this battle, a great amount has shifted——

Ba Huang City Camp:

Not Ordinary Death Count: 41

Lu Dong Bing Death Count: 39

Bai Mo Yan Death Count: 32

You Yi Death Count: 27

Drunken Spear Death Count: 19

Chi Yu Han Camp:

Hero Ran Min Death Count: 431

Xiao Yao Zi Zai Death Count: 471

Cang Yue Death Count: 397

Cang Tong Death Count: 354

Dancing Forest Death Count: 348

.....

Damn, Shen Bing actually killed so many of our people. Later I'm definitely going to talk with her about that... but, I suppose she couldn't do anything, or else Not Ordinary would get suspicious.

# Chapter 504 The Three Guilds Ally Together Again

In general, the players who killed a lot of our members had been dealt with by us, excluding Shen Bing. After that battle, she probably won't participate in any great scale attacks on [Zhan Long] anymore. Not Ordinary, Lu Dong Bing, and You Yi all died in battle. The one person that was worth my attention was Drunken Spear. Last time at the battle of Sword Saint Abyss, Drunken Spear didn't manage to lead any achievements and is probably extremely frustrated. Based on what I know about him, Drunken Spear is a very carefree man, but deep down inside, he's also extremely prideful. After being humiliated that time at Sword Saint Abyss, he will definitely settle this debt, to the extent that he would charge out on his own and kill 19 of our players. Furthermore, the longer it takes for me to kill him, the higher this number would rise.

No matter how strong [Zhan Long] is together, not everybody is as strong as Drunken Spear. Besides, if you were to look at the entire [Zhan Long] guild, there were probably only around 3 that could defeat Drunken Spear on one on one battle. Dong Cheng, Wan Er and I could easily defeat him, but it was harder to say for our other players.

.....

"Sha sha...."

I heard a soft pitter patter, and felt a light raindrop on my face. I looked up and saw that the sky was covered in dark clouds. The rain washed away the blood on the ground. At the same time, the players bodies began to slowly disappear into the mud. This process would take around 5 hours, and so it still looked as though the ground was covered in bodies.

Li Mu raised his Tian Chen Sword and walked over to me. He then lowered his voice and said, "I've already sent out around 100 Assassins to scout out the perimeter 1000 yards away from Green Qilin Abyss. If the wind even blows on the grass, then we'll be the first to know."



Qing Qian blinked a few times and looked up at the hill, “[Thousand Burial] and [Valley of the Gods] have suffered a lot, they probably won’t come again. I wonder who will be next, [Prague] or [Vanguard]?”

“No...” Li Mu shook his head and said, “[Vanguard]’s 30,000 main guild army has remained in Firestone Canyon, grinding levels and completing quests. Ba Huang City has 17 branches of scouts that have pitched camp at Firestone Canyon, and so [Vanguard]’s people have been able to gain quite a bit of experience. Firestone Canyon is around 9000 yards away from here. Jian Feng Han won’t give up such a great level grinding area. [Prague] has gone to Nightmare Plains. Yan Zhao Warrior is also busy grinding levels, and doesn’t seem bothered with [Zhan Long]’s quest to save Chi Yu Han. But, that doesn’t mean they aren’t watching the situation.”

I made a fist and said, “As long as [Prague] and [Vanguard] don’t act then there shouldn’t be too much of a problem. Wan Er, make sure to pay attention to all of [Hero’s Mound]’s actions. I’m more worried about whether or not Q-Sword plans on sending troops out to Ba Huang City again. Once [Hero’s Mound]’s main guild comes, then we’ll have to face a destructive pressure. The sooner we know their movements, the sooner [Zhan Long] can make preparations.”

Wan Er bit her lip and smiled. “Ok. I have some friends in [Hero’s Mound]’s main guild that I’m still in contact with. For the moment, [Hero’s Mound] doesn’t seem to have any movements. I’ve become smarter, I won’t let Q-Sword ambush Ba Huang City as he pleases....”

Dong Cheng pouted and said, “Tang Qi that idiot says that there hasn’t been any movement in [Hero’s Mound] either. He said that they’re still at Poacher’s Camp grinding levels....”

“Yup, that sounds good!”

At that moment, Li Mu’s eyes turned cold and he said, “The second wave of enemies are coming. I just got intel from my scouts in Ba Huang Forest that [Wrath of the Heroes], [Hero’s Mound: Division One], and [Flying Dragon] have gotten together. In total, they have over 50,000 players. Furthermore, someone said that they saw [Hero’s Mound: Division One] players pushing Death God

Arrows over. There's around... 500 sets of them!"

"They're coming at us again?"

Wan Er's elegant eyebrows raised and she looked at me, "Pig, we've already suffered enough pain from these Death God Arrows. This time, we must make the necessary preparations, and make sure we don't get hit by these Death God Arrows again."

I nodded and looked at our surroundings. I smiled. "The terrain here is uneven and hilly, not a flatland. Furthermore, there are large trees surrounding us, making it harder for these Death God Arrows to be utilized at their fullest extent. Once they push those Death God Arrows down here, then we'll be ready. If they activate, then we'll use flame spells to burn away those poison vines. Healers, prepare to keep our health up. 500 sets of Death God Arrows can't instantly kill us. [Zhan Long]'s heavy armor players will lead the charge. Those 120 warriors who have the Garrison Outfit will use [Impact Roar] to destroy those Death God Arrows. Like that, there won't be any problem. Creating these Death God Arrows costs a lot, we'll just let Q-Sword waste his money."

Wan Er's beautiful eyes looked forward and she gave a dimpled smile, "There's another thing. Those Garrison Outfit elite warriors all have over 10,000 health, while the Death God Arrows at most can deal 3000 damage to them. As long as the poison doesn't suck away their health, then those Death God Arrows aren't enough to kill them. As the game progresses, more and more players have over 10,000 health now, and the Death God Arrows strength will become increasingly weaker. The main character in battles will always be each player's own strength."

"Ok!"

I slowly pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and smiled. "Has everyone rested up? Let's prepare for battle! [Flying Dragon] and [Hero's Mound: Division One] are coming to attack us, it's time that we give them a warm welcome!"

Qing Qian smiled. "How about I bring some people from Dragon's Den?"

I nodded, "Ok. Dragon's Den recently hasn't had much enemy movement lately. If we were to bring [Zhan Long]'s members here, then we'll fully be able

to crush our enemies at battle!”

“Alright!”

.....

Not long after, countless players appeared on the border of Green Qilin Valley. [Flying Dragon], [Wrath of the Heroes], and [Hero’s Mound: Division One] players had all arrived. Soaring Dragon, Drunken Spear, Liu Ying, Little Piggy, Wang Ze Cheng, and Suo Yue all appeared on the edge of the canyon. They were around 150 yards away from us, so close that we could hear what they were saying.

Drunken Spear raised his iron spear and looked at all of the player bodies on the ground. He wiped away some rainwater from his face. He then revealed a stunned expression and said, “F\*ck, Xiao Yao Zi Zai really is a battle genius. [Zhan Long] under his direction has practically become a killing machine! [Thousand Burial] and [Valley of the Gods] died such a miserable death! Isn’t this the prelude to an execution?!”

Liu Ying glared at him and said, “There’s no need for Drunken Spear to be modest. No matter how strong [Zhan Long]’s members are, they are still mortals. The only reason [Thousand Burial] had lost so miserably is because Not Ordinary had aimed too high, and completely underestimated the strength of Li Xiao Yao!”

Little Piggy nodded, “Yup, boss is right. We must target our battle strategy against [Zhan Long] and plan out our attack well. That way, we’ll win!”

Wang Ze Cheng raised his spear and wrapped his left arm around Suo Yue’s waist and placed his hand on her bum. He then slowly rubbed the cheeks, making her blush. Wang Ze Cheng laughed and said, “It’s ok. Based on my estimate, [Zhan Long] has at most 10,000 players left at the bottom of the abyss. [Valley of the Gods] and [Thousand Burial] probably killed around 7000 of them? We, on the other hand, have around 50,000 troops in our hands. With our numbers we’ll be able to push them down, if not crush them. Don’t worry, [Enemies at the Gate] and [Blood Contract] aren’t going to directly provide support to [Zhan Long] for now. They don’t want to step into this mud just yet, because they cannot!”

Drunken Spear looked at Wang Ze Cheng's hand on Yan Suo and couldn't help but reveal an ugly expression, "Cang Cheng, can you f\*cking pay more attention? This is the frontline of a battle, and yet you look as though you want to rush off to take your b\*tch to bed as soon as possible. If you were to do these things here, then what would others think? That they're fighting for their lives at the battle front just so you can happily be some Guild Master?"

Wang Ze Cheng hesitated, and then gritted his teeth. Finally he moved his hand away from Yan Suo and raised his golden shield with a smile, "Drunken Spear, your words are extremely right. But, all you know is how to talk. Later, when we're really fighting, I want to see just how many players this [Flying Dragon]'s number one general really can kill. Let's see if you really have the ability to deal with Li Xiao Yao, Lin Wan Er, and Dong Cheng Yue's strength."

Drunken Spear swept out his long spear and softly said, "What's important isn't whether or not we can defeat them. The most important part is that we do our best!"

At that moment, Soaring Dragon, "Alright now, what's the point in saying all that? Why don't we first think of how we're going to advance? Which guild is going first? Or is all three guilds charging at once?"

Wang Ze Cheng wryly smiled. "Does that even need to be said? Flying Dragon has 38,000 members, with 25,000 online right now. You're the oldest, and so you should go first!"

Soaring Dragon couldn't help but smile, "Please, don't tease me. I'm completely conscious of [Flying Dragon]'s strength. Cang Cheng is the true strong one. You've only been in Ba Huang City for so long, and yet you managed to make [Hero's Mound: Division One] continuously expand and gain more divisions. Of the ten or so divisions that you do have, there's over a total of 20,000 members. To be honest, your Division One strength is much stronger than my guilds!"

Liu Ying furrowed his brow and said, "What bullsh\*t are you guys fighting over? Why don't we all just charge at once? [Flying Dragon] will charge in the middle, [Wrath of the Heroes] will take the left flank, while [Hero's Mound] will take the right flank. Whoever kills the most players in [Zhan Long] is the

strongest, is there anymore need to discuss this? Cang Ceng, when are your Death God Arrows going to arrive? We'll attack then!"

Wang Ze cheng nodded and said, "It'll arrive in 10 minutes. Why don't we advance first!"

"Alright!"

.....

"Keng!"

One of the Swordsman in [Flying Dragon] pulled out his sword and pointed it at [Zhan Long]'s formation and shouted, "[Flying Dragon], advance! Let's kill our sworn enemy——[Zhan Long]!"

On the hill, the sounds of battle rang through the air. Countless players from the three guilds covered the hillside. They outnumbered us by too much.

However, [Zhan Long]'s players weren't afraid. Li Mu and Wang Jian all pulled out their swords and stared directly forward at their enemy. Li Mu laughed, "Brothers, take our your true strength and let's properly teach these disobedient bastards!"

I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword and already set up four [Azure Dragon Crossbow]s. Four giant gods pulled open their crossbows, letting loose several green glowing dragon arrows into the air. The force behind these arrows was extremely strong. If I end up killing more people than Old K during this quest, then it will be mostly due to this skill.

# Chapter 505 Facing Death God Arrows Again!

Buckets of rain fell from the sky and our view became even more impaired. Furthermore, all fire based attacks were significantly weaker. Our Mages' [Pillar of Fire and Ice] and [Magma Abyss] had all been weakened by at least half of their original attack power. Even Dong Cheng had given up using [Magma Lance] and [Magma Abyss], and instead used [Thunderbolt Finger]. Lightning shot through the rain drops, magnifying the attack power even more.

“Hong!”

I threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] that sliced through the crowd. My Cold Iron Sword then spun nine times through the [Flying Dragon] army. Dancing Forest also shot a [Meteor Shot] into the center of the oncoming enemy and locked a [Hell's Meteor Shower] onto Drunken Spear. She stared right at him, preventing Drunken Spear from moving too close. All he could do was activate [Thousand Layer Wave] from a distance, killing two of [Zhan Long]'s heavy armor players before making a quick retreat

It was clear that these three big guilds were stronger than [Thousand Burial] and [Valley of the Gods]. Very soon, [Flying Dragon]'s close combat type players will have charged out of [Zhan Long]'s fire net. One after another, the Knights all raised their heavy shields and rammed into [Zhan Long]'s shield formation. Once they moved their shields away, they would immediately activate [Skyshaker Pierce] and [Flame Axe], marking the start of our clash.

.....

“Roar....”

My Flaming Tiger God roared and activated [Burstfire Raid]. I brandished my sword and fought alongside my little tiger. I was like a whirlwind of blades that brought about rivers of blood. While I was killing, I also stacked my [Kill for Blood] up to 100, increasing my attack power by 100%. The attacks from my dominant hand made the [Flying Dragon] players in the front row all scream in pain and frustration. They were unable to defend against me and they were extremely deadly.

Wang Jian and Li Mu both activated area attacks like [Halberd Whirlwind], [Covering Sword Slash] and [Glacial Hammer]. Wan Er fought on her own, dealing [Blade of the Death God], [Hermit God's Arrival]. Her [Domain Control] caused a whole row of enemy players to lose control of their attacks, creating an area of effect attack.

In the back row, Fox gathered together a group of Musketeers and raised his own rifle and shouted, "On my signal, activate [Bombardment] and [Artillery] and [Magma Bullet]... Now!"

"Peng Peng Peng..."

Shots rang out and the field was covered in a hail of bullets that pierced through armor like it was wet paper. A flock of [Flying Dragon] players all fell to the ground, and the grass around them was burnt crisp, as though a terrifying blaze had passed through.

.....

"F\*ck...." Soaring Dragon raised his mage staff and shouted, "Bring me a team of Berserkers! Activate [Berserker God] and charge forward! Kill all those Musketeers. We'll stuff those muskets right back down their throats!"

At that moment, a team of 300 Berserkers all raised their battle axes and charged forward. Tang Xing, Moon Feather and Star Blade then brought forth a team of Garrison outfit wearing super-heavy armor players to block the onslaught. After a storm of attacks, along with the support of Mages and Archers, [Flying Dragon]'s 300 men had reached the point of no return, and all fell on the battlefield.

Even though the enemy had a greater number of players overall, the opening of the valley was only 200 meters wide, putting [Zhan Long] in the advantage. It was clear that we had the dominant hand, but Soaring Dragon didn't seem to register this fact and relied solely on his 50,000 man army to try and crush us.

"Their long range players are starting to charge..." Li Mu took a deep breath and smiled. "Brothers, have you prepared your cool downs?"

One Second Hero and Star Blade both nodded. Li Mu then raised his sword shouted his command with a smile, "Knights, charge in the front row, while the

Swordsmen all follow a row behind them! Let's cut them down!"

I also raised my sword and activated [Blade Rush]. This was [Zhan Long]'s first wave of counterattacks!

Against a mass of spells and arrows, I activated my Flame Prison's special skill, [Flame Domain]. This skill decreased all fire type damage dealt to friends within a 100 yard radius. It was practically equivalent to a [Dou Qi Armor]'s effect! Furthermore, One Second Hero raised his Flaming Sun Shield and activated [Flaming Sun Wall], increasing both physical and magical defense of friends within 1000 yard radius by 50%!

The shields of our front row Knight players were covered in arrows, and they all activated [Blade Rush] at the same time, sprinting forward 40 yards. I raised both of my swords and activated [Sword Tempest] while Wang Jian activated his [Halberd Whirlwind]. In that second, we instantly killed a horde of [Flying Dragon] players, cutting down their numbers. Within a short 7 seconds, nearly 2000 players had been killed. Moreover, [Zhan Long]'s players all had the [Flaming Sun Wall] buff, making it nearly impossible to kill them. Only a high level expert like Drunken Spear could kill a few.

"Our plan succeeded, retreat!" Li Mu whooped.

I raised my two swords and brought up the rear. Wan Er helped cover us all during the retreat. Our counterattack was executed perfectly, and we lost less than 100 of our players while massacring [Flying Dragon]'s entire front row. The two flanks, [Hero's Mound: Division One] and [Wrath of the Heroes] weren't any better off, and had been forced into a retreat by our army. A speedy ambush turned into utter defeat. Once [Zhan Long] retreated, they immediately lunged forward, renewing their morale....

.....

"Keng keng keng...."

Swords clanged against [Zhan Long]'s shield formation. Fierce Tiger lead a team of [Flying Dragon]'s heavy armor players to advance. They had three times the number of players we had on the frontlines. As they charged into our formation, they activated [Skysaker Slash] and [Combo].



Matcha hid behind her heavy shield and activated [Phantom Holy Shield]. Rays of light descended upon her heavy shield and she shouted, “Use [Heavenly Shield Wall] to defend against them! When their skills enter cool down, begin our counterattack!”

Three seconds later, [Zhan Long]’s Knights and Monks all moved away their shields and swung their sharp blades. Blood spurted from the enemy as they cut them down. In the back row, Dancing Forest, Lian Po, and Fox all went crazy and barraged the enemy with explosive long range attacks like [Magma Bullet] and [Artillery], covering the frontline in smoke.

“Ka ka!”

My Dragon Reservoir Sword cut down two Swordsmen as I held off the attacks on the frontline. My chest plate was covered in scratches from arrows and spells. I then let my Cold Iron Sword fly out while I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword in my right hand. This godly weapon was dripping with blood and rainwater. I stepped forward with my Cloud Stepping Boots; since I hadn’t moved in so long, I had created a deep ditch in my original position, allowing the Barbarian Berserkers to continuously swing their axes at me from higher ground. Of course my Cold Iron Sword could easily parry these attacks, and I could cut them down with two slices from my Dragon Reservoir Sword. That was where I was most talented in, swiftly and efficiently killing my enemies. The more players I killed, the more I decreased the pressure on our own players.

All of our players in the formation seemed to have been washed in blood. Wan Er, Wang Jian, Bai Qi and I all originally had white battle cloaks that were now dyed crimson from all of the blood and many of our players had died in battle. On the bright side, there were 10,000 [Zhan Long] players coming to reinforce us. It was only like this could we continue on in this long fight.

.....

We battled fiercely for 20 minutes and finally, a “Ji Ji Ya Ya” sound came from the top of the hill. A row of Death God Arrow machines appeared on the hilltop. Wang Ze Cheng was finally using his trump card!

“Careful, the Death God Arrows are here!” I shouted. I gave commands in the guild chat, “Healers and Mages, open up your shields. Archers, the second those

Death God Arrows are released, activate [Crystallize]. Musketeers, you don't have any survival skills, and so you need to retreat for the moment. Watch the angle of the hill that is before us. Those Death God Arrows won't be on a flat surface, so they'll most likely come at a downward angle!"

As I said that, I pulled up a system tool and measured our distance and said, "There's around 50-80 yards between us and the hill. Everyone must maintain this distance. [Heavenly Shield Wall] and [Dou Qi Armor] can minimize the damage dealt by those Death God Arrows. All Mages be prepared to use flame type magic to burn away the poison vines and defend against their attack! All front row players, prepare to charge forward with me! Those [Death God Arrows] only have 5000 durability. We just need to advance and cut them down!"

Everyone nodded.

In the next second, nearly 200 Death God Arrow machines were pushed down the unsteady hill. When they were halfway down, Wang Ze Cheng raised his hand and shouted, "That's enough! If we go forward anymore, we'll be hit by their long range attacks. Prepare to shoot!"

A few seconds later, the enemy finished aiming the arrows. "Peng Peng Peng!" We could all hear the sounds of the arrows being released. One after another, these heavy arrows thudded into [Zhan Long]'s shields, bringing along their poisonous vines. "Pu pu pu" they pierced into our players. Within moments, at least a hundred of our players had been instantly killed. Those that survived after being hit, had their armor pierced, causing them to be poisoned!

"Burn!"

Dong Cheng raised her hand and activated [Magma Lance]+[Magma Abyss] in the [Zhan Long] formation. All of the Mages behind her did the same. "Ts Ts Pa Pa!" The vines burned away and rays of light from our Healers descended upon our army. Like this, we managed to deal with the poisonous vines effect. Li Mu roared and charged forward, bringing [Zhan Long]'s close combat players rushing forward. With a [Blade Rush], they all quickly advanced, and within seconds, reached the Death God Arrow machines. Everyone then activated [Impact Roar] and cut down the deadly arrows. With a "Pa!", the machines

broke apart and immediately became useless!

Once everyone retreated, I glanced at the numbers. Over 270 Death God Arrow machines had been destroyed, while we had lost 300 players. This wasn't too bad. Q-Sword was probably feeling the loss from this battle. Thankfully Wang Ze Cheng was one of Q-Sword's underlings, or else, if he hadn't continuously borrowed those Death God Arrows, we wouldn't have been able to break them so easily. As more and more players have over 10,000 health, we no longer had to be afraid of those machines.

After 3 hours of battle, and the destruction of another batch of Death God Arrows, Wang Ze Cheng's killer machines had been destroyed. [Flying Dragon], [Hero's Mound: Division One] and [Wrath of the Heroes] were becoming gradually weaker. Mountains of bodies began to pile up and the autumn rain had finally stopped, while rivers of blood pooled together at the bottom of the valley.

With a swing, I cut down a group of critically damaged [Flying Dragon] players. I then raised my hand and activated [Great Realm of Desolation] and killed Fierce Tiger. I raised my sword and glanced behind me. [Zhan Long]'s players were all covered in blood, and had been killing for so long that their eyes had turned red. The more we killed, the stronger we were becoming and the more the enemy suffered. Most likely because he couldn't take any more losses, Liu Ying finally raised his sword and began to retreat, shouting "We've lost over 80% of our players! We can't go on! Retreat, we cannot continue like this. [Vanguard] and [Prague] won't have the patience to just stand by and watch!"

## Chapter 506 [Vanguard]’s Goal

On the border of the valley, an enormous crowd of players from [Hero’s Mound: Division One], [Flying Dragon], and [Wrath of the Heroes] all retreated. There originally weren’t many players left, so if they were to keep on fighting, they would be completely massacred. However, the players that were already inside the valley weren’t going to get away so easily. The valley was extremely precipitous, and climbing out of it wasn’t an easy task. Wang Ze Cheng and the rest seemed to have missed that aspect.

“Shua....”

I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword and wiped away the rain and blood off my face. I then said, “Prepare to counterattack and kill all of the enemy players in this valley. Wan Er, Melon, Dong Cheng, and Dancing Forest, you all work together to kill the Guild Masters. Don’t let a single one of them escape!”

“Alright!”

I buffed myself with [Haste] and sprinted forward. I calculated the angle and raised my left arm to activate [Dragon’s Hook]. “Peng!” It flew out and pierced right into [Flying Dragon]’s Guild Master Soaring Dragon. He was just about to climb out of the valley, and never imagined that he would get hit from 70 yards away!

I gave a strong tug, dragging Soaring Dragon and his staff right to me. I then activated [Curse of the Night Fury Asura] and swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword forward. Wan Er’s dagger made three slices, bringing Soaring Dragon to his knees. He even dropped his staff. The sight of it all was extremely satisfying. This was the price our enemies paid when they try and ambush [Zhan Long]!

After killing Soaring Dragon, I immediately activated [Dragon Transformation] and flew straight towards Wang Ze Cheng. Around a dozen [Hero’s Mound: Division One] players guarded their Guild Master. When they saw me flying over, they all shouted, “Block Xiao Yao Zi Zai! Do not let him near the Guild Master!”

I couldn't help but smile. I raised my sword and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. Right afterwards, flames started to gather around my body and I activated [Sword Tempest] right amidst the group of players. I killed them all in two attacks and Wang Ze Cheng was the only one left, with just 30% of his health intact. He immediately used a [Cleansing Wind], and then pointed his spear at me, shouting, "Seeing as I can't leave, then I'll fight for my life!"

I dove towards the ground. After I used [Dragon Transformation], I gained a certain amount of control over my ability to fly through the space. While I was in the air, I managed to dodge three [Scattered Shots]. I then struck with my Cold Iron Sword. "Keng!" It was parried by Wang Ze Cheng's [Skyshaker Pierce]. I then slightly bent over backwards in the air, creating an arc with my body and kicked my right foot out with all my might. I hit Wang Ze Cheng's squarely in the chest. He flew backwards, and smashed into the opposite wall. He slowly stood up, and it was clear that he had lost all of his shield abilities.

My Dragon Reservoir Sword flashed forward along with my Cold Iron Sword and in the blink of an eye, I had dealt seven attacks to the defenseless Wang Ze Cheng and tore apart his chest plate. Wang Ze Cheng's health immediately fell to the bottom. Glaring at me, he shouted, "Even if you had the ability to fly to heaven and back, you still won't be able to save Chi Yu Han. You better keep in mind that you are no god!"

While I was still in the air, I swung my right hand and ripped my blade right through his neck. Like that, Wang Ze Cheng was instantly killed, but he didn't drop any equipment. I didn't even bother to look and turned around to raise my sword and parry an attack from a female Assassin!

"Keng!"

Sparks flew between our blades. It was none other than Yan Suo. I pushed my blade against hers, forcing her backwards into the grass. She spat out a mouthful of blood and then was killed by a single attack.

Not far from Yan Suo, Liu Ying furrowed his brows as he saw her fall. He couldn't help but sprint to her side. He held her weak body up and said, "Did you think that you could fight against Li Xiao Yao?"

Yan Suo was astonished, as though she could never imagine that Liu Ying

would treat her so well. Dumbly, she stared at him. Liu Ying revealed a smile as he brought her into his embrace and said, "Hurry up and escape. Li Xiao Yao is almost here! Brothers, help me stand against this demon!"

A group of [Wrath of the Heroes]' players all charged over. I opened my palm and targeted Yan Suo and Liu Ying's back with [Great Realm of Desolation]. Just one [Great Realm of Desolation] and one [Seven Star Fragment] slash and those two would be finished. I could see a group of [Wrath of the Heroes] players charging towards me from the hill. They wouldn't even be able to make me budge a single inch.

But right at that moment, I saw that Yan Suo had leaned her face against Liu Ying's arm. Maybe at that moment, she was remembering the sweet memories that she had shared with Liu Ying. Humans weren't like grass and flowers, they had feelings and emotions. A single fit of anger wasn't going to change the fact that she used to have feelings for Liu Ying. While he hugged her, he slowly leaned over and gave her a soft kiss.

.....

"Hua hua....."

I slowly let my arm drop and cancelled [Great Realm of Desolation].

Li Mu raised his Tian Chen sword and brought a group of players over as he asked, "Guild Master, you clearly had the chance to kill the Tyrant of Western Chu and Yan Suo, so why didn't you?"

I rubbed my chin and softly said, "I'm not sure. Maybe it was in that moment that I suddenly couldn't make a move. To be honest, I really want to see what will happen to them in the future...."

Dong Cheng flew over and threw a spell that killed a group of [Wrath of the Heroes]' players. She smiled at us and said, "What else could happen? The three of them are gonna make a triangle and fight each other to the death. Yan Suo had once been Liu Ying's girlfriend, and then switched to Wang Ze Cheng and now she's getting a resurgence of feelings for Liu Ying....."

Li Mu grinned, "I'm afraid the Tyrant of Western Chu is just making a joke and Yan Suo is taking it seriously. I've always felt that a woman can't serve two men

was pretty true. I'm not referring to the fact that she's being unfaithful, but rather the fact that a woman can't just revolve around two men that know each other. That will only end up harming oneself, to the point where she'll be called a slut."

Wang Jian wryly smiled. "That's right, pure love is much better. What's the point in making it so complicated, and to actually take revenge for the sake of love...."

"Let's hurry up and clear the field!"

I looked up into the distance and saw Drunken Spear cutting down a group of our players. Afterwards he disappeared into the forest. Looks like he probably won't come at us again. I quickly sent out a command, "Don't chase after him. Let Drunken Spear go, or else we'll suffer more losses. Our main goal is to defend this area!"

.....

Within ten minutes, we had cleared the battlefield. The equipment that [Wrath of the Heroes] and [Flying Dragon] players had dropped were all pretty average, but it wasn't like it was a bad gain. Even though we couldn't equip them, we could at least sell them on the market.

As I stood in the wet grass, the scent of blood filled my nose. Wan Er walked over to me and softly said, "The battle stats have come out, do you want to hear them?"

"Yea, there must've been quite a few losses right?"

"Yea...." The beautiful little miss gave a soft smile and said, "For four hours, we fought against the three guilds and killed 32,000 of their men while we lost 4000 of our own. Right now, we only have 12,000 players left. If either [Vanguard] or [Prague] were to come at us, then I'm afraid that we'll all be massacred...."

I nodded, "Yea. But, from the numbers, it looks like our players will receive quite a few rewards after this SSS Tier Main Quest. In the end it will be well worth it..."

Wolf nodded and said, "That's right. I was looking at the forums and saw that

Destiny released a new announcement. All players in either the Chi Yu Han or the Ba Huang City camp that have killed more than 3 enemy players will receive enough experience to make up for their death. Anybody who has killed more than three people at least won't have lost too much from this battle, and for anyone like Brother Xiao Yao who has killed more than a thousand... then it'll practically be like winning the lottery! However, it seems that the reward isn't stacked, or else you'd be gaining dozens of levels...."

I couldn't help but smile, "That's impossible. The Destiny company wouldn't allow such a leveling bug, or else Old K and I would do everything we can just to get to Lv 100, even if it meant losing all of our weapons."

"Yup!"

Qing Qian cautioned, "Be careful of the situation on the borders. Let's continue to stay on alert. There's still 16 hours left until we arrive at the end result. It seems like we still have a ways to go...."

"Let's take it easy..." I raised my eyebrows and said, "We can relax once we block one more wave of attacks. We can switch between fighting here in Green Qilin Valley or at that bottom of the abyss. That way, we could minimize our losses."

"Yup, I was thinking the same..."

.....

After guarding the valley for another hour, we finally received news of activity. Li Mu raised his sword and walked over to me, his face was filled with worry. He then said, "It's not good, looks like [Vanguard] has had some movement. Jian Feng Han has lead 30,000 elite soldiers out of Firestone Canyon and is heading straight towards us. They'll probably get here in 30-50 minutes...."

I leaned against the wall and closed my eyes, "Calm down, what should come will come eventually...."

Wan Er sat behind me and smiled. "Pig, there's even crazier news, do you want to hear it?"

"There's movement in Fan Shu City, right?"



“Wu, how did you know? Although, [Hero’s Mound] doesn’t seem to have any activity, [The Knights Templar] and [Fantasy Kingdom] have both started to move. More importantly, is that the [The Knights Templar] which is rumored to have 50,000 players in it, has begun to move. The Guild Master Shang Li is also one of Jiu Li City’s top Knight class players. As for [Fantasy Kingdom], they have 39,000 members, and have more than 20,000 players online. These two guilds will get here in approximately one hour. We need to make our preparations... These two guilds haven’t been around for long, and so they don’t have much battle experience which makes them rank lower than [Enemies at the Gate] and [Flying Dragon]. That doesn’t mean that they aren’t strong though!”

I made a fist and said, “[The Knights Templar] and [Fantasy Kingdom], I don’t think we have any association with those two guilds, right? What’s up with this? I don’t get it....”

Dong Cheng smiled. “It’s simple. [The Knights Templar] and [Fantasy Kingdom] are all [Hero’s Mound]’s allies. Q-Sword probably doesn’t plan on coming out himself, and so he asked his allies to come and kill off his fated rival.... Of course, there’s also one other possibility, and that is that once those two guilds have whittled down our strength, Q-Sword will then make his move, and [Hero’s Mound] will clean out [Zhan Long].....”

“Don’t... don’t joke about that....”

I jumped off of a ledge and straightened out my clothes, “There’s nothing more that needs to be said. Brothers, prepare for battle. Be ready for battle in 30 minutes. We’ll continue guarding this entrance. I want to see whether or not [Vanguard] actually negotiated with [The Knights Templar] and [Fantasy Kingdom]!”

Rows of heavy armor players assumed their battle stances. Even though [Zhan Long] only had 12,000 players, we were still high in spirits. After all, we had won complete victories in the first two battles and forced guilds into retreat, which wasn’t an easy feat.

We wiped our eyes and waited, but still didn’t see any of [Vanguard]’s players.

Right at that moment, Li Mu’s eyes suddenly went cold and he said, “F\*ck,

[Vanguard]’s goal isn’t us. They’re passing through Sword Saint Forest right now! From the looks of it, they plan on hitting [Enemies at the Gate]!”

# Chapter 507 The Knights Templar

After the rain fell, the water pooled together on the flatland and slowly flowed in small rivers into the valley. “Hua La La” it formed a small waterfall. All of [Zhan Long]’s players stood there, waiting. The blood marks on their battle armor had yet to fade. Wang Jian and Li Mu’s blades were covered in nicks, but right now was a critical moment, there was no time to go back to the city to repair their swords.

.....

I sent out a message to Misty Clouds, “Misty Clouds, 30,000 players from [Vanguard] are moving straight towards you!”

Misty Clouds immediately replied, “Yup, we can already see them. Actually, it’s not just [Vanguard], there’s also their henchmen guilds. They have a total of 100,000 men. They really do think highly of [Enemies at the Gate]. Motherf\*cker, Jian Feng Han is really just too cruel. He probably saw that [Enemies at the Gate] was in the top ten in the Chinese Rankings, and so he wants to take this chance and send out troops to knock us down a peg!”

I said, “How many people does [Enemies at the Gate] have? How long can you last?”

Misty Clouds smiled and said, “This... please believe in us! [Enemies at the Gate] can have 30,000 players online. Right now, I have 27,000 players with me right now and I can hold them off for a bit. [Zhan Long] doesn’t need to come here. I’ve been watching over your battle situation and you’ve already lost nearly 50% of your soldiers. You still have to face many more strong enemies., and so I’m asking that you do not come. Just leave this area to us, [Enemies at the Gate]. At worst, we can ask [Blood Contract] to come as well. Han Bei Song doesn’t have much talent, but he does have a lot of people.”

“Ok, alright then. Thank you!”

“Don’t mention it, we’re brothers, no need for thanks. Good luck to you guys!”

“Ok!”

.....

I closed the messaging screen and then talked with a few Assassins from the main guild, and had them share their intelligence reports. Just as expected, a large amount of [Vanguard]’s players were coming out of the passing from Sword Saint Forest and coming towards us from the Grave of the Warring States. They were heading straight for the eastern side of Green Qilin Valley where [Enemies at the Gate] was camped. Smoke started to rise on the horizon and I could tell that the fighting had started. A few small guilds had clashed with [Enemies at the Gate] but [Vanguard]’s main guild had yet to attack. There was still 16 hours until the quest was over. Looks like Jian Feng Han wasn’t feeling impatient, and wanted to whittle away [Enemies at the Gate] before crushing them in one fell swoop.

Misty Clouds raised his blade and loftily stood in the air. The power of the Four Guardians glowed in both of his arms and his cloak fluttered behind his back. He stood at the frontlines and shouted, “Brothers, seeing as [Vanguard] is already making its move, then let us hesitate no more. Everyone, open up the system battle menu and join the Chi Yu Han battle camp! This way, at least while our dead have sacrificed themselves, they’ll have gained something from it!”

In seconds, the names of nearly 30,000 [Enemies At the Gate] brothers all turned green to represent the fact that they were our allies, while the names of the [Vanguard] players all turned red. Now it was clear which side everybody was on. This battle wasn’t for the sake of justice or what was right, but rather for the sake of everyone’s rankings!

.....

The average level and equipment of [Enemies at the Gate]’s players were around 13% weaker than [Zhan Long]’s, and around 7% weaker than [Vanguard]. However, they were much stronger than that of those small trash guilds. Especially to an expert like Misty Clouds, who had the Four Divine Symbols Guardian class, a single skill was enough to massacre all of the people before him.

Around 20 minutes after [Enemies at the Gate] started battling, they already took the upper hand. I then closed the screen share.

General Li Mu raised his sword and grunted under his breath, “They’re here, [The Knights Templar] and [Fantasy Kingdom] have arrived! They’re about to appear. Everyone, be careful, and prepare for an attack!”

“Sha sha.....”

On the flatlines above us, a crowd of Fan Shu City players all charged out of the forest and ran straight to the border of the valley. With all of them crowded at the edge, I could see that they all had the same elegant Fan Shu City symbol floating above their arm, but they didn’t look the least bit elegant themselves. This time, they were here for [Zhan Long]’s head. But, as always, diplomacy was always better than violence. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and slowly walked forward. When I reached the halfway point between the valley and the border, I stepped onto a sturdy ledge and grinned towards the players above, “What has gotten Fan Shu City’s number four and five guild so interested in, so as to come so far to Ba Huang City?”

From within the crowd, a Knight clothed in golden armor and carrying a long halberd appeared, with a Guild Master symbol of [The Knights Templar] floating above his shoulder. Indeed, he had a pretty high level. A line of words floated above his head——

Shang Li Lv 87 Divine Knight

City: Fan Shu City

Guild: The Knights Templar

Position: Guild Master

CBN Rank: 27

.....

Shang Li raised his long halberd and stared right into my eyes. He then smiled. “I heard that Ba Huang City had a crazy strong Healer that switched into a Dragon City Swordsman class. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, a legendary player, you managed to become a black horse during the Hero’s Rising Tournament, and made your

debut. You then created [Zhan Long], a guild that dominated the Northeastern side of Ba Huang City. And so, today, I have specially brought my [Knights Templar] to come and have a little duel with you. At the same time, I'll join this Ba Huang City vs Chi Yu Han quest. This battle has nothing to do with vengeance or grudge. It is purely for the sake of allowing [The Knights Templar] to have a fun little duel with [Zhan Long]. I hope Guild Master Xiao Yao would understand!"

I nodded, "Alright, I'd be happy to oblige! Then.... [Fantasy Kingdom] Guild Master, what are your thoughts?"

Beside Shang Li was an Assassin carrying a dagger. I looked above his head and saw his ID: Sole Heir, Guild Master of [Fantasy Kingdom]. He looked around 20 years old. He smiled at me, "Guild Master Xiao Yao, I am a candid person. This time, I came here for the sake of the quest. After all, a Saint Tier equipment is just too attractive. Us of [Fantasy Kingdom] can't just dismiss such an enticing incentive, and so I ask that you be understanding. We are a group of people battling for the sake of points. Our purpose is to prevent [Zhan Long]'s allies from earning points, you must understand...."

I smiled. "Understood...."

When I finished talking, I slid down the hill a dozen meters and stood before the [Zhan Long] formation. I then pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and pointed forward, then shouted, "[Knights Templar] and [Fantasy Kingdom] come at us. You must've heard about us before, well, now, I will let you experience the determination of [Zhan Long]'s brothers. Don't think that just because you have more people, you have the advantage. I will let you understand what true desperation feels like!"

"Come at us!"

Shang Li swung his halberd and smiled. "[Knights Templar] pull out your weapons and charge forward! This time, our enemy is [Zhan Long], an unprecedented strong enemy. Fight with all you have! We'll charge through the enemy lines. Attack!"

On the hill, countless [Knights Templar] Knight players all pulled out their weapons and charged down the hill on the command. Sole Noble pulled out his

dagger and also let out a command. [Fantasy Kingdom]’s close combat type players also advanced forward. A flood of enemies sprinted down the hill. This was already many times greater than the time when [Flying Dragon] and the other two guilds came at us!

I gritted my teeth and gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword. Behind me, I had set up four Azure Dragon Crossbows. The giant gods all roared and pulled at their bowstrings. “Shua Shua Shua!” They shot into the enemy crowds, killing several of the Knights before they could even reach within 50 yards of us. Wan Er then summoned her Purple Kirin Dragon and it breathed fire onto the enemy. The enemy Swordsmen all raised their swords and activated [Flying Sword] to try and kill the dragon. Unfortunately for them, all dragon types had high defense, and a few small [Flying Sword]s wouldn’t be enough to kill it.

Smoke started to rise above the battlefield as Fox commanded the Musketeers to open fire and create a fire net above the enemy. Dong Cheng also raised her staff and began to cast spells. Now that the rain had stopped, [Magma Abyss] could now be used at its fullest potential. From a distance, Dancing Forest also raised her bow and activated [Hell’s Meteor Shower], ambushing all of the heavy armor players.

“Prepare for ramming attack!”

One Second Hero raised his shield in front of his chest and gritted his teeth, “Over 50% of the players in the [Knights Templar] are Knights. Right now, there aren’t any players that are over Lv 100, and so they don’t have too great of an advantage. As long as we can hold them off, these Knights will just be sending their heads to us!”

In the next second, the [Knights Templar] heavy armor players all rammed into [Zhan Long]’s defense formation. They clashed and within seconds, killed a dozen of our people. That was enough to prove that these people weren’t here to give us their heads easily. If we were too careless, they would actually be collecting our heads instead.

With a flick of my wrist, my Dragon Reservoir Sword swung out. I gave a roar and pushed away a dozen [Knights Templar] players. I then waved my hand in the air, and [Soul Army] descended upon their lines. At the same time, I

activated [Sword Tempest] and advanced forward several steps. I pulled out my Cold Iron Sword and hacked through the crowd with both of my swords. While I was attacking, my shoulder and abdomen were continuously suffering attacks like [Skyshaker Slash], [Flame Axe] and [Flying Sword]. Shang Li that man really is strong, to actually be able to concentrate so much fire on me so as to impede my attacks?!

“Hum” My [Wall of Dou Qi] activated and I didn’t retreat. Instead, I stared right at the enemy camp and charged forward. I relied on my 10% drain to recover my health. At the same time, magic and arrows all smacked into me, and all I could do was rely on my maneuvers to manage the damage!

“F\*ck, we can’t kill him?!”

Shang Li roared in anger and then raised his halberd to charge at me. From a distance, he threw a [Skyshaker Pierce]+[Flame Axe]. “Peng Peng!” The two skills exploded on me. His attack really was above average!

“1329 ! ”

“1727 ! ”

I trembled a little, and retreated after taking the pain. My chest had several [Scatter Shot] arrows buried into the chest plate. On the good side, my defense was extremely high, and so was the durability of my armor. That way, I managed to dodge several attacks. Shang Li got closer and closer to me, and repeatedly pierced his halberd into my back. It was extremely painful.

Unable to take it anymore, I dashed across the broken rocks, and then spun around. “Pa!” I grabbed onto Shang Li’s halberd and pulled it away. He immediately fell forward. Then, with a flash of my Dragon Reservoir Sword, along with the support of my Cold Iron Sword, I threw four quick attacks. At that point, Shang Li’s armor had a layer of power from [Divine Shield]. Despite my attacks, I didn’t actually break through it! One after another, damage numbers flew up——

“3127 ! ”

“3221 ! ”

“2818 ! ”



“2717 ! ”

.....

In seconds, he had received over ten thousand damage, but he still had 25% of his health left. He immediately retreated and used a [Cleansing Wind] to recover health. Astonished, he said, “F\*ck, what a strong attack power!”

I was even more shocked. Even while I had stacked my [Kill for Blood] to 100, I only dealt 3000 damage?!

In the team chat, Wan Er said, “Pig, Shang Li’s [Divine Shield] is already Lv 9. It increases his defense by 270%. Just his physical defense is already even stronger than your [Wall of Dou Qi], and so it’s a class to somewhat restrain you.”

I nodded in understanding. I then raised both of my swords and cut down another Knight. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K all shouted. The enemy’s numbers were enough to crush us. This time, we really had to put our all into this battle, or else we really would be crushed.

## Chapter 508 Reckless Soldier

Shang Li was pushed backwards but he didn't actually escape. He knew that I couldn't instantly kill him, and so he disappeared into the crowded frontlines and looked for an opportunity to suppress me again. This was an extremely smart bastard. He knew to suppress [Zhan Long]'s strongest firepower, thus decreasing the damage done to his own guild.

However, Shang Li had overlooked the fact that in [Zhan Long], besides me, there was also Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Wang Jian, Li Mu, Old K, Dancing Forest, and Qing Qian who were also experts in dealing tons of damage. All across the frontline there were flashes of light, especially coming from Dancing Forest's [Hell's Meteor Shower]. It was as though a death god was dealing judgement upon the enemy's formation. Furthermore, with the protection of Tang Xin, they couldn't kill Dancing Forest so easily. Old K also had his [Fierce Sun] special skill and killed over a hundred people. There was no way to deal with it otherwise, all of their players were heavy armor types, while Old K's Fierce Sun battle axe was a Valkyrie Tier. It only dealt 3000-4000 physical damage, and couldn't instantly kill many people. Moreover, the Mages and Healers had shields while the Archers mostly have over 5000 health. [Fierce Sun] at most could increase the pressure on the enemy, but couldn't completely crush them.

"Hong!"

I threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] into the crowd of people and immediately moved sideways. I hacked at the enemy with both of my swords, and left a trail of blood in my path. My War Swept Cloak fluttered behind me, and I seemed to be a whirlwind sweeping through the core of the [Knights Templar]. I went 100 yards, and after successfully going through a [Sword Tempest], I immediately activated [Haste] and retreated. Even Shang Li wouldn't have been able to keep me trapped there.

Right at that moment, a high tier Knight from the [Knights Templar] carrying a halberd shouted, "Guild Master, how could we let Xiao Yao Zi Zai arrogantly come and go as he pleases? Brothers, charge with me! Prepare your [Scattered Shot]s and aim them all on Xiao Yao Zi Zai. [Zhan Long] cannot exist without a

leader, or else this battle will not end!”

The man who was charging over was none other than the [Knights Templar]’s Vice Guild Master: Reckless Soldier, Lv 87 Knight. It looks like his armor was pretty good, or else he wouldn’t be so confident. All he did was activate a [Dou Qi Armor].

I raised my two swords and made a quick retreat, “I’m going to take a [Scattered Shot]. Wan Er and Qing Qian, support me as I deal with Reckless Soldier. Let’s kill the two Vice Guild Masters of [Knights Templar], and then kill the king!”

Wan Er and Qing Qian both nodded, “Yup!”

Reckless Soldier was followed by a dozen Archers. They all pulled open their bows, with a glowing arrow nocked on the string. In the next moment, several [Scattered Shot]s flew straight at me. With my skill at maneuvering, dodging them would’ve been no problem, but this time, I didn’t dodge. Instead, I crossed my two swords in front of my chest and took a defensive stance!

“Keng keng keng....”

With a flash, a [Scattered Shot] bounced off of the blades of my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Cold Iron Sword, bringing out several MISSes. There was no other way, my stats were just too high. The difference of stats in determined the success rate of a skill. These Archers were just too much weaker than me, and basically couldn’t break through my defense. The success rate of a stun from those [Scatter Shot]s was not even 5%!

However, they didn’t disappoint me in the end. Finally, a [Scatter Shot] pierced right into my neck, and blood spurted out. The stun had finally succeeded and lasted for 2 seconds!

“Kill!”

Reckless Soldier roared and raised his halberd. Within seconds, he managed to decrease the distance between us to 10 yards. He then used a [Skyshaker Pierce]+[Flame Axe] and sliced into my chest!

“Keng keng!”

“1127 ! ”

“987 ! ”

His attack power was a lot weaker than Shang Li’s. All he could do was widen his eyes and shout, “What a high defense! Are you still a Swordsman?”

At that moment, Wan Er and Qing Qian both activated [Absolute Step] and charged towards us. In the distance, Shang Li shouted to Reckless Soldier, “Yo, hurry up and come back! It’s a trap! They’re going to kill you!”

Reckless Soldier gritted his teeth and said, “Mages, focus your fire on Xiao Yao Zi Zai, I’ll hold off the others. If we kill him, then we’ll win!”

“Peng!” He rammed his shield into the ground. Reckless Soldier was a brave man, and was just going to go against me like that. While I was suffering from the Mages’ [Magma Abyss]es and [Indigo Sea Arrow]s, I swung both of my swords and poured Dou Qi into the blades. My aim wasn’t to attack faster, but to increase the power of my blade. I then threw three combos into Reckless Soldier’s shield!

“3512 ! ”

“3311 ! ”

“2919 ! ”

Motherf\*cker, what a strong defense. That trash had nearly 7000 defense, and that shield was probably a Saint Tier. It increased his defense by at least 1500, or else there would have been no way he could so perfectly defend against my damage.

“F\*ck!”

After three attacks, Reckless Soldier suddenly raised his halberd and threw a heavy slash and retreated. He had at least 15,000 health, as he now only had around 50% of it left. If he didn’t leave now, then he would never have been able to escape. Even a [Heal] from a Healer would be no use. After all, this was [Zhan Long]’s formation. There was damage coming from all sides!

“Sha sha sha....”

Wan Er immediately leapt over, her white cloak fluttering behind her. The

Dragon's Kiss dagger in her hand started glowing with Dou Qi energy from the Hermit God. She fluttered her eyes, and said in the team chat, "Pig, drag him over here. Watch out for [Fierce Ram] and use [Great Realm of Desolation] to decrease his heal recovery!"

"Yup!"

I opened my hand, but Reckless Soldier immediately noticed my killing intent. He immediately locked a [Fierce Ram] onto Li Mu to increase the distance between us, and thus not get cursed by me.

"Shua!"

While Reckless Soldier began his charge, I locked my [Great Realm of Desolation] onto him, and then I activated my special skill [Defeat the Dragon]!

"Peng!"

A dragon chain flew out and grabbed onto Reckless Soldier and dragged him to me. I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword and activated [Wind Blade]+[Strength of a Thousand Men]. That trash, however, had too much defense and health. In the blink of an eye, he escaped my [Defeat the Dragon] and raised his halberd and heavy shield. This was probably Reckless Soldier's talent, not getting killed!

However, a red light flashed out and Reckless Soldier was stunned. Wan Er walked from behind him and activated [Blade of the Death God]. In three slashes, Reckless Soldier's health dropped to the bottom!

Qing Qian sprinted over and cast a [Grip of the Firefox]. "Kong!" I could here a fox roar out, and Reckless Soldier finally fell to the ground. He had been killed by our two female Assassins!

Right at that moment, a group of [Knights Templar]'s core experts charged towards Wan Er. This group was going to put their lives on the line to protect Reckless Soldier! Shang Li raised his halberd and stabbed at Wan Er's back!

"Ah...."

Wan Er gave a soft grunt. She suddenly spun around and grabbed her Iron Umbrella. "Peng!" She opened it up and rammed it into Shang Li's incoming

halberd. Afterwards, another Swordsman threw a [Skyshaker Slash] towards the beautiful little miss. Wan Er immediately retreated and raised her Dragon's Kiss dagger to parry the attack. Although she successfully defended herself, she had lost balance.

“Die!”

A Berserker activated [Berserker God] and charged towards us. With both hands, he raised his battle axe and threw a fierce slice!

Wan Er flew into the sky and gripped her iron umbrella with both hands. “Peng!” She blocked the attacks, but was forced back a dozen meters. Moreover, rays of magic fell onto her. No matter how good her maneuvers were, she had no way of using her Iron Umbrella to defend. Her health immediately fell. “Hua!” She fell into the grass and rolled, her white armor was covered in mud.

I quickly raised my hand and gave a [Heal] to her. Afterwards, I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and charged towards the main culprit. My blade pierced right into his chest. In addition, the Purple Kirin Dragon activated [Dragon's Breath], killing the Berserker in one blow. At the same time, I saw another Knight about to attack Wan Er. It was [Knights Templar]'s other Vice Guild Master—— Ye Du Ge, a Lv 87 Knight!

I raised my hand and activated [Dragon's Hook]!

“Be careful, Du Ge!”

With Shang Li's shout, Ye Du Ge raised his long sword and retreated. He stared at my arm. The second that the Dragon's Hook activated, Ye Du Ge immediately side stepped two steps, dodging the skill! This was a man that was highly skilled in maneuvers!

“Peng!”

My Dragon's Hook pierced into the opposite cliff, and without any hesitation, I tugged on the chain. The hook immediately shrunk, bringing me forward. I passed right by Ye Du Ge and swept out my Dragon's Reservoir Sword!

“Pu!”

“3983 ! ”

Yup, Ye Du Ge wasn't wasn't a stamina Knight, and his defense was much lower than Reckless Soldier and Shang Li's. From the way that he dodged the Dragon's Hook, I could tell that he had added a lot of agility to his stats. He raised his long sword and charged towards me, and used a [Fierce Ram]!

While I was in the air, I threw a [Wind Blade], dispelling the [Fierce Ram]. Spells and arrows flew straight at me, for I had become the center target of all of the enemy's firepower.

Ye Du Ge's long sword flew through the air and suddenly threw a fiery slash. That trash was an attack type Knight!

I felt as though my entire body had been turned into a porcupine. My [Wall of Dou Qi] had already disappeared, and there were still a few seconds before the cool down was over. I needed to make it through this. I raised my Cold Iron Sword and “Keng!”, I parried Ye Du Ge's slash, forcing me to fly backwards. While I was in the air, I raised my sword and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] into the crowd!

Not only did Ye Du Ge's attack not succeed, he had also lost 4000 health from the area attack. He gritted his teeth and retreated!

“Peng!”

When I reached the ground, I slid through the grass several meters. I then activated the God Army Cards in my hand and [Seven Star Teleportation] appeared before me. I raised my sword and stepped into the light. “Shua!” I appeared beside Ye Du Ge, and then he immediately flicked his wrist and stabbed his sword toward me.

In terms of swordsmanship, I was an expert. Without hesitation, I raised my boot, and “Peng!” I kicked his wrist, cutting off the attack. Right afterwards, I went on the offensive and Ye Du Ge's eyes revealed a sliver of fear, “Oh no!”

I threw five cuts with my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Cold Iron Sword. Ye Du Ge's health had been hacked down while he was in the air and with a grunt, he died.

I roared and activated [Wall of Dou Qi]. Behind me, Wan Er, Wolf, Li Mu and a

few others walked over and we pushed forward on the frontlines once again. Like that, we had forced [Knights Templar] back. In addition, [Zhan Long] only suffered a little damage. All of our Garrison Outfit players activated [Impact Roar] and in the blink of an eye, [Knights Templar] had been crushed.



# Chapter 509 Crushing the Ambush

As a number of repeated strikes were launched out, [Knights Templar] could not defend at all. As I had expected they were completely annihilated by [Zhan Long]'s firepower. Things were going completely according to the plan; otherwise, we would've had to fight an unruly battle. The thing was that half of [Knights Templar] could take out our 12,000 [Zhan Long] players. On one end, Wang Jian, Li Mu, Matcha, and Qing Qian waited for the enemy to be injured before charging into battle with [Valiant Bravery]. As they surged forward, Sole Heir narrowly escaped being killed by Wang Jian. He did not attempt to move forward. No matter how skilled he was at maneuvering, he couldn't try any tricks with Wang Jian and Old K, those two killing machines going after him. Otherwise he would be instantly killed!

.....

Out of 120 Garrison Outfit men we had, 100 were left standing, which wasn't too bad of a loss. The cavalry charged forward causing much chaos in the battlefield. About less than 2 hours later, the valley was littered with the corpses of players. Both the largest guilds who had come today has suffered large casualties. From the 50,000 players from [Zhan Long] that came today, only 20,000 were still alive. The looks on everyone's faces became grave, as they began realizing that 20,000 people were not enough to win this fight. It was impossible.

"Sha Sha..."

My battle boots stepped across the blood soaked grass and my Dragon Reservoir Sword was also dripping blood. I roamed the frontlines, and killed all of the high level players on the enemy side. This was my job. As for all of the newbies, I left those to Dong Cheng Lei and Old K. Wan Er, Qing Qian, and Wang Jian's goal was the same as mine. We purposely sought out the high level players and decreased their damage, making it easier for our main force to fight.

I glanced at the point rankings and saw that the Kill Count of our [Zhan Long]

camp had reached a crazy level——

Chi Yu Han Camp:

1. Xiao Yao Zi Zai Kill Count: 1238
2. Hero Ran Min Kill Count: 977
3. Cang Yue Kill Count: 804
4. Cang Tong Kill Count: 775
5. Dancing Forest Kill Count: 720
6. Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands Kill Count: 614
7. General Wang Jian Kill Count: 541
8. Yue Qing Qian Kill Count: 477
9. General Li Mu Kill Count: 412
10. Misty Cloud Kill Count: 374

.....

Basically, the top ten players have already killed around 7000 players by themselves! That is an enormous amount for ten players. This group of players was always on the front lines, suppressing our opponents and protecting their friends. This shows how important a “Hero Class” player was to a guild. It could be said that the reason [Zhan Long] was able to go through all these battles was because of them. This was also due to the efforts of Qing Qian and Li Mu as they discovered more and more high level players to join our core strength. We would never think that we had too many skilled players in our midst. Besides, right now, we were only battling on the guild level. In the future, when we get to the country battles, the standards for top tier players will be even more intense. Whoever has a group of super strength, determined brothers, is who will be able to rise up on top in this chaotic world!

Afterwards, I glanced at the Kill Count on the Ba Huang City side, only to have my heart crushed. F\*ck, a lot of our people had been killed. Now that [Enemies at the Gate] joined the Chi Yu Han Camp and been brutally attacked by [Vanguard], the Kill Count of the enemy suddenly exploded——

Ba Huang City Camp:

1. Jian Feng Han Kill Count: 441
2. Simple Kill Count: 219
3. Fallen Wolf Kill Count: 129

4. Drunken Spear Kill Count: 97

5. Shang Li Kill Count: 54

.....

I looked at my palms as they filled up with cold sweat. God knows what [Vanguard] was thinking. Jian Feng Han actually killed 441 [Enemies at the Gate] payers. The situation on the eastern front wasn't looking too good. Right here on the [Zhan Long] battlefield, Shang Li had killed 54 [Zhan Long] members and took four of our player's garrison outfits. After [Vanguard] joined the war, the mission to rescue Chi Yu Han became even harder.

Looking at the interface, there were still fourteen hours before the end of the mission. We still have to fight hard for another fourteen hours.

Qing Qian held her dagger and flew over, "Brother Xiao Yao, I've received some news from the scouts that I dispatched to Sword Saint's Forest. [Vanguard] has a 50000 strong army and is attacking the base of [Enemies at the Gate]. I don't think that [Enemies at the Gate] can hold on any longer. They've already lost around 50% of their men while [Vanguard] didn't even lose 10000 men. If they continue on like this, then one of our allies will be annihilated.

I gritted my teeth and said, "Immediately assemble the brothers from the main guild. All of the 100 Garrison Outfit warriors follow me. I'll also take another 2000 men with me. We're going to break out of the Green Qilin Valley encirclement and head towards the Eastern side of the Sword Saint Forest. From there we'll ambush the left flank of [Vanguard]'s main formation and decrease the pressure on [Enemies at the Gate]....."

"But, brother...." Qing Qian blinked a few times and said, "[Vanguard] still has 40,000 people in the Sword Saint Forest! You only have 2000, will that be enough? Besides, Jian Feng Han isn't an idiot, he'll probably see us coming!"

I laughed and wiped off the blood on my face, "But Melon, It was because of us that [Enemies at the Gate] has fallen to such a sorry state. If we don't go and assist them, do we deserve to be called their allies? Li Mu will lead the [Valiant Bravery] camp and stay here to fight the [Knights Templar] and [Fantasy Kingdom]. All people from the [Zhan Long] main guild follow me, and prepare to

break out of the encirclement!”

Wan Er bit her lip and pondered for a second, “There’s still around 3100 left in the [Zhan Long] main guild. Totaling the entire guild with the main guild, we still have 8000 players left. Are you sure you want to break out of the valley?”

I nodded, “Yup, we’ll fight with all we have. Besides, we need to create an opportunity for [Enemies at the Gate] to fight back!”

Li Mu laughed loudly, “En. If I was the Guild Master, I would do this too.”

Wang Jian continued, “Brother Xiao Yao, I’ll lead [Valiant Bravery] to kill them outside the encampment and create an opportunity for you guys to break through. You can leave this place to Li Mu and I. We won’t disappoint you!”

I nodded, “Good brother, let’s do this!”

“Yes!”

.....

When I gathered everyone together, I had 3000 of [Zhan Long]’s elite players lined up behind me. Wang Jian, Li Mu, and Bai Qi all took command of the [Valiant Bravery] camp and began to lay siege to the enemy. It was as though this was their last charge, as they ran up the hill with all their energy. Like that, they had immediately occupied the area, and faced the 20,000 Fan Shu City troops without any intention of backing away.

“Break through!”

I unsheathed my sword and went straight towards the high plains with the 3000+ [Zhan Long] camp players. In just a few moments, we were able to break through the encirclement and rushed towards the Sword Saint’s Forest.

After breaking through, the encirclement lost around 100 members while our 3000 strong unit was still intact. However, everyone had a tired expression on their faces. There was nothing we could do about it. In order to finish this mission to rescue Chi Yu Han, everyone had to suffer a bit. With [Zhan Long]’s strength, it was a miracle that we were able to beat seven other big guilds. We were all learning through life and death experiences. After this mission, we will rise from the ashes and truly become one of the leading guilds in Destiny. We’ll

be on the same level as [Legend] and [Hero's Mound].

“Careful!”

Wan Er suddenly raised her pale arm and suspiciously looked into the forest. She then softly said, “The grass looks like it’s been stepped on. On top of that, it looks as though those bushes have been cut down. It’s probably because someone was trying to hide in the plants. There has to be an ambush waiting for us 200 yards from us. It’s 20 degrees south east. From the looks of it, there’s probably around 5000 players there.”

Qing Qian gasped, “Sister Cang Tong, how... how could you know something so clearly?”

Matcha said, “This is just observational skill. Our Lin beauty really has a lot of game experience.....”

Dancing Forest grasped her Crystal Dragon Long Bow and said, “We know that they’re trying to ambush us here, but what should we do?”

I raised my hand and pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword with a smile, “The 100 Garrison Outfit players, charge forward with me! That ambush is just a bunch of [Beast Traps]. When you get attacked, don’t panic. All Mages, use [Revealing Light] on the area and prepare your fire spells, just in case we get hit by the Death God Arrows. Everyone charge forward! If they want to ambush us, then we’ll just crush them back!”

Matcha smiled. “Wow. Boss is so formidable. Let’s do it!”

.....

“Kill!”

With this kill command, I raised my long sword and charged forward with Old K, Qing Qian, One Second Hero, Star Blade, Tang Xin and the other [Zhan Long] camp heavy armor type players. Under the starry night, everyone rushed through the forest and evaded the beast traps easily. When we reached the shrubs, many Archers and Mages appeared one by one and cast their skills onto us.

I turned around and smiled. “Yong Ji?! Charge!”

One Second Hero laughed and rammed his heavy armor into the ground. He then activated the Fierce Sun Shield's special skill——[Fierce Sun Wall]. At that moment, all [Zhan Long] players within a 1000 yard radius had a ray of light land on them. For seven seconds, their physical and magical defense would increase exponentially. My [Hell's Flame Armor] already had a lot of magical defense, and with this extra boost, none of the [Magma Abyss]es under my feet could deal much damage!

“[Flying Sword]!”

Moon Feather shouted and let her sword fly out of her hand, right through several Archers and Mages. Meanwhile, several hundred other Swordsmen all released [Flying Sword], and the swords crisscrossed through the forest. Dancing Forest then let out her [Hell's Meteor Shower], and all of the Garrison Outfit players charged into the chaos. Together, they activated [Impact Roar], letting out several shockwaves that destroyed the tranquility of the entire forest!

“F\*ck, has [Zhan Long] gone crazy?!”

One [Vanguard] team leader stood up and shook off the grass hat on his head. He shouted, “Don't hide yourself anymore! It's time to attack them head on! Brothers, charge alongside me! Motherf\*ckers, to think that someone would actually deal with an ambush like this! It really is shameless!”

.....

A head on attack, that was just what I wanted. I was extremely confident in the elites of our [Zhan Long] main guild. In a head on attack, my 3000 men were far more than enough to deal with their 5000. Their advantage would disappear within a second!

The reality of the battle was just as I had thought. With a single charge from the [Zhan Long]'s elites, we crushed the 5000 man troop. Furthermore, there weren't any high level players like Simple or Jian Feng Han. This was now [Zhan Long]'s killing ground!

In a short twenty minutes, we were able to kill the 5000 [Vanguard] players who were ambushing us. They dropped around 3000 pieces of equipment and ran away.

.....

Coming out of the forest, the battle between [Vanguard] and [Enemies at the Gate] could be seen in the far plain.

I didn't hesitate, raised my sword and yelled out, "Follow up our victory and pursue the retreating enemies. Destroy [Vanguard]'s flank!"

# Chapter 510 Incomparable Confidence

On the plains, 3000 of [Zhan Long]’s players all charged into the Sword Saint Forest. With Wan Er, Qing Qian, Old K, Wolf and I leading, the army drove straight into [Vanguard]’s flank, even if we only had 3000 people [Vanguard] still wouldn’t dare be too careless. Afterall, we were all [Zhan Long]’s elite players. In the distance, Jian Feng Han pulled a bloody sword out of one of [Enemies at the Gate]’s Knights and he shouted, “Leafy Gentleman, lead a team of players to hold off [Zhan Long]. We just need half an hour. In that time we’ll be able to deal with all of [Enemies at the Gate]’s main force!”

Leafy Gentlemen was the Guild Master of [Vanguard: Division One]. At that moment, [Vanguard: Division One] had already risen to a Lv 5 guild and had already reached its 10,000 man limit. Under the command of Leafy Gentlemen, around 7000 players left their formation and headed towards us. When they were around 5000 yards away from us, they immediately created a formation. All of the Knights, Swordsmen, and Berserkers stood at the front, while the Archers and Mages followed behind them. This time, [Vanguard] was going to defend until we exhausted ourselves.

.....

As I sprinted forward, I glanced at Wolf, Old K, Wan Er and the rest and smiled. “What’s wrong, are you guys nervous?”

Wan Er grinned, “What for?”

Old K raised his battle axe and laughed, “Nothing, really. We just have to kill them!”

Matcha fluttered her eyes and said, “Boss, how are we going to get past their firenet? Our priority should be on gaining the upper hand in this battle. Once we get tangled up with [Vanguard: Division One] then we’ll have no way of getting out. Besides, their numbers far outnumber our own.”

I nodded, “Agreed. Let’s start off with one hard hit. Later, I’ll use [Dragon Transformation] to charge through the firenet, and then I’ll use [Halberd Flame]



to massacre them. Qing Qian, prepare your [Grip of the Firefox] and [Glacial Hammer] and make sure you don't overlap with my range of attack. Wan Er, Dong Cheng, and Dancing Forest, all of you spread out your attacks as well. We'll begin with one large scale attack that will cripple them. Then, within the first three seconds after everyone has used their attacks, Old K, you have to bring out [Fierce Sun] and use that to crush [Vanguard: Division One]. Don't focus on any one person. After our first wave of attacks, we'll go after Leafy Gentlemen!"

"Yes sir!" Everyone nodded.

.....

"Sha sha sha...."

My battle boots stepped onto the wild grass as I dashed across the field. When there was only 50 yards between me and the enemy, they had already begun to deal attacks. [Magma Abyss]es and several arrow type skills all landed in the grass in front of me. I smiled and activated my special skill, [Dragon Transformation]! With the sound of a dragon's roar ringing through the air, my armor turned into dragon scales and I obtained the ability to fly. I stepped off the ground and leapt into the sky. I then pulled out my Cold Iron Sword and let it fly out. "Hua Cha!" It cut through the crowd. I then raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash], shaking the enemy formation. But those attacks weren't enough to completely crush them.

"Peng!"

I pushed three Knights away from me and then grabbed my returning Cold Iron Sword. With both swords in hand, I activated [Sword Tempest], creating a fierce wind. I then used another [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. At that moment, ten people fell to my swords. They didn't even have the chance to recover their health.

"Kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai!"

Leafy Gentleman raised his sword and charged at me. At the same time, a group of Swordsmen all activated their [Flying Sword]s and targeted it on me and a group of Berserkers activated [Battle Axe Throw]. This barrage was pretty intense!

I suddenly halted, and then I made a side step. “Peng!” I walked in a broken line and swept my sword out. With a turn, I walked in another diagonal path and created a Z shape across the enemy lines. I then stepped out and jumped into the air. A bunch of axes fell at my feet with a “Keng keng!” And I had dodged the attacks.

At that moment, Wan Er had caught up to me. She waved her dagger and then “Ka ka ka!” Killed three people in one attack. When a flock of arrows flew at her, the beautiful little miss opened her hand and Dou Qi began to fill the air around her. Suddenly, her surroundings seemed to shift and “Hua Cha!” All of the arrows burrowed straight into the earth. This was her [Dimension Shift] skill, impressive!

However, the requirements for [Dimension Shift] were extremely high. Once Wan Er used her [Dimension Shift], she immediately retreated. For a short period of time, she wasn’t going to be able to use it again.

Old K roared and threw his Fierce Sun battle axe into the fray. At the same time, Qing Qian’s [Grip of the Firefox] and [Ice Hammer] all fell upon the enemy lines, while Dancing Forest’s [Hell’s Meteor Shower] also rained down from the sky. Dong Cheng used her [Thunderbolt Finger] and [Magma Lance] while [Flying Sword]s pierced through the army. All of the enemy’s health greatly decreased!

Old K shouted and the battle axe flew straight into the sky. At the same time, he threw out a punch that pushed away two Knights!

“Hong!”

Flames started to rise from the sky and gather around the battle axe as it descended from the sky!

“Peng!”

A shockwave of flames spread out from where the battle axe landed and all enemies within a thousand yards suffered the attack. Even the players from [Vanguard]’s main guild took damage. Old K’s weapon really was amazing. The players who only had half health couldn’t hold up anymore. Within moments, an enormous group of white lights flew up. This time, the [Fierce Sun]’s success rate was pretty big, within the blink of an eye, it killed 400 people!

.....

Moon Feather, Star Blade, Tang Xin and the rest all picked up their blades and rushed forward to attack. The 100 players with Garrison Outfits all activated [Impact Roar] into the crowd. None of us retreated even half a step and we were all aiming to kill Leafy Gentleman. 3000 of [Zhan Long]’s elite charged right into the heart of [Vanguard: Division One]. Even though we hadn’t killed more than 1000 of their people, we had completely crushed all of their defenses. A hundred meters further and we’ll have reached [Vanguard]’s main guild!

“Hold them off!” A group of [Vanguard]’s main guild Swordsmen all charged towards us.

I smiled and raised my two bloody blades. In a flash, I activated my combos and time seemed to stop for a second. My Dragon Reservoir Sword cut into the neck of one Swordsman while my Cold Iron Sword parried the attack of another Swordsman. Then, I threw a second attack with my Dragon Reservoir Sword, blocking a [Combo] from another Swordsman and then speared his chest. My Cold Iron Sword then threw two attacks, cutting into another Swordsman’s neck. I spun around and rammed my Dragon Reservoir Sword into a Knight’s heavy shield and then swept out my Cold Iron Sword. The entire sequence of attacks occurred within 2 seconds and like that, I cut through an encirclement of a dozen players.

The tip of the sword in Leafy Gentleman’s hand fell to the ground as he looked towards me and shakily said, “what...what fast attack speed. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, is he still human?!”

Wan Er, Old K, Dong Cheng, and One Second Hero followed behind me. We had all given up on defending and all charged forward. Luckily, Tang Xing and Yao Yan all raised their shields to protect Dong Cheng, Darling Duck and the rest who were in the back row. All 2000 players maintained a quick advance, allowing us to cut straight into the heart of [Vanguard]’s formation.

.....

In the distance, on the frontlines of the battle between the two big guilds, I could see Misty Clouds fighting with a dented sword. He looked in our direction

and laughed, “F\*ck, you guys really have guts, charging in like that. Xiao Yao Zi Zai really deserves to be called the Guild Master of [Zhan Long].... [Zhan Long] can’t be more bold than it already is.....”

Sword Reborn swung his sword and shouted, “Guild Master, we should start our counterattack, or else Xiao Yao and that 3000 man army will get swallowed up. I can already see Jian Feng Han directing his strength towards the back!”

“Ok!”

.....

While we made our advance, a group of heavy armor players suddenly charged towards us. In front of them was Fushen Thousand Blade, [Vanguard]’s number one Monk. He held a heavy shield in one hand and a blade in the other. As the light reflected off his head, he roared, “Create a shield formation! Whatever it takes, we must hold Xiao Yao Zi Zai off! Vice Guild Master Simple is almost here. I don’t believe that a round of heavy firepower isn’t enough to kill them off. Charge!”

One after another, Knights and Monks all let their shields ram into the ground. There were around 500 players and all around them were Healers. Looks like they wanted to trap us here with this shield formation.

In the team chat, Wan Er said, “Simple will arrive within a minute. Pig, the situation is getting dangerous. We’re losing too many players at this rate. We must break through that formation within 60 seconds, or else we’ll die here. We’re all relying on you. Let’s focus our fire on Fushen, and kill him first. If we make Fushen, the strongest defender, as our goal, then we’ll crush [Vanguard]’s morale in one second!”

“Alright, work with me!”

“Yup!”

I suddenly charged forward and swept out my sword. I threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] from a distance, right onto Fushen Thousand Blade!

“3171 ! ”

Bastard, Fushen actually had a defense that reached 7000. It was even higher

than my own! Otherwise, how else would he take so little damage after such a strong attack. Furthermore, 3000 health was only 15% of his overall health. This was a ten thousand health super iron made meat shield!

I opened one hand and locked [Great Realm of Desolation] onto him, decreasing his health recovery by 50%.

I then leapt forward and raised my Halberd Wielder's Leg Guards. "Peng!" I knocked away Fushen Thousand Blade's Shield, forcing him to break his defense stance. An indigo colored wind drifted from my Dragon Reservoir Sword as I threw a [Wind Blade] and then a [Strength of a Thousand Men]. That wasn't all, I then swung both of my swords and threw 7 attacks within moments. That was already my strongest output of damage!

I then dipped forward, and "Kachink" my sword pierced through Fushen Thousand Blade with a [Blade Rush]. Then, I used a [Halberd Flame] and burned away some more of his health. At the same time, Wan Er took my place and suddenly threw out her Dragon's Kiss. She dealt a [Blade of the Death God]+[Twin Blade Harmony]+[Chain Attack]+[Flying Dagger], and basically used all of her Assassin skills. At the same time, Qing Qian used a [Grip of the Firefox] to deal a ranged ambush and then Wolf threw a [Flying Dagger] and a [Ten Way Blade].

"Wuaaa...."

With a miserable scream, after taking attacks from so many of [Zhan Long]'s experts, Fushen Thousand Blade that meat shield finally couldn't fend himself anymore and knelt to the ground. I then threw a [Sword Tempest] and charged through the shield formation. Old K, Matcha, and One Second Hero all swept through the formation behind me while [Zhan Long]'s 2000 players all rushed forward.

From a distance I could see that Simple had arrived. She waved her staff and activated [Magma Lance] before my army. Three of [Zhan long]'s players immediately died. The terrifying one had finally arrived!

# Chapter 511 The Sacrifice for Justice

“Hurry up!”

My Dragon Reservoir Sword flashed in the light as I swept across the crowd of enemies. I had opened up my [Wall of Dou Qi] and it took many hits. Matcha and I were in the back and took the rear. Wan Er and Dong Cheng lead the main force and continued north towards [Vanguard]’s main guild. As long as we could get through them, then we won’t be massacred here.

“Peng!”

The heavy shield in Matcha’s hand fell to the ground with a thud and she activated [Phantom Holy Shield]. She then swung her sword and activated [Phantom Ray Slash]+[Icy Spear] into the enemy. At the same time she looked at me and said, “Boss, you go first. I still have 19,000 health left, that’s enough to cover you!”

My blade glowed with the light of [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and smiled. “Don’t, I already have 21,222 health. It should be me covering for you! Matcha, go and catch up with the others Don’t worry, this group of players can’t kill me. Listen to me!”

Matcha didn’t say anything more and raised her shield to activate [Cleansing Wind]. She kept healing me while running into the distance.

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and walked in a horizontal path. My Cold Iron Sword flew out and spun through the enemy lines under the power of [Blade Spin]. In the distance, I could see Simple with a staff in one hand, running towards us. I raised my left arm and opened my hand. Simple glared at me and “Shua!” Used a [Dimension Leap]. She wasn’t going to give me any chance, probably because she’s extremely familiar with my special skills. [Defeat the Dragon]+[Curse of the Night Fury Asura]’s ability to pull an enemy close and curse them was just too fierce. Even a top tier Mage wouldn’t necessarily be able to hold off the attack.

Once Simple retreated. I immediately cut down four to five other players, and

drained back 50% of my health before walking forward and activating [Haste]. Wan Er was leading a team of players and wasn't more than 200 yards away from me and very soon, she caught up with me. Behind me, I set up two [Azure Dragon Crossbows] to deal damage. [Vanguard] could only deal with the Azure Dragons first before pursuing us. However, the power of this Crossbow was just too strong. The strongest quality of this Crossbow wasn't even the fact that it could deal ranged attacks, but rather the fact that it had such a strong attack power and piercing power. After an arrow struck a person, it would continue forward to and almost always potentially strike down more enemies.

.....

When I finally caught up with the rest of the team, Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Wolf, and Qing Qian had all charged through the [Vanguard] formation. Like that, our 3000 man team had passed through [Vanguard]'s defense army, rendering it impossible for them to block our path. After all, we had killed Fushen Thousand Blade. In regards to Jian Feng Han, he had absolutely no time to bother with us, as Misty Clouds that Four Symbols Guardian was enough to make his head hurt. On top of that, if he didn't completely defeat [Enemies at the Gate], then [Vanguard] might end up in a dragged out war. Finally, it didn't look as though [Prague], [Hero's Mound], or [Legend] were going to do anything.

I wasn't actually too worried about [Legend]. Fang Ge Que was renowned as the number one Mage god in China, and even more so, was Destiny's Chinese Servers number one player. His character wasn't bad, at least he would never use his power to bully others. Furthermore, [Legend]'s reputation was extremely good among the three great cities. If he weren't to join in this battle for points, then he's probably grinding levels elsewhere. Every Thursday, they have a BOSS event, and have never skipped it once. And so, this time, during the Chi Yu Han Camp quest, [Legend] will most likely not step into this murky water. That wasn't Fang Ge Que's style. He didn't care about one or two Saint Tier equipments, that was certain.

The only thing I wasn't sure about was whether or not [Hero's Mound] was going to send troops. That was something that was worth worrying over. We had all witnessed [Hero's Mound]'s power before. Even if [Zhan Long] had its complete 20,000 man strength, it wouldn't necessarily be [Hero's Mound]'s

equal. Especially now that it had been whittled down to just a few thousand. Once [Hero's Mound] comes again, then we'll be in danger. Besides, Jiu Li City's [House of Prestige] has also shown quite a bit of enmity towards [Zhan Long]. If Bai Li Ruo Feng were to come to Ba Huang City and deal a surprise attack, that would also deal a huge blow to us. All in all, there were still a dozen or so hours left, we were definitely not going to have a relaxing time.

.....

"Sha sha...."

My battle boots slid across the grass. I spun around and with a sweep of both of my swords, I killed two Assassins who were pursuing us. Blood splattered the ground, dying the grass red. I looked up and saw the path of bodies that [Zhan Long] left in its wake. Some of them were from our side, and some were from [Vanguard]. Of course there were more from [Vanguard].

"Stop the charge and stand in formation!"

Under Wan Er's command, Tang Xin, Matcha, and One Second Hero and the other heavy armor players all stopped their charge and turned around. They then rammed their heavy shields into the ground and assumed a defensive stance. Dancing Forest, Dong Cheng, and Thousand Suns and the rest all went into battle mode. After the bitter fight, Valiant Bravery only have around 1800 people left, but they were still able to create a defensive formation on the border of Glacial River Valley and dealt with [Vanguard]'s charge, We needed to stay on the defense, thus decreasing the firepower on [Enemies at the Gate], or else there would be no point for us in being here.

In the distance, Fallen Wolf, Leafy Gentlemen, and Goodby Tears all raised their blades and looked at us. Fallen Wolf raised his battle axe and shouted, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you guys really have guts. To actually charge into [Vanguard]'s formation with so little people. You really don't know your limits!"

I gave a wry smile and didn't respond.

Matcha raised her sword and pointed at Fallen Wolf and then with a pretty voice said, "Fallen Wolf, do you even have the gall to say such harsh words? Don't you have the same system calculating tools? Why don't you look at it. We [Zhan Long] had 3072 people enter the [Vanguard] formation and lost but 1194



players while we killed 4438 of [Vanguard]'s. Your main guild is just that strong... what a laughing stock!"

Matcha's words had completely infuriated Fallen Wolf. He raised his battle axe and roared, "Charge! Cut down all of [Zhan Long]'s people!"

Leafy Gentleman raised his eyebrows and said, "Brother Fallen Wolf, don't be impatient. Take a look at the situation first. Behind [Zhan Long] is Glacial River Valley's thick ice. On their left flank is Sword Saint Forest's cliff and on their right side is a thorny forest. Right now, they hold the advantage in terms of terrain. In the long run, all we'll do is force them into Glacial River Valley..."

Goodbye Tears raised his blade and nodded, "Yup, and if we were to try and do that, we would end up falling into [Zhan Long]'s plan. The further in we go into the Glacial River Valley, the harder it would be for us to pull out. Besides, our main formation is in Green Qilin Valley. We can't go too far into Glacial River Valley...."

Don't be Foolish walked forward with a spear in hand and laughed, "This bald donkey's courage really is small. Saying something like that shows that you clearly are afraid of [Zhan Long]. They just have 1800 people, while we have 7000 of our main guild's elites behind us! Besides, we even have Fallen Wolf and Simple here with us. Don't tell me that we still won't be able to defeat but 1800 of [Zhan Long]'s players?"

Goodbye Tears smiled and rubbed his bald head, "Alright, if you have so much courage, then why don't you go first and try out the waters!"

Don't Be Foolish raised his spear and his eyes didn't have a sliver a fear when he shouted, "Brothers of Team 3, follow me! Let's show this baldy and scholar what "If I don't go to hell, then who will!" And "Meeting face to face on a narrow path" truly means! Hmph, we'll show those Monks that no matter how many scriptures they may read, it all goes into their stomachs!"

As he finished talking, Don't Be Foolish's cape blew up in the wind as he began the charge in a grandiose manner. He raised his long sword and charged at us with a wolf's smile, shouting, "You only live once, and you must live it fully!"\*

\*TI Note: A Chinese poem with that basic meaning

...”

North Pole grinned, “That motherf\*cker actually knows how to recite poems, poems!”

Simple was expressionless, “Did you even say it right....”

.....

Don’t Be Foolish energetically charged towards us. When there was only 30 yards between us, they immediately suffered a volley of arrows. “Pa pa pa!” They all hit his face, but he still kept that smile, even though all of the muscles in his face were trembling from the arrows. He roared, “Do your Archers have so little power? Are you trying to itch a scratch? Brothers, let’s show them what it really means to be difficult!”

Blood dripped from his face and Don’t Be Foolish turned around to look. Behind him there was no one. At that moment, he suddenly started shaking, “What the f\*ck.... Where is everyone? How come I’m the only one who charged over.....”

I raised my hand, [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“Peng!”

“3781 ! ”

Qing Qian then used an [Ice Hammer] that landed right onto Don’t Be Foolish’ shoulder. He immediately raised his shield and turned around to leave. “Motherf\*ckers, that group of bastards would only charge with me when we’re going out to pick up girls. I’m never going to love again!”

Dancing Forest glanced at me, “Boss?”

I smiled. “Do what you will.....”

Dancing Forest giggled, “Alright!”

[Zhan Long]’s number one Archer raised her arm, stretched the Bowstring of the Dragon Jin Sou, and dealt a [Meteor Shot] and targeted right at Don’t Be Foolish and let it fly!

“Sou....”

The arrow was quick as lightning when it flew out and pierced right through Don't Be Foolish' cape. "Pu Chi!" It pierced right into the most embarrassing place and blood began to flow...

"F\*ck me...."

Don't Be Foolish jolted, his face filled with shock. He tried to pretend as though nothing happened, and arrived at Simple, Fallen Wolf, Leafy Gentleman, and Goodbye Tear's side. He raised his spear and said, "You guys are really too heartless, to actually let me rush forward all by myself. If I get the chance, I will definitely teach you guys the true worth of "Loyalty"!"

Simple pursed her lip, "Why don't you pull out the arrow in your ass first...."

Goodbye Tears walked over and "Pa!" Grabbed onto the [Meteor Shot]'s arrow. With one strong pull, Don't Be Foolish immediately retreated several steps, but the arrow had not been pulled out. His face had already turned purple and he began to sweat, "F\*ck...."

"Does it hurt?" Goodbye Tears was shocked.

Don't Be Foolish shook his head and gritted his teeth as he shouted, "A true man wouldn't be afraid of a little pain like this. I just need to bear with it and tell Dancing Forest that this little power is not a problem..."

"You really aren't going to pull it out?" Goodbye Tears asked.

"Yup!" Don't Be Foolish nodded.

"There's a lot of blood...." Goodbye Tears did his best to wipe his hands.

Don't Be Foolish' face was completely fearless, "This is the sacrifice of justice and loyalty...."

.....

Leafy Gentlemen did all he can do not laugh and pulled out his blade, "Nevermind, let us not waste words. Brothers of Division One, follow me! We'll break through their defense in 10 minutes, and tell them who really is the boss of Ba Huang City!"

"Keng keng keng..."

The sounds of blades sliding out of their sheaths filled the air. Clearly, the command of a Guild Master level player was much different.

A team of players raised their weapons and charged towards [Zhan Long]. Simple also agreed with this ambush. Fallen Wolf took some [Vanguard] main guild people and stayed in place, but didn't seem to make any moves. It was obvious, he wanted to use the first division to whittle away at our strength. Looks like Jian Feng Han had already made plans. He was also worried that [Hero's Mound] would come to Ba Huang City and participate in this quest, and so he wanted to maintain the strength of his elites.

.....

“Kill!”

Don't Be Foolish swung his butt and charged towards us. Behind him there was also a trembling feather sticking out with blood dripping from the end!

# Chapter 512 Sad News

“Keng!”

Standing at the front row, I raised my arm and pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and smiled. “Pull back. Let’s maintain a 30 yard distance between us and the enemy lines. Make sure to control your firepower. We’re going to trap them here, and continuously whittle away at their ten thousand man army. Let’s show those people from [Vanguard] what tactics truly are!”

In the front, Leafy Gentleman and Don’t Be Foolish all brought several thousand players our way. However, with a cliff on their right and a thorny forest on their left, they could only charge at our front. However, our defense formation was just too strong, with Matcha, One Second Hero, and Tang Xin, those top tier Knights all in one place, as well as Old K, Star Blade, Moon Feather, Wan Er and I. There was a total of 30 people on our frontlines and they were all top level players that could hold off ten+ people. Furthermore, we had Darling Duck and Thousand League Spring, and more behind us to heal. Even better was our DPS players Dong Cheng, Dancing Forest and Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands. With a team like this, just think how OP can we be!

.....

“Prepare to use [Bombardment]!” Fox commanded. Gunshots filled the air and a dozen Musketeers shot at the same time. That attack, alongside a dozen [Artillery] skills filled the battlefield with smoke and gunpowder, while several dozen of [Vanguard]’s players died.

“Ram into the formation!”

Don’t Be Foolish raised his long spear and “Peng!” Rammed into Tang Xin’s heavy shield. He then raised it and dealt a [Flame Blade]. However, before the spear even fell upon her, he saw the beautiful face behind the shield and suddenly jolted, “What a cute beauty....”

Tang Xin didn’t say a word and abruptly pushed her shield into Don’t Be Foolish’ face. She then swung her long sword and “Ka Ka” forced Don’t Be

Foolish to retreat several steps. Dancing Forest then shot an arrow right into his forehead, while Qing Qian threw a [Grip of the Firefox]. All he could do was retreat with his critical health. That [Meteor Shot] arrow still flashed in his behind.

Leafy Gentleman cast a [Flying Sword] from a distance that pierced into my chest plate. Right afterwards he yelled, “Mages, advance with us and kill them all with [Magma Abyss]! Musketeers, use [Artillery], don’t play nice!”

As soon as his command fell, several miniature volcanoes exploded under my feet. However, I activated [Flame Prison Armor] increasing everyone’s fire resistance by 50%, making it so that the [Magma Abyss]es only dealt 500-1200 damage. It was nothing critical. Furthermore, Simple that superior Mage had not yet joined in.

Dong Cheng and Dancing Forest took the chance to deal damage on the enemy’s long range team. Spells and arrows killed countless people, while we had suffered very little losses. This made Leafy Gentleman’s face turn uglier and uglier.

.....

“Knights and Monks, charge forward! Switch to attacking more often! Let’s whittle them away little by little!”

Under Leafy Gentleman’s command, numerous heavy armor players all sprinted towards us. They were basically all Knights and Monks that had at least ten thousand health. No matter how strong [Zhan Long]’s attack was, there was no way we could instantly kill so many people. There were around a hundred of them and they quickly broke through the firenet. “Peng peng peng!” They rammed into [Zhan Long]’s heavy shield formation.

I swept out my blade and continuously hacked forward, letting blood spurt out. My [Sword Tempest] steadily leveled up as well. Whenever the cool down finished, I would immediately activate it. Bringing it to Lv 10 was the true way of the king! That way the attack power would be even higher!

In the next moment however, a dozen fourth advancement Swordsman, including Leafy Gentleman, all activated [Flying Sword]. All of the swords’ energy was focused on Star Blade and several [Indigo Sea Arrow]s fell onto Star

Blade's Garrison Armor Chest plate. In the blink of an eye, Star Blade grunted and fell to his knees. Even a ten thousand health player couldn't take that kind of an attack.

So, Leafy Gentleman's tactic, was to kill us off one by one?!

The enemy Mages were no longer using [Magma Abyss] as they found out how strong our fire resistance was. Instead they used [Indigo Sea Arrow], a super explosive solo attack spell. Using that along with [Skyslaker Slash] and [Flying Sword] they targeted us one by one. [Zhan Long]'s frontline players all died one by one. Soon, of the Garrison Outfit heavy armor players, seven or eight of them had already died. This was a great loss for us.

"What do we do? Are we just going to watch as everyone gets killed off?" Old K said, his eyes widened.

I gritted my teeth, "Is there any other way? Let's just do our best to deal damage. For every person they kill, we'll kill ten of theirs! All frontline players be careful you don't get targeted. Healers, you watch too, and save those [Grip of Compassion]s!"

.....

We kept taking losses like this, and after two hours of fierce battling, finally, we were down to only around 1000 players. [Vanguard: Division One] had also been whittled away by us. Within those two hours, [Zhan Long] had killed at least 7000 of [Vanguard]'s players. I could tell in the distance that there weren't many left from [Enemies at the Gate] either. At the moment, they had around 3000, while [Vanguard]'s main guild and its first division only had around 15,000 people still left. This was far beyond Jian Feng Han and Simple's expectations. After being held up by [Zhan Long], [Enemies At the Gate] had killed far too many of their players!

"Sha sha..."

Simple raised her staff and slowly walked over with a cruel smile, "Looks like we're gonna have to burn our boats and deal one last attack. Fallen Wolf, bring 3000 players from the main guild and prepare to send Xiao Yao Zi Zai and [Zhan Long] on its last journey. No matter how many losses we have to take, kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Cang Tong. With that, we'll have won this battle!"

Fallen Wolf nodded, "Alright! Big shots, get ready to charge with me!"

Goodbye Tears raised his blade, "No problem!"

.....

On [Zhan Long]'s formation, everyone's armor and blades were starting to break down. Even my Cold Iron Sword only had around 7% durability left and my helmet was on the verge of breaking. Moon Feather, Tang Xin, and Winter Snow were all covered in blood and cuts. This battle was just too fierce.

Wan Er stood beside me, the Dragon's Kiss dagger in her hand still dripping with blood. She wasn't even sure how many she had killed, and she was starting to breathe harder. I could see the two full mounds on her chest rising and falling. She turned around to look at me, her beautiful eyes filled with doubt, "Yo, if we keep this up, then we'll all die...."

I nodded, "Yup, but I wasn't planning on fighting them head on...."

"Why?"

I smiled and then rested my arm on Wan Er's thin shoulder and smiled. "Because our goal is already finished. We've already dealt with 70% of [Vanguard]'s power. They have no way of completely crushing [Zhan Long] anymore. Retreat. With just 15,000 men they can't do anything!"

Qing Qian blinked a few times, "Brother Xiao Yao, where are we retreating to?"

I turned around and looked at the Glacial River Valley and said, "We'll retreat on the thick ice. If we go straight south from the Glacial River Valley and meet up with the Valiant Bravery Camp. F\*ck, we took too many losses though...."

Qing Qian gave a sympathetic smile, "Yup....."

"Wan Er, immediately take everyone to retreat, I'll bring up the rear!" I said as I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword.

Wan Er didn't say anything else and turned around. The Zhan Long camp's 1000 surviving players all immediately sprinted towards the layer of ice. Right now there isn't any giant dragon to ram into the ice, and so we didn't have to worry about it breaking under our feet. Like that, I stood on my own before the



enemy lines and looked at Simple with a smile on my face.

“Retreating?” Simple asked with a raised eyebrow.

Fallen Wolf said, “Then what do we do? Pursue?”

Simple shook her head, “No. Did you forget about how [Legend] suffered a crushing defeat? Even Fang Ge Que had been defeated by him here. That person is just too smart. Let’s not follow in the path of the defeated...”

“Alright!”

I turned around to leave. “Di!” I received a message from Simple, “Li Xiao Yao, I can only help you to here. [Vanguard] attacking [Zhan Long] was not something that I could decide on, however, I can leave you with some remaining strength. To be honest, I don’t support [Vanguard] remaining an enemy of [Zhan Long], do you understand?”

I smiled and replied, “Yup. However, [Zhan Long] has never actively acted against [Vanguard]. You should know that better than anyone else. Go persuade your brother. This is a virtual game. When people die, they’ll still revive. Just killing me doesn’t mean that he’ll be able to crush [Zhan Long] and become the king of Ba Huang City. The true power of games comes from the fact that we can all strengthen ourselves without the fear of dying.”

“Understood, thank you....”

“I should be the one to say thank you. I hope that next time we meet, it won’t be under such circumstances....”

“I hope so too!”

“Mhm!”

.....

On the thick ice, I caught up with the team that Wan Er lead. At the same time, I opened up the chat to understand the battle situation ——

I asked, “Li Mu, Wang Jian, what’s the situation like on the Valiant Bravery side? How many people do you have left?”

Li Mu said, “The battle was extremely fierce. The [Knights Templar] and

[Fantasy Kingdom] all fought with us at least once. Afterwards, they weren't able to take our place and instead took their 10,000 people to scurry back to Fan Shu City. We lost quite a few people on our side. Other than the 1000 people from the Zhan Long Camp, the entire guild only has 4000 people. In other words, [Zhan Long] still has 5000 people to use!"

Wang Jian asked, "Brother Xiao Yao, what are we going to do next? There's still 12 hours left. We're only halfway through this event and yet we only have 5000 people left...."

I smiled. "No problem, we still have the 20,000 from [Blood Contract]...."

Matcha said, "No, strictly speaking, [Blood Contract] only has 3000 people left...."

Shocked, I exclaimed, "What happened?"

Wan Er said, "It's because while we were fighting [Vanguard], [Blood Contract] was dealing with the attack from Ba Huang City's NPC army. They managed to kill countless NPCs, but they themselves also suffered a lot of losses. You understand now, we have much too few people right now...."

Dong Cheng said, "There's another bit of news that is very saddening..."

I had a bad feeling, "What..."

Dong Cheng said, "[Hero's Mound]'s main guild has set out.... Ten minutes ago, an army of around 40,000 players left Fan Shu City. They'll reach Green Qilin Valley in around 70 minutes. We're going to have to take on an even bigger battle..."

Wolf, "Looks like, this is going to be extremely hard...."

I gritted my teeth and said, "Alright, then we'll just have to use a plan that isn't a plan..."

"What plan?" Wan Er asked.

I stepped onto the thick ice and softly said, "Guard Green Qilin Abyss. You all know its terrain, and only a couple people can crawl down the vines at a time, or else if they were to try and jump down there, they would become a pile of meat sauce. Furthermore, there's a lot of space at the bottom of the Abyss. It

could hold 200 people at most. We'll leave 200 of our elites in the Green Qilin Abyss to guard Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing. Afterward.... Even if [Hero's Mound] were to come, then we'll rely on the terrain and kill as many as we can. As long as we can hold out for 12 more hours, then we'll win. Other than the 200 people going to the abyss, the other 5000 will head north of the Glacial River Valley. Chi Yu Han and I will be enough to attract the firepower!"

## Chapter 514 A True Bro

In the sky, two vines began to shake. Two figures appeared 40 yards up in the sky and were slowly sliding down the vine. As we watched, we could hear some talking——

“Brother, are you sure that Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Cang Tong, and Chi Yu Han are in this shithole?”

“Of course. This was intelligence that came from our own people. You aren’t scared are you?”

“Why would I be? You’re underestimating far too much. Even though my equipment isn’t as good as Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s, nor my level as high as his, but I’m much more handsome than him. I am the man destined to become Cang Tong’s husband!”

“Ha ha, keep on dreaming! Be careful, we’re almost at the bottom!”

“Then what do we do?”

“Find Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s location first and launch an ambush. I’ll lock [Scatter Shot] on him, and then I’ll use [Shield Breaker] to decrease his defense. Your base attack is only around 5500. As long as we decrease Xiao Yao’s defense by 15%, then you’ll break it at one point. Use [Combo]+[Skyslaker Slash]+[Blade Rush]. After that, use a [Flying Sword] to deal a surprise attack. I’ll be using my [Shot of the Archery God] to support you. We have to focus all of our attacks on him. Once we kill Li Xiao Yao, then we can kill Chi Yu Han and then marry Cang Tong, Cang Yue, and Yue Qing Qian....”

“F\*ck, just dreaming of that makes me laugh...”

“Damn, wipe that drool away. Don’t let it drip down and reveal our location...”

“Dang, I just noticed that we weren’t talking on the team chat. They might’ve heard us!”

“Motherf\*cker, why didn’t you say this earlier?”

.....

In the sky, the two figures were only around 30 yards away from us. Qing Qian hid a smile and then said in the team chat, “They want to break through Brother Xiao Yao’s defense with a 5500 base attack? Aiya, they really don’t know their limits...”

Matcha smiled. “Melon, they want to marry you, aren’t you happy?”

Qing Qian’s face turned red, “I don’t wanna marry anyone yet!”

I looked up and said, “Don’t let them find out how many people we have. Dancing Forest, Dong Cheng, only you guys attack. Each of you will take one and instantly kill them. Dancing Forest, you kill the Archer while Dong Cheng kills the Swordsman. You must kill them instantly!”

“Ok!”

“3, 2, 1, now!”

Within moments, Dancing Forest’s [Meteor Shot]+[Triple Shot] thudded into the Archer’s body, killing him instantly. Dancing Forest’ Bowstring of the Dragon Jin Sou was a Superior Saint Tier equipment, and had an attack that was on par with my own Dragon Reservoir Sword. Instantly killing an average Archer like that was easy as pie!

At the same time, Dong Cheng Yue struck the Swordsman with an [Indigo Sea Arrow]+[Thunderbolt Finder]. Two damage numbers popped up at the same time, and was an instant kill as well——

“5733 ! ”

“6127 ! ”

Li Mu’s face turned a little purple, “F\*ck, isn’t Dong Cheng’s magic attack a little too terrifying?”

Dong Cheng stuck out her 34Cs and flashed a confident smile, “But of course. How else would I qualify as our Brother Xiao Yao’s Personal Chief Mage?”

Old K rubbed his hands together, “Little Li, you’re just way too lucky. When are you going to let us use her?”

Dong Cheng squinted at Old K and smiled. “Depends. A face that looks like a platypus that halfway devolved of course won’t get the same treatment. If you were as handsome as our Brother Xiao Yao, then I might bear with it....”

Old K was stunned, “A partially devolved platypus? What the f\*ck does that even mean...”

Li Mu patted Old K’s shoulder, “Don’t be too sad.... It’s just that a fossilized devolved platypus was recently discovered. In the end it turns out that the architect wasn’t too good at their job, and now it looks like half of the face has fallen off, and it just looks too abstract. Based on Old K’s intellect, even if we were to explain it to him, he still might not get it. All you have to know is that Dong Cheng, this superior rank girl was just not meant for you. That’s enough, just admit to your fate. For someone like you, picking up a beauty like Little Dance is already enough. Forget about Dong Cheng, or else you’ll be in pain for the rest of your life....”

“Pa!”

An arrow struck right into Li Mu’s forehead and fresh blood dripped from the wound. Dancing Forest lowered her long bow, her pretty face filled with killing intent, “Picking up a beauty like Little Dance? Why is it that I can’t understand what you’re talking about?”

Li Mu grabbed onto the arrow in his forehead and tried to pull it out, but couldn’t. The arrow on his head shook when he let go. Tears were even streaming down his cheek, “As a man, I will not give in....”

Wrinkles creased on my forehead, “Enough you guys. You guys are fooling around at a time like this? Please don’t be like this. You’re just making me your Guild Master feel even more helpless....”

Wan Er grinned, “Just let them do as they wish. Act cute and save the world!”

I was speechless.

.....

A few minutes later, the vines began to shake again. In addition, all ten vines were shaking at the same time. It was clear that this time quite a few people were coming. There was probably at least 20 people. From the way that the

vines were shaking, there might even be more than 50!

“Don’t know if Drunken Spear has come down yet.” Qing Qian wondered aloud.

I stood near a bush and hid amongst the branches. “Doesn’t matter, if Drunken Spear comes down, then he won’t be able to leave. Everyone be careful of his [Thousand Layer Wave]. Best case scenario, we’ll be able to control his attack and kill him after. Later, I’ll drag him down and then use my [Curse of the Night Fury]. Matcha, Tang Xin, Yong Jie, all you Knights use your [Fierce Ram] to interrupt his skills. Concentrate all of your fire on him and kill him. Drunken Spear that bastard has already killed quite a few of our brothers. This time, we aren’t letting him go!”

“Yup!”

In the sky, flocks of people were starting to shimmy down the vines. There was definitely over a hundred people, and they were all elites from [Flying Dragon]. Soaring Dragon had already been killed by us, and so now Drunken Spear was the highest ranked officer. In reality, Soaring Dragon is probably giving Drunken Spear commands over the phone to bring people to us, or else Drunken Spear that carefree person probably wouldn’t try and make a comeback.

When he was around 40 yards above the ground, Drunken Spear’s figure finally appeared. His limpid eyes swept across the floor and he said, “There’s quite a few [Zhan Long] players lying in ambush here. Don’t just slide down in a straight line, everyone swing the vine. We can’t be sitting ducks. I’ll count to three, and then everyone jump down at the same time. The people up top will provide reinforcements. We’ll crush them in one attack!”

Wan Er and I exchanged glances. This Drunken Spear really wasn’t easy to deal with. He had both the smarts and the muscle. This type of judgement and quick thinking was pretty rare. Too bad he was our enemy!

Right as Drunken Spear swung the vine and was about to jump off, I immediately roared and activated [Dragon Transformation]. My entire body flew into the air and rushed right towards the Drunken Spear who was making his descent. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and suddenly crabbed his

collar. “Pu Chi!” My blade cut right into his chest!

“Ah?!”

Drunken Spear was suddenly ambushed by me mid air in the fog, but he wasn't too shocked. He suddenly raised his knee to land a kick on me. “Peng!” I raised my arm to parry his kick, but I didn't expect his heavy shield to sweep out and ram into my shoulder. He then raised his spear and slashed right towards my other shoulder. That bastard's reaction really is quick!

“Hua la...”

My War Swept Cloak fluttered in the sky and I successfully dodged the attack from his spear. Then, with my left fist, I threw a punch into his chest. My Dragon Reservoir Sword glowed with the energy from a [Wind Blade] and I slashed right into his abdomen. “Peng!” The two of us crashed into the cliff. Drunken Spear's eyes were filled with battle intent and he laughed, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

He swept out his arm and suddenly his long spear's handle rammed into my back with a “Peng!” Drunken Spear then raised his knee, and hit me right in the gut. Without any hesitation, I rammed my Dragon Reservoir Sword into his shoulder and then raised my left arm and threw a punch, making him dive towards the ground along with me. While we were in the air, Drunken Spear activated [Rock Shield] and swept out the spear in his right arm. The entire sequence was organized and carried out efficiently!

Seeing as there were only 2 meters until we hit the ground, I swung my arm and activated [Curse of the Night Fury Asura]. This sealed all of his skills for 2 seconds, killing all chances of him using [Thousand Layer Wave]!

“Peng!”

The two of us smashed into the floor and Drunken Spear's eyes revealed a sliver of fear, “F\*ck!”

Matcha and Tang Xing both charged over, ramming Drunken Spear with a [Scorching Spring] and an [Iron Spear Thrust]. In the distance, Dancing Forest threw a [Meteor Shot] while Dong Cheng dealt a [Thunderbolt Finger]. In moments, Drunken Spear's health dropped to the bottom. Even if he gulped



down a health potion and used a [Cleansing Wind] it would've been useless. Our attacks were just too fierce.

“Wuah....”

Kneeling on the ground, Drunken Spear's face was filled with confusion. Before he died, he softly said, “Against an enemy like this, how am I supposed to win?”

.....

In a storm of spells, arrows and bullets, the 500 people that Drunken Spear brought with him all died under our attacks. After the battle, [Zhan Long] had not lost a single member from the 200 we brought here!

We looked through the equipment that they sent to us. I glanced at Drunken Spear's body and softly said, “Too bad, if he was one of us, how great would that be....”

“That's hard to say.” Qing Qian blinked a few times and said, “Actually, I've been trying to get him for a while now. However, Drunken Spear's brother, Black Tortoise is a good bro with Soaring Dragon, and so it's hard for Drunken Spear to not follow his brother. That bastard is extremely loyal, and he hold his brother in very high regard. Getting him is probably impossible.”

I nodded, “I know, I was just saying... Li Mu, have you checked out the situation up there?”

Li Mu said, “All 500 of [Flying Dragon] have been killed. They don't even know what happened at the bottom of the abyss. Thus, [Wrath of the Heroes] and [Thousand Burial] have all dispersed. No one wants to come here to die. However, our new enemies have come....”

“Who?”

“[House of Prestige]! Bai Li Ruo Feng has lead 20,000 of their elites and have passed the border of Ba Huang City and Jiu Li City!”

“Alright....” I furrowed my brows, “Shouldn't [Hero's Mound] have arrived? Why aren't they here yet... they should be....”

Wan Er glanced at the sky and suddenly shook her shoulder saying, “Pig, I just

got information saying that the 40,000 from [Hero's Mound] are heading a different direction in Bowl Valley. They're in the middle of an intense battle right now!"

"What guild?!"

"Ye Lai, it's [Judgement]!" Wan Er's eyes widened as she said, "Ye Lai's reason for battle is really simple. He said that you were his friend and so.... He brought his army out. They set up an ambush in the forest of Bowl Valley and attacked [Hero's Mound]'s main force. [Judgement] sent out 34,000 members, that's definitely enough for [Hero's Mound] to suffer a blow..."

Li Mu made a fist and smiled. "Damn, Ye Lai that trash really is a good bro!"

# Chapter 513 Guarding Green Qilin Abyss

1000 people entered Green Qilin Valley. It was currently late autumn and fiery leaves fluttered in the wind and softly fell to the bottom. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and walked forward to the front while my Flaming Tiger God scouted the area 100 yards ahead of me. If there were any ambushes, my little tiger would definitely notice it. If it gets killed, then it gets killed. It wouldn't be too big of a loss. It wasn't as though it hadn't died before. During this event, if players died then they wouldn't be able to revive for 24 hours, but for this little tiger, it could revive after ten minutes of cool down.

.....

“Sha sha....”

The leaves on our right flank rustled and Wolf raised a dagger and sprinted over shouting, “Who's there, come out!”

The leaves rustled again and a girl holding a magic staff came out. Her long hair had many loose leaves in it and she stared at us, “You guys came?”

I couldn't help but smile. It was none other than [Blood Contract]'s number one Healer—— Who's Blue. Behind her, Han Bei Song held an indigo longsword and lead a group of people over. When they saw the 1000 [Zhan Long] members, he couldn't help but laugh, “Well, damn. What a coincidence, to see Guild Master Zi Zai here!”

I looked at Han Bei Song, and saw that his armor was already tattered while the blade in his hand had many nicks in it. It probably had less than 10% durability at this point. The [Blood Contract] members behind him were in the same state. This group of bastards had fiercely battled those NPCs and probably got quite a bit of profits from them. Quite a few members had Emperor Tier and Valkyrie Tier equipments and a dozen of the top players had equipment that wasn't much weaker than that of the elites of [Zhan Long] behind me.

“Thank you for your trouble, brothers!”

I cupped my fist in my other hand and bowed with a smile, “When [Zhan

Long] is in trouble, you guys came and suffered with us. This favor, [Zhan Long] will always remember and never forget!”

Han Bei Song shook his head with a smile, “It’s just a small favor, don’t think too much of it. After all this is a game, and it’s not like we’re actually fighting. Without [Zhan Long], where else would we get such an interesting PK opportunity where we can show off our strength....”

Who’s Blue couldn’t help but smile, “After ending up in such a miserable state from fighting with NPCs and [Vanguard]’s three divisions, is it still called ‘showing off our strength’?”

Han Bei Song rubbed his nose and looked at Who’s Blue and said, “For girls who like ridiculing others their chest won’t grow. Aiya, my dear, you’ve really been cursed already!”

Who’s Blue’s face turned red and she kicked his shin, “Don’t look!”

Han Bei Song looked down and smiled and then looked at Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Qing Qian, Dancing Forest, and Tang Xin who were by my side. With an envying stare he smiled. “Hmph, look how lucky [Zhan Long] is, so many pretty and curvy beauties.... Guild Master Zi Zai, does [Zhan Long] still take divisions? What do you think about our [Blood Contract]? Do you want to try adding a few of us into your divisions?”

I hesitated.

A group of [Blood Contract] players behind Han Bei Song all pulled out their swords and pointed them at the back of their Guild Master and shouted, “Guild Master, watch your integrity!”

Wan Er and Dong Cheng both grinned. Wan Er then crossed her arms in front of her chest, pushing out the two full mounds on her chest, but she seemed to not notice. Instead, she walked forward and said, “Li Xiao Yao, your allies really are interesting~”

Old K laughed, “Why isn’t the beauty Cang Tong calling that little Li a pig?”

“I figured I should leave him with a little face in front of outsiders....” Wan Er’s eyes were as limpid as a stream and smiled as she looked at me.

I rubbed my nose and smiled. “Alright, let’s not talk about this nonsense. Let’s head straight to the heart of Green Qilin Valley and meet up with Li Mu and the others. Han Bei Song, why don’t you prepare to bring your people from [Blood Contract] along with us as well!”

Han Bei Song stared at me, “If you head further eastward, the area is covered with NPC and Ba Huang Camp players. You have but 1000 people. That’s not even enough for them to pick their teeth with, are you trying to die?”

I smiled and explained, “ [Zhan Long], [Blood Contract], and [Enemies at the Gate] altogether add up to less than 20,000 players. No matter how hard we try, we aren’t going to be able to hold off the advance of [Vanguard], [Soaring Dragon] and the rest. Furthermore, [Hero’s Mound] has also sent out troops. [Prague] hasn’t budged an inch yet. I have no idea what to expect from these next 12 hours. If we don’t take Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing, then there’s no point in escaping anywhere, and so I don’t plan on escaping. I’ll be taking the elites of [Zhan Long] and enter into Green Qilin Abyss. There, we’ll battle with anybody who dares to provoke us. As long as we can hold on for 12 more hours, we’ll win!”

Hen Bei Song grunted and pointed to the north, “Then I’ll take my brothers from [Blood Contract] to the Northern side of Glacial River Valley and catch some fish. If [Zhan Long] needs anything, then just let me know. As a friendly guild, [Blood Contract] will do anything for you guys!”

“Brothers, be careful on the road!”

“Ok!”

.....

After we said goodbye to [Blood Contract], the [Zhan Long] camp’s elites all headed eastward. Ten minutes later, a large group of orange name players ran towards us from a distance. It was our players from the Valiant Bravery Camp. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Lian Po, and Bai Qi were all still alive and I was able to put that worry to rest. We still needed them in our next battle in the Abyss!

“Guild Master!” Li Mu raised his sword and sprinted over. He laughed, “Looks like you guys haven’t all been killed. Now I can be relieved!”

Dong Cheng smiled. “Such comforting words, I was almost moved to tears....”

Wang Jian wiped away some of the blood on his face and smiled. “Brother Xiao Yao, what’s the next step?”

I nodded, “Yup! Immediately pick out 200 of the top players from the 5000 we have left and have them follow me. We need players from all types of classes. Focus on the long range and Healer types first. We don’t need too many tank type players. Pick the people with the highest damage first.”

“Yes sir!”

A few minutes later, we had picked out all of the members. Two hundred people from the main guild made two teams of a hundred players each. Afterwards, the [Zhan Long: Defense Army]’s Guild Master Yao Yan didn’t join. As the highest command level player, she was to lead the other 5000 players towards Glacial River Valley and meet up with Han Bei Song and Misty Palace. After that, they’ll continue to roam towards the northern border of Ba Huang City. This way, they can come meet up with us at any point. They would be our last trump card.

After splitting up, Yao Yan took the 4800 people and disappeared into the maple forest. I then lead everyone to the north 300 yards. In the distance, Green Qilin Abyss already appeared!

This map was as unusual as it was before. Glancing into it, you wouldn’t be able to see the bottom. There was no other way in but the vines that were tied to a few big trees that grew beside it.

“Good children, this map really tests your courage!” Li Mu laughed and said, “Who wants to be an example and go down?”

I raised my sword and smiled. “I’ll go!”

I retreated a few steps and then suddenly charged forward. My Cloud Stepping Boots kicked off one of the boulders on the edge with a “Pa!”. I flew into the air and grabbed onto one of the vines. As I was suspended in the air, I looked towards everyone and said, “You must calculate the distance and angle of your jump. If you don’t have faith in your ability to do so, then you can climb towards the tree and then get onto the vine from there. Safety is your first

priority. Once you fall down there, every bone in your body would get crushed. This abyss is at least 100 meters deep!”

Matcha stuck out her tongue and smiled. “Alright, then I’ll just climb the tree. I have absolutely no faith in my depth perception...”

Wan Er, Dong Cheng and Qing Qian, on the other hand, had no hesitations. They leapt up and each grabbed onto a vine and slowly slid down and I followed behind them. On the top, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Wolf and One Second Hero all followed in our steps. Of course there was also around 50% of our players who decided to climb the trees. This was a matter of life and death, and was not something to joke around with.

.....

In the middle of the abyss, a thick fog covered the air. This was the reason one couldn’t see the bottom. Green Qilin Abyss was like this year round. Us [Zhan Long] players who hang around this map have already gotten used to this.

Around a hundred meters down the vines, I finally saw the grass at the bottom. I released my grip, and “Shua!” jumped down and landed on the ground. I raised my hand and pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword.

“Who’s there?!”

Chi Yu Han’s voice came from a bush nearby us. He had already pulled his Heaven’s Spite sword out and was protecting Chi Yu Qing.

I smiled. “Don’t worry, it’s us!”

Chi Yu Han looked at all of us and smiled. “So it was you guys. That’s good, you were able to return alive. I thought that I was going to have to charge through Ba Huang City’s encirclement!”

“Don’t worry, we still have hope! Next, we plan on standing a siege here. Chi Yu Han, why don’t you take your sister and hide in that cave? This way we can fight without any worries!”

“Alright....” Chi Yu Han picked up his sister Chi Yu Qing and took her to the cave. Afterwards, he took his sword in hand and walked out with a smile, “This

time, I want to fight by your side. I want to let those aristocrats from Ba Huang City know that I, Chi Yu Han, will not stupidly stick my neck out and let them cut it off!”

“Yes!”

.....

The vines in the sky began to swing and players from [Zhan Long] continuously slid downwards. Not long after, all 200 people arrived. Each stood at the bottom of the abyss. With 200 people in this small map, it wasn't crowded, and felt just right. Furthermore, around each vine stood 3-7 elite heavy armor players. Like this, if anybody came from the top, they would land right into an attack from both our heavy armor and ranged players. All we have to do is sit tight and wait for them. In addition, this area is extremely narrow, and there's no way for the enemy to try and use those Death God Arrow machines. This was our greatest advantage!

“Shua!”

I waved my hand and set up an [Azure Dragon Crossbow] behind me. I stood at the center of the abyss. My hand suddenly tightened around my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I could already hear the sounds of other players. I said in the team chat, be careful, there's people up there. Do the Assassins at the top have sight on them?”

Li Mu smiled. “Yup, it's [Flying Dragon]. They've come at us again, and this time, it's Drunken Spear leading the army!”

I smiled. “Alright, let's wait for them to come down. This time, I'm definitely not letting that Drunken Spear escape!”

Wang Jian, Old K, and Moon Feather all gripped their weapons, excitement showing on their faces.



# Chapter 515 Death by Stoning

“I have a view on them!”

Li Mu stood at the bottom of the abyss and made a fist, “The dozen Assassins that I sent out really are helpful. They’ve already gotten view of the battle in Bowl Valley!”

I nodded, “Share it among the officers!”

“Yes sir!”

Very soon, all of the officers saw the battle being played out. All we could see was the open space on the western side of Bowl Valley. The two armies were currently in a fierce clash. Ye Lai raised his battle axe and lead the charge. [Holy Fire Cut], [Divine Weapon Breaker] and [Burning Tornado] flashed through the enemy mobs. Furthermore, Ye Lai was not only a Berserker, but also a ten thousand health warrior. His attack was extremely powerful and his base defense was boosted by all of his equipment to nearly 6000 points. Killing him wasn’t an easy task. Looks like he had at least three pieces of Saint Tier equipment on him.

[Judgement]’s Babel Buddha and other elites were also fighting beside Ye Lai. Numerous skills constantly flashed across the forest. [Hero’s Mound]’s Q-Sword raised his blade as he roamed along the border of the map, targeting and killing the top tier players. At the same time, Jian Tan, and Sword Tears had melded into one big chaotic group. Blood dyed the ground.

.....

“Looks like...” Wan Er smiled. “This battle will take at least 5 hours before victory is decided. Both sides are extremely strong.”

Qing Qian said, “The most important part is.... [Judgement] isn’t fighting on its own!”

“Oh? What do you mean by that Melon?” I asked with a smile.

Qing Qian raised her dagger and walked over. She then whispered into my

ear, “Brother Xiao Yao, I just received intel, Uncle Yan Zhao has decided on what [Prague] will do. They won’t fight with [Zhan Long]. He’s already brought 40,000 of [Prague]’s main force and has left Ba Huang Forest. They are going straight for Bowl Valley and plan on helping [Judgement] crush [Hero’s Mound]! Do you still remember? In Bowl Valley, Uncle’s entire army was killed by Q-Sword... This debt, how could Uncle not get it back?!”

I couldn’t help but smile and then whispered back, “I knew it. Yan Zhao Warrior isn’t a person who can’t tell the difference between right and wrong. This time, even if this quest to save Chi Yu Han kills every member of [Zhan Long], it wouldn’t be able to diminish [Zhan Long]’s rise. Instead, it’ll just create a powerful enemy to anyone who tries to attack us. Uncle Yan Zhao wouldn’t do something stupid like that.”

Qing Qian blinked a few times and nodded with a smile, “Yup, Uncle has always put the growth of the guild as his priority, and so [Prague] usually keeps a neutral stance. Even in the battle between [Zhan Long] and [Vanguard], Uncle basically wanted to look the other way and not bother with it. However, last time, Q-Sword had been too cruel, and so Uncle decided to send out his troops. For someone as conservative in battle as him, this is incredibly rare!”

I nodded, “This is a huge advantage for us. Next, we need to deal with [House of Prestige] here. I haven’t seen Bai Li Ruo Feng and Quick Thunder Swift Lightning in a while, I almost miss them....”

Dong Cheng speechless stared at me. Finally she said, “Bruh, you think that Bai Li Ruo Feng and [House of Prestige] are easy to pick? Don’t forget, Bai Li Ruo Feng is bringing 20,000 of [House of Prestige]’s elites. We only have 200 people here. They have 100 times more people than we do. Brother Xiao Yao, maybe you could hold off a hundred by yourself, but none of the rest of us can...”

I wryly smiled. “Yup, after all, we’re going to be mainly relying on the advantage we have in Green Qilin Abyss. Bai Li Ruo Feng can’t mess with us!”

“I hope so....”

“Hei hei....”

.....

Not long after, we finally received intel from the Assassins up top. Bai Li Ruo Feng already took [House of Prestige]’s elites and entered into Green Qilin Valley. The entire way here they didn’t bother with anyone else, and appeared very generous. They had one and only one goal—— enter Green Qilin Abyss and kill all of [Zhan Long]’s players and take Chi Yu Han.

Our upcoming battle was actually going to be pretty tough. Bai Li Ruo Feng was definitely not going to underestimate the difficulty of this quest. Not only are [Zhan Long]’s 200 players hard to kill, even Chi Yu Han, that Sword Saint Tier warrior was even harder to kill. After all, everyone knew how strong Chi Yu Han was. Even though he only had around 30% of his strength back, he was still a hard nut to crack. Plus, the seal on Chi Yu Han’s body was extremely weak after we left Sword Saint Abyss. This meant that sooner or later he was going to have his power of Holy Realm. At that point, there wouldn’t be a single player that would dare solo such a strong BOSS.

.....

“Sha sha.....”

Up top, a couple of pebbles fell down. Clearly, people had arrived. I immediately pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and said, “Get ready. We’ll use the same battle plan. We’ll kill whoever comes down!”

“Alright!” Li Mu, Old K, Wang Jian, and Dong Cheng all appeared extremely excited.

The vines above us began to shake at the same time. Looks like quite a few people were coming. Bai Li Ruo Feng must’ve heard about what happened to [Flying Dragon] here, or else he wouldn’t have so many people come at once.

Not long after, people began to appear. The first to enter our line of sight was a Level 87 Berserker that had [Dou Qi Armor] on. His name was Snow Wolf Spirit, and was one of the four elders in [House of Prestige]. He held a flaming battle axe in one hand, while the other hand dragged along the vine. He carefully observed the surroundings as he descended.

“Careful!”

Snow Wolf Spirit raised his battle axe and said, “Their ranged players have to

target us in order to attack. Since they're shooting upwards, their range has shrunk from 40 yards to 25 yards. Everyone, be careful of your distance and make sure that when you are within 25-40 yards of them, jump down at the same time! We have to do our best and have 200 people arrive in the abyss at the same time, and send Xiao Yao Zi Zai a big present! All of the people behind must be quick, do not hesitate! Or else all of our brothers would have died for nothing!"

And so, a group of [House of Prestige] players all hung in the air. They almost looked like a stick of Tang Hu Lu\* as they waited for us to deal our attacks.

TL Note\*: A common street food in China that has sweet red balls on a stick.

Wan Er leaned against the cliff side. Her sweet laugh rang throughout the map and she said, "What smart bastards. To think that they would think of a method like that to deal with our advantage. If an Elder is that smart, no wonder [House of Prestige] was able to ranked third in Jiu Li City, and 6th on the Chinese Server!"

I smiled and encouraged, "No matter, we [Zhan Long] are ranked 5th. Its time we give them a lesson they won't forget!"

Wan Er grinned, "Alright, prepare for battle!"

I turned around and looked at Dancing Forest and said, "Little Dance, your [Meteor Shot] has a hundred yard range, and even if you shoot upwards, it still has a 70 yard range. Go ahead, let's mess up their rhythm, have them attack first. This would be best for us!"

Dancing Forest nodded and immediately raised her Bowstring of the Dragon Jin Sou and shot an explosive [Meteor Shot]!

"Peng!"

The Meteor Shot pierced right through a group of people, cutting through three of the vines. At that moment, a group of [House of Prestige] players all lost their grip and fell down. Someone shouted, "[Zhan Long]'s have taken the initiative! Let's charge and massacre them!"

At that moment, a "rain of people" fell from the sky. Snow Wolf Spirit also descended from his vine.

I carefully watched the situation and stepped onto a boulder. Within three steps, I reached Snow Wolf Spirit. I abruptly leapt up and swung both of my swords. With a turn, I dealt two revolving slashes that hit everything within a 5 yard radius of me. My two swords dealt 4 consecutive hits right into Snow Wolf Spirit's armor and threw him into the air. If he hadn't been healed by two Healers, he probably would've been killed by now.

"Pa!" I landed on the ground. Looking up, I determined Snow Wolf Spirit's position and lunged forward. I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword forward 3 yards, dealing a critical attack on Snow Wolf Spirit right when he landed. The attack split apart his armor and brought out blood. I waved my left hand. "Pu Chi!" My Cold Iron Sword pierced right through Snow Wolf Spirit's chest and nailed him right into the adjacent wall. "Keng!" the sword buried itself into the wall, killing him instantly. Snow Wolf Spirit's head drooped, showing that he had died.

Beside him, two [House of Prestige] Swordsmen threw a [Skyshaker Slash] and charged towards me. I swept out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and spun around, using my blade to parry the attack. I then dashed forward 3 yards, dodging both [Skyshaker Slash]es. With a wave of my left hand, my Cold Iron Sword flew back to me and pierced right through both of the Swordsmen. I turned around and threw an attack with my Dragon Reservoir Sword. The two of them could feel the chill of my killing intent against their backs and couldn't help but shiver. I crossed my two swords and instantly killed the two of them.

The entire sequence of attacks flowed smoothly and quickly. I couldn't help but secretly feel a rush of excitement. The two months after I entered, I had been continuously practicing, and now my movements were no longer as clumsy as they had been at the beginning. I was at least on a whole new level. Even though I probably wasn't as good as Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han, at least I wasn't too far behind them. Especially since I had my own real life skills. This was something that none of those two had. Even though Jian Feng Han and Q-Sword's skills in real life were pretty good, but it wasn't as good as mine which had been sharpened by life and death battle experience!

.....

Once Snow Wolf Spirit died, [House of Prestige]'s formation still didn't fall

apart. People were continuously jumping down from the vines, and they were continuously being killed. [Zhan Long]’s players all bided their time and whittled away the enemy’s strength. Our warriors protected the Mages, Archers, and Healers, making it impossible for the enemy to reach our damage output. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K all used their area attacks and were like fish in water while they gathered battle points.

Around 10 minutes later, [House of Prestige]’s airdrop had been a complete defeat and they lost 1000 players at the bottom of the abyss while [Zhan Long]’s 200 man team only lost around 20 players. We had almost completely maintained our entire force.

No more players were coming down from above and the hostilities were on pause.

.....

Li Mu raised his Tian Chen Sword and looked up at the sky with a smile, “So [House of Prestige] wasn’t actually that hard to deal with. And here I thought that each of them had three heads and six arms! So it wasn’t like that....”

I wiped some of the blood off my blade and stuck my Dragon Reservoir Sword into the ground, “Even so, we lost 22 people in this wave of people. Next, we must make sure we protect our ranged players. Otherwise, if we don’t have enough people, then this won’t work. Also, we cannot underestimate our enemies!”

Right at that moment, Wan Er suddenly widened her eyes and shouted, “Careful!”

“Shua!”

An enormous object fell from the sky and I immediately pushed Li Mu out of the way!

“Peng!”

An enormous boulder the size of a person fell to the ground, and sunk right into the mud. On it was written a line of words——

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai will die under this rock!”

.....

I was speechless.

Wan Er and I exchanged glances and laughed until tears streamed down our faces.

# Chapter 516 A Crow Drinking Water

“Careful....”

I looked up into the sky and took a deep breath, “Mid-way up Green Qilin Abyss, there’s an extremely thick fog. This is good for hiding us, but it could also become a critically damaging problem. If any heavy item were to fall down, then we only have around 40 yards of distance to dodge it. Based on the angle of this cliff, we have less than one second to react. Bai Li Ruo Feng isn’t some idiot either. There’s still 11 hours left until the end of this quest. He will think of a way to deal with our strategy....”

Qing Qian bit her lip and said, “Brother Xiao Yao, are you saying.... That Bai Li Ruo Feng will try and use this to deal with us?”

Old K shivered, “Use what?”

I let out a slow breath and said, “In the ancient times during siege wars, a commonly used tactic was to throw rocks off of the wall to crush the enemy. I don’t know if Bai Li Ruo Feng would try that. You have to know that although Green Qilin Valley doesn’t have much else, it does have a lot of rocks. [House of Prestige] has 20,000 people here this time. Even though we killed a thousand of them, and they only have 19,000 players left, that’s a lot of people to carry rocks. At that point... we’ll be screwed....”

One Second Hero raised his halberd and sang, “A rain of rocks and rivers of blood, d\*ck splatter... cruel cruel...”

I glared at him and said, “You’ve read way too many of those Warring States novels. How would our dicks splatter? At most, our heads will get crushed, and it won’t be that bloody.”

Li Mu said, “Then what do we do next?”

Wan Er crossed her arms and leaned against a wall, she smiled. “That’s simple. All of the Knights and Monks can use their heavy shields to protect the leather, and cloth type players. Swordsmen and Berserkers will just have to pray they’ll survive. We only have a dozen Knights and Monks that came down with



us to the abyss... to be honest, that's not enough...."

Wolf looked up at the sky and said, "If a ton of rocks were to fall from the sky, then it must be a spectacular sight, right?"

Dong Cheng Lei rubbed his forehead and smiled. "When I was younger, my old man told me the story of the crow drinking water. He threw stones into the bottle and was able to drink water like that. Isn't that pretty similar to our situation right now?"

My heart suddenly jumped and I said, "Damn...."

"What is it?" Li Mu asked, puzzled.

I made a fist and said, "Ah Lei just reminded me, if it really were raining rocks, then this Green Qilin Abyss will be filled up by those bastards from [House of Prestige]. At that point, it'll be our 100 players against their 20,000...."

Li Mu's eyes practically rolled out of his sockets, "F\*ck, we're in a really dangerous situation. This is even worse than when I was caught peeping at the beautiful teachers in elementary school!"

I smiled and said, "Bro, you're ability to connect things together really is amazing...."

Dong Cheng said, "Then what do we do? I just talked with that idiot Tang Qi, and it seems that [Hero's Mound] has gained the upperhand in the battle against [Judgement]. However, [Prague] is only around 5 minutes away from the battlefield and so Q-Sword will definitely have a plan to deal with them!"

I said, "Contact [Judgement] and [Prague]. They must do their best to avoid entering into the forest. They cannot give Q-Sword the chance to use his Death God Arrows, or else they'll have even greater losses!"

Wan Er giggled, "Yup. I've already added Ye Lai and Yan Zhao Warrior as friends. They're caliber really is high. They just said to take care of ourselves and that they will guard against those Death God Arrows. Also...The ten smiths that smelt Death God Arrows have already been cleaned out by Q-Sword. He can't use the ten thousand Death God Arrows he had before."

.....

After another hour, the Green Qilin Abyss was just too quiet. Wolf couldn't help but ask, "Brother Xiao Yao, what's the situation? Why isn't [House of Prestige] making a move?"

I muttered, "Bai Li Ruo Feng is moving rocks right now. If there aren't enough rocks, then he won't move. The Assassins just reported that all around the Green Qilin Abyss are piled mounds of rocks. It's almost as though they're making a wall..."

Li Mu put his face in his hands and didn't say anything.

I couldn't help but smile, "Yo, Li Mu, what are you doing?"

Li Mu raised his Tian Chen Sword and smiled. "I was just thinking, later when the rocks come down like rain, then they definitely won't follow the rules and try to avoid the face. After that, then my face might not be as smooth as it is now...."

Dong Cheng grinned and said, "That's no matter, just think of it as fixing it up. Either way, it's not like it looks amazing right now. It's not that much better than Old K's..."

"F\*ck you....!"

"Brother Xiao Yao, he's cursing at me. Hurry up and take away his Elder status!!" Dong Cheng pouted.

I crossed my arms and said, "That's no matter, you guys keep on acting. I'm just the audience...."

Dong Cheng and Li Mu were speechless.

Right at that moment, Wan Er suddenly pulled out her Dragon's Kiss dagger and looked up at the sky. Her clever eyes shifted around and she softly said, "Stop messing around. They've begun their attack!"

I raised my hand and pulled out both sword and said, "Everyone get into a defensive stance!"

In the next second, "Shua Shua Shua" Countless boulders fell from the sky. Most of them were around the size of a basketball. That way, they could hurl them even further. The number of deaths and injuries were definitely not low.

At a 100 meters of height, the force of these rocks were enough to cave in the hood of a Chevrolet. All we could do was see if our [Zhan Long] player's defense was high enough.

.....

"Keng!" Wang Jian pulled out his Ice Feather Sword and roared, "Prepare your defenses!"

"Shua!"

The first rock fell towards Darling Duck and the people that Tang Xin was protecting. That boulder was pretty accurate, were they trying to kill our Healers with the first rock or something?

Wan Er, without any hesitation, activated [Absolute Step] and charged over. She suddenly jumped up and stepped off of the wall. Her delicate body shot out like a bullet. Midair she pulled out her iron umbrella and rammed away a rock like that!

"Peng!"

With a clang, Wan Er put away her iron umbrella, but she had been forced back into the bushes from the force of the boulder. "Wu wu" she cried out and her health dropped 2000 points. Just as we thought, these boulders force was truly terrifying. Even Wan Er took 2000 damage. The rest of the light armor classes would take at least 5000 damage like that!

I tightened my grip on my Dragon Reservoir Sword and jumped up. Right at that moment, I sliced at a falling rock, and "Peng!" crushed it to bits. Yup. The advantage of having a lot of points in strength was coming out. I could easily use this strength. I swung my left arm and let my Cold Iron Sword fly out. I then calculated the angle and "Peng peng peng!" crushed the rocks in the sky with the attack.

However, most of the rocks still smashed into the shields and armors of our [Zhan Long] players. Damage numbers continuously popped up. Furthermore, the number of rocks that were falling were terrifying!

"Peng!"

Tang Xing's shield had been hit 6 times and the force of it all had even caused some blood to drip from her mouth. She cried out, "So shameless, to use such a method to fight. Is [House of Prestige] afraid of us or something? Such a shameless guild, how dare they claim to be ranked 6th in the entire Chinese server?! Pei Pei Pei!!"

"Keep your stance!"

I looked up and gritted my teeth. I then turned around and looked at Old K and gave him a [Dragon's Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] BUFF and then shouted, "Old K, use a [Flaming Sun] and help us decrease the pressure!"

"Alright!"

Old K suddenly threw his battle axe into the sky and in the blink of an eye, it fell back to the ground. "Peng!" a flaming shockwave spread out through the Green Qilin Abyss and rushed up the cliff walls. It stopped around 1000 yards away. The [House of Prestige] players were happily hitting us while we were down, and never would've expected a counterattack. At that moment, Old K's kill count increased by over 300. There were probably quite a few Mages and Healers that had let their guard down and were instantly killed!

.....

I swung my two swords and continuously jumped up to knock away some of the boulders for everyone. Wan Er also raised her iron umbrella to block them. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K all did their best to follow. Everyone was trying hard to defend against this "Crow Drinking Water" tactic from [House of Prestige]. However, if it were to continue like this then we would continuously lose people like this. In the blink of an eye we had already lost nearly 30 people, and only had 150 left.

Chi Yu Han raised his Heaven's Spite Sword and stood at the bottom of the abyss. He looked up at the falling rocks and suddenly shouted, "You cowardly bastards, get the f\*ck down here!"

"Hong!"

Chi Yu Han's roar created a shockwave that spread up to the upperground. All of the rocks that were falling down were crushed into dust. F\*ck, so this was the

strength of a Holy Domain expert. It had completely crushed that of us normal players!

Once the roar was over, Chi Yu Han's face turned pale. He had used up a lot of his Dou Qi energy. He picked up his Tian Chen Sword and retreated several steps and leaned against a wall, slowly regaining his energy.

.....

The falling rocks only stopped for less than a minute. Very soon, they began falling again. Looks like they won't rest until all of the rocks have been thrown down.

On the bright side, there weren't too many rocks. Once bottom of the abyss had been filled up around 10 meters, the falling rocks finally began to slow down. Chi Yu Han carried Chi Yu Qing to a corner. The uneven surface affected our movements. Wang Jian, Li Mu and Old K all began to move some rocks to smooth out the surface. Our next plan was more battle and we needed to make preparations.

Around an hour later, I waved my Dragon Reservoir Sword and lowered my voice, "Everyone raise your guard. [House of Prestige] will attack again!"

"With rocks?" Wang Jian asked.

I shook my head, "No. All of the rocks that are within a 1000 yard radius have been used up. Bai Li Ruo Feng can't waste time now. The next plan of action he'll take is probably coming down here and capture Chi Yu Han and take him to Ba Huang City to get rewards!"

"Yup!"

.....

I looked up and the vines continuously shook. They're coming again!

This time, the leader wasn't just an Elder rank, but Quick Thunder Swift Wind, [House of Prestige]'s Vice Guild Master!

Quick Thunder Swift Wind raised his battle axe, which flashed with frost energy. This was a frost type battle axe, and was a unique weapon. He had changed quite a few of his equipments. From the glow that they gave off, there

were around 3 that glowed with a green light. That bastard's equipment also went up a few levels.

Stopping at 40 yards above us, Quick Thunder Swift Wind squinted at us and smiled. "Brothers, when you're 60 yards above the ground, jump down. Let's do our best and throw them into chaos!"

# Chapter 517 Come at me!

“F\*ck!”

Li Mu raised a blade that was covered in nicks and was dripping with blood. He looked up at the vines that were swinging in the air and said, “They’re planning on fighting with their lives. This time there’s at least a thousand people coming down. We’re gonna have to give our all too!”

I spun around and looked at Old K, “How much longer is the cooldown for[Fierce Sun]? It should be soon right....?”

Old K glanced at his battle axe and shook his head, “There’s still 17 minutes left. The cooldown on this special skill is way too long!”

I looked towards One Second Hero and said, “What about Yong Jie? Your [Fierce Sun Wall] should be ready right?”

One Second Hero raised his Fierce Sun Shield and nodded with a smile, “Yup, I’ve kept it prepared!”

“Alright, wait for my command. We’re going to have to turn the tables within 7 seconds!”

“OK ! ”

.....

I looked at the swinging vines in the air and pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Cold Iron Sword and shouted, “Prepare for a charge! Make sure to protect the ranged and support classes! Let’s show those bastards from [House of Prestige] what it means to die, rather than to submit!”

Everyone pulled out their weapons and prepared for the attack.

Finally, Quick Thunder Swift Wind roared and swung his battle axe in the air. He threw an attack towards Dong Cheng Yue!

“He really did come after me...” Dong Cheng narrowed her beautiful eyes.

Matcha quickly moved and raised her golden shield in front of Dong Cheng.

She then activated [Holy Phantom Shield] and assumed a defensive position.

“Peng!”

Sparks flew and Quick Thunder Swift Wind’s [Fierce Axe Strike] forced Matcha back several steps. The attack power behind that skill was just too much. He then roared and activated [Will of the Berserker] and launched a [Battle Axe Throw] straight at Dong Cheng!

“Shua!”

The battle axe glowed with a red light as it spun through the air. Dong Cheng quickly reacted and used [Dimensional Leap], dodging the attack. She however, did not expect that Quick Thunder would charge right at her again right after retrieving his battle axe. Right as Dong Cheng opened her hand and activated [Thunderbolt Finger], he shouted and activated [Berserker God], a skill that ignored all magic damage. Immediately following that, his battle axe began to glow with the light from [Flame Blade].

“Dong Cheng!”

I quickly raised both of my blades and charged forward. Suddenly I leapt in front of Dong Cheng and parried the attack with one blade. Quick Thunder roared and raised his battle axe, and threw another attack. I held my position and pushed Quick Thunder back. It looks like he still had some ways to go before he reached my level.

Without waiting for Quick Thunder’s reaction, I lunged forward. I did not, however, expect a cold arrow to come flying straight at me!

“Peng!”

“2789 ! ”

It was a [Cursed Arrow] that prevented me from using any skills for 2.5 seconds. Bai Li Ruo Feng was holding onto a vine and shot the arrow at me from the air. I glanced over and said, “Little Dance, Qing Qian, pull him down and kill him!”

Dancing Forest let loose her [Meteor Shot]!

“Sou!”



Bai Li Ruo Feng began to swing his vine and then grabbed onto an adjacent one, dodging Dancing Forest's attack. However, Qing Qian followed with a [Grip of the Firefox], making it impossible for Bai Li Ruo Feng to dodge. At that moment, a [House of Prestige] Knight slid downwards and thrust his shield out, blocking the attack for his Guild Master.

"F\*ck you!"

Bai Li Ruo Feng roared and then raised his hand. He activated [Electric Star Shot], increasing his attack speed. He then raised his bow and locked three shots onto Dancing Forest.

Dancing Forest gritted her teeth and then raised her bow. Launching herself off the grass, she dashed backwards, dodging all three of the attacks. She did not expect, however, a Berserker to appear right behind her and deal an attack with his battle axe!

"Peng!"

There were just too many players from [House of Prestige] that had made it onto the ground. At the moment, they had more people than us. Furthermore, Dancing Forest had lost her guards. That one misstep had caused her to lose her balance. All she could do now was stare into the sky, where Bai Li Ruo Feng began his descent. In that split second, she took a hit from [Lightning Tempest]! [Condensed Storm] + [Backward Jumpshot] + [Wind Piercing Strike] + [Mortal Burst Shot]. The skill took 1.9 seconds to complete, and during that time, Quick Thunder had made his way out of the encirclement. He swept out his battle axe and activated [Whirling Battle Axe]. With no way to avoid the attack, Dancing Forest could only cry out in pain and kneel onto the broken rocks. [Zhan Long]'s number one Archer was killed, just like that.

"Dancing Forest was killed!" Li Mu grunted through his gritted teeth.

I swept my blade and pushed away the Knights that had surrounded me. I then raised my sword and said, "Li Mu, Wang Jian, Bai Qi, you three go after Bai Li Ruo Feng. I'll deal with the Vice Guild Master!"

.....

"Ga ga ga....."

Quick Thunder Swift Wind stood at the center of a group of [House of Prestige] players and let out a wild laugh, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, have you not realized the reality of your situation? You only have a small amount of people. Just what makes you think you can fight on par with [House of Prestige]!?”

Without responding, I activated [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Haste]. I then charged straight towards them. Qing Qian, Wolf, and Old K followed right behind me.

Quick Thunder raised his battle axe and fire began to rise off the blade. A group of Swordsmen threw [Skyshaker Slash] while the Berserkers activated [Battle Axe Throw]. [Zhan Long]’s Tang Xin was also killed in the barrage of attacks. We were quickly losing more and more players.

I sprinted forward. Right as I was about to reach the enemy I shouted, “Yong Jie, the shield, now!”

One Second Hero rammed his shield into the ground, creating a shockwave that spread out through the entire abyss. During that moment, all of [Zhan Long]’s players had a [Fierce Sun Wall] condense around them. Their defenses increased drastically and I swung both of my swords as I charged into the crowd. With a [Sword Tempest], I immediately cut through the line of defense formed by a dozen Berserkers and Swordsmen. Both Wolf and Qing Qian waved their daggers and cut through the crowd. In the middle of the chaos, they had taken on the mentality of a warrior.

In the distance, Bai Qi shouted and threw his battle axe. “Peng!” It flew into a wall and sparks flew. His mark was a little off and he didn’t manage to kill Bai Li Ruo Feng. He however, did not expect that Bai Li Ruo Feng would turn around and shoot a [Scatter Shot] that stunned him. The Musketeers and Archers had focused all their firepower on him and Bai Qi fell to his knees and died.

Screams of anguish rose all around us. Even Wan Er’s Purple Kirin Dragon had been stunned in the air, and couldn’t be used. [House of Prestige]’s attack was just too savage!

“Kill Quick Thunder Swift Wind first!”

I opened my hand, [Defeat the Dragon]!

Quick Thunder Swift Wind shouted, “Oh no!”

At the same time he raised his battle axe to retreat, Quick Thunder Swift Wind activated [Berserker God] and dodged the [Defeat the Dragon] effect. F\*ck, [Defeat the Dragon] was considered a curse type effect so it couldn't deal damage on Quick Thunder while he had [Berserker God] on. That skill lasted for 7 seconds, which meant that he wouldn't be able to take any magic or stun type effects.

I instantly reacted and jerked my left arm. Seeing as he wouldn't take any skill type attacks, let's see what he will do about my weapon! My Dragon's Hook flew out and pierced right into Quick Thunder Swift Wind's chest. I then gave the Hook a sharp tug, bringing him flying, straight towards me. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

"Hong!"

"5817 ! "

Quick Thunder Swift Wind trembled as his health dropped below 50%. No matter how hard he tried however, he couldn't shake off my Dragon's Hook!

At that moment, two Swordsmen type girls charged forward, putting themselves between me and Quick Thunder. Their faces were extremely cold and they shouted, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, I won't allow you to kill Brother Swift Wind! If you have the guts, then kill us! Anyone who hurts a girl isn't a man!"

I released the Dragon's Hook and my Cold Iron Sword appeared in my hand again. I then swept forward and "Ka Cha Ka Cha!" threw seven attacks right onto the two girls. Before they died, they could hear me faintly say, "If I showed you mercy, then how would I face Dancing Forest, Rainy, and all the other girls that had died in battle for [Zhan Long]?"

.....

"Peng peng peng...."

Arrows thudded into my chest. I had already started to attract firepower. If my [Wall of Dou Qi] wasn't as strong as it was, I'd probably have become a porcupine already. Li Mu and Wang Jian took the players from the Valiant Bravery Camp and charged towards Bai Li Ruo Feng's personal guard. The scariest part was Bai Li Ruo Feng's attack. He, China Server's number one

Archer, was just too talented. Almost every attack he threw was enough to instantly kill one of our players. Furthermore, he was extremely skilled with his maneuvers, making it even harder for Li Mu and Wang Jian to kill him.

“Li Xiao Yao!”

Wan Er said in the team chat, “I’m at your 7’o clock. I’ll coordinate with you and kill Bai Li Ruo Feng. Otherwise, there will be no way for us to control the situation!”

“Ok!”

I pushed off another group of people and dashed towards Bai Li Ruo Feng. At the same time, I glanced at my Dragon’s Hook. It still had 47 seconds left until the cooldown timer was done. There was no way for me to use it in that time.

The entire way there, I was met with players from [House of Prestige]. I continuously stepped into a Z formation, evading their attacks. I needed to decrease the damage I was receiving as much as possible. At the same time, I said in the team chat, “I’m blocking everything 180 degrees to his left. Li Mu, Wang Jian, block everyone 90 degrees to his bottom right while Dong Cheng and Qing Qian block off the remaining angles. Let’s kill him in one move! If Bai Li Ruo Feng dares to come, then he’d better leave his life here!”

Once I finished talking, I raised my sword and got closer to Bai Li Ruo Feng. He was at the side of the cliff and had no more room to retreat.

“Protect the Guild Master!”

A group of players from [House of Prestige] roared. Seeing their attempt, I laughed and activated my [Dragon Transformation]. Like lightning, I sprinted right at them and activated [Sword Tempest], crushing everyone in the group. At the same time, I jumped up and raised both of my blades, throwing one heavy slash right at Bai Li Ruo Feng!

“Not good....”

Bai Li Ruo Feng could already tell that there was no one to help him fend off an attack while I used [Dragon Transformation]. He then immediately tried to escape to his right, but Wang Jian and Li Mu came at him from that direction. They activated [Halberd Whirlwind] and [Covering Sword Slash] at the same

time! Wan Er's [Blade of the Death God] was more than enough to make Bai Li Ruo Feng tremble in his boots.

"F\*ck!"

Bai Li Ruo Feng cursed, raised his bow and quickly retreated, dodging the attack. He then swung his bow and threw a shot right at Li Mu's face. Li Mu pulled the arrow out and said, "I'm going to kill you!"

Once all of his escape routes had been sealed, Bai Li Ruo Feng could only try and make a hole. However, Qing Qian and Dong Cheng were waiting for him. In desperation, Bai Li Ruo Feng raised his long bow, charged towards Dong Cheng, and shot a straight arrow right at her. He then roared and activated [Big Dipper Meteor]. With Dong Cheng's [Mana Shield] only at 4% durability. A [Big Dipper Meteor] + normal attack was enough to kill Dong Cheng!

"Huh!?"

Dong Cheng's had been too arrogant and missed her chance. Now, even if she were to use a [Dimension Leap], she wouldn't necessarily get out of the way in time.

Right at that moment, a person raised their battle axe and charged forward yelling, "Don't hurt Yue Er, if you have the guts, then come at me!"

It was Dong Cheng Lei who had activated [Berserker God]! He swept his battle axe and took three shots to the chest. With his health at a critical level, he rammed right into Bai Li Ruo Feng and "Peng!" pushed him right into the wall. With his talented strength, there was no way a weak Archer like Bai Li Ruo Feng would be able to hold him off.

Even with critical health, Dong Cheng Lei didn't seem to be afraid of death. He threw a kick right at Bai Li Ruo Feng's chest, and dealt three attacks straight at Bai Li Ruo Feng's neck, hacking him to death!

## Chapter 518 Joining Forces

Bai Li Ruo Feng, Li Mu and Wang Jian immediately activated all kinds of AOE skills to control the situation. On top of that, after a few minutes, Old K's [Fierce Sun] cool down finished and he used the skill, which swept through the abyss, purging more of the players from [House of Prestige]. Then there was the fact that Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing were helping us in this blood bath. After 30 minutes of fighting, around 2000 bodies littered the bottom of the abyss. Blood dripped everywhere and the smell of carnage permeated the air.

.....

"Sou sou...."

Li Mu gasped for air as he stood in the center. Looking at all of the bodies around him he said, "Our losses this time were too great. This battle has already turned our 150+ people to 27. Almost all of [Zhan Long]'s main force has been killed off..."

I felt a stab in my heart and said, "Yup, there's only 27 people left. Quite a few of our officer level players had died too... Let's clean up the field first. There's no way we can stay here any longer...."

"Ok!"

Wang Jian commanded a few of the players to clean up the area. Most of the high level equipments went to our players. That was the only good thing that came from this battle. We were going to split the spoils at the end. Actually, overall, [Zhan Long]'s strength had risen rather than fallen.

I picked up my Dragon Reservoir Sword and leaned against the blood wall. I looked up at the sky and murmured, "There's still 9 hours... so long...."

Wan Er said, "What's our next plan?"

I pursed my lips and said, "The Guild Master, Vice Guild Master, team leaders, and Elders have basically all died. Even though there are at least 16,000 people out there, but they probably won't be able to hold us off. Wan Er, send a message to Yao Yan. Tell her to bring 5000 of [Zhan Long]'s players. Then we'll

have [Enemies at the Gate] and [Blood Contract] meet up with us from Glacial River Valley. This way, we'll work together from the outside and the inside and charge our way out of the encirclement. After that we'll head towards the Grave of the Warring States and fend them off from Dragon's Den. Dragon's Den is our last piece of territory. We can only rely on that... and hold off for the rest of the 24 hours. Even if every last one of our players die, as long as Chi Yu Han is still alive, then that is enough...."

Wan Er wryly smiled. "Go it. Don't put too much pressure on yourself. As the Guild Master of [Zhan Long], you've already done enough. This was already an extremely unfair battle!"

"Yup!"

.....

We waited for everyone to finish preparing. After the [House of Prestige]' elites underwent that massacre, they didn't seem to have any plans on launching another attack on us. Only a few dozen people would try and provoke us, but they were all cut down by Wang Jian and Li Mu.

I leaned against the wall and started talking with One Second Hero, Wolf, and Old K. Wolf waved his hand and materialized the list of rankings in the air. There were quite a few changes that occurred——

- Li Xiao Yao Death Count: 2547
- Hero Ran Min Death Count: 1822
- Cang Yue Death Count: 1429
- Cang Tong Death Count: 1327
- Ye Lai Death Count: 1128
- Dancing Forest Death Count: 1114
- Thousand Suns over Snow Lands Death Count: 1097
- General Wang Jian Death Count: 971
- Yue Qing Qian Death Count: 884
- General Li Mu Death Count: 870

.....

"F\*ck...." One Second Hero looked at the ranks and couldn't say anything, "Guild Master, you killed 2547 people. Most of them were probably people

from [Vanguard], and [House of Prestige], right? To think that you killed even more people than Old K's [Fierce Sun]...."

Wolf smiled. "There's no other way. Old K's normal battle power is much lower than Brother Xiao Yao's. His attack power is just too high, and he's pretty skilled at maneuvers. Practically every time he attacks, the target will die. Even though Old K has [Whirlwind Slash], a lot of the time his kills went to the ranged players Dancing Forest or Dong Cheng.

Old K rubbed his nose and smiled. "Actually, I'm pretty satisfied with being ranked in the top two. I'm even above Cang Tong and Cang Yue. To be honest, this actually feels a little surreal. Just what skill do I have that would allow me to reach this level...."

One Second Hero said, "Ye Lai is also an extremely strong person. After fighting for 7 hours, he managed to actually already kill 1100 people. Damn, all of the people that Ye Lai killed were from [Hero's Mound]. He's way too OP. To actually be able to kill so many people right under Q-Sword's nose. Just how OP is he..."

Dong Cheng wryly smiled. "After all, that is why Ye Lai is known as Jiu Li City's battle god..."

I glanced at the points from the Ba Huang City Camp, and was astonished, I displayed them in front of everyone else——

Ba Huang City Camp:  
Q-Sword Death Count: 997  
Jian Feng Han Death Count: 674  
Simple Death Count: 557  
The Seventh Tang Death Count: 441  
Sword Tears Death Count: 338

.....

Looking at everyone's shocked expression, I gave a reassuring smile, "Looks like this is a trade off. Even though Ye Lai killed a lot of people, but Q-Sword also killed quite a few from [Judgement] and [Prague]. He's even killed more than Jian Feng Han. If everything proceeds as is, then the Saint Tier equipment for killing the most people will end up in Q-Sword's bag."



Dong Cheng gritted her teeth, “Tang Qi that dumbass, he actually killed so many of our people....”

I smiled. “Enough, at least the players he killed were all from [Judgement], and not [Zhan Long]. However, when we entrench ourselves in Dragon’s Den, we’re going to have to face [Hero’s Mound]’s main force.”

Li Mu walked towards us from a distance and wiped away the blood on his face and smiled. “I think... that before we can even enter the Dragon’s Den, we’re going to have to get out of here alive. Don’t forget, there’s over 10,000 players from [House of Prestige] that are waiting for us outside. Bai Li Ruo Feng may have died, but they haven’t. Besides, they can still listen to the command of Quick Thunder Swift Wind.”

I nodded, “Yup, we’ll see what happens in 20 minutes!”

“Alright!”

.....

Not long after, I heard a “Di!”. I had gotten a message from the beautiful Guild Master of the [Zhan Long: Defense Army] Yao Yan: “Guild Master, all ten thousand of our players have already reached Green Qilin Valley. Within five minutes, we’ll surround the players from [House of Prestige] and begin our attack. How about you guys come up here in ten minutes?”

“Alright!”

I reached out and grabbed a vine. Because [House of Prestige] threw down those boulders, the ground had risen quite a bit and we could now grab onto the vines without too much effort, allowing us to get out. Otherwise, we might actually have been trapped to death here.

Looking at the time, I could see that my [Dragon Transformation] still had 10 minutes left for its cool down. Yup, that was perfect. Later, I could fly up there to clear out the space for everyone.

.....

Time passed by slowly. Finally, after 5 minutes, we could hear the sounds of battle coming from above. Yue Yao Yan, Misty Clouds and Han Bei Song had all

charged into [House of Prestige]' formation. They weren't trying to annihilate them, just to lock them in place.

After a few more minutes, the ten minute deadline was up and I immediately pointed towards the vines that were near us and said, "Climb up these and I'll cover for everyone else. Chi Yu Han, can you bring Chi Yu Qing up here?"

Chi Yu Han raised his Heaven's Spite sword and the Dou Qi power began to rise around him as he said, "yes!"

"Alright!"

I reached out to grabbed a vine and pulled myself up and quickly shimmied up. When I was training in the special forces, we also had to train like this in the wild and I was extremely used to doing this.

The 27 players left from [Zhan Long] and the two NPCs all climbed up the vines. It took us two to three minutes to climb a hundred meters. Once my head peeked over the ground, I saw a group of Archers pulling back their bows and aiming straight at me. F\*ck, those bastards knew to wait for us here. The players of [House of Prestige] really aren't idiots!

"Release!" A flagbearer shouted.

Thousands of arrows were released and were going straight at me!

I immediately activated my [Wall of Dou Qi] and my [Dragon Transformation]. Once the dragon wings on my back opened up, I flew up into the air and immediately dodged all of the attacks coming at me. Numerous MISSes flew up from behind me. I opened my hand and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. At the same time, I summoned my Flaming Tiger God and rushed into the crowd of people. Practically a whole group of people had died in the chaos.

Behind me, the Purple Kirin Dragon also roared and rushed out of the abyss. It spat out a breath of dragon's fire into the enemy lines. This was an area damage attack. This was also an advantage of the Purple Kirin Dragon. It didn't have a normal attack power, so once it attacked, it used an area attack like Dragon's Breath!

In the distance around 100 yards away from me, Yue Yao Yan, Misty Palace and the others had all charged through the group of people. Yup, our plan was

going smoothly!

.....

Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Old K, and Li Mu all followed me up to the surface. Since I had critical health, I quickly retreated to receive a [Grip of Compassion] from Darling Duck. Right afterwards, I raised my sword and charged forward. I took the 26 people who were with me charging out of the encirclement. The [House of Prestige] players wanted to keep us trapped, but didn't dare to lunge at us. Even though [Zhan Long] only had 27 people charging out, almost every one of them was a renowned player in Ba Huang City. Against a team full of strong people, it wasn't enough to just want to lunge forward. Furthermore, there was the 10,000 players that Yue Yao was bringing. This was already enough to make the officers of [House of Prestige] get anxious. Bai Li Ruo Feng and Quick Thunder Swift Wind were all Guild Master and Elder level players, but they had died in the abyss. The floor was also littered with their team leader level players. There wasn't any commander that could rally them together.

We quickly charged out of the encirclement and Yao Yan met up with us. Finally, we saw the 5000 players from [Zhan Long] in their majestic form, with [Zhan Long]'s symbols on every shoulder in the crowd. At that moment, I had this sensation of relief wash over me. Finally, we weren't at a disadvantage in terms of numbers.

Old K raised his battle axe and shouted, "How about we head back and kill all those shitheads from [House of Prestige], what do you think?"

One Second Hero laughed, "Alright alright, I agree!"

Wan Er was speechless, "How about we just retreat? What if the 10,000 men from [Vanguard] arrive when we get trapped by [House of Prestige]? Besides, [Flying Dragon] and [Wrath of the Heroes] still has some strength left. We should just defend ourselves in the Dragon's Den. Even though it's a little dangerous, we can still hold off for 8 more hours there..."

I nodded, "Yup, listen to your Vice Guild Master. Everyone head towards the Grave of the Warring States!"

.....

Behind us, a group of [House of Prestige] people chased after us. One of the team leaders raised his spear and shouted, “They used dirty tricks to kill our Guild Master and Vice Guild Master. Brothers, charge! We cannot let them get away!”

The [House of Prestige] players all pursued us. Suddenly, I heard the sounds of battle rush from the forest and a group of people dashed out. At the very front of them all was a big man carrying a battle axe. Above his head was a line of words——

Ye Lai Lv 91 Flame Berserker

City: Jiu Li City

Guild: Judgement

Position: Guild Master

.....

Li Mu raised his longsword smiled. “Guild Master Ye Lai, do you want to go back to the capital with us?”

Ye Lai’s battle axe drooped and his armor was covered in blood. He smiled. “Yea right. Hurry up and run. [Hero’s Mound], [Knights Templar], and [Fantasy City] are all coming!”

# Chapter 519 Determined to Break In

“What’s wrong?!”

I furrowed my brow and noticed that Ye Lai had brought around 4000 players from [Judgement] out of the forest. Behind them, there was a large group of players from [Hero’s Mound] pursuing them. I did not see Q-Sword among them, but there definitely was over 5000 people there. Their numbers were almost on par with [Judgement]’s. However, with the addition of [Knights Templar] and [Fantasy Kingdom]’s 5000 players, [Judgement] had to retreat.

[Judgement]’s Vice Guild Master Babel Buddha was running towards us and he shouted, “Guild Master, take some people with you and retreat! I’ll take the rear!”

Ye Lai swung his battle axe over his shoulder and laughed, “Take the rear? Just run! There’s no need to get tangled with those Fan Shu City players. Retreat with the main formation of [Zhan Long]. Where they go, we go. As long as we protect that NPC Chi Yu Han, we’ll be in the clear. After all, this is just a city-level quest!”

.....

I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and took Li Mu, Wang Jian and the rest to charge forward. We took the rear and threatened [Hero’s Mound] players as we covered for [Judgement]’s retreat, fighting alongside Ye Lai and Babel Buddha. We began to converse——

I said, “Ye Lai, what brought you to this state? Weren’t you supposed to have met up with Yan Zhao Warrior? How could you guys have lost so miserably?”

Ye Lai didn’t immediately reply and just smiled ruefully, “Q-Sword, that bastard, is more calculating than I am. They took advantage of the hills in Bowl Valley to deal two full-on attacks on us. We lost quite a few just from those. Furthermore, the forest was filled with hidden Death God Arrows and we lost another 7000 players to those. On the bright side, we had already cut down around 8000 of their Death God Arrow Machines, so [Hero’s Mound] didn’t gain

too much from that victory. Yan Zhao Warrior also lost quite a bit. He retreated with only 9000 players. He still wants to maintain his neutral status and left after killing off 80% of [Hero's Mound]'s troops."

I smiled. "That means that [Hero's Mound] suffered quite a blow this time. Just how many were killed on both sides?"

Ye Lai's tone deepened, "If we were only talking about [Hero's Mound], [Prague] and [Judgement], then it was a loss of around 1:2. For every [Hero's Mound] player that was killed, we lost two of our own. Later on, when [Knights Templar], [Fantasy Kingdom], as well as 9 other Fan Shu City guilds joined the battle, the tables turned and for every player that we lost, they lost two more!"

As he finished talking, Ye Lai looked up at me and asked, "Xiao Yao, what's your plan after this? You saw how I brought all of my brothers over here and bet their lives on your side. Don't tell me that you have no more plans to use. If so, then I'm not letting you off easily!"

I laughed, "Don't worry; I still have plans! We're going straight towards the Grave of the Warring States! [Zhan Long]'s guild fort has already risen into a Lv 2 city and the walls surrounding it are made of stone that are around 5 meters high. Furthermore, there are watch towers that are each at least 10 meters tall, giving us the advantage in the sky. On top of that, there are blacksmiths inside the fort to fix our equipment. This way, we'll count on Dragon's Den, this simple city, to defend us. Holding off for 8 hours shouldn't be too big of a problem."

Ye Lai nodded, "Alright, then we'll do that for our next step. Let's go!"

"Yes!"

.....

Our team of 15,000 people headed straight towards [Zhan Long]'s territory. Along the way, a few of Ba Huang City's medium and small guilds tried to block our way, but they were all crushed by us. They had underestimated the strength of our 15,000 men.

Ye Lai and Misty Clouds, as always, saw each other as enemies. However, for the sake of their mutual ally, [Zhan Long], they managed to work together, which was a pretty good thing in the end.

Not long after, we made it out of the forest. In the distance, we could make out the shape of the city walls. Our Dragon's Den looked almost like a stone fort, which looked pretty simple and crude. However, the city was relatively large. Fitting 15,000 people in wasn't going to be a problem.

Wan Er raised her dagger and pointed towards the city and shouted, "Open the gates!"

On top of the city, a few of the NPC's recognized this Vice Guild Master and immediately lowered the iron gate. All of us rushed into the city. I glanced at Li Mu and said, "Li Mu, take 500 of the heavy armor players and go repair your equipment. Afterwards, we're going to lay out a defense formation in front of the city gates!"

Li Mu nodded, "Understood!"

Wan Er glanced at the structure of the city and then said in the guild chat, "Archers, go up to the watch towers and prepare your long range skills. Mages and Musketeers, head up onto the city walls, with Knights to protect you. All Healers are to remain within the city to heal other people. Start building the formations immediately! We need to prepare for [Hero's Mound]'s ambush!"

Immediately, a group of Archers climbed up the watch towers. There were 40 towers scattered throughout the city. Every tower could hold 10-15 Archers, with enough space for all of them to attack at once. A 10-meter tall watchtower increased an Archer's attack power and attack speed by 25% and their range by 50%. This was a good opportunity for us to increase the pressure on the enemy.

More importantly, at this stage in the game, fort wars had yet to begin. Even though our crude fort didn't look like much, it was enough to give [Hero's Mound] some trouble to deal with.

.....

I walked into the city with my sword in hand and went to the NPC blacksmith to fix up all of my equipment. My Cold Iron Sword only had around 2% durability left. It would have broken the sword if I had cut down one more person. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Ye Lai all came in to fix their equipment. Afterwards, I took them, Misty Cloud and Han Bei Song to climb the western wall. It was around 5 meters high and 3 meters thick. Even the arrow-slits were

very simple. We didn't even have a place to throw boulders from. All we could do was use our ranged players to deal attacks.

Ye Lai squinted at our surroundings and said, "The very first player fort in the China Server—Dragon's Den. It doesn't look bad at all. The positioning is most likely one of the best in Ba Huang City. However, it's not that reliable for defense. There isn't anything in the surrounding that could help deter the enemy. If there was some kind of moat to surround the city, or a cliff, then we'd take 50% less damage. That would be much better..."

I couldn't help but smile, "That wasn't up to us, alright? If it were up to me, then I definitely would've built the fort in front of some cliff or on a mountain and only allow the enemy a small portion of the wall and the gate. I would then fill the walls with Archers and Musketeers. That way, we'd be able to defend against 4 times our numbers. Unfortunately, the game is set that we cannot choose."

Han Bei Song nodded with a smile, "Actually, this fort is pretty well-built. You don't have to ask for more from it...."

Misty Clouds squinted into the distance and said, "[Hero's Mound] is here!"

.....

Just as he said, a large group of people charged out of the thick forest. It looked like there were around 2000 people with them. Most of them were from [Hero's Mound: Division Two]. The Guild Master, Ai Ye, led the charge all the way to the bottom of the gate. When they were around 100 yards away from us, he pointed straight at the wall and shouted, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, if you're a man, then come out and fight with me!"

I looked at Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing who were within the city and smiled. "I'm in the middle of a quest to save Chi Yu Han. If Chi Yu Han lives for another 8 hours, then the quest will be complete. What point is there to fight to the death with you? Besides, what makes you think you can take me on?"

Ai Ye's face turned bright red and roared, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you arrogant son of a bitch. If you have guts, then get the f\*ck down here and fight me!"

I raised my hand and pulled out my sword with a "Keng!" and smiled. "Then if



we're talking about guts, why don't we do this the old way? If I come out, then you, Ai Ye, must come closer 50 yards. Let's have a one on one; do you dare?"

Ai Ye gritted his teeth. Beside him, his Vice Guild Master whispered, "Are you really going to fight one on one with Xiao Yao Zi Zai? Forgive me if I'm blunt, but even if there were ten of you, you wouldn't be able to fight him..."

"As if I needed to be told that!" Ai Ye gritted his teeth and shouted, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, if you want to cower behind your walls, then you keep doing that. I want to see how you're going to last the next 8 hours with just ten thousand people."

.....

Very soon, the number of players surrounding Dragon's Den began to increase rapidly. The ten thousand players left from [House of Prestige] came as well. Even worse, Q-word, Jian Tan and Sword Tears all appeared on the western front. [Hero's Mound]'s strength began to consolidate more and more. The number of players that were after Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing were just too many and every one of them wanted a piece of the prize.

Misty Clouds furrowed his brow and said, "What's up with this? There's more and more people. Why don't we take this chance and charge out of this place? Or...?"

"Don't!" Ye Lai smiled. "To be honest, I want to experience what a defensive war on a fort is like!"

I said, "Yup, let's just wait for them to attack! At the moment, Dragon's Den is unrivaled and they have no idea how to break through its defense. Unless they have some kind of war machine designed for a siege, there's no way they can break in. We just have to defend ourselves in this city. If we run out of potions, bullets or arrows, we can just go straight back into the city to replenish our supplies. I've already set the prices of all of the stalls to 0, so everyone can use everything for free!"

.....

After waiting for another half hour, the players on the outside couldn't wait any longer.

"Keng!"

Q-Sword pulled out his blade, pointed straight at the city and said, “Even though we don’t have any ladders or other siege machines, that fort is only made up of a pile of rocks. Just grab onto the crevices and climb your way up. Everyone, begin to attack! Charge up to the city! Let’s crush everyone in [Zhan Long], capture Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing and go back to Ba Huang City to claim our prize!”

The sounds of battle resounded throughout the field. Once [Hero’s Mound] launched their attack, [Vanguard], [House of Prestige], [Flying Dragon] and [Wrath of the Heroes] all followed en masse.

Wan Er stretched out her pale neck and looked up at the wall. “Archers, prepare your AOE attacks and kill them by the droves! Mages, use [Magma Abyss] on them!”

All ranged attacks from the city wall had a 30% ranged advantage. They locked their skills onto the other side of the wall, and threw their area attacks. Screams of agony filled the air and Ba Huang City’s number one player siege battle began!

# Chapter 520 Rhino Cavalry

After I glanced at the battle situation, I turned around and headed straight towards the great hall in the city and began talking with the NPC official. I took out all of the silver equipment that was below Lv 50 in the guild storage and turned them all into God Army Cards. Immediately, I had 21 more sets of God Army Cards in stacks of 100. I then went back to the wall. Ye Lai turned around to look at me and said, “Xiao Yao, why’d you leave?”

I smiled. “To replenish something!”

“Don’t you have 10% Drain? With your defense and attack, you probably don’t need to restock red potions anymore, right? Plus, I just saw you fix up your equipment already!”

“I didn’t leave to replenish those.”

“What’s that?”

“What I replenished was this....”

I waved my hand 50 God Army Cards materialized in my palm and began to spin. In the next moment, the God Army Cards suddenly evaporated into the light and began to condense beside me, turning into a gigantic [Azure Dragon Crossbow]. With a roar, the blood-red giant stepped behind the crossbow and pulled back the bowstring. Five arrows shot out. With the advantage of shooting from the city wall, the range of the attacks became 150 yards and had an even stronger piercing power. The shots passed through several players, “Pu Pu Pu” and continuously dealt damage to each of its targets. Screams of agony spread throughout the field and [Hero’s Mound] lost a dozen players.

.....

Ai Ye and Ji Yuan led [Hero’s Mound: Division Two] players to the western wall, right in front of us. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K and Matcha all raised their blades and charged forward to meet them. They stayed near the wall in order to receive support from the long-range players, giving them an unassailable position.

Ai Ye raised his sword and stood 20 yards away from the city wall. He put the blade in front of his chest to parry the arrow and yelled, “Advance! Kill all of [Zhan Long]’s players and climb up the city wall! Capture Xiao Yao Zi Zai alive and enslave Cang Tong!”

Wan Er stood by my side and grinned, “If I log off, then I’ll disappear. How would you enslave me?”

I smiled too, “Well, I’ve never heard of anyone getting kidnapped in a game. Either you kill me or you let me go. And judging the level of Ai Ye and Ji Yuan’s skill, they’ll most likely just get killed by our people...”

“Well then, let’s not hold back!” Dong Cheng raised her staff and locked her skill onto the Assassin Ji Yuan’s head and said, “Qing Qian, help me kill Ji Yuan. My [Thunderbolt Finger] can numb him for 0.5 seconds. If you use [Glacial Hammer], we’ll be able to kill him from a distance!”

Qing Qian gave a slight nod. In the next moment, Dong Cheng waved her left hand and a gale brushed past her elegant robes. Light reflected off of her face, revealing a beautiful expression. Her elegant brows raised and, suddenly, lightning began to spark between her fingers and shoot right towards Ji Yuan. “Pa Tse!”, a lightning bolt shot through the air. Qing Qian’s dagger flashed and [Glacial Hammer] fell upon Ji Yuan!

“5527 ! ”

“4711 ! ”

.....

Ji Yuan took the two hits at once; there was no way he could escape. His knees fell to the ground and he looked up at Dong Cheng and Qing Qian who were on the wall. Rebelliously, he gripped his dagger and said, “Cang Yue.... you’re a goddess, how could you use such a savage way to kill me...”

Ai Ye glanced at his partner’s body and smiled. “Dumbass, how would an Assassin with less than 6000 health dare come so near to the frontline? You’re practically asking for it! Everyone, charge forward! [Zhan Long], [Judgement], and [Enemies at the Gate] will have to deal with attacks from all sides. They cannot retreat from here unscathed! Climb up the walls and capture Dragon’s

Den!”

At the bottom of the fort, players crashed against the wall like a tide. Besides [Hero’s Mound], there were players from [Knights Templar] and [Fantasy Kingdom]. There were at least 5000 players in this wave, while we had at least 5000 players on the western wall. However, the quality of our players was extremely high plus the advantage of the wall. We pretty much held the upper hand in the situation.

Looking at the enemy players rushing towards us, Ye Lai gripped his battle axe and began spinning it in his hand. He smiled, revealing his lust for battle.

I turned around to look at him and smiled. “If you want to go down and kill people, why be afraid of the consequences!?”

Ye Lai laughed and raised his battle axe. With a roar, he jumped down from 5 meters and smiled. “Then I’m going! Killing [Hero’s Mound] players is my greatest pleasure!”

I raised my arm and pulled my Dragon Reservoir Sword out. My War Swept Cloak fluttered behind me and my battle boots stepped onto the wall as I dived forward. While I was in the air, I gripped my sword with both hands and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] into the crowd. When I hit the ground, I dashed forward and threw a Lv 9 [Sword Tempest] + a Lv 10 Combo into the crowd of people. The Lv 10 [Combo] could deal at most six attacks. If I swept out my blade then, I would hit 6 targets. As long as I used it as an area attack skill, then using it to clean-up was more than enough.

My Flaming Tiger God roared and followed closely behind me, dishing a [Burstfire Raid] into the crowd. Wang Jian then took the remaining dozen Garrison Outfit Warriors into a charge against the enemy. They continuously used [Impact Roar]. That skill, along with the support from the Archers, Mages, and Musketeers on the wall, allowed us to immediately take control of the situation and completely crush our enemy.

“Hong!”

In the distance, Ye Lai swung his battle axe and crashed through the enemy’s flank. He was completely surrounded by flames and looked like a battle god. Each attack was accompanied by a roar. After hearing a terrifying roar like that,

everyone cowered before him. The true way to play battle games was to overwhelm your enemies, in power and reputation. Ye Lai was [Judgement]'s Guild Master and he was a crazy man on the battlefield. That just showed how much he understood that principle.

Time crawled by slowly and nearly 2 hours passed. There were still 6 hours left in the quest and nearly 30,000 bodies lay at the bottom of the wall. During the two hours of battle, we didn't let a single player onto the wall. [Hero's Mound] had lost almost all of its divisions, while nearly 10 guilds had been completely massacred. However, Q-Sword didn't look anxious at all and stood away from the battle, quietly watching the battle situation at Dragon's Den.

.....

"What's wrong?"

Wan Er's beautiful eyes carried a doubtful expression said, "Based on my understanding of Q-Sword, he shouldn't be this patient. All of [Hero's Mound]'s divisions have been used up and there's only 4000 players from the main guild left. Just why is he this patient? He must have some other card up his sleeve.... We must look into this!"

I raised my bloody sword and said, "No need to look into it; he's waiting!"

Han Bei Song jolted and said, "Just what is he waiting for?"

I reached out and pointed towards the south and said, "One of Ba Huang City's branches is currently meeting up at the Glacial River Valley. They're all part of the Rhinoceros Cavalry and the Fierce Tiger Army. Rocklin is giving his all...."

Who's Blue blinked a few times and said, "That shouldn't be too bad right? Dragon's Den hasn't become a besieged fort, so it shouldn't be lost, right?"

I gritted my teeth and said, "Well it shouldn't be, but that just means that it wouldn't take any damage from players, but that's not necessarily true for NPC attacks. I'm worried. Dragon's Den is relatively fragile and might not be able to stand against the charge of the Rhino Cavalry. After all, everyone should know that the power behind a rhinoceros charge is pretty frightening and they have the courage to charge right into a firefight..."

Ye Lai gripped his bloody battle axe and sat on the edge of the wall. His robes fluttered behind him and he looked into the distance with a smile, “I have a premonition, Xiao Yao, that your Dragon’s Den will suffer a great loss; you better not cry....”

I made a fist and smiled back at him, “No matter. As long as my brothers are here, then I will already have everything I need. It’s just a fort; if I lose it, then I lose it!”

Ye Lai laughed, “Yup, a hero in a chaotic world ought to have that same attitude. The people who do all in their power for the sake of protecting a city or a piece of land are at most warlords, but they do not have the air of a king.”

I turned around and looked at Qing Qian, “Melon, what’s the situation like on the other three sides of the fort?”

Qing Qian said, “We’re only suffering around 30% of the losses we suffered before and are killing many more of their players. If you look at the scene yourself, it’ll be obvious. [Vanguard], [Flying Dragon], and [Hero’s Mound] also lost quite a few players. Based on my estimates, they have no way of continuing this fight. Even if they were to sacrifice every last player, not a single one would step into Dragon’s Den. So I think that... Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han are waiting. They are most likely waiting for the NPC army to launch their attack. Otherwise, they wouldn’t have any way to continue in this fight.”

I furrowed my brows, crossed my arms and fell into deep thought. I leaned against the wall behind me and didn’t say a word.

Matcha walked over and asked, “Boss, should we be doing something right now?”

I smiled at her. Matcha was very clever and her strategizing was indeed better than everyone else.

Ye Lai then added, “What should we do? Are we not going to continue holding them off here?”

Misty Cloud added, “Yeah, if we defend ourselves here for another 5 hours, then the quest will be over and we’ll be able to get our reward. If we really do complete this quest, then [Zhan Long] will become the biggest winner. Of the

top 100 players with points, 81 of them are from [Zhan Long]!”

Who’s Blue looked towards me and asked, “Guild Master Xiao Yao, why don’t you say something? Just what are we going to do?”

I looked up and said, “Right now, what we need the most isn’t more soldiers, but time. If the Fierce Tiger Army really comes at us from the Glacial River Valley, then the later they come, the more likely we’ll win. I plan on sending a team out of the city to tie them down and lead them in the opposite direction. This way, we can minimize the time they have to charge at us. That would be the best path for us to take.”

“You’re going to send a team out of the city?”

Han Bei Song glanced at our surroundings and smiled. “Looks like that will be a very hard task. We’re currently completely surrounded.... Jian Feng Han and Q-Sword have been eyeing us this entire time. With those two battle masters watching us, who would dare to go out?”

I gripped my sword and stood up, “I think that I’ll personally lead the team....”

Ye Lai held up a hand and said, “No, there’s no need...”

“Why’s that?”

“You’re the commander of Dragon’s Den, the spirit of [Zhan Long]. If you were to die outside, then there’s no way that we can justify your death, nor help you bring back your body. Just use my people to do this...” Ye Lai took a deep breath and smiled. “The 7th, 9th, 12th, and 14th divisions of [Judgement] are all in the Purple Demon Forest awaiting my command. In total, I’d have around 11,000 players. I’m going to command the four divisions to charge at the Rhinoceros Cavalry right now, and use all our might to drag them down; how does that sound?”

I furrowed my brows and said, “The attack power of the Rhinoceros Cavalry is extremely strong and they move very fast. These are all advantages over foot soldiers. Dragging them down means that you’ll be sacrificing yourselves to gain some time for us. Just how is [Zhan Long] going to return [Judgement] a favor this big?”

Ye Lai smiled widely at me and patted my shoulder, “If you think of me as a



brother, then there's no need to return any favors.I know that when [Judgement] gets into any trouble, then you'll definitely come to support me too!"

I didn't say anymore and gave a firm nod, "Yes, we will!"

# Chapter 521 Use Your Best Men for Battles of Power

Ten thousand people held their breath as they guarded the Dragon's Den, awaiting any kind of news.

As they shared a screen, [Judgement]'s divisions entered Glacial River Valley and engaged the Fierce Tiger Army in battle. At the same time, they also took a charge from Rocklin, and nearly 20,000 Rhinoceros Cavalry chased after [Judgement]'s players. The players themselves didn't have the necessary strength to hold off such a strong force, and could only retreat as they were pursued, and drew the enemy towards Zi Feng Fort.

.....

In the blink of an eye, 3 more hours passed by, and there were only 3 hours left in the quest.

At the bottom of the city, [Hero's Mound] and [Vanguard] couldn't wait any longer. Q-Sword sent out 5 waves to try and draw us out of the city, but not a single one of our commanders took the bait as we all stayed within the city. Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han on the other hand didn't dare to actually launch an attack on the city, for fear of members falling to the arrows of Dragon's Den.

Finally, another hour passed by, and there were less than 2 hours until the quest was over.

"Alright..."

Ye Lai let out a sigh and stood up on the city wall. He held up his battle axe and said, "All of my people have been massacred by the Rhinoceros Cavalry who will probably reach here in less than half an hour. This time there aren't many people that can hold off this savage force. Prepare for battle! There's only half an hour left till we make our last stand!"

"Yes."

I nodded my head firmly and raised my sword saying, "Everyone rouse

yourselves, it's time for the last battle!"

.....

Not long after, we began to feel tremors, and they gradually got more and more violent. A few minutes later, we could see a mass of black Rhinoceros Cavalry charging out of the forest. All of them pulled out their swords and began waving them above their heads as they whooped. F\*ck, Ba Huang City's cavalry have finally come for us.

The half beast half man Rocklin raised his battle axe as he sat at the the forefront, mounted on an enormous rhinoceros. He had a cruel smile on his face as he yelled, "Rhino Cavalry, attention! Immediately charge at this fort! This group of audacious adventurers have openly declared war against Ba Huang City and deserve to die. They're protecting the siblings Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing and have brought this fate upon themselves! Kill all of Chi Yu Han's people! Show mercy to none! Crush their fort!"

At that moment, all of the dark armored cavalrymen used the back of their swords to smack their mounts. Those mini tank-like Rhinos all screeched as they charged forward. The tip of each Rhino's horn flashed with a light that felt both fiery and icy at the same time. No matter how you looked at it, there was no way this mob was easy to deal with.

"Shua!"

Dong Cheng flew above the crowd and quickly read out their stats. Her little face turned purple, "Damn, to think that Ba Huang City had such a strong NPC cavalry. Why didn't they bring it out when we were fighting against Jiu Li City? F\*ck, they're just too savage...."

Within moments, she shared the information with everyone, and it really was terrifying——

[Rhinoceros Cavalry] (Thunder Tier Monster)

Level: 100

Attack: 4050-4850

Defense: 4700

Health: 400,000

Skills: [Blade Ram] [Rush Combo] [Wall of Iron]

Introduction: Rhinoceros Cavalry, these enormous Rhinos were discovered by barbarians in the far east of Ba Huang City. They have an extremely thick armored skin and terrifyingly explosive power. Legend has it that even the top warriors of the world would not necessarily be able to defeat a mature Rhino. These Rhinos have eaten a magical plant in the deep forest and evolved over the generations, obtaining the power of both fire and ice. Once they launch a charge, they will be able to deal horrific amounts of damage. These rare Rhinos thus became a secret branch of the cavalry in Ba Huang City. When the right time comes, they'll be used to conquer the world!

.....

Looking at the stats and introduction, I was speechless. Finally I said, "These stats are even stronger than that of the Garrison Angels! Furthermore, there are at least 20,000 of them. Ah... Ba Huang City's royalty have really outdone themselves. They didn't bring this kind of troop out when they were being attacked. Instead, they decided to use it against players from their own city. They've really represented the saying—Use your best men to keep power and everyone else to fight your wars !

Ye Lai couldn't help but smile, "I heard that our Fan Shu City's number one guild [Hero's Mound] is just like that. When they're fighting in the game, they claim that they're undefeated within their own city, but when fighting battles with other cities it's a different story... hei hei, they rely completely on [Legend] and [Judgement]..."

Q-Sword was around 70 yards away from us and could hear our conversation. His expression turned extremely ugly. He gripped his sword and calmly said, "Everyone get out of the way and let the Rhino Cavalry charge into them. Let's wait for the NPC army to break through the city wall and then we charge in after them! Whoever carries the symbol of [Zhan Long], [Judgement], [Enemies at the Gate], or [Blood Contract] shall be slaughtered! Kill them all!"

Dong Cheng's limpid eyes looked at the bottom of the city and she couldn't help but smile, "Did you see that? Q-Sword is extremely calm right now. He

won't bite on a provocation like that, or else [Hero's Mound] would not have become a super guild under his command."

In the distance, the hooves of the Rhinos beat against the ground. Twenty thousand Rhino Cavalrymen charged at our western wall. This was where our forces were strongest, but it was also where we were most likely to get hit.

"Keng!"

I pulled my Dragon Reservoir Sword out and leapt off the wall. I stood before the crowd of people and shouted, "Guard the city walls, Guard Dragon's Den! Defend our home! Everything hinges on this one battle! Let us fight to the death, and never admit defeat!"

All of our troops pulled out their blades. Ye Lai, Han Bei Song, and Misty Clouds followed behind me and jumped off to stand at the frontline.

One Second Hero raised his halberd and trembled a little. He looked at me and nervously laughed, "So, how are we doing this?"

I said, "The second the Rhino Cavalry hits us, we'll use a [Fierce Sun Wall]. We have to do our best to gain as much time as we can for everyone to kill these monsters. These are Thunder Tier monsters with 400,000 health. They won't be easily killed."

"Yes!"

.....

Right as the Rhino Cavalry met our frontline, Cheng Yong Jie let out his [Fierce Sun Wall]. For seven seconds, everyone's resistance and defense increased by 50%. In the next moment, each Rhino's horn began to glow as they they rammed right into our frontlines. "Hong hong hong!" The sounds of the crashes resounded throughout the map.

I raised my Cold Iron Sword to parry while I used my Dragon Reservoir Sword to cut the monster down. I let out [Sword Tempest]+[Seven Star Fragment Slash], and then activated [Blade Spin] to kill off all the monsters with critical health. Ye Lai and Misty Clouds both roared as they launched their counterattack while the players at the top of the wall continuously released their attacks. Just because these monsters had 400,000 health, doesn't mean

that they couldn't be killed.

Unfortunately, everything wasn't going as smoothly as we had hoped. The Rhino Cavalrymen waved their blades and charged forward unceasingly, destroying all the players in their path. Furthermore, each one had whirling blades of wind encircling them as they charged forward. It seemed to be a skill that was similar to [Blade Rush]. The attack power of these Lv 100 Thunder Tier monsters was just too high!

Within moments, the bottom of the city's walls was bathed in rivers of blood and my heart began to tighten. Heavens! We won't be able to hold them off! No matter how strong we were, we still wouldn't be able to hold off such a savage charge. There wasn't a single player that had reached Lv 100 yet, and not a single one of them had mounts. How were we supposed to deal with this NPC iron-clad cavalry charge?!

Waving both of my swords, I charged into the mob of monsters. I was a whirlwind on the frontlines, throwing the Rhino Cavalrymen into the air, one after another. Of course this wasn't going to change the overall situation and most of the Rhinos had already broken through the formation that we had set up at the bottom of the wall. One after another, these enormous beasts rammed into the wall. "Peng Peng Peng!" Stones began to crumble and the wall started to fall.

"Dear Lord..."

Wan Er's beautiful face held an astonished expression. She swung both of her daggers and her [Blade of the Death God] forced a Rhino Cavalryman backwards. That wasn't even close to enough to change things and even more Rhino Cavalrymen charged forward. Dong Cheng and Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands helped Wan Er to kill them, while Qing Qian and Wolf used their AOE attacks. Slowly, the Rhino Cavalrymen were dying off.

.....

The battlefield was chaotic and not far from us, a section of the 5 meter tall wall had collapsed. The reality was that a Lv 2 city like Dragon's Den was not going to be able to take this kind of an onslaught. Our players did not give up though and condensed into a large group as they tried to fend off the enemy.

They used their charges to try and stop the monsters from destroying the city, as they hoped to sacrifice their lives to try and beat the time limit.

Seeing this situation, the enemy players in the distance finally couldn't resist any longer.

“Keng!”

Q-Sword suddenly pulled out his long sword and pointed it towards Dragon's Den and roared, “Our opportunity has come! Charge! Let us flatten Dragon's Den and massacre [Zhan Long]!”

A mass of [Hero's Mound]'s players charged at us. It was practically piling snow onto the frost. This proved Dong Cheng's point that Q-Sword was number one in terms of tactical warfare.

This time, nobody thought about what tactics to use because there was only one path for us to walk. Kill anything and everything in front of us!

.....

Rocklin raised his battle axe and charged into the crowd. His face carried a cruel expression, “Chi Yu Han, you cowardly rat! Come! If you have the guts then fight a battle with me! I want to see just how strong your so called Holy Realm really is! Come at me, why don't you try out the blades of my Rhino Cavalry?!”

“Shua!”

Suddenly, a blade flew out of nowhere and “Cha cha cha!” cut seven Rhino Cavalrymen in two. A figure flew over. It was the raging Chi Yu Han. His Heaven's Spite Sword whirled around him and the golden glow of his Holy Realm surrounded his body. He smiled. “You're practically asking for it!”

The Heaven's Spite sword flew forward and “Ka Cha!”, Rocklin screeched in pain. The arm that wielded his battle axe had been cut off and blood spurted out. The battle axe fell to the ground along with the arm that carried it.

Chi Yu Han moved like lightning and suddenly opened his hand. Flames began to rise around him and he shouted, “Disappear!”

“Hong!”

The flames surged forward and Rocklin was burned to dust!

.....

“Huff...”

Chi Yu Han’s breath was harsh and his face was completely pale. Slowly, he hobbled back towards Dragon’s Den and glanced at me, “I can only help you with this much strength....”

I didn’t say a single word. To be able to instantly kill the commander of one of Ba Huang City’s armies, just how terrifying was Chi Yu Han? If he were to recover his Holy Realm strength, then who would be able to stop him?



# Chapter 522 The Three Man Rear

“Hong!”

The sword in Wang Jian’s hands started to glow as he surged forward. Once his [Halberd Whirlwind] killed a dozen players, Wang Jian glanced around him. Almost all of the players from [Zhan Long], [Enemies at the Gate], and [Judgement] had been killed. [Hero’s Mound] and the Rhino Cavalry’s charge had drowned us like a flood.

“Peng peng peng....”

The sound of rocks crumbling from the wall travelled to our ears. Within moments, the western wall of Dragon’s Den had become ruins and had lost all ability to protect us. Q-Sword raised his long sword and sternly said, “Advance, destroy all of their watchtowers and push all of the Death God Arrow machines in!”

.....

Old K and Li Mu fought fiercely as they retreated. Matcha raised her heavy shield and suddenly rammed it in front of the blacksmith and shouted, “We must hold our place. We cannot retreat any further! Our first priority is to focus all our firepower on those Rhino Cavalry. There aren’t many of them left!”

However at the same time, Q-Sword led a group of [Hero’s Mound] players and crushed our front row of players. Dashing forward, he raised his longsword and roared at One Second Hero, “[Fierce Tiger Burst]!”

“Peng!”

“10048 ! ”

It was a critical attack! Before One Second Hero could use a [Cleansing Wind], Q-Sword had already thrown his blade forward. “Pu Chi!” it punctured his chest. Immediately after, he used a [Destruction Wolf Formation], an AOE attack. One Second Hero grunted and his shield fell to the ground. Both him and the [Zhan Long] players around him were instantly killed. Q-Sword’s attack power was just too high!

“Yong Jie!”

Witnessing that scene, my heart froze. [Zhan Long] could no longer hold off [Hero’s Mound]. Even Ye Lai, Misty Clouds, and Han Bei Song couldn’t completely fend everyone off. The coordination of human players and the NPC army was too deadly for us.

I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword and cut apart the crowd in front of me as I desperately tried to get closer to [Zhan Long]’s main formation. Q-Sword’s sister, Sword Tears, raised her long sword and followed after me while maintaining a distance. At the same time, she commanded Mages and Archers to lock spells onto me. Under this kind of pressure, I could not attack normally, and didn’t manage to deal the most amount of damage I could.

“Keng!”

Q-Sword suddenly threw an attack that shook Matcha’s shield. He then raised a boot and kicked her shoulder, forcing her to cry out in pain and retreat, breaking her defense. Q-Sword’s eyes were filled with killing intent. He lunged forward and punched Matcha’s shield away. The sword in his right hand suddenly started to glow with a blue light as he threw an [Afterglow Slash] right onto Matcha!

“3917 ! ”

Matcha was stunned, and the effect lasted for 1.5 seconds.

“I’m sorry about this miss!”

Q-Sword laughed and light began to shine from under his feet. It was his most prided combo——[Six Directional Thunder]!

If I didn’t go help her, then Matcha was bound to die. I disregarded everything and jumped forward, taking six to seven hits to my shoulder. I suddenly opened my left hand, and my Dragon’s Hook flew out with a “Sou!”. Q-Sword seemed to sense the danger and took a step backwards. “Peng!” The Dragon’s Hook buried itself into a stone pillar. I tugged on the hook and flew forward. As I was in the air, I collected the Dragon’s hook and pulled out my Cold Iron Sword. As I spun around in the air, I raised both my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Cold Iron Sword and threw a single attack!

“Keng!”

Q-Sword parried the attack, but took a few steps back from the brunt of my attack. He smiled. “Concentrate all your attacks on Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

A [Magma Abyss] appeared under my feet, but I didn’t retreat at all. Without looking back, I said, “Matcha, order everyone to retreat. We cannot hold this place any longer, go to the great hall!”

“Alright!”

Matcha nodded and retreated with critical health. I then relied on my [Wall of Dou Qi] to take on the firepower that was coming at me from all sides. I raised my arm and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]+[Sword Tempest]. At that moment, a crowd of [Hero’s Mound]’s players all cowered and retreated a dozen meters. In the distance, Ye Lai raised his battle axe and roared, “Jian Feng Han and Simple have arrived! I can’t hold them off any longer. Xiao Yao, what do we do now? Dragon’s Den has already collapsed!”

I glanced at the time on the screen and said, “Nevermind about that, we’ll just fight for our lives. There’s still 40 minutes left. No matter what, we cannot let Chi Yu Han die! How about this, Ye Lai, you, Misty Cloud, and Han Bei Song all take Chi Yu Han to the eastern wall of the Dragon’s Den. That will lead you to Desolate Cloud Swamp. There should still be quite a few players left there. As long as we hold out for these 40 minutes, then we’ll win!”

“Alright!”

.....

We defensively retreated towards the great hall. There was no where left for us to retreat to. The Rhino Cavalry began to repeatedly ram against the doors. In the next moment, the crude door crashed with a boom and the NPCs in the fort were all crushed to death!

“Ding!”

System Notification: Please note, your fort “Dragon’s Den” has suffered a critical attack. Now that the NPC officer has died, you must buy a new one within 25 hours, or else the system will take back the fort!

Wan Er raised her blood stained dagger and charged into the crowd, while protecting Dong Cheng Yue. I could see injuries and blood marks on both her legs and shoulders. She only had around 25% health left and was still being chased after by the [Hero's Mound] players. I quickly gave her a [Heal] from a distance and then charged forward and helped cover for them with a [Sword Tempest].

Dong Cheng opened her hand and helped reduce the pressure on me by casting a [Thunderbolt Finger] and said, "Xiao Yao, we have to retreat. Our losses are extremely high. In just a short 30 minutes, [Zhan Long] now only has a few hundred people left. In the next 10 minutes, we'll be completely massacred!"

I looked into the distance and saw that Ye Lai, Han Bei Song and the others were guarding Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing and had already passed through the eastern gate and were heading towards the Desolate Cloud Swamp. In reality, the Dragon's Den was already a pile of ruins. This home that we put blood and sweat into could not take a combined attack from a few big guilds. We were completely defenseless...

.....

"Let's go!"

I waved my sword and shouted, "I'll take the rear! Protect the escape of our allies!"

Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K all nodded and began to withdraw from our Dragon's Den. In the distance, I could see that [Hero's Mound] was pushing 200 Death God Arrow machines towards us. Looks like Q-Sword needed some security, and is relying on his battle machines.

A group of people were all covered in blood and miserably retreated from the Dragon's Den. Watching all of our blood and sweat get crushed, Wang Jian raised a fist and with a trembling voice, he said, "This debt, just when will we get it back?"

I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword and said, "Don't just think about vengeance. We have to keep Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing alive and we'll be victors. At that point, wouldn't Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han become completely

exacerbated! Please check really quickly, has anyone gone to intercept Chi Yu Han and Ye Lai?”

Qing Qian shook her head and said, “Nope!”

I smiled. “That’s fine... everyone hurry up and retreat! [Hero’s Mound] and [Vanguard] will catch up to us soon!”

Right as we were talking, a dozen of [Zhan Long]’s players were killed by Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han. Wan Er furrowed her elegant brows and said, “We can’t continue like this, if we keep up running, then we’ll all be killed....”

Yao Yan helplessly looked at her and said, “Then what do we do?”

I smiled and suddenly halted my steps. My War Swept Cloak whirled around behind me. I suddenly stabbed my Dragon Reservoir Sword into the ground and smiled. “Yue Yao Yan, take everyone and continue withdrawing towards Desolate Cloud Swamp. We just need to hold out for 20 minutes and [Zhan Long] will win! Now that our guild has completed its task, let me enjoy this last moment by bringing the rear!”

Wang Jian anxiously replied, “Brother Xiao Yao, are you stupid?!”

I turned around and looked at him and smiled. “Why am I killing them, you’re asking? All of the [Hero’s Mound], and [Vanguard] players chasing after us at the forefront are close combat type warriors. Which one of them could break through my [Wall of Dou Qi] boosted defense? Who can block my Dragon Reservoir sword’s attack? That’s enough, you guys hurry up and leave!”

Li Mu stabbed his Tian Chen Sword into the dirt and he said, “Seeing as you’re gaining more time for us, then I’ll join you. For hard work like taking up the rear, I’m a professional!”

Wolf, Matcha, and Old K all signaled that they wanted to stay as well.

I felt a little anger rise up and I threw a punch into the ground. “Peng!” Energy whirled around me and I looked at everyone and shouted, “Are you all stupid? Just what level are you guys at? You realize that you lost 10 levels at once in the Purple Demon Forest. Just how long would it take for you all to catch up again? Listen to me. Li Mu and I will hold this place, everyone else, retreat. This is an order from your Guild Master!”

Wolf made a fist and then gritted his teeth and nodded, “Understood... everyone, let’s go. Hurry up!”

“Boss....” Matcha longingly looked at me and said, “If just you and Li Mu stay, then you’ll definitely die....”

I smiled. “Hurry up, they’ve almost caught up!”

.....

Matcha, Old K, Wolf, and Qing Qian all retreated, leaving Li Mu and I in our places. An autumn breeze brushed against us. We were in a pretty sorry state, with our armor in tatters and blood dripping from our wounds.

I glanced around the area and said, “Come out already. Don’t just hide by yourself....”

“Tee hee....”

Wan Er’s beautiful figure slipped out of the shadows of her [Stealth] mode and she guiltily smiled. “That... I was worried that you might get instantly killed... and so, the more people the better, right...?”

I took a deep breath, “Ok, alright then. Then today, it will be the three of us guarding the rear. Let us advance together! We’ll defend by attacking!”

“Alright!”

.....

In the next moment, the three of us charged at the oncoming [Hero’s Mound], [Vanguard], and [Flying Dragon] players. With a flash of my blade, I immediately killed a dozen people. The Purple Kirin Dragon and my Flaming Tiger God were both summoned along with Li Mu’s Bear King pet. Taking this chance before the enemy’s ranged players have yet to catch up, we began our attack.

Q-Sword raised his blade and slowly walked forward and looked at the [Hero’s Mound] players that I had cut down and gritted his teeth, “Bring a team of people and surround them. The rest of you, chase after Chi Yu Han!”

One of the team leaders immediately brought a hundred players to come and surround us. They were all Knights and Monks.

I looked at Li Mu and Wan Er and smiled. “Let’s do this. Focus on area attacks!”

“Yup!”

In the next moment, I charged forward and cut straight into the heart of the crowd by myself. I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw a [Sword Tempest]+[Seven Star Fragment Slash] at the same time while Li Mu activated his [Covering Sword Slash] and Wan Er used her [Ice Pick Whirlpool]. The area attacks of three experts killed nearly 70 people in moments. The rest of them were all left with critical health. I swung my sword while Wan Er activated [Blade of the Death God], killing another three people.

“Sha sha sha....”

My Cloud Stepping Boots slid across the grass a dozen meters and I cut right through a group of a hundred people. That’s not right, it wasn’t that I cut through them, more like tore through them.

The expression on Q-Sword’s face turned uglier. Sword Tears softly said, “Brother, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Cang Tong and General Li Mu aren’t your average high level players. It looks as though... our small number of soldiers are just there for them to cut down... I think that the reality is, killing Chi Yu Han is going to be impossible. Xiao Yao Zi Zai has protected Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing much too well. This time, they’ve won this quest....”

Jian Tan raised his sword and said, “Even if that’s so, we still have to kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai, General Li Mu, and Cang Tong, or no one will really be able to rival [Zhan Long]!”

.....

Q-Sword fell into deep thought and then waved his hand. Nearly 3000 more [Hero’s Mound] players began to come and surround us.

On the other side, Jian Feng Han’s face appeared even gloomier and he raised his sword, as he brought 2000 of [Vanguard]’s players to cut off our retreat.

This must be the legendary——

Even if given wings, you wouldn’t be able to fly out!

\*TL Note: An idiom meaning that it'll be impossible to escape



## Chapter 523 Mine

“Bring up your shields, prepare the encirclement and the Death God Arrows!”

Even at a time like this, Q-Sword was going to go through with his plan. He raised his sword and stood outside of the field and looked over the group of [Hero's Mound] Knights coming closer to us. There was a grand total of 200 Knights, and each one of their eyes was hidden under their helmets. All of them stared at Li Mu, Wan Er and I. In the distance, the Archers and Mages of [Hero's Mound] all came over. This was destined to be a fight centered around firepower.

.....

I gripped my sword with both hands and furrowed my brow. Wan Er and Li Mu were faced away from me. We created a triangle as we all took defensive stances. Lightly leaning against my back, Wan Er whispered to me, “Li Xiao Yao, you said before that you weren't a pig. Now look, how is one person supposed to fight against a thousand man army? Furthermore, you're covered in Saint Tier equipments, and you want to take the rear by yourself. Was I wrong in calling you pig?”

I couldn't help but smile, “You're saying that now?... Wan Er, we're fated to die here together...”

Li Mu grinned, “You two, can you please not flirt in front of me. Otherwise, I might die of sadness...”

I grunted, “Be careful, they're coming!”

With a “Hua Hua” a group of Knights suddenly raised their shields and rammed into us. The three of us immediately split up and swung our blades, cutting right into the shields. I then set up an [Azure Dragon Crossbow] behind me, and then activated [Black Tortoise Realm] and [Soul Army]. Even if we were going to die in battle, at least we were going to drag some of them down with us. This was a battle of 5000 players vs. the three of us. With such a great difference in strength, this was definitely going to become an extremely hot

topic in the forums. Besides, two great guilds were surrounding Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Cang Tong, and General Li Mu. This by itself was an extremely explosive piece of news.

“Archers, release!” Jian Feng Han’s voice traveled to my ears. Scattered arrows flew at us, but they had no effect on Li Mu, Wan Er and I. In addition, the stun rate was pretty low, even a 10% rate wasn’t bad.

I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword and cut off the arrows sticking out of my Flame Prison Armor. One of the Knights raised his shield and charged at me. He only had half of his health left, but it didn’t seem as though he was afraid of death. I like this kind of opponent. I flicked my wrist and let my Cold Iron Sword fly out, striking at his shield. I pushed it away and placed my Dragon Reservoir Sword right on his neck. Then, with a slash of my Cold Iron Sword, I immediately killed him. I turned away to ram the shield of another Knight. I threw a fierce kick on to his shield and then swept out my sword. I dealt 4 attacks in all, killing another one.

Wan Er, Li Mu and I had pretty similar types of maneuvers, as they were all the kind that allowed us to attack while retreating. Knocking away their shield while dealing a critical attack was the most basic style. Otherwise, we would have to destroy both the shield and the Knight, which was too much of a waste.

.....

We let loose skills one after another and very soon, nearly 200 Knights were killed by me. Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han stood outside of the chaos, but as each moment passed their faces turned uglier. They could not bear to have to watch this humiliation.

“Swordsmen, Berserkers, charge forward!”

Jian Feng Han raised his blade and charged forward. His desire to kill me was just too urgent. As he sprinted forward, he said, “Sis, use [Magma Lance]+ [Magma Abyss] to help support me!”

Simple nodded from afar.

I cautiously said, “Careful, Jian Feng Han is coming at us!”

Li Mu said, “Yup, we got it....”

In the next moment, the earth trembled slightly and [Magma Abyss] exploded under me. A group of [Vanguard] Swordsmen and Berserkers charged at us. From a distance, the Berserkers all raised their battle axes and activated [Battle Axe Throw]!

“Keng keng keng....”

Sparks flew and each one of us took 3-5 attacks. Our health immediately fell under 50%. I quickly gulped down a potion and gave Wan Er a [Heal].

Li Mu roared and swept out his Tian Chen Sword, cutting down two Berserkers. He then followed the attack with a [Blade Rush] and broke through the wall of people. He then used a [Covering Sword Slash]+[Combo] and forced 9 people backwards!

“Pa!”

A Freezing Arrow fell from the sky. Li Mu’s luck really wasn’t that great, he was stunned!

Jian Feng Han raised his long sword and ran over. He activated [Through the Cloud Slash]+[Corrupt Wolf Edge]+[Combo], cutting right into Li Mu. He didn’t leave any time for Wan Er and I to react. Li Mu cried out and fell to his knees and died!

Wan Er started getting anxious. To think that Jian Feng Han killed the boss of [Valiant Bravery]!

Opening up her pale hand, Wan Er activated her [Domain Control]!

“Shua!”

The dimension around Jian Feng Han started to twist and his movements became clumsy. Wan Er picked up her Dragon’s Kiss and leapt forward. She threw a kick right into Jian Feng Han’s blade and then swung her sword. The [Gouge] she used succeeded. At the same time, her [Blade of the Death God] dealt three attacks onto Jian Feng Han.

“Shua shua shua...”

The light from heals continuously fell upon Jian Feng Han. At the same time, he yelled out, “Sister Yun, support me!”

In the distance, Mu Rong Jun\* raised her staff and cast [Magma Lance]+[Indigo Sea Arrow] onto Wan Er. Wan Er reached behind her back and opened her umbrella for defense. She then retreated several steps. Jian Feng Han opened up his wings and flew away!

TL Note: Simple's real name

“Pa!”

Stepping onto the shield of a Knight, I activated [Dragon Transformation] and leaped into the air. I then started flapping my arms and shouted, “Mu Rong Han\*, you want to escape?!”

TL Note: Jian Feng Han's real name

“Peng!”

My fist landed right on Jian Feng Han's back. At the same time, I used my right hand and thrust my Dragon Reservoir Sword into his body. “Peng!” I cut his health in half as he fell from the sky. Wan Er then used a [Flying Dagger] from a distance to support me, while I activated [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“11074 ! ”

Jian Feng Han's eyes widened and watched as a critical attack was dealt to him. His face turned pale and he grunted as he died. Unfortunately, he didn't drop any equipment. Thinking about it now, I don't think any of the players that died during this quest had a very high drop rate.

.....

Behind me, I suddenly heard a “Keng!” Wan Er was forced back when Q-Sword dealt an attack that was parried by her Iron Umbrella. She rolled onto the floor and was forced back pretty far. Q-Sword used a [Blade Rush] to pull closer. As his [Afterglow Slash] passed by, her beautiful face flashed with a sad expression as she looked at me, and she died.

I didn't waste any time feeling sad and swung both of my swords, killing all of the Swordsmen and Berserkers in my path while relying on the 10% drain. I then opened my hand and activated [Defeat the Dragon], forcing Q-Sword and Simple to retreat far away from me. None of them wanted to take me head on, because they couldn't be sure that they would be able to escape from my

attacks.

I continuously hacked at the crowds around me and the pile of corpses that I was surrounded by continued to grow. Slowly, the piles grew up to be 3 meters high, while my health stayed between 30%-70%. There was only 5 more minutes until this quest was over.

.....

Right at that moment, Q-Sword took a group of elites over. Glancing at them, he said, "Tang Qi, as long as you use a [Hexagram] to stun him, and then I use an [Afterglow Slash], then Xiao Yao Zi Zai will have to die, understood?"

Tang Xi gripped his fan and his eyes flickered with a light, "Guild Master, you know that I'm friends with Xiao Yao in real life. Must you force me? I cannot face him after this..."

Q-Sword smiled. "Yes, if you are willing to see all of the brothers in [Hero's Mound] die under Xiao Yao's Dragon Reservoir Sword, then stand aside...."

As he said that, Q-Sword, Sword Tears, and Jian Tan all rushed forward.

I must face reality and used a [Defeat the Dragon] to grab Jian Tan, and then let my [Strength of a Thousand Men] explode, instantly killing him!

Q-Sword leapt up and with both hands on his sword, threw a [Fierce Tiger Burst]!

"Peng!"

"3717 ! "

My body slightly trembled and my [Wall of Dou Qi] was crushed into bits. There was still 7 more minutes of cooldown.

I swept my sword out and parried Q-Sword's next attack. Then my feet slid forward and a sword sliced right into the space behind me, bringing out a big MISS. I had successfully dodged Sword Tears' attack. Stunned, she said, "What a fast move!"

I didn't respond and sliced my Cold Iron Sword forward, slightly knocking Sword Tears wrist. Even though she was Q-Swords' sister, and has probably learned swordsmanship since she was a child, she was still under 20 years old

and was a delicate girl. She was probably more focused on making herself pretty or catching the eye of handsome boys. That light push was enough to push her attack in another direction.

Raising both of my swords, I dealt 7 attacks in succession. Sword Tears pitifully cried out and fell to the ground. At the same time, she watched as I took an attack from Q-Sword in the back. I spun around and threw a [Halberd Flame] right back at him!

Q-Sword took the burns and shouted, “Tang Qi, do you want to watch everyone get killed by Xiao Yao Zi Zai? His equipment is just too good! He’s already above our level!”

Tang Qi gritted his teeth, his face filled with pain. He practically exploded as he shouted, “Li Xiao Yao!”

“Sha!”

His [Perspective] successfully brought him to my side and he threw a [Hexagram] right at me!

“Peng!”

“3129 ! ”

I entered into a stunned state, and this was in a situation where I didn’t have my [Wall of Dou Qi]!

Q-Sword shouted and stabbed his blade into the pile of bodies under him and activated [Destruction Wolf Formation]. His eyes were bloodshot as he looked at me, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, after killing that many of my people, you might as well die, after all it’s well worth it for you!”

Countless wolves tackled me and tore my body apart. I had already lost all strength. I looked at Q-Sword and smiled. “However, I have still won. Chi Yu Han is still alive!”

Q-Sword’s eyes were filled with hatred!

“Shua!”

Everything went black and I died——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Please Note, you have been killed by the player [Q-Sword]. Your level will go down by 1. Your [Cold Iron Sword] has been dropped, as well as the [Ling Feng Sword], [Forest Wristguard], [Green Tiger Battle Boots] from your bag!

.....

In the end, I still died. Furthermore, I had dropped the Cold Iron Sword I used in my left hand!

The system notified me that I still had four minutes before I could get back online and so I decided to stay on. Like that, I waited, and time flowed by. Four minutes passed by quickly, and I could finally release my breath. Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing was under the protection of Ye Lai, Misty Clouds, Wang Jian, and Dong Cheng, who would be able to kill him!

Very soon, the four minutes was over and suddenly a bright light flashed before me. I was standing in the wilderness to the east of the Dragon’s Den. All around me, there was a great number of [Hero’s Mound] and [Vanguard] players. For the next 60 minutes, all of the players here were in a No Battle Zone, and I knew that they wouldn’t be able to kill me. Every one of us had a golden glow of armor around us, it was the No Enemy effect!

Looking into the distance, I could see my Cold Iron Sword in the hands of one of [Hero’s Mound]’s players. I could only helplessly smile, what else could I do?

.....

Right at that moment, a great crowd of people charged out from the eastern forest. It was Dong Cheng and Matcha, escorting Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing over here. Right afterwards, two rays of light appeared right beside me. Wan Er and Li Mu were both revived.

“Pig, where’s your Cold Iron Sword?” Wan Er asked, shocked.

I put out both of my hands and said, “It was dropped....”

Wan Er immediately turned around and looked at the crowd of people from [Hero’s Mound]. She then angrily pointed at the player holding the Cold Iron

Sword and shouted, “Xiao Bai, hurry up and give me the Cold Iron Sword, or else I’m going to chase after you to the corners of the earth!”

The Lv 86 swordsman “Xiao Bai” was stunned and said, “Vice Guild Master, I....”

Q-Sword coughed, “Xiao Yao, Cang Tong is no longer our [Hero’s Mound]’s Vice Guild Master....”

However, Xiao Bai still had a helpless look on his face. He walked over and handed the Cold Iron Sword to Wan Er. Wan Er then raised the Cold Iron Sword and flashed a sincere smile. She then handed the sword back to him and said, “Xiao Bai, think of it as a gift from me... keep it!”

.....

Q-Sword jerked, “Wan Er, what are you plotting?”

Wan Er made a fist, her eyes shining, “This is mine, and only I can give it to someone else. I am not going to let someone try and take it from me by force!”

Everyone from [Hero’s Mound] was stupefied, and whispered, “What a strong personality. I can’t help but like her. What do we do, can we join [Zhan Long] and follow her.....?”



## Chapter 524 A Battle of Words

“Sha sha sha.....”

The bushes began to violently shake, and at that moment Qing Qian and Wolf's figures appeared. They brought with them a group of players from [Zhan Long]. Right behind them was Chi Yu Han, carrying his Heaven's Spite sword along with Chi Yu Qing who wielded her thorny whip. The two of them walked towards me. Chi Yu Han looked at me and nodded, “Thank you, for helping Qing Er and I escape this!”

I smiled and didn't say anything. I looked at Wolf and said, “Wolf, have you finished your task yet? Why didn't the system give any rewards? We've been battling for 24 hours, everyone's tired!”

Wolf shook his head, “I don't know what's up either!”

Qing Qian's eyes widened and she pointed towards the east, “Not good, Brother Xiao Yao, there's an enormous group of people coming towards us, it looks as though it's Ba Huang City's elite NPC army!”

Before she even finished talking, the earth had begun to tremble from the beating of iron hooves. The earth shattering Ba Huang City Cavalry charged out of the thicket, and Ba Huang City's Duke Luo Lei rode at the front with a longsword in hand. His eyes were cold and he lead his mount to us. Angela and General Forgotten Sea followed behind him. A group of heavily armored cavalry and archers made up the rest of the royal entourage. Angela's beautiful eyes were filled with worry.

.....

“Follow me!”

With my Dragon Reservoir Sword in one hand, I took Wan Er, Qing Qian, Wolf, and Li Mu forward to meet him. I raised my sword and said, “Duke Luo Lei, we have already completed the 24 hours period. You had made a promise to us in front of all of your subjects, and I hope that you will not go against your word and continue to pursue Chi Yu Han. This period of hatred must come to an

end!”

The Duke aggressively urged his horse forward, all the way until his mount was at my sword point and calmly glanced at me, “Child, your actions have made me incredibly disappointed in you. For the sake of a rebel, you would actually make an enemy out of me, even though you are one of Ba Huang City’s adventurers? Have you forgotten your vow?”

I looked up at him, “It is because of my vow, that I don’t want to become the royalty’s killing tool. No matter what, I would rather die than hand Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing over to you!”

Angela didn’t say anything else, and only nodded in agreement.

Luo Lei gritted his teeth. General Forgotten Sea raised his long sword and walked over from behind him and quietly said, “Your highness, there’s no need for you to waste your breath talking with him. I have already invited the four great mages to come here. We can just kill Chi Yu Han, and put an end to all our problems at once!”

The duke fell into deep thought and didn’t respond. After a few minutes he finally said, “Lin Er, what do you think?”

Luo Lin rode over with a few of Dragon City’s generals and he waved his hand with a smile, “Father, I feel that even though in the past, Chi Yan had committed suicide out of guilt, he was still one of our most famous generals and he had won numerous victories for our empire. Now, his son, Chi Yu Han’s strength is far beyond our imagination, and had once trained in the Chi You tribes, and most likely has inherited their fearsome personality. If we do not deal with his evil, then in the end, there is no way that he’ll become a pillar for the empire. How about this, why don’t you hand Chi Yu Han to me, and I will use all of my power to cast away the darkness in his soul.”

Chi Yu Han gritted his teeth and pointed his Heaven’s Spite sword at Luo Lin and roared, “You bastard Luo Lin! Don’t think I don’t know what you want to do. Dream on, don’t think that you’ll be able to take my ability to step into the Holy Realm. I’d rather die before I let my strength be taken away by an evil and calculating man like you!”

Luo Lin was startled, “Brother Chi, I just want to save you, why would you

accuse me of such? I, Luo Lin, have long obtained the ability to become a Sword Saint, and the distance between my strength and the Holy Realm is but a step away. I have absolutely no need to gain anything from you. Rather, I want to save you. The only problem is, I feel that with your godly strength, if you were to just die then it would be a loss for the empire.”

Chi Yu Qing scoffed, “Don’t act all innocent! We know what you want!”

“Quiet!”

Luo Lei roared and suddenly pulled out his blade and shouted, “Archers, prepare”!

At that moment, a group of archers all pulled out their bows and notched arrows onto their bowstrings, aiming right at Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing. Of course, Wan Er, Qing Qian, Li Mu and I were also within their range.

From a distance, the Guild Master of [Judgement] was stunned, “Damn, these Ba Huang City NPC’s really are shameless. They still want to attack the players like that? Has a dog eaten all of the system’s rules?”

Q-Sword softly smiled. “It really is a bit shameless..”

.....

Right at that moment, a voice came from the distance, “Stop this insanity!”

Right afterwards, a sturdy man rode a horse over as he swung an iron chain in his hand. In the other hand, he dragged two enormous porcupines and came straight at us!

“Peng!”

The porcupines were chained by him and they suddenly started crying out. The robust man jumped off his horse and ran towards us. He then respectively kneeled down and said, “Dragon City’s Patrol Commander, Da Lin, greets your highness, Luo Lin and your highness, Luo Lei!”

Luo Lin nodded to him. Luo Lei then said, “Da Lin, you came all the way here from Dragon City, there must be some urgent news. Tell us quickly!”

Da Lin looked up and said, “My king, I’m not here to pass on any news. Please wait for a little bit, Frost is almost here!”

“Oh? Frost is coming?” Luo Lei smiled. “Well, it has been a while since I’ve seen Dragon City’s number one most beautiful general....”

Less than half a minute later, we could hear the sounds of hooves beating the ground again off in the distance. Very soon, a group of Dragon City Knights quickly arrived under the command of Frost. Frost, herself, was completely clothed in white armor and rode at the very front. In one hand, she held a whip, and in the other, her sword-Severing Beauty. Suddenly, she jumped off of her horse and knelt to the ground, “Your loyal servant Frost, your highness Luo Lin!”

Luo Lin nodded, “Frost, what business has brought you out here?”

Frost stood up and then turned around to stand by my side and said, “I had once heard about Chi Yan and Chi Yu Han’s story, but I would have never imagined that Chi Yu Han would reappear on this continent. Plus, this useless student of mine has actually used his life to protect this Holy Realm expert whose strength had been sealed. However, no matter what, he is my student, and so Frost asks that Duke Luo Lei and Luo Lin would look over this situation and let Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing go, and not go after them!”

Luo Lin furrowed his brows, “Frost, do you know what you are asking of us?”

Frost looked up, her beautiful eyes were filled with determination, “Of course I know, I understand exactly what I am doing.”

Luo Lei took a deep breath and said, “Frost, did you know that Chi Yu Han had once lead an army to bathe Ba Huang City in blood? Do you know how many innocent lives were lost because of Chi Yu Han? And now, you are asking for his mercy? Just what are you going to use to vouch for him?”

Frost suddenly stabbed her Severing Beauty Sword into the ground and softly said, “On my life, Chi Yu Han will never again make Ba Huang City its enemy. If he does, then please, use this sword and cut off my head!”

Luo Lin gritted his teeth and gripped his fist. Finally, after a few seconds, he softly said, “Father...”

Luo Lei remained silent.

Angela walked over and said, “Father, I think.. That Chi Yu Han really doesn’t have to die. If we keep him alive, maybe it will actually turn out in our favor.

You must know, that north of Dragon City, and even further north of the Ice Ridge Mountains, a terrible force is starting to rise...”

Luo Lei let out a deep sigh and said, “Alright then... seeing as all of you are saying this, then I have decided to show mercy on Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing. However, from now on, you are not permitted to step onto Ba Huang City’s territory, or else you will be pursued and killed!”

Chi Yu Han smiled. “That’s good, that is also what I want.”

Luo Lei smiled and turned around to face General Forgotten Sea, “We must let the world know of our decision. Send a message out to Jiu Li City, Fan Shu City, Tian Ling City, Moon City, Flaming Cloud City, Abyss City, Iron Skull City, Nine Heavens City, and Waterfront City that whoever dares to harbor Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing, will become Ba Huang City’s enemy, and that I will bring the full might of my empire upon them!”

Frost was startled, “Duke Luo Lei, if you tell the world that, then where are Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing supposed to go? If it’s like this, then what is the difference between exiling them and killing them?”

Forgotten Sea let out a cold laugh, “Ever since the ancient times, only one or two out of every ten who have been exiled have survived. My lord Frost, it can’t be that you don’t understand such a simple principle?”

Everyone on the scene was shocked. We all knew that Luo Lei wanted to kill Chi Yu Han. This son of his enemy in the end was a thorn in his eye. If he didn’t pull him out, then he would never be able to rest peacefully.

Right as everyone seemed unable to find a solution, I walked forward and said, “Then I have a suggestion. I own a city under the name of ‘Dragon’s Den’, and we are willing to take in Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing. However, we must obtain the permission of Duke Luo Lei first. As long as you give your agreement, then I will take on this task!”

Luo Lei’s eyes turned cold and he roared, “Young one, you have no idea what your limits are do you! At a time like this, you still want to take in Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing? Do you know what the dangers are in doing this?! Even if your Dragon’s Den were to take in Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing, that means that I will no longer consider the Dragon’s Den as part of Ba Huang City’s Territory.

Whether or not you are to live or die, Ba Huang City will not get involved in your business ever!”

I couldn’t help but smile, “That is just what I wanted. From today onwards, Dragon’s Den will no longer be under Ba Huang City’s reign. Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing will then live under the roof of the Dragon’s Den. However, just because you are heartless, that does not mean that I cannot be unjust. If Ba Huang City is ever under attack, then our Dragon’s Den will, just as before, provide assistance.”

“Hmph!”

Luo Lei waved his hand, his eyes filled with anger, “Do your best to survive, Lord of the Dragon’s Den! I, Luo Lei, will never allow a lone city to fight under Ba Huang City’s flag!”

Frost gritted her teeth and pulled her Severing Beauty out of the ground and yelled, “All Dragon City Dragon Knights, at attention!”

A group of Dragon City Cavalrymen all pulled out their swords and raised them in front of their chests, “Attention!”

Frost looked up at the sky and in a loud clear voice, “From now on, Dragon’s Den, within the Grave of the Warring States, is now our brother city! If the Dragon’s Den were to take any attack, then Dragon City will provide assistance, no matter who the aggressor is!”

Luo Lei was furious, “Frost, you!”

Luo Lin also raised a fist, “Frost, are you crazy? Don’t forget, Dragon City’s military is mine!”

Frost smiled and knelt to the ground, “My King, don’t you forget, half a month ago, you became the commander of the four great armies, Purple Star, Nightmare, Desolate Cloud, and Imperial Defense, and have relinquished command to myself. Furthermore, I’m just making sure that Ba Huang City doesn’t act on a whim and cut off an arm and a leg. At that point, when the demons of the north come to invade, who are we to use to help defend? My lord, please understand your servants considerations.”

Luo Lin’s hands shook, “Nevermind, as long as you know what it is that you’re

doing...”

# Chapter 525 Dragon's Den Reborn

Luo Lin, Luo Lei, and Angela all lead their horses over. Ba Huang City's army also disappeared into the forest. Now that this trial had passed by, we could all let out a sigh of relief.

I silently walked forward and stood behind Frost. I then quietly said, "Frost, I thank you too much..."

Frost turned around and glanced at me, "Hey, you almost killed me there, time for you to repay me!"

I was speechless.

She then said, "Alright, now if we decide on our own then nothing will count. Go ask Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing if they agree or not?"

I nodded and then turned around to walk towards Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing. I then spread out my hands and said, "You both witnessed the situation just now. I have already done all that I can to protect you. Chi Yu Han, Chi Yu Qing, are you willing to stay in Dragon's Den and help us rise up? As you know, our city is pretty much in ruins at the moment..."

Chi Yu Han didn't say much, but Chi Yu Qing kept a smile on her face. Around seven seconds later, Chi Yu Han suddenly stabbed his Heaven's Spite Sword into the ground and knelt down with a "Pa!". Then with a stern voice, he said, "I, Chi Yu Han, promise that I will use all my power to assist my lord, and put all of my life's work into making this city, which had spent all of its efforts to assist my sister and I, great again!"

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, you have obtained the loyalty of the Sword Saint Chi Yu Han. Do you accept Chi Yu Han as the Guardian General of "Dragon's Den"?

.....

Wan Er, Qing Qian and I all got the notification at the same time. Wan Er was



so happy that she jumped up and down. Qing Qian also looked extremely happy. Wan Er quickly grabbed my wrist and said, “Pig, what are you waiting for? Hurry up and accept! Chi Yu Han is ready to become the guardian of our Dragon’s Den. A Holy Realm expert wants to become the Dragon’s Den guardian!”

I was ecstatic and accepted the request. In the next moment, I heard the system bell beside my ear——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, your Dragon’s Den has obtained the guardians [Sword Saint Chi Yu Han], and [Beast Tamer Maiden Chi Yu Qing]. The city’s special skills will be reset!

.....

Right at the same time, another system notification rang through the air. Finally, this quest to save Chi Yu Han was finally finished——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Please note, the SSS Tier Main Quest, [Saving Chi Yu Han] has been completed. Players on both sides will be rewarded for their accomplishments. Of which, in the Chi Yu Han Camp, the top five players who have won the most battle points: Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Hero Ran Min, Cang Yue, Cang Tong, Ye Lai. In the Ba Huang City Camp, the top five players who have won the most battle points: Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han, Simple, The Seventh Tang, Sword Tears. The MVP of this quest is Xiao Yao Zi Zai, having killed 2987 players. Congratulations to this player!

.....

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations on the completion of your SSS Tier Main Quest [Justice of the Human Realm]. Furthermore, you became the MVP of the quest [Saving Chi Yu Han]. You have obtained the following rewards: Level+4, Charm +25, Gold +50,000 and your reputation in the Tian Ling Empire has increased. In addition, you get the rewarded equipment: [Ring of the King] (Divine Tier Equipment)!

.....

I was startled. Ring of the King? What a domineering name.... This is the first Divine Tier equipment in the entire Chinese Server!

I opened up my bag and saw a gleaming white ring resting in the corner. It was extremely smooth and looked majestic as it let out a holy radiance. I held it in the palm of my hand and could feel its power seeping through my skin. I looked at the stats, the first Divine Tier Equipment must be incredibly strong

——

[Ring of the King] (Divine Tier)

Strength: +125

Endurance: +125

Agility: +123

Magic: +120

Additional: Increases the user's attack power and defense by 25%

Additional: Increases the user's MaxHP by 4500 and the user's defense by 1000

Additional: Increases the user's magic defense by 45%

Special: [Drain], 20% of the damage that is dealt to the user's target is converted into the user's own health, this effect cannot be stacked with others

Special: [King's Domain], Using the power of the king, this skill creates a field covering a radius of 500 yards. All designated allies within this domain will get a 100% increase in attack power, defense, and furthermore, for every second of this skill, they will be healed by 10% of their max hp. Lasts for 120 seconds and uses up 120 points of rage. Cooldown is 12 hours.

Introduction: When this ancient world came to being, and man first appeared on its continents and life was still in chaos, Pan Gu\* slept on the earth, and his body began to break apart. His spirit scattered across every corner of this world and one of them was obtained by an adventurer from deep within the mountains. The spirit was embedded inside a crystal rock, and the adventurer used a ten thousand year old mysterious gold to smelt the two together,

creating the Ring of the King. This Ring of the King has followed countless emperors and kings into battle, and helped them to win many victories. Legend has it that whoever obtains this ring, will become the true king of the land.

\*TL Note: Pan Gu comes from Chinese Mythology, where, in the ancient times, there was a man who held up the sky when it was about to collapse, and when he went to sleep, his body became the earth, his blood, the rivers, his eyes, the moon and sun, *etc.*

<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pangu>

Required Level: Growth Type

.....

I raised the Ring of the King and was extremely excited. These two rewards were just too great! Damn, this Ring of the King is practically a God Tier weapon! Plus, it's a ring type! I don't think even the weapons that are praised in epics and tales have stats as good as this one.

I tried out the new equipment. "Pa Da!" I switched out my old Bloody Spirit Ring. That ring only had a 10% drain effect, which was already substituted by this ring. Plus, that King's Domain special skill was just too great! Too bad it took up 120 points of rage. If a player didn't have any equipment that increased the Max Rage, then no matter what, they wouldn't be able to use this skill. Fortunately, my Halberd Wielder's leg guards increases my Max Rage by 50 points. This must be fate at work! (Don't say the author did this on purpose, you're just thinking too much 0.0)

Looking at the stats, my attack didn't seem to have any big change, but my health and my defense all flew up——

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Guardian of Dragon's Den)

Level: 96

Attack: 5825-7167

Defense: 7185

Health: 25152

Magic: 7449

Charm: 225

CBN Battle Net Ranking: 12

.....

25,000 Max Health? That’s practically savage! Even Jian Feng Han and Q-Sword, those top tier players only have around 15,000 health. There’s a huge difference between us! Of course, it’s possible that they also received pretty good equipment, but that is definitely not as strong as my Ring of the King, that is for sure.

I excitedly held the Bloody Spirit Ring in my hand and snuck it over to Qing Qian with a smile, “A gift for you, Melon!”

Qing Qian looked at my Bloody Spirit Ring’s 10% Drain, and was extremely happy, “Brother Xiao Yao, this ring’s stats really are great...”

I nodded, “You like it?”

“I love it!”

“If you like it then that’s good!”

Qing Qian was [Zhan Long]’s Vice Guild Master, and has always been spending a lot of effort on the guild. My decision to give her this ring was unquestionable. Plus, I’ve always thought of her as my sister, making it even more natural that the ring should be hers.

.....

After asking around what everyone’s rewards were, I found out that Wan Er, Li Mu, Wang Jian, and the other 9 people who had both the quest and the battle points were all given double rewards. It was an underestimate to say that the gains we got from this quest were very generous. Everyone all got Saint Tier equipment as a reward!

The Ba Huang City rankings quickly refreshed. Just as I thought, after this Save Chi Yu Han quest, there were some great changes to the rankings——

Xiao Yao Zi Zai Level 96 Class: [Guardian of Dragon’s Den] Cang Tong Level 95 Class: Hermit God

Yan Zhao Warrior Level 94 Class: Swordsman

Cang Yue Level 95 Class: Mage

Jian Feng Han Level 93 Class: Swordsman

Misty Clouds Level 93 Class: Four Symbols Guardian

Simple Level 93 Class: Mage

Drunken Spear Level 93 Class: Nature Knight

General Li Mu Level 93 Class: Knight

Yue Qing Qian Level 93 Class: Assassin

.....

Wan Er happily played with her dagger. This was a completely new equipment that she got. Her beautiful face had a joyous expression as she looked at me and said, “All in all, this quest to save Chi Yu Han, the average level of our [Zhan Long] players increased by 1.7, this is a great return. Plus, we got a lot of different equipment. On the other hand, it looks like [Vanguard], [Hero’s Mound], and [Prague] didn’t get much out of it.”

Li Mu walked over and said, “Eh, whatever. What matters is that we won big this time. Guild Master, why don’t you go in town first, and see just what kind of a new army the city got? Plus, there seems to be some kind of special military skill. Bringing Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing to our city was a smart move!”

“Oh?”

I walked into the Dragon’s Den. The walls were still in ruins due to the battering from the Rhino Cavalry. I walked towards the great hall and saw Chi Yu Han standing there with his sword in hand. Beside him was a meek NPC city official. I walked forward to talk with them, and very soon, a list of numbers appeared before me——

Dragon’s Den Military Choices——

Level 1 Military: Garrison Swordsmen, Has 65% of the City Owner’s Stats, Cost: Gold x100, Food x50, Wood x50, Stones x50

Level 2 Military: Piao Blade Wielders,Has 70% of the City Owner’s Stats, Cost: Gold x200, Food x80, Wood x70, Stones x80

Level 3 Military: Halberd Wielders,Has 75% of the City Owner’s Stats, Cost: Gold x300, Food x120, Wood x90, Stones x100

Level 4 Military: Battle Axe Wielders,Has 80% of the City Owner’s Stats, Cost: ???????????????

Level 5 Military: Swampy Light Cavalry,Has 85% of the City Owner’s Stats, Cost: ???????????????

Level 6 Military: Armored Heavy Infantry,Has 90% of the City Owner’s Stats, Cost: ???????????????

Level 7 Military: Flame Crossbow Archers,Has 95% of the City Owner’s Stats, Cost: ???????????????

Level 8 Military: Frigid Heavy Cavalry,Has 100% of the City Owner’s Stats, Cost: ???????????????

Level 9 Military: Flame Hawk Archers,Has 110% of the City Owner’s Stats, Cost: ???????????????

Level 10 Military: Cliff Dragon Cavalry\*,Has 120% of the City Owner’s Stats, Cost: ???????????????

.....

At the moment, Dragon’s Den was a Lv 3 City, and so we could only see the requirements for the first three types of armies. Plus, Dragon’s Den was just too quiet. The reality was, there were only around 3 people in it, Chi Yu Han, Chi Yu Qing, and the NPC official. We basically had no military might. At most we had around 21 laborers, but their production capability was the lowest——

[Dragon’s Den] (Level 3 City)

City Owner: Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Guardians: Chi Yu Han & Vice Guardian: Chi Yu Qing

Wall Builders: 7

Soldiers: 0

Laborers: 21

City Scale: Super Big

City Production Capability——

Food: 70/ hour

Wood: 70/hour

Rocks: 70/hour

.....

Our next step, looks like, is to properly develop the Dragon's Den, because we've already discovered the enormous advantage it gave us. The possibilities were endless....

# Chapter 526 Power of a Hundred

The system notification said that the Grave of the Warring States map was going to be closed for a while as the Dragon's Den needed to be rebuilt. This city had been crushed to bits, and it was in so much ruin that even the system couldn't take it. As for the system skills it would take some time to reset so we should just take this time to log off and get some rest and food. I finally logged off.

I hurriedly ate something and went to sleep. I still had to go to the dinner with Wan Er and Dong Cheng tonight.

When I woke up, it was already 7 something at night. It looked like the Dragon's Den was done rebuilding too. I turned around and got myself out of bed. I washed myself, changed into a clean set of clothes and left.

Since it was late autumn, the evening air was extremely chilly but the sight of falling leaves was enchanting. Of course, the figures of the two girls were even more enchanting. Tang Qi stood beside them, creating a sharp contrast.

When I got closer, Wan Er waved at me, "Come on. We're hungry....."

I began to move faster and felt that the Qi in my body had become much more vigorous. Could it be that [Destiny] really does have an effect on one's body? If this was true, then that game was just way too amazing! It would be a treasure that every practitioner would yearn for!

I looked over at Wan Er's and couldn't help but laugh, "Wan Er, did you sleep well?"

Wan Er smiled back, "Yeah. You?"

"Not bad. I slept soundly." I replied and looked over at Tang Qi, "So you can finally freeload again today huh?"

Tang Qi rubbed his nose, "Aha. I can't help it. I am Miss Dong Cheng's bodyguard. If she goes out to eat, I'll have to follow her."

I nodded and laughed, "Alright. Let's go!"



We got into my Audi and went straight to the buffet. It was one of those 150RMB/person super expensive super tasty buffet places. We'd been playing online for so long that I felt like an escaped refugee that hadn't eaten for a long time. This time we need to eat a big meal before going back.

After going into the restaurant, I quickly grabbed a big plate and filled it up with shrimp, crab, pork, shark fin and *etc.* I basically took some of everything that was there. I went to get my drink and sat down at our table.

Wan Er who was sitting next to me looked at my plate and couldn't help but giggle, "Are you a pig? You got so much food...."

I laughed loudly, "You call me a pig everyday anyways. It won't matter much."

Dong Cheng chimed into the conversation, "Being able to eat a lot is a blessing. Don't mind him!"

I looked down at my plate and started to eat like a savage. The food on my plate started to disappear slowly. Wan Er laughed and looked at me. She then passed over some sweets to me, "Here! Don't eat too much meat and fish. It's not good for the stomach. Eat some pastries and then drink some clear soup. Do you want some corn soup or vegetable soup? I'll get it for you..."

I shook my head, "No need, I'll get it myself."

Wan Er stood up and patted my shoulders, "I'll get it. This doesn't take any work at all. I'm not like those other rich girls who were spoiled and pampered."

"Alright then. Get me some vegetable soup. Thanks Wan Er."

"Okay!"

After Wan Er left to get some soup, Dong Chong stuck out her tongue and jealously said, "Look at how much Wan Er cares for you. Don't you feel especially happy?"

My face turned red and I rubbed my nose, "This..... Wan Er is a nice person overall so being nice to me is normal. Sooo, what are you trying to say?"

Dong Cheng shot a glance at me, "Hmph. You know what I mean!"

Very quickly, Wan Er returned with the soup and some fruits as well. It seemed like girls were different from us guys. They went after the fruits and

sweets while Tang Qi's and my plate were filled with meat, meat and more meat.

Dong Cheng grabbed a piece of meat and then laughed, "This time we've made a great profit while completing the quest to rescue Chi Yu Han. Brother Xiao Yao, it was a bold and wise decision to accept this mission.

I embarrassingly laughed, "Don't exaggerate. There was nothing bold and wise about it. I argued with Ba Huang City's lord in the heat of the moment. I didn't think about the consequences at all. I didn't think that after rescuing Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Ching, they would become our Dragon Den's officials."

Wan Er began to laugh, "This.... Dragon's Den can now recruit ten kinds of forces including Swirling Abyss Light Cavalries, Deep Cold Heavy Cavalries, and the Flame Hawk Archers. These forces can only be recruited by Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Ching. The Flame Hawk Archers are especially useful. Their stats will be 110% of Xiao Yao's and can deal with flying units and attack from long range. Think about it, if Xiao Yao's stats are ridiculously strong already, then even without all his skills, those archers would be very deadly! Right now, Dragon's Den is probably the strongest City there is."

Dong Cheng giggled, "That's right! Even though our [Zhan Long] is elite, we still can't match up with [Legend] and [Hero's Mound]. However, we have our Dragon's Den to back us up. Now that Chi Yu Han is a part of the city, he can slowly recover his strength and become a Saint class protector of the city. I feel like not even [Legend] or [Hero's Mound] would dare to attack us.

Wang Er continued, "What are you planning to do now?"

I thought about it and replied, "When I get online, I will go and check out the city and see what is happening. I'll go and take a look at our productions and labor and try to get the city to a Lv 5 city. Then we can try to recruit some Swampy Light Cavalries. These soldiers will have around 85% of my stats and should be enough to defend against intruders. Even if we're not online, I don't think that the city can be taken down that easily."

"Okay."

Wan Er nodded in agreement, "This is a decision that a smart guild leader would make! Q-Sword hates our [Zhan Long] right now and might attack. We

have to watch [Hero's Mound]'s movements. I don't think that Q-Sword will let us off if we grow so quickly. He's probably formulated some plans to go against us already.

Dong Cheng was playing around with her fork and then looked over at Tang Qi, "Tang Qi, I heard that you finished off Li Xiao Yao the last time we fought."

Tang Qi shuddered, "I.... I couldn't do anything else..... Also, it wasn't me who finished him off. Q-Sword was the one who killed him...."

"Hmph...."

Dong Cheng indifferently looked at him, "Some friend you are....."

I grabbed the bowl of soup that Wan Er got me and drank it, "Dong Cheng, don't blame Tang Qi anymore. We're enemies so if he needs to kill me then he should kill me. However he should know that one day, when our [Zhan Long] fights back, I won't hold back at all."

Tang Qi gritted his teeth, "[Hero's Mound] will be waiting."

I laughed, "Just you wait. Our [Zhan Long] isn't that easy to bully. When we get angry, even Q-Sword, the number one player in the China server will not be able to hold us back!"

Tang Qi coldly replied, "Li Xiao Yao, you're too arrogant."

I calmly looked at him, "Then isn't [Hero's Mound] being too arrogant when they attacked Ba Huang City? When Q-Sword attacked [Zhan Long], isn't he being arrogant too? Did you guys make the rules? Tang Qi, when you see Q-Sword, tell him this, [Zhan Long] will definitely inflict a serious amount of pain to [Hero's Mound]!"

Li Xiao Yao was very domineering. This forced Tang Qi to gulp and reply with, "I... I got it..."

When we finished eating dinner, it was already 8 something. I brought Tang Qi and the girls back to Liu Hua University and then went back to my own dorm to go online.

"Shua!"

After entering the game, I appeared in Dragon's Den. Everything was

completely different. After rebuilding the city, it wasn't a city made of pitch black rocks anymore. It was a city made with white stones. Chi Yu Qing was standing by the walls, commanding the workers to build an archer's tower. Chi Yu Han held his long sword and stood in front of the City Lord's manor.

On the city's menu, it stated that Chi Yu Han was in charge of military affairs and was recruiting soldiers. Chi Yu Qing was responsible for building the city and was the chief of internal affairs.

I walked over and when Chi Yu Han saw me, he saluted, "Master!"

"Ah." I nodded, "Come find Chi Yu Qing with me!"

"Alright."

The two of us went down the city walls while Chi Yu Han lightly called Chi Yu Qing. Chi Yu Qing immediately turned around and greeted me, "Master, what business do you have with me?"

I replied, "It seems like we don't have enough laborers to match our food supply and materials. How can we build faster?"

Chi Yu Ching was startled and then smiled. "I have a solution but it's a bit too extreme."

"Oh? What kind of solution?"

"It's like this..." Chi Yu Ching blinked a few times and then replied, "In the northeastern region of Dragon's Den, there is a mine under the Ice Spine Mountain. There is a very cruel mine owner who forced many people to dig and mine for him. From what I can see, if we kill the mine owner and rescue the workers, we can bring them to work for Dragon's Den under the condition that we will feed them."

I was amazed. This is a great idea. Our Dragon's Den doesn't have many resources and we need to build it up from scratch. It seems like I need Chi Yu Qing to become the secondary leader of the city.

I waved my hands and Chi Yu Qing's management stats appeared in front of me.

Chi Yu Qing [Level 100]

Military Force: 92

Military Control: 87

Intelligence: 96

Commerce: 100

Agriculture: 95

Ah. The commerce, agriculture and intelligence is very high. This is basically a god level commander for building a city. I secretly rejoiced and looked over at Chi Yu Han's stats. Looking at it, I became even more speechless.

Chi Yu Han [Level 100]

Military Force: 100

Military Control: 100

Intelligence: 93

Commerce: 54

Agriculture: 31

Okay. Chi Yu Han was more suited to be the military commander while Chi Yu Qing can handle the city affairs. To have two BOSS class NPCs watching over Dragon's Den, it seems like God is on [Zhan Long]'s side. You cannot employ this kind of NPCs from the city lord at all. Even if you had all the money in the world, you still won't find NPCs like them!

# Chapter 527 Slaughtering the Slave Owner

“Di!”

I received a message from Wan Er, “Li Xiao Yao, a new player city has appeared in Jiu Li City. All players can fight for it. Plus, it has something to do with Lin Qiong’s background, making it an SSS Tier Quest. Every player on the Chinese server can compete for this city. Should we join in?”

I opened up my call screen and asked, “Wan Er, what do you think? Should [Zhan Long] join in or not?”

Wan Er smiled. “You’re the Guild Master, you decide!”

“Don’t say that.. I want to hear what your thoughts are. After all, you are the Vice Guild Master.”

“I think... After our battle in the Grave of the Warring States, none of the big guilds in Jiu Li City will come fight over the city with [Zhan Long]. So, I think that it’s best if we maintain a neutral position. We’ll just let [Legend], [Judgement], and [Appearance Alliance] go and fight amongst themselves. Besides, [Zhan Long] has just gone through a City Battle, Grave of the Warring States, and the Chi Yu Han Quest. Everyone’s too tired now. I think the best thing we can do right now is to let everyone take a good rest!”

I nodded, “Ok, alright then. Understood... However, make sure you send some people to report on the situation in Fan Shu City. Once Q-Sword decides to send troops out to Jiu Li City, we, [Zhan Long], will also send troops out. We cannot let Q-Sword deal a blow to Ye Lai.”

“Alright, I got it. What are you preparing for right now?”

“I’m going to go do some errands for the city with her. Do you want to come with?”

“Sure! Just wait for me for a few minutes. I’ll come after I repair my equipment!”

“Ok!”

.....

Three minutes later, I saw Wan Er walking towards us from a distance. She had switched out her cloak for a red one. Looks like both of the daggers in her hands were now Saint Tier. Even her leather armor had evolved, multiplying her defense. The Purple Kirin Dragon had minimized itself and rested on its beautiful owner's shoulder. "Ji Ji" It cried out, as though it was pouting to its owner.

I quickly invited Wan Er into the team and quickly explained the quest. At that moment, the beautiful little miss grinned, "Alright, I got it. We're just going to go kill some fraudulent merchants, right?"

I shook my head, "Nope, we're going to punish evildoers and uphold the justice of the masses and save those suffering laborers."

"OK, whatever you say!"

Chi Yu Qing raised her thorny whip and happily said, "My Lord, shall we set out?"

I nodded, "Yup, let's head out! Chi Yu Han, how about you come with us? The Dragon's Den is very safe right now, so there's no need to be on your guard."

Chi Yu Han put his hand on his sword's hilt and said, "Yes my lord!"

.....

The four of us set out from the Dragon's Den, two players followed by two high level NPCs. We cut through the Guardian Forest in the Grave of the Warring States. Not far ahead of where we were was the Ice Ridge Mountains. The environment around us has turned into a frozen wasteland. "Sha sha" my battle boots stepped across the snow. Wan Er wrapped her cloak around her arms as her equipment didn't use much material in the first place. Snowflakes fell upon her full mounds one after another. Naturally, she was very cold.

I smiled at her and said, "It really is hard being a female player. All of the female equipment weren't conservatively designed...."

Wan Er glared at me and then begrudgingly said, "You're still joking around? Why haven't you taken off your cloak and given it to me to wear?"

“Ka” I took off my Fire Prison Armor and said, “If you can wear it, then I’ll give it to you...”

“Wu... now you’re just bullying me!”

“What, no I’m not!”

“Yes you are!”

“.....”

As the two of us were bantering, Chi Yu Qing suddenly turned around to look at me and said, “My lord, we’ve arrived. Just ahead of us is the mine. There are 200+ guards. Should we just immediately attack and kill the fat owner now? He’s like a vampire that builds up his own body using the lives of his laborers....”

I nodded, “Yup, let’s move!”

I reached behind me and “Keng!” pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword. Out of habit I reached out to get my Cold Iron Sword but only felt air. I suddenly remembered that I had dropped the sword. At the moment, I didn’t have a single secondary weapon. Without any other choice, I opened up my bag and took out an Emperor Tier sword. Of course with this my attack power had decreased quite a bit. Wan Er saw this and sympathetically looked at me “Pig, you looked more impressive when you had your twin swords....”

I smiled back at her, “Of course! However, finding a weapon is just too hard .... Let’s move!”

“Ok....”

Wan Er and I sprinted forward. A group of laborers were pushing an old and heavy cart towards the mine while a cruel soldier cracked a whip and shouted at them. The laborers were wearing tattered cloths that barely covered their arms and legs. Just watching this procession made my blood boil!

“Charge!”

I swung both of my swords and charged into the crowd. My Flaming Tiger God roared and activated [Burstfire Raid] into the crowd. Wan Er gripped both of her daggers and sprinted forward while her Purple Kirin Dragon flapped its wings and flew into the sky. With each flap, it grew bigger, all the way until it



became an enormous dragon. With one breath, it burned a group of soldiers.

Chi Yu Qing mercilessly charged forward and smacked a group of soldiers' chests. This little girl's attacks were merciless. I like it! Chi Yu Han showed even less mercy. His Holy Domain energy surrounded his body and just by opening his hand, he created a shockwave that crushed a dozen soldiers. Within 5 minutes all 200 soldiers were turned into mush. They had absolutely no way of defending against the attacks of us four.

"Ah!?"

A fat man clothed in silk hurriedly jerked his horse's head towards the other way and kicked it, hoping to escape from us.

"You evil greedy son of a b\*tch, you want to escape from us?"

Chi Yu Qing screamed at him and cracked her thorny whip. She whipped it out, wrapping it around the fatty. With a light tug, he immediately fell off his horse and rolled right to our feet. He scrambled to his knees and begged, "Goddess have mercy on me! Please, let me go! I have an eighty year old mother and an one year old daughter waiting for me to bring home dinner...."

Chi Yu Qing smirked, "Really? So are the three Moon Elves we found in your tent your daughters? The blood from having their virginity taken away hasn't even been washed off yet! How do you explain that?"

The fatty was dumbfounded, "I... How would I dare do something like that... Angela is such a high and honorable person, how would such a lowly person like me even dare dream of touching her? Please goddess, have mercy...."

"So, you were actually thinking of touching her highness Angela?" Chi Yu Han said with a smile.

The fatty was stunned, "I... I.... My lord, please have mercy. I really didn't do anything bad! Those lowly laborers were originally slaves that I bought anyway. Their lives were worthless. Plus, I buried all of the laborers that died. I didn't let wild dogs eat away at their bodies, that's already giving them more respect than they deserve! Masters, please have mercy..."

"Keng!"

Chi Yu Han's Heaven's Spite Sword flashed and the fatty's head rolled to the ground. Chi Yu Han looks at the fatty's body and softly said, "All men are equal from the second they are born. For a piece of trash like you, you should die a thousand fold!"

As he said that, Chi Yu Han raised his long sword and shouted, "All laborers in the mines, come out! Our lord has some words he wishes to say to you!"

Very soon, a large crowd of people appeared from the tunnel. There seemed to be around 500 of them. Cautiously, they stood there and looked at us, shivering in their tattered clothes.

I was stunned, what was I supposed to say? Wan Er nudged my shoulder and said, "Idiot, hurry up and make a speech!"

I was speechless. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and stepped onto a ledge. After clearing my throat, I said, "We've already killed the mine owner and his dogs! Now, I will give you a chance to make a living. Just southwest of here, there's a new city called the Dragon's Den, and I am the lord of the city. There's a large amount of area around the city that needs to be cleared out and used for herding livestock. As long as you are willing, you can enter the city and become one of our citizens. Your previous status as a slave will be completely wiped away. Do you agree?"

At that moment, the crowd burst into chatter. How could these laborers, who had suffered all their lives, not be willing? One after another, they raised their hands and said, "My Lord, you must take us out of this hellhole. If you don't, then we will come after you..."

I was stunned and said, "Alright then, everyone come with me and do some actual good useful work. Serve your new country the Dragon's Den!"

"Yes my lord!"

.....

A crowd of people entered into the Dragon's Den. Quite a few players saw us coming from a distance and discovered that there was a bunch of NPCs with us. Even so, they didn't say much in response to it. Once our 500 man group entered into the Dragon's Den, Chi Yu Qing immediately sent out a command,

“A hundred of you will go and sow the fields with the five main crops, a hundred of you will herd livestock, a hundred and fifty of you will cut lumber, and a hundred fifty of you will mine ore!”

“Shua” Once our quest was complete, the Dragon’s Den production capability evolved—

[Dragon’s Den] (Level 3 City)

City Owner: Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Guardians: Chi Yu Han & Vice Guardian: Chi Yu Qing

City Buildings: 7

Soldiers: 0

Laborers: 521

City Size: Super Big

City Production Capability:

Food: 2070/hour

Wood: 1570/ hour

Stones: 1570/hour

.....

The new laborers increased our production capability by quite a bit. To think that we would be able to produce so much every hour was incredible. The Dragon’s Den is developing extremely quickly. I looked over at Chi Yu Qing and suddenly realized just how wonderful having a Construction Leader Guardian really was, and asked, “Qing Er, are there any other evil slave owners like the one we just dealt with?”

Chi Yu Qing smiled. “Sorry my lord, there are very few slave owners that are like that one. Plus... the capability of the Dragon’s Den is limited. At the moment, we can only take these laborers. You can’t make yourself into a fatty with just one little bite...”

I nodded, “Ok, alright then...”

Wan Er smiled to me, “It’s fine, the rate at which the Dragon’s Den is developing is already shocking...”

On the side, Chi Yu Han furrowed his brow and said, “My Lord, getting 500 more citizens was a good thing in the first place, but we don’t have enough people to keep order in the city. If we keep going at this rate, then fights will break out among the citizens. We must have an army come and uphold peace. With my defense, we just need ten more soldiers in order to maintain order in the Dragon’s Den. Please immediately recruit some soldiers!”

# Chapter 528 Zhen Yue Sword

I was startled by this request....

Alright, I guess this makes sense. There were more and more people that were going to live in this city, meaning that we were going to need more guards to defend the city. On the bright side, we had a powerhouse like Chi Yu Han, who was a godly general that could control the military easily, or else we would need to have at least around 50 people to maintain the stability of the Dragon's Den.

I looked at the recruitment list. The swordsmen needed the least amount of Gold, Food, Stones, and Wood, and so I decided to get 10 of them first, just to make sure we had some for now. To be honest, the ones that I wanted the most were still the level 5 army recruits, the Swamp Light Cavalry. With a light cavalry, we can easily use them for patrolling the city's boundaries. The Armored Heavy Infantry was a necessary type of soldier to protect the walls. In addition, the Flame Hawk Archers were heavy archers that could shoot super far. They had a pretty impressive attack power and would act as a very good defense system if they were put in the watchtowers. These Flame Hawk Archers were control type defenders. Finally, there were the Cliff Dragon Cavalrymen. Without question, they have the ability to multiply our defense strength. In the future, it will become absolutely necessary for us to invite a big group of the Cliff Dragon Cavalrymen and use them for our defense. With that, dominating the world was even possible.

.....

Within the city, ten swordsmen slowly walked out of the army camp, each one of them carrying an iron sword and clothed in light armor. Chi Yu Han walked over to them, waved his sword and shouted, "Immediately begin patrolling the grounds!"

"Yes sir!" That group of swordsmen walked out of the city and began patrolling its borders. All those laborers who were out carrying stones needed their protection.

At that moment, Chi Yu Qing walked over as well and said, “My lord, all of those citizens who just moved to Dragon’s Den are all poverty stricken. Winter is coming and we need a large amount of clothes in order to ensure their health. You must use 9741 Gold to buy these clothes. Please verify the payment, or else the productivity of the citizens will decrease by 50%!”

Wan Er couldn’t help but smile, “Wah, looks like you’re spending a lot of money...”

Silently, I clicked on the verify button, and the city’s treasury decreased by quite a bit. Luckily, the revenue we got from National Beauty was enough to cover the payment, and I basically didn’t lose any money from my own pocket.

A few minutes later, Chi Yu Han walked over and congratulated me, “My lord, the number of citizens living in our city have increased and we need to clear out some space to create more living areas. In order to clear out some space and create more living space, you need to spend Food x12370, Stone x7820, Wood x7820, and 32110 Gold. Please verify, or else these citizens will react violently and will not be able to work peacefully!”

I felt a stab in my heart, and turned around to grab Wan Er’s hand and pitifully looked at her.

Wan Er’s beautiful eyes were filled with mischief and she couldn’t help but smile and pat my arm, “Pig, don’t be too sad. You will be able to earn this money back, so don’t be sad...”

I looked at the guild’s cash flow and nearly cried, “[Zhan Long] this week is almost in the red...we’ve almost used up all the money that we earned. Very soon, we’re going to have to start using my bank.....”

“If you’re going to use it then use it, it’s not much...”

“Oh really?” I glared at her and said, “I was originally planning on taking 10M out for your dowry....”

Wan Er was stunned, and she blushed a little, “I.... when did I say I was going to marry you....”

I spread out my hands and laughed, “I was just joking around, why take me so seriously?”

“Peng!”

Wan Er’s punch threw me into the air, sending me crashing right into the beast statue that stood next to the Great Hall. Chi Yu Han immediately pulled out his sword and shouted, “Who dares harm the Lord of the City!”

Chi Yu Qing put a hand on Chi Yu Han’s sword and said, “Brother, are you an idiot? That’s the Lord’s... wu, love of his life.”

I leaned against the statue and laughed, “Aiya, looks like even the NPCs know something?”

Wan Er’s face was completely red by then and she glared at me pitifully, “Pig, all you know is how to bully me! I’m leaving, you go play by yourself and finish your business. I’m not eating any dinner tonight, so don’t call for me....”

“Yup, alright!”

.....

I watched as Wan Er left and then walked into the great hall. In reality, this was the city owner’s private housing, and was the place with the highest authority. This was also where I, Chi Yu Han, and Chi Yu Qing did most of our business.

There was finally nothing much left for me to do. At the moment, I was already Lv 96 and I wasn’t in any hurry to go grind levels. Thus, I pulled out my two swords and stood in the Great Hall. Energy began to gather around me. This was something that I normally did in real life, just materialized in the game, and I seemed to have finally figured out how it works in this dimension. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and locked onto a target in front of me. Then, with my two swords, I let out a combination of attacks with a “Shua shua shua”. The reality was that if I targeted anyone with my attack, then they would clearly feel it. This was the greatest factor as to why my attacks miss. Against Q-Sword or Jian Feng Han, those top tier players who made up what they lacked in actual battle experience with this system assistance, I had to improve myself even further.

My blade sliced through the air, creating after images of my sword that filled the entire Great Hall. Just like that, I sunk deep into the juxtaposition between

the virtual world and reality. Even my heart was racing a little. I had to quickly break through and enter the Yang Yan level, or else what was I supposed to use to go against Blood Scythe? How was I supposed to protect Wan Er? As her guardian, what I needed most was to get stronger, as strong, no, even stronger than Ou Yang Chuan!

Just like that, I continuously swung my sword and practiced my swordsmanship, all the way until around 1 a.m. Finally, when I began to feel my consciousness slip from being overused, I let my weary arms drop. Looks like the sword in my supporting hand had been used so much that it broke apart. What a waste!

I opened up my friend list and saw that Wan Er was still online. I then sent out a message, “Wan Er, why haven’t you slept yet?”

A minute later, Wan Er responded, “It’s nothing, I’m gonna sleep right after I kill this BOSS. You go to sleep first. Don’t forget to wake up in the morning and take me to breakfast....”

“Alright, then I’m going to sleep!”

“Good night!”

.....

After I logged off, I took a shower and buried myself into bed and slept.

When I woke up, it was already the next morning. Rays of sunlight peaked through the window blinds and hit against the bamboo shoots on our window sill. It was Tang Gu’s plant. A few days ago, I had accidentally knocked over the cactus that he planted and he didn’t talk to me for a number of days. Looks like today he was planting bamboo now. I climbed out of bed and glanced at my roommate’s bunk. Just as I had last saw him, he was still sleeping. I then left a note on his desk and poured the half empty Coke to water his shoots. The sound of water hitting the leaves was very soothing....

I went online to check out the situation!

“Shua!”

I appeared in the Great Hall. When I opened up my friend list, I saw that Wan



Er was already online. I was startled and sent out a message, “Wan Er, you’re grinding levels this early? So ambitious...”

Wan Er giggled, “Idiot! You’re finally awake?”

“Yup.”

“Then wait ten minutes for me. I’ll see you in the city, I have a gift for you!”

“Oh, a gift?”

“Yup!”

“Alright...”

I continued practicing my sword technique in the Great Hall. One after another I went through the motions of the Flying Swordplay in the game. Too bad this move’s strength was too strong, making it harder for me to create it into a skill. Ten minutes quickly passed by and I heard a “Di!”. It was a message from Wan Er: “Where are you?”

“I’m in the Great Hall.”

“Alright, wait for me!”

.....

A few minutes later, I suddenly heard the doors of the great hall open. A beautiful figure slipped in through the opening. Only players who had a ranking above flag bearer could enter into the Great Hall. Wan Er was the Vice Guild Master and so she could easily come in. She walked straight towards me and fished something out of her bag. “Keng!” she pulled out a shiny long sword and smiled. “Pig, you’ll definitely like this present!”

“Huh?!”

I was slightly startled. This long sword glowed with a green light, showing that it was a Saint Tier equipment. Where did this girl get a Saint Tier long sword?!”

Wan Er put the sword in my hands and smiled. “Yup, now she’s yours! Just in time to make up for the sword that you lost, do you like it?”

I looked down at the sword. There were a few ancient characters carved into the sword’s hilt. A godly energy seemed to flow throughout the weapon. The

blade itself was extremely shiny and the outline of the sword was elegant. I waved my hand over it, excited to see its stats. How could I not like this present?

[Zhen Yue Sword] (Saint Tier Equipment – Superior)

Attack: 2700-3340

Strength: +107

Endurance: +105

Agility: +104

Additional: Increases the user's attack power by 30%

Additional: Increases the user's splash damage by 20%

Special: [Zhan Yue], When this sword is held under the moonlight, it will absorb the moon's power and increase critical rate by 30%

Introduction: Zhen Yue Sword, Legend has it that everytime the moon is full, a group of spirits will descend upon the earth and walk among its streets, bringing disaster upon humanity. During the ancient times, a man who had achieved the Dao\* took this sword and killed these demons. Over time, the sword eventually began to absorb the power of these demons and evolved into a godly weapon. Now, when the sword is in the moonlight, it will release a power that will make even monsters tremble before it.

\*TL Note: Used to describe a Daoist who is very wise and has achieved "enlightenment" after practicing for a long time

Required Level: 95

.....

I was ecstatic. The attack power was even crazier than my Dragon Reservoir Sword without the [Kill for Blood]! Plus, it was a Lv 95 equipment! You would have to kill a Saint Tier BOSS that was at least over Lv 100 in order to get this sword! Just how did Wan Er get it?

I looked at the little miss and said, "Such a precious weapon, Wan Er, how did you get it?"

Wan Er smiled. “Why do you care about that? If you like it then take it! From now on, if you ever see any Assassin type gear, just think of me. Don’t say you don’t want it, or else I’m going to beat you up!”

I felt a little embarrassed, “But, if you don’t tell me about it, then how could I take it! Just how did you get such weapon?”

Wan Er bit her lip and fluttered her big eyes and said, “I bought it from Jiu Li City, is that not ok?”

“How much?”

“1,000,000 RMB.... do you want to give me my money back?”

Looking at the deadly expression on the little miss’s face, I didn’t say anything more and equipped the Zhen Yue Sword as my support equipment before finally saying, “Thank you so much Wan Er, I will devote my life only to you....”

“Pei...” Wan Er smiled at me, “Doesn’t that mean that I’m getting the short end of the stick? Alright already, let’s log off. I want some tasty KFC for breakfast....”

“This, can’t you let a man dream!?”

.....

I logged off and ran straight for the girl’s dorm.

Wan Er and Dong Cheng were already waiting for me at the bottom of the dorm. By the time I walked over, I noticed that Wan Er’s eyes were swollen and couldn’t help but ask, “Wan Er, why do you look so tired...”

Dong Cheng pursed her lips and said, “Hmph, if Wan Er didn’t bargain all night for your sake, how else would you get that Zhen Yue Sword?”

“Huh?”

I was startled, “Exactly what happened? You bargained all night?? This...”

Wan Er grinned at me and punched my arm, “Dummy, what are you thinking about? It’s like this....”

## Chapter 529 Qin Dan

Wan Er rubbed her eyes and tiredly said, “Yesterday, Fang Ge Que sent a message to me. Seems that he has received an SSS Tier Quest, and only five people can enter the quest map. Plus, it’s a really big map. The quest was to find a Sword Saint level rebel of Jiu Li City. The problem is that [Legend] doesn’t have many experts that are strong enough, and so they want to ask for some help from [Zhan Long]. This happened right after you and I finished dealing with the slave owner and stayed square...”

Wan Er looked up at me and smiled. “And so, I think that a Sword Saint Tier super BOSS will probably drop a sword. Thus, I made a deal with Fang Ge Que that I’d help him kill this BOSS, but if it drops any sword type weapons, that it’d have to go to me. I even recorded this entire conversation. No matter what level the sword was, it had to go to me, and the highest price wouldn’t be over 1,000,000, and so, when the Zhen Yue Sword was dropped, the market appraised it at 4,000,000 and so I took it with my 1,000,000. At that moment... Lu Chun Yang’s eyes nearly burst out of his head. No matter what, he never thought that a sword would actually drop...”

“Hmph...”

I looked at her swollen eyes and felt a pang in my heart, “Don’t say anymore, let’s hurry up and eat. After that, we’ll head back quickly so that you can sleep. Oh, that’s right, where did you get that 1 million?”

Wan Er wryly smiled. “Well, my dad released the restrictions on my first bank card, plus he also gave me a new card that had 100 million...”

I was speechless.

Dong Cheng Yue face palmed, “There really is no way to compete against these rich people...”

I nodded, “Yup. That means that this morning’s KFC is on Wan Er!”

“Alright!”

.....

We quickly ate breakfast and let Wan Er go back to rest.

I went back online and patrolled the territory. Afterwards, I helped Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing quickly develop our productivity and military strength. Then, I walked into the city and looked at the construction work. We needed to have 10 buildings level up to Lv 3 before our city could level up to Lv 4, but that wouldn't take too long. Under my Command, the Infantry, Cavalry, Equestrian Range, Hawk Nest, Weaponsmith, Military Training ground, Shooting range, Tavern, Merchant Guild, and Teleportation Circle, these 10 great foundations of the city have already risen to Lv 3. All we needed to wait for now was for the necessary amount of food, stones, and wood to reach 30,000 before we could level up. From the current productivity of our city, it would take around a day.

The reason I chose to prioritize these buildings was because the Infantry, Cavalry, and equestrian range would ensure recruitment and loyalty. The Hawk Nest was a very unique type of building that the Flame Hawk Archers needed. As for the Weaponsmith, Military Training Ground, and the Shooting Range, they were all necessary buildings. The teleportation circle and the merchant guild was for the purpose of earning money. As for the Tavern, that was to be used to greet any heroes or warriors that were visiting our city. After all, if the Dragon's Den were to grow bigger, relying solely on Chi Yu Han was no way to maintain the city. The future battles were all going to be a mix of players and NPCs against other players and NPCs, and was no longer going to be a stage only for players. This also highlighted the importance of having a player city. With a city I could create my own army for no reason. Of course, this army was built upon an enormous investment of resources. After all, a war itself was the greatest waste of money.

The leveling of the buildings in the Dragon's Den was something that only I, the Guild Master, or Wan Er and Qing Qian those Vice Guild Masters could control. The two girls clearly don't seem too interested in setting up for battle, and so I could only deal with this business myself.

Leveling up the Dragon's Den also meant that the number of Ba Huang City players that can be housed by our city would increase. After all, there were large amounts of high level monsters all around the city, and it was pretty far from Ba Huang City. Thus, a lot of the players that were grinding around the

Dragon's Den would buy our Return to the City Scrolls , making it a popular place.

.....

Around noon, I suddenly got very surprising news. There was a Lv 95 Saint Tier Blade that appeared. It was a battle axe, and it was named "Qin Dan". It's attack power was slightly higher than my Zhen Yue Sword. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Bai Qi lead 500 players from the Valiant Bravery Camp to adventure into the Glacial River Valley's ice floor and discovered a BOSS. After losing around 300 people, they finally managed to get this battle axe.

The guild chat was flooded——

One Second Hero said, "Haha, Li Mu, you guys have hit gold this time! That Qin Dan will definitely be worth quite a bit! What do you plan on doing with it?"

Li Mu responded, "I'm not sure yet. Bai Qi is using a Lv 87 Valkyrie Tier equipment, but I feel like giving it to him is too much of a waste. I'm thinking of earning some money from this and splitting it up among all of the brothers."

Qing Qian smiled. "So you're planning on selling it? It seems... There probably aren't a lot of people out there that can buy this battle axe...."

Old K said, "Don't look at me, my Fierce Sun battle axe has a super special skill and so I can't switch it out at the moment."

Li Mu asked, "Guild Master, what do you suggest?"

I smiled. "Best would be that we deal with this internally. If that fails, then we can sell it for money. Even if we sell it to an enemy it won't be too much of a problem. Later on we'll just find a chance to kill them and make them drop it..."

Li Mu stared at me, "Isn't that a little too sketch? To be honest, I was thinking of selling it too. After all, 500 of our Valiant Bravery brothers went with us to kill monsters and we lost so many people. We're going to have to give them some kind of compensation. If we sell it for a couple dozen million then we can split it among the brothers, how great would that be...."

I nodded, "Yup, then go sit and sell it!"

"Alright!"

Right at that moment, I suddenly received a message. It came from the [Judgement] Guild Master Ye Lai. That bastard's information was pretty fast, "Xiao Yao! I heard that you [Zhan Long] people got a "Qin Dan" isn't that right!? The forums already have a picture of the weapon's stats, and it really is great! Have you guys already decided what to do it? Has it been given to one of your own players? Or are you going to sell it?"

I replied, "We're planning on selling it. Hey, hehe, Ye Lai, are you interested?"

"Yup!" Ye Lai said, "I haven't really had any good equipment this entire time. Since we're brothers, please sell it to me. I, Ye Lai, do not like doing anything that's not morally right. Let's just use whatever the market price is, how does that sound? Whatever the system appraises it at, then I'll buy it for that much. I definitely won't resell it. Actually, you understand too right, that right now, godly equipment like this is actually priceless. Most guilds keep equipment like this within their own players, and so no matter what I do, I normally couldn't buy it... You [Zhan Long] people really are lucky!"

I nodded, "Ok, I'll talk it over with Li Mu!"

"Alright, thank you brother!"

And so, I returned to the guild chat, "Li Mu, Ye Lai seems to want the Qin Dan. Seeing as [Judgement] helped out our guild last time, why don't you sell it to him? Don't worry, you won't lose any money. Ye Lai wants to buy it at the market price, and doesn't want any discount!"

Li Mu appeared extremely happy, "OK, then have him come to Dragon's Den! We'll trade it there!"

"Ok!"

I then sent a message to Ye Lai and he agreed. He said that he would take 30 minutes to get there. Right after I got his message, I got another message from the beautiful Guild Master of [Appearance Alliance], Mu Xuan, "Little Zai Zai, I heard that you [Zhan Long] got a Qin Dan, is that right?"

I replied, "Yup, but we've already sold it out to Ye Lai!"

Mu Xuan, "Damn, that was quick... I was originally planning on giving it to my Vice Guild Master... never mind then. When's Ye Fatty coming to get the battle

axe? Are you guys trading it in Dragon's Den?"

"Yep, what's up?"

"Then I'll come over and check it out. Right now, Jiu Li City is fighting over a player city and its just too bloody. I don't feel like watching..."

"Hei hei, if Jiu Li City's fighting over a player city then why aren't [Appearance Alliance] and [Judgement] participating? You guys actually have the heart to come out and buy equipment...."

"There's still 72 hours left, what's the rush? Just let them kill each other off..."

"Alright..."

.....

Like that, I waited for them in the Great Hall. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Bai Qi and a dozen others walked over to me and waited for the trade to happen. Even Wan Er and Dong Cheng came by to check it out. Plus, I was there, so no one was going to steal that equipment from Ye Lai.....

Around 35 minutes later, I could see Ye Lai walking over from a distance with a group of 50 people. They quickly entered the city. Mu Xuan came in right behind them, and it looked like she also brought around 50 people. Ye Lai, the Babel Buddha at his side, while Mu Xuan also brought her two beautiful Vice Guild Masters——

Wild Beauty Lv-91 Knight Guild Position: Vice Guild Master

Wild Swan Lv-91 Swordsman Guild Position: Vice Guild Master

.....

I walked over to welcome them and smiled at Mu Xuan, "Two people of such importance have come to this humble Dragon's Den, what great fortune..."

Ye Lai laughed, "You're being too polite. Can I look at the weapon first?"

Li Mu walked over and pulled out the battle axe. He then waved his hand over the weapon, calling out the stats into the air. It really was extremely strong. Ye Lai and Babel Buddha practically drooled as they read through it. As someone who sought for strength, Ye Lai dreamed of a weapon that was this strong. Plus,



his business in the real world was doing pretty well, and so spending this money wasn't too much for him.

I looked at Mu Xuan and said, "Mu Xuan, why have you come to Ba Huang City? Are you really just here to tour around?"

Mu Xuan grinned and then patted her full chest, saying, "Yup, it's just as you guessed. I brought Wild Beauty and Wild Swan here to look around at what a player city should be built like, learn from the experience. What's up, Little Guild Master Zi Zai, do you not welcome us here to look around?"

I laughed, "There isn't really much to see...."

One Second Hero raised his halberd and smiled. "He he, I don't think it's that simple. The lady Mu Xuan and Ye Lai have come to [Zhan Long] together. Looks like there might be a little, something something going on. Please, tell me if I'm wrong. Just what kind of a relationship do you guys have?"

Ye Lai didn't respond and walked forward. He then reached out and picked up a [Zhan Long] Berserkers heavy mace, raised it, and then "Peng!" Smashed it into the ground. He then said to One Second Hero, "What are you implying?"

One Second Hero was shocked, "Guild Master Ye Lai, you mean to tell me... that the small meanings of life is just like this mace, even though it doesn't look like it's worth much, but once it's in the battlefield, it reveals its true worth and is priceless!"

Ye Lai shook his head, "Nope, my true meaning is, it is none of your f\*cking business."

One Second Hero was stunned.

Mu Xuan felt she needed to put a word in and pointed at Ye Lai, "Are you guys crazy? Did you eat some kind of weird fruit? Why would I like someone with a face that looks like Qin Dan's? If you said someone like Little Zai Zai, then that might be acceptable...."

Qing Qian squinted her beautiful eyes, "Don't try and seduce my Brother Xiao Yao...."

Ye Lai trembled, "You wench, what does looking like Qin Dan even mean?!"

## Chapter 530 New Storyline

As he finished talking, Ye Lai glanced at the Qin Dan Battle Axe and nearly drooled. He then rubbed his nose and said, "Let's finish our business here first before we fool around. Li Mu, Wang Jian, you guys were the ones that got the Qin Dan. Come on, I, Ye Lai am a straightforward person, and definitely won't try and haggle the price. Of course, you guys better not mess with me. These days I've been a little tight on money, so I won't be able to handle something like that."

Li Mu raised the Qin Dan and said, "To be honest, if I had gotten this battle axe on my own, then I definitely would give Guildmaster Ye Lai a pretty cheap price. Sadly, our [Valiant Bravery] lost quite a few people to get this one battle axe and so I have to give them a reasonable explanation. How does this sound, I'll sell it to you for 80% of the market price?"

Ye Lai nodded, "OK, Xiao Yao, you'll be our mediator."

I walked forward and took the battle axe from Li Mu. With a light wave, the battle axe suddenly flew from my hand and evaporated into light with a "Shua!" Once the system listed the battle axe's stats in the air, it listed the system price underneath: 2,134,700 Gold. The current Gold to RMB ratio is 1: 2.3, meaning that the axe as 4,909,810 RMB. With a 20% discount, that meant that it was 3,927,848RMB!

Propping the battleaxe on the ground, I happily said, "20% discount, that's 3,927,848 RMB. Let's just round that down to 3.9M RMB, how does that sound?"

Ye Lai grunted, his face was pale. Babel Buddha softly said, "Hao Ran, when we sell off the rest of the products in the company, then our net profit will be higher than 15M, don't hesitate any longer. Just do it. Besides, don't you still have 10M on your card? It's not like you're married and have a wife to check your bills, what are you afraid of?"

Ye Lai made a fist and became resolved to make the decision. He nodded and said, "OK, if its 3.9M, then it's 3.9M. I'm definitely getting this Qin Dan. Let's just

trade it right now, no need to go through the system. Otherwise, there's an extra 5% tax. F\*ck, they're trying to con all of my money away. Li Mu, let's just make a direct trade!"

Li Mu took the Qin Dan and laughed. He walked over to do the trade. "Di!" the trade was complete, and we got a huge bank note.

Wan Er smiled. "Congratulations Guild Master Ye Lai, you finally got a Lv 95 Saint Tier equipment. Just in time too, since you're Lv 95 as well. Check it out, why don't you see how much it raised your attack? Is it higher than our Li Xiao Yao?"

Ye Lai immediately equipped it and muttered, "I have an attack of 7440...."

I was stunned, "Damn!"

"What's wrong?" Ye Lai asked with a smile.

I replied, "A Berserker's 1.1 strength growth really is incredible. Your attack is even higher than mine..."

Wan Er said, "Well it depends on the real attack. Guild Master Ye Lai, how much total physical attack power do you have?"

Ye Lai glanced at his stats and said, "My equipment in total has a 147.4% increase in attack power. What about you Xiao Yao? How much does your equipment add to your attack power?"

I also looked at the details of my equipment and said, "In total, my equipment increases it by 181%. Then with Rage BUFFs, [Turmoil Sword] adds 10% and [Dragon's Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] adds 40%, totalling to 241% increase in attack power. My base attack is a little lower than Ye Lai's, around 7202..."

Mu Xuan eyes widened and she gasped, "You have 24,000 actual attack? Little Zai Zai, you are just too strong! No wonder masters like Jian Feng Han and Q-Sword are cautious around you...."

Ye Lai held his hand to his face and laughed, "Motherf\*cker, even though my base attack is higher than yours, after adding your equipment and skills, your attack power is higher than mine by 4000 points. Just thinking about it makes

me want to die....”

Dong Cheng pointed to the north and said, “Northwest of the Dragon’s Den, around 7000 yards is Glacial River Valley. When you tunnel through the ice layer and jump in, I promise you, all your worries will disappear....”

Ye Lai trembled, “The beauty Cang Yue really is a serpent beauty. Never again am I going to even hope to have a [Zhan Long] beauty for myself!”

Mu Xuan smiled. “Oh, so Guild Master Ye Lai had a dream like that?”

Ye Lai raised his Qin Dan battle axe and laughed, “What are you talking about? Even though I love my country, I love beautiful women even more! Any man would think that way. Besides, if you were to look at Fan Shu City, Jiu Li City, and Ba Huang City, and rank the beautiful women of those cities, [Zhan Long]’s Cang Tong, Cang Yue, Yue Qing Qian, and Matcha are among the top! Who wouldn’t want their own guild to have such beautiful women? Speaking of which, Xiao Yao, when are you going to lend them to [Judgement] for a while? Have them help me kill a few BOSSes? Otherwise, with that group of men in [Judgement], we’ll just be sneered at while we’re killing bosses. That just kills our mojo...”

“Cough cough...”

Babel Buddha whispered, “Brother Hao Ran, be careful of your image. However you look at it, you’re still one of the top ten players in the CBN Battle Net Rankings. How can you say stuff like that?”

Ye Lai also coughed and said, “Alright, now that we’ve finished the trade, how about this? Xiao Yao, Cang Tong, Cang Yue, Li Mu, and everyone else, it’s time to say our goodbyes. I have to go back to my brothers in [Judgement] and fight with [Legend] over that new player city!”

I also got serious and said, “Ye Lai, do you need us [Zhan Long] to help you fight for that Jiu Li City player fort?”

Ye Lai shook his head and lowered his voice, “I accept [Zhan Long]’s generosity, but for this city battle, whether or not [Judgement] can surpass [Legend] depends all on my own strength. If I rely on [Zhan Long]’s strength to grab the fort, then us of [Judgement] will not be able to keep it. If it’s like that,

then I'd rather we didn't get it at all!"

As he said that, Ye Lai turned around and looked at Mu Xuan and smiled. "Will [Appearance Alliance] ally itself with [Judgement]? If it's that way, then maybe I'll have a bigger chance of winning victory against [Legend]."

Mu Xuan raised her Mage staff and stuck her full chest out, "Sure. Either way, [Appearance Alliance] is enemies with [Legend]. Our current goal is to completely crush any chance of survival that [Legend] has. If we help Guild Master Ye Lai get the player city, make sure you remember to split its fortunes with us!"

"Of course. Let's go then!"

"You go first!"

"Why's that?" Ye Lai was surprised.

Mu Xuan revealed a sweet smile, "Because we are [Appearance Alliance]. Why would [Appearance Alliance] return to the city with a man who looks like Qin Dan?"

Ye Lai fished out his City Return Scroll with an annoyed expression, "If I get that fort, then I'll prove to you the principle of never judging a book by its cover!"

"Shua shua..."

Ye Lai and Mu Xuan both returned to the city. To be honest, Mu Xuan's two Vice Guild Masters Wild Beauty and were both extremely beautiful women. The two of them stood side by side as they left. Wild Beauty raised her long sword and looked at me for a long time. Finally she smiled. "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Ranked number 12th on the CBN Battlenet Rankings. I'm ranked thirteenth. Would you like to duel sometime?"

I nodded with a smile, "Yup, anytime!"

Wild Beauty grinned, "[Zhan Long] really has Hidden Dragons and Crouching Tigers. From the Guild Master to the flag bearers, almost every one of them is a top tier expert. The explosive power of a guild like this is just too incredible!"

Old K laughed and pointed at One Second Hero, "Yong Jie is one of our ten

team leaders. Just what kind of an expert is he?”

One Second Hero’s face turned pale and he pointed at Wolf, “Hey, Little Wolf is one of the four elders! At most he’s a second tier Assassin, he can’t even win against a little girl like Yue Wei Liang..”

Wolf was stunned, “What did I do to you...Hmm..”

He then looked towards Dancing Forest. She immediately raised the Bowstring of the Dragon Jin Sou and pointed it directly at him. Then with a cold expression, she said, “Little Wolf, what are you looking at? You want to die?!”

Wolf looked down and said, “Alright then, I’m the newbie. I can’t afford to offend any of the other 9 team leaders...”

Wild Beauty covered a grin and began to burst out in laughter. The two mounds on her chest shook from the giggles. One cannot say that [Appearance Alliance] really is filled with beautiful women. It practically rivaled the beauties in [Zhan Long]! As she recovered from her giggles, she looked at us, pulled out her City Return Scroll and said, “[Zhan Long] really is very interesting. I, Wild Beauty, have yet to get a boyfriend. Maybe sometime I’ll come over and check out the fish here. I’m leaving now, no need to send me off!”

I pierced my Dragon Reservoir Sword into the ground and smiled. “Good bye honorable friend from [Appearance Alliance]!”

After a few flashes of light, everyone from Jiu Li City left. Finally, like that, Ba Huang City’s number one weapon exchange ended. Since it was a team effort that brought about a weapon like that, the guild didn’t take any of the money that was gained from the trade. I just let Li Mu himself decide how to split the 3.9M RMB profit. After all, isn’t everyone fighting in this game to achieve a dream? In order to gain some earnings in real life, they spend all day and all night grinding levels, killing monsters, and getting equipment. All of the money they earn is then saved up. Once they save up 1M RMB, they can buy a house and marry a girl, all of which are pretty hard tasks. Especially for Li Mu, Wang Jian and the others. They are practically willing to sacrifice everything for Destiny. And, now that they’ve joined [Zhan Long], there’s no reason for me to treat them unfairly. Even the earnings I get from the National Beauty every week is split with them.

.....

“Alright...” I patted my hands and smiled. “There’s nothing left to do again!”

“Who said so?” Wan Er’s beautiful eyes glanced at me and she smiled. “Something else has popped up...”

“Oh?”

“Well, I just received information...” Wan Er turned around towards Ba Huang City and said, “Just ten minutes ago, Ba Huang City developed a new story line!”

“What are you talking about?” I widened my eyes at the beautiful little miss.

Wan Er calmly replied, “Luo Lin selected quite a few of Ba Huang City’s elite soldiers and is preparing to leave the city. Luo Lei, Angela, and Forgotten Sea are all escorting them. I’m not sure where they’re going, but rumor has it, it’s for the sake of a godly weapon...”

“Godly Weapon?”

“Yup, I’m not too clear on the details, but it they’re currently heading north and have just passed through the Moonlight Forest. Your beloved NPC Frost is there too....

“Cough cough!” I rubbed my nose. I never thought that a popular little miss like Wan Er would be jealous of an NPC! And so I said, “Wan Er, you jelly?”

“Never!” Wan Er turned around and said, “Let’s go. Bring [Zhan Long]’s elite players. I think that we should go over and look. We might even be able to get a quest! There’s already quite a few Ba Huang City players heading over there now....”

“Ok!”

With a single command, I left the Dragon’s Den to Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing, as well as ten other soldiers to watch over. I then took Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, Qing Qian and 1200 other elites from [Zhan Long] and headed north of Ba Huang City towards the Moonlight Forest. This was like a sixth sense for top tier players. Whenever there was some sort of big change, we would never miss out, in case there was some sort of chance.

# Chapter 531 Ten Thousand Man Quest

The moonlight forest was extremely vast; it covered the entire northeastern side of Ba Huang City. Normally it acted as a protective buffer for Ba Huang City, but today, the area between the forest and the city was occupied by the Desolate Dragon Army. It was only because of the existence of the Desolate Dragon Army that Ba Huang City was able to defend against the various barbarian invasions.

Moonlight scattered across the forest floor. Wan Er walked beside me and we relished the dimly lit scenery. Behind us, Old K, Li Mu and the others were chatting about which of the new girls were prettier, which of them had a bigger chest, and which ones had nice legs. Either way, Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Qing Qian, and Matcha all blushed as they listened.

.....

“Be more serious, we’re there...” I told them as I stood at the front.

We suddenly made it out of the dense thicket and found ourselves in a open space. I saw Ba Huang City’s flag flying in the air. There was at least ten thousand soldiers stationed there. Even Ba Huang City’s Duke, Luo Lei was there. I glanced at my shoulder and saw that the symbol for killing Ba Huang City’s NPCs was still there. I was still one of Ba Huang City’s citizens though. If I wanted to take part in this quest, Luo Lei and Luo Lin wouldn’t deny me because of our previous disagreement, would they?”

“Jian Feng Han and Uncle Yan Zhao are both here too...” Qing Qian said as she stuck her tongue out.

I nodded, “It’s fine, let’s head over!”

“Ok!”

All of us quickly got close. I saw in the distance that Jian Feng Han and Simple had both spotted us. Don’t Be Foolish raised his spear and said, “Damn, Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Cang Tong brought [Zhan Long] here as well. This quest is getting really interesting. Looks like they brought quite a few people too, at least a



thousand! Guild Master, do you want us to bring 3000 more from our main force?”

Jian Feng Han shook his head and said, “Let’s wait a little first. Sometimes, the number of people involved doesn’t determine anything....”

“Yes sir!”

.....

I brought the group of [Zhan Long] players forward and got closer to the escort. I could see Luo Lin was clothed in iron armor and wielded a longsword as he stood next to his battle horse. Frost, Su Ke, and Da Lin, the great generals of Dragon City were all there.

After a few minutes, Luo Lei carried Ba Huang City’s royal sword and said, “Lin Er, do you realize the importance of this quest?”

Luo Lin nodded, “I know father!”

Luo Lei grunted and said, “For thousands of years, the demons north of the Ice Ridge Mountains have been eying the mainland and have unsuccessfully invaded several times, killing numerous people. Remember, do not step into the Bloody Plains, for that is where many fearsome demons reside. Man’s power is not enough to fend against them. Your main quest is to cross over to the northern side of Dragon City and enter the Ancient Battlefield. That is also where the legendary Graveyard of Heroes resides...”

Angela was shocked, “Graveyard of Heroes?”

“Yes, that place is mentioned in a very old legend...”

Luo Lei had a sad look in his eyes as he said, “The land of has always been a country where man, elf, and barbarian have lived peacefully together. However, a terrifying demon race has tried to invade us from the north time and time again. Thus, ten thousand years ago, the ancient empire began a war between the demons and the gods. Nearly 5 million soldiers were recruited into the allied armies that were lead by 17 heroes. They passed through the Ice Ridge Mountains and fought against the demons. That war lasted for 11 years, and 4.7 million of the brave souls lost their lives. Even those 17 heroes who lead the armies had died. Not a single man came back, but that sacrifice brought about

ten thousand years of peace to our lands.”

Luo Lin gritted his teeth, “Father, I thought that this quest was to search the Demonic Spirit Domain. Looks like, you’re looking for something specific?”

Luo Lei nodded, “That’s right. The battlefield on which the seventeen heroes died has since been covered in dust and sediment and become the Graveyard of the Heroes it is today. Once those heroes died, their ashes were scattered in the winds, but their weapons have not disappeared. Legend has it... that the strongest of the seventeen heroes—— rumored to be an expert in the holy domain, “Aries” had also died on that battlefield and his sword—— a godly weapon named “Despair” was also lost in that area. Legend has it that this sword “Despair” contains limitless power and that whoever wields this sword will have it at their command. “阿尔琉斯” relied solely on this Despair and killed seven of the holy domain level demons. In the end, he had died from using too much strength. After the final battle, the Graveyard of the Heroes has since been sealed by a powerful force. If nothing out of the ordinary has happened, then that godly weapon “Despair” should still be in those ruins. Lin Er, this time as you scout the Graveyard of the Heroes, you cannot provoke the demons of the north. Your primary responsibility is to return that sword to Ba Huang City!”

Luo Lin took a deep breath, his eyes filled with determination, “Father, do not worry. I will bring Despair back!”

“Good!”

On the side, Frost’ elegant eyebrows were slightly knit and she said, “Your majesty, if I may ask, why do you want to obtain this Despair?”

Luo Lei was startled by the question and he smiled. “The Dark Moon Elves of the northeast’s savage tribe have continuously tried to invade Ba Huang City’s borders. Eventually, they’ll start a war. After the battle with Jiu Lu City, our Ba Huang City has lost many commanders, and our strength has waned. If we do not have a godly weapon like Despair to strengthen ourselves, I’m afraid that Ba Huang City will not be able to last in another battle. Furthermore, the distant Swampy Abyss and Waterfront Cities have been watching the Tian Ling Empire for a long time. As the guardian city of the empire, Ba Huang City must

strengthen itself!”

Frost squinted her eyes and said, “Understood. I will do everything in my power to help Lord Luo Lin find Despair!”

“That is good. With Frost’s full support, this quest will definitely be successful!”

Luo Lei was startled and then said, “Lin Er, is 3000 people really enough?”

Luo Lin nodded, “Yes it is. We’re going up against demons who are not your average monster. Even if we bring more people it would still be of no use. Three thousand is enough!”

“Alright, then let us set off. I wish you a good journey!”

“Thank you father!”

.....

Luo Lin was fully clothed in gold armor. In his hand was a gleaming long sword. The sight of him standing as the wind swept up his cloak was truly magnificent. All around his body, I could see Dou Qi energy rising up around him. He was an expert that was practically at the doors of the Holy Realm. His strength might even be above Frost’s. Luo Lin was also the pride of Ba Huang City.

Seeing that his prince was so well achieved, he felt pride rising up within his chest. He smiled and then raised his sword and gave out a command, “Set up a recruitment tent here to bring in brave soldiers to help Luo Lin open up the path ahead!”

Forgotten Sea nodded, “Yes my lord!”

Forgotten Sea waved his hand in the air and ten officers lined up, each holding a battle flag. Beside each one of them was two secretary type officials who held a brush in their hands. In the next second, the system bell rang throughout the sky——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Players please note, Ba Huang City’s Duke is currently in the Moonlight Forest at position (31823,12727) and has set up a recruitment

tent that is seeking for adventurers to follow the Luo Lin army and enter the Demon Territory and obtain an SSS Tier Main Quest [Searching for Despair] at the Graveyard of Heroes. In addition, the player that ends up helping Luo Lin find Despair can obtain points and get the greatest rewards. Plus, all players that accept this quest must be ranked above 50,000 in Ba Huang City or else they do not qualify. Only 10,000 players may accept this quest!

.....

I was startled by the description, “Oh, an SSS Tier Main Quest, and it’s already begun recruitment...”

Wan Er lightly knocked me with her shoulder and said, “Pig, what are you hesitating for? Hurry up and accept the quest! After all, there’s a great reward at the end!”

“Yup!” I looked over at everyone and then flipped through Ba Huang City’s ranking list. The 50,000th player was Lv 89, and so I said, “All brothers that are Lv 88 and above can go and try to accept the quest. The more of us the better. That way we don’t have to worry about others PKing us!”

Li Mu nodded, “Go, go get the quest!”

All of the [Zhan Long] players rushed forward. Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior, Misty Clouds, Han Bei Song and the other Guild Master level players all took their players forward to register. This quest had a player limit, and we needed to act fast!

A few players from [Vanguard] raised their battleaxe and lunged forward together. They did all they could to try and force Dancing Forest, Dong Cheng Yue and Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands out of the tent. Looks like they weren’t too happy with the fact that [Zhan Long] had come to take the quest. Plus Jian Feng Han had probably chose his best players to come and take this quest. There were only 10,000 spots. Whichever guild’s people took the most spots, had the greatest chance at becoming the final victor. Everyone knew that an SSS Tier Main Quest gave great rewards, after all, most of the top ranked players had relied on those quests to race to the top.

“Brother Xiao Yao...”

Qing Qian had been forced back by the shields of two Knights. [Vanguard]'s heavy armor tier players laughed, "My apologies, Beauty Qing Qian, there's just too many people. It wasn't on purpose..."

I could not stand aside any longer. I pulled out my Zhen Yue Sword and my Dragon Reservoir Sword and charged straight forward. "Peng!" My shoulder rammed away the two Knights shields and I swept out my Dragon Reservoir Sword. "Keng keng keng!" I only pushed people away and didn't harm anyone. Li Mu, Old K, and Dong Cheng Lei all followed in my lead and knocked away the [Vanguard] players that were trying to block us out. In terms of numbers, [Zhan Long] was in no way unequal with [Vanguard], and very soon we managed to clear a path to the two NPC officials and let our people first take the quest.

Jian Feng Han gritted his teeth but didn't say anything. After all, everyone was here for the quest and he couldn't be too disrespectful before the quest even began.

.....

Standing before the NPC officer, I accepted the quest. He looked up at me and revealed a condescending smile, "Youngster, do you know just how scary the north is?"

I glared at him, "Cut the nonsense and give me the quest!

The NPC was startled and the quest notification appeared before me, Requirements: Must be ranked in the top fifty-thousand, Cost: 1000G, 1 Charm point!

"F\*ck....." Li Mu gripped the hilt of his Tian Chen Sword and cried out, "My charm in the first place was really low, and now... and now it wants to my charm to get this quest, Motherf\*cker!"

I said, "Hurry up and take the quest and don't complain much. The quests from now on will probably have a basic reward of one charm point or above."

"Ok!"

Everyone fought for one of the ten thousand positions. Very soon, the system quest revealed that 9000 people had already registered for the quest. Within another few seconds, the ten thousand places were filled!

.....

# Chapter 532 Climbing the Mountain

Jian Feng Han held his sword across his chest and stood in the shade of a tree, watching us while Simple twirled her staff as a smile played across her face. Fallen Wolf took his battle axe and had brought Goodbye Tears, Don't Be Foolish and North Pole with him and was taking note of their numbers. From [Vanguard]'s arrogant look, they probably had quite a few members register for the quest.

On the other side, Misty Clouds and Han Bei Song were also counting their numbers. Yan Zhao Warrior stood before [Prague]'s members and shouted, "'s background story has made it very clear, the monsters that players have seen in the south are all just appetizers. The real enemy is in the North. It is just as the NPC has said, the monsters of the Hybrid Demon Territory and the Graveyard of the Heroes are our true enemies and so you must tread carefully. Do not think that just because you're over Lv 90 and have some Saint Tier equipment or Valkyrie equipment that you're super OP. Be careful, don't get instantly killed by the monsters of the north, or you'll really lose face!"

On the other side, [Flying Dragon], [Hero's Mound: Division One], [Thousand Mound], [Wrath of the Heroes] and [Valley of the Gods] all had a group of players come forth. This quest had pretty much allured all of the top tier guilds and top tier players. Even though only 10,000 people were participating, this quest' difficulty level was most definitely not any lower than any of the other big scale SSS Tier Main Quest's.

.....

With my Dragon Reservoir Sword in hand, I turned around to look at Qing Qian and smiled. "Melon, help me count out how many of our people registered for the quest?"

Qing Qian fluttered her eyes and smiled. "No need to count. Sister Cang Tong has already given me the results. Brother Xiao Yao, don't forget right now I'm not the only Vice Guild Master. Sister Cang Tong can easily do these tasks..."

"And the results?"

“Wu, in total, [Zhan Long] has 1012 people registered. Of those, 470 are either a Swordsman, Berserker, Knight, or Monk, while Healers, Mages, Archers, and Musketeers make up 452 people. The final 90 players are Assassins.

“Alright!”

I made a fist and said, “Have everyone check out the status of their equipment, potions and cards and make sure everyone is replenished. If not, then immediately head back to the city and do so and then come back here to meet up with us. Have everyone split up into ten, and then one hundred man teams. After we cross the mountains there will definitely be a great battle. We must make sure that at that point we don’t mess up our formation. If it is as Yan Zhao Warrior says, then the monsters north of the Ice Ridge Mountains are not what we normally see. We cannot underestimate them.”

Wang Jian nodded and took everyone back to restock their supplies. Wan Er, Qing Qian, Dong Cheng and I remained in our original places. The system also revealed a time for us to set off. There was still 57 minutes left. That is enough time. By then, all of the players will follow Frost, Luo Lin and the other Dragon City generals and advance forward. Otherwise, I don’t know how we would pass through the Ice Ridge mountains.

Less than an hour later, Wang Jian and the rest all came back. We then split everyone into ten hundred man teams. I lead one team, with Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Matcha, Qing Qian, Darling Duck, Dancing Forest and the other [Zhan Long] elite players all in it. It was clear that this was [Zhan Long]’s top team, and will eventually become the quest’s main force.

In the distance, [Prague] and [Vanguard] also had around 1000 people registered in the quest. Looks like they were just about ready to set off. [Enemies at the Gate] has slightly less people, around 600. While [Blood Contract], [Flying Dragon], [Wrath of the Heroes] had even less people. The quest page showed that a total of 71 guilds were participating. A lot of guilds probably only had a handful of players that were participating. After all, Lv 88 was a very high requirement.

.....

After a few minutes, Luo Lin raised his sword and lead his steed forward, “Ba



Huang City, advance! Our target is the Graveyard of Heroes north of the Ice Ridge Mountains. Everyone, on my command! Only advance forward and do not back down. For the sake of humanity's survival, for the sake of Ba Huang City's honor!"

Majestically, we set off. The NPC army had a total of 3000 people, while the player camp had 10,000. It even looked as though the player camp was even bigger and stronger. Of course, everyone knew that Luo Lin and Frost those two incredible BOSS-es could pretty much wipe all of us out, not to mention those elite Dragon City soldiers.

Dust blew in the wind before us. Luo Lin and Frost urged their horses forward. I immediately raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and softly said, "Let's head out!"

All one thousand men of [Zhan Long] slowly pushed forward. After all, we weren't in any rush. It was fine if we just followed the NPCs.

After twenty minutes, flurries of snow covered the sky and the temperature slowly dropped. The Ice Ridge Mountain was known as the Great Wall of the North. It was several hundred meters high and helped the people of the mainland hold off the threat from the North. However, that didn't mean that they would have peace forever. The strength of the Northern Demons was growing stronger and stronger by the day and they were also beginning to get restless. That was most likely the main reason why Luo Lei sent out soldiers to the Graveyard of Heroes to find the godly weapon.

"So cold..."

Qing Qian shivered as she wrapped her cloak more tightly around herself. Even Wan Er's lips were pale. The two Assassin girls' equipment was made for the sake of simplicity and elegance. But at a time like this, they were the coldest. Dong Chen walked over and with a flick of her wrist, a ball of fire rose in her palm. She then smiled. "Wan Er, come here and warm yourself up..."

Wan Er smiled. "A Mage really is the bane of nature, so helpful..."

Old K raised his battle axe. His Barbarian Berserker's physique really was astonishing. A cape rested upon the shoulder pads of his armor and only a bit of his arm could be seen. A simple leather wrapped around his armor, revealing

the strong muscles underneath. He laughed, “Females really can’t endure that much. How come I don’t feel the least bit cold? Ha ha ha....”

Dong Cheng glared at him and then curled her finger. A sliver of frost magic flew towards Old K’s nose, practically freezing it with ice. He retreated several steps, “Motherf\*cker that’s cold!”

Dancing Forest and Qing Qian both giggled.

Li Mu looked up into the distance and said, “Why are all of those NPC’s not setting off from Dragon City?”

Instantly, I replied, “North of Dragon City is all thousands of meter high cliffs. There isn’t a single slope. If we try to go down from there, most of us would probably fall to our deaths.”

Wang Jian nodded, “Let’s see what Luo Lin decides!”

In the distance, Luo Lin lead his horse forward towards the bottom of the Ice Ridge Mountains and looked up at the ice walls, “Looks like we can only try to climb up the Ice Ridge Mountains from here!”

Frost looked up and said, “My lord, if we go up from here, then there will be no way for us to bring our battle horses.”

Luo Lin said, “I know, however, this is the only portion of mountain towards the north that has a little bit of a slope. Besides, we’re still pretty far from the Blood Plains, we won’t attract any monsters here.”

“Ok then!” Frost replied with a smile.

At that moment, Luo Lin and a Ba Huang General NPC walked towards us. Above the NPC was a line of characters, “Military Supervisor Wang Xuan”. He was probably one of Ba Huang City’s royal family. Wang Xuan raised his long spear and looked up at the sky and remarked, “Luo Lin, this slope is incredibly high. Naturally, with your strength, you wouldn’t fear these mountains. But what about the 2000 brave soldiers that we brought from Ba Huang City? They may not be able to survive such a climb. If they fall to their deaths then whose responsibility is it?”

Luo Lin was startled, “General Wang Xuan, when we set out, my father said

that I will take over everything. There is no need for you to ask such questions, I understand the dangers.”

“You understand the dangers?” Wang Xuan let out a cold laugh, “You managed to get someone else to kill the army commander Purple Star, Raikes, Lin Huang, and Luo Ge, gaining all the military power of the four great armies. Don’t think I don’t know what you’re trying to do. It is true that you are the duke’s only son and this country will eventually pass down into your hands. But do not forget, for every day that Duke Luo Lei does not die, Ba Huang City remains his. Only when he give sit to you, is it yours. Otherwise you won’t be able to take it anyway!”

Luo Lei gritted his teeth, “Wang Xuan, just what are you saying?”

Wang Xuan softly said, “You know better than anyone what I mean!”

On the side, Su Ke raised his battle axe and shouted, “Wang Xuan, watch your mouth. Don’t forget that you are standing before both Ba Huang City’s prince and the Lord of Dragon City. Lord Luo Lin has spent his entire life guarding the Northern Gate. He doesn’t have the same crafty calculating moves that you Ba Huang City people have. Don’t think that just because your officer position is something incredible that you are all safe. If you provoke me, then I’ll kill you with just a swing of my axe!”

Wang Xuan smiled coldly, “Why don’t you come try and kill me? I want to see whether or not these 2000 brave soldiers of Ba Huang City are willing to listen to the command of your Lord Luo Lin!”

Su Ke didn’t say anything back. Luo Lin immediately shouted, “Su Ke, stop talking!”

As he said that, Luo Lin walked over, his hand resting on his hilt. An invisible pressure seemed to fall upon the area and all of the rocks, and icicles split with a “peng peng peng” from the immense pressure.

“Ah....”

Wang Xuan’s face turned green. He finally couldn’t take the pressure anymore and his knees weakened. “Keng!” he fell to the ground, and an extremely ugly expression twisted his face, “Luo Lin, you... just what do you want?”

Luo Lin looked at this supervisor and softly said, “Now that you are kneeling before me, just what right do you have to point fingers at me? Everyone, dismount your horses. We are going to climb our way North of the Ice Ridge mountains. Tie up a rope. Ten people at a time will be tied together and they’ll help each other climb up and make sure nobody falls. Use axes and picks to climb your way up. We’ll meet up at the top of the Ice Ridge Mountains!”

Wang Xuan’s eyes were filled with hatred, but he couldn’t do anything to fight back. All he could do was slowly stand up. When the pressure from Luo Lin’s dimension control disappeared, he finally let out a sigh of relief. A soldier behind him softly whispered, “My Lord, Luo Lin’s training is very close to the Holy Realm, please tread cautiously. Do not make enemies too easily, or else you’ll be at a disadvantage, you should understand...”

Wang Xuan nodded and said, “I know, he’s truly a frightening bastard...”

.....

Under Luo Lin’s command, Ba Huang City and Dragon City’s soldiers all dismounted and took out their hooks and ropes. In addition, they attached a sharp pick to their shoes to help them make the climb.

At that moment, all of the players were stupefied. Not Ordinary made a fist and said, “Sh\*t, what about us? This ice wall is several hundred meters high, are we supposed to fly???”

Bai Mo Yan wryly smiled. “That depends on each individual’s skill...”

You Yi laughed, “Sister Mo Mo, how about I carry you up?”

Bai Mo Yan replied curtly, “Do you want to have a taste of walking a thousand steps with a hole in your stomach?”

“Damn...”

.....

I pulled out my Zhen Yue Sword and said, “There’s no other way but to climb...”

Wan Er said “Should we go find a rope?”

“Yup!” I pointed into the distance, “There’s some vines in the bristle forest.

Everyone cut a piece down and tie it around your waist. Then make ten man lines and tie each other together. This way, if 1-3 slip or fall, then everyone else can pull them back up.”

“Ok!”

Everyone began to move. Not long after, our players lined up, all preparations ready. I walked at the front of [Zhan Long]s team. With a small thrust, I stabbed my blade into the ice wall, creating a notch. I then climbed up like that, creating notches as I went forward, giving myself and my team a place to stand.

Wan Er’s vine was tied to mine and she pulled out her daggers and followed behind me. Dong Cheng could only grip onto the notches and the vines and climb forward.

# Chapter 533 Level 1 Hybrid Demon

Snowflakes scratched our faces in the fierce wind. My War Swept Cloak fluttered in the wind. I turned around and looked down. Everything on the ground looked like ants now. Wan Er carefully used her daggers to hold herself in place. Looking at her from above, I noted that the beautiful little miss' robed figure was extremely elegant. Her little face had been frozen pale, but she still gritted her teeth and pushed forward.

"Wan Er, are you ok?" I asked.

Wan Er looked up at me and revealed a sweet smile, "Mhm, what's up?"

"Nothing, let's continue!"

"Alright...."

Below us, Dong Cheng cried out, "I'm not ok! This mountain is too high! Just looking down makes me shiver. Brother Xiao Yao, come and hold me!"

I was speechless and retorted, "Just climb..."

Suddenly, we heard a shout in the distance. One of [Flying Dragon]'s little team had lost their footing. The rest of the people didn't have a good hold and so they all fell along with them. The sight of their fall seemed as though they were a Tang Hu Lu\*. Falling from this height, they're definitely going to become a meat pancake when they hit the ground.

Dong Cheng paled when she saw them drop, "F\*ck, this plot is just too inhumane!"

Li Mu smiled. "This mountain is at least 400 meters high. Just wait until someone falls from 400 meters up. When they hit the ground, their body parts will probably create a 100 meter splatter. It'll probably be about the size of three bedrooms and a living room..."

Dancing Forest's arm trembled a little, "Can you not scare us.... Just focus on climbing. We've only got 400 meters...."

I laughed, "Exactly. It's nothing. After all, what battle has [Zhan Long] not

survived through?”

My arrogant claim seemed to give everyone encouragement. Moon Feather, Tang Xin and Star Blade’ fears seemed to decrease quite a bit. [Zhan Long]’ 1000 players covered the ice wall. One step at a time we climbed our way up.

.....

After 20 whole minutes, finally, I was the first person to reach the top of the Ice Ridge Mountain. I flipped over onto the flat plane and turned around to grab the vine, pulling Wan Er, Qing Qian, and Dong Cheng up. On the other side, Li Mu’s team, Wang Jian’s Team, and Old K’s team all reached the top. I could see in the distance that Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao Warrior also brought their people onto the peak and were slowly congregating. At this time, nobody had the energy to PK anyone. It was too cold, and this place was too dangerous for infighting.

Luo Lin, Frost, Su Ke, and Wang Xuan had long reached the top before us. Wang Xuan’s face however was green and he coldly said, “100+ soldiers have already fallen to their deaths at the bottom of the Ice Ridge Mountains. Luo Lin, is this how you lead an army into battle?”

Luo Lin looked forward and softly said, “If we were to enter the Ice Ridge Mountains from any other place, I promise you this, there will have been many more deaths. Did you think that I came to this place just as a drill? Then you’re wrong. Wang Xuan, from this point onwards, someone is going to die at every moment, and I am not saying this to scare you.”

Wang Xuan’s expression turned extremely ugly but he didn’t say anything.

Close to 20 minutes later, the players and the NPCs gathered together at the top of Ice Ridge Mountains. Of the 3000 NPCs, 200 of the had died. The player camp was a little better off, and less than 100 of them had fallen to their deaths. Of [Zhan Long]’s 1012 people, we only lost 7 during the climb, a manageable number.

.....

Standing at the top of the peak, Luo Lin turned around to face the summit at the north. The wind blew against him as he reached out and pointed toward the

north, “Walking around the Bloody Plains it’ll take us around 2 hours to reach the Graveyard of the Heroes, but everyone must remain alert. At least ten thousand people have lost their footing here and there’s no telling what kind of monsters live in these areas.”

Wang Xuan raised his spear and said, “I’ve once looked at the maps of this place. Just north of the Dragon City is the Blood Plains. If we go around it, then we’ll be wasting more time. Luo Lin, are you sure you aren’t just trying to waste a battle opportunity?”

Luo Lin walked over and suddenly grabbed Wang Xuan’s jacket, his eyes filled with killing intent, “No one is willing to step foot into the Blood Plains. Hate me all you want, but if you try and use the lives of our Ba Huang City soldiers and put them to waste to satisfy your desire to go into the Bloody Plains, then I promise you that I will personally kill you. From now on, you shut your mouth. I will decide everything here!”

Wang Xuan’s face was scared green. He didn’t dare breathe another word.

Luo Lin turned around and pointed his sword north and roared, “Advance. Our goal is the Graveyard of the Heroes. Stay alert for any monsters along the way!”

Frost’s bright eyes looked towards the dark world in the north and said, “I feel like we’ve already been noticed....”

Luo Lin nodded, “Yes, however, no matter what, this trip cannot be avoided.”

“Yes sir!”

A group of NPC’s all walked along the mountain path. The rise was at a 75 degree angle. We had to hold onto the rocks along the hillside to prevent ourselves from sliding downwards. This was an extremely difficult process. On the good side, the players here were all well known in Ba Huang City, each one nimble and skilled. I was at the very front and used my Zhen Yue Sword to stabilize my position on the hill. I took Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Qing Qian, and Matcha with me as we lead the right flank. Old K, Li Mu and the others were on the other side, creating a full line for [Zhan Long]’s thousand man team to follow.



.....

Our 13,000 man army slowly pushed forward. We were getting closer and closer to the ground. Right as we were only around 100 meters away, Frost shouted a warning, “Everyone be more careful!”

As a result however, a bearded Ba Huang City cavalryman pulled out his long sword and laughed, “The girly generals of Dragon City really are cowardly. After all, you are a girl. We have so many people here, and we’re all the highest level people in the city. Besides, this place is open, and everything within a hundred meter radius is visible. What’s out there to kill me?”

Right as he finished saying that, a white light suddenly flashed from the sky!

“Peng!”

A loud bang sounded and the arrogant cavalryman had a black spear tip poking out of his head. Motherf\*cker, he was nailed to death onto the cliff. He didn’t even know what it was that killed him. An enormous damage number popped up ——

“261727 ! ”

This was an instant kill. Furthermore, it was a kill from something in the north.

“Careful!”

I shouted a warning and immediately activated my [Wall of Dou Qi].

“Shua shua shua....”

Flashes of a cold light passed through the sky. “Keng keng keng!” spears pierced into the cliff and all of [Hero’s Mound: Division One] was hit. The hunters in the dark had targeted Wang Ze Cheng and the others and used their enormous power to throw the spear. At that moment, we could all hear the “Pu pu pu” of blood spurting out as damage numbers flew up one after another——

“23616 ! ”

“27172 ! ”

“21229 ! ”

.....

Within the blink of an eye, 11 [Hero's Mound: Division One] players had been stabbed, their bodies falling on the hill. In the darkness, monsters wielding throwing spears appeared. It was a group of similar monsters, each with four terrifying teeth necklaces hanging from their necks. In addition, there was a blood red horn sticking out of their foreheads.

Luo Lin looked into the distance and roared, "F\*ck, it's the legendary Demon Hunters. These things really do still exist!"

Wang Ze Cheng raised his heavy shield and gritted his teeth, "[Hero's Mound], assume defensive stances!"

"Sou!"

Another throw spear flew at us. "Keng!" rammed into Wang Ze Cheng's heavy shield, creating sparks. That one attack had dealt 14728 damage. Lucky for Wang Ze Cheng he had a thick skin, or else he would've been instantly killed.

Frost swung out her Severing Beauty sword and shouted, "Dragon Knight Team, follow me!"

As she finished talking, she dashed towards the bottom of the hill, bringing Su Ke and the others behind her. In the darkness, we could hear screams coming from that direction. It was probably the Dragon City warriors being stabbed to death by the throwing spears. The attack that monsters dealt to NPCs and the attack they dealt to players were different. Practically every attack these Ba Huang City NPC took from the Demon Hunters all surpassed 100,000 damage. Of course, the NPC attacks to them were the same. It was pretty much a life for a life.

"Shua shua shua....."

Throwing spears finally descended upon the [Zhan Long] camp and screams began to rise. A dozen of [Zhan Long]'s members were instantly killed. Furthermore, the damage from the throwing spears seemed to overlap. Li Mu's face turned green, "F\*ck, just what kind of monster is this? To actually instantly kill Lv 90+ top tier players. This... this is just too much!"

"Keng!"

I pulled my Zhen Yue Sword from the cliff and shouted, "We cannot defend.

Everyone, charge! Let's go cut down those monsters attacking us. This is just as the quest had said, we'll be continuously dancing with death during this scouting trip!"

Wan Er nodded in agreement. All of [Zhan Long]'s players charged towards the bottom of the hill. At the same time, [Vanguard], [Prague] and [Enemies at the Gate] seemed to also understand that they could not remain defensive and all charged as well.

.....

In the darkness, our vision slowly began to become more clear. One after another, the Demon Hunters started to charge at us, their canines covered with blood, as they had just sucked it. At the same time, their stats began to appear before us——

[Demon Hunters] (Type: Level 1 Hybrid Demons)

Level: 100

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: ???

Introduction: Demon Hunters, a type of blood sucking demons. They have lived on the Bloody Plains for a long time. Once they smell the scent of live humans, they leave their original villages and came to kill every person who dares enter the Bloody Plains

.....

"Sou....."

One spear sliced through the night sky and was flying straight for my chest. With no time to dodge, all I could do was raise my Zhen Yue Sword to block it. I estimated the angle of its descent and blocked with all my strength!

"Keng!"

My hand went numb from the impact. I pushed back the heavy spear,

successfully blocking the attack, dealing only 60% of the damage to me——

“9763 ! ”

Matcha cried out as a spear cut right through her shield. The players that dashed forward with Wang Jian were being killed one after another by the spears. Nobody would have thought that the Hybrid Demons of the north would be so savage. Their concealed attack power was completely above that of a BOSS monster on the Ba Huang City plains!

“Charge!”

With a swing of my sword, I used [Blade Rush] and cut into a Demon Hunter close to me. The forefront of the [Zhan Long] camp had around 100+ Demon Hunters. If we kill them all then we'll be in the clear!

My Dragon Reservoir Sword flashed and I activated a Lv 10 [Combo] + Lv 10 [Wind Blade]. These were the basic two combo attacks for close combat. For 6 seconds I could use these attacks one after another twice. When I hit their cooldown, I used [Strength of a Thousand Men]+[Great Realm of Desolation]. In the blink of an eye, a chain of damage numbers flew up, creating 50,000 damage in total. This flurry of attacks forced the Demon Hunters to retreat backwards as they bled. They howled as their healths dropped to 25%.

Li Mu roared, “We have a chance! They can be killed! There's only around 200,000 health!”

One Second Hero, Tang Xin, Matcha, Breaking Dawn, and Ling Xiao Xie, [Zhan Long]'s top Knight players all raised their shields and created a defense formation to protect against the spears. In the back, the Healers continuously healed everyone, making sure that they wouldn't die. The Demon Hunter's [Spear Throw]s pretty much came every 10 seconds. The rest were normal attacks, dealing much less damage.

On the other side, Frost's [Razor Rotation] flung through the crowd of Demon Hunters. Blood spurted and she instantly killed a whole flock of them.

Yan Zhao Warrior looked at the dead [Prague] players behind him and achingly said, “The first time we face Hybrid Demons and we lost this many people already, what is with this...”

## Chapter 534 Earth Demons

Nearly twenty minutes later, the fighting finally ended and 100+ Demon Hunters lay dead in front of [Zhan Long]'s formation. At the same time, however, [Zhan Long] also lost around 100 people. It was practically a one to one exchange, and these players were all some of the cream of the crop players in [Zhan Long], top players in the server. We had never seen such carnage before.

“Sha sha.....”

Qing Qian bent over to pick up a shield and put it into her bag and shouted, “Collect all of the equipment dropped by your team members and list them out in the system. We’ll return them when we get back! Look to see if the Demon Hunters dropped anything as well!”

Wolf shook his head, “Nope. These Demon Hunters’ drop rate is practically zero. But their experience is high!”

Li Mu looked at the bodies scattered and the ground and said bitterly, “I feel terrible getting experience like that. In the blink of an eye we lost so many brothers. I feel like this quest really is a scam.....”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and said, “Regretting now is already too late. Let’s continue forward. Hurry up and prepare, we’re about to set off with the NPCs!”

“Yes!”

Wan Er’s clear eyes looked into the distance darkness and said, “I feel as though some more Demon Hunters are coming at us. We must leave soon or else our losses would be too great and we’ll all die here.”

Qing Qian gritted her teeth, “Hybrid Demons, just what are they?”

I replied, “The forums say that north of the Ice Ridge Mountains, there’s an enormous crowd of demons that live together, making it the Hybrid Demon Territory. For an unknown reason, the stats of these demons are much stronger than that of normal monsters and so they’ve been classified as a different race,

the Hybrid Demons. This is territory that us players have yet to step foot in. All in all, it's best to be careful...."

"Yes!"

.....

I saw in the distance that a few of the small guild players had already fished out their City Return Scrolls. One of them was an Archer whose face was covered in tears, "Guild Master, why don't we return? This place isn't where I was supposed to go. Old Four had a 5200 base defense and he was still instantly killed. Coming here wasn't to find some godly weapon, it was to die!"

"Shua shua shua...."

Flashes of light flew up into the sky and several hundred players returned to the city. These people were relatively sensible. In reality, in a situation where there wasn't an advantage in numbers, it really was like preparing to die. Furthermore, this one attack from the Demon Hunters had already killed more than 2000 players out of the ten thousand that came. Many people have already lost hope.

Luo Lin pulled his sword out from the chest of one Demon Hunter and softly said, "Everyone left, attention. Do not step into the Bloody Plains. We'll advance along the Southern border of the Bloody Plains. We must enter the Graveyard of the Heroes immediately!"

Frost raised her Severing Beauty, her eyes without a sliver of emotion, "We've been spotted. Let us hurry!"

Luo Lin roared, "Everyone hurry. Su Ke, take the patrol team to the back and take our rear. Kill all of those blood sucking monsters and have no mercy!"

Su Ke raised his battle axe, "Yes my lord!"

Luo Lin and Frost took their 1000+ Dragon City soldiers and quickly marched forward. I had watched the entire scene unfold and quickly raised my sword, "Let's follow behind them. Do not fall behind or else we'll definitely be at a disadvantage!"

The members of [Zhan Long] weren't idiots and quickly followed behind the

strong BOSS level NPCs. Behind us, we could hear a chilling screech and the Demon Hunters appeared out of the darkness, their iron spears in hand. “Ge Ge” they screeched as they threw their iron spears. “Pu pu pu” the attacks killed a couple more of the Dragon City Knights.

Su Ke raised his battle axe and shouted, “Kill, [Battle Axe Throw]!”

The soldiers threw out their battle axes, killing the Demon Hunters. Both sides threw their attacks and nobody had the advantage. Li Mu and I couldn’t take our eyes away. The scene was truly terrifying. These Hybrid Demons strength was completely on par with the Dragon City Knights. We all knew that these Dragon City NPC warriors’ strength was well above that of the normal Ba Huang City soldiers!

.....

We all sprinted forward with all our strength. In the back, Su Ke lead his Dragon City soldiers and took the rear. They had lost over half of their men. Frost’ beautiful lips tightly pursed and she turned around and asked, “Su Ke, where are the rest of them?”

Su Ke softly said, “My Lady Frost, they’ve all gone on to the next world!”

Frost’ lips curled, her heart was sore, “Those.... those were all loyal soldiers to Dragon City, the most loyal and brave men and they.... they were actually so easily killed by the Hybrid Demons....”

Su Ke nodded, “I originally thought that the legend about the Hybrid Demons was an old wives tale. Now I know just how terrifying they are. These Hybrid Demon Hunters are only Lv 1 Hybrid Demons. Just too terrifying. I finally understand the reason for Dragon City’s existence on the Ice Ridge Mountains. If Dragon City wasn’t there to hold fort, then the Hybrid Demons would easily bathe Ba Huang City, Jiu Li City, Fan Shu City, and even the entire continent in blood....”

Luo Lin’ body lightly trembled and he took a deep breath, his face conflicted with emotion, “Dragon City has been my life’s work. I will only let Dragon City become stronger, strong enough to fight against the Hybrid Demon monsters and hold up the honor of Ba Huang City. We will achieve that, right”

Frost nodded, her eyes filled with respect, “My Lord, I have never been moved before. As long as Dragon City remains, then I will never let the Hybrid Demons harm a single soul on the continent!”

“Yes!”

.....

Not long after, the great army stepped onto an area covered in black dirt. Luo Lin took a deep breath, “Finally, we have left the territory of the Blood Plains. Those damn Demon Hunters have finally stopped following us right?”

Frost’ squinted into the distance, “No, there will be other dangers, even if we don’t see them.”

Da Lin raised his iron chain and heavy shield and roared, “Continue pushing forward into the Graveyard of the Heroes. Do not relax. We must fight our way out of here all in one breathe. Otherwise, if we alert the leaders of the Hybrid Demons, then we probably won’t make it out of here. Let’s make this quick, that is our only way to survive!”

All of the Dragon City soldiers nodded and they raised their long swords, while us players followed behind them. Acting as cannon fodder was something none of us wanted, after all we were all afraid of death. Plus, I couldn’t command the brothers of my guild to go die. That was something that only people like Liu Ying or Soaring Dragon could do.

“Careful!”

Suddenly, Da Lin shouted. The entire first row of soldiers howled in pain. All we saw was a pair of black beady eyes and arms that burst forth from the ground, grabbing onto the legs of the soldiers. Then, a dark shadow rose from the ground, swallowing these soldiers. Within moments, an entire live person would melt into a pool of blood!

“Si si...”

Bodies covered in green smoke, these black things all crawled out and stuck their long tongues out. They looked at us with vicious expressions while their tongues were covered in blood and they smiled. “What a wonderful taste. It’s been ten thousand years since fresh meat has come to become our food. I’ve



nearly starved to death!”

Frost was startled and said, “It’s a Lv 1 Hybrid Earth Demon. Gods, these Earth Demons have actually appeared outside of the Bloody Plains. Just what happened in the north? Has the God Demon Pact been broken?!”

Luo Lin roared and suddenly threw a fist into the ground, activating [Binding Chains] and trapping those Earth Demons. Da Lin charged forward and threw a punch. The demon screamed and became a pile of mush. Da Lin smiled codly, “Looks like, the legendary Earth Demons really aren’t much...”

Frost beautiful face was pale and she said “You’re wrong. The terrifying part about these Earth Demons isn’t that they could travel underground and they can melt human flesh. It’s that.... that these Earth Demons are a type of tribe that never act alone. Once they move, then there must be at least hundreds of thousands with them. Everyone prepare. Hurry, we’ve already been spotted by the Earth Demons!”

All of the NPCs pulled out their swords. I looked towards everyone of [Zhan Long] and said, “If you get trapped by the Earth Demons, do not worry. Healers will heal you as the Mages deal attacks. We’ll kill them one by one!”

Right at that moment, a screeching sound suddenly traveled through the earth. Right afterwards, Earth Demons broke through the ground. Not only the NPCs, even the players were taking attacks. It was just as Frost had said, the appearance of one Earth Demon meant that there were thousands of others. At least 100+ Earth Demons appeared in the [Zhan Long] camp!

“Shua!”

I suddenly felt something wrap around my Cloud Stepping Boots and a pair of demon hands trapped my body. A shadowy figure appeared behind those hands and I saw a cruel smile below me. This situation was just like that when the NPC warriors were getting killed.

“7162 ! ”

“7162 ! ”

.....

With my magic resistance and defense, I was practically getting 7000 damage each second. One could just imagine what would happen with normal people. Darling Duck raised her staff but I shouted, “Don’t bother with me. Save the others! Quickly concentrate your firepower on each of the demons and kill them at once!”

I swung out my arm and the second the Earth Demon’s poison reached my hip, I suddenly dealt a [Combo]. “Peng!” it really blew it away. The Earth Demon burst from the ground and I used a [Blade Rush] to follow right behind it. I dealt a series of attacks. As long as I force the Earth Demon’s poison gas away from me, then it was naturally easier to kill.

Wan Er helped me and dealt a [Death God Blade]+[Chain Attack], killing the Earth Demon. Without another thought, she immediately went to help the other [Zhan Long] players. At that moment, screams rose throughout the battlefield. Every second, large amounts of players and NPCs were being killed by the Earth Demons. Adventuring out here really was like being a step away from death.

One after another, the Earth Demons were like death gods, descending upon us. Practically every ten minutes, they took away 200 lives from the entire army. [Zhan Long] came into the Bloody Plains with 1000+ people, and less than two hours later, we only had 700 left. The NPC army also took a great hit. Frost and Su Ke’s faces were covered in blood from all the killing.

The shadow on the earth slowly disappeared and bodies littered the ground.

.....

“They’ve finally left...” Frost said through her grit teeth.

# Chapter 535 The True Red Blade

Looking at all of the bodies lying in pools of blood, Dancing Forest couldn't help but hold a hand over her mouth and cry, "These Bloody Plains really aren't where man should venture into..."

Old K raised his battle axe and said, "If any monster launches an attack Archers, and Musketeers do not go near or you'll be killed on the spot!"

Not far in the distance, I saw Yan Zhao walking over. He brought with him a group of [Prague] players and said, "This Lv 1 Hybrid Demon and its attack power already surpasses that of all of the players here. Usually, if we wanted to kill monsters here without any damage, we'd at least have to have warriors whose health is over 40,000, plus Archers and Mages with health over 20,000. But at this point in the game, there aren't many people who have reached that point."

Qing Qian nodded, "And so Brother Xiao Yao's 25,000 health is already pretty hard to sustain here."

Li Mu smiled. "Guild Master Yan Zhao brought quite a few people, and lost quite a lot as well. What do you think about this map?"

Yan Zhao wryly smiled. "What else could I think? The points here are probably all hidden in the number of Hybrid Demons you kill and the more NPCs you help. There's no other way to look at it. There isn't a single idea as to what the final reward is. All we can do is wait. But there is one thing for certain. The person who stands until the end will definitely get an incredible reward."

Jian Feng Han smiled at him and said, "What's wrong? Is Guild Master Yan Zhao still thinking about that godly weapon Despair?"

Yan Zhao Warrior smiled bitterly, "I definitely don't have that kind of crazy dream. Despair is a quest item. For what reason would it go to any of us players? Even the Duke of Ba Huang City dreams of having this weapon in his hands. We better stop thinking about it for ourselves. How are you supposed to compete over a weapon with an NPC Duke? Isn't that just asking to die..."

Simple raised her staff, “Can we not talk about this? Let’s hurry up and go. We’re only around 20 minutes away from the Graveyard of the Heroes. We don’t even know what’s in store for us there yet!”

“Ok!”

I walked over and nodded with a smile, “The difference in strength between Hybrid Demons and players on this expedition quest for the Graveyard of the Heroes is just too great, so.... How about we make an agreement. That during the course of this quest, we won’t PK each other at all. We must work together and kill the monsters and BOSSes. That is the only way we have any chance of succeeding in this quest!”

Simple nodded, “I agree with what Guild Master Xiao Yao says. We must work together to complete this quest!”

Jian Feng Han said, “Then let us retreat and advance together!”

Li Mu shouted, “Ok!”

“Let us set out!” I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and looked forward, “Luo Lin and Frost have already walked too far. We need to follow close behind. If we are too far away from the NPCs, then a wave of Hybrid Demon monsters is enough to destroy all thousand of us!”

“Yes!”

.....

Our group of players all set out. Nearly 5000 of us marched across the map and we carefully crossed through the brush.

As I walked, I opened up the big map. There were at least a dozen other small maps that were marked on it. One of them was the Graveyard of the Heroes. It was around 20 minutes away from us. However, the map was completely covered in red. One could just imagine the levels of the monsters there.

Not long after we set out, our surroundings quickly changed from a dense forest into mellow plains. All around us we saw broken weapons lying in the dirt. There were even bones from ancient warriors and horses, piled up in mountains. The ancient battle chariots were in ruins and the grey grass began

to grow out of the cracks, giving off a staunch odor.

“Careful!”

Frost immediately pulled out her sword and said, “I feel an extremely strong presence here. The Graveyard of Heroes has been sealed for many years, but we are definitely not the only ones alive here!”

In the desolate battlefield, an ominous breeze fluttered a tattered battle flag. I could make out the shadow of a tiger symbol on it. Who knows which ancient empire flew that flag. There was no way to determine it. Under that tattered flag, a general sat cross legged on the ground. His body had already decayed completely, leaving only a white skeleton. He was still clothed in his golden armor, and he held a blood red sword in his hand as he quietly sat there.

At that moment, Wang Xuan, the military supervisor looked startled as he stared at the skeleton. He exclaimed, “Dear lord, is this the ancient hero Nan Shen. That... that blade in his hand, is that the True Red Blade? God, that is a godly weapon that was made by the God Smith Lu Gong. So the legendary True Red Blade was here. I never would have known....”

As he was talking, Wang Xuan’s eyes were filled with greed. He couldn’t resist and walked forward to reach for it.

“Stop!”

Luo Lin roared, “Wang Xuan, you cannot disturb those who have died. They were all once heroes who had made a great sacrifice for man. Do not touch the True Red Blade. Our sole goal is Despair!”

However, Wang Xuan did not listen to Luo Lin’s command and reached out to grab the True Red Blade. The second his hand touched the hilt, he suddenly shuddered, as though he was possessed. His eyes were filled with a strong greed and desire to kill and he laughed, “The True Red Blade, this really is the legendary True Red Blade!! If I, Wang Xuan, were to bring the True Red Blade back to Ba Huang City, then I’ll be able to use it to dominate the southern Barbarian Tribes and stretch the borders of the city all the way to the seas. That way, the world will know my name!”

Frost cast a glance at Wang Xuan and then looked towards Luo Lin,

“Something’s not right. There isn’t a single sliver of holy air in this vicinity. Rather, everything feels dead. Is it possible, that the seventeen heroes have already become demons?”

Luo Lin nodded, “That’s highly likely. Just look at the way Wang Xuan is acting..”

Wang Xuan suddenly turned around to face them, his eyes glowing with a red light. He roared at Luo Lin, “You ignorant bastard! Let me show you the strength of the True Red Blade, Die!”

He tried to swing his True Red Blade, and slash at Luo Lin. However, Wang Xuan found that he couldn’t budge the sword. When he turned around to look, he was scared pale. The skeleton holding onto the sword slowly began to shiver and wake up. A pair of blood red eyes looked right back at him and let out a cold laugh, “You dare try and steal the weapon of I, Nan Shen? You are asking to die!”

As he said that, Nan Shen lightly touched him, and Wang Xuan’s hand was crushed. He cried out in pain and jumped backwards. “Hua La La”, the ancient hero stood up and his level appeared. It was a Lv 110 Saint Tier BOSS!

“Give me your life!”

Nan Shen raised his True Red Blade and jumped up. The blade shone with a chilling light.

“Careful!”

Luo Lin shouted and jumped in front of Wang Xuan. He raised his blade and a protective shield appeared around them. “Keng!” Nan Shen was forced back. Looks like Luo Lin was very close to reaching the Holy Realm and his strength was well above Nan Shen. Gripping his sword, Luo Lin jumped up and dashed towards him. Then with three slashes, he cut off Nan Shen’s arm. Everyone was stupefied as they watched. No one thought that a prince like Luo Lin would have that much strength and power.

.....

“Ge ge ge...”

Nan Shen let out a vicious laugh and he raised his sword, “Everyone, awaken from the depths of hell. Brothers of the Southern Tribe, attack! The time to awaken has come!”

All of the dead skeletons within a several hundred meter radius all awoke. The ancient heroes had now become a great enemy.

Wang Xuan immediately retreated backwards, “This.... what’s going on?”

Luo Lin was furious, “This is the result of your desires! Everyone, prepare for battle!”

.....

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and protected Dancing Forest, Dong Cheng and the rest of the girls. Old K, Li Mu, Wang Jian and the others battle instincts were pretty good and all split up to protect the other leather and cloth type players. As long as we protect them, there may still be a chance. That is the only way we can maintain enough DPS and heals to survive.

Not far in the distance, seven soldiers all slowly stood up from a ruined battle cart. They turned their heads slowly to look towards us. These soldiers all had similar names, but were split up into blade wielders, axe wielders, and so on and so forth. However, their stats were the exact same – –

[Battlefield Ghosts] (Type: Level 1 Hybrid Demon)

Level: 105

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: ???

Introduction: Battlefield Ghosts, this group of brave warriors that died on the battlefield have over the past tens of thousands of years undergone the pain of torture under their new Hybrid Demon Masters. Finally, they became one of the Hybrid Demons themselves It is because they have such a high battle potential, that the Hybrid Demon Masters thought of the idea to use them to strengthen the power in the North.

.....

“Careful, Hybrid Demons!” I shouted, “Focus on defending and healing!”

One Blade soldier suddenly roared and charged over. He raised his broadsword and slashed it downward. It was a [Skyshaker Slash]! I could only raise both of my swords in front of me to parry the blow. I felt my arms go numb and pain shot through me——

“7298 ! ”

What a terrifying attack power!

Beside me, two [Zhan Long] Swordsman were instantly killed. They could not block the Hybrid Demon’s attack at all! Matcha and One Second Hero quickly stepped forward into their places, and barely held them off. In the back, Dancing Forest, Dong Cheng, Thousand Suns and the rest all cast spells, locking everything on one demon and killed them off one by one. This time the monsters dropped something. “Hua la la!” some equipment and gold dropped. Not bad, dropping gold coins now. We weren’t getting silver coins anymore. The monsters of the Graveyard of Heroes really were generous!

In the distance, Yan Zhao gripped his sword and stood before the [Prague] team and shouted, “Kill more monsters! All of the points are hidden. This is Hybrid Demon Territory, killing one should mean lots of points! Do not retreat. Hold our formation!”

All of the great guilds began to meld into their formations and begin the counterattack. [Vanguard], [Enemies at the Gate], and [Blood Contract] all took up one piece of land. As for [Thousand Mound], [Wrath of the Heroes] and [Flying Dragon], they had very few people left and could only attempt to protect a small piece of land. The Hybrid Demons were killable, and that was enough. Of course, in actuality we were both killing each other, but the Hybrid Demons were much faster at killing us.

.....

Luo Lin, Frost, Su Ke, and Da Lin surrounded Nan Shen. Nan Shen’s health was extremely high. Even he couldn’t take this kind of crazy attacks. Not long after he fell to the ground with a screech. He had been killed by the NPCs, so nothing



was dropped. But, our quest increased by 15% completion. Looks like we don't have to kill too many BOSSES to get to the sword Despair.

# Chapter 536 King of the Barbarians

After 30 minutes of violent fighting, a huge crowd of ghosts lie dead in front of our formation. Qing Qian and Wolf took a small team over to sweep the battlefield. Exclaims started to rise around us——

“Woah, an Emperor Tier!”

“F\*ck... I’m not seeing things right? A Lv 1 Hybrid Demon actually dropped a Lv 94 Emperor Tier bow? My sister Ru Xuang finally has a weapon. This is great....”

“Eh, there’s even Spirit Stones? These monsters really are generous!”

“Hei hei, no need to put the items in the guild storage, just keep it with yourselves for now....”

.....

I sheathed my Dragon Reservoir Sword and walked across the battlefield and surveyed [Zhan Long]’s situation. After this battle, we only had 500+ people left. This meant that everyone still alive was the top of the top. Most of them were Knights, Swordsmen, and Berserkers who had the defense and [Dou Qi Armor] to block the Lv 1 Hybrid Demon attacks. With the heals from the Healers, they could pretty much continue battle like that.

The entire battlefield was covered in bodies. Of the ten thousand players that came, only 3800 were left and of the 3000 NPC that came, only 1500 were still standing. These high level NPC’s survivability was a little stronger than ours, something that was understandable. For example, Frost and Luo Lei were extreme examples who completely overpowered the Lv 1 Hybrid Demons.

“This time we must be careful....”

As I got ready to set out, I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Zhen Yue Sword. With a sword in each hand, I stood in front of the [Zhan Long] camp and said, “Ignore all of the weapons along the roadside. No matter how beautiful it is or how much you like it, you cannot touch it. Otherwise, you’ll bring trouble upon all of us. Us [Zhan Long] players must remain open minded,

don't be too greedy..."

Dong Cheng suddenly cried out and puffed her chest out, "Wa, look over there. What a beautiful staff. It even has a large ruby on top of it. Wa wa, I like it so much. Can someone bring it to me!"

One Second Hero raised his hand, "Beauty Cang Yue, do not worry. I will bring it to you!"

Li Mu wryly smiled. "If you dare try I'll strip you of team leader status...."

One Second Hero raised his shield and said, "Then I'll just stay right here...."

I glared at Dong Cheng, "Dong Cheng, don't be stubborn. Those are all items. Even if you take it, you won't be able to equip it. Just stay out of trouble. The owner of that staff is probably some ancient mage. If he were to revive, then that's enough to trouble us all. Our losses are great enough. If another wave of monsters come, and they're magic types, then we'll be screwed...."

Dong Cheng pouted her lip, "Alright already, I'll just not take it. Then, Brother Xiao Yao, after this quest you have to take me to Pizza Hut!"

"That's all...." I pursed my lips and didn't say anything more.

.....

But, even if [Zhan Long]'s players didn't touch anything, that didn't mean that nobody else would. After a few minutes, one of the [Valley of the Gods] team leaders walked into the wild grass and accidentally stepped on a pile of bones. Suddenly "PA!" he grabbed a flaming battle axe and laughed, "F\*ck, its a Divine Tier weapon. Motherf\*cker its a Divine Tier Battle Axe! It's attack power is over 5000! I'm rich!"

I suddenly jumped. Jian Feng Han turned around and roared, "That [Valley of the Gods]... you... are you a F\*cking dumbass! Did you think that it was that easy to get a Divine Tier weapon? Hurry up and put it down! You're going to kill us all!"

Yan Zhao immediately raised his long sword and said, "Prepare your defenses! Another idiot was too greedy. That motherf\*cker, I'm going to murder him... Is it not possible at all to minimize our losses?!"

However the [Valley of the Gods] team leader kept holding onto the battle axe. In the end, the hand holding onto the other end of the battle axe ended up pulling the rest of its body up. Then with a roar, a three meter barbarian hero suddenly jumped up, a cruel expression on its decayed face. A red crown rested on his head. With a ghostly voice he roared, “Damned bastard, you dare touch my royal Holy Fire? Boy, pay with your life!”

“Peng!”

With a swing of his battle axe, he threw an attack with the same effect as [Flame Axe]. “Ka Cha!” The team leader was cut in half and a large damage number popped up. It was so large that nobody could breathe after seeing it — —

“71884 ! ”

It was a critical attack! But even if it was a critical attack, the attack power behind it was just too strong.

.....

I suddenly glanced over and listed the BOSSes stats in the guild chat and shouted, “Hurry up and build a formation. This definitely isn’t as simple as a regular BOSS!”

.....

[Barbarian King – Lu Lin] (Divine Tier BOSS)

Level: 110

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: ???

Introduction: Barbarian King, he was once the Duke of the Southern Lands. Lu Lin had a natural gift of strength. When he was only 17 years old, he became a leader of the Barbarian Tribes and lead 4 battles. Like that, he brought peace to the Southern Lands, and helped the Barbarians take over a big half of the

continent. After the battle of the Demons and Gods, Lu Lin lead a army of elite barbarians but still died in battle. In the end, his spirit was tortured and broken and he became one of the Hybrid Demons.

.....

“I can’t see the attack power, but it definitely isn’t weak!”

Li Mu raised his Tian Chen Sword and said, “Let’s not aggro the BOSS just yet. The barbarian soldiers around him are about to revive. Let’s deal with those first. Since the [Valley of the Gods] people woke the BOSS, then let’s let them deal with him for now!”

I nodded in agreement, “Dong Cheng and Dancing Forest, prepare to battle with the BOSS at any time. Use all of your control type skills. Keep him busy for as long as possible. He might come after the players on his own!”

It was just as we had predicted. Lu Lin swung his battle axe and after killing a few of the main forces in [Valley of the Gods] he raised his battle axe and shouted, “Sleeping warriors of the Barbarian Tribes. Open your eyes and awaken! The time for us to battle once again has arrived!”

“Hua La La” the piles of bones all began to shiver and rise up. They were all enormous creatures with incredible strength. All of them swung their battle axes and heavy maces and charged towards [Zhan Long], [Vanguard], and [Enemies at the Gate]. We were too spread out and so we took the first attack.

“Careful, shrink the defense line!” Old K shouted.

Wan Er’s beautiful eyes were shocked, “Pig, don’t underestimate these monsters. They... they’re Lv 2 Hybrid Demons!!!”

“What!?”

I shuddered. Lv 2 Hybrid Demons. That’s a bit terrifying... Similarly, we couldn’t see the Lv 2 Hybrid Demon Stats. All we could do was learn as we went.

“Charge!”

Taking Matcha, Tang Xin, and One Second Hero, the three Knights, I charged forward. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw a [Seven Star Fragment

Slash] into the crowd of monsters. The Barbarian Warriors shivered and then lunged back at me. Against a monster with this much strength, we couldn't drag out the fight. We had to kill them as quickly as possible, or else their attack would f\*ck us over.

“Kong!”

A barbarian warrior raised his battle axe and charged towards us. The blade of the axe had flames licking its edge. He leapt up and threw an axe skill, yelling, “Die, pretty girl with 34Cs!”

“Peng!”

Even with the buffs of [Holy Phantom Shield] and [Dou Qi Armor], that one attack had forced Matcha backwards——

“9772 ! ”

The [Dou Qi Armor] ignored 50% of the damage, meaning that if Matcha didn't use it, she would've been instantly killed. These Lv 2 Hybrid Demons were much scarier than the Lv 1 Demons!

“Wu wu....”

After being pushed back, Matcha's eyes suddenly lit up and she yelled, “Don't use up your [Dou Qi Armor] too easily. Only use it when the monsters are about to use a skill. Otherwise, you'll be instantly killed! The attack power of these Lv 2 Demons are just too strong, we cannot hold them off!”

On the perimeter of the formation, a group of [Zhan Long] heavy armor tier players stood their ground but screams of death still filled the air. In the blink of an eye, a dozen players were already killed. I raised my sword to make my way into the outermost border and set up an [Azure Dragon Crossbow]. A mass of monsters poured forward at us. The speed at which people were dying was too high!

In the distance, Yan Zhao's face turned green, “Who bets that we'll all die within 2 minutes?!”

Jian Feng Han pulled his blade from a barbarian warrior, bringing out a deathly stench. He furrowed his brow and said, “Who has the heart to make

bets now? Yan Zhao, stop joking around!”

Misty Clouds stood ground at the front side of the [Enemies at the Gate] formation, his face pale. He added, “I think that we really can’t hold them off. The attack of these monsters really is fierce!”

.....

I gritted my teeth and didn’t hesitate. I spun the ring on my right hand and activated the Ring of the King——[King Domain]! I targeted it on all players within 500 yards!

“Shua!”

A ray of light charged into the sky from my body and then exploded into millions of blades of light that fell onto the ground under all of the players. The skill raised their defense, magic defense, and attack by 100% and healed 10% of their health every 10 seconds. It was going to last for 120 seconds!

“Charge! Charge while we still have [King Domian]!” Li Mu laughed, “Guild Master, you are just too f\*cking great!”

[Zhan Long] all gave up their defenses and charged forward to attack. After a 100% increase in defense, there was basically no worry of getting instantly killed. Furthermore, in a situation where your attack increases exponentially, you can only push forward!

The brutal struggle continued. [Zhan Long] wasn’t the only guild to receive this buff. [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Enemies at the Gate] all received the [King’s Domain]. 120 seconds wasn’t very long, but it at least allowed us to hold off the initial lunge from the Hybrid Demons and mess up their rhythm and let us kill large amounts of them. This way we managed to stabilize our formations.

.....

After another ten minutes, most of the barbarian warriors in front of the [Zhan Long] formation had been killed.

I turned around to look and saw that the Barbarian King Lu Lin had also killed most of the dozen small guilds that were beside [Valley of the Gods]. To top it off, Luo Lin and Frost had been tangled up with another Hybrid Demon army

that was before us, and wasn't going to be able to provide support anytime soon. There was no choice but to kill the Barbarian King ourselves.

I glanced around. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Wan Er, and Dong Cheng all realized the same thing. In the distance, Simple walked towards us and said, "We won't fight amongst ourselves this time. Us guilds should band together to kill this Divine Tier BOSS. Guild Master Xiao Yao, is that alright?"

"Yes!"

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and said, "Let's move! Before the last BOSS is dead, let us not fight over equipment. We'll have a wise and just man decide on who gets the equipment!"

"Who?" Misty Clouds and Han Bei Song asked at the same time.

Simple, Wan Er, Li Mu and I all cast a glance on the Guild Master of [Prague], Yan Zhao Warrior.

.....

"Hei hei, wise and just..."

Yan Zhao coughed, "I'm only 49 years old... I'm still considered middle-aged..."



# Chapter 537 Demon Heart Necklace

“Kong kong...”

With a roar, the Barbarian King swept his battle axe out in front of [Zhan Long]’s formation, injuring and killing a handful of our players. An average Knight’s [Heavenly Shield Wall] couldn’t hold out against the attack and they were instantly killed. Looking at the entire guild, Matcha, One Second Hero, and Tang Xin were probably the only ones that could take an attack from this BOSS’s skill. This was a Graveyard of the Heroes Divine Tier BOSS, scary!

“Charge, don’t worry about anything else!”

I raised both of my swords and dashed forward and said, “Don’t waste time picking out a MT, everyone just deal firepower. Let’s crush this BOSS with numbers!”

In the distance Simple raised her staff, “Everyone, charge!”

.....

All of the big guilds of Ba Huang City all joined in the battle. The 3000+ elite players fought for their lives to whittle down this Divine Tier BOSS. We all knew that no matter what ended up happening, all we could do now was fight with all we had.

Behind me, I set up two [Azure Dragon Crossbows] and then sprinted towards the BOSS. I raised my hand and used a [Black Tortoise Realm] to decrease his speed while I activated [Binding Chains]!

“Peng!”

“MISS ! ”

Unsurprisingly, the success rate of this skill against this BOSS was just too low. The [Scatter Shot] from the other players also missed. Very few people were able to actually hit him.

I raised my hand and let my Zhen Yue Sword fly out. The blade spun, becoming a whirlwind. “Pa Pa Pa” it pierced through the Barbarian King 9 times.

I then raised my right arm and three Dragon Reservoir Swords seemed to appear in the air. [Great Realm of Desolation] dealt a harsh attack on the BOSS. I sprinted forward and gripped both swords in my hands. I passed by the Barbarian King's right side and suddenly activated another attack. Swinging both of my swords, I dealt 7 attacks, slashing the Barbarian King's legs until they were bloody.

"Argh!"

The Barbarian King seemed to have finally noticed my existence and swung his battle axe at me. I immediately raised my swords in front of me to parry!

"Keng!"

"14272 ! "

I felt as though I was hit by a cannon ball, and I was forced back a dozen meters and crashed into a boulder. The force hit me so hard that blood dripped from the corner of my mouth. Even so, I seemed to be the only person who took a direct hit from the BOSS and didn't get killed.

"Grr!"

The Barbarian King raised his battle axe and charged forward, as though he was going after me. When the Barbarian King's battle axe was only a meter away from my face, I stood my ground and dipped forward, dodging the BOSS's attack with a [Blade Rush]. I spun around and used a [Strength of a Thousand Men]!

"2117 ! "

"2112 ! "

"2636 ! "

"3127 ! "

"4423 ! "

After a chain of damage numbers appeared, I sprinted and retreated. While I was receiving heals from Darling Duck and the others, I activated [Blade Spin]. My Zhen Yue Sword continuously cut through the BOSS. However, my movement speed wasn't fast enough, and very soon he caught up with me. I

took another attack from the Barbarian King, throwing me into the air.

“Peng!”

The Barbarian King took an [Indigo Sea Arrow] in his back. Simple waved her staff and activated [Magma Abyss]+[Magma Lance]. Her eyes were filled with determination, “Attack with everything you got! Do not save anything. Xiao Yao Zi Zai has no way of holding off this BOSS. All Swordsmen, charge forward. Even if you die, it will all be worth it when this quest is over!”

At that moment, Dancing Forest and Dong Cheng’s attacks all followed along. Wan Er raised her dagger and suddenly dashed behind the BOSS. the [Blade of the Death God]’s three attacks cut down the BOSS’s health by ten thousand. At the same time, she activated [Ice Pick Whirlpool]. Both of her blades shone with a frosty light. Her skill had an extremely high success rate against BOSSes. Finally, the Barbarian King roared. This was the first seal that succeeded.

Arrows and spells flew at the BOSS from all sides. With enough firepower, even a Divine Tier BOSS was able to see the end of his life. Within 3 minutes, the BOSS only had 80% of his health left. At this rate, we would be able to kill him within a quarter of an hour. After all, all of the players here were Ba Huang’s best.

.....

After being forced back, I quickly retreated and replenished my health and [Wall of Dou Qi] first before charging forward. Li Mu and Wang Jian all took the chance to activate their [Dou Qi Armor] and use all of their great skills. These bastards were pretty smart and knew that as long as they could get a hold on the BOSS’s skill cooldown, they could time their own attack cool downs. The Barbarian King dealt a normal attack every 0.75 seconds. That meant that after every one of his attacks, if we immediately retreated, then we would be safe. However, players that weren’t as smart would have to hold off the BOSS. In the end they died very quickly and were pretty much sent back to Ba Huang City with a slice of the battle axe.

Time passed by slowly. The Barbarian King’s battle axe began to create a whirlwind of flames. Those were the signs of an area attack, but some of the players didn’t retreat in time and ended up dying in the barrage of attacks.

After 15 minutes of fierce fighting, the Barbarian King only had a sliver of health left. He had used all of his big moves. The final moment had finally arrived.

“Hold up!”

Simple calmly analyzed the battlefield and said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Yan Zhao Warrior, and Jian Feng Han, you will be the three main attackers. Everyone else drag the BOSS down. When the BOSS is about to die, Yan Zhao will be the only one who gets close. Everyone else move aside. We’ll decide who gets what based on what the system decides!”

Yan Zhao nodded, “OK!”

Jian Feng Han and I split up and rushed at the BOSS. After a round of skills, the BOSS’s health dropped to nearly 0%. We were both feeling conflicted, since we wanted the BOSS’s experience. After all, it was definitely going to be a huge windfall!

.....

“Sha sha sha...”

I halted my boots and retreated backwards. I suddenly raised my left arm and threw my Zhen Yue Sword out. “Shua!” [Blade Spin] activated and dealt three attacks to the BOSS!

“Ahhhh...”

The Barbarian King wailed, his battle axe falling to the ground, “How can I die like this? I haven’t achieved world domination yet!”

.....

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations Player Xiao Yao Zi Zai for successfully killing the map [Graveyard of the Heroes] first Divine Tier BOSS. You have obtained the rewards: Exp +220 M, Gold+50,000, Charm+15 and your reputation in the Tian Ling Empire has risen!

Damn, this reward really was incredible. That last attack I threw was still within reason.

.....

The second the Barbarian King died, I suddenly raised my sword and charged towards the right. Jian Feng Han dashed forward as well. At that moment, a bunch of [Valley of the Gods] and [Thousand Mound] players that wanted to snatch some rewards were forced to retreat.

Yan Zhao bent down and picked up three pieces of equipment. He smiled. “Hei hei, we’ve really hit gold!

There was a shining Mage staff, a necklace with a line of words, and a red mantle. All three pieces looked majestic. Yan Zhao raised his hand and waved it over the staff, letting it’s stats appear in the air for all 2000+ Ba Huang City players to see——

[Savage Spirit] (Saint Tier)

Magic Attack: 2430-2990

Magic: +102

Stamina: +100

Agility: +99

Additional: Increases the user’s magic attack power by 34%

Additional: Decreases the user’s skill cooldown by 15%

Additional: Increases the user’s magic attack penetration by 30%

Special: [Savage Domain] creates a domain that provides a shield to all friends within 10 yards, decreasing damage by 5000.

Level: 95

Required Charm: 100

.....

Everyone was shocked. Yan Zhao Warrior’s eyes had some surprise within them as well, “F\*ck, this is probably the best Mage staff in the game right? Besides that increase in attack, there’s even a survival skill. All of those Lv 100 top staffs are nothing compared to this....”

Jian Feng Han smiled. “Uncle Yan Zhao, why don’t you tell us how you’re going to deal with it?”

Yan Zhao squinted and said, “Well, we said this before. We’ll do it based on contribution to killing the BOSS. How about this, can the three players who suit this weapon with the highest damage and attack output ROLL step out and ROLL for this weapon?”

Jian Feng Han smoothed his clothes out, “The probability of ROLL is too high. I think that we should just choose the mage with the highest attack and damage output and give it to them. That is the best choice. Whoever worked the hardest, gets it!”

Yan Zhao Warrior smiled. “Then let me take a look....”

I raised my sword and walked over, “No need to look, the beauty Simple had the highest damage. She dealt 1.5% more than our beautiful Cang Yue and 14.3% more than our beautiful Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands. Jian Feng Han, your purpose is obvious. You just want to take that Barbarian Spirit Staff for your own Vice Guild Master, isn’t that right?”

Jian Feng Han rubbed his nose and smile, “You’re right, that’s exactly what I want!”

“On what grounds?”

Wan Er stood in front of her best friend Dong Cheng and stood up for her, “We should do it as Yan Zhao Warrior said. The top three DPS should come here and ROLL for it. Just because [Vanguard]’s Mages dealt a lot of damage, does that mean that [Zhan Long]’s Mages did not risk their lives to drag the BOSS’s aggro? Don’t forget, if Dong Cheng didn’t quickly drag the aggro, then Simple might’ve gotten killed by the BOSS already!”

Goodbye Tears smiled. “Sister Cang Tong, that isn’t right. Our Vice Guild Master’s [Dimensional Leap] cooldown was saved. The BOSS wouldn’t have been able to touch her, just what makes you think that he’d kill her?”

This time Dong Cheng finally couldn’t keep quiet and she walked forward and said, “Whatever, let’s just do it based on the first decision and just give it to Simple!”

Yan Zhao Warrior was stunned, “Beautiful Cang Yue, you’re sure?”

“Yup, I’m sure!” Dong Cheng nodded.

I was also caught unexpected. I stared at her, speechless. That stubborn and greedy little girl was actually willing to give the first Mage staff to Simple? This was just illogical!

Very soon, I knew what Dong Cheng was planning. When Yan Zhao Warrior took out that necklace, his hands trembled slightly. The necklace’s stats were in the air and it was definitely OP.

[Demon Heart Necklace] (Saint Tier)

Agility: +107

Stamina: +105

Strength: +102

Additional: Increases the user’s close combat attack power by 40%

Additional: Increases the user’s agility by 20%

Additional: Increases the user’s MaxHP by 3000

Special: [Demon Heart] decreases all magic damage by 35%

Level: 95

Required Charm: 170

.....

# Chapter 538 Hell's Battlesong – Lin Han

“Gu Dong!”

Fallen Wolf couldn't help but swallow and say, “That Demon Heart Necklace... aren't its stats a little too strong? Even though it's an Assassin type equipment, but.... But it would be good for any close combat Swordsman or Berserker....”

Fushen Thousand Blade raised his heavy shield and walked over, “Guild Master Yan Zhao, this necklace' stats are pretty good. It's good for any close combat player. From what I see, why don't we let the top three close combat players roll for this?”

“Shameless!”

Dong Cheng glared at him and said, “What are you guys just going to eat the 20% increase in agility? Do you guys know how much agility a Lv 100 Assassin has and what a 20% increase would do? This clearly is a necklace for Assassins. You actually want to hog that kind of equipment now? Uncle Yan Zhao, do what you think!”

Yan Zhao Warrior smiled. “I understand....”

As he said that, he raised the Demon Heart Necklace and clearly said, “The Demon Heart Necklace, with a 40% increase in close combat attack, a 20% increase in agility, and 3000 in health. This is clearly an Assassin type equipment. Of all of the Assassins that participated in the killing of the BOSS, the top three are Cang Tong, Yue Qing Qian, and Yue Wei Liang. And so, this Demon Heart Necklace will be decided upon the same way as before, to the beautiful Cang Tong. There's no need to debate over it, this is what I decided.”

In the next moment, the Demon Heart Necklace went to Wan Er. The beautiful little miss was so happy, she put it on as soon as it reached her hand. Smiling, she said to me, “I have over 18,000 health now!”

I was a little shocked. As long as the equipment was a high enough level, then a top tier Assassin's health wouldn't be much lower than a warriors. Even if they didn't have as much health, that just meant that they couldn't wear heavy



armor to increase their defense. However, Wan Er had a set of godly skills, multiplying her defense. In reality, she had the strength to break through the enemy front lines. Plus, her success rate already surpasses that of Swordsmen and Berserkers, so her survivability shouldn't be much lower than my own.

.....

Continuing on, Yan Zhao raised the last spoil of war. It was a majestic crimson mantle that had fire like words imprinted on it. It was clear that it had some kind of godly power. Yan Zhao's hand shook as he revealed the stats in the air. Everyone was dumbfounded. Just as we thought, coming to the Graveyard of Heroes definitely had its rewards——

[Ruler's Mantle] (Divine Tier)

Defense: 1350

Strength: +127

Stamina: +125

Agility: +122

Magic: +120

Additional: Increases the user's attack power by 27%

Additional: Increases the user's magic defense by 55%

Additional: Increases the user's health by 4000

Special: [Wind Stepper] Increases the user's movement speed by 35%

Special: [Cleansing Wind] Recovers the user's health every second by 2%

Required: 95

.....

Nobody had ever seen such a strong piece of equipment. Furthermore this mantle wasn't the same type of equipment as a cloak, meaning that a high defense mantle like this could be worn by Mages, Assassins, and warriors alike. This was the one piece of equipment that all light armor classes wanted. Looking at the Ruler's Mantle, everyone couldn't utter a word——

Don't be Foolish gripped his halberd, "Damn... These stats are just too strong. 35% increase in movement speed. Doesn't that mean that the person will be just as fast as the wind? They can come as they wish and be gone with the wind?"

North Pole replied, "Dumbass, all you want to do is escape. Why don't you look at that 4000 increase in HP and the 2% health recovery? Even if you didn't get any heals, you would get all of your health back in 50 seconds. That is where it's really OP..."

The Tyrant of Western Chu Liu Ying's eyes were filled with greed, "F\*ck.... Looks like none of us are going to be able to get that piece of equipment..."

On the side, Windy Walker gripped his dagger and said, "Boss, not necessarily!"

Little Piggy shouted, "Don't be an idiot. Look how many of [Prague]'s players are standing by Yan Zhao Warrior and keeping guard? He himself has over 20,000 health. Do you think he'd be killed by you? Just keep quiet and watch from the side. [Wrath of the Heroes] must get through as much of this quest as possible. We're not going to die in the hands of someone else for a piece of equipment!

Windy Walker shut his mouth and didn't say anything else. After listening to Little Piggy, he thought about it and realized that he had no better words to say in response.

Jian Feng Han on the other hand tried to steal the spotlight. He smiled. "This is a piece of equipment that any class can use. To be honest, the heavy armor types, the Musketeers, and the Archers can all use it. I think, how about every class choose the strongest DPSer and then ROLL for it?"

Wan Er flashed a cold smile, "Guild Master Jian Feng Han's calculations really are fast... Unfortunately, we should do it as we've been doing it. For all players that can use this cloak, whoever's DPC and dealt damage is the highest, then they'll get the cloak. Uncle Yan Zhao, what do you say? Wa, look at that greedy look on your face. You wouldn't be thinking of taking it for yourself, would you?"

Yan Zhao Warrior chuckled, "How could I?! Speaking of which, haven't I done

some business with the Tian Jin Corporation? How could I upset your dad over a Divine Tier equipment? He he, there are some people I cannot afford to offend.”

Wan Er tossed her dagger from hand to hand and sweetly smiled. “Oh, Uncle really is a good person...”

Yan Zhao Warrior raised the mantle and said, “Then we’ll just decide as before. The player that can wear this mantle must have dealt the most damage. The top three are Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Jian Feng Han and Cang Tong. Of them, Xiao Yao Zi Zai dealt 740,000 damage and took 17,000 damage. That’s 41% higher than the other two, and so this mantel will go to Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

As he said that, Yan Zhao tossed it over to me. I caught it with one hand and equipped it. My defense and health all increased a ton..

.....

My total health was near 30,000, and my defense was close to 8000. Like this, I wouldn’t have too much of a problem surviving. I then took off my War Swept Cloak and handed it to Yue Wei Liang. Even though it was only a Valkyrie Tier equipment, its stats were extremely good. Yue Wei Liang’s damage output was only a little less than her sister’s. We just needed to increase it a little more.

Once everything was settled, we looked into the distance and saw that Luo Lin and Frost had already lead complete victory over the magic army. Even though the ground was still littered with bodies, all in all they came out victorious. At least the players who survived had earned quite a bit of profit. Especially Wan Er, Simple and I who got equipment.

“Hu.... hu....”

Luo Lin raised his long sword and glanced at the corpses lying around. He grit his teeth and said, “The corpses of the heroes have all been trained into demons. They will no longer fight for freedom or honor. Everyone must be more careful. The most terrifying Hybrid Demons are pressing closer and closer to us!”

Frost leapt up and suspended herself a dozen meters in the air. Her snow white long hair flowed in the air and she looked down at everyone and softly

said, “King Luo Lin, you are right. A great mass of Hybrid Demons are coming straight towards us. There’s tens of thousands of them. We must defend ourselves at this place, or else we’ll quickly be scattered and eaten.”

Luo Lin also leapt up and looked into the distance. He slightly trembled and gritted his teeth, “Damn it... It’s a King Level demon, a King Level...”

Su Ke was stunned, “My lord, what’s different about a King Level?”

“That...”

Luo Lin’s voice was a little hoarse, “Those are all old demons that have lived for tens of thousands of years. Legend has it that there are a total of 27 King Level Hybrid Demons in the territory. However, after the God and Demon War, only 14 of them were left. The ancient texts have recorded their names, but we’ve always thought of it as a mere legend. Nobody dared to believe that they existed. Today, us Dragon City Warriors will prove with our lives that they are still alive...”

.....

“Attention!”

Luo Lin looked down at the ground and angrily shouted, “There’s a small hill behind us. We’ll go there to defend ourselves so that they will be charging at us from below. The true enemy has come. It is one of the legendary 14 King Level Hybrid Demons, the death reapers—— Hell’s War Song – Lin Han. Damn it all, this bastard is actually still living!”

“Hell’s War song.... Lin Han?” Su Ke was dumbfounded.

Frost softly said, “The empire’s history books have talked about him once. Lin Han was originally one of the guardians of the strongest empire on the continent. He had the power of the Holy Domain. His entire life he had fanatically pursued the art of death. However in the end, he fell into the darkness and became one of the kings of the Hybrid Demon Territory. After ten thousand years, he had already trained to a high level. God knows just how strong they are...”

As she said that, Frost had a little despair in her eyes, “Everyone, prepare to die. But, as long as we have a sliver of strength left, then we will bring the godly

weapon Despair back to Ba Huang City!”

“Yes my lord!”

The Dragon City Warriors all retreated to the little hill. Wan Er and I exchanged glances and quickly took our 400+ [Zhan Long] players along with them. The hill wasn't that small, enough to fit the thousands of us so that we could build a formation!

.....

My Cloud Stepping Boots moved across the broken stones on the hill. I turned around to look, and I felt as though a stone dropped into my heart. The land in front of us was covered in crowds of monsters all charging towards us. There was so many of them that I couldn't imagine us winning. Furthermore, all of them were probably Hybrid Level monsters. Their stats were far higher than that of Thunder Tier monsters. This time we were really putting our lives on the line!

Behind the monsters, there was an enormous black figure flying in the air. It's cloak fluttered in the wind, but I couldn't see its face clearly. However, its entire body was covered in an aura of death. It was as though it had crawled straight out of hell. In its hand was a crimson thorny blade. I could see it smile, “Bugs from the South, aren't you guys supposed to be hiding South of the Ice Ridge Mountains? What's wrong? Have you decided to come to the north and die?”

Luo Lin gritted his teeth and made a fist, “Lin Han, I knew it was you!”

In the distance, Lin Han laughed, “Unfortunately, I do not know who you are. But, that is not of importance. After all, you are a dead man in my eyes.... All warriors of hell, charge forward at these ignorant humans! Swallow their flesh and blood, and relish in this feast that has brought itself to us!”

# Chapter 539 Crushing an Ant

“Build the defense!”

Looking into the distance, a large number of Hybrid Demons were charging at us. Even I felt a little faint at heart. I pulled out my sword. [Zhan Long]’s formation was right beside the NPC formation, so we were definitely not getting the smaller number of enemies. What we needed to do was survive, all the way until we kill all of the Hybrid Demons. If the Hybrid Demons don’t die, then I’m afraid the ones who will are us.

.....

“Keng keng keng....”

Everyone on [Zhan Long]’s frontline pulled out their blades, but their hands trembled as they gripped it with their sweaty palms. Everyone experienced for themselves just how scary the strength of these Hybrid Demons were, and now there were countless Hybrid Demons Right in front of us. Nobody had the confidence to say that they could hold them off. All we could do was try our best.

I raised my arm and my [God Army Cards] began to spin in my hand. “Shua!” I set up an [Azure Dragon Crossbow] behind me. Then, I looked towards all of the players on the frontline and said, “Don’t try and counterattack. All you need to focus on is defense. Prepare all of your potions and heal skills. As long as we can hold them off, then we can kill them. One row of defense is not enough, make three!”

All of the Knights and Swordsmen reorganized themselves so that there were three rows of defense lines. I stood at the forefront of the first defense line and held my breath as I looked out into the crowd of monsters. It was a crowd of dwarves that were around 1.3m tall. All of them gave off a fiery red aura and they held a short sickle in hand. “Yi Yi Yi” they screeched and sprinted straight at us!

Very soon, I could read the stats of these little monsters. I couldn’t tell

anything!

[Little Sickle Demons] (Type: Level 2 Hybrid Demon)

Level: 110

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: ???

Introduction: Little Sickle Demons, this is a group of desolate souls that have been tortured in the depths of hell. They have an extremely strong penetration power and high movement speed, and has been known as the ants of Hell. They're are so many of them that the human empires are left in despair. These Little Sickle Demons are inherently greedy, and love gold. After killing off all the humans in an empire, they split their bodies, looking for gold and silver.

.....

Li Mu gritted his teeth, "I don't know if we can hold off this wave. There's so f\*cking many of them..."

Wang Jian nodded, "Let's just charge forward with all our strength!"

Wan Er raised her dagger and stood on the frontlines. She released her Purple Kiring Dragon and let it fly into the sky. She then looked at me and said, "Pig, what do we do if we can't hold them off?"

I calmly smiled. "Then we'll just die here together..."

Wan Er was speechless.

In the distance, the number one Berserker in [Flying Dragon], Fierce Tiger, raised his battle axe in front of his chest and entered into a defensive stance. Looking at the crowd of Little Sickle Demons in the distance, he couldn't help but laugh, "Hei, looks like their all dwarves. They don't even look that tall. How strong could they be?"

Drunken Spear held his heavy shield up and said, "Careful, don't be arrogant!"

Right at that moment, a group of the little sickle demons screeched and ran

towards us. Three of them raised their flaming sickles and “ka ka ka” hacked right into Fierce Tiger’s battle axe. In the end, three enormous damage numbers flew up——

“17262 ! ”

“15271 ! ”

“17267 ! ”

.....

Fierce Tiger cried out and was instantly killed. Even his battle axe was dropped. Lights flashed across the battlefield as numerous people died. Even those these little demons were small, their strength was terrifying.

“Use [Scatter Shot] on them and stun them all!”

I immediately sent out the command. Dancing Forest raised her bow and shot out [Scatter Shots] one after another. Each only had a stun rate of 30%, but that was already pretty good, at least it was enough to hold them off for now.

I raised both of my swords as three of the little demons charged towards me. All of their sickles had flames rising from the blades. It was the same skill, “Keng Keng Keng!” They hit against my Zhen Yue Sword, creating three sparks——

“7267 ! ”

“6269 ! ”

“7021 ! ”

Not bad, I could take this kind of damage. The [Zhan Long] Healer team had been protected fairly well, and so they could heal quite a bit. Instantly killing me was not going to be an easy task for them.

Beside me, Matcha, Tang Xin, Wan Er, and One Second Hero all charged forward. Their health continuously fell, but with the support of the players behind us, they managed to stay alive. Dong Cheng, Dancing Forest and Thousand Suns used all their power to deal attacks. [Magma Lance] and [Magma Abyss] exploded in the crowd of monsters. Theses strong Hybrid Demons only had a high attack, but their survivability wasn’t much higher than a Thunder Tier monster.



I raised both swords and threw a [Wind Blade]+[Fierce Ice Blade]. The little demon in front of me wailed as I cut into it. Cutting it and killing it at the same time, I managed to drain quite a bit of health back——

“7625 ! ”

“+1525 ! ”

“7422 ! ”

“+1484 ! ”

.....

The 20% Drain effect from the Ruler’s Ring was just too amazing. This greatly increased my ability to last in a drawn out battle. Even if I didn’t have the support of Healers, I could probably deal with 1-2 of them on my own.

However, while Wan Er and I could fend off our inch of territory, it was much harder for the rest of them. The close combat tier players near Qing Qian were continuously being killed by the Little Sickles Demons. It looked as though they were about to break through. [Wrath of the Heroes], [Hero’s Mound: Division One] and [Thousand Mound] had completely lost their defense. The frontline players had pretty much all been killed!

I quickly glanced towards One Second Hero, “Yong Jie, use your special skill!”

Without a second thought, One Second Hero smashed his shield into the ground and roared, activated [Fierce Sun Wall]. All of the people around us obtained the shield’s effect, helping people hold up a little. Everyone focused on firepower as the effect remained. Once it finished, Simple immediately waved her staff, activating [Savage Domain]. It was another shield type of skill, that allowed all of the people around us to receive 5000 less damage.

Once the two great skills were completed, I glanced around and felt a little annoyed. My [King Domain] from the Ruler’s Ring still had 9 hours of cool down left. Whatever, no need to waste time thinking about it. I quickly activated a [Halberd Flame] to burn all of the little sickle demons around me. I did everything in my power to kill more of these little monsters. My Flaming Tiger God also roared and charged into the crowd of monsters. After using a [Bursfire Raid] it got killed by a group of little demons. Looking at Wan Er’s Purple Kirin

Dragon flying in the sky, I realized it was much safer for it than my tiger.

.....

“Boss, they’re about to break through our defense!” Li Mu’s eyes widened and he said, “These little sickle demons are practically like servants of the Death God. Every attack is accurate and brutal. How are we supposed to deal with them?”

Not far from us, Yan Zhao also shouted, “How’s [Zhan Long] doing? [Prague] can’t hold up much longer!”

I gritted my teeth, “Even if we can’t hold up, we still have to fight. Either way, it’s better than waiting for our deaths!”

.....

“Yi?”

Right at that moment, Wan Er’s beautiful eyes glanced back at the introduction. She reached into her bag and grabbed a fistful of gold. “Shua!” She threw it towards the west. Right at that moment all of the little demons started screeching and lunging for the gold. Some of them even started fighting each other.

“Now, charge!”

Our beautiful little miss really was clever, to actually think of a method like this... I raised my sword and charged forward. This time everyone switched from defense to attack, killing quite a few. In the chaos, we killed a dozen of them and then returned to defense. The experience was extremely good. Plus, we decreased the damage to ourselves by quite a bit. All we had to do was spend a little bit of money....

Once Yan Zhao, Jian Feng Han and the others saw this happening, it was as though they grabbed onto a strand of hope. Isn’t it just spending a little money? As long as they could complete this quest, what wouldn’t they sacrifice?!

And so, gold flew into the air, decreasing the charging power dealt on the players. Even though players were still dying, we weren’t at the point of losing control of the situation any longer.

.....

On the other side of the formation, Frost and Luo Lin gripped their swords, letting out a strong aura. They didn't seem to have any intent on fighting for the players, and continued to fight their own fights.

Nearly 2 hours of fierce battle later, We had killed off all of the little sickle demons. But the 170,000+ Gold I had in my bag was almost all gone. Wan Er curiously glanced at me, "I lost 110,000 in total. Guild Master, now its up to you, how do you plan on compensating me?"

I felt a stab in my heart and nearly cried, "Let's talk about it later. Why don't we finish this quest first...."

.....

Looking around me, I saw corpses everywhere. Without thinking, we lost a bunch of more players. Looking around [Zhan Long] at most had 150 people left. The player camp in total probably didn't have more than 1000. Even [Vanguard] and [Prague] only had around a hundred players left. Our loss were great. Furthermore, there was still a few little sickle demons lunging at our formation. However, it looked as though the NPC camp managed to keep most of their army intact. There were at least 1000+ of them still fighting.

"Careful!"

Frost retreated several steps and shouted, "Lin Han is here!"

In the air, wind began to gather and an enormous figure flew towards us. It was Hell's Song Lin Han. This was a BOSS so high level that even I couldn't see its tier and stats. It was definitely at least above Divine Tier. He held a sickle in hand and a cruel smile on his face. Lin Han roared, "Why don't you try a taste of the godly weapon Misfortune!"

The name of that sickle was Misfortune. It was probably another blade of legends!

"Hum!"

Misfortune was wrapped in a deadly aura. The sky behind it seemed to have been dyed in red. Just how many deaths was this blade going to bring?!

“Careful, take your defenses!” Li Mu shouted.

I immediately spun around and said, “F\*ck defense, everyone run down the hill. We’re not going to be able hold this place!”

Wolf, Qing Qian and Wan Er all rushed down the hill. I grabbed Darling Duck in one hand and sprinted forward. Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior, and Misty Cloud saw us running and followed behind, leaving the hundreds of Ba Huang City warriors there to take a last stand.

“Hong!”

A flame engulfed the sky and a enormous sickle blade descended upon the earth!

“Hong!”

A shockwave swept through the map and the little hill was immediately decimated in seconds. Hundreds of Ba Huang City warriors were turned to dust.

In the sky, Luo Lin gripped his sword so hard it began to shake. He looked at Lin Han and screamed, “You wretched demon, you demon, I’m going to kill you, I... I will kill you!”

He swung his blade and dashed forward, charging straight at Lin Han!

“Keng!”

An earsplitting shriek sounded out and the sky seemed to have split in half. This was no longer a battle for us players to take part in. After all, look at their strength.

.....

The sickle blade parried Luo Lin’s attack. Lin Han’s cruel smile was replaced by a contemptible smile, “What’s your name youngster? I’m starting to take an interest in you.”

Luo Lin threw a kick and said, “Ba Huang City General——Luo Lin!”

“Good, good, good....”

Lin Han easily dodged Luo Lin’s attack. After repeating “Good” three times, he raised his sickle and smiled. “Now that I know your name, you can go die now. I

don't care how strong your empire of the South is, or how much money you have. But in my eyes, killing you is as easy as crushing an ant!"

# Chapter 540 The Rebirth of Despair

“You!”

Luo Lin furiously roared and funneled all of his energy into the long sword. Gritting his teeth, he shouted, “Lin Han, you evil demon! I will kill you!”

Lin Han whimsically raised his hand and a flame started to burn in the palm of his hand. He smiled. “The one who will die is you!”

“Hong!”

The flame suddenly burst forward and turned into a powerful attack!

“My lord!”

Frost raised her sword and flew into the sky, shouting. “Be careful, there’s a lot power behind this attack!”

.....

Luo Lin didn’t have the time to say anything and he switched to a defensive stance. He gripped his sword and swung it before his chest. Then with one hand, he grabbed his sheath and held it crossed against his sword. Golden energy glowed around him, forming a defensive layer. Dou Qi covered all of his body.

“Die!” Lin Han swung his arm, as if he were swatting a fly.

“Peng!”

An explosive sound filled the air and Luo Lin disappeared. In the next second, we heard a large bang in a neighboring mountain that was around a thousand meters away. The mountain had been split in half from Luo Lin’s body and an avalanche of stones rolled forward. Nobody knew what Luo Lin’s situation was!

Lin Han didn’t say much else, and immediately flew over towards the mountain. He had only one goal and that was to make sure that Luo Lin was dead.

“My lord!”

Frost screamed and charged forward!

“Shua!” a gust of wind blew and Lin Han suddenly appeared before Frost. He raised his sickle and coldly smiled. “You’re also one of the warriors of humans. I can feel the strong Dou Qi energy in your body. Go die as well!”

“Keng!”

The sickle fell forward and Frost cried out. Severing Beauty flew out of her hand and her body dove towards the ground, creating a deep crater upon impact. The shockwave from her fall could be felt throughout the plains.

.....

I felt my heart squeeze. Throwing everything away, I sprinted forward to the deep crater. I could see Frost’s legs were covered in blood. Her arms looked as though they had been completely crushed. Blood dripped and her beautiful face was stained red. Without any energy, she helplessly looked at me and whispered, “We.... just what kind of an enemy are we up against?”

Without another word, I grabbed Severing Beauty and helped her out of the pit.

On the ground, Su Ke and Da Lin sent forth a group of Dragon City Soldiers straight to the mountains. Da Lin swung his chains and shouted, “You bastard, you dare harm the Lord Luo Lin!”

“Shua!”

Chains flew into the sky. He did not expect Lin Han to look down without a word. The demon opened his hand and energy began to gather around it. The air seemed to vibrate and “Bang!” he smashed the chains. Then with a wave of his hand, “Peng!” energy surged forward. Da Lin, and even a dozen other Dragon City Warriors all took the hits. The earth sunk several meters and the warriors were all turned into mush. Da Lin’s own training and strength was much higher than theirs, and he grunted from the ruins. Looks like he hadn’t died yet.

.....

Lin Han laughed as he looked towards the split mountains and then shouted,

“Luo Lin, do you see this? Your soldiers are currently being massacred because of you? Do you see this? For something as useless as you, how can trash call you a hero? Stop dreaming! You’re but an ant. You can’t stop anything. You are trash. Do you hear that? Ha ha ha, today, I’m feeling pretty good. Why don’t I have some fun with you!”

“Sha sha....”

From the pile of rubble, Luo Lin slowly stood up. The sword in his hand had already been broken in half. Wearily, he stood there. His face was covered in blood but he smiled. “Lin Han, you bastard. I... I will not let you kill any more innocent souls. I.... I will put my life on it, you will never...”

Lin Han let out a cold laugh and suddenly disappeared. Suddenly, this sickle’s blade plunged into Luo Lin’s abdomen!

“Peng!”

This attack threw him into the air again. Luo Lin grunted as he crashed into the mountain face. This great wall seemed to be unable to bear this kind of ramming, and began to fall to pieces.

Frost stumbled up and leaned against her Severing Beauty. Slivers of blood bulged in her eyes, but she held a calm face and shouted, “Charge... Brave Warriors of Dragon City, attack!”

Su Ke raised his battle axe and roared. He took several hundred of the Dragon City warriors and charged into the distance. All of the knights threw their long halberds. Unfortunately, they were swatted away by Lin Han with a “Keng Keng Keng” and flew back at the soldiers, breaking through their Dou Qi armor. Blood dripped from Frost’s lips but she continued forward. Energy began to surge into her arm and she suddenly threw her Severing Beauty forward, activating [Razor Rotation]!

“Peng!”

Lin Han shuddered. The Severing Beauty blade left a bloody slice on his neck. Frost still managed to break his defense.

“Die!”



He spun around and screamed. Raising his sickle, he threw another blade energy attack!

How could the fallen Frost block such an attack? I lunged forward and activated [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Dragon Transformation]. My defense multiplied and I raised both of my swords before me as I stood before Frost!

“Peng!”

The blade charged with energy descended and I felt as though my body had been split in two. My entire body went numb and I slid back a dozen meters, ramming into the mountain behind me. An enormous damage number flew up above my head——

“27346 ! ”

.....

Yan Zhao Warrior’s eyes nearly rolled out of his head, “Li Xiao Yao, don’t be rash! this BOSS isn’t something you can deal with!”

I grunted as I crawled up from the rubble. As I looked over, Lin Han was cutting down the Dragon City Warriors that Su Ke led. With that I breathed a sigh of relief. As long as Frost didn’t die. Nobody else was important. Frost turned around to look at me, her beautiful eyes filled with a sorrowful light, “Idiot..”

.....

In the battlefield before us, Su Ke raised his arm and a bloody dart began to swirl around his hand. He shouted, “Dragon City Warriors, Attention! Form the Dragon Formation and trap this son of a bitch!”

Hundreds of Dragon City Warriors spread out and formed nine formations. Every one of the warriors had a large dart with a long chain connected to it. It almost looked like my Dragon’s Hook. Hundreds of darts flew into the sky, creating a net.

“Huh?”

Lin Han coldly smiled and then swung his sickle. He shouted, “Get the f\*ck out of the way you worms and your little worm tactics!”

“Keng keng keng....”

The iron chains were cut apart, but more darts flew out and rammed into Lin Han’s armor. This demon king seemed to have no fear as he turned around, using all of his strength to pull at the chains. Both of his arms were covered with death energy and he suddenly threw a punch into the ground, creating an enormous shock wave that killed all of the Dragon City Warriors!

All of the players were stupefied. Everyone could feel just how insignificant their own power was. The last time we met a BOSS this powerful was probably the Magic Dragon Huo Li from Jiu Li City. But the Lin Han in front of us looked even scarier than Huo Li. At least with Huo Li, Frost could hold off some of his attacks. But, under the blade of Lin Han, Frost couldn’t even block one attack!

“Shua shua..”

Darts and chains covered the sky, but it did not seem chaotic. Suddenly, Su Ke and the others shouted and began pulling the net tight. “Keng keng keng” the chains began to tighten, turning into an actual net. Lin Han stood at the center of the enormous net. Su Ke then roared, “Lightning!”

A group of warriors all took out a golden little bottle from the bags on their backs. “Peng!” They smashed it against the iron chains. Purple lightning bolted throughout the net. “Ji ji” the lightning surrounded Lin Han and this Demon King couldn’t help but cry out in pain. His armor had been burned red hot, but it looked as though it only hurt but didn’t cause injury. His face became murderous and he shouted, “You guys are the ones asking for it!”

He then raised one arm. At that moment, dozens of Dragon City Warriors were dragged into the sky by Lin Han and flew right towards him. All we could see was the king open his palm and smile wickedly, [Disillusionment of Death]”

“Pa Pa Pa...”

One after another, the Dragon City Warriors were all crushed to death by the Death energy, and were smashed into mincemeat. Their deaths were extremely cruel. Su Ke trembled, “Bastard.... you... you demon!”

Lin Han waved his sickle and cut apart the Dragon Formation. The Dragon City Soldiers had finally realized, no matter how much they tried, they had no way of

facing this King Level monster. The gap between the strengths of both sides was just too great.

Lin Han raised a fist and charged towards the sky and smiled. “Die!”

Su Ke quickly pulled out the longbow on his back and he shouted, “Everyone, [Blood Destroying Bows]!”

A group of Dragon City Warriors all took the Long Bow’s from their backs and shot bloody arrows into the sky. “Keng Keng Keng” they smashed into Lin Han’s Armor, but not a single one broke through.

“Argh!”

Then, with a roar, Lin Han’s fist became a Death Energy Shockwave. Within moments, dozens of Dragon City Warriors were crushed and blood splattered on the plains. Everything before us was gone.

.....

“Keng!”

I suddenly pulled out my Zhen Yue Sword and shouted, “Are we just going to keep watching the show?”

Jian Feng Han’s voice trembled, “But Li Xiao Yao, you saw it too. This Lin Han, can we deal with him?!”

I stepped forward with determination and said, “What about it. If we die, then we’re just going to be losing a level!”

Under my command, the [Zhan Long] troops all charged forward. Arrows and spells locked on and everyone spread out. We began shooting at Lin Han. Wan Er, Li Mu, Wang Jian and I sprinted forward for close combat. No matter what, we couldn’t give up. Besides, we couldn’t just let all of these Dragon City Warriors just die? Otherwise Ba Huang City really would be in danger.

.....

“Hong!”

Flames began to surge from Lin Han’s hand and he threw an attack. Another dozen players and Dragon City Warriors were turned to dust. It was a

completely one sided battle.

“Sha sha ....”

A lone figure slowly stood up from the rubble. Luo Lin’s entire body was covered in injuries but his eyes were filled with a passionate hatred, “Lin Han! You are a coward! If you have any problems then come at me! Don’t bully the weak...”

Lin Han turned around to face Luo Lin, and he smiled. “Coward? Seeing as you want death so much...”

He suddenly disappeared and in the next second threw a heavy punch right into Luo Lin. “Ka Cha!” Luo Lin’s armor cracked, and probably most of his ribs. He suddenly knelt to the ground. Lin Han raised his foot and placed it on Luo Lin’s face. He then pressed it down and said with a cruel smile, “So this is the leader of Ba Huang City’s elites? Ha ha ha, Luo Lin, in my eyes you aren’t even on the same level as an ant. You aren’t a hero. With your level, you are just a toy in the Hybrid Demon Territory. Do you understand?”

Luo Lin roared and smashed his fist into the rocks, but it seemed to have no effect on the enemy.

As though losing his patience, Lin Han suddenly raised his foot. “Peng!” Luo Lin’s body smashed against a dozen pillars crashed into the mountain.

“Peng!”

The entire mountain collapsed and a red light pillar of light flew into the sky. A temple rose up out of the ruins and a red sword floated above it and slowly turned in a circle. All around there was a shocking aura.

.....

“Huh?”

Lin Han glanced over and his body shook, “Ares that demon, his blade——... it’s resurfaced?!”

# Chapter 541 Frost's Tears

“Despair...”

Luo Lin sat in the rubble, covered in blood and injuries. He looked towards the godly weapon and said, “Despair... Despair....”

As he softly whispered, this ambitious Ba Huang City Prince rolled onto his knees and prostrated himself before the weapon. Never was he to return to his past dignity and majesty. He crawled across the dirt and was only a dozen steps away from Despair. But with his injuries, these dozen steps were like a thousand leagues. His two arms pulled his entire body weight forward. Each steps was excruciating.

.....

Lin Han smiled, disdain gleaming in his eyes, “Oh? Luo Lin, you brought tens of thousands of soldiers to the Graveyard of the Heroes, was it all just to find this Despair? Ha ha, I get it now... However, do you think you deserve the weapon of the Battle God Ares? You’re nothing but trash.”

As he said that, Lin Han lunged forward. “Peng!” He stepped onto Luo Lin’s shoulder and raised the sickle in his hand. “Pu Chi!” He stabbed it right into Luo Lin’s chest. The armor cracked and like that, he was pinned to the ground. Blood flowed down the mountain side. Luo Lin coughed up blood and his pupils dilated. It looked as though he was at the gates of hell.

“Luo Lin...”

Frost leaned against her Severing Beauty as tears filled her eyes. She wobbled forward. Even Su Ke couldn’t tear his eyes away from the scene, “Lord Luo Lin! Damned Lin Han, you are a bastard...”

All of the NPCs and players all charged towards the mountains. We all knew that we couldn’t let Luo Lin die in battle. Otherwise, this quest would fail!

“Sha sha...”

I stepped onto the gravel. I was the first to climb up the rocks. I raised my

Zhen Yue Sword and activated [Blade Spin]. “Pu pu pu!” The blade sliced through Lin Han’s armor of Dou Qi. I then gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword and roared as I charged towards the BOSS. A white light began to rise from under my feet and I activated the S-Tier combo—— [Strength of a Thousand Men]!

Unfortunately, the second [Strength of a Thousand Men] activated, Lin Han suddenly threw a punch towards me. “Peng!” he smashed through the attack. This BOSS was so strong that I couldn’t help but feel the hair on my neck raise. He smashed my combo skill so easily! Once [Strength of a Thousand Men] was broken, I didn’t hesitate at all and spun my blade. Suddenly, I threw a [Fierce Ice Blade] + [Wind Blade] right into Lin Han’s chest!

“2716 ! ”

“2231 ! ”

The defense was just too high!

Lin Han’s eyes had a sliver of rage flash by, “Die!”

He raised his right arm and threw a punch at me with the energy of Death. I saw the attack coming and dipped forward. My [Blade Rush] precisely dodged the BOSS’s attack. Now, I was behind him. But I did not expect Lin Han to move just as fast. He spun around and threw a punch with his left arm, smashing it right into my shoulder. It was as though I took a thousand ton blow and I flew in the air and smashed into the cliff behind. My [Wall of Dou Qi] was completely crushed and my health dropped by quite a bit. Even if he hadn’t used a weapon, Lin Han’s attack was still so critically wounding——

“19787 ! ”

.....

Behind me, Su Ke lead a group of Dragon City Warriors and charged forward. Afterwards, Lin Han only threw a soft punch and a dozen of the Dragon City Warriors were smashed to death behind Su Ke. In Addition, [Zhan Long]’s Star Blade, Wang Jiang, and Rainy were all killed at once. “Wu wu” they cried as they fell to their knees in a puddle of blood. This told us, once again that Lin Han wasn’t something that we could fight against.

Yan Zhao Warrior raised his long sword and dashed forward, yelling, “I’ll drag down the BOSS. Li Xiao Yao, you go save Luo Lin. Don’t let him die! Otherwise, the deaths of everyone else will have gone to waste!

I turned around to look. Luo Lin was still pinned to the ground. Blood flowed and he was on death’s door.

Yan Zhao lunged forward and threw an [Absolute Authority] combo right onto the BOSS’s back. [Prague]’s Epic Hero and Luo Mu were both caught in the attack and killed instantly. Lin Han laughed crazily and raised his battle boot, throwing a kick. “Peng!” He forced Yan Zhao Warrior backwards. Even while he had [Dou Qi Armor], he still lost 18,000 health.

“Ah....”

Yan Zhao Warrior quickly retreated. Lin Han however followed close behind with a wicked smile and yelled, “Die!”

On the side, Li Mu and Wang Jian dashed forward. They activated [Halberd Whirlwind]+[Covering Sword Slash] at the same time, but the firepower wasn’t enough. As before, they couldn’t drag the BOSS towards them. Just as Yan Zhao Warrior was about to take a death blow, Qing Qian sprinted forward and held her two daggers before her, “Don’t kill my uncle...”

Yan Zhao was stunned, “Qing Qian don’t!”

“Shua!”

A beautiful figure dashed forward and stood in front of Qing Qian. Wan Er activated her [Shield of the Mundane World] and her [Arrival of the Hermit God]. As both feet left the ground, her flight status increased all of her stats by 20%. She then grabbed the Iron Umbrella behind her. Was the beautiful little miss going to rely on her class as an Assassin and take an attack from this demon king?!

“Peng!”

Flames erupted into the sky and Lin Han angrily threw an attack. Wan Er took the blow and cried out as she crashed into the cliff behind her. Her health had dropped to the bottom, but thankfully she hadn’t died.

On the other side Drunken Spear raised his spear and charged forward. He then leapt up and “Peng!” slammed an attack into the BOSS. It was [Hundred Peak Jump Slash] and stunned the BOSS for 3 seconds. He then raised his heavy shield. Drunken Spear shouted, “What are you waiting for? Someone go grab Despair! If you do that, we’ll be done with our quest! I’ll hold him off!”

Li Mu and Wang Jian nodded and quickly dashed towards Despair.

Lin Han woke up from the smile and chuckled. He then raised both of his fists and threw punches right into Drunken Spear’s shield!

“Peng!”

“21237 ! ”

Drunken Spear spat out some blood and was almost instantly killed. Even his shield was smashed. But he still raised his iron spear and threw a [Thousand Layer Wave] at Lin Han, bringing out quite a bit of damage.

Lin Han was furious. He raised a fist and threw a punch, this time set on killing Drunken Spear!

Suddenly, a man carrying a sword suddenly sprinted forward. “Pa!” He rammed Drunken Spear away and shouted, “I’ll take this hit!”

It was none other than the Guild Master of [Enemies at the Gate]. Misty Cloud roared and his arm glowed with dragon script. [Arm of Azure Dragon] swept out and “Peng! Smashed into Lin Han’s attack. This [Arm of the Azure Dragon] had a 100% chance of breaking an attack.

In the next moment, Lin Han roared out and pummeled his fists into the ground. The earth shook and “Peng peng peng” shockwaves spread out. Wan Er, Qing Qian and Misty Clouds were all pushed down the mountain. Even I had to hold onto the cliff in order to stay in place.

I turned around and charged towards Luo Lin and reached out to grab the blood sickle and tugged on it. “Si si” I could hear the sound of fire burning into Luo Lin’s skin. Luo Lin took the pain and cried out. I then used all my effort to pull it out. Finally, “Pu Chi!” Misfortune left Luo Lin’s body. Blood dripped all over the ground.



Right at that moment, I heard an enormous explosion. The second Li Mu and Wang Jian got near Despair, a bolt of lightning shot from the sky. The two of them died on the spot and fell to their knees. Li Mu's eyes widened, "What... what happened!?"

Luo Lin looked up, his eyes furious, "Oh no, their bodies couldn't take the rejection. Only a person on the level of a Sword Saint can take the rejection...."

I gritted my teeth. Afterwards, Lin Han lunged over and roared, "Die. You ants actually dare blaspheme a godly weapon?!"

I immediately raised the sickle Misfortune across my chest. Lin Han threw a heavy punch right onto the sickle's hilt. "Keng!" metal hit metal and I tumbled backward. Even Lin Han retreated a step. Looks like this godly weapon really had a lot of strength. However, Lin Han opened his hand and Misfortune slipped out of my hand and flew forward. In the end this weapon wasn't mine.

Luo Lin slowly stood up, his body covered in heavy wounds. He hobbled towards the godly weapon Despair and mumbled, "As long as... as long as I have the godly weapon, then.... Then I can save the continent. I...I cannot die here..."

.....

"You want to touch Despair? Dream on!"

Lin Han smiled coldly and grabbed Misfortune. Right as he was about to move, suddenly two icy dragons swiveled around his two legs, trapping him there. At the bottom of the slope, Frost slowly climbed up. She was covered in injuries but her hand was open and she gritted her teeth, "No matter what.... No matter what I have to help Luo Lin gain time. Just a little bit is enough..."

She repeatedly mumbled that, as though asking me to do something. I nodded, and gripped both of my swords.

"[Decimating the Ice Dragon]!"

Frost closed her palm and the ice dragon surrounded Lin Han, engulfing this terrifying Demon King. Pieces of his armor was crushed. His body was covered with injuries. Frost's attack truly dealt damage on Lin Han.

"Kong....."

With a roar, Lin Han's face started to glow with a red aura as he grew furious. He raised his sickle and charged towards Frost. Frost held her position and didn't move. She then softly said, "[Ice Spear]!"

"Peng!"

A layer of frost poured out, sealing Lin Han's legs. However, this BOSS was stronger than we could possibly imagine. With a little bit of effort, he broke through the ice and lunged towards Frost.

Frost's beautiful eyes were filled with determination and raised her Severing Beauty sword, "[Shen Yu Shield]!"

"Shua shua...."

Frost energy burst forth and wrapped around each other, forming an intricate shield. Lin Han angrily sliced at it. "Peng peng peng" he rammed against the Shen Yu Shield. Finally, the beautiful shield shattered and Frost coughed blood up and retreated tumbling to the ground. The Severing Beauty sword was lodged onto the cliff behind her and she had used up all of her Dou Qi.

"Die"!

Lin Han roared and sliced at Frost's snow white neck.

Seeing this, my heart nearly jumped out of my throat. I opened my hand and activated my Dragon's Hook. "Sou!" it shot out and went straight through Lin Han's chest armor. I then pulled out it, dragging the BOSS away. Afterwards however, I couldn't take Lin Han pulling at the Dragon's Hook. The two of us tugged on both ends of the chain. Pitting myself against a BOSS meant that I was bound to lose. I lost balance and was dragged over!

"Peng!"

I slammed into the cliff and coughed up blood. Lin Han whimsically laughed "Trash, you want to use tricks to deal with me? So laughable..."

.....

"No, don't..."

Seeing how I had been slammed into the mountain side by Frost, she sat on the ground. Perfect tears rolled down her cheek

# Chapter 542 Dark Moon Elves

“12271 ! ”

“9972 ! ”

“11368 ! ”

.....

One after another, I rammed against the hard cliff. I healed myself while drinking potions, and had almost completely recovered my health. Thankfully, I had Chi You's Body which increased my Health recovery by 200%. Plus, the Ruler's Mantle [Cleansing Wind] also had a 2% heal recovery boosting effect. I somehow managed to hold up for 15 seconds!

Just as my health was about to hit the bottom, I cancelled my Dragon's Hook. “Shua!” I flew out, escaping Lin Han's grip!

“Peng!”

I flew right towards the cliff and then rolled forward. The sharp rocks slashed through my skin, making it extremely painful. I crashed into Frost, bringing her rolling down the cliff with me. “Pu pu!” I coughed up blood onto Frost' white mantle. When I finally stopped, I only had 400+ health left!

‘Hai hai....’

I violently coughed as blood dripped down the side of my mouth. I felt extremely weak. To think that I would become this frail due to heavy wounds. I slumped down onto the ground, unable to exert any more energy.

Frost leaned against my chest and looked at all of the wounds on my body. Her tears continuously flowed down her cheek, washing away the blood and dirt. She cried, “I'm sorry.... I'm sorry... I shouldn't have let you join Dragon City. If I hadn't, you wouldn't have taken s\o many injuries, and you wouldn't have to go against such a terrifying enemy...”

I couldn't help but chuckle and softly said, “What are you talking about? From the day that I joined Dragon City, I have never once regretted my actions..”

“But...”

Tears rolled off of the beautiful face. Frost looked at me and softly whispered, “You could’ve been like a regular adventurer and happily lived your days out in Ba Huang City gathering food and hunting for meat. With your strength and talent, you would’ve become the most talented adventurer. There was no need for you to stand in this fearsome territory, no need for you to go against these savage Hybrid Demons and fear for your life every second...”

I looked at Frost and smiled. “But, if I hadn’t met you, then I would’ve never been able to see what it truly meant to be strong, not to mention become as strong as I am now. Besides, I never was a patient guy, I wouldn’t be able to peacefully stay as an average adventurer. I like sticking my nose into things, and rebelling. If I didn’t have a strong teacher like you, then who would watch my back...”

Frost grinned, and a tear rolled off her chin, “Don’t say anymore, don’t say it. We all might even die here...”

.....

At the bottom of the mountain. Su Ke raised his battle axe and supported Da Lin. He took a group of Dragon City Warriors and climbed up the mountain peak yelling, “Frost, we’ve come back....”

Frost leaned against me and looked at everyone. She then softly said, “I know. Hurry.... hold off Hell’s Song.... Lord Luo Lin... he’s close to Despair... Also, Su Ke, why have you brought Da Lin along with you? He’s too frail!”

Su Ke’s face was filled with determination, “All of the Dragon City Warriors are my brothers. We’ve gone to battle together and we no longer see each other as strangers. Maybe today is Dragon City’s last battle. Either way, I cannot let Da Lin survive miserably at the bottom of the mountain. I brought him so that if he dies, then at least he dies with our brothers...”

At that moment, the unconscious Da Lin suddenly raised a hand and “Pa!” slapped Su Ke’s face. We could hear it all the way from here, “You motherf\*cker, I guess I really have to thank you huh...”

.....

Right at that moment, Luo Lin finally stood up. He reached out and grabbed the hilt of Despair. His entire body shook and a blood red aura enveloped his entire body. His veins looked as though they were about to explode as they popped out from his skin. Luo Lin gritted his teeth and let out an agonizing scream. His cape fluttered and suddenly the entire earth started to shake!

“Shua!”

A ray of light surged into the sky from the weapon Despair and shock waves began to ripple throughout the area. Frost and I were embroiled into the chaos. I did all that I could to just keep my eyes open.

“King Luo Lin got the Godly Weapon Despair! King Luo Lin got the Godly Weapon Despair!” Su Ke grabbed his battle axe and whooped.

All of the Dragon City Warriors started to chant, “Long Live Lord Luo Lin! Long Live Lord Luo Lin!”

.....

Lin Han arrogantly smiled and said, “You dead bastard. Did you think that you’d be able to fight with Despair? The strength of that godly weapon is dependent on the person who’s wielding it! For a man who’s just a Sword God, just what makes you think you can control its power? Hahaha, let my Misfortune get a taste of Despair, how does that sound?”

The light began to diminish. Luo Lin raised Despair and quietly stood in the ruins. and slowly looked up, “As you wish!”

“Pa!”

Sparks flew and Luo Lin rushed at Lin Han. Gripping his sword in both hands, Luo Lin threw an energy slash!

Lin Han didn’t say a word and raised his sickle with both hands and parried Luo Lin’s attack!

“Peng!”

A loud boom sounded out and avalanches of rocks fell forward from the impact of the two godly weapons. The strength of the resulting shockwave was so strong that it collapsed some of the cliffs!

Lin Han retreated a dozen meters and halted before a notch in the cliff. He smiled. “Looks like it’s pretty strong. But if that’s all you’ve got, you’re still going to die!”

Lin Han’s arm jolted and he finally looked as though he was getting serious. One after another, characters of hell began to appear in the air and revolve around his hand. They swirled in the air and then began to spiral around Misfortune. Lin Han’s face became ruthless and he raised his sickle with both hands and laughed, “Come, why don’t you have a taste of my ‘Elegy of the Frozen Night!’”

“Hong!”

A crimson aura began to rise from the sickle. Lin Han seemed to have grown into a giant and the sickle hung in the air “Shua shua shua” it flew out and dealt three attacks towards Luo Lin. Luo Lin had no other choice but to use Despair and parry the attack!

“Keng keng keng...”

Sparks flew up in the light, and the entire mountain seemed like it was about to crumble. When the dust finally cleared, we could see that Lin Han was still standing in the air, while Luo Lin had collapsed into the rubble. Blood dripped from the corner of his mouth. After all, his enemy’s power was well above his. Even if Luo Lin obtained Despair, he still had no way of achieving victory.

Lin Han wryly smiled. “Luo Lin, did you see that? Even if you obtained a godly weapon, I can still easily crush you. In the end, trash like you doesn’t deserve to use Despair. Come, give Despair to me. If you do so, I might consider leaving you with your body intact!”

Luo Lin gripped his long sword and said, “In your dreams!”

“You’re asking for it!”

Lin Han raised his arm and death energy began to gather at his palm. Suddenly, he threw an attack and “Hong!” Luo Lin was enveloped into a whirlwind. The armor that covered his body ripped to pieces bit by bit. He was in so much pain that he agonizingly screamed. But, just as before, he did not let go of Despair. Determined, he held on, unwilling to give up this chance at

victory. In reality, as long as Luo Lin dies, then every one of us here would die as well.

.....

Once the attack finished, Lin Han remained in the sky, and he smiled. Luo Lin knelt among the rocks, and the light from Despair had diminished. Lin Han coldly smiled. “Do you see that? The ultimate weapon has also become weak because its owner is a useless piece of sh\*t. Luo Lin, you useless thing, you were raised like a prince. There’s no way you can wield Despair. Give it to me, hahaha....”

Luo Lin looked up, his eyes filled with determination, “Never!”

“You pighead!”

Lin Han suddenly raised his sickle and the earth began to tremble. One after another, spirits of the dead began to leak from the earth and meld into the sickle. Looks like this was the ultimate attack from this Hell’s Song. Wan Er, Li Mu, Yan Zhao, Jian Feng Han and I looked at each other. All of us made our preparations, since we were most likely all going to die here!”

“We’re screwed....” Misty Clouds whispered with a clenched fist.

Han Bei Song gritted his teeth, “Looks like we’re all going to die at this rate..”

Who’s Blue pointed towards the west and said, “Look over there. What’s that dark cloud over there? It looks like it’s heading straight towards us....”

Everyone looked over. Just as she had said, there was a dark cloud of flying animals flying towards us.

.....

“Huh?”

Lin Han furrowed his brows in confusion “I don’t think I summoned anyone to battle. Why are those Sword Spirit Cavalrymen coming here? Unless... unless there was a new command from up there?”

A few seconds later, a great crowd of flying dragon riders came at us. All of them were mounted on black dragons which were covered in armor. The knights were also covered in an intricate black armor. They each carried a heavy

sword and had cold eyes——

Sword Spirit Dragon Riders, Level 7 Hybrid Demons. This was a high tier monster that had more power than we could ever imagine!

.....

Yan Zhao Warrior was stunned. He gritted his teeth. Even the sword in his hand trembled a little as he said, “F\*cking hell.... Even the Level 7 Hybrid Demons are here. Are they trying to bury us here? Motherf\*cker, this isn’t an SSS Tier Main Quest, this is a suicide mission. The people who designed this really are heartless..”

Jian Feng Han also looked dejected, “This quest... it’s almost as though they never wanted us to succeed in the first place...”

Under the heals from Darling Duck, I quickly recovered and slowly stood up with the help of Frost. I looked at the group of Sword Spirit Cavalrymen in the distance. Frost’ eyes were filled with shock and she softly said, “The legendary Sword Spirit Cavalrymen. To think that they were like this. These Dragon Riders are high tier warriors that guard the Sword Saints of the Hybrid Demon Territory. They’re the strongest and fastest troops on flying dragons...”

I said, “Can we defeat them?”

Frost softly shook her head, “The history books recorded that any wise man would run as soon as they see the Sword Spirit Dragon Riders. Otherwise, they’re doomed to die.”

I was speechless.

.....

Right at that moment, Sword Spirit Cavalryman with an insignia on his shoulder walked forward and respectfully said to Lin Han, “Lord Hell Song, we have been commanded to invite you back and fight an enemy!”

“Fight an enemy? Lin Han softly said, “What kind of an enemy would they require me?”

The Sword Spirit Cavalrymen lowered his voice, “It’s an enemy from the Southwest. It’s the Dark Moon Elf!”



“Damnit!”

Lin Han raised a fist, “For as long as I live, I will destroy those b\*tches. Come, follow me!”

.....

As he finished talking, Lin Han looked back at Luo Lin and coldly smiled. “This time you were lucky. But you remember, your life is mine and so is Despair. Just you wait. Once I fight back the Dark Moon Elves, that is the day that you will die. No matter where you are, I will come from your head!”

# Chapter 543 Cleansing Rain

I looked up at the sky and saw Lin Han leave along with the group of Spirit Sword Dragon Riders.

All of the people on the ground released a sigh of relief. All of us sat onto the ground. Thinking we would all be killed, now we actually managed to escape this danger...

Yan Zhao Warrior leaned against a cliff and smiled. "F\*ck, I thought this was the end. I didn't think that we'd have even a glimmer of hope in this kind of darkness. To think that we managed to escape that catastrophe. Those Dark Moon Elves really are helpful..."

Jian Feng Han nodded, "If it's like this, are we done with this quest?"

I said, "Nope, there's more to this. We still have to bring Despair back to Ba Huang City!"

Frost nodded, "Yes, that's right. We must escort Despair back to Ba Huang City!"

.....

Luo Lin raised Despair and huffed. He then looked at the injured and weary army and softly said, "Thank you everyone for your trouble... this sword took much trouble. The rewards for this belong to everyone!"

Frost said, "My lord, there are Hybrid Demons everywhere here. We should leave soon. After all, we don't have many people left. If there's no one to guard, then this godly weapon will get stolen soon. Besides, I've taken a lot of damage too. There's no way I can fight any longer."

Luo Lin nodded, "Yup, let's head out. Let us return to Ba Huang City!"

.....

I looked towards Wan Er and said, "Wan Er, why don't you report on our numbers?"

"No need to, we have 97 left..."

“Eh.... so cruel....”

“Exactly... But I keep feeling like given the circumstances, having 97 people left is already pretty good.”

“Yep...”

Qing Qian, Wolf, and Old K walked over, their armor in rags. Each and every one of them were battered and exhausted. Wolf smiled. “Brother Xiao Yao, us of [Zhan Long] are considered the best off. [Prague], and [Vanguard] have less than 40....”

“Alright...” I looked towards everyone and smiled. “Congratulations to us. We’ve finally completed over half of our quest. Let’s go, it’s time we escort Luo Lin back to Ba Huang City. With that we’ll have completed the quest!”

“Yes yes...”

All of us cleaned up the battlefield and collected the equipment that the Little Sickle Demons dropped. Our true goal however was the final reward from the quest. Besides all of the survivors have killed quite a few Hybrid Demons. The quest reward should be very good. Who knows, maybe everyone will get a Saint Tier equipment or something. Then the difficulty of this quest would be worth it.

.....

We slowly left the Graveyard of the Heroes. This time, all of the big guilds have agreed to collaborate and fight against the terrifying enemy together. We even formed alliances and fought side by side. The experiences we had today were truly gratifying. No matter how hard we fight against each other, when our country is under attack, at least we’d come together in the end.

We walked along the Southern border of the Bloody Plains. All we took were the attacks of a couple dozen Demon Hunters. Su Ke lead a small team and killed all of them, removing our obstacles. When we left, we had 13,000 people, and now that we’ve returned to the Ice Ridge Mountains, we had less than a thousand. We took heavy losses. For the players, it was okay, at least we could revive. But the losses to Dragon City were great. Who knows how long it would take to save all of those elite generals and warriors.

After descending the mountains, we entered into the Ba Huang City Forest. As the feeling of coming home washed over us, we finally released our stern faces and managed a few jokes and conversations.

Close to an hour later, we arrived at Ba Huang City. At the gates of the city, the Duke Luo Lei had already prepared a grand escort to welcome us.

.....

Luo Lin raised Despair and slowly walked forward. He knelt to the ground and said, "Father, we've brought Despair back. However, please forgive me for my weakness. Almost all of the generals that we took with us had died. Even the Supervisor had been hacked to death by the Hybrid Demon King!"

"What? Wang Xuan died in battle?"

Luo Lei was stunned and said, "Lin Er, are you saying... are you saying that you were attacked by a King Level Hybrid Demon in the Graveyard of the Heroes?"

Luo Lin looked up and said, "That's right. Hell's Song Lin Han, the legendary evil demon is still alive. And he's extremely strong. He killed most of our people. We managed to escape his wrath and come back alive..."

Angela was shocked, "Brother... the fact that you were able to come back is good..."

Luo Lin clenched his fist and said, "To think that there are still some King Level Hybrid Demons in the Hybrid Demon Territory. Dear Lord, looks like those fortune tellers really were telling the truth. It is only a matter of time before the Hybrid Demons invade the south...."

"And so, we must continue strengthening Dragon City's Defenses!"

Luo Lin said with determination, "As long as we can hold Dragon City, then those evil demons will not be able to invade Ba Huang City. Besides, Dragon City is right next to 不归海. Plus it's been guarded by the Sea Demons. The Hybrid Demons won't mess with those Sea Demons. As long as Dragon City is still standing, then the empires on the continent will be safe. Otherwise, the entire continent will be in danger."

"Yes!"

Luo Lei walked forward and reached out to grab the hilt of Despair. At that moment his body trembled and he released his grip. His face was pale and he said, “Dear lord, such powerful strength... this Despair, is it really the sword of the war god Ares?”

“Yes it is father!”

Luo Lei gritted his teeth and said, “Imperial Guard, come here!”

An NPC walked over and said, “Your majesty!”

Luo Lei said, “Use a thick cloth and wrap it around the sheath. Place the sword in the great hall of Ba Huang City. Afterwards, assign some soldiers and have them guard the sword. This will later on become the godly weapon that will protect our Ba Huang City. As long as Despair is here, then there will be no one who dares to question our strength!”

“Yes your majesty!”

The imperial guard took the sword and left.

Luo Lin looked up at Luo Lei, his eyes filled with a little confusion, “Father, then, what do you want me to do next?”

“There’s nothing at the moment. You take a good rest.” Luo Lei smiled to him, “I’ve really troubled you this time in the Graveyard of the Heroes. After going through such a fierce battle, you need to rest. You are the pride of Ba Huang City, no, of the entire human and moon elf race!”

At that moment, The vice team leader of the Dragon Knights Su Ke raised his battle axe and stood up saying, “Your majesty, I have something, I’m not sure if I should say or not?”

Luo Lei nodded and said “Go ahead!”

“Yes my lord!”

Su Ke respectfully said, “This Despair was brought back at the risk of my lord Luo Lin’s life. Besides, we’ve all witnessed the strength of this Despair. If I may be blunt, based on the strength of Ba Huang City’s soldiers, once the Hybrid Demon’s main force comes, then with just a single attack, they’ll be able to wipe out all of our armies. Seeing as we’ve obtained Despair, then we shouldn’t

just simply put it up for show. We must use it and practice with it. Luo Lin is the strongest warrior in Ba Huang City, and he has the power of Holy Domain. Why shouldn't we train Lord Luo Lin to use this powerful weapon and protect Ba Huang City?"

"Be quiet!"

Luo Lin roared under his breath and said, "As for the ownership of Despair, I have already given my answer. Su Ke, there's no need for you to say anything more. This Despair isn't as simple as you think. Even though Lin Er is strong, he doesn't have the willpower to use this sword. This Despair, even though it is a godly weapon, it is also a violent weapon. Who ends up using it will be my decision. If anybody else questions my decision, then they'll be disobeying my command!"

Su Ke was shocked, "Your majesty, you..."

Luo Lin glared back, "Su Ke, be quiet. Don't say anything you shouldn't. Father has his reasons, when was it your place to question his decision?!"

Su Ke fell to his knees, "I understand my mistake, please forgive me!"

Frost replied, "Your majesty, Luo Lin is tired as well. We should let him rest. As for future matters, we'll talk about it later. At least for now, the Hybrid Demons won't be taking any action."

Luo Lei nodded, "Yes, Dragon City has suffered much loss. What is it that you ask?"

Frost smiled back, "That's right. I want to pick 1000 of the students from the Magic and Military School to enter into Dragon City to make up for the losses. I hope that your majesty would permit that...."

"Ha ha...."

Luo Lei quickly smiled. "That is fine. Frost, you can personally go to pick out the students. Just bring my command scroll. They won't argue with you. Besides, after this battle, the reputation of Dragon City and Ba Huang City has increased quite a bit. Many of the students have already decided to enter into Dragon City. I believe that you shouldn't have any problem."

“Thank you your majesty! Also, I want to ask that you also reward the adventurers that went with us into the Graveyard of the Heroes. They were also very brave in this battle!”

“Yes!”

Luo Lei looked at us and smiled. “Brave Adventurers, you are all the pride of Ba Huang City. You are also the pride of the Tian Ling Empire, and the pride of the continent! Come, let me give you the reward you deserve!”

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, you have completed the SSS Tier Main Quest [Searching for Despair] and you have obtained the reward: Level+2, Charm+20, Gold+70,000. As the number one player, you have also obtained the reward [Cleansing Rain]!

.....

I quickly opened my bag and saw a jade green skillbook. It glowed with a warm light. I reached out and felt a warmth coming from it. This book probably didn't have a lot of killing power. But when I saw the effect, I couldn't keep my mouth closed. Maybe this book was even better than a killing skill——

[Cleansing Rain] (SSS) : Condenses Dou Qi power and turns it into a godly healing power, allowing you to recover health. The strength of the healing power is directly related to your own strength. The specific number healing power is reliant on your base attack. To learn it, the player must fulfill the following requirements: Level 95, 15 charm. The cooldown of the skill is 7 seconds. You cannot use it while using other close combat type skills. Required Class: All Warrior Types

.....

I was beside myself. This was just the skill that I needed! Once I switched from a Healer class into a Dragon City Warrior class, I didn't have the chance to learn anymore healing powers. This time, this [Cleansing Rain] really was a savior. Plus, it was proportionate with my base attack. That meant that with my 7282 base attack, then I would be able to heal 7200+ of my own health!

“Shua!”

[Cleansing Rain] appeared in my skill set. The best part was that 7 second cooldown. If I could use a heal every 7 seconds, with my attack power, doesn't that mean that I could take on the Hybrid Demons myself?



# Chapter 544 The Tang Family Head

I turned around to look at everyone and asked, "So, how was it? What did you all get, and how did you rank?"

Li Mu raised his Tian Chen Sword and smiled. "I was ranked 9th in the quest. I got a pair of Saint Tier Leg Guards. Hei hei, even if I lost a level, it was worth it!"

Wan Er said, "I was ranked 3rd and got a Saint Tier ring that increases attack speed and max health."

Qing Qian smiled. "Ranked 3rd, and I got a Saint Tier ring as well."

Wolf rubbed his nose, "47th, I got a Valkyrie Tier dagger..."

Dong Cheng grinned, "5th and a Saint Tier Ring that increases fire attacks. Looks like all of the top 20 players got a Saint Tier equipment reward. Brother Xiao Yao, what about you? You probably got a better reward than us right?"

I replied, "I was ranked first but I didn't get a Saint Tier or Divine Tier. I got an SSS Tier skill book as a reward. [Cleansing Rain], it allows me to heal the same amount of health as my base attack..."

"Wow...."

Wan Er's jaw dropped, "Doesn't that mean that you'll be able to recover 7000+ health in moments?"

"Mhm." I nodded and smiled. "Exactly. It's just, I can only heal myself, not others. That's a bit of a problem. But it increases my overall survivability by quite a bit. The best part about the [Cleansing Rain] isn't the healing ability, but rather its 7 second cool down. This way, I can spam heal."

Dancing Forest raised her bow and smiled. "Congratulations Guild Master, your solo strength has increased yet again!"

I laughed, "Congratulations to everyone else too. As long as you managed to reach the end of this Graveyard of the Heroes quest, then you basically received a good reward, isn't that right?"

Everyone nodded in agreement. We all seemed pretty satisfied with the

rewards that we got from this quest To Search for Despair. Not far in the distance, we could see that [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Enemies at the Gate]'s players were all grinning. The shadow brought by the Hybrid Demons had all been wiped from everyone's faces.

Luo Lin raised a broken sword and said to Luo Lei, "Father, the Hybrid Demons in the north are becoming more and more aggressive. I plan on assigning the four great armies of the kingdom to guard in the forest south of Dragon's Den. That way, they can reinforce Dragon City at any time. Otherwise, once Dragon City falls, then we'll all suffer from their forces."

Luo Lei nodded, "Alright, then we'll just do as you said. Ba Huang City's safety will not be in danger. The Desolate Dragon Army has been camped in the Ba Huang City Forest. Your sister Angela and her Blizzard Wind Army have also camped at the bottom of Xin Yun Peak, while the Fierce Tiger Army is camped south of the Barbarian Tribes. All three corners of Ba Huang City are protected. Plus, there's 100,000 elite guards in the city. Even if the Barbarians and Sea Demons come at us, we'll still be able to hold them off."

Luo Lin softly smiled. "Good, then I am relieved. Father, how has your body been lately? Has your frost injury gotten better?"

Luo Lei reached out and clenched his fist. Slivers of fire began to swivel around his arm and he smiled. "I learned a flame type skill from General Luo Hai, so my injury has pretty much completely recovered. Don't worry, my old bones can still slave away for the kingdom for some more years. Once I've gotten old, Ba Huang City's future will rest upon you and Angela!"

Luo Lin's eyes had a sorrowful glint, "Father, what are you talking about? I've worked all my life to protect the human race. I've never planned on becoming a king. In other words, I'd much rather Father remain healthy. I'm satisfied being known as a heroic General!"

Luo Lei reached out to pat his son's shoulder and smiled. "Yes, now that you've returned, I don't need to worry as much anymore. At least now I don't have to make that child Angela bear too much. In the end, she is a girl. I shouldn't be giving her such heavy burdens to bear."

"Angela is a very strong girl..."

Luo Lin smiled. “As long as we can sharpen her just a little more, then she’ll be able to become a great commander in chief. I have already talked this over with Frost too.”

“Yes! Let’s go, I’ve already sent commands to the kitchen to prepare a feast! We can finally sit together as a family and eat a meal!”

“Yes father!”

The NPCs all entered into the city. This quest was finally over. Jiu Li City was currently fighting over the Player City but that didn’t have much to do with us. [Zhan Long] didn’t want to make enemies everywhere after all. It was best that we stay as a third party and watch from the sidelines. Wan Er, Dong Cheng and the other girls were already yawning, it was time to sleep.

After we got offline, we ate separately. The two girls sent a message saying that they were going to sleep. I then took a shower and crawled into bed. Laying my head down on my pillow, I closed my eyes and began regulating the energy flowing in my body. I was already at the top of Royal Air Tier and had complete control over the energy in my body. I was at the point where I didn’t even need to consciously control my energy and my body would subconsciously train on its own.

Something I noticed was that the more fierce and drawn out my battles in game were, the stronger my inner energy felt when I logged off. It was as though my inner energy was fiercely training itself while I was playing in the game. To top it off, the inner energy was becoming more and more pure, bringing out an obvious effect. I was leaping straight towards the next level——Yan Yang Tier!

Unfortunately, Yan Yang was still quite a bit a ways from me. At least I could tell that I wasn’t going to break into the next tier anytime soon.

Tang Gu rolled over and glanced at me, saying, “I heard the people on the forums say that the Graveyard of the Heroes Quest in Ba Huang City has been completed. You’re way too OP, to actually live and come back....”

I opened my eyes and looked at him with a smile, “Not many came back. Most of us died in the Graveyard of the Heroes.”

“Was the BOSS strong?”

“Yup, it crushed us. In the end, instead of killing him, we didn’t even manage to injure him. We nearly lost the Ba Huang City prince....”

“F\*ck, that strong. Was it one of the King Level Hybrid Demon Commanders that the Official Database mentioned?”

“Yup, it was that one. Too bad Jiu Li City is a bit far from the Graveyard of the Heroes. Otherwise Glasses Bro, you could also have a taste of the strength of the Hybrid Demons, ha ha....”

Glasses waved his hands and said, “I’ll pass. How could I not know how strong I am? Ha ha...”

“That’s right, Glasses Bro, what’s your ID? What class are you, and level? Are you still in [Hero’s Mound]?”

“Yup.” Glasses chuckled, “My ID is ‘Head of the Tang’ I’m a Lv 92 Knight. At the moment, I haven’t had the chance to rise up into any secret classes. But as long as I wait a little longer, then I will end up with something.”

I fished my phone out and smiled. “‘Head of Tang’ Lv 92, fourth advancement Knight. You’re one of the four elders in [Hero’s Mound] and ranked 1723 in the CBN Battle Net. There isn’t anything special, but it’s rumored that you make a good cup of milk tea.... Damn, Glasses, you’re way too unique!”

Glasses rubbed his nose, “F\*ck off, don’t rub it in. Did you think that everyone’s like you Li Xiao Yao and can rush straight from 300+ to 20th place in the CBN rankings? There aren’t many like that alright? If Tang Qi that bastard doesn’t have that special class and that he was a famous person in Conquer and Overlord. That was the only way he was ranked 15th in the CBN Battlenet rankings. Eh, looks like he was defeated by you some time ago too....”

I laughed, “Tang Qi was really strong in the previous games? I never payed much attention. And here I thought he was a dark horse.”

“Nope...” Tang Gu smiled.

Right at that moment, my phone vibrated. I looked at my notifications and saw one big word——Auntie!

Damn, its been so many months. When Auntie heard that I became a security guard she seemed determined to cut ties with me. Why would she call me now?

When the line finally connected, Auntie's voice came through the phone, "You little bastard, you actually picked up the phone. You still alive?"

I smiled inwardly, "Auntie, I haven't talked with you in such a long time. Don't be so angry. What's up?"

"What's up?"

Auntie angrily retorted, "How long has it been since you came home? And you have the face to ask me what's up? Tomorrow is a Saturday. Don't tell me bullsh\*t like you're working overtime. Get your \*ss back here. Your sister is coming back tomorrow at noon!"

"Huh?"

I was stunned, "Li Yao's coming back tomorrow noon? Didn't she say that the air ticket was too expensive or something... Xia Men to Han Zhao costs at least 1000!"

"Hmph, so if the airfare is too expensive then you shouldn't come home? Did you think that Li Yao was heartless like you? Li Yao is coming back tomorrow, so you decide on what to do. Are you coming back or not?"

I laughed and replied, "Yes yes, I'll come back tomorrow noon. Is Li Yao getting of at Xiao Shan Airport? What time? Does she need me to pick her up?"

"No need, she said that she's going to take a taxi back. She'll be back in town early in the morning."

"Ok, got it. Then I'll be coming back tomorrow."

"Alright, so you do have a heart. Bring a wild salmon with you. Get a big one, I want to make your favorite, Ma La Gui Fish."

"Ok, got it..."

When I hung up the phone, I was a little speechless but at the same time I felt excitement growing. I hadn't seen my sister in so long. I don't know how she's been doing after she left home for university. She was more mature than me. I didn't even go to high school and so all of my knowledge came from the armed

forces. She on the other hand got into Xia Men University, which had beautiful girls everywhere. She once grinned at me and said that she was going to bring a pretty wife. Just thinking of that pretty wife made me curious...

As I lay on my bed, I realized that it was getting late into the night. Just as I was about to sleep, I sent a message to Wan Er, "Wan Er, I'm going to visit home tomorrow. My Auntie wants me home and my sister is visiting too. And so, you and Dong Cheng obediently stay in the university. Don't run around. Tang Qi will protect you."

Half a minute later, I got a response, "Your Auntie is in Hang Zhou too? Oh, I've never heard you bring it up. No matter, Dong Cheng and I am following you for sure. I want to see where you grew up..."

"That won't be too good would it?"

"What's wrong with that. Fine then, Dong Cheng and I will prepare food for ourselves you petty man..."

I couldn't tell if I should laugh or cry and finally said, "Alright then, I'll bring you and Dong Cheng with me. But you can't say talk too much. Auntie still thinks that I'm a security guard and doesn't know about my current situation. If she knows that I went back to the special forces and that I'm handling dangerous operations, she will definitely beat me."

"Got it, I'll see you tomorrow."

"Ok...."

# Chapter 545 Li Meng Yao

I got out of bed the next morning at the break of dawn.

I picked out the tidiest outfit in my closet. The autumn morning was chilly, and so I chose a black jacket plus a white button up and looked at myself in the mirror. I could feel my confidence rising.

When I got to the bottom of the stairs, I could see that Dong Cheng and Wan Er were already waiting there. I looked at them more carefully and noticed that Wan Er and Dong Cheng seemed to have worn something prettier than normal. Wan Er was even wearing her favorite casual outfit. I don't remember what brand it was, but it cost 30,000. It was incredibly expensive. But I guess her dad has the money. Even her allowance went up to a billion. We can't say anything about it. All we could do was stare at her 34Ds a little longer in our hatred of the rich.

I took the two girls to the parking lot. After starting up the A4, I drove out of the university. Today was a weekend so there were a lot of students out on the streets. Looks like the two girls were also feeling pretty good. They even opened up the windows to get some wind as they chatted in the back seat. This familiar scene brought a warm and drowsy feeling to my heart. But I was a little scared. Once I get used to this life, does that mean that all of my fighting spirit at the bottom of my heart would disappear? If a warrior lost his will to fight, does that mean that he would still be strong?

We ate breakfast at a restaurant and I continued driving into the distance.

Wan Er blinked a few times and said, "Pig, where is your Auntie? This direction doesn't seem right.."

I coughed and smiled. "That.... Auntie told me to bring back a wild salmon. And so I'm going to see if I can get one from the pond..."

"Alright..."

Very soon, we entered into the rural areas and a small river appeared beside the road. After searching for a long time we finally found a pond that wasn't

polluted. It was pretty big and there was a small boat floating in the middle. The fisherman had just laid out his fishnet. I brought the car to a park on the side of the pond and then got out. I waved to him and said, “Uncle, do you have a trout?”

The fisherman rowed the boat over and then kicked the bucket beside him and laughed, “Do you want to buy a fish?”

“Yup, do you have a trout? This.. this counts as wild right?”

‘You’re pretty lucky. I just got one. A few years the pond was polluted and became deserted. Nobody came to maintain it. These days it seems to have cleared up. I didn’t think that there’d actually be fish here. Look, I fished up at least 10 pounds of fish. I just happened to get a trout, it’s at least 1.5 pounds. I’ll sell it to you for 100/pound, so 150 for the fish. Will you take it?”

I nodded. On the side, Wan Er quickly took out 150 and smiled. “Uncle, do you have an empty bucket? How about you sell that to us. Otherwise the fish will die before we even get home. 10 RMB, yes?”

“Oh, alright....”

Very quickly the beautiful little miss picked up the bucket and got half a bucket of pond water. Afterwards she happily, albeit a little afraid, put the trout into the bucket. Then opened up the A4 trunk and put it safely away. By the time we left it was already 9.

We drove quickly back and passed by the city. Finally we entered into a small neighborhood. Around 10, the car entered into a college town. Past the college town was a row of houses. They were all restaurants, hotels, and internet bars. Of the houses, there was a little building with four floors. A sign hung from the top of it with big letters ——Crystal Love Hotel!

The car suddenly stopped in front of the hotel. Wan Er blinked a few times and looked at me, and then looked at the sign and said, “Pig, what are you thinking. Why are you here? Unless... your auntie’s house is here?”

I nodded, “Yup, Auntie is a hotel owner... the owner of this one. Ha ha, don’t be weirded out. I’ve always lived here since I was small. I even did chores around the hotel for Auntie. Stuff like cleaning bedding and what not. There’s a lot of times when I’ve had to wash blood out...”



Wan Er's face turned completely red and "Pa!" She punched me, "Stop smiling!"

Dong Cheng giggled, "And here I thought that Brother Xiao Yao had finally thought it through and brought Wan Er and I here to rent a room. Bringing two at once, aren't you a player?"

I glanced at Wan Er and said, "I can, but I don't want to. I'm a man with morals..."

"Pei..."

When we got out of the car, I saw a familiar figure walk towards us from the hotel's front desk. Auntie looked a little older. But she stared at me with shock painted on her face, "You stinky bastard, you....you...you..."

She looked at the two beauties beside me and could only say "You". She then walked over and patted my shoulder and lowered her voice, but still loudly said, "Wow you bastard, to think that you'd bring two girls that are this pretty back home. Auntie doesn't have to worry about that anymore..."

My face turned into wood. Dong Cheng and Wan Er broke out into giggles. Wan Er walked over and politely introduced herself, "Hello Auntie, I'm Li Xiao Yao's friend. My name is Lin Wan Er...."

Auntie nodded with a smile and then "quietly" said to me, "This Lin Wan Er really is pretty. She has a great body too. She'll definitely give birth to a son, and it'll be a handsome one. Just how far is your relationship along?"

My forehead creased even more.

Wan Er's face turned bright red. Dong Cheng grinned and said, "Auntie, they haven't even exchanged eight words yet! Don't be too excited... after all, love needs to be built up slowly! I'm called Dong Cheng Yue, what do you think about me?"

The little girl stuck her full chest out. Even though it wasn't as good as Wan Er, but... it was enough!

Auntie grinned, "Dong Cheng Yue? What a nice name. Come come, let's sit inside. No need to talk out here..."

I raised the fish bucket and walked in. The two girls sat down in the lobby. The hotel itself wasn't very big, and everyone understood that it was just a small inn. The two girls were still slightly awkward and didn't know what to say. Auntie on the other hand asked about everything. In the end, I introduced them as two models that my company hired. Afterwards they were praised by my Auntie for their great bodies. Just listening made the two girls blush.

Auntie went out to buy some more ingredients. I began to wash bedding in the yard, just like before. Thankfully there wasn't a spot of red. Wan Er sat on the side and quiet watched me. Then, she couldn't resist and picked up a big bucket over and helped me wash. Dong Cheng on the other hand went to play with the husky that Auntie raised in the yard. It was a really perverted husky. Just seeing beautiful girls it would wave its tail. When Dong Cheng touched its head, it even peed....

It took all the way until 11 before Auntie returned home. She then cleaned up the yard and began to wash the veggies and fish. I put on two leather gloves and began to scrub the bedding hard, nearly breaking the washboard in the process. My arms were covered in soap and bubbles. Dong Cheng pitifully looked at me and shook her head, "Ay, a great Versace, ruined. Where's the justice in this world..."

Right at that moment, the sound of brakes slamming into the ground rang out. Auntie looked up and said, "That should be your sister right?"

Before she even finished, a beautiful figure entered into the lobby and walked over to the yard. The girl reached out and "Pa!" her bags fell the ground. My long haired sister bounded towards me and happily shouted, "Bro!"

I looked at her, "Meng Yao?"

In the next moment Li Meng Yao opened her arms and "Hua!" leaped into my arms, tackling me to the ground. She leaned against me, her face against my chest and smiled. "Brother, I missed you so much...."

My arms were covered in soap and I didn't know what to do to push her away. Laughing I said, "Alright alright. Meng Yao, get up. I have soap all over me, hurry up!"

"Oh!"

Meng Yao stood up and helped me up. She then happily looked at me and said, “Bro, I haven’t seen you for 7 months and 23 days!”

“Eh, you remember all that?”

“Yup. Every month you send money to me, and I think about how has brother been...”

“Ha ha....”

A little embarrassed I took off the gloves and rubbed her head, “Brother has been doing great. You don’t have to worry!”

Auntie tartly said, “Ay, aren’t you forgetting about someone? This Auntie has nearly become air at this point....”

Li Meng Yao happily walked forward and grabbed Auntie’s hand, “Auntie, what are you talking about. I... I just haven’t seen brother in so long! Yi? These two...”

Finally the little girl saw Wan Er and Dong Cheng and couldn’t help but be stunned. Ever since she was a child, Meng Yao was Auntie’s precious treasure. She had been known as the most beautiful girl in ten miles. Now, looking at Wan er and Dong Cheng, two girls who don’t lose at all to her in terms of looks, she naturally felt a little threatened.

“Brother, who are they?” The little girl tugged on my hand.

I introduced them, a little speechless,” This is Lin Wan Er, she’s my friend. This one is Dong Cheng, she’s also my friend...”

“Ah?!”

Meng Yao’s jaw dropped, “Wan Er, Dong Cheng, why do those names sound so familiar. Unless...unless are you the legendary Cang Tong and Cang Yue from Fan Shu City?!”

Wan Er was a little stunned, “You... You recognize us?”

Li Meng Yao nodded and then looked towards me, “Brother... Brother, don’t tell me... Ba Huang City’s number one player Xiao Yao Zi Zai is really you? It’s really you?”

I smiled. "Yup, it's me, what's wrong?"

Meng Yao blushed and her arms trembled a little. Excitedly she looked at me, "I was saying this, the game character Xiao Yao Zi Zai really looks like my brother, but I never thought that brother would be this strong. All of my classmates didn't believe me. Wu wu... Xiao Yao Zi Zai really is my brother!"

Dong Cheng smiled. "What's up, Meng Yao, do you play too?"

"No...."

Meng Yao shook her head and said, "I just like looking at the game news. I don't have the money to buy the helmet at the moment. I just really envy the people who can play, wu wu..."

Wan Er softly smiled. "That isn't a problem. Meng Yao, don't worry. Your bro can buy you one now!"

"Ah?"

Meng Yao looked at me, "Brother, can you?"

"Yup!" I seriously nodded, "We can go to an outlet in the afternoon and pick the best helmet for you."

"But it's so expensive..." Meng Yao pouted her lip, and looked as though she couldn't bear parting with the money.

I couldn't help smile and put a hand on her shoulder, "What are you worried about? Did you forget that I was Xiao Yao Zi Zai? Did you think that [Zhan Long] was some kind of small guild? Buying you a helmet is as easy as buying a dish for you!"

Auntie cautiously asked, "Stinky boy, what'd you do, hit gold?"

I thought about it for a while, "I got a promotion..."

"A promotion? What job?"

Wan Er added, "The boss of security..."

Auntie smiled. "A promotion is good. Our stinky kid has finally matured..."

I was speechless.

# Chapter 546 The Nouveu Riche Gold Model

At noon we had a feast. Auntie's skills had not regressed since before and Wan Er and Dong Cheng only had praises.

In the afternoon, I took Li Meng Yao downtown to buy game equipment. In the blink of an eye, it had already been 2 months since the game was released and the 17th batch of helmets was out. Nowadays, there were helmets for sale at various different stores, but we still decided to go to the most flourishing part of downtown to a Specialized Destiny Flagship store to buy the helmet. I took Meng Yao, Wan Er and Dong Cheng all into the store. The three breathtaking girls drew a lot of attention when we walked in.

"Brother...."

Meng Yao tugged on my head as she looked at the dazzling gear. She couldn't help but whisper, "This place is so high end... is the helmet you're going to get me very expensive?"

I smiled. "It's no problem. You don't have to do anything but wait to enter into Destiny. Even though you're late two months, but as long as you stick with me, I'll prepare a set of equipment for you and catching up will be very easy."

"Ok...."

When we reached the counter, a 25 year old girl manned the front desk. Her black uniform was extremely pretty. Looks like the Destiny boss had a good eye.

"Good afternoon!"

I walked forward and smiled politely, "Excuse me, what types of helmets are for sale?"

The girl smiled back, "Hello handsome boy, at the moment we have all levels of helmets for sale. There's the Regular Model which costs 10,000 RMB a set and gives a 95% realistic effect. We also have the Royal Blue Model for 50,000 RMB a set and gives a 97% realistic effect. Then we have the Nouveu Riche Gold Model for 100,000 RMB a set and 99% realistic effect. That is already the highest quality gear on the market. Furthermore, it comes with a battery,

protection system for the user, and an emergency system. When you buy the VIP Helmet, you will also get a VIP activation code. Registering this activation code will allow you to obtain 1-10 points of charm...”

I widened my eyes, “Eh? Why didn’t the first wave of players get some kind of an activation code?”

The girl smiled. “That... Didn’t you get two more months in the game than the later waves? This is just a method to compensate for the players who entered in later. I hope that you understand!”

Wan Er leaned against the counter and mischievously smiled. “Pig, just buy the Nouveau Riche Model. That way it’ll be the same as mine. The only difference is that the first batch of helmets wasn’t gold.”

I nodded and pulled out my bank card and said, “Miss, can you give me a Nouveau Riche VIP helmet?”

“Ok!”

Very soon we finished the transaction, and the girl handed an exquisite box to me with Meng Yao’s gaming gear in it. The girl was so happy that she nearly teared up. At the moment, was already an extremely popular game. A lot of her classmates were probably playing the game, leaving her alone. Yup, giving her a helmet was good compensation for being such an irresponsible brother!

“How is it, do you like this model?” I asked with a smile.

Meng Yao nodded vigorously, “Yup yup, I really like it... just, it’s too expensive. Brother, I let you spend more money...”

I smiled. “That’s no problem. Even if Auntie doesn’t know, shouldn’t you already? Brother now has the backing of a big guild like [Zhan Long]. Just increasing or decreasing our provisions creates tens of thousands of RMB difference. Don’t worry, I have the money to buy this....”

Meng Yao narrowed her eyes at me and then broke into a grin, “Yup yup, Brother is Xiao Yao Zi Zai, a Hero level player!”

At that moment the girl behind the counter stared at Wan Er and I and suddenly went “Ah!”. “You..... oh my gosh!”

Her small shoulders shook a little and her face was pale. She pointed at Wan Er and I and said, "You guys aren't... You guys aren't Ba Huang City's Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Cang Tong are you? And the pretty girl to your left, you're Cang Yue, right? You guys look just like you do in the game..."

I looked at her and calmly said, "Yup, it's me. Do the top twenty players on the CBN Rankings get a discount?"

The girl shook her head with a laugh, "That.... There's no discount.. But, can I take a picture with you guys? Xiao Yao Zi Zai, do you know? You're extremely reputable among the fans. Especially the female players. Many of them really like you a lot... there's a ton of people who are crazy about you. There's a girl in our sector that sleeps with your picture under her pillow. She said that if she doesn't get you, she'll never look for another boyfriend...."

"Eh...." I was dumbfounded.

Wan Er rubbed her lip, "Get him... what does that mean?"

"You understand...." The girl smiled embarrassingly. She pulled on her skirt and then took out a phone and walked over. She then leaned against me and said, "Hurry up and look at the camera and take a selfie..."

I didn't say anything. "Ka Cha" The photo was taken and she happily looked at it, "Ho ho ho, now with this picture, that girl will be so jealous of me! Now that I think about it, Destiny may be holding a player feast soon. All of the Guild Master level players of the big guilds and CBN Battlenet Ranked players will be invited. We might even see each other again."

I nodded and smiled. "Eh, OK then. However, we have to leave soon. Meng Yao probably can't wait any longer to try out her new gear, isn't that right?"

Meng Yao's face was red, "Brother, stop teasing me!"

Wan Er said, "Pig, then are we going back today, or...?"

I thought about it for a second, "Seeing as Auntie wants to keep us here so much, then we should stay at home for a night. We'll head back to school tomorrow. Either way there aren't any classes tomorrow, right? The hotel has Destiny's data interface anyways, so we can play. We can head back to school now and get our gaming equipment and clothes."

“En, OK....”

We quickly returned to the university and Wan Er and Dong Cheng went upstairs to get their things. I then took Meng Yao to the male dorms.

When we arrived at the bottom of the stairs, I had Meng Yao wait for me down there. My pretty sister cutely stood at the bottom of the stairs. Afterwards, one of the windows opened up and a male student looked out and said, “D\*mn, a beauty is here! Is she from Liu Hua? She’s on the same level as Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue! How come I haven’t seen her before? Hi, beauty, how about we become friends?!”

Meng Yao’s face went completely red.

I was speechless and raised a fist at the window, “You wanna die? That’s my sister!”

At that moment, one boy who wasn’t afraid of death laughed, “Li Xiao Yao, why don’t you become my brother in law!”

“F\*ck off!”

“Ha ha ha...”

Even Tang Gu looked out and said, “Li Xiao Yao, why do you have such a pretty sister when you have a face like that?”

I glared over, “A face like what? Glassed Bro, are you itching, do you want me to give you a beating?”

“Nevermind, I’m afraid I’ll beat you... then Wan Er will have to come and beat me up...”

“As if....”

I sprinted up the stairs. Once I got my helmet I immediately ran downstairs and made sure that my sister didn’t get hurt. There was no other way. My sister was just too pretty. Ever since I was a kid, I had to shield her from unwanted attention. I had beaten up quite a few evil perverted bastards back in the day...

Seeing my angry expression, Meng Yao touched my arm and softly smiled. “Brother, don’t be angry. Look at your expression, so not cool...”



I was speechless and retorted, “Meng Yao, is it the same for you in Xia University? Tell your brother the truth, do you have a boyfriend?”

Meng Yao giggled, “Nope!”

“But there has to be a lot of people who are chasing after you, right?”

“It’s OK...” Meng Yao fluttered her eyes and smiled. “Didn’t I tell you in high school? Unless a boy more handsome than brother appears, or a boy who gives me a more secure feeling than brother, then I won’t date anyone...”

I facepalmed and said, “That... will be hard. That sounds like the prelude to nunnery....”

Meng Yao lightly punched my shoulder and replied, “Brother’s too mean. All you do is make fun of me, you’re even cursing me!”

“Not at all, not at all...” I laughed, “I just hope that my sister can also meet a man who will make her feel secure and love her at all times. Even though there aren’t many boys like that, but you should understand the feeling. No matter how talented or handsome a guy is, as a brother I wouldn’t want to hand you over to him...”

Meng Yao rubbed her lips and then quietly said, “Brother, I got it. I’m still young... I’ll be at brother’s side for a long time still... That... just wait until I catch up on the levels. I’ll join [Zhan Long] too, then Brother can protect me....”

“Yup yup, no problem. I’m not doing anything else tonight. We’re going to focus on grinding your levels!”

“Yes brother... mwah” Meng Yao stood on her tiptoes and then softly kissed my cheek. This little girl’s relationship with me seems just like it had been a few years ago, and nothing seemed to have changed.

We walked over to the bottom of the girls dorm and went to pick up Wan Er and Dong Cheng. Afterwards we left and went back to the hotel that Auntie owned.

We had another feast for dinner. But, by the time dinner started, there were already continuous lovers coming in to rent rooms. Most of them were students from the universities around us. Auntie didn’t have a chance to settle down and

eat. But, as long as the business was doing good, she was happy. However, today, Meng Yao, Wan Er, Dong Cheng and I took up 4 rooms, losing out on four rooms of rent for her.

In Wan Er's room, I expertly replaced her bedsheets and patted the bed and smiled. "Even though this isn't on par with a five star restaurant, but it's at least a four star. Auntie is a kind owner, and so this place is always cleaned and sanitized. Wan Er, you do not need to worry."

Wan Er grinned, "I got it, idiot. What are you worrying about..."

"No, nothing...."

I smiled. "Then... I'll be next door. If you need anything just call for me in the game. I can get here in minutes. Do you have any plans for the night?"

"I'm going to take a shower first. Then I'll go grind levels and finish quests with Dong Cheng."

"Alright!"

I stiffly stood in the room and said, "Then, I'll be going?"

"Ok." Wan Er smiled sweetly at me, "You're going to take Meng Yao to grind levels right? Are you OK on your own? If you need anything, you can call for me too. Dong Cheng and I will happily come at any time to help your sister."

"Got it!"

I pulled open the door and stepped out. I seemed to have forgotten something and I turned around and walked back in.

Wan Er was a little surprised, "What's up, did you forget something?"

"Yup!"

I seriously nodded and then walked forward. I reached out and touched Wan Er's shoulder. I then looked down and kissed her soft cheek. At that moment, Wan Er's face went completely red, but her arm was wrapped around my waist. She looked up at me, her eyes filled with love, "Pig, hurry up and go back. Otherwise we'll be seen by Meng Yao and Dong Cheng..."

"Alright, but you have to let go of me first..."

“Wu.....”

# Chapter 547 For the Fame!

I came to Meng Yao's room and helped her with the installation of the game devices. She giggled with excitement as she sat there with the helmet in her hands.

"Bro, once I enter the game, will I be a noob?"

She looked at me with a worried expression.

I shook my head and replied, "How can that be possible? Even someone as stupid as me managed to fight my way into the top ranks of the CBN Battlenet. Meng Yao is much smarter than me. You should easily get the hang of this game. Don't forget, you inherited the same genes as me..."

"But..." Meng Yao continued, "Bro, have you ever met mom before?"

Startled by the sudden question, I lowered my head and smiled. "I can remember a bit... Mom was very beautiful, just like you. She loved us, we must never forget this fact. Mom left not because she didn't love us, but because she was forced too.

Meng Yao nodded her head, "Yes, I know, I will learn to be more sensible! Bro, Out of all these races and classes, which one would suit me the best?"

"What kind of position would you prefer?"

"To be able to attack, able to withstand blows, and become the core of the team. I don't want to be useless ....."

"Alright, then Swordsmen or Knight would be good for you. These both have very high health and have explosive power with the right gear. In addition, the equips afterwards are very good. Which one do you prefer?"

Meng Yao smiled. "Knight then, since Bro is already a Swordsman. I don't want to overlap our classes!"

"Okay, then let's go with this class then. You'll be the same as Wan Er, since she's also a Moon Elf. The Iron Umbrella that moon elves have are very compatible with heavy shields that Knights use, so they have very high magic

resistance. I have already discussed with Wan Er about creating a powerful team of Moon Elves as [Zhan Long]'s vanguard. Since Meng Yao is so intelligent, becoming [Zhan Long]'s first Moon Elf Knight should not be a problem then.

Meng Yao's eyes shone with delight, " Then you're saying, I can become Bro's left-hand man?"

I couldn't resist laughing. I stood up and patted her shoulder, " Silly girl, you have always been the one that big brother relies on.

"Okay!"

"Then I'm going to return to my room. After you log into the game, add me as your friend and later I will come and find you! Before I come over, try and familiarize yourself with the game's mechanics. Games that are 99% fully immersed are completely different than normal 3D games. Also, the strength and angle of attack damage will significantly affect the results. For the same attack, the angle can greatly alter the output and can be as much as doubled the damage."

"Alright, I gotcha, cya Big Bro!"

"Mhm!"

.....

After going back to my room, I logged in.

"Shua!"

In the middle of Ba Huang City, a total of 7034 friends... I looked at the recent news, nothing out of the ordinary. After a few minutes, a friend request popped up with a message, " Big Bro, please open the door." I smiled at the Lv 1 Knight's ID: Xi Yao Ge Jin. Without a doubt, this was my little sister Li Meng Yao.

I confirmed the request, "Ding! Meng Yao sent a message, " Big Bro I love you! I'm currently at the eleventh novice village!"

I smiled and responded, " Level up by yourself for a while, I'll be right over in about 30 minutes. You should be around Lv 6-8 by that time, wait for me!"

"Gotcha, hurry!"

.....

After I left the city, I locked onto the eleventh novice village and summoned my Flaming Tiger God and ran forward. As I was running, I opened up the Dragon's Den system page. Yup, under the management of Chi Yu Qing, our production had increased quite a bit. In just a few short days we had also increased by quite a few citizens, increasing our production power a fair amount——

[Dragon's Den] (Level 3 City)

City Owner: Xiao Yao Zi Zai

City Guardians: Chi Yu Han & Vice Guardian: Chi Yu Qing

City Buildings: 12

Soldiers: 24 (Swordsman x10, Piao Dao Wielders x10, Halberd Wielders x4

Laborers: 1224

City Scale: Super Big

Production Power——

Food: 4240/hour

Wood: 4000/hour

Stones: 4000/hour

.....

Our production capability had doubled! This was pretty illogical. Based on our recruitment speed, it definitely shouldn't be this high. Besides, even the number of soldiers we had doubled. I don't remember recruiting any soldiers. What happened?!

I quickly flipped through the important news in the city and found the answer——

[Enlistment News]: City Owner please note, Vice Guardian Chi Yu Qing patrolled the southern border of Dragon's Den and defeated 21 bandits, and successfully enlisted 74 refugees

[Enlistment News ]: City Owner please note, as Vice Guardian Chi Yu Qing was excavating, she recruited 112 nomadic miners

[Army Recruitment News]: City Owner please note, the Guardian Chi Yu Han has recruited 10 Piao Dao Wielders who have come to join your army for its fame

[Army Recruitment News] : City Owner please note, the Guardian Chi Yu Han has recruited 4 experts at halberds and spent 4G

.....

There was a whole chain of news regarding the city management. I secretly felt a leap of joy. Clearly, Dragon's Den will no longer be the only player city in the three great cities, but Dragon's Den has two guardians that are completely OP. Chi Yu Han has 100 points of military power, while Chi Yu Qing's business power is 100 points as well. Just these two full stats greatly increase the ability for Dragon's Den's development. This was an advantage that few player cities had!

Plus, with a strong backing like Dragon's Den, then other guilds will at least think twice before picking a fight with [Zhan Long].

I glanced at the city's resources. Yup, tonight we'll be able to rise up to Lv 4. My goal was to reach a Lv 7 city as soon as possible. That we could recruit a lot of Swampy Light Cavalry, Iron Heavy Artillery, and Flaming Heavy Archers. We'll start off with 1000 soldiers. This way nobody will dare to interfere with Dragon's Den.

.....

I quickly continued forward. Very soon I entered into the eleventh novice village's territory. Even though the game had only been out for two months, there have been huge waves of new players. The day came out, it had already instantly beat out all of the big online games. As for its popularity, even now, it remains at the top. It has three times more players online than another game that's similar to it, firmly taking top place!

A few seconds after I sent out a party request, Meng Yao appeared in my party member list. What was shocking was that Meng Yao was actually able to solo grind all the way to Lv 9 within 30 minutes!

"Sha sha...."

My Cloud Stepping Boots brushed against the grass and I stepped out of the dew covered bushes, getting slightly wet, giving me a slightly refreshed feeling. Not long after, a beautiful figure appeared before me from out of the forest. It was a beautiful female Knight wearing cloth armor. She held an iron spear in her hands. “Pu” She stabbed it right into the abdomen of a wild boar, dealing 92 damage and instantly killing it.

Meng Yao wiped some sweat off of her forehead and turned around to look towards me, “Brother, I’m halfway to Lv 10. Then I can leave this novice village...”

I looked at her admiringly and said, “Are your leg guards Green Tier?”

“Yup, I got it after killing a wolf!”

“D\*mn!”

I felt some pride rise up and said, “Our Meng Yao really is special. You’re even better than I was when I first started playing!”

The girl smiled modestly and then leaned an elbow against my shoulder, “Brother, I heard that when Xiao Yao Zi Zai first started in the game he was extremely noob. All day he was being chased after [Wrath of the Heroes] and [Flying Dragon]. Ay, I guess I shouldn’t roast you too much, otherwise Brother won’t love me anymore...”

I rubbed my nose, “Alright alright, hurry up and let’s go. If you kill another crowd then you’ll level up. Afterwards I’ll take you to Ba Huang City’s high level maps to grind monsters. Bit by bit we’ll level you up!”

“Ok ok!”

.....

I took my sister and entered into the forest again. In front of us, a couple of Lv 11 wolves were howling. This was wolf territory, and was considered too dangerous for new players. However, for someone like me, it was as simple as killing an ant. My Flaming Tiger God roared and leapt out, activating [Burstfire Raid] into the crowd of wolves. I then raised my hand and sent my Zhen Yue Sword flying out with [Blade Spin], killing all of them in one hit. Within 14 seconds I was able to clean out the entire map. Meng Yao also leveled up to 10



with a “Shua!” We could now leave the rookie area!

We went over to the village head and turned in the quest Afterwards, we took various other quests from Ba Huang City. I lead Meng Yao around Ba Huang City to familiarize her with the place.

After I took her into Ba Huang City, I was immediately recognized by several people in the city. One after another they pointed at me——

“Damn, isn’t that player wearing the crimson cloak Xiao Yao Zi Zai? How come he’s bringing a rookie girl grinding levels....”

“That Lv 10 Knight looks really pretty, she’s a beauty!”

“34Cs I think...”

“Zhan Long’s Guild Master really is beat.... Let’s not mention the fact that he has both Cang Tong and Cang Yue. Now he has a beautiful girl like Xi Yao Ge Jin at his side. This is just unjust. Why don’t I know that many beautiful girls. If I could just hold hands with them then my life would be complete....”

“Get lost, what makes you think that you could get a pretty girl to hold your hand!”

.....

I didn’t even glance at them and pulled my sister’s hand, leading her straight towards the Great Hall. I let her head over and get the insignia of Ba Huang City. And thus, Meng Yao became one of Ba Huang City’s players.

Afterwards, I went to National Beauty and picked out a Lv 30 Gold Armor and a Lv 30 Gold long sword. These were all prepared for Meng Yao. Leveling up to 30 was easy. Afterwards we would need to increase her survivability.

“Brother, where are we going to level up?” She asked as she smiled at me.

I pointed towards the North East and said, “Why don’t we go Firestone Canyon? The monsters there spawn really quickly. They’re all Lv 90 Thunder Tier monsters. After we kill them then you’ll get at most 1% of the experience, but that’s enough. 1% of that experience is enough for you to level up very quickly!”

“Alright....” She fluttered her eyes and smiled. “But brother, I heard that

Firestone Canyon was [Vanguard]'s territory. If you take me there, wouldn't we be PKed by their players?"

I softly smiled and looked down at my cute sister, "Don't worry, [Vanguard]'s players aren't willing to mess with [Zhan Long] at the moment."

"Why's that?"

"Because.... Ba Huang City's new Dragon's Den has already been established for a long time. Not long after, a new player city will appear in this city. [Vanguard] isn't an idiot, [Enemies at the Gate] and [Prague] will all be fighting over it. That pretty much means that whoever [Zhan Long] decides to help will get the player city. And so, [Vanguard] wouldn't choose to fight with [Zhan Long] right now, unless they really were stupid!"

Meng Yao smiled. "Brother's also become more calculating I see..."

"Not at all, I've just experienced more and learned quite a lot...."

"Ok!"

.....

As the moonlight watched over them, the Guild Master of [Zhan Long] took his level ten sister into the depths of the Ba Huang City Forest.

Firestone Canyon was a map that was very close to Dragon City and the Hybrid Demon Territory.

The map took up at least 30% of Ba Huang City's territory and it was an extremely fertile piece of land. All of the monsters here were at least level 70-150. Legend has it that nobody has ever been in the depths of Firestone Canyon. This map has been split up between [Vanguard], [Prague] and [Flying Dragon], but there are quite a few other players who also come here to grind levels. For the most part, Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao Warrior would look the other way. After all, the most important goal was to raise their guild's reputation, not destroy it.

.....

It was already pretty late and I took Meng Yao into the Canyon. All along the way we saw players fighting lower level monsters. Meng Yao was only Lv 10, so

there were a few Lv 80 monsters that we attracted ago from, even though we were 70 yards away. All I had to do was hold her hand and guard from in front of her. I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword and beat them all at once with support from my Flaming Tiger God.

After we passed through the forest, the monsters slowly became stronger and more high level. When we reached a deeper part, we were already seeing Lv 100 Thunder Tier Monsters—Thunder Snakes. This was a type of poisonous snake that lived in the depths of the forest. They were the similar to rattlesnakes and could make a sound, but every time they shook their tails, the sound of thunder would ring. From a distance I could read out the stats of the Thunder Snakes and I said in the team chat , “Meng Yao look, these are Lv 100 Thunder Tier monsters. They have [Poison Shot] and [Thunder Tail] as their two main skills. One is distance type skill and the other is close combat. I’ll go first. You just follow by my side. Be careful of the [Poison Shot], that will instantly kill you. Make sure you maintain a maximum 10 yard distance from me.”

“Got it brother!” She said with a smile.

I opened my palm and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]. “Peng!” three swords flew out and pierced the Thunder Snakes. My Flaming Tiger God then leapt out and the Thunder Snake also shook its tail. It reared up fiercely and began spitting its tongue out as its tail sparked with flashes of lightning. It threw an attack right into my shoulder. I felt my arm go numb. It dealt 741 damage. Not bad, my defense was just too high. Furthermore, I had 30,000 health, receiving 741 damage didn’t hurt or even itch.

I swung my two swords and dealt 7 continuous attacks. The Thunder Snake’s health dropped to the bottom. Meng Yao smiled at me, “Brother is so strong! Keep up the good work!”

Right at that moment, the Thunder Snake opened it enormous jaws and began spitting a green poison. It had around a 15 yard range and I immediately shouted, “Not good, Meng Yao be careful. Retreat!”

Right as I said that, Meng Yao raised her sword and retreated 5 yards, just dodging outside the range of the attack. Just as I thought, my sister was very clever. Her game sense was probably just above my own.

When I cut the Thunder Snake in half, another one suddenly spawned behind Meng Yao. Without any hesitation, she raised her sword and charged straight towards me and created a beautiful Z, easily dodging the chain of attacks from the Thunder Snake.

“Shua shua...”

With the death of the two Thunder Snakes, Meng Yao had two flashes of golden light fall upon her and she rose from Lv 10 to Lv 17. He he, the speed at which she was leveling up was just too fast. For new players, having a high level player help them grind levels had an amazing effect on their development speed.

“Waoh...”

Meng Yao blinked a few times and smiled. “Brother, I’m leveling up so fast. Keep it up! Do you think I’ll hit Lv 60 tonight?”

I shook my head, “Nope. If we only kill Thunder Tier Monsters that are over Lv 100, then you’ll be able to hit Lv 70 by tonight, and Lv 80 within three days. In half a month hitting Lv 90 wouldn’t be impossible. When the first batch of players were grinding levels, we didn’t have any Lv 100 monsters to grind, nor any high level experts to help us.”

Meng Yao giggled and patted my shoulder, “Brother is the best. I’ll be relying on you tonight...”

“Yup, let’s go!”

.....

Less than half an hour later, a few dozen Thunder Snakes had fallen under my sword and Meng Yao successfully hit Lv 30. Extremely excited, she pulled out the gold armor and equipment that I had prepared for her and put them on. I held my sword and leaned against the tree and contentedly watched as my sister switched equipments. One after another, gold equipments appeared on her. I had not paid so much attention to her for many years. That silly girl’s figure was becoming more and more mature. Without me noticing, she had grown into a great beauty. And all this time I thought that she was still the little girl with tears and snot all over her face.

Looking at my expression, Meng Yao blushed, “Brother, what’s up?”

I smiled. “Nothing, I was just thinking that our Meng Yao has grown up very beautifully. You’ve already become a beauty....”

She blushed, “Brother, don’t tease me! When I was a sophomore you even said that I had a flat chest at the airport...”

“I did not!”

“Humph hmph...” She looked at me with a playful smile. Slowly the golden shield melded together with the iron umbrella. She then picked up the golden sword and walked over still smiling, “Brother, Wan Er... the beauty Cang Tong really has a great figure. It would make anyone jealous... plus, I heard in the game discussions. Apparently Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Cang Tong’s relationship is above average..... Brother, you need to tell me the truth, are you and Wan Er lovers?”

I was startled. Lovers seemed to hit a little too close, but at the same time it seemed like the right word. I thought about it for a second and then shook my head with a smile, “Not at all. Meng Yao, when did you become such a gossip?”

“Just tell me the truth, gosh. I won’t tell Auntie...”

“We really aren’t. A least not at that moment..”

Meng Yao smiled. “Brother, you like her, right? If you like someone, your eyes will show it...”

I didn’t deny or accept, “Focus on grinding, you gossip!”

“Alright...”

.....

As we continued walking through the forest, I targeted a Thunder Snake and killed all of the snakes from Lv 100 to 103. Meng Yao maintained a distance from me and quickly leveled up. She didn’t even have to change classes. In two hours she managed to level up to 55. She was starting to truly look like a beautiful little Knight.

I felt pride welling up inside me. Under my guidance, as long as we gathered

her skills and equipment, then my sister would at least become a top tier player. Her battle potential was not below Yue Yao Yan or Matcha. She might even be a little stronger than the two. If it was like this, then it will be just as I planned and the person to represent [Zhan Long]’s Moon Elf Corps would be her. Plus, with Matcha and Meng Yao as the two female generals, [Zhan Long]’s future heavy armor cavalry will develop even further. As the wise man once said, first comes leadership, then comes the army. If the leadership is strong enough, then I won’t have to worry that the army isn’t strong, and in this leadership, I have trust.

“Sha sha....”

I stepped onto the dew covered grass. My sister and I had already charged our way into the depths of the forest, but that wasn’t a problem. We continued sprinting forward. Our goal today was to level Meng Yao up to 70. Later, when we returned, I was going to find her a set of 70+ Emperor Tier equipment. That way she’d have a good defense and health. As for her attack power, Meng Yao had been stacking all of her points in Strength, so her attack wouldn’t be a problem.

“Ji Ji..”

With a screech, the Thunder Snake died. “Hua la la” It dropped a glowing Emperor Tier spear. Feng Yao happily walked forward and picked it up. Then she smiled at me, “Brother, it’s an Emperor Tier spear, its attack power is 2000. The only problem is... its requirement is Lv 95. I still have a long ways to go...”

I smiled. “Don’t worry, when we go back to the city, Brother will help you prepare your equipment.”

This was the reality. Meng Yao was the only sister I had, of course I would treat her as a treasure. As long as I was there, Meng Yao’s equipment was not going to be crap. They would all at least be top tier. Plus, if I switch out my equipment, I would definitely give it to her. She was my sister, and even if I spoil her, nobody was to have a word about it.

.....

“Sha sha.... sha sha....”

Right as Meng Yao picked up the spear and was happily pouring over the stats, several people suddenly appeared behind her. All of them seemed to not bear any good will towards us. Behind them came a group of people, it was a 20 man team. Furthermore, the team leader looked a little familiar. It was Dawn Hero from [Wrath of the Heroes]. Due to Thousand Suns past, we've had quite a few problems with that bastard.

"Well look what we have here..."

Dawn Hero raised his long sword and looked at me with a grin, "I was wondering who it was, so it was the Guild Master of [Zhan Long], grinding levels in a crap place like this. Hehe, who's that beauty? Xi Yao Ge Jin, she looks quite pretty. I never thought that after Guild Master Xiao Yao got Cang Tong, Cang Yue, and Thousand Suns, he's still feel unsatisfied. Are you now taking newbie girls around to pick them up?"

I narrowed my eyes and walked forward, protecting my sister. I said, "Dawn Hero, just what are you b\*tching about. How come I can't understand you?"

Dawn Hero coldly laughed and said, "Don't understand? How can someone like you not understand. Look how powerful you are in this game. That's right, doesn't that mean that you should understand everything?"

As he said that, Dawn Hero raised his long sword and smiled at Meng Yao, "That beautiful girl 'Xi Yao Ge Jin', listen up. Right now I'm going to tell you just what kind of a person Xiao Yao Zi Zai is. Even though he says that he 'Fights for the weak', in the end, all he does is bully the weak and pick up girls in game. With all those beauties in [Zhan Long] who knows how many he's already been with. He says all those words of justice and equality, when in reality all he does is unspeakable things. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, do you dare say that you aren't that kind of a person?"

I was startled. I had not expected Dawn Hero to slander my name like that, and in front of my sister of all people. Too bad he miscalculated. How could he have known that Xi Yao Ge Jin was my own sister!

"He he... brother, you really have offended a lot of people...."

Meng Yao tugged on my arm and then raised her gold sword and walked forward. She then glared at the other party and clearly said, "Dawn Hero, why

don't you give your black heart a rest. Xi Yao Ge Jin is just my ID. My actual name is Li Meng Yao and I am this Xiao Yao Zi Zai—— Li Xiao Yao's sister. I love my brother, but I don't want to be with him. Do you understand?"

Dawn Hero's shuddered. The Berserker behind him said, "Sh\*t, team leader, we miscalculated.... what do we do, should we just drop the act?"



# Chapter 549 The Fire Beacon

Looking at the 19 people behind Dawn Hero, I couldn't help but smile. I suddenly stabbed my Zhen Yue Sword into the ground, "Peng!" Dou Qi surged around me and I activated my [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Dragon's Whistle of Thunder and Lightning]. I then glanced at them and softly said, "Why don't you call on some more friends, 20 people isn't enough to even look at!"

The Berserker became angry, "So arrogant! Aren't you just 12th place in the CBN Battlement Rankings? You still have one head and two eyes and were born from a father and mother. You aren't some superman are you?"

As he said that, he swung his battle axe and charged forward and launched a [Battle Axe Throw]!

I saw the attack coming and pulled my Zhen Yue Sword out and threw a slice forward!

"Keng!"

Sparks flew and the [Battle Axe Throw] was pushed back. The Berserker then caught his battle axe and leapt up, throwing a [Skysaker Slash] from above. He had no idea just how big the gap between our skills were. Nor did he understand that all of his skills could easily be parried, meaning that my stats completely overpowered his own.

I looked up at him and smiled. Then with a slight wave of my right hand, "Keng!" I knocked back his battle axe. Then I raised my Cloud Stepping Boots and kicked his abdomen with all my strength!

"Peng!"

"4132 ! "

The Berserker grunted and flew backwards, tumbling into the grass. Miserably, he slowly stood up and raised his battleaxe shouting, "I'm taking you down with me!"

At that moment, Dawn Hero roared, "Old Six, that's enough!"

As he said that, he threw a dirty look at me and said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai isn’t someone that we can deal with. Let’s go. Today’s business will end here. Vice Guild Master Little Piggy has told us before, unless it was for a guild event, otherwise we are not to battle with [Zhan Long]. We cannot break our guild rule now. Let’s go, we’ll just continue killing monsters and grinding over there.”

“Alright...” The Berserker glared at me and said, “Just you wait, I will duel with you soon!”

I didn’t bother with him. There was absolutely no need to. Some people aren’t just confident or determined, but rather have no idea what powerful people there are in this world. The Berserker in front of us right now was someone whose self confidence was completely baseless. And so, in my eyes, there was no need to pay any heed to such a man.

.....

I lead my sister forward and continued to kill monsters and grind levels.

We kept grinding all the way until 3 o’clock at night, Finally, with a golden shower of light, Meng Yao hit Lv 70.

I turned around to look at her and smiled. “Tired?”

“Yea, a little.” She smiled back at me, without hiding any of her weariness.

“Then go to sleep. We still have lots of time for you to grind your levels!”

“Ok! Brother should sleep soon too.”

“Alright!”

.....

I looked at my friend list and saw that Dong Cheng and Wan Er’s names were all grey, showing that they had already logged off. They were probably tired too. I then took Meng Yao back to the city and picked out a Lv 70 Purple Tier equipment at National Beauty, bringing her health up to 7000. This way she wasn’t going to get instantly killed. All we needed to do next was work hard.

When I logged off, I sat in the room and drank a cup of warm water. I then squinted at the light outside. I reached out with my Yi Hai and made sure that the area was safe. But I still had an unsettling feeling. I walked outside and

softly closing the door behind me. Standing outside of Wan Er's door, I reached up to knock, but then stopped myself. Finally, I put it down. Nevermind, she was probably asleep.

I walked onto the deck beside the bed and leaned outside to feel the night breeze. Reflecting on the experiences of the past two months, I realized that these past two months were the warmest that I've felt in many years. I had the game, friends, and a girl that I liked by my side. Just thinking of Wan Er and Dong Cheng made me subconsciously smile. Without thinking, she had already become the most important person in my life. (Why'd he mention both of them.-.)

"Ka..."

I heard a soft sound from the hallway. A few seconds later, Wan Er appeared in her doorway wearing a pretty nightgown. It was hard to see anything under the soft dawn light, but she still recognized me and smiled. "I knew you wouldn't be able to sleep...."

I smiled back, "You too, you haven't slept either..."

"Yea." She walked forward and a fragrant perfume wafted to me.

I asked, "Are you worried about something?"

"No...." She shook her head and stood beside me. She then looked at the bars and KTVs below us and smiled. "It's just that after seeing you and Meng Yao, I feel like your sibling relationship really is good. Even I'm a little jealous..."

I was a little startled, "Idiot, what are you jealous about?"

She looked up at me, her eyes had a sliver of annoyance, "I hate how you don't spoil me the same way, do you understand?"

I was dumbfounded. My heart was awash with emotions. I didn't know what to say. Wan Er's beautiful eyes stared into my own without a hint of wavering.

In the next moment, I couldn't keep it up against her and looked down and softly kissed her red lips while my arms wrapped around her back.

Wan Er didn't push away and seemed to return the kiss back. Her body quivered slightly. She then raised her two arms, but didn't have the courage hug

me back. After a few seconds, she finally hugged me tightly. She then buried her face into my neck and I felt soft tears wet my shirt.

“What’s wrong?”

I looked down at her.

Wan Er shook her head and softly whispered, “It’s nothing, just hold me....”

“En.”

The two of us held each other under the night wind. Wan Er was only wearing a nightgown and softly shivered. All I could do was hold her tight.

After nearly half an hour, I softly patted her long hair and said, “Hurry up and go to sleep, don’t catch a cold....”

“Then us... what are we going to do from now on?” She hesitantly asked.

I smiled and reached out and held her face in my hand, “Little miss, when I’m Lv 100 and reached my fifth advancement, do you want to be my girlfriend?”

Wan Er broke into giggles and punched me, “That did not have an ounce of honesty in it. I don’t see any seriousness in that. Humph hmph, nope, not good at all. Say it again!”

“Wan Er, let’s elope to Ba Huang City and kill enemies side by side!”

“Eh... what version is that?”

“Little Miss, I love you, be my girlfriend! I will work as hard as possible to buy snacks for you!”

“Why are all of your confessions different!?”

“Just what do you want little missy....”

“We’ll leave it at that, hurry up and sleep you big idiot!”

“Alright... together?”

“In your dreams! My dad will beat you up, do you want to try?”

“Nevermind, when I reach Yang Yan Level, then I might steal you away. I’m still afraid of beatings right now...”

“好怂啊逍遥哥哥.....”

“So scary, Brother Xiao Yao....”

“.....”

.....

The next day, I woke up early and continued taking Meng Yao around to grind levels. She was going to fly back to Xia Men this Monday. Even though I could take her grinding while she was at school, but it was still better if we were together. We might as well treasure this time.

All the way until the night of Sunday, we finally leveled Meng Yao to 77 under my crazy regimen. We had only killed monsters that were around Lv 110 Thunder Tiers, or else she wouldn't have leveled up so quickly.

“Ka cha....”

In the late evening, my Dragon Reservoir Sword sliced through the head of a wolf and Meng Yao yawned behind me. She walked over and hooked my elbow and cutely said, “Brother, I'm so tired. How about we just grind to here? I still have a flight at 9 tomorrow morning, so I need to sleep early tonight. It's already 10 o'clock. Brother, if you still have the energy, why don't you practice your own levels?”

“Ok!”

I nodded, “Then Meng Yao, why don't you head back to the city and log off. That's right, your level is already pretty high. How about I accept you into [Zhan Long]? Make sure you work hard! Do your best to fight your way into the core and enter Zhan Long Hall!”

“Zhan Long Hall...” The little girl's eyes were filled with hope and respect, “Wu, that's the dream of anyone in [Zhan Long]. Alright, then I'll work even harder and surpass Li Mu and Wang Jian and become the first member in Zhan Long Hall! Why don't you add me into the main guild first!”

“Ok.”

I glanced at the main guild and saw that there was still three empty spots and so I added Meng Yao into one of them. In the next moment, a guild notification appeared, stating that the player Xi Yao Ge Jin was successfully added to the

guild.

In the end, her addition to the guild created a wave of excitement——

Li Mu said, “Eh? Xi Yao Ge Jin has joined the guild? Eh.... and she’s immediately become a Flag Bearer. That doesn’t seem right, and it looks like the Guild Master himself brought her. What is this? Guild Master, explain!”

I smiled. “Guess!”

One Second Hero exclaimed, “You aren’t trying to pick up some new girl are you? Have you asked Cang Tong for her opinion yet?”

Wan Er smiled. “I don’t have any opinion, don’t ask me....”

Matcha said, “Looking at Xi Yao Ge Jin’s picture, she’s a beauty... Boss, you’re going to have to tell the absolute truth. Just where did you get this sister? It must be a new player..”

Old K roared, “Li Bastard, you beast. You’re actually picking up such a pretty little girl, beast!”

Wolf couldn’t help but smile, “Ha ha, you guys are killing me...”

Old K said, “What are you smiling about?”

Wolf said, “Xi Yao Ge Jin, just look at that name. If I’m not wrong, it must be Brother Xiao Yao’s only sister, Li Meng Yao, right?”

Dong Cheng, “So in the end Little Wolf came out as the smart one. Meng Yao, why don’t you come out and give everyone a wave!”

Meng Yao giggled, “Hi everyone, I’m Meng Yao, Guild Master’s sister. Please take care of me. I’ve just joined the game for two days, so there’s going to be a lot I need to ask about from everyone!”

Old K laughed, “You really are Meng Yao? We haven’t seen each other in so long. Do you still remember your brother Old K?”

Meng Yao smiled back, “Of course I remember you. Has Brother Old K found a girlfriend yet? How about I introduce someone to you? We have beauties everywhere in our university....”

Old K, “You’re just like my own sister....”

.....

I smiled and turned off the guild chat. Let's just let them talk amongst each other. Right now, I wasn't sleepy yet. I felt a need to find something to do. Right at that moment, I saw smoke suddenly rise from the northwest skies of Firestone Canyon. It was Dragon City raising a flame. That... that's a beacon?!

"Ding!"

System Notification: Hello, your home city Dragon City is currently under attack from the Hybrid Demons. Please hurry up and provide reinforcement!

# Chapter 550 Grave Digger Demon

Dragon City's been ambushed?

I was stunned. I never thought that the Hybrid Demon Invasion would come this quickly. Were they planning on leading a sweeping victory after Dragon City lost so many soldiers to Graveyard of the Heroes?

I decided to not ponder about it and quickly pulled my sword out of its sheath. I then took my Flaming Tiger God and sprinted straight towards Dragon City. Firestone Canyon wasn't very far from Dragon City, all it would take was 10 minutes of running. Not long after, I arrived at Dragon City. I looked up and saw that one NPC guard was raising a bow and aiming at me. He shouted, "Who are you? How dare you come to the foot of Dragon City?"

I raised my arm to show the insignia and said, "I'm one of you. Let down a rope so I can climb up!"

"Oh, yes sir"

A rope dropped down from the wall. I grabbed onto it and scaled the wall. A few minutes later, I arrived in the snow covered city. All around us the soldiers were alert and preparing for battle and the city seemed a little colder than it usually was. Not too far away, a berserker held his battle axe in one hand and a heavy boulder in the other as he walked towards the north. It was the Vice Commander of the Dragon Knights, Su Ke.

Su Ke recognized me from afar and shouted, "You, you came right on time. Dragon City doesn't have enough people. Having an expert like you would be great. Hurry up and follow me. That crowd of damned Hybrid Demons have not let us rest for a single second this entire night. We must hold up until dawn, or else Dragon City will be in danger!"

I nodded and ran towards him while asking, "Su Ke, what Hybrid Demons invading us?"

Su Ke gritted his teeth and said, "Level 2 Hybrid Demons, Grave Diggers, and Level 1 Hybrid Demons, Demon Hunters. There looks to be around 500 of them,



and they're very organized. Frost has already sent out an order to prepare for all circumstances. Even Dragon City's northern cliff has become a possible target. God damn it!"

I was stunned, "500 Level 1 and 2 Hybrid Demons?"

"Yes!"

"Let's go!"

"Alright!"

Su Ke led me forward. I saw a group of Dragon Knights clothed completely in army gear rushed towards the northern side of Dragon City. In the north, was a thousand meter wall that was extremely thick and had a pretty good defense. On top of the wall were fire beacons, shooting towers, crossbows and boulder piles. I couldn't possibly imagine how those Hybrid Demons were planning on breaking through.

"Sha sha sha...."

Stepping onto the soft snow, I saw a group of people running towards the northern wall. Teams of foot soldiers marched to the wall to begin forming a defense. Each one of them held a heavy shield. Their eyes stared into the darkness, filled with determination to stop whatever enemy came at them.

"Shua!"

An iron spear flew forward and "Pu Chi!" forced a Dragon City Soldier to retreat several steps. His throat had been pierced through and blood spurt forward. He fell to the ground twitching and clutching his throat. I had seen that attack before. It was the Demon Hunter's [Iron Spear Throw]. It was enough to instantly kill a medium level NPC!

At the border of the city, a beautiful figure flashed by. Frost raised one hand and the dimension around the northern border began to shift. The spears of two Demon Hunters stopped midair and shifted direction. She shouted, "Careful, the Gravedigger Demons are here!"

I rushed towards the border of the city and climbed atop an icy crossbow to look down at the foot of the wall. There, I saw some kind of monster that was

around 3 meters tall start growling and scaling the wall. Its two hands were replaced by some kind of blade. “Ka ka ka” it screeched as its blades dug into the cliff. It had four feet attached to its body, each one digging into the wall. It swung its two arms and cackled . From a distance, I could read its stats——  
[Gravedigger Demon] (Type: Level 2 Hybrid Demon)

Level: 105

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: [Rage Twist] [Piercing Scream] [Shredder]

Introduction: Gravedigger Demons, one of the many tribes living in the Hybrid Demon Territory. These Gravedigger demons used to be half beast half man, but their spirits had fallen and their bodies changed due to the experiments of an alchemist. They swing their two hands and can slice up anything, no matter how hard or sturdy it is. The thing they love most is digging graves and eating the dead bodies. Because of their large numbers, these Gravedigger Demons have always been part of the main force of the Hybrid Demons. Rumor has it that the scariest part of these demons is that they can dig through even a 10 meter thick wall. Furthermore, they can use those blades of theirs to cut through any shield. They are one of the humans ancient nightmares

I looked down and saw the Gravedigger Demons rushing towards us. Its four legs dug a deep pit into the cliff and screeched.

Su Ke pursed his lips and smiled coldly, “Damned beasts, f\*ck ooff!”

As he said that, he threw the boulder in his hands. “Shua!” it dropped down the cliff. However, right as it fell before the Gravedigger Demon, it raised its arms and “Ka ka ka!” dealt four slices, cutting the boulder into pieces. Naturally, Su Ke’s boulder attack was of no use.

“Archers!” Da Lin waved his iron arms and shouted. “Shoot these beasts to death, these god d\*mn grave digging trash!”

On the city, a group of Dragon City Knights all pulled their bows and “Sou sou

sou!” let their arrows fly, firing right into the Gravedigger Demons bodies. However, due to the tough skin of the monsters, they lost at most 70% of their health. There was no way to kill them in a short amount of time. On the flip side, the iron spears that flew from the darkness were able to instantly kill our Dragon City Knights.

I felt my heart freeze. The Hybrid Demons north of Dragon City really weren’t simple to deal with. The charge from these Gravedigger demons posed a threat, while the Demon Hunters’ long range attacks instantly killed our men. To think that they would be able to create such a complete combo. Once the Hybrid Demons focus on invading us, then Dragon City would truly be thrown into a situation just like Wang Yang’s leaf in the ocean. Trying to hold off these Hybrid Demons didn’t seem like a very possible task.

On the other side, Another two Gravedigger Demons appeared below the city. They climbed the wall as they charged towards the city. Furthermore there appeared to be more coming from the distance. There were at least 100 Level 2 Hybrid Demons following behind them. These monsters

“Kong kong....”

The first Gravedigger Demon was covered in arrowheads but it continued pushing forward. By the time it was within 10 meters of the top of the wall it suddenly halted and began dealing a whirlwind of blows at the wall. “Keng keng keng” sparks flew and the brick and mortar was being scratched away inch by inch. And just like that, Dragon City’s wall began to shudder.

“Oh no....”

Su Ke raised his battle axe and roared, “Do not let them cut or else this wall isn’t going to last through the night! Archers, fire everything at those b\*st\*rds!” However, the attack power of the archers was just too limited!

I gritted my teeth and suddenly leaped onto the wall. Da Lin roared, “Hai, youngster, are you trying to kill yourself!?”

I didn’t reply and jumped off. My Ruler’s mantle fluttered in the wind behind me. I reached my arm behind me and pulled out my Zhen Yue Sword. With blades in both hands I launched myself towards the first Gravedigger Demon. The second I was above his head I raised my swords and dealt a [Wind Blade]+

[Strength of a Thousand Men]. I then dealt another combo with seven attacks and a chain of damage numbers flew up.

“4927 ! ”

“2428 ! ”

“2717 ! ”

.....

The damage numbers weren't that bad. At least I could break through their defense. After my chain of attacks the Gravedigger Demon's health dropped to the bottom. The Dragon Knights on the wall took the chance to shoot a volley of arrows. I followed up with a Lv 10 [Combo] of 6 attacks, then stabbed my Zhen Yue sword into its eyes. I raised my hand and activated [Great Realm of Desolation], killing the monster.

“5717 ! ”

I finally killed it. “Shua” my experienced jumped up. Hehe, this experience is truly above average!

“Ao ao...”

The Gravedigger Demon screeched its last and suddenly started to fall off the wall. Frost hurriedly glanced at me and shouted, “Careful...”

I fell with the Gravedigger Demon, but I wasn't nervous at all. I sheathed my Zhen Yue sword and then opened my left hand, letting the Dragon's Hook fly out. “Peng” it buried itself into a stone at the top and I pulled myself forward. “Pa!” I stepped onto the snow on the wall and smiled while catching my breath, “Finished one of them off...”

“There's even more. Looks like tonight will be a very difficult one!”

I didn't respond and just raised my sword and stood at the border of the wall. I then raised my left arm and let my Zhen Yue sword fly out with [Blade Spin]. The sword continuously sliced through a Gravedigger Demon that was cutting away at the wall. I combined with a [Great Realm of Desolation] and three sets of [Azure Dragon Crossbow]s, putting all my strength into fighting them off.

“Pu pu pu....”

The green arrows of the [Azure Dragon Crossbow] continuously kept pierced through the Gravedigger Demons, and within 10 minutes, helped me finish off 14 of the demons. Without a doubt, the Mohist Five Scrolls will prove to be extremely useful in the future. This [Azure Dragon Crossbow] was already a godly weapon for city battles. It had increased my long range attack potential exponentially!

Around an hour later, Su Ke suddenly stepped up to the border of the wall and pointed into the distance, "Light Bullets, shoot over there!"

Four Dragon Knight Archers turned their machines in that direction and shot right into the field north of Dragon City. The area lit up and all we saw were countless Demon Hunters suddenly appear. They each watched the Light Bullet fall and then suddenly became ferocious towards it.

"....."

On the wall, Su Ke and Frost fell silent. None of them had thought that there would be so many Hybrid Demons. There were at least 1000 Demon Hunters at the foot of the wall. Even if they weren't as strong, their numbers were frightening. If they were to just continuously throw spears they could probably kill every Dragon Knight in this city. We didn't even have that many soldiers in the first place. How could we take such an attack?

"Keng!"

Frost leaned against a stone and looked into the horizon. Her beautiful eyes had a sliver of hope as she softly said, "Just one more hour until daylight. We must stand against them. We've already lit the fire beacons. Lord Luo Lin is training knights in Firestone Canyon. He will definitely bring reinforcements before dawn. Behind us is our home, we cannot give them an inch!"

Da Lin and I nodded, "Yes!"

# Chapter 551 A Successful Defense

“Grrrr....”

In the midst of the cold wind, a bone chilling roar could be heard.

Next to me, a Dragon City soldier couldn't help but shudder. His thin eyebrows rose in fear. He looked to be at most 20 years old, and had the face of a higher class born citizen. He most likely didn't predict that he would face an ambush after coming to Dragon City, nor did he think that he would be up against such a powerful enemy.

Hybrid Demons was a name that could make the entire continent shiver. In the past, we had all thought that these terrifying demons had been pushed back by the seventeen heroes north of the Ice Ridge Mountains. We had even thought that after the savage battle of the Graveyard of Heroes, that most of the Hybrid Demons had been killed off and that they'd lose all courage to try and invade us again. But we were wrong. Ten thousand years had passed, and in those ten thousand years, they had been recovering their strength and training for this day. Those ancient fourteen King Level Hybrid Demons had been sharpening their claws this entire time and now, they were going to bring their forces upon the continent.

.....

“My lord...”

The young Dragon City soldier was trembling and he could barely grip his halberd. He looked at me and whispered, “My lord, tell me, I'm going to die here today, aren't I? Isn't that right?”

I was silent for a few seconds and then looked at him square in the face, “Throw away all of the weakness in your heart and face the upcoming battle with courage. Maybe what you have said is right, but maybe you are wrong.”

“But my lord...” His eyes quivered with fear as he said, “Even the fully experienced soldiers were ripped to pieces by the Gravedigger Demons. Even Lord Ah Cai who brought me here to be recruited in the army had an iron spear

pierced through his heart. He didn't even close his eyes when he died... My lord, these Hybrid Demons aren't something we can deal with, isn't that right? We're going to die here!"

I gritted my teeth and calmly responded, "I do not know. But, now that I am here in Dragon City's territory, I will not even think about these doubts. All you need to do is focus on one thing. That is to battle until the very end, and protect the home behind you!"

"I.... I miss my family..... My father is the Viscount, I.... I want to inherit his position when I go back. I do not want to continue this battle...."

With that, he threw down the halberd in his hand and the Dragon City insignia on his shoulder and began to run into the distance.

Su Ke looked back and said, "Wei, that bastard. How can you be so weak. Did you completely forget the promise that you made when you joined Dragon City?" Damn it, you're a f\*cking coward. The shame of Dragon City!"

Before he even finished his sentence, a screech cut through the air!

"Kong..."

A black figure suddenly flew through the air. It was some kind of monster with wings. Its arms were attached to these wings, and it flew right over the head of the escaping soldier. That soldier's head was cut clean off and the monster's tongue slipped right in with a "Pu Chi" and continued its flight, screeching into the air.

"Peng!"

With an explosive sound, crowds of flying type monsters began to crash against an invisible wall. They screamed as they rammed into the walls. In the sky, Frost's beautiful figure began to descend and she swung her Severing Beauty. "Ka Cha!" the monster's body was cut in half and it fell straight towards the ground, spilling blood upon the white snow. At that moment, I could finally see its name. It was a Level 3 Hybrid Demon, The Predator. It was a flying type enemy that was extremely fearsome.

Frost slowly descended onto the city wall and looked up at the night sky as she said, "Su Ke, order a small team to alert the sky army. Looks like it's not safe

up there anymore. These Predators... they must have been watching us for a long time. Have everyone begin to pull in the ground defenses. We cannot be pulled apart, or else we'll suffer losses to these Predators..."

Su Ke nodded firmly and said, "Yes my lord!"

.....

I looked towards the foot of Dragon City and saw countless Gravedigger Demons coming. They advanced towards the city, bearing with the attacks from catapults and crossbows. Looks like they wanted to deal a single crushing blow towards Dragon City. Their plan was extremely clear. They were going to hollow out the Dragon City catapults and ruin our war machines, so that the Hybrid Demons wouldn't face any more obstacles.

"Keng!"

I pulled my Zhen Yue Sword out of its sheath once more and jumped over the city wall once again. The pressure was much greater this time. There were seven of these Level 2 Hybrid Demon Gravediggers waiting to battle me at the bottom of the wall. The odds were much lower this time...

When I leaped off, I pressed my right sword down and "Pu Chi!" cut through the attack of one of the Gravedigger Demons. Then with a swing of my left sword, I threw [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and cut through three of the Gravedigger Demons. At the same time, I provoked the attack of the rest of the Gravedigger Demons. They swung their arms and threw [Crushing Slash]. Even though my [Wall of Dou Qi] was incredibly sturdy, I still suffered enormous damage——

"9712 ! "

"8917 ! "

"9665 ! "

.....

I felt pain sear through my body and I immediately raised my hand and activated [Cleansing Rain] giving myself some health and then gulped down a potion. I was putting my life on the line to win some more time for Dragon City



——

“7282 ! ”

“1500 ! ”

I swung my blade and dealt a [Combo] right onto the head of another Gravedigger’s forehead, and my 20% drain activated. Finally my health was rushing up towards the halfway point. But in the blink of an eye, I was hit by another five attacks and my health nearly hit the bottom again. This time however, I had achieved my goal and pulled their attention away from destroying the wall.

With my boot, I stepped onto the blade of one of the Gravedigger Demons and “Peng!” leaped up. Then, I stabbed my Zhen Yue Sword into the wall and pulled myself upward. I then pulled my sword out and flipped around, dealing a [Wind Blade] and [Fierce Ice Blade] with my Dragon Reservoir Sword. Afterwards, I dealt a [Sword Tempest] and nailed three of the Gravedigger Demons into the wall. I then set up an [Azure Dragon Crossbow] and killed three of the Gravediggers at once. My experience flew up. With great risk, naturally comes great reward.

Right as my health was about to hit the bottom again, I climbed the city wall again. My face and battle robes were covered with blood, some from myself and some from the Gravedigger Demons. In the distance, countless Demon Hunters were continuously throwing their spears, threatening the Dragon City soldiers.

People were dying at every moment. Finally, after two hours, the city behind us was littered with countless bodies. In this battle, Dragon City had lost at least 500 soldiers, and even more were injured. NPC injuries were much different from that of players. They couldn’t just drink a potion and magically recover. They needed time in order to do so.

.....

“Keng!”

A battle axe flew out and cut right into a blade arm of one of the Gravediggers. Su Ke raised his battle boot and kicked a Gravedigger off the wall

as he shouted, “Frost, we cannot continue like this. Even with the new soldiers, our Dragon City has at most 2000 members. At this rate, we’ll have lost more than 25% of our soldiers. If we wait any longer, then Dragon City will become history!”

Frost looked up at the sky and softly said, “Dawn is almost here. Stand your ground, Lord Luo Lin will be here soon!”

“Yes!”

.....

Before he even finished his sentence, we all heard the sounds of hooves and marching coming from a distance. A messenger ran over and shouted, “Frost, Lord Luo Lin is here! He’s brought 5000 of the Desolate Cloud army to give reinforcements to Dragon City!”

Relief washed over Frost, “Really?”

“Yes!”

“Thank god... thank god....”

Not long after, an army of Ba Huang City soldiers marched into Dragon City, all of them wearing the Desolate Cloud insignia. Their equipment was some of the most top tier equipments in all of Ba Huang City. Furthermore, they were considered part of the royal army. On the other hand, Dragon City had to make their own equipment by hand, and so they looked more inferior than the Desolate Cloud soldiers. Luo Lin’s white cape fluttered in the wind as he walked over. He looked at the corpses lying in the middle of the city and furrowed his brows, “Frost, how did we suffer such great losses....”

Frost gritted her teeth, “But Dragon City is still standing!”

Luo Lin walked forward and patted Frost’s shoulder and said, “You have suffered. Do not worry, leave the rest to me. Now that I, and the Desolate Cloud army are here, these Hybrid Demons won’t dare even think about setting a single foot into Ba Huang Territory!”

“Yes my lord!”

.....

Luo Lin sent a command out and a number of Ba Huang City soldiers pushed a war machine forward. It was a black crossbow cart. The soldiers pushed each one of them to the border of the city walls. Under the command of the officer, tens of thousands of arrows were let loose. They sliced through the dawn sky. The countless Gravedigger Demons all screeched in pain as arrows pierced through their bodies. Several of the Gravediggers were killed by the hundreds of arrows.

Frost was shocked, "This... what is this machine?"

Luo Lin smiled back and said, "Originally it would've only taken me one hour to get here, but I came later because of this machine.... Its called the Black Cliff Crossbow and is an invention of the Ba Huang City army, made specially for the Desolate Cloud Army. We have a total of 7000 of these, and I brought 800. That's more than enough for Dragon City to use. The string is made from the whiskers of a rare deep sea whale and is extremely sturdy. The arrowheads were made from black ice iron, and has a terrifying penetration power. The arrow's body is around 2 meters long and has a range of 1000 meters. With these Black Cliff Crossbows, Dragon City's defense will exponentially increase!"

Frost wiped away the sweat on her forehead and she muttered, "Wonderful, wonderful..."

Luo Lin saw Frost' weary expression and he softly said, "You have worked hard, guarding the city for a whole night. You must be tired. Frost, go take all of the weary Dragon City knights and rest for a bit. I'll hold fort for you. I have already sent a message to Angela. At noon, the Blizzard Wind Army will camp south of Dragon City and provide reinforcements at any moment. Do not worry, Ba Huang City's defenses are complete, I will not allow Dragon City to fall!"

Frost nodded, "Yes my lord...."

After she finished, Frost turned around to look at me and smiled. She then walked over and wiped away the blood on my face and softly said, "You go rest too. You must be tired after last night...."

I nodded, "Understood!"

.....

“Ding!”

System Notification: Your quest to participate in this defense quest is complete. You have obtained 700 million experience!

I looked at my experience and saw that it had grown 41% over the course of the night. This proved that the best way to gain experience really was participating in these quests. I looked at the time and saw that it was early morning. I took a quick nap, and slept around 4 hours. Then, when my alarm beeped, I quickly got out of bed and washed up. I then took Wan Er, Dong Cheng and sent Meng Yao to the airport. We were reluctant to say goodbye. The little brat didn't want to leave me. After consoling her for a bit, she finally boarded the plane.

We returned to the university and I napped for another three hours. At night I got back on to continue the battle!

After I logged on, I looked at the official site and saw that the strength of the Hybrid Demon invasion was becoming increasingly greater. A great battle was awaiting us and this time it was going to be a main story quest!

# Chapter 552 I stand while my City Stands

The official website was painted red with a fiery battle banner at the top. Printed on the flag were three different swords above three events. This meant that three different events in the three great cities——

[Tornado Fort] Jiu Li City: A fierce tornado has ripped through a fort north of Jiu Li City. Following the tornado is a group of terrifying Hybrid Demons, lead by a King Tier demon commander known as “Son of Storms Ge Wen”. All Jiu Li City players may participate in this fight at the fort. The more monsters that are killed, the more points earned. The final reward will be decided based upon these points. Event Difficulty: SS Tier

[Dragon City] Ba Huang City: The Hybrid Demons of the North have finally begun to move under the command of “Hell’s Battlesong Lin Han”. He has lead a Hybrid Demon Army in an invasion. He will attack Ba Huang City with all of his might for 48 hours. All Ba Huang City players may participate in defending Dragon City. The more monsters killed, the more rewards given. However, this generous reward comes with great danger. The players that are killed in battle during this event will lose three levels, and the rewards will also be multiplied by three. Event Difficulty: SSS Tier!

[Rebellion] Fan Shu City: A group of strong rebels have entered into Fan Shu City’s northern mountains. The king has sent a command to have them killed. All players of Fan Shu City may participate. The more rebels killed, the higher rewards given. Please be careful, there is a high level King Tier Hybrid Demon BOSS amongst the rebels. Event Difficulty: SS Tier!

.....

I glanced at the different events and took a deep breath. This time the battle that Ba Huang City was about to face was just too great. An SSS Tier event. It was also the most difficult of the three cities. One could just imagine just how hard the battle was going to be. Plus, we were about to face an attack directly from the Hybrid Demon Army!

The worst part of it all was the fact that when a player died, they lost three

levels. That condition cut right to the bone. It was so bad, that I actually wondered just how many players would go help Dragon City in this savage event. This event was like adding hail to snow, and worsening the situation. I for one didn't have a choice, since I was one of Dragon City's members. No matter what, I couldn't let Frost face such a strong enemy on her own. That at least was my bottom line.

Log on!

“Shua!”

I appeared in the middle of Ba Huang City. There was only 120 minutes left until the Ba Huang City event began. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and saw that everything retained its usual flow. Only a few players had an urgent look on their face as they headed towards Dragon City. The rest continued to set up stalls for items, equipments and skillbooks. There wasn't even the slightest hint of preparation for battle.

I furrowed my brows and quickly began repairing all of my equipment. Afterwards, I replenished my potions and pills, and opened up the guild chat. Matcha was already calling for me——

Matcha: Boss, you're finally on! That Dragon City Event, if you die, you lose 3 levels. What should we do? Should we participate, or what? This event really is savage. Quite a few small and middle level guilds have decided to not join.....

Wolf: Yea, Brother Xiao Yao. We've already witnessed the strength of those Hybrid Demons. A skill from a Level 1 Hybrid Demon can already pretty much instantly kill the average player. If we go, wouldn't that be pushing it?

Wan Er: Calm down first, why don't we see what Pig has to say?

I took a deep breath and said, “This is an SSS Tier Main Event Quest. The difficulty of it definitely will not be small, but I think that [Zhan Long] ought to join. Even if our players will lose 3 levels, I think that we should still undergo this kind of experience. If we can't defend against the attack from these Hybrid Demons, then how are we supposed to face it in the future? Besides... from a more detailed point of view, I am one of Dragon City's players and my master is bound to the city. If Dragon City falls, then I will lose all my NPC masters. I cannot let Frost die. It is that simple!

Wan Er smiled: Yup, I knew you were going to say that!

Li Mu roared: That makes everything simple. After all, [Zhan Long]'s guild events have always been decided by the Guild Master. This will be the same. Our brothers believe in you, so let [Zhan Long] go to battle! Everyone begin preparing to set out for Dragon City. There's nothing more to say. If we stand, the city stands!

Old K laughed: Ok, everyone, to battle!

Dong Cheng: I'll let all of the divisions know. Right now, [Zhan Long]'s main guild has 24,000 players online right now and 12 divisions. Brother Xiao Yao, what do you think of Wan Er and my recruiting skills?

I hid a smile: With you two in [Zhan Long] along with Melon, Matcha, and Wolf, then I obviously do not need to worry about recruiting. Everyone, work hard and defend Dragon City! Don't disgrace the guild!

All of the officer level players nodded: Yes, do not dishonor the guild!

When I left the city, all of [Zhan Long]'s players were gathered at Ba Huang City forest. There were already quite a few people there. When I arrived before them, I saw that Matcha, Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Wolf, and Old K had all arrived. Matcha raised her golden shield and walked up to me with a smile, "Boss, 9000 people have already gathered here. At the moment, we'll be able to gather 20,000 within twenty minutes. When should we head out?"

"How about in thirty minutes!"

"Yes sir!"

I looked into the distance and said, "Send someone to scout out the situation. Which other guilds have decided to defend Dragon City?"

Wan Er crossed her arms in front of her chest and leaned against a tree. She smiled. "No need, from what I know, [Vanguard], [Prague], [Enemies at the Gate], [Valley of the Gods], [Blood Contract] and [Flying Dragon] along with 20 of the other top ranked guilds have all decided to participate. However, it doesn't seem like they are acting like us. [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Enemies at the Gate] have only sent out half of their soldiers, around 10,000 of them. They are probably worried that this quest will fail, and so they probably want to

maintain some of their strength.

I nodded, “Yes, that is all within reason. Looks like there are at least 500,000 players going to battle. To be honest, our chances are quite large. Looks like I didn’t have to worry too much.”

“Yup. I’ve stayed in contact with Yan Zhao Warrior, Simple, and Misty Cloud and kept a close eye on their movements. This way, we can act as a whole more easily.”

“Good!”

.....

Thirty minutes later, thousands of [Zhan Long] players had arrived at Ba Huang City Forest. The entire southern part was filled with our people. 25,000 of our players were online at the moment. [Zhan Long]’s military might was already much stronger than it had been before. This number made one truly proud. With 25,000 players online, we rivaled the size of [Vanguard] and [Prague]. No matter which way you look at it, [Zhan Long]’s strength was equal, if not greater than [Vanguard] and [Prague]!

Behind me, Wan Er and Qing Qian the two beautiful Vice Guild Masters quickly followed behind me. Dong Cheng, Li Mu, and Dancing Forest all smiled as they looked forward. On my left was Wang Jian, Glass Fox, and Yao Yan, the 12 Guild Masters of the divisions. Looking all around, you could see that everyone wore the [Zhan Long] insignia. I then pointed to the north and said, “Advance, we’ll set camp at Dragon City!”

“Yes sir!”

Everyone nodded and began marching towards the north. At the same time, quite a few of Ba Huang City’s other guilds also appeared in the forest. After all, this was a main event. Even though it was dangerous, at least 20% of the players would participate. Ba Huang City had 10 million players, and 50% of them were normally online. That meant that at least 1 million would participate in Dragon City’s fight.

.....

In less than an hour, we had arrived at Dragon City’s southern gate.



At the bottom, there was a sea of people. Dragon City did not have that much territory, and it originally couldn't fit that many people anyway. 100,000 players would already fill up the area. We needed to fight to gain a piece of land for ourselves.

Even the normal rope used to get into the city had been taken away. Instead, a pile of rocks was built up to create a simple hill, leading all the way to the top of Dragon City. Quite a few players were already climbing up the simple slope. At the entrance to the city, a dozen Dragon City Knights stood guard at the entrance.

“My Lord!”

A Dragon City Knight lowered his head in respect. Since I was Frost's student, and Frost was the number one warrior in this city, this amount of \_\_\_\_\_ was to be expected.

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and turned around to face the army before me. I then commanded, “We'll advance in waves. The main guild and Defense Army will go in first. Division One will then select teams to create our defense line. The rest will grind levels in Ba Huang City Forest. Do not go too far and prepare to come back at any moment. The killing power of these Hybrid Demons is far above average. Most of the Ba Huang City guilds won't be able to hold up against their attack.”

Wang Jian nodded in agreement. Wan Er, Li Mu, Qing Qian, and Dong Cheng lead a group of [Zhan Long]'s main forces and lead them up the path. Around 5000 of [Zhan Long]'s elites were climbing up the slope. The skies were covered with fluttering snowflakes. Everyone couldn't help but shiver. For a number of them, this was their first time in Dragon City and many were still stunned by the simple constructions around them.

I didn't hesitate at all and began to construct a formation front and center of the North Wall. [Zhan Long]'s 5000 laid out a defense line and took up around 50 meters. Everywhere you looked was a sea of people. Simple lead another group of [Vanguard] players and began to construct a formation to our left. On our right were players from [Prague]. Everyone here wasn't an idiot, and they knew that the center would take the most damage. Only big guilds like our own

could take that kind of attack.

.....

I stood at the border of the city. One step ahead was a thousand meter abyss. The crossbow machines and defense mechanisms that had been destroyed by the Gravedigger Demons had yet to be fixed. A simple rock construction was used to replace them. Just one wrong step would lead to death by falling, so all of the players that stood at the border were extremely careful and didn't move a single inch. The Dragon Reservoir Sword in my hand drooped and snowflakes slowly fell onto my armor. For the moment, all I could see was darkness as I looked out into the distance. A scream traveled to my ears on the wind. Who knew what kind of monsters were waiting for us in the distance?

# Chapter 553 Demon's Shadow

“Gu Dong!”

Looking into the northern forests, Li Mu couldn't help but gulp. He tightened his grip on his Tian Chen Sword and said, “There's only ten minutes left. Who knows what kinds of monsters the first wave of Hybrid Demons will be?”

Wan Er wryly smiled. “I don't know, but it'll probably be fierce! Li Mu, don't get instantly killed. As the number one player in Valiant Bravery, if you were to be instantly killed it would will destroy our soldiers spirits.”

Li Mu smiled. “If this was any other battle, I'd have the confidence to say that it's no problem. But today... our enemies are the Hybrid Demons. That's a much harder task. I'll just do my best....”

Qing Qian added, “Why's the enemy we're against so strong? While Jiu Li and Fan Shu City only have to get an easier SS Tier event? So unreasonable, too unfair...”

I replied, “Not necessarily right?”

Yue Yao Yan glanced at me, “Oh? What kind of wise advice does Guild Master have?”

I smiled. “It isn't any wise advice. However, the commander fighting Dragon City is Lin Han. He's ranked eleventh among the fourteen Hybrid Demons. He's pretty much at the bottom, whereas the Hybrid Demon Commander at Tornado Fort is ranked seventh among the fourteen kings. And so, even though we'll be facing more pressure overall, but the strongest BOSS may be the one Jiu Li City is facing. Either way, Fang Ge Que, Mu Xuan and Ye Lai aren't going to have an easy time.”

Yue Yao Yan smiled. “Alright, Guild Master is wise!”

.....

As we were talking, Qing Qian suddenly narrowed her eyes and said, “Careful, they're here!”

Right as she said that, a screech came from the near distance and the system sent out a message as Dragon City began to shake——

“Ding!”

System Notification: All players please be aware, the first wave of enemies are here. Be careful of the incoming danger!

.....

At the same time, Frost stood beside one of the Black Cliff Crossbows in front of the NPC camp and suddenly pulled out her Severing Beauty and shouted, “Careful, they’re here! Everyone prepare for battle!”

Figures began to appear from the blizzard before us. Clearly the ones with the slight figures were Demon Hunters. They carried long spears in their hands and began to screech. Just as expected, the Level 1 Hybrid Demons were the first wave!

“Make sure you defend against the ranged attacks from these Demon Hunters; When you’re targeted, immediately activate [Dou Qi Armor] and [Heavenly Shield Wall]!” I shouted from the front line. At the same time, I activated [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning], increasing the defense of all players around me by 40%. A crimson flag also appeared on Matcha’s shoulder. All friends within a thousand meters also got a 20% increase in attack power. This way, for the most part [Zhan Long]’s players were not going to be at a disadvantage.

The wind sliced at our faces and spears flew along with it. In the next moment, the first wave of spears descended upon the Ba Huang City players, instantly killing most of them. Screams of pain filled the air. I, Matcha, One Second Hero, and Wan Er all retreated several steps. We had been hit by the spears, but that didn’t necessitate us getting instantly killed. Of course, besides us core members, a dozen other [Zhan Long] members were instantly killed. The damage was terrifying.

A group of Demon Hunters screeched and raised their long spears. Then, with their sharp claws they began to climb the cliff. As they screeched, they also cursed, “Damn you all, these shameless humans have taken up the fertile Southern Lands for tens of thousands of years. We will take back this land. This

is a piece of land perfect for darkness, we cannot let those useless pieces of trash let it go to waste. Kill... Take the blood of our enemies to fill up the emptiness in our souls!”

Dancing Forest lightly flew up and then shot a [Meteor Shot]+[Hell’s Meteor Shower], raining it upon the incoming enemies. She then quickly descended, dodging the swords being thrown. Tang Xin and Matcha stood at the border of the wall, blocking the hits while receiving heals.

.....

On the other side, [Prague] and [Vanguard] were taking damage at an alarming rate. Flocks of players were being killed off. Even Simple was trembling from the ferocity of this attack. She raised an elegant eyebrow and said, “We cannot continue like this. If we keep this death rate up, don’t say 48 hours, we won’t even be able to last 24 hours....”

Jian Feng Han raised his sword and said, “Sister Yun, there’s no other way. Don’t let your heart be moved, this is a quest...”

“Yes.”

On the [Zhan Long] side, Wan Er’s beautiful eyes glanced across the landscape as she raised her iron umbrella and sent out a command, “Everyone in the front row retreat five yards. We’ll use the broken line to dodge these attacks. All ranged players in the back row, prepare your attacks. We’ll deal a blow that will make them regret even coming! Do not be polite!”

“Yes ma’am!”

Crowds of people began to retreat and noticed that they truly did not suffer as much pressure as they did before.

Shortly afterwards, they were accompanied by a hissing sound as the first wave of Demon Hunters appeared right in [Zhan Long]. I immediately unsheathed my Zhen Yue Sword and cast [Blade Spin] against the monsters. Dong Cheng Yue and Dancing Forest also started attacking with multiple AOE damage spells. The result was the entire wave of Demon Hunters to be completely slaughtered. The more people there is, the stronger one will be!

TL Note: AOE stands for area of effect which basically means a spell that is

targeted towards hitting multiple enemies.

However, as the numbers of the Demon Hunters continued to increase, the amount of pressure put onto the players also increased. Even high ranking players were unable to keep up with the flow of rapid attacks and ended up being stabbed to death. The entire battlefield of [Zhan Long] was engulfed in flames, battle marks, and screams. The amount of attacks did not stop even once. As the Demon Hunters screamed in agony, they also dropped their experience and equipment, to which we took in.

Very quickly, the entire field was in the complete control of the player guilds. The deaths of the players were considerably lower than the deaths of the monsters. The amount of experience was plentiful as well as the item drops. In a short time of two hours, many players were able to jump a level. However the amount of deaths were still really high. Out of the 5000 [Zhan Long] players that came, 1,000 perished in the fight.

The edge of the city was piled with the corpses of the Demon Hunters. As the Demon Hunters were already extremely scarce in numbers, their continuous attacks were easily dealt with. Li Mu and Wang Jian took players to sweep the fields and kill any last remaining monsters. Thus ended the first barrage of attacks by the Demon Hunters.

.....

“ Ha Ha...”

A Knight from [Prague] carrying a long halberd laughed as he picked up a ring drop, “My luck is great today, to think that a Divine Tier Ring would drop from a Level 1 Demon Hunter. It even has 12% life steal. Lucky me, lucky me...”

Right as he finished his sentence, he heard shouts from behind him. A huge shadow rose from the bottom of the city’s walls. A giant monster with 6 arms suddenly appeared. With 8 swords behind his back, he pulled out his swords and instantly stabbed toward the Knight. He was caught unaware as he was pierced by two swords.

“15288 ! ”

“17363 ! ”

As the Knight was instantly killed, his ring was also dropped down into the abyss. Damn, that's just too bad. [Prague]'s Uncle Yan Zhao is probably going to die from heartbreak!

“Damn!”

Yan Zhao raised his sword and yelled, “A Divine Tier ring! Gahhh! What the f\*ck is this? He can 20k damage to a Knight?”

Everyone looked over to see the boss of the first wave, “Demon's Shadow”, a Lv 101 Saint Tier BOSS. The boss for the first wave was bound to come sooner or later!

Jian Feng Han carried his long sword and yelled from afar, “Yan Zhao Warrior, do you need help taking down that boss?”

Yan Zhao Warrior pulled out his sword and stabbed it into the ground and yelled, “ No need! [Prague]! Expand the defensive formation! This first boss is ours. Commence attack! Archers attack the boss from afar. Tanks go attack the boss in close combat. Healers keep up!

It was the same tactic as before and relying on our strength in numbers. An enormous crowd of [Prague] players charged forward. Whittling down the BOSS' health was only a matter of time. Of course, this BOSS truly was fierce. It's six arms held 6 different blades and sliced through the crowds of people without any hesitation or obstacle. He was cutting people up as though he were wielding a kitchen knife. To top it off, he had a cruel smile painted on his face as he cut through [Prague]'s army——

“Ge ge, how come your attacks are so weak, little nubs!”

“Oh, I think I felt your hit there. Here, put a little more back into it you d\*mb\*ss\*s!”

“That bastard standing in the distance. All of the wrinkles on your face look as though an earthworm crawled all over it. Ha ha, I swear upon my name as the Demon's Shadow, you probably haven't even married yet!”

.....

Yan Zhao Warrior was infuriated by the BOSS' words. He raised his sword and

roared, “Kill, cut that motherf\*cker up! F\*ck, I’m p\*ss\*d!!!”

At that moment, everyone watching just felt highly amused. As the Guild Master of [Prague] he was actually provoked by a BOSS’ words. However, that BOSS was just too human like. He nearly pissed our Uncle Yan Zhao to death. These game designers really are too cruel.

A moment later and under Yan Zhao’s command, the Demon’s Shadow’s health had dropped to the bottom. Even though he had cut down hundreds of [Prague]’s warriors, he still couldn’t escape his final destiny. After all, he was just a Saint Tier BOSS. We didn’t need to fear that he had some kind of OP power like Lin Han. We’ve all witnessed Lin Han’s strength. To say that he could crush Dragon City with a single fist wasn’t an exaggeration, and that was what we were all worried about.

With a scream, the Demon’s Shadow knelt to his knees and died. With that, he dropped a pile of equipment.

Despite the good fortune, [Prague]’s players did not celebrate because their losses were just too great. That BOSS had cut down at least 400+ of their friends. Yan Zhao Warrior’s face didn’t have a shade of happiness either. All he did was furrow his eyebrows in worry. He began to go through the equipment and shared the information with us. There was one Saint Tier battle axe, one Valkyrie Tier Helmet and one Valkyrie Tier ring. Overall it was pretty good. At least the Saint Tier battle axe was still a treasure on the market. Exchanging three levels from 400 people was actually, in reality, pretty worth it.

.....

After the first wave’s battle finished, the ground before the city was in complete chaos. There was no time to sweep the battlefield. Very soon, another system notification rang through the sky. The second wave of monsters was coming — —

“Ding!”

System Notification: Players guarding the city be aware, the second wave of enemies have already reached the gates. Please proceed with caution!

.....



Li Mu gripped his long sword, his voice quivering slightly with excitement and nervousness, “The second wave, what are they going to be, Level 2 Hybrid Demons?”

I gulped, “Don’t jinx it. Let’s just hope they’re Level 1....”

# Chapter 554 Death God's Elegy

Snowflakes covered the sky and Dragon City's wind nipped at our faces. In [Zhan Long]'s formation, Li Mu, Wang Jian and Old K were all covered in blood and scratches. The freezing temperatures made their faces pale. Even their blades had a thin layer of ice and snow wrapped around them.

I jerked my arm slightly, letting the snow fall off of my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I looked into the distant darkness, my heart filled with nervousness. The second wave of Hybrid Demons had yet to arrive, but they must be extremely strong. Luckily Dragon City was built for the sake of defense. If Dragon City had been build on flatlands, then I'm afraid that we wouldn't have even been able to hold off the first wave.

.....

"Ji ji....."

From afar, a terrifying screech traveled to our ears. I jerked and said, "The second wave is filled with Gravedigger Demons. They're a type of Hybrid Demons whose arms have melded with their blades. Be careful, they have an extremely high attack power and they can dig through anything. They pose a huge threat to the city's defenses. This will be much harder to fight...."

"They can break the city walls?" Li Mu was stunned.

I nodded, "Yes. Yesterday, when I was doing a normal quest for Dragon City, I bumped heads with these Gravedigger Demons. Later, Archers, Mages, and Musketeers should get near the border. Use your firepower to attract the Gravediggers up here. Afterwards, warriors will surround one and cut it down. Let's start with this tactic for now. We cannot let Dragon City's walls be dug up those Demon Gravediggers!"

Li Mu and Wang Jian gave a firm nod, "Yes!"

After a few minutes, I could hear the screeches getting closer. As I had predicted, one after another the Gravedigger Demons appeared from the depths of the forest. Their enormous figures cast a large shadow and they

pierced their four legs into the cliff. Countless Gravedigger Demons were coming up on us!

“Charge!”

Under my command, Dancing Forest, Dong Cheng, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands, General Lian Po and Fox lead all of the ranged players to the border of the wall. I raised my blade and hundreds of thousands of arrows and spells flew forward. Everyone’s attack power was pretty high. Within seconds, they attracted the Gravedigger Demons to us. Matcha, Wan Er and I all pulled forward, creating a defensive line as the ranged players retreated behind us.

“Kong kong....”

The first Gravedigger Demon reached the wall and charged straight towards Dong Cheng. There was no way, that brat’s damage was just too high. With three spells she was able to cut the Hybrid Demon’s health by 10%.

I swung my sword out and “Keng!” blocked the Gravedigger’s attack with my Zhen Yue Sword. Not only did it cut off a couple thousand health, the attack’s momentum shook me and made me retreat backwards. These Level 2 Hybrid Demons had already surpassed me by quite a bit. There was no way, level and hidden stat’s wise, our gap was just too great. Thankfully I was the one who took the attack. If it was any other Knight, they probably would’ve been thrown into the sky already.

“Hold him off, use [Scatter Shot]!” I roared. If we came at the Gravedigger Demons all at once then our losses would be minimized.

Dancing Forest and General Lian Po shot [Scatter Shot]s one after another, but each one of them missed. Right at that moment, Qing Qian’s figure flashed by and [Gouge] flashed. It was a success! “Ka ka ka!” The Gravedigger Demon was forced back and a large chunk of its health was gone. With perfect Maneuvers, Wan Er came from the other side and activated [Twin Blade Harmony]+[Combo]. The first Gravedigger Demon to reach the top gave one last scream and fell, dropping an Emperor Tier set of leather wristguards.

On the other side, Tang Xin, Moon Feather and Star Blade were teamed together and killing another Gravedigger Demon. All at once, we lost four of our warriors. They had all pretty much been instantly killed. At this point in the

game, most of [Zhan Long]’s warriors had 10,000-15,000 health. There was no way they could hold off an attack from the Gravediggers.

“Hold him steady, we have to drag that Gravedigger Demon over here!”

I dashed towards the border of the city and set up an [Azure Dragon Crossbow]. The enormous jade colored giant loomed over us. “Shua shua shua!” It shot at the incoming monsters. Furthermore, the Azure Dragon Crossbow had a force back effect, making the Gravedigger Demon’s retreat backwards with a screech. A huge crowd of them had been shot back. Even after losing a good half of their health from falling, they kept climbing up. However, this way, it was much easier killing them off.

[Vanguard], [Prague] and [Enemies at the Gate] weren’t idiots. They all followed our example and used similar tactics. Dragon City’s northern field was painted crimson. For the sake of defending this city, crowds of players died in battle and blood dripped onto the fresh snow like small buds of sakura blossoms.

.....

[Zhan Long], [Vanguard], and [Prague], the three great guilds were able to hold their stance and not fall. After all, the three guilds could be considered as Ba Huang City’s number one. However, the rest of Dragon City didn’t necessarily have such a good outcome. Especially for those small to medium guilds. They couldn’t hold up against the Gravedigger Demons attack at all. Their death rate was shocking. Not half an hour later, nearly a thousand players had died under the blade of the Gravedigger Demons.

One group of Gravedigger Demons had already successfully reached the city walls and were laying massacre upon the players.

Glancing at the towers, Frost pulled out her Severing Beauty Sword and sent out a command. A hundred Dragon City Warriors raised their swords and charged over. These were originally Unsullied knights. They rode their Snow Wolves and let out a roar as they poured forward towards the crowd of monsters. The knights waved their swords and cut down the monsters before them. It seems that of everyone in Dragon City, only they could face these Level 1 – Level 2 Hybrid Monsters.

“We can’t hold them off any longer!!”

A scream came from the [Valley of the Gods]. Lu Dong Bing raised his staff and quickly retreated. His expression was furious, “What the motherf\*cking kind of quest is this? How come the monsters are so godd\*mn strong? How are we even supposed to fight against them?! Retreat, we can’t hold them off...”

The two Vice Guild Masters of [Valley of the Gods], War Tent and Ay Zi Ya had both turned around to run. However, ten Gravedigger Demons with half of their health still left sprinted forward and shouted, “Kill, cut down these shameless losers!”

In the end, the Gravedigger Demons chased them all the way into the middle of Dragon City to a small alley way. The Gravedigger Demons were trembling as they halted in their steps. One of them said, “Such a strong power, who is this? What kind of a person is here...”

In the darkness a black figure lunged forward, a Dragon City badge shining on its shoulder. It held a blade in one hand and swung it at the group of demons. At that second, the blade’s qi was released, cutting right through all ten of the Demons. At the same time it shouted, “To dare step into my Dragon City, you are looking to die!”

It was none other than the Ran Min. Gripping his bloody sword, he sprinted forward and with three to five attacks he killed all dozen of the Gravedigger Demons. A cold breeze blew through the city. Clearly, if any Hybrid Demons really dared enter the city, Ran Min would immediately slaughter them.

.....

After watching the situation behind us, Wolf gritted his teeth, “That NPC Ran Min really is broken. On the other hand, Old K, your Ran Min is....”

Old K raised his battle axe to block an attack and was thrown back by the Gravedigger Demons attack. Blood dripped from the corner of his mouth and he smiled. “Don’t say anymore. How can you compare me with an NPC? Motherf\*cker, it’s already pretty good if I don’t get instantly killed by these Level 2 Hybrid Demons. Look at [Vanguard] and [Prague]. How many of their people have been instantly killed!”

Li Mu swung his Tian Chen Sword and cut down a Gravedigger Demon in front of him. At the same time, he was thrown back by another attack. Wang Jian immediately rushed forward to protect him, thus preventing Li Mu from getting instantly killed. Everyone was working hard. On the bright side, the system was still a bit considerate. The crowds of Gravedigger Demons were marching in formation. If they had come at us all at once, then the players in the city would've probably all been slaughtered.

I roamed the entire frontline. On one hand, I focused on dealing as many attacks as possible, on the other hand I was protecting the [Azure Dragon Crossbow]s that I had set up. Again and again, my [Wall of Dou Qi] would shatter again and reform, shatter and reform. Like that, I helped hold off the storm for the [Zhan Long] players behind me. Luckily I had [Cleansing Rain] to support myself. That way I wouldn't be beaten up too badly. [Zhan Long]'s core took the most attacks compared to the other guilds, but we also killed the most monsters. Before our formation were countless piles of Gravedigger Demon corpses that were slowly evaporating away. That was enough to prove [Zhan Long]'s battle potential.

.....

As we were killing, Qing Qian suddenly walked over to me and said, "Brother Xiao Yao, Jiu Li City's battle has already ended. [Legend] took Jiu Li City's first player fort and is now putting all of its effort into the Tempest Fort event. Based on some reliable information, the monsters at the fort are also extremely strong Hybrid Demons. [Legend], [Judgement], and [House of Prestige] aren't losing any less players than we are..."

I nodded and glanced around. The number of players are us were getting less and less. I said, "Report on our numbers. If we have less than 4000, then immediately call on reinforcements!"

"Yes."

Beside me, Wan Er added, "We brought 5000 players here and we only have a little more than 2200 left. I've already talked with the Guild Masters of our divisions. The Third divisions Guild Master "Death God's Elegy" is about to bring reinforcements over. Thus, we'll replace the 2800 that we lost with them!"

I replied, "This is a battle of stamina. Tell her to prepare thoroughly. After these 2800 get here, this wave of Hybrid Demons will most likely be finished off within 3 hours."

"Don't worry, everyone has prepared themselves."

"Good!"

.....

Not long after, [Zhan Long]'s reinforcements arrived. An army of players with [Zhan Long: Division Three] insignias on their soldiers marched into the city. Standing before them was a high level Knight carrying a long spear. He was Lv 93 and his ID showed "Death God's Elegy". It was clear that he had put all of his points into explosive power. With a smile he said, "Guild Master, our losses are really great!"

"Mhm!"

I glanced at his equipment and couldn't help but ask, "Death God, your spear... it's Saint Tier?"

"That's right..." He grinned, "Last week our brothers went up the Ice Ridge Mountain to kill a BOSS and it dropped a Lv 87 Saint Tier equipment. Of course it's stats are a far cry from Guild Master's equipment, but it's enough for a Knight like me."

"I heard you were an explosive type Knight. How much health do you have?"

"Eh...." He coughed and said, "My attack power is at 6100, defense is 6500, health is 23,000. How is it, not bad right?"

I smiled. "Of the [Zhan Long] Knight type players, you're probably one of the top three. Keep it up!"

"Alright!"

He laughed and raised his spear, "Brothers, advance to the frontline. Let's let the main guild's brothers take a breather and show off our power!"

A large group of Division Three players charged forward and seemed to have no fear before the Gravedigger Demons attack. With that one charge, they lost 10 players already, but none of them retreated a single step. This bravery was

praiseworthy. If we had a few more charismatic Guild Master's like that, then what worries would [Zhan Long] have in our journey to the top?

.....

After killing for a long time, a dark cloud began to come towards us slowly. Within it, we could hear a screech.

“The BOSS is here!”

Li Mu narrowed his eyes and looked forward, “Our luck isn't bad, its coming right towards our direction. Looks like this BOSS is [Zhan Long]'s!”



# Chapter 555 Wind Ripper

The sky was starting to brighten as the sun began to rise. Dragon City still remained standing tall in the blistering wind and sleet. Even though our field of view wasn't very far, we were still able to see quite far away under the dawn light. In the dense forests north of us, we could hear the screeches of the evil demons. One after another, the Gravedigger Demons waved their blade arms as they rushed out from the thicket. Leading the army was a giant that was at least 4 meters tall. He had four arms, each holding a fierce blade. He wore a black armor and the six pack underneath would cause any of the players to tremble. Below his armor were four legs that each had a sharp point. He went straight for the wall and stabbed the points in to stabilize his footing. His fierce head swayed as he let out an ear piercing shriek.

“The BOSS is here, and he’s coming straight at us!” Wolf said with a smile.

I raised my sword in front of my chest and “Pa!” leaped onto one of the openings. I squinted at the BOSS and was able to read out its stats from a hundred yards away. I then shared it in the guild chat. Everyone was stunned. This BOSS wasn’t just strong——

[Wind Ripper Lin Jie] (Saint Tier BOSS)

Level: 102

Attack: 5700-7500

Defense: 7000

Health: 40,000,000

Skills: [Armor Break Slash] [Wind Slash] [Brave Shield] [Blood Tempest]

Introduction: Wind Ripper, He is considered one of the northern Hybrid Demons strongest warriors. Lin Jie has had a talent in wind elements since he was a child and had a unique understanding of the wind. He is an expert in both martial arts and magic. He followed Lin Han to the south for battle and helped him unite all of the Hybrid Demons in the south. He is a superior commander and battle tactician.

.....

After reading the BOSS' stats, Wan Er said, "We must fight this BOSS with the most minimal losses. Pig's defense and health is high enough. Furthermore, he has the smallest gap in level with the BOSS, so there won't be too much of a stat difference. You be the tank. Matcha, One Second Hero, and Tang Xin, those three Knights will be the support and interrupt the skill at any moment. Qing Qian, Wolf and I will focus on dealing damage. All ranged players maintain a 30 yard distance from the boss and use ice type magic and stuns. Let's begin, Healers, lock your spells on the Guild Master!"

"Keng!" I pulled out my Zhen Yue Sword and locked [Blade Spin] on the BOSS from afar. "Shua Shua Shua!" the skill let out four attacks at once. He immediately turned towards me and charged forward. "Ao Ao!" It roared. Then with a swing of its blade, it leapt up and dealt an attack up front, [Armor Breaker Slash]!

"Peng!"

I felt pain sear through my shoulder and I grunted. That trash's attack power is just too high——

"15277 ! "

Li Mu made a fist, "D\*mn, it's just a Lv 102 Saint Tier BOSS, how can it deal so much damage? Guild Master's actual defense is at least over 20,000..."

Matcha narrowed her eyes, "It's because this time boss took an [Armor Breaker Slash]. That decreases his defense by at least 50%!"

In the end, the BOSS' attack forced me backwards. It then sprinted forward and followed up with two normal attacks. This only proved Matcha's point. This trash's normal attack damage was much weaker than that last skill. There was only around 7000-8000 damage, nothing to be worried about.

"Careful! [Wind Slash]..." Wan Er quickly shouted.

Just as she predicted, The Wind Ripper slightly dipped its body and wind began to swirl crazily around him. However, the BOSS' AI wasn't that high. It didn't have the ability to utilize skills to mess up my battle rhythm. And so, the BOSS' [Wind Slash] had at least one second of casting time. That was more than

enough time for me. Right as the little miss shouted her warning, I leapt forward and suddenly threw a slash. My Zhen Yue Sword took along with it the special skill [Curse of the Night Fury Asura] and landed the attack right onto the BOSS' abdomen——

“12178 ! ”

.....

That attack locked the aggro right onto me. Wan Er, Qing Qian, Wei Liang, and Wolf those four top tier Assassins all lunged forward, dealing [Twin Blade Harmony], [Combo], [Blade of the Death God] and other skills. Sparks rose all around the BOSS. Once the chain of damage popped up, they all immediately retreated and I followed their attacks with my own [Fierce Ice Blade], piercing the BOSS's chest. That way, I was able to bring the aggro back to myself again.

A fierce wind and flames began to rise around the Wind Ripper as we continuously dealt our attacks. Even a Saint Tier BOSS wouldn't be able to take this kind of damage. In reality, this BOSS was only Lv 102, a far cry from the Lv 110 Saint Tier BOSSes that we met in the Graveyard of the Heroes and so it was much easier to kill.

“Kong!”

The Wind Ripper roared as four attacks from [Blade Spin] cut through him. I then caught my returning sword and crossed both in front of my chest. Then, with a slide back with my right foot, I entered into a defensive position and activated [Wall of Dou Qi], increasing my defense by 10%. I felt a chain of four shudders through my arm. The BOSS' attacks had only taken 20,000 of my health. With the Healers support as well as my own [Cleansing Rain], it was more than enough to deal with the attack.

Right at that moment, the Wind Ripper raised its head and let out a roar. Right behind me, a tornado that took up a 5×5 yard space began to rise. A few Archers and Mages that were in its path were instantly killed. Who would've thought that this Wind Ripper would leave my aggro and attack other players.

The tornado began to shift, killing a dozen [Zhan Long] players before finally dying down.

Qing Qian tightened her fist, “I think.... This is a chance skill. It doesn’t seem to have any rhythm to it....”

Wan Er nodded, “Everyone be careful. Once that tornado appears in our vicinity, immediately use [Crystallize] or immediately run away. Do not be stingy about the cooldown....”

“Yes mam!”

The two beautiful Vice Guild Masters sent out the command and everyone nodded in agreement. Killing this BOSS wasn’t a hard task, but it wasn’t simple either. In the best case scenario, we would be able to minimize our deaths. At least compared to the one that [Prague] killed, our losses were much smaller.

In the distance, Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao Warrior watched as [Zhan Long] killed the BOSS——

After killing several Gravedigger Demons at once, Jian Feng Han stabbed his sword into the dirt and said, “When [Zhan Long] kills BOSSes they still use Xiao Yao Zi Zai as the core, ahh, nothing changes even after thousands of years....”

Simple’s eyes were filled with wisdom and she said, “No. After Cang Tong joined the guild, [Zhan Long]’s positioning during BOSS kills have changed. Every class’ skill has a place in the rhythm. Furthermore, their reaction to situations like just now have gotten stronger. Cang Tong’s control over BOSS fights is just too strong. After losing a right hand like this, Q-Sword must be banging his head right now....”

Yan Zhao laughed, “Of the great guilds in Ba Huang City, I’m afraid [Zhan Long]’s method of killing BOSSes is the best...”

Epic Hero said, “There’s no other way. Not a single one of our guilds has a top grade tank like Xiao Yao. His attack power and survivability is all top notch....”

Fu Shen Blade smiled. “Not necessarily, right?”

Goodbye Tears raised his blade, “Hei hei, that’s right. Us [Vanguard] also have tanks like that!”

All of [Vanguard]’s people looked towards Don’t Be Foolish and he shuddered, “Motherf\*ckers, don’t look at me like that. It’s hard for me to deal with just one

Hybrid Demon. Don't make me tank a BOSS!"

.....

As the other guilds were watching the battle, another dozen [Zhan Long] players were killed by the tornado. Once the BOSS's health had fallen to around 50%, it roared and a golden shield rose around it. When my [Wind Blade] and [Fierce Ice Blade] fell upon that shield, a clash sounded. I had actually not broken through the defense!

"2128 ! "

"1837 ! "

Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K could only deal around 1000 damage as well. Most of the Achers only dealt around 100-300. Even worse was that some of the damage numbers were only in the double digits! That was just too much against our ego!

"Not good, we can't break through.."

I roamed around the BOSS. Even my [Binding Chains] failed. I then dealt a chain of normal attacks as I estimated how long the BOSS had this shield up. It was just around 7 seconds. Wan Er then sent out a command, "When the BOSS opens its shield, let pig hold him off. Everyone else stop your spells. Once this [Bravery Shield] disappears after 7 seconds, then use all of your power to attack!"

The reasoning behind this was simple. Seeing as none of us could break through the shield, we might as well save our cooldowns. Under Wan Er's command, the process of killing the BOSS was more logical. A few minutes later, the Wind Ripper only had 20% health left!

"Gr...."

The Wind Ripper's roar shook the ground as he pierced his two blades into the wall's rock and said, "Tempest cloaked in blood, I summon thou. Rip apart this artificial reality and let the world know what true strength is——[Blood Tempest]!"

Dark clouds suddenly gathered and I dashed forward, activating [Curse of the

Night Fury Asura]!

“Peng!”

The attack missed and the a notification appeared above the BOSS’ head——  
“This skill cannot be interrupted!”

F\*ck!

I immediately spun around and shouted, “Everyone, get away. Hurry!”

But it was all too late. A dozen bloody tornadoes rose up on the city wall. It seems as though it was based on the BOSS’ normal attack power. Wan Er, Li Mu and I were ok. But the Division Three players were in trouble. Within seconds, at least 500 were instantly killed. Screams rose up all around us. Death God’s Elegy raised his spear and charged forward, his eyes red, “Motherf\*cking, what the h\*ll is this skill! So shameless...”

I didn’t retreat a single step and used [Cleansing Rain] to give me 7000 heal. Then, I swung my two swords and lunged straight for the BOSS. If I maintained this kind of attack rhythm, I might even be able to drain some health back.

Wan Er, Qing Qian, and Li Mu all stared with widened eyes at the destruction the tornadoes left. “Sha sha” their feet moved across the snow. Smart people knew what the most reasonable way to deal with this kind of AOE attack was.

The [Blood Tempest] lasted for 15 seconds and it’s cool down was at least over 20 minutes. That was more than enough time for us to kill the Wind Ripper.

When the [Blood Tornado] finally ended, that also meant that the BOSS’ death had arrived.

All of us poured forward and dealt a flurry of attacks. When the BOSS’ health was only at 2% , Wan Er raised her left arm and softly shouted, “Stop all of your attacks. Let pig kill the BOSS, his charm is the highest!”

I slashed and smiled. “I want the experience, so I won’t be in the ROLL. Why don’t you all split the equipment amongst yourselves. I promise I won’t get jealous.

Dong Cheng smiled. “Ai you, Brother Guild Master, you’re just too amazing.

No wonder you have so many fans....”

I didn't bother to reply to Dong Cheng and raised my sword, dealing one fierce attack. The Wind Ripper cried out as it died and “Hua La La” dropped a pile of equipment while I got 50% of the experience. Despite that, however, my experience bar barely moved. D\*mn, leveling up from Lv 99 to 100 really was hard!

# Chapter 556 Fire God's Shield

A bright light flashed and flew into the sky. The Wind Ripper's enormous figure fell to its knees and his body turned into a flash of light, dropping a pile of equipments onto the ground. At that moment, Dong Cheng and Thousand Suns, the two Mages both used [Revealing Light] to prevent any Assassins from stealing the equipment. I strode forward and gathered all of them into my arms.

There was a total of four pieces of equipment. One was a crimson long spear that looked extremely fierce. Another was a cloth type black wrist guard and an iron black helmet. Last but not least there was a crimson shield. I waved my hand over the pile and the stats for all four appeared in the air——

[Wind Rippers Halberd] (Saint Tier) : Attack Power 2340-2900, User's get 26% more attack power and 14% more attack speed. Furthermore, every time the user hits its target, it increases its defense power by 1%. The maximum increase is 10%. Required Level: 92

[Wind Rippers Wrist Guard] (Valkyrie Tier) : A Heavy armor type equipment, Defense: 900, increases the user's critical rate by 40% and attack power by 13%. Furthermore, overtime as the user attacks, there's a 5% chance that [Lin Luan] will activate. This decreases the target's attack speed by 50% and lasts for 7 seconds. Required Level: 92

[Wind Ripper's Mantle] (Valkyrie Tier) Heavy Armor equipment, Defense: 890, increases the user's defense power by 20% and increases MaxHP by 1800. Required Level: 92

[Fire God Shield] (Saint Tier): Defense 1750, increases the user's defense power by 35% and Max HP by 4000. There's a 44% chance of block. Every time the shield successfully defends against an attack, the shield's defense increases by 10%. The highest the shield's defense can be increased is 15 times. This effect lasts for 600 seconds. Required Level: 92

.....

“D\*mn...”



One Second Hero's eyes widened, "This... this Fire God's Shield really is OP, isn't it? The second wave BOSS would actually drop an equipment like this? This makes no sense..."

I let out a laugh and said, "It's not bad. Let's split up the equipment now. We'll have the top five players who dealt the most attacks and received the most damage and are suitable for the equipment ROLL. That way it will be the most fair!"

Li Mu nodded in agreement, "Yea, let's do it that way... speaking of which, Wind Ripper's halberd is a Knight type equipment. Fire God's Shield is too. Come on, let's Roll for this now...."

And so, the top five players that participated in the BOSS kill stepped forward. The ones who stepped forward were Matcha, One Second Hero, Tang Xin, Death God's Elegy, and Yue Yao Yan. Once they came forward, we began the ROLL. Numbers popped up before us and Yao Yan made a fist with a smile, "Oh, my luck today isn't bad! To think that I'd get a Saint Tier Equipment!"

I handed the Wind Ripper's Halberd to her with a smile, "Let's continue!"

Very soon, Lin Xiao Xie took the Wind Ripper's Wristguards, while the mantle was taken by One Second Hero. Finally, everyone's eyes fell upon the Fire God's Shield in my hands. It was a Saint Tier equipment with extremely high defense and incredible stats. This shield was practically considered godly just with the 1750 defense and 4000 increase in HP. Furthermore it has a chance effect special skill. It'd be hard to instantly kill anyone who had this shield. Plus, with that increase in defense, after increasing 15 times, then the defense power would increase by 150%. With a [Heavenly Shield Wall] and a [Dou Qi Armor], who would be able to break that defense?

That shield could be used by Knights and Monks. All of the other classes had no way of equipping it. However, [Zhan Long] pretty much didn't have a single Monk expert. All of our attacks and damage takers were dependent on Matcha, One Second Hero, Tang Xin, Death God's Elegy, and Yue Yao Yan. The three girls and two men stared anxiously at my the shield as they began the ROLL. Afterwards, the numbers they got flashed in the air. All of their friends rooted and cheered them on from the side quietly. Naturally, I rooted for Matcha. She

was one of the member of our [Zhan Long] office. However, a lot of times everything doesn't go as planned——

71 points (Strawberry Matcha)

14 points (Yue Yao Yan)

83 points( One Second Hero)

99 points (Tang Xin)

92 points (Death God's Elegy)

In the end, Tang Xin's 99 points instantly killed everyone else's hopes of trying to get the Fire God's Shield. Furthermore, once she equipped the shield, a fiery glow appeared around her. She grinned widely and said, "Waoh, my defense power is above Brother Guild Master's...."

I was a little speechless. I couldn't equip shields so I figured that having my defense surpassed was a matter of time.

We continued with splitting the drops and gave everyone the cards and gems that the BOSS dropped. The number of Gravedigger Demons that came in the second wave was already getting steadily less. After they had massacred several thousands of players, they were finally being finished off. However, we all knew that this wasn't all of the Northern Hybrid Demon's army power. This was just Lin Han's own army. Plus, we had only reached the second wave. Who knew how many other waves of monsters we had to face.

.....

Dragon City stood strong against the fierce wind. I squinted my eyes, trying to see past the layer of snow that was falling. Wan Er stood by my side, her white cloak fluttering behind her. Her snow white arms were covered in a thin layer of snow and she softly smiled. "No matter what, even if we all die in battle, it will be well worth it. We really got a lot of experience..."

I nodded, "Yes! I just wish that us dying would be all. In the end, we still lose three levels, just too much..."

Wan Er fluttered her big eyes and smiled. "No problem, isn't there also the sense of righteousness we get from guarding the city? No matter if we succeed

or lose, points and rewards will be given. That, we do not have to worry about.”

“Mhm. The third wave is about to arrive. Let everyone quickly repair equipment and replenish potions. 5000 of [Zhan Long]’s players in the city will be enough.”

“Understood. I’ll prepare them right now!”

Wan Er stared deep into my eyes and said, “Pig Xiao Yao, as the Guild Master, guarding the front row is your responsibility. Leave the rest to us Vice Guild Masters.”

I turned around to look at the cute girl who was my right arm. On one hand she was the little miss of the Tian Jin Corporation that I was supposed to protect, on the other she was my greatest support in game. Since the first time we met, we seemed to have gone through so many events. Plus... what happened last night. I suddenly had a rush of emotions fill my heart. I raised my cloak and wrapped it around her soft shoulders and smiled. “Wan Er....”

“Hm?” She looked up at me.

I stared down at her smiling face, and was suddenly at a loss for words. After thinking for a bit, I said, “I just wanted to call your name. I didn’t really think of what to say...ahaha....”

Wan Er raised her elegant eyebrows and smiled wickedly, “You want a beating?!”

I glanced down and said, “No need to be so rough. Don’t forget, last night we already....”

“We already what?” Wan Er turned away from me, a smile playing on her lips, “I went to sleep really early last night, humph mph ...”

At that moment, I decided to step down and said, “Alright alright, I was just thinking too much...”

Wan Er silently looked down at the bloody marks in the snow and softly said, “Give me a little more time. I have to finish settling my business before I can figure out how to face you...”

I warmed her frozen lips with my finger and nodded, “En, I know. I wouldn’t

dare dream for too much anyway...”

“Oh?”

Wan Er looked down at her feet and mumbled, “If you don’t dream, then you’ll never get what you want. Is it that if I don’t take the first step towards getting near you, you would never get closer to me?”

I glanced at her and then looked up and let out a sigh, “No, I want to... It’s just...”

Wan Er smiled understandingly. She kicked a pile of snow and said, “Alright, don’t say you just. Just hearing that first half makes me annoyed. I’ve never liked people who are too afraid to take the first step.”

Dong Cheng walked over to us and said, “That.... you too. Don’t take the first step forward, if you take another step, you’ll fall off a cliff. Can you two please not stand so close to the edge when you’re whispering to each other? Even if you stood a bit back a little, nobody would hear your secret conversations. You two idiots, the third wave of Hybrid Monsters are here!”

.....

Just as Dong Cheng had said, a “Ji ji” sound came from the north. Right afterwards, black figures appeared from the thick layer of snow and quickly marched to the foot of the wall and began to climb. When they were around 100 meters away from us, Matcha let out an “ah” and was so terrified she stepped back a few steps, her face pale, “I... I’m afraid of these the most!!”

They were rows upon rows of armored giant snakes. They slithered their lower bodies and opened their wide jaws. Their jade eyes stared right at the players and NPCs. Furthermore, these snakes had soldiers riding on their backs. They carried long halberds in one hand and reins to control the snakes in the other!

Battle Snake Cavalrymen, Level 1 Hybrid Demons.

“Careful, we don’t know what kind of special skills these Hybrid Demons have!” I raised my sword and walked over to the edge.

“Ts Ts....”

The first Battle Snake Cavalrymen charged to our frontline. It opened its wide jaws and spit out a green liquid. At that moment, my Flame Prison Armor seemed to melt a little and my health dropped, losing 10% every second. The Cavalryman riding on the snake raised his halberd and stabbed right at me. The attack power wasn't bad, and it wouldn't deal a fatal wound.

“Attack!”

Li Mu, Wang Jian and Old K all stepped forward and held their position against the incoming monsters while the Healers were more experienced and knew what to do.

Very soon, the first row of players had all been poisoned by the green liquid and were losing large amounts of health. The Healers in the back had to heal quickly, or else crowds of our players would die. If it was like this for [Zhan Long], it was like this for [Prague], [Vanguard], and [Enemies at the Gate]. They Hybrid Demons weren't like other monsters and had already turned into the nightmares amongst players.

.....

涨的速度喜人。I didn't retreat a single step and held my stance against the Battle Snake Cavalrymen. I relied on my 20% Drain to pull my health up. That, along with my high attack power, these Battle Snake Cavalrymen were already beginning to die under my blade. There was so much experience coming from this that I felt a little rush of excitement.

“Di!”

Right at that moment, I received a notice, “Your good friend “Xi Yao Ge Jin” has logged on!

.....

“Di!”

Meng Yao already sent a message, “Brother, are you participating in the event quest Dragon City's Defense?”

“Yup, Meng Yao, you'll just have to grind levels on your own today!”

“Sure.”

Meng Yao sent a smiley face and replied, “It’s all good brother. Brother Wolf has already asked for two high level Mages to help me grind levels. I will get to everyone else’ level soon!”

“Good luck!”

.....

After closing my messaging system, I continued to kill monsters. The Hybrid Demons north of [Zhan Long] were beginning to lessen, but I could see crowds joining them from behind. [Zhan Long] on the other hand, lost a player for every player killed. An event quest like this really made people worry.

# Chapter 557 Mushroom Demons

Pretty much every two hours there was a wave of demons. The fourth and fifth wave of demons were all Level 1 Hybrid Demons from Lin Han's army. Besides the Gravedigger Demons that cut down our numbers a bit, the rest were all Level 1 Hybrid Demons. However, as before, our players were taking a hit. Every time we lost a crowd of people we would have to call in reinforcements to replace them. Crowds of players were dying on the city walls. Each one that died lost three levels. This punishment was extremely cruel, but the rewards were well worth it.

The fourth wave BOSS was killed by [Flying Dragon]. Drunken Spear held off the BOSS, so there wasn't too much danger to his life. The fifth wave BOSS was killed by Jian Feng Han and Simple, and there didn't seem to be anything out of the ordinary.

.....

"Hu hu..."

A bone chilling wind passed through the city. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and stepped to the edge of the wall. A layer of blood dripped off of the edge of the blade and quickly froze into ice. Dragon City's climate was both freezing and stern. Behind me, Wan Er and Qing Qian were organizing the players and reinforcements, making sure we had the proper numbers. There were still some things to be grateful for. The main guild had at least 1000+ members still standing on the wall. Even the Hybrid Demons couldn't kill them. This group was our true core strength. These elite players will eventually become the pillars that will raise [Zhan Long] to the top of the world and become the symbol of Asia's fighting power!

The sixth wave of monsters is about to come..." I glanced at the time. The Hybrid Demon war has already lasted for 10 hours and it felt as though there would be no end to this battle. I also got wind of news that Jiu Li City and Fan Shu City didn't exactly gain victory in their events either. Their losses were terrifying. This round of event quests really were shocking.

Old K rubbed his chin and said, “The sixth wave, they should be Level 2 Hybrid Demons...”

Matcha wryly smiled. “Pei pei, don’t jinx it!”

Just as he said so, we heard screeches from the forest. In the next moment, a crowd of colorful monsters began to appear and march across the mountains. The scene was very unexpected. It was a group of soft type monsters, shaped like a mushroom. Their bodies looked squishy and they had four short stubs for feet and a rainbow umbrella like cap on their head. Right below it were a pair of red eyes. “Ji ji” they screeched as they charged towards Dragon City while carrying iron spears in the short arms.

The corners of my mouth twitched and I sent the stats to the guild chat——

[Mushroom Demon] (Level 2 Hybrid Demon)

Level: 106

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: [Spear Stab] [Terror Screech] [Halberd Whirlwind]

Introduction: Mushroom Demons, Deep in the north of the continent, in a swampy land, there is a group of mushrooms that attached themselves to rotten animals. These poisonous mushrooms absorbed magic power and slowly grew souls. In the end, they became a group of ferocious mushroom demons. These mushroom demons are extremely strong. Approach with caution and do not be fooled by their cute appearance.

.....

Matcha glanced at the mushroom demons that were climbing down the mountain and couldn’t help but grin, “Oh, these really are cute... I like them so much, can I capture one and make it my pet?”

I shook my head, “You probably shouldn’t. Either way, unless a Level 1 Mushroom Demon appeared, you wouldn’t be able to capture it anyway. After killing this many Hybrid Demons, I have yet to see a Level 1. And so, there’s no



hope....”

Wang Jian raised his sword, “Everyone, be careful. These Mushroom Demons can use [Halberd Whirlwind]. That’s supposed to be my unique skill... Godd\*mn, [Halberd Whirlwind] is really strong. Everyone, make sure you don’t get instantly killed....”

Everyone nodded in agreement. However, none of us knew exactly what we were about to face. Finally, another Level 2 Hybrid Demon wave was coming, and their levels were higher than the last wave. The pressure on the front row players was incredibly high.

“In Formation!”

Wan Er scanned the foot of the city walls and continued giving commands, “Defend your positions. Once the Mushroom Demons begin to activate [Halberd Whirlwind], immediately activate [Dou Qi Armor] + [Heavenly Shield Wall]. Do not underestimate these Mushroom Demons...”

“Yes Ma’am!” Everyone nodded.

Not far, the Guild Master of [Vanguard] Jian Feng Han also raised his sword and began giving orders as he walked along the frontlines, “Every ten Archers focus your hits on one monster and spam [Scatter Shot]. We’ll kill them one by one. Do not be careless. Everyone form into 30 man teams. Let us do our best to minimize our losses! Sister Jun, have the third and fourth divisions prepare to advance!”

Simple nodded, “Yes, understood...”

Yan Zhao Warrior gripped his fists and looked into the distance and succinctly said, “Prepare for battle!”

.....

“Ji ji....”

A large group of Mushroom Demons all charged to the top of Dragon City. I stood at the edge and immediately directed my [Azure Dragon Crossbow] to shoot them all to death. At the same time, I threw my Zhen Yue Sword out and let it fly right through the ground. All I saw were two of the mushroom demons

screech and charge towards me. They jumped into the air, their four stubby legs kicking out. Then, they thrust their spear forward, stabbing right into my shoulder pad!

“Pu chi....”

“9292 ! ”

“9089 ! ”

D\*mn that hurt. These little things really weren't as cute as they looked!

I waved my hand and activated [Cleansing Rain] and then spun around. I dealt a series of eight slashes and cuts with both of my swords and then slid back a few steps. I couldn't fight on my own in front of everyone else. Otherwise, I wouldn't be able to hold them off and my defense would soon be broken.

Matcha raised her shield and charged forward. Then, she used [Holy Phantom Slash] and attracted the firepower of a group of Mushroom Demons. She then quickly retreated and activated [Holy Phantom Shield] and [Dou Qi Armor] to hold her defense. The Mushroom Demons all activated [Spear Stab]+[Halberd Whirlwind]. Matcha could only hold her stance and cry “Wu wu”. She managed to take on the attacks of five Mushroom Demons and not die!

“Stun!” Wan Er sent out another command. She then raised her dagger and charged forward, blinding one and stunning another. Her attacks were in sync with Qing Qian's.

Again and again [Halberd Whirlwind] exploded along the player lines. Wang Jian and Li Mu quickly activated their defense positions, greatly decreasing the damage they suffered. However, the other players didn't necessarily have as skilled maneuvers or defense positions. In the blink of an eye, the [Halberd Whirlwind] had killed nearly a hundred people. A dozen of the Mushroom Demons charged straight into our formation, killing the Archers, Mages, and Musketeers!

I quickly sprinted forward and used [Binding Chains] on one and [Great Tortoise Realm] to hold off the others. I then yelled, “Quick, have someone come and fill in this spot. We cannot let them easily charge in!”

Yao Yan and Death God's Elegy both nodded and brought their elite players to

fill in the defense. Tang Xin then took her Fire God Shield to the front and absorbed the attacks from the Mushroom Demons. The Fire God Shield's defense increased more and more, until the Mushroom Demon's [Halberd Whirlwind] only dealt 6000+ damage. That defense was just too incredible, it was even stronger than my own!

We defended against the chaos for another half hour, relying on Dancing Forest, Dong Cheng and the rest to put pressure on the Mushroom Demon's charge. [Zhan Long]'s defense formation managed to hold off the advance of these Level 2 Hybrid Demon Mushrooms. Even though our losses were heavy, but at least we were still able to keep up our formation. When I turned around however, I saw that [Prague] had lost over half of its formation. The close combat players were swamped by the demons. Their [Halberd Whirlwind] was like a slaughtering device. [Prague]'s players could not defend against it.

"F\*ck...." Yan Zhao raised his sword to parry a blow, "How did we get into this situation?"

Epic Hero said, "Guild Master, let's retreat a little. The Ba Huang City NPC over there will help us kill some..."

"Alright..."

Just as he said, when the player formation retreated around a hundred meters, a large group of Ba Huang City Purple Star archers helped provide support from behind. There were at least ten thousand of them. They all raised their long bows and dealt an overwhelming attack. The Mushroom Demons all howled as they fell the ground. Quite a few began sprinting towards the NPC, and managed to instantly kill a few before they themselves died.

[Vanguard] managed to hold their formation while [Enemies at the Gate] and [Blood Contract] all began to move. The Mushroom Demon's charge was just too strong. They needed to rely on the NPC's firepower as well in order to defend. This was an extremely smart move.

However, several of the middle and small level guilds were practically destroyed by the Mushroom Demon's attack. In the Dragon City map alone, the player numbers went from 90,000 to barely 30,000. That was enough to see just how terrifying these Mushroom Demons were.

.....

“Kill, hold your positions!”

I swung my sword and slashed forward. “Ka ka ka” I dealt several attacks, killing two Mushroom Demons. These little things would howl when they died and then kneel to the ground. Their bodies would then evaporate into light and leave behind a red mushroom nut. However, the players had no way of picking it up or using these nuts. I had no idea what it was for.

All of us fought for our lives and finally after an hour, we took the upper hand. The number of Mushroom Demons were far smaller than they had been at first. This meant that we had successfully held off the sixth wave.

I let out a sigh of relief and then opened up the quest screen. It shows the point rankings of each of the players. As I had expected, I was ranked in first place. Unfortunately, the points were hidden, so I couldn’t tell how much higher I was than others——

Xiao Yao Zi Zai  
Simple  
Cang Yue  
Jian Feng Han  
Cang Tong  
Dancing Forest  
Drunken Spear  
Yan Zhao Warrior  
Hero Ran Min

.....

[Zhan Long]’s top players really did well. We took up 6 of the top ten places. There was no other way. After Wan Er and Dong Cheng went to [Zhan Long], our advantage in Ba Huang City increased by quite a bit. Add on Dancing Forest, Tang Xue, and Old K, who had increasingly stronger equipment and skills, they didn’t lose out to Simple and Yan Zhao Warrior by too much.

We continued killing. No matter what, [Zhan Long] had to hold its positions. Behind our backs was our home, and there was no retreating.

All along the snow were the bodies of players and hundreds of Mushroom nuts. Most of the Mushroom Demons had been killed and evaporated into experience and high tier equipment. All of the [Zhan Long] players in the front had full bags. Based on my estimate, once the Level 2 Hybrid Demons died, the chance that they dropped a Silver, Gold, or Purple equipment was around 50%. Emperor Tier was 40%, and the other 10% was Valkyrie Tier. For a monster that wasn't a BOSS to drop a Valkyrie Tier equipment, one could just imagine the fortune we were getting from this.

.....

“Careful, the BOSS is here....”

Qing Qian sat on top of the wall. She then stood up and jumped off with a smile, “This wave's BOSS has appeared before [Zhan Long]'s formation..”

# Chapter 558 Wu Ji

I walked forward and leaned against the ledge to look downward. Suddenly, a red figure seemed to appear from the darkness and run up along the wall. It had a very sturdy build and was around 2 meters tall. A black bamboo hat rested on its head. It looked to be some kind of feline with a human body. With its crafty eyes, it stared right into the crowd of players. In one hand it wielded a long halberd, and in the other a red lantern that lit up the road. From the lantern's light, I could make out a bamboo basket on its back. The BOSS smiled and with a feminine voice said, "Ignorant mortals, have you prepared for your final battle?!"

I raised my hand and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]!

But I never would have thought that this BOSS' AI was so high that it actually dodged my skill. It jumped up and threw a [Fury Cut]!

"Keng!"

Sparks flew. I had raised my Zhen Yue Sword up to parry, but my sword had actually been forced away and was unable to block! I was pushed back several steps——

"13218 ! "

I looked up. This really was the BOSS and I quickly sent the stats to the guild chat——

[Mushroom Spirit – Xin Yi] (Saint Tier BOSS)

Level: 106

Attack: 5900-7820

Defense: 5200

Health: 60,000,000

Skills: [Sacred Mountain Slash] [Mushroom Collection] [Mushroom Shield]  
[Ostentatious Wu Ji]

Introduction: Xin Yi, A renowned warrior amongst the tribe of Mushroom Demons. During his youth, Hell's Battle Song Lin Han lead an expedition towards the north of the Hybrid Demon Territory and met the Mushroom Spirit Xin Yi along the way. After a great battle, the Mushroom Spirit was defeated by Lin Han's power and finally joined his army along with the Mushroom Demon warriors, thus becoming one of Lin Han's army branches. This Mushroom Spirit is extremely strong and has killed countless adventurers for the past ten thousand years.

.....

"D\*mn...." Li Mu pursed his lips, "These BOSS stats are getting stronger and stronger. That attack power is so strong that it practically goes against reason. On the bright side, it looks like this Mushroom Spirit doesn't have that high of a defense. Guild Master, go! You be the tank and we'll be the firepower!"

"Ok!"

I nodded and then activated [Wall of Dou Qi]. I then raised my sword and charged forward. From a distance, I used [Binding Chains] but it was dodged. Then I swept both of my swords out, activating [Sword Tempest] and then targeted a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] onto the BOSS. My attacks caused the Mushroom Spirit to howl in pain. Then, with its female voice, it said, "Oy, little b\*st\*rd, I'm going to make you into cow poop!"

The Mushroom Spirit didn't seem to have any other notable skills except for that [Sacred Mountain Slash]. However, its stabs were extremely quick. "Pu pu pu" it stabbed several times, so quickly that my health suddenly dropped. Surprised, I quickly used a [Cleansing Rain] while Darling Duck and Thousand League Spring both gave me heals. If I were to die, then this BOSS would be extremely hard to kill.

After I locked the BOSS' aggro onto myself, Li Mu and Wang Jian then came forward to attack. [Halberd Whirlwind]+[Covering Sword Slash]+[Skyshaker Slash] all fell upon the BOSS and it screeched in pain ——

"5172 ! "

"5331 ! "

“4919 ! ”

.....

It was just as Li Mu had said, this Mushroom Spirit’s defense really didn’t live up to its Saint Tier name. With one attack I could deal 7000+ damage, and some of my critical attacks were truly terrifying.

Wan Er raised her daggers and dashed forward, dealing a painful attack into the BOSS’ side. Within five minutes, the Mushroom Spirit’s health fell below 50%. This made everyone smile. Was this BOSS just here to give us experience? That was just too nice of them...

Just as we smiled, the Mushroom Spirit made a completely unexpected action. It sprinted out of our attack range, all the way to the border of the city wall. Then, it picked up the mushroom nuts that the dead Mushroom Demons left behind.

“Di!”

Battle Notification: [Mushroom Spirit – Xin Yi] has picked up a Mushroom Nut. Defense +2%, Attack Power +1%, Magic Defense +2%, The maximum number of nuts it can pick up is 100!

.....

“F\*ck....”

I suddenly understood the gravity of the situation. I roared, “Charge! We cannot let that piece of sh\*t pick up anymore Mushroom Nuts, otherwise we’re screwed!”

That’s right, if that BOSS increased its defense by 200% then there was absolutely no way we could deal damage. At that point nobody would be able to kill this BOSS. Furthermore, its attack power would increase by 100%. Even I would probably be walking on the path towards instant kill!

Old K charged forward and “Peng!” rammed away the Mushroom Spirit that was just about to pick up another nut. Then, he swung his battle axe right towards the BOSS’ head, nearly knocking away its hat!

However, the Mushroom Spirit continued to pick up two more Mushroom



Nuts, increasing its stats bit by bit.

“We have to control it!”

Wan Er charged forward too. A frosty light began to glow from her two daggers. She was activating [Icepick Whirlpool]. After a series of attacks, she imprisoned the Mushroom Spirit in its spot. I then rushed forward and cast a [Binding Chains], which was also a success. Dancing Forest and Dong Cheng put all their strength into their firepower. At the moment, what we needed to do was control the BOSS so that it couldn't pick up any more Mushroom Nuts. Afterwards, we would concentrate our firepower and kill it as soon as possible. Otherwise, the BOSS would be extremely hard to kill.

.....

The Mushroom Spirit retreated several steps. Then, with a swing of its spear, it killed one of our Swordsman and roared, “You shameless mortals, why would you prevent me from picking up my Mushroom Nuts? Why would you try and crush my hard work and determination? I will kill you all! I will turn you all into a fiery pit of cow poop!”

I ignored the BOSS' curses and continued to hack at the BOSS, taking advantage of the fact that I could still break its defense....

In the distance, Yan Zhao Warrior crossed his arms and watched the show. He smiled. “Xiao Yao and the others really are busy right now. This BOSS is truly interesting. Picking up the Mushroom Nuts would actually increase its attack and defense. He he, [Zhan Long] now has a real thorn in its side...”

Jian Feng Han also laughed, “A 200% increase in defense power. Just how does Li Xiao Yao plan on breaking that kind of defense? I can't wait to see....”

Misty Clouds, “Good Luck Xiao Yao. Make sure you don't get too much damage, hahaha...”

.....

I was speechless. That group of heartless b\*st\*rds. They actually have the effort to laugh at others misfortune.

All of [Zhan Long] focused on letting out firepower. The Mushroom Spirit bore

with the attacks of [Zhan Long]’s elite and continued to pick up Mushroom Nuts. Determined, it continued its task and its attack and defense stats continuously rose. When the Mushroom Spirit’s health fell below 10%, it had already picked up 71 Mushroom Nuts. Its stats were truly shocking!

“Keng keng keng....”

My [Blade Spin] only dealt 2000+ damage now! On the bright side, everyone was focusing their firepower. Even if we couldn’t break its defense, at least we could whittle away its health.

Right at that moment, the Mushroom Spirit suddenly raised his spear and roared, “Awaken, Mushroom Demons sleeping under the earth. Reveal your fearsome power to the world and let our name spread to every corner of the earth——[Ostentatious Wu Ji]!”

Everyone stood stock still. It was another one of the Saint Tier BOSS’ great skills. What was it going to be?!

In the next moment, we all understood. One after another, those red Mushroom Nuts began to rise from the ground and suddenly explode, creating shockwaves!

“F\*ck!”

Li Mu’s eyes widened, “They’re after our lives. Hurry up and use [Dou Qi Armor]! Don’t get instantly killed!”

Wang Jian said, “Give yourself as much health as possible. Ranged players, activate your survival skills. Healers, spam AOE heals!”

“Peng peng peng....”

One after another, the red Mushroom Nuts exploded. Not far from us, [Thousand Mound]’s You Yi cried out and fell to his knees. Not Ordinary raised his blade to block the attacks. Bai Mo Yan then raised her long bow and jumped up, flaming nuts bursting behind her. She was so scared that her face paled as she yelled, “Sh\*t, what a strong wave! We’re finished, this time we’re really finished. My mom doesn’t have to worry about my studies anymore!”

Not Ordinary was speechless.

I couldn't respond either.

Aye, Shen Bing that wench, there wasn't hope for her anymore. No need for me to bother with her.

.....

The Mushroom Spirit's attack power was really high. These flame mushroom nuts explosion was also extremely strong. Looking at the results, I could see that everyone suffered heavy injuries. The wall was practically washed with blood. That [Ostentatious Wu Ji] instantly killed nearly 2000 people. All around the wall I could see those flame mushroom nuts exploding. It was truly scary.

I raised my sword and charged towards the Mushroom Spirit. I even summoned my Flaming Tiger God out. Wan Er raised her iron umbrella to defend against the explosions of the mushroom nuts, while not forgetting to deal attacks. The faster we could kill this BOSS, the more we minimize our losses.

In the end we ended up holding out for 5 minutes. Finally, under our determined barrage of attacks, the Mushroom Spirit finally knelt to the ground. It stabbed its long spear into the ground and glared at us with cold eyes. Then, with a trembling voice, it cursed, "My death is only the beginning. Chaos will spread to every corner of the world!"

.....

"Hua la la...."

Finally dead! Motherf\*cker, we were finally able to kill this BOSS. Right as we killed the Mushroom Spirit, I leveled up to 100 and a bell sounded beside my ear——

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, You've leveled up to 100. Because you are the second player to level up to 100, you have obtained the reward: Charm+15, Gold+40000, and your class is Swordsman, Pet Space+1. Furthermore, you have obtained the rare Mount Space and received the skill, Horsemanship. You can now ride a mount. Your profession's mount skills will now increase by 100%!

.....

Alright!

Since I was the second to reach Level 100, then the first was without a doubt Jiu Li City's Fang Ge Que. Plus, now I can ride mounts, even though such a pet had yet to appear.

I looked down and saw that the Mushroom Spirit dropped three equipments and a red pet egg. Who knows what rank and quality is. Nevermind, I decided to look at the equipments first.

Everyone from [Zhan Long] gathered around me and I raised the three equipments. One of them was a crimson necklace. Then there was an exquisite cloak and a flashing ring. I first looked at the crimson necklace. I waved my hand over it and everyone was stunned——

[Wu Ji] (Saint Tier)

Strength: +109

Stamina: +105

Agility: +107

Additional: Increases the user's attack power by 27%

Additional: Increases the user's Max HP by 4500

Additional: Increases the user's defense by 1000

Special: [No Greed], After activating, the user's attacks will ignore any target's defense for 7 seconds. Uses 75 Rage

Special: No Level Limit

Level: 96

Required Class: All classes

Charm: 0

.....

Looking at this necklace, I couldn't help but feel my heart jump. I looked up at everyone and said, "Forgive my selfishness, but this necklace, I want it...."

Wang Jian was stunned, “Brother Xiao Yao, aren’t you losing too much by giving up the Curse of the Night Fury Necklace?”

I nodded, “Most importantly is that no limit. Any level can equip this. There won’t be much use if I give it to you high level players, but my sister Meng Yao’s level is just too low. This necklace will be the most use to her... you guys understand right?”

Li Mu smiled. “Ok, we understand!”

I nodded, “I’ll give the top ten players 50,000 for compensation so that you guys aren’t losing out. Now don’t go asking for more because I don’t have that much...”

Old K smiled. “Alright! We’ll use it as a welcome gift for little Meng Yao!”

“Ok.”

# Chapter 559 Thousand Man Slash

This kind of equipment could be used by most people, but only the top ten players who dealt the most damage and took the most hits had the right to ROLL, and so I paid all ten of them in order to get Wu Ji. After all, this BOSS wasn't killed solely by myself. It would be too unjust if I were to take it for myself and I would gain no respect as a Guild Master.

I put Wu Ji into my bag and continued through the other items that the Mushroom Spirit dropped. The second piece was a mantle. I reached out and waved my hand over it, revealing the stats in the air. Motherf\*cker, these BOSSes from the Hybrid Demon territory really did drop good things. Another Saint Tier equipment appeared——

[Heaven's Walker Mantle] (Saint Tier)

Defense: 1070

Strength: +107

Stamina: +105

Agility: +102

Additional: Increases the user's physical damage by 21%

Additional: Increases the user's Magic Defense by 40%

Additional: Increases the user's Max Hp by 3000

Special: [Wind Stepper], Increases the user's movement speed by 27%

Special: [Sky Stepper] Once in battle, movement speed will increase by another 20%

Required Level: 95

.....

I raised the Heaven's Walker Mantle and smiled. "This Heaven's Walker Mantle.... All classes can use this equipment. However, since it increases physical damage by 21%, I'll limit it to only the heavy armor, Assassins, Archers,

and Musketeers. Can the ten players who dealt the most damage or took the most damage ROLL? I took the Wu Ji so I won't participate. You guys go!"

As I said that, the players that qualified stepped up. Among the top ten were Wan Er, Qing Qian, Dancing Forest, Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K. It was pretty much all of [Zhan Long]'s top tier players. None of them had any hesitations, they each raised the dice and rolled. In the end, Dancing Forest shouted in delight, "Wow, 100 points!"

And so, Dancing Forest' 100 points had beat everyone else's roll, giving her the mantle! Wan Er had 99, while Qing Qian had 97. They were just a step away.

I then tossed the Heaven Walker's Mantle to Dancing Forest. Her level was already high enough so she immediately equipped it. A breeze brushed against us and the mantle fluttered behind her. The originally cute and pretty girl now had the aura of an heroine. After all, this was [Zhan Long]'s Archer, so of course she was both pretty and heroic.

Continuing on, I looked at the last piece of equipment that the Mushroom Spirit dropped. It was a ring that flashed with a dull glow. I waved my hand over it and the stats appeared. A hush fell over the crowd and suddenly everyone broke into chatter. This time [Zhan Long]'s luck was just too great! This BOSS actually dropped three Saint Tier equipments. This was completely unprecedented——

[Ring of Xing Tian] (Saint Tier)

Strength: +105

Stamina: +102

Agility: +100

Additional: Increases the user's attack power by 500

Additional: Increases the user's Max HP by 2900

Special Skill: [Dance of Xing Tian] With a swinging sword and a determination to kill your enemy, this skill will increase the user's attack power greatly. Lasts for 15 seconds and uses 100 Rage. While the skill is activated, the user will not

receive any damage, and it will increase splash damage by 50%

Required Level: 95

Charm: 110

.....

Looking at the Ring of Xing Tian, I couldn't help but smile and say, "Yet another OP equipment. Come on, let's continue the ROLL. I will step out of this, so you guys figure it out!"

Wang Jian couldn't help it and said, "Brother Xiao Yao, there's no need. Why don't you participate in it too? You are the number one DPS damager, you have the right..."

I shook my head, "No need, I already have two rings. The [Ring of the Ruler] has [King Domain] while the [Unrivaled Ring] has the [Chi You Body] skill. I can't bear to switch either of them out. You guys go ahead!"

And so the top ten players continued to compete. In the end, Li Mu took the ring with his 87 points. His luck wasn't bad. In reality, this ring had both attack skills and the [Undefeated] skill in one, and was extremely useful. Now that he has the Ring of Xing Tian, Li Mu would also be someone who could use a skill similar to [Unrivaled] and he wouldn't be instantly killed ever again.

.....

Finally, there was the crimson pet egg. Holding it in my hand, I could feel a soft warmth coming from the center. I waved my other hand over the top and the pet egg's stats appeared in the air——

[Mushroom Spirit] (Saint Tier BOSS)

Type: Support type, Owner Stats Fusion

Attack: ★★★★★★★★☆☆

Defense: ★★★★★★★★☆☆

Health: ★★★★★★★★☆☆

Agility: ★★★★★★★★☆☆

Magic: ★★★★★★★★☆☆



Skills: [Fusion]

Excellency: 100%

Owner Requirements: Level 90, Charm Cost 20, 10,000 Gold

.....

“Fusion Pet? What’s that?” I was stunned.

Wan Er shook her head, her face puzzled, “Not sure...”

Li Mu laughed, “Never mind. Let’s ROLL to see who gets it. Afterwards we’ll have them fuse together and see the result.”

One Second Hero said, “Ok, Guild Master, set up the ROLL. My dice are getting thirsty....”

I was speechless. I then immediately set up the ROLL for the pet egg. All of the top ten players would participate, as well as me. After all, this was a very interesting item...

“Pa!”

I finally landed on 11, well.

Qing Qian chuckled and threw out her dice. She got 17, which wasn’t any better than my own number. Li Mu and Wang Jian didn’t get over 50. All the way until Dancing Forest threw another 100. Her luck today was just too great!

Matcha cautiously began the ROLL and “Shua!” landed on 100 as well. There were two 100’s already! Everyone couldn’t tear their eyes away as Wan Er also began her ROLL. The dice continuously rolled along the ground, finally stopping on 100. There was a total of three 100s!

The system recognized the three way tie and had Matcha, Wan Er and Dancing Forest ROLL for another round!

“41 points!”

64 points!”

90 points!

Finally, Wan Er was the one who came out on top. I handed the pet egg to the beautiful little miss. She held it carefully in the palm of her hand and then

pointed a finger out. She then carefully slit her finger on my Zhen Yue Sword and a drop of blood seeped out and dripped onto the pet egg. At that moment, the a light burst out of the egg flew into the sky. Lines of words appeared above the egg.

“Pa Cha..”

The egg cracked and a cute head popped out. “Ji Ji” it cried out as it stood in Wan Er’s palm. A tiny cap rested on its head, and looked extremely like the Mushroom spirit. It climbed up the beautiful Wan Er’s arm to her shoulder. Then with a “Wa wa” it turned into a mushroom tattoo and rested onto Wan Er’s shoulder. The fusion was a success!

“Huh?!”

Wan Er was slightly shocked and her mouth was agape.

“So?” I asked, “How was the fusion’s result?”

Wan Er opened up her arms and then shared a picture of the result:

Fusion Effect (Mushroom Spirit) ——

Attack Power +27%

Defense +24%

Attack Speed +21%

Max HP +4257

Magic Defense +47%

.....

I smiled. “So strong! I wonder if there will be more of these fusion pets. It’s practically a necessity for players!

Li Mu nodded, “There will definitely be more. Sooner or later it’ll be our turn!”

I continued to separate the other items. With that, ten minutes already passed by.

Qing Qian stood at the edge of the wall and looked towards the northern

forests and said, “The seventh wave of monsters should be coming. If nothing out of the ordinary happens, they should be Level 2 Hybrid Demons. Our numbers have already taken a great hit. [Zhan Long] in total has lost over ten thousand players.”

I felt my fingers go cold and I tightened my grip on my Dragon Reservoir Sword, “Yes, I got it...”

Wan Er walked over from behind me and said, “Pig, your beautiful teacher is commanding the battlefield over there. Why don’t you take this chance and head over to get your fifth class advancement quest? You’re Lv 100 now, so you can advance again. Maybe there’s some other strong skill that you can learn!”

I nodded with a smile, “OK, I’ll head over now. I almost forgot!”

.....

Not far from us, a group of monsters suddenly appeared from the forest. It was a group of Barbarian Warriors, all Level 2 Hybrid Demons. Either way, our [Zhan Long] formation wouldn’t change much without one person missing. And so, I raised my sword and walked over to the observation tower and jumped up on to the deck. I stood behind Frost as she watched the north.

“Frost.”

“Yes.” She turned around to look at me and smiled. “You’re here? Do you have some business?”

I pointed at the “LV-100” above my head and smiled. “Look, I’m already strong enough. Can you promote me to the next job? I can’t always just stay as a Dragon City Nightwatch....”

Frost chuckled and spread her arms out, “Alright. To be honest, in Dragon City, a Nightwatch is only a gold position. The next is the platinum tier, Dragon Rider . If you actually finish this quest, then I’ll consider giving you the honor of a Dragon Rider. However, this quest will be extremely difficult....”

I nodded, “Alright. Tell me, what kind of a quest do I have to complete!”

Frost looked towards the north and said, “You’ve seen it all too. Right now, our situation is extremely dangerous. I myself am up to my ears in work, so

there's no way I can send you on a quest to kill the Hybrid Demon Commander....”

I pursed my lips, “It can be something else too. After all, the situation is as it is right now. I hope that I can get stronger as soon as possible so that I can be of more help...”

Frost grunted and smiled. “Alright then, let's do this... you go participate in the battle to guard the city. From this point onwards, you must kill 1000 Hybrid Demons. Afterwards, you can go to Dragon City to get your promotion. Someone who can kill 1000 Hybrid Demons is definitely a worthy warrior. How does that sound?”

I immediately replied, “Yes, ok!”

.....

“Ding!”

System Notification: You've accepted the quest [Thousand Man Slash]

Quest Details: Join the [Dragon City Defense] and kill 1000 Hybrid Demons. When you have done so, you will be promoted to a platinum class and become one of the Dragon Riders. However, you must be careful, those Hybrid Demons are incredibly strong. While you are killing enemies, you cannot die or else this quest will be failed.

# Chapter 560 Successful Fifth Advancement

Dragon Rider, one of the jobs among the Dragon Knights. This was a name that many players would die for. Yup, it was just within my grasp. I would definitely be able to kill these 1000 Hybrid Demons. Furthermore, the sooner I advance to my fifth advancement, the more defense and attack power I would have against them. Plus, I've seen in the information, that every time a player advances a job, that there was at least a 25% hidden stat increase. The current players couldn't hold up against the Hybrid Demons because of the fact that we hadn't reached our fifth class advancements.

.....

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and returned to the border of the city wall. I charged towards the Level 2 Hybrid Demon monsters. This time, I wasn't going to let these monsters take the advantage. With my Dragon Reservoir Sword as my main offense and my Zhen Yue Sword's [Blade Spin] as my support, I put all of my focus into getting as many kills as I could. As long as I got 1000 I would be able to advance to the fifth level!

Time passed by quickly and in the blink of an eye, 4 hours passed. [Zhan Long] took quite a few losses. There were also a lot less Ba Huang City players on wall. It looked like [Prague] and [Vanguard] had less than 2000 players each. However there were still players continuously running towards the wall to help. Others didn't dare come. Fighting the Level 2 Hybrid Demons was like suicide.

"Hu hu...."

Yan Zhao Warrior's long sword was soaked blood. He charged forward and pushed back a monster. Sweat dripped from his forehead as he stared into the plains covered with [Prague] corpses. He couldn't help but feel his heart quiver slightly as he said, "F\*ck, this is only the eighth wave. Are they trying to break us?"

Epic Hero recovered some of his health and huffed, "Guild Master, if we keep this battle up, then at most after two waves all of our [Prague] players will be killed. What should we do..."

Yan Zhao Warrior raised a fist and growled, “What are we hesitating for? Send out a command to all of the divisions and have them all bring players here. We’re going to fight with all we have against these Hybrid Demons. Losing three levels is nothing, but if we lose Dragon City, then the entire Ba Huang City will fall under the blade of the Hybrid Demon army. Compared to a Lv 2 Main City, what is losing three levels worth?”

Epic Hero nodded, “Understood. I’m on it!”

Not far away, [Vanguard] looked as though it had some movement as well. Jian Feng Han dashed across the crowd of monsters, his blade splattered with blood. Out of breath, he roared, “Foolish, command the divisions to bring more people here. [Prague] is putting their all into this. [Vanguard] can’t be the only one conserving its power. Have everyone come here. We’re gonna fight with everything on the line. We must hold Dragon City for 48 hours!”

.....

Crowds of players died along the wall. Wan Er, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Qing Qian, Old K and the other close combat [Zhan Long] players would charge into the fray once they recovered their health. Each one of them was covered in blood, but nobody retreated a step. Furthermore, the NPCs seemed to have noticed the weariness of the players. Under Frost’s command, a group appeared South of the city with equipment repair, potions, and other items. With that, the players only needed two minutes to replenish all of their resources.

“Keng....”

I pushed away monsters with my Zhen Yue sword while I cut them down with my Dragon Reservoir Sword. Using both of my swords to fight, I sliced down one monster with a single stroke. A “+1” popped up above my head. I glanced at the system and saw that my kill count had already hit 771. Yup, I just needed to put in a little more energy and I’ll hit 1000!

Time passed quickly and [Zhan Long]’s dozen divisions had all practically gone to their graves on the city wall. The demons on the other hand had already reached the tenth wave. Of the waves, the seventh BOSS was killed by Yan Zhao Warrior, while the 8th and 9th were taken by Misty Cloud and Han Bei Song. It seemed as though they got a Saint Tier sword. All in all, the difficulty of this

event was extremely high, but the rewards were proportional with the risk and were extremely plentiful.

Before us, the entire mountain was covered with Level 2 Hybrid Demons at Lv 110—— the Sickie Demons. This was a type of monster with extremely high attack power. Even though they had an extreme love for gold, we couldn't use the same method as before. In the end, the ratio of Gold to RMB was 1:2. 1 Gold was worth 2 bucks. This was hard earned money and nobody was willing to throw it away. After all, rich people like Yan Zhao and Misty Cloud were still rare.

My blade slashed through a group of Sickie Demons and two of the little devils were hacked to death. I roared and flames began to rise around me. [Sword Tempest] activated. That on top of the continuous attacks from my [Azure Dragon Crossbow], a few more Sickie Demons fell to their deaths.

.....

I looked up and saw that there were less and less Sickie Demons. I immediately began to retreat and smiled. "I'm going to advance to my fifth promotion, you guys hold them off!"

Li Mu laughed, "Hurry back!"

I turned around and leapt onto the platform to see Frost. In the air, Severing Beauty had grown into a sword of light that darted right into the crowd of Sickie Demons and blood spurted. As Frost directed the army, she did not waste any time and did her part in killing the Hybrid Demons. These monsters were terrifying to us players, but before Frost's strength, they were like ants.

"Sha sha..."

I stepped across the ice and snow and walked forward. Frost had turned around to look at me and she grinned, "Alright. You have not let me down, killing this many Hybrid Demons in such a short time. My student really isn't like the others..."

I felt a warmth wash over my heart and I smiled. "Frost, are you praising me?"

Frost rubbed her chin and then stuck her chest up as she stepped forward. She then glanced at me and said, "I've always felt pride because of you, have

you not known that?”

A little embarrassed I looked down at my shoes and smiled. “Alright, thank you... I, can I get a promotion now?”

“Yup, you’ve already given enough proof!”

Frost straightened up and looked into the sky. Energy began to rise around her sight body and brought out a breeze. She then opened one of her hands and then placed it on my shoulder. She closed her eyes and murmured, “The Dragon City Oath, to always protect Justice, even if the walls fall. Never turn your back on a mission and forever guard this desolate land,.. I, Frost, as the commander of the Dragon Knights, name you “Yang Wei Dragon Rider”. From now on, your fate and mine are tied together and we will never turn our back to one another!”

.....

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, you have been promoted to your fifth job! Because you are the first player to advance to the fifth class, you have obtained the rewards: Level+1, Charm+20, Gold+70,000, and your reputation in Tian Ling Empire, Ba Huang City, and Dragon City has greatly increased. You have successfully reached Heavenly Tier and your hidden stats will greatly increase. The job that you have obtained is Yang Wei Dragon Rider!

.....

“Shua!”

A ray of gold light fell on me and I leveled up to 101. Furthermore, I obtained 20 charm. In my stats list, my attack, defense, and magic defense stats had all turned into a sky blue color. Clearly, this meant that my hidden stats had increased as well. Even though I couldn’t see it, when I fight the Hybrid Demons, I’ll be able to feel the effects!

Excitement coursed through me, I looked up at Frost. There was something more important that I needed to do. I made a fist and looked at my beautiful teacher with a smile, “Frost, now that I am a Dragon Rider, are there any skills you need to teach me?”



Frost grinned, “Yup. There are indeed two skills that I can teach you. However, these are all ancient skills that I had discovered in the depths of Dragon City’s tomb which I then morphed with my own skills and so I will teach them to you myself. If the Dragon City officials come after us then we’ll just stuff their mouths with gold!”

I nodded, “Ok!”

Frost waved her hand and two skill books appeared before me——

[Frosty Armor] (SS) : Summons the power of ice to become an energy armor to protect the user from receiving any high damage. The durability is proportional with the user’s attack power and defense power. Requirements: Level 100, Consumes 10 charm, 100,000 Gold. You cannot learn this skill with the skill [Dou Qi Wall], but its effects can be added with the effects of [Wall of Dou Qi] [Ice Domain] (SSS) Summons an icy power and targets all enemies within a 100×100 yard radius with frost and ice pick damage. Furthermore, there is a chance of sealing the enemy in ice. The damage and chance of sealing is dependent on the user’s stats. Requirements: Level 100, Consumes: 15 Charm and 200,000 G.

.....

I felt my heart pounding. D\*mn, these were both Frost’ most prided skills. To think that she would teach it to me without any reservations. The only problem was that it was too expensive!

Looking at my bag, I saw that I currently had 500,000G. I gritted my teeth and transferred 300,000 and got both of the skill books. I quickly learned them and Shua Shua two rays of light fell. I now got three skills from Frost!

Frost narrowed her eyes and then felt her money bag with a smile, “Good... my student really is a rich man. I’m very content, He he.... Now, all the money the Dragon City blacksmiths used to forge the battle horse armor has been earned back. Very good... soon I will be able to create a Dragon City armored cavalry....

Looking at my contents and beautiful teacher I couldn’t help but smile, “Frost, is that all you want?”

Frost nodded, “Yup. Dragon City is my everything. I will spend my entire life defending this city!”

“Alright....”

I looked at my system and activated Frost Armor with a roar. Slivers of blue energy began to rise from the air around me and wrap around my body, creating an icy cover over my Flame Prison Armor. On top of that was the Dou Qi that swirled around me to form the [Wall of Dou Qi]. As expected, the two skills combined created a flawless defense. Above my head was a counter for the Frost Armor. Once the durability of my Frost Armor disappeared, the counter would go away as well. It was quite great, showing that my stats were pretty powerful.

“That’s right...”

Frost held out another skill book and said, “Besides the [Frost Armor] and [Ice Domain] skills, I’ll give you this skill for free..”

I looked at it. [Assault], it was a fifth advancement skill. All heavy armor players could use it. It dealt a charging attack to the targets within a 5-40 yard radius and had a chance for 1 second stun. It was a S Tier skill, something that all players would get.

“Shua!”

Now that I got [Assault] I was much more content.

# Chapter 561 Heavenly Tier Level 1

After saying goodbye to Frost, I returned to the battlefield. [Zhan Long] still had 3000 players fighting on the frontline. There were still quite a few Sickles Demons charging forward. Yup, it was a good time to see just how my attack had changed now that I advanced to the fifth job!

I quickened my pace. From afar, I could see that Li Mu was surrounded by the Sickles Demons and received attacks from both sides!

“Ka ka!”

“12371 ! ”

“11093 ! ”

.....

Oh no, he was almost instantly killed. Luckily Li Mu’s equipment was all new and he had close to 24,000 health. However, the pain still forced him to retreat backwards, crashing into Matcha’s shield. He turned around and as he received Darling Duck’s heal, he said, “Beautiful Matcha, I didn’t hurt you did I?”

Matcha glared at him and said, “Go away, you’re blocking me....”

Li Mu was speechless.

I dashed over and raised both of my swords and dealt two slashes on both of the Sickles Demons. Just as expected, after rising to the fifth job promotion, my attack power was far different from before——

“8452 ! ”

“8764 ! ”

“8812 ! ”

.....

After receiving so much damage, the little demons all raised their sickles and threw four cuts at me. The sickles bounced off of my Frost Armor with a “Peng Peng Peng” and damage numbers popped up. Even the pain was less than what

it used to be——

“3717 ! ”

“3911 ! ”

“3794 ! ”

.....

I couldn't help but feel joy rising in me. D\*mn, this is what it means to be durable. [Wall of Dou Qi]+ [Frost Armor] are as powerful as I expected. As long as [Frost Armor] doesn't break, who can stop me?!

Li Mu, Old K, and Wang Jian were all gaping as they watched. Old K even rubbed his eyes and exclaimed, “D\*mn, Little Li, did you eat some kind of medicine? How can your attack and defense stats be so powerful?”

Wang Jian smiled. “Old K, did you see? Brother Xiao Yao has already gotten his fifth job promotion! Now he's a Yang Wei Dragon Rider. Plus... he has Heavenly Tier hidden stat boosts. How can he not be strong?”

“Heavenly Tier?” Old K was puzzled.

Matcha smiled. “If you look ugly then you should study more of the game's guides. Levels 1-99 are considered Earthly Tier while levels 100-199 are considered Heavenly Tier...”

Old K made a fist and said, “I'm going to hurry up and level. If I don't get to Lv 100, I won't be able to feel OP...”

.....

I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword and stood on the border of Dragon City. This time, I had my Frost Armor for defense, and was no longer afraid of the attack from the Level 2 Hybrid Demons. Holding off a crowd of Sickle Demons, very soon my Frost Armor's durability was cut down, but I immediately erected another one. The king's way was to level up my skills as fast as I can to Lv 10. Then, the durability would be at least 3 times more than it was now. One could just imagine how strong that would be.

Once a group of Little Sickle Demons stepped onto the wall, I immediately activated my other skill—— [Ice Domain]!

“Hong!”

A powerful cold energy began to seep from my body and “Peng!” It exploded, creating a 100 yard wave with me at the center. Blades of ice and ice picks burst out, hitting all of the Little Sickles Demons. Furthermore, over 50% of the monsters had been sealed. The skill lasted for 3 seconds and had a 60 second cool down. It was just too useful!

Once I activated [Ice Domain], everyone in [Zhan Long] was stupefied. Now all of them could see just how strong these Dragon City classes are.

.....

“Brother Xiao Yao!”

Qing Qian pointed to the foot of the city and said, “Look, the BOSS has appeared. It right in front of [Valley of the Gods]. What would we do? [Valley of the Gods] has less than 100 people right now, they definitely won’t be able to hold it off...”

I gritted my teeth, “There’s no other way. I’ll go and lure the BOSS over! Qing Qian, send out a command and have everyone prepare for attack. This tenth wave BOSS is [Zhan Long]’s!”

“Yes sir!”

Wan Er said, “Be careful!”

I flashed a confident smile to my future girlfriend and said, “Don’t worry!” I jumped off of the city wall and pulled out my Zhen Yue Sword to slow down my descent. I could see from a distance that the BOSS was a porcupine clothed in armor and holding a sickle blade. It looked a little like Lin Han, but didn’t have the same attack power or pressure as him. I opened one hand and targeted the BOSS with [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“Peng!”

“16236 ! ”

He he, my Dragon Reservoir Sword’s dragon power activated, dealing three times the normal damage. That one attack lured the BOSS straight to me. On the wall, the [Valley of the Gods] Guild Master Lu Dong Bing waved his staff and

stepped onto the wall, furious, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, this BOSS spawned right in front of our guild formation. What gives you the right to run over here and steal our BOSS?”

As I activated [Blade Spin] to attack the BOSS, I looked up at Lu Dong Bing and smiled. “My bad, I didn’t mean to. But its just that [Valley of the Gods] has less than 100 people. Don’t say killing a BOSS, it’d be a miracle if you don’t get killed by the BOSS. Once [Valley of the Gods] formation breaks, then it would automatically go to [Zhan Long]. If our formation breaks, then the casualties will be entirely different. I’d like to avoid that situation, so sorry!”

War Tent angrily kicked a brick and shouted, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, aren’t you doing this on purpose? Is there anyone else that would steal a BOSS so arrogantly like you?”

On the side, Old K raised his battle axe and walked over. He shouted, “War Tent, what’s wrong? Did you want to duel it out? Here here here, I happen to have the time. If you dare try to curse at our Guild Master, then you’re cursing at the entire [Zhan Long]. Why don’t you also ask all of the brothers behind me if they want to fight with you!”

Li Mu, Wang Jian, One Second Hero, Glass Fox, Wang Jiang and all of the other top tier [Zhan Long] players raised their weapons. At that moment, War Tent had no choice but to stand down, afraid to say another word.

In the distance Yan Zhao commented, “The tenth wave BOSS is a Lv 110 Saint Tier one. [Valley of the Gods] would not have been able to fight against him. Seeing as they didn’t have the strength to do it, then they should stand down. [Zhan Long]’s formation stood against the tenth wave and took heavy losses. This BOSS should’ve been theirs in the first place!”

Lu Dong Bing gritted his teeth, “Since Guild Master Yan Zhao says so too, then we never mind... Brothers, begin replenishing your resources and get ready for the 11th wave of monsters!”

.....

“Roar roar....”

The tenth wave BOSS was a Lv 110 Saint Tier named the “Sickle Devil”, and

was already charging towards me. He roared, “Bastard, I’ll cut you in half! If you have the guts, don’t run!”

As the BOSS was about to get close, I immediately turned around and let out my Dragon’s Hook. “Peng!” It pierced through One Second Hero’s shield. Shocked, he exclaimed, “F\*ck, Guild Master what are you doing?”

I laughed, “Hold tight!”

As I said that, I shrank the hook and flew forward. One Second Hero grunted and was dragged to the border of the wall as I pulled forward. Li Mu and Wang Jian acted fast and held onto One Second Hero and shouted, “Yong Jie, don’t let go!”

One Second Hero’s face turned green, “My arms about to get pulled out of their sockets, Li Xiao Yao, you bastard, let go!”

How could I possibly let go? With a whoop I rushed up the wall with the Sick Demon right behind me. I shouted to everyone, “Set up your formation, we’re getting ready to kill a BOSS!”

I turned around and began swinging my sword towards the Sick Demon. That trash also swung his blade at me. “Ka Ka” he dealt two attacks. However, with my [Wall of Dou Qi] combined with [Frost Armor], I was able to hold against him!

“6987 ! ”

“7011 ! ”

.....

Yan Zhao Warrior was speechless. He raised a thumb and said, “He he, that Li Xiao Yao’s ability to survive is just too great. I’m speechless. A fifth advancement class really is strong!”

Simple’s eyes were filled with doubt and he said, “En, Xiao Yao Zi Zai is a rare talent. Unfortunately, he’s at arms with us [Vanguard]. If it weren’t for that Purple Tier Tian Zhe Sword, leading to our bad blood. It could be said that it was [Vanguard]’s fault that there’s bad feelings between the two of our guilds!”

Jian Feng Han’ lips twitched, “Sister Jun, you’re lecturing me again. Let’s not

mention what happened in the past any longer! Besides, Li Xiao Yao isn't some treasure. In the end, he and I will duel it out to find out who's stronger. He wouldn't spend the rest of his time here in [Vanguard]."

Simple nodded, "Yes, I understand that. And so, Ah Han, you need to train your emotions better. If you look at the entire Chinese Server, among the heavy armor players, only you and Q-Sword can fight against Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Right now, you are the weakest amongst the three. You have to work a little harder. Sooner or later, you three will fight to find out who was the strongest close combat player."

Jian Feng Han smiled. "Don't worry, I understand... I will!"

.....

"Kong kong.."

The Sickie Demon roared. The attack that he threw created sparks as it slammed against my armor. Too bad for him, he wasn't going to be able to kill me with that one attack. Only if he were to continuously waste away my health, he might be able to, but the Sickie Demon's attack was enough deal critical damage to other players. In the blink of an eye, several of our players had died. There was no other way, we could only whittle his health like this.

After another sweep of his blade, twelve attacks swept through the crowd of players. The BOSS had activated his big skill, killing over 100 people in one attack. [Zhan Long] took another hit from this BOSS. In the end however, we were still able to control it and within 9 minutes, its health dropped to the bottom!

My Dragon Reservoir Sword dealt another dragon powered attack, cutting right through the BOSS' body and cutting away his last sliver of health!

I pulled out my sword and smiled to Wan Er, "Vice Guild Master, go split up the spoils of war. I don't need anything!"

Wan Er smiled. "Yes, will do!"

.....

Wan Er began to split the items. There were two Saint Tier equipments, each



ROLLED away by Wolf and One Second Hero. While they were doing that, I looked at the details of my two new skills, [Ice Domain] and [Frost Armor]. I had leveled both of them up to Lv 2. Other than that, nothing surprising had happened. Of course my [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and my [Great Realm of Desolation] had already reached Lv 10 and was on the way to being perfected. The next level was “Heavenly Tier Lv 1”. Looks like Lvl 10 wasn’t necessarily the final level for skills. He he, Heavenly Tier skills, just what level would that be?

# Chapter 562 Surprise Attack

After the battle with the tenth wave of Hybrid Demons, Dragon City was littered with bodies. Torn battle flags weakly fluttered in the breeze as they stood above the piles of player bodies. At the same time, several people stood at the edge of the border, waiting to report on the military situation. The eleventh wave was still not coming, making everyone worried. Who knew what awaited us in this next wave.

.....

I gripped my sword as I leaned against the wall. Wan Er came to stand next to me. She rubbed her eyes a little, and seemed to be a little sleepy. We had already been in the game for close to 20 straight hours.

I placed my hand on the beautiful Vice Guild Master's shoulder and softly said, "Wan Er, do you want to log off and get some rest?"

"Nah..."

She looked up at me and said, "Who knows what kind of waves are awaiting us. If I go offline right now, then it'll be too big of a risk. All of our previous efforts might even go to waste..."

At that moment, the third divisions' Guild Master Death's Elegy walked over with his spear and said, "I just logged off and slept for five hours, so I've had enough. Guild Master, Vice Guild Master, why don't you take everyone offline to rest.... Every hour of sleep counts. I'll take a few of the other divisions to hold off the monsters. We'll probably be able to deal with 1-2 of them. If anything happens, I'll send a message out. How does that sound?"

I looked at everyone. Qing Qian, Wolf, and Li Mu had all been fighting monsters for a long time and were nearly falling asleep as they stood. The Hybrid Demons attacks came wave after wave, and didn't seem to give us any time to rest whatsoever. And so, I nodded, "Alright then. All main guild members log off to rest. Leave your numbers here and we'll call to wake you up. Death God, you stand guard here. If anything happens, let everyone know

immediately! Afterwards, the next wave may very likely be Level 3 Hybrid Demons. You'll have to guard with your life!"

"Yes!"

Before he even finished talking, the sounds of marching began to travel from behind us. In the next moment, an army of NPCs carrying long swords suddenly appeared on the wall. Leading them was Luo Lin. He raised the sword at his waist and roared, "The adventurer army is about to fall. The Knights Templar have come prepared to fight the Hybrid Demons. They are the most elite swordsmen in Ba Huang City and is our pride and honor. I will leave the quest of killing these Hybrid Demons to you!"

Around 20,000 Knights Templar NPCs began creating a formation.

I couldn't help but smile, "Death God, look, these Ba Huang City NPCs won't let you feel lonely. This way I won't have to worry. We'll log off to rest. If anything happens, wake everyone up!"

"Understood. Guild Master, go ahead!"

"Alright!"

.....

At the foot of the city walls, [Zhan Long]'s main guild players all began to disappear as they logged off. [Vanguard], [Enemies at the Gate], and [Prague]'s main guilds all began to log off as well, leaving their divisions to take their places. We needed to keep our focus and stamina up in order to face the oncoming battles!

When I logged off, it was already 8 o'clock in the morning. My stomach rumbled with hunger. Unable to resist any longer, I washed up and went downstairs to buy three sets of breakfast, leaving two for Wan Er and Dong Cheng. I quickly ate my own breakfast. When I was pretty much full, I quickly delivered the other two to the girls and went back to my own room to sleep.

Maybe it was because I was too tired, but once I laid down in my bed, I immediately fell into deep sleep. My Yi Hai was also slightly sluggish, but I could feel the energy in my body flow. I consciously controlled the energy, unblocking any areas that seemed to have any blockage. At the same time, I trained my

body and energy flow, trying to reach new heights. I could feel that Yan Yang Realm was not far away. The fiery energy in my body was already beginning to turn into something more tame. It wasn't too strong yet, but I could feel it.

In my foggy consciousness, I suddenly heard my phone go off "Du du!" It was an alarm that immediately woke me up. The message came from Wang Jian. Still sleepy, I turned off the alarm and a message came from Matcha, "My beloved boss, hurry up and get out of bed. We're about to lose Dragon City!"

I immediately sat up, and began to get ready. I glanced over to the other bed and saw that Tang Gu was in the game. That trash was probably busy fighting in Fan Shu City. I had looked him up in the forums. Apparently, the Head of the Tangs was a pretty good player and now he was practically the right hand man of Q-Sword. He had even risen to the ranks of the Elders. Clearly, he proved very useful to them. Before I had underestimated this roommate of mine.

Log on!

"Shua!"

I appeared in the middle of Dragon City. Far away, I could see an enormous beast BOSS that was plowing through [Prague]'s players. Yan Zhao Warrior flew into the air with critical health and was nearly instantly killed. Behind him, the bodies of [Prague]'s players began to build up into mountains. That enormous beast had already killed a lot of people.

I looked up and saw that the BOSS' name was "The Ambusher" and was a Lv 113 Divine Tier BOSS. No wonder [Prague] took so many losses. Motherf\*cker, that's a high level Divine Tier BOSS. It'd be weird if Yan Zhao Warrior could hold against him. I looked at our player numbers. [Prague] had lost over a thousand players to this Ambusher, and the BOSS still had 17% of his health left. He was about to be killed, but the number of [Prague] players left standing was far and few. At most they had several hundred people. Beside them, [Vanguard], [Flying Dragon], [Wrath of the Heroes], and [Hero's Mound: Division One] were all waiting for [Prague] to die on its own. Nobody was willing to help. After all, this was a BOSS with 17% of its health left, who was willing to take that on?

"Boss!"

Matcha raised her heavy shield and walked over and said, "The thirteenth

wave is almost here . Our divisions have held off three waves of monsters, and are almost wiped out. All we have left is the main guild army. Just ten minutes ago, even Death God's Elegy died in battle. Before he died, he sent out a message to wake everyone up. That bastard really is determined. He actually managed to hold up until now...."

I gave a deep nod, "He is. Has everyone logged on yet? Give me an estimate on how many people we can use."

"Around 800...."

Wan Er walked over from behind and said, "The Knights Templar that Luo Lin brought have almost all been killed in battle. Even Duke Luo Lei has personally lead an NPC army here and has continuously provided reinforcements to Dragon City. However, there's just too many in the Hybrid Demon Army. Dragon City has truly become the focal point of the battle..."

I gritted my teeth. Not far from me, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, Qing Qian, and Dong Cheng all logged on. When Darling Duck and Thousand League Spring logged on as well, I immediately activated [Dragon's Whistle of Thunder and Lightning], giving everyone a 40% boost in attack and defense. I then raised my sword and made my way towards the East side of the wall. Over there, Yan Zhao Warrior was doing his best to hold up against the BOSS' attacks.

.....

"Uncle Yan Zhao!" I raised my blade and said, "Do you need help? [Zhan Long] will help you with this BOSS. We won't take part in the drops. It will all go to [Prague]. After all, you guys have put in too much effort into this BOSS. How does that sound?"

Yan Zhao Warrior held his blade up to parry one of the BOSS' cuts and continuously retreated. He gritted his teeth and shouted, "Xiao Yao, cut the chatter and just attack. What spoils and drops, we'll discuss when the BOSS is dead. If you delay any longer, [Prague] might actually disappear from the Dragon City map!"

"Alright!"

I sprinted forward with my sword. With a roar, [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost

Armor] activated at the same time. I then threw my Zhen Yue Sword forward. Luckily, no snow was falling over Dragon City for once and the moon hung high in the sky. My Zhen Yue Sword's attack power greatly increased and cut through the BOSS ten times, dragging the aggro to me.

"Grr..."

The ugly beast turned around and lunged right towards me, taking my attack. Its battle axe was covered with frost and fire, the two elements as it dealt a cut right onto my Flame Prison armor. The weight of the attack fell on me, so painful——

"12347 ! "

"11298 ! "

I retreated several steps and activated [Cleansing Rain]. Darling Duck's [Grip of Compassion] also fell upon me, immediately bringing my health up to full. I then activated [Combo]+[Fierce Ice Blade], cutting right into the BOSS' chest. Afterwards, I erected an [Azure Dragon Crossbow] behind me to help provide support. I swung both of my blades and I dashed forward. I dealt seven attacks in a row, making the beast cry out in pain.

Without wasting a second, it swept out its battle axe. I raised both of my swords to block. My arms shuddered from the numbing pain of the attack and I flew backwards, hitting the wall behind me. The momentum of my crash had even caused it to crack. On the good side, Wan Er and Qing Qian caught up and used [Gouge] to stun the BOSS. Dancing Forest then dealt a [Scatter Shot] that finally stunned it. Nearly a hundred of [Zhan Long]'s players rushed over to help. That added on with [Prague]'s remaining army, the BOSS' health was finally begin to whittle down again. Within two minutes, it had already hit the bottom.

"Rawr!"

With a roar, the Ambusher began to rage. It suddenly raised its battle axe and threw a cut right into the ground, opening a deep abyss in the earth. Right afterwards, lava and flames began to burst from the abyss. Many of [Zhan Long] and [Prague]'s players were within the range of the attack. I immediately shouted, "Defend!"

One Second Hero reacted and dropped his heavy shield, activating [Fierce Sun Wall] and protected all of the people within the range. This way we managed to avoid many players from getting instantly killed by the BOSS.

Afterwards, everything was much simpler. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Wan Er and I switched between covering, defending and attacking, bringing the BOSS' health lower and lower. With a pierce of Wan Er's dagger, the Ambusher fell to the ground with a cry. The beautiful little miss leveled up to 100 while the BOSS dropped a pile of items and equipment.

I spun around and swept out my blade. "Keng!" I blocked an Assassin from [Flying Dragon] that was trying to steal the spoils. I had already noticed him when he was within 15 yards of me. The new abilities of fifth advancement players had grown quite a bit as well.

"Don't embarrass your guild..."

I looked at the pitiful Assassin and didn't kill him. I slowly turned around and walked over towards the [Zhan Long] formation and said, "Uncle Yan Zhao, you better sweep the battlefield soon."

"Thank you Xiao Yao...."

Yan Zhao Warrior gave a look of gratitude to all of [Zhan Long]'s players for helping him in the final moments of the battle. We had even lost around 30 players but didn't try to take any part in the drops.

.....

While Yan Zhao went through the rewards, [Vanguard], [Enemies at the Gate], and [Blood Contract] all silently watched. Nobody dared to make a move because they all knew that whether or not we would be able to hold the city was a question. If we began to fight amongst ourselves now, then that would be both shameless and hurtful. As long as people thought of their position in Ba Huang City, they would never dare to steal the drops.

Looking at the distant north, Wan Er let out a sigh. She gripped her dagger and said, "The fourteenth wave is about to be here..."

I nodded, "Let's work hard...."

Behind us, the 700+ [Zhan Long] players all began to pull out their blades as they tensely watched the North.



# Chapter 563 Hellhounds

“How come [Prague] has so little people left?” I said as I looked into the distance for any movement. I was very reluctant to ask.

Qing Qian said, “Uncle and the others had to kill two Divine Tier BOSSes in a row, and that’s why they took so much damage. Especially the first boss. It had three area attacks, leaving [Prague] with a lot of losses. Right now, the main guild only has less than 100 players. However, they still have two other divisions, so in total they have around 5000.”

“What about [Zhan Long]? How many players do we have left in the divisions?” Li Mu asked.

Wan Er responded, “We still have three divisions waiting at the bottom of the mountain for our orders, so around 3000. They’re all newly created divisions, so I wouldn’t put too much hope in their fighting power. Their levels are too low. They would only come here to die. We’ll just have to see how the NPC army plans on dealing with this Hybrid Demon battle.”

I nodded, “Yes. Then we’ll just guard the city!”

.....

Right at that moment, roars began to sound from the forest. One after another, ferocious wolf-like beasts began to appear. Their bodies were enormous, around 2 meters in length and their four limbs were lean and muscular. Even their eyes were tinted with a red light. They looked like rabid dogs that had climbed out from the depths of hell. Their battle power couldn’t be low.

I looked at their stats from afar and muttered, “Hellhounds, Lv 114 Level 3 Hybrid Demons. Everyone prepare yourselves. These Hellhounds most likely do not have a low attack power. Let’s bring in our defense. We just need to defend 50 yards across. Wan Er, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Matcha, Yong Jie, and Tang Xin, bring everyone with a defense over 15,000 to the frontline. We’ll use our advantage in defense to hold off these Level 3 Hybrid Demons. We need to do

all we can do to lessen our damage. We'll leave most of the city to the NPC army. This is the 14th wave, it should be when the Ba Huang City army puts in their most effort."

Everyone nodded. Matcha, One Second Hero, Tang Xin, Yao Yan, Tearless, and Little Demon were all [Zhan Long]'s top tier Knights. They stepped forward and dropped their heavy shields into the ground. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Wan Er, Qing Qian and I were all attack type players that were scattered along the lines. It could be said that within these 50 yards, the entire front row were Ba Huang City's top heavy armor players. Each of their names was recognizable by most people in the city.

.....

"Grrr...."

We could hear the growls of the Hellhounds below us. Beside [Zhan Long]'s formation, Luo Lin gripped a flag in one hand and shouted, "What are we waiting for? Royal Defense Army's Cliff Knights charge. We'll rely on your barrier to hold our formation. We must defend Dragon City. If Dragon City falls, then Ba Huang City and the entire continent behind us will become the Hybrid Demons next target!"

The sounds of horse hooves rumbled the city walls. At least ten thousand Ba Huang City cavalry appeared on the city walls, each adorned with red armor and a crimson shield. As they arrived on the city walls they began to create a barrier with their shields while wielding a longsword in their right hands. They were ready for a counterattack at any time.

"Shua!"

With a roar, the first Hellhound charged towards the city wall. It swung its claws and lunged right into [Hero's Mound: Division One]'s formation. It had pounced onto a Knight's shield. He screamed in pain and terror as three damage numbers popped up. The beast actually managed to instantly kill a Lv 91 Knight——

"11283 ! "

"10977 ! "

“12321 ! ”

.....

Wang Ze Cheng was stunned, “What the f\*ck is with that attack power!?”

He quickly filled the empty space with his shield while the players behind him opened fire. Wang Ze Cheng’s defense was pretty good, and he was able to take a round of the Hellhound’s skills. However, the attack power of the players behind him wasn’t enough. It took them at least 20 seconds to kill one Hellhound and there were more to come later on.

One after another, the Hellhounds charged towards our armies. [Hero’s Mound: Division One]’s formation was starting to crumble. Yan Suo raised her dagger but didn’t dare to come out and attack. If she died, she would’ve lost three levels. How could she not care for that. Those levels were achieved with her own efforts. It wasn’t something she could easily get by acting cute.

Right in front of [Zhan Long]’s formation, there were at least 10 enormous Hellhounds that charged forward. I immediately opened one hand and locked [Great Realm of Desolation] on one of them. At the same time, I activated [Black Tortoise Realm] to slow the movements down for everyone. With a roar, I activated [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] giving all players around me a good BUFF. I then swung my two swords and with [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost Armor] I charged into the monsters. [Sword Tempest] and [Seven Star Fragment Slash] both exploded. I attracted five of the Hellhounds to me. Each of their attacks gave me 4500 damage, but I could still take it. Darling Duck and Thousand Spring were already giving me their heals.

Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K all began their charges and showed their might in the crowd of Hellhounds. However none of them dared to leave the formation like I did. The Hellhounds attack power was something all of them witnessed. How could they dare to underestimate the enemy?

.....

“Peng peng peng....”

One of the Hellhounds began to ram into [Zhan Long]’s shield formation. Matcha, One Second Hero, Tang Xin, and Yue Yao Yan all took their defense

stances and held up against the Hellhound's attacks. Their health fell below 50% within seconds.

In the back, Dong Cheng, Dancing Forest, Thousand Suns, Glass Wolf and General Lian Po dealt heavy ranged attacks under our protection. One after another, the Hellhounds cried out in pain in front of our formation. Everything was going rather smoothly. Even though [Zhan Long]'s losses were great, but it still went to show just how incredibly strong the players in the front were. After undergoing thirteen waves of BOSSes and Level 1, 2, and 3 Hybrid Demons, everyone switched out most of their equipment. Especially Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Matcha. Now, the worst equipment they had was probably a Valkyrie Tier equipment. Otherwise, everything else was extremely OP. It wasn't even hard for them to get to 20,000 health any longer.

After this battle at Dragon City, all of the middle tier and low tier players were massacred, while the high level players managed to survive and their stats greatly increased. This was something that all of the big guilds had predicted would happen when they first participated in this game. Waves wash out the sand, leaving only the strong behind. The same applied to this game. The smaller and weaker were bound to be separated out from the strong. Even though Gong Sun Zhan of the Three Kingdoms held the Northern territories, all he did was protect himself, resulting in his ultimate demise within his high walls.

Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior, Misty Clouds and Soaring Dragon were all players in Ba Huang City that understood the meaning behind this reasoning. If you wanted to make a place for yourself in Ba Huang City, you needed to rely completely on your blade and fight your way to the top. Otherwise, your hopes will only be dashed. This was something that even Wang Ze Cheng, Not Ordinary and Liu Yin, second tier Guild Masters understood. Thankfully it was because of this or else Dragon City may not have been able to withstand the attack of these thirteen waves.

.....

"Hold your positions!"

Luo Lin gripped his sword and was standing before the NPC army. He

suddenly swung his blade and cut one Hellhound in half. Blood spurted out, raining upon the Ba Huang Prince. He then raised his foot and kicked forward, crushing another Hellhound into mush. He spun around and activated [ ] and [ ], killing a dozen of the Hellhounds. All of the players were stunned. This was the strength of Ba Huang City's strongest warrior!

The Red Cliff Cavalry stood behind Luo Lin. "Keng king keng!" the Hellhounds rammed into their shields. They raised their sharp blades and dealt Dou Qi attacks, forcing the Hellhounds backwards. The Purple Star Army then let out a volley of arrows. Finally, the Ba Huang City NPC army's strength was completely able to hold the advantage over the Hybrid Demon Army. This was mainly due to the complete defense of the Red Cliff Cavalry. Otherwise, the Hellhounds would be extremely hard to deal with.

Time passed by quickly and after 2 hours of fighting, [Zhan Long] lost around 100 players while the Hellhounds grew fewer and fewer. This was a sign that the BOSS was about to appear.

"It's here!" Wan Er said as she jumped onto the wall and looked into the distance.

I squinted, "Our men are too few. Its best if we don't kill the BOSS and keep as many of our brothers alive as we can. The more points that we get the better. Otherwise, losing three levels would be extremely hard to recover...."

Wan Er nodded, "Yes, we will do what you just said. That is the smartest path to follow!"

.....

In the end, without waiting for us players to start attacking, the Black Cliff Archer NPCs began to lure the BOSS towards them. It was a high level BOSS from hell and gripped a long halberd. It charged straight into the group of Red Cliff Cavalry and led a massacre. Within minutes, it killed close to a hundred of the red cliff cavalry.

"D\*mm\*t!"

Luo Lin roared and suddenly lunged forward. "Peng!" he slashed forward, forcing the dog headed BOSS to its knees. It looked up and revealed a cruel

smile, “Luo Lin?! Ha ha.... Luo Lin, the defeated general. You actually dare appear again before our Demon Army? Do you have a death wish!”

Luo Lin let out a cold laugh and threw out a kick, throwing the BOSS into the air. Blood spurted and he swung his sword, leaving a deep cut in the BOSS’ head. That one attack cut the enemy’s health by 70M. The battle between the NPCs had already surpassed our imagination. Luo Lin’s strength had been trained for hundred of years and held the advantage in experience. Furthermore, his strength was enough to overpower his enemy. It looked as though he already had the ability to reach Holy Domain. After another dozen slices, and a Dou Qi explosion, that dog headed general collapsed to the ground and was reduced to a pile of meat...

“Motherf\*cker..”

Old K raised his battle axe and said, “Looks like all we have to do from now on is to hold our positions. There’s no need for us to charge any more. If anything else happens, then we’ll just let Luo Lin fight it...”

I shook my head, “Bro, this is only the 14th wave. From the time we have left, there’s still 10 more waves. It’d be wonderful if we could just block them..”

“Yup, I’m almost at Lv 100!”

“Everyone work hard! Let’s try and get more of [Zhan Long]’s players to the fifth advancement!”

“Ha ha, that is a must!”

.....

## Chapter 564 Getting Senile

The fifteenth wave was a group of swamp demons and were also Level 3 Hybrid Demons. [Zhan Long] was able to make it through, but we had lost 150+ players in the process and now had a total of 500 people left. [Vanguard] and [Enemies at the Gate] were not in a better situation. They only had a couple hundred players left too. The strength of this Hybrid Demon army was just too strong. At the current stage, the players had no way of defending against them.

The last BOSS had been killed by Frost and the Ancient Ran Min. The head was even taken back to the city by Ran Min.

.....

“Hu...”

Li Mu let out a deep sigh, creating a mini fog with his breath. It had already stopped snowing in Dragon City, but the air was still a bitter cold. Li Mu’s clear eyes looked to the north and he said, “It’s time for the 16th wave. When will this all end? This battle in Dragon City is just too long...”

Wang Jian smiled. “Boss, as long as we can hold up then we’ll basically all be reborn. Of all the guilds in Ba Huang City, just how many can hold up against this kind of attack? Before this, did you think that our brothers would make it to this point? “

Li Mu couldn’t help but wryly smile,” Yeah, that’s true. Thinking of where we were before, all I wanted was to have a guild that people would actually recognize. Never did I imagine that I would become a part of a top tier guild like [Zhan Long]...”

I looked over at him and said, “You aren’t just a part of [Zhan Long]. We have two kings, I am one of them, but the other is you.”

Li Mu took a deep breath and said, “Yea, I know. Thank you, Xiao Yao.”

“No problem.”

.....

Right at that moment, Qing Qian raised her dull dagger and pointed to the distance, “Brother Xiao Yao, the sixteenth wave is here.... eh, there’s something different about them..”

I nodded. It was a group of giants clothed in green armor and all carrying a long sword. They were each around 3 meters tall and had a cruel expression on their face. They roared at the city. Furthermore, these giant warriors seemed to have the same class, they were all swordsmen. But one could just imagine how high their stats were. More importantly, they were Level 4 Hybrid Demons!

“Sha sha....”

I stepped across the snow and pulled out my Zhen Yue Sword. As I got around 200 yard away from the giant warriors, I immediately returned. I had already grabbed their stats from the air and shared it with everyone on the wall——

[Demon Sword Masters] (Type: Level 4 Hybrid Demons)

Level: 116

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: [Skyshaker Slash] [Blade Rush] [Flying Sword] [Dou Qi Armor] [Sword Break]

Introduction: Demon Sword Masters, these strong warriors come from a demon spirit tribe in the North. They have a human like personality and body and have obtained a great understanding of swordsmanship. They are one of the Northern Hybrid Demons strongest armies. They are extremely educated in battle tactics, and have been known to be undefeated. Furthermore, Lin Han has over ten thousand of these monsters.

.....

“F\*ck...”

Wang Jian’s eyes were cold as he said, “These skills.... they’re just like ours, but what’s [Dou Qi Armor] and [Sword Break]? This... just what kind of skills are these?”



I leapt onto the wall and muttered, “They’re Swordsman’s fifth advancement skills!”

In the distance, Jian Feng Han gritted his teeth, “A monster that has five sword type skills. F\*ck.. and their attack power is on par with a BOSS? Here’s our true catastrophe. To top it off, there’s quite a few of them...”

Yan Zhao Warrior raised his sword and roared, “Shrink our formation. This is where the real battle starts. None of us can be careless, or else we’ll be paying with 3 levels. Have all of the other division players also come up. At least the Healer teams must get here and heal everyone!”

Misty Cloud stood in the air, the Dou Qi from his Four Symbols Guardian radiating around him. He narrowed his eyes, “How many people do we have left? Can we hold against them?”

Sword Reborn reported, “We still have around 300 players. At this stage we cannot hold against them...”

Misty Cloud took a deep breath, “Let’s get closer to the NPC army defense. We can rely on Luo Lin’s power!”

“Yes!”

.....

“Shua shua shua..”

One after another, those Demon Sword Masters leapt onto the city walls. They gripped their swords and charged towards the player and NPC Armies as they roared, “Let’s battle. For the sake of the pride of the sword in my hand, let it drink blood!”

Countless Demon Sword Masters charged over, each of them wrapped with Dou Qi energy. Dammit, their attack powers are definitely not normal!

“Hold your positions, we cannot let them through!”

Lin Xiao Xie raised her shield and gritted her teeth as two Demon Sword Masters rammed into her. In the next moment, they activated [Skyshaker Slash]+[Flying Sword] at the same time, piercing right through her shield and dealing four attacks——

“12934 ! ”

“13117 ! ”

“12382 ! ”

“13122 ! ”

.....

Instant kill! There wasn't even the chance of healing!

Darling Duck was stunned, “F\*ck, there's no way of getting a heal in, what do we do...”

I quickly raised my sword and charged forward. [Sword Tempest]+[Seven Star Fragment Slash] activated, luring a group of the Demon Sword Masters to me. I then activated [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost Armor] and let [Blade Spin] fly into the crowd of monsters. I used all of my skills to deal the greatest amount of damage.

Unfortunately, this was far from enough. These Demon Sword Masters' attack power was just too strong. Furthermore, their skills were even more fierce. [Flying Sword] continuously pierced through the player crowds, targeting [Zhan Long]'s Mages and Archers. The most critical part was that these Level 4 monsters all had very high AIs and used [Blade Rush] to break through our shield formation and reach our back row players. Then they would use [Sword Break], a 10 yard radius area attack skill. Within seconds, [Zhan Long]'s formation was completely broken!

“F\*ck, what do we do!?” Qing Qian was starting to panic. A dozen of the Demon Sword Masters were creating chaos in our camp.

I was also panicking. Luckily, Matcha's godly strategy came to use. Our cute Elder raised her sword and shouted, “Do not panic. Front row create a shield wall. We'll create two rows of defense. Maintain 5 yards of distance between the two rows to avoid the Sword Master's [Blade Rush]. We must hold our defense or else all is truly lost!”

Li Mu, Wan Er and I all stepped forward to create the first line of defense. Dancing Forest and Dong Cheng then lead the Mages to deal firepower and kill

the invading Demon Sword Masters.

After twenty minutes past, we were finally able to stabilize our defense, but our losses were great. Our original 500 man army now dwindled to 200 players. The ground was covered with bodies. These Demon Sword Masters were just too terrifying!

The worst part was, [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Enemies at the Gate] had completely lost control of their fields and their armies were ravaged. Large numbers of the Demon Sword Masters now appeared in the city. Simple, Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior, and Misty Clouds were forced to run and rely on the defense of Ran Min and Frost the two NPCs.

“Ji ji....”

Suddenly a screech sounded through the sky and a black shadow passed over our heads. I looked up and my heart dropped, “F\*ck.... It’s the Level 3 Hybrid Demons, The Predators. Everyone, be careful!”

As if under command, at least 20 of the Predators dove towards [Zhan Long]’s formations, their talons raised at the group lead by Dong Cheng and Dancing Forest. I quickly gave up my defense and spun around to sprint towards the back row. I swung my blade, smacking down one Predator, protecting [Zhan Long]’s long range team. I left the first row under the command of Wan Er and Matcha. The two girls were extremely clever, and were even better at commanding than players like Li Mu. I had no worries leaving this task to them.

.....

Luo Lin gripped his sword and stepped forward to battle. He cut down the Demon Sword Masters one by one. But in the end, he had his limits and was forced back by a large crowd of Level 4 Hybrid Demons into the city. Even the Red Cliff Army’s defense was starting to fall. They were also being massacred. Luo Lin charged forward and shouted, “Command the Desolate Cloud Army’s Black Cliff Cavalry to come! Have everyone come! Even if we die, we must hold off these Northern Hybrid Demons. We must hold this city!”

“Yes my lord!”

Not long after, the vice commander returned to the city walls, and

frustratedly reported, “My Lord Luo Lin, your father, the Duke of Ba Huang, forbids the Black Cliff Cavalry from coming to our defense!”

“Why?” Luo Lin was stunned.

The Vice Commander solemnly said, “The Duke said that the Black Cliff Cavalry is our trump card and is one of the pillars holding up Ba Huang City’s power. If they come to the city, then they won’t be at a full advantage and their potential will be halted. Therefore, we must preserve the Black Cliff Cavalry. Instead, he’s sent an army of Desolate Dragon’s Swordsmen for reinforcement. There’s a total of 40,000. Should we receive them?”

“Yes!”

Luo Lin gritted his teeth, “Father really... Ay, is he implying that the worth of these swordsmen is less than the cavalrymen? However, heavy armored swordsmen may not be able to hold up against these Level 4 Hybrid Demons. He... he’s really getting more and more senile...”

“My lord, what did you say?”

“Nothing. Hurry up and send the swordsman army to reinforce our own. Dragon City is about to fall! Also, go ask for some Warhawk Cavalry from Angela. We’ll need them to attack the Predators in the skies. We cannot let the Demons take the advantage in the air!”

“Yes!”

.....

Not long after, a large group of Desolate Dragon Swordsmen appeared on the wall. It was just as Luo Lin had predicted. These normal swordsmen had no way of fighting up against these Demon Sword Masters. Even if ten of them went against one, they still wouldn’t necessarily win. The battle quickly devolved into a slaughter fest. All we could do was rely on Frost, Ran Min, Da Lin and Su Ke, the BOSS level NPCs to kill these Hybrid Demons. Us players could only pull back our defenses and focus on attacking. Normal NPCs probably could only attract aggro away from us.

Finally after one hour, the city walls were covered in bodies and the flow of Demon Sword Masters continued endlessly. The players suffered enormous

damages. After examining the system page, there were less than 1000 players still standing. In the beginning there were over 100,000. The losses from this battle were truly terrifying!

# Chapter 565 Forest Giants

“Ge ge....”

A screech suddenly came from the sky and not long after, a flock of Warhawk Knights appeared in the sky. Each of them wielded an iron halberd and had an armor of Dou Qi surrounding them. They funneled the Dou Qi energy into their halberds and in the next moment, they swung their halberd, creating a slice of light. “Pu pu pu!” the slices cut into the Predators’ bodies and blood spurted forth and fell to the ground.

“Eh...”

I wiped off some of the blood from my face. I looked up. More and more Hybrid Demon Predators were charging forward to attack the Warhawk Knights. However, there were at least 5000 Warhawk Knights. For the sake of her brother Luo Lin, Angela brought out all of her air forces.

.....

One after another, the Warhawk Knights swooped towards the ground, their iron halberds piercing through the Predators. Under the protection of the Warhawk Knights, the city’s battle situation slowly returned to our control.

“Sha sha....”

Frost stood against the wind, her cape billowing behind her. An icy wind rose up and a strong Dou Qi spread out, crushing the Demon Sword Masters to death. I acted as support and also activated [Ice Domain], freezing a crowd of Demon Sword Masters around us.

The Ancient Hero Ran Min raised his longsword and guarded Frost’ back. If any Hybrid Demon tried to get near Frost, they would all be killed by Ran Min. This NPC Ran Min was so much stronger than our Old K....

“Peng!”

My Dragon Reservoir Sword pierced through one Demon Sword Master. “Wu wu” it shuddered and dropped a pair of leather leg guards. It also dropped a

card. I picked them up to look. Not bad, a Valkyrie Tier equipment. I threw it over to Wei Liang. Qing Qian's were better, there was no need for her to switch out. As for the card, several of [Zhan Long]'s players had gotten these cards from the Level 4 Hybrid Demons. This was, however, my first. It's stats were extremely OP——

[Demon Sword Master Card]: Increases the user's attack power by 30% and Max HP by 20%. Furthermore, it increases the user's base defense by 700. Required: Level 95. Lasts for 180 minutes.

.....

I was starting to get excited. This was the best card that I've gotten since I've entered the game. It increased my attack and defense twice over. This was exactly the item that we needed. When I raised my hand, I successfully used the card and a sword appeared above my head. My attack power increased by 30% and my base defense increased by 700 points. Furthermore my HP increased by 20%. I now had 36,000 health. This lasted for 180 minutes. This card was a great thing. I needed to collect more and more.

And so, I left a message in the guild chat, telling them to collect more and more of these cards. Qing Qian and Wan Er both gave me two. Those two specialized in getting drops while I just focused on killing, I didn't even look at the drops.

From then on, I continuously killed monsters and the corpses piled up. Large amounts of the Sword Master cards began to build up. At the same time, we also faced the continuous attacks from the Demon Sword Masters. My [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost Armor] kept shattering, but would condense again right afterwards. I didn't even need to worry about my magic power. After all, I had a lot, and I brought quite a few Lv 9 pills with me. That was more than enough for me to use.

Another hour passed and most of the Demon Sword Masters had been killed. The city walls were covered with player and monster bodies. My bag on the other hand had around 11 Demon Sword Master cards. I could use them one after another. All of a sudden I heard a "Ding!". Without me noticing, Ice Spear and Frost Armor all leveled up to Lv 6. I had been continuously using the two

skills, leveling them up quickly. [Frost Armor] was especially important to level up. The higher its level, the stronger its durability. Now, it was even harder to break. As long as I could persist through the attacks and began measuring the cool downs, then my [Frost Armor] could last for a long time.

“Now we’re waiting for the BOSS to come...”

Wan Er’s beautiful eyes looked towards the distance and she said, “It should be a Lv 116 Divine Tier BOSS. What should we do, should we fight it? Such a hard decision...”

I smiled. “Let’s see where fate takes us. We shouldn’t fight for it though. We only have 100+ people, that’s not enough to hold off a BOSS...”

“Yes...”

.....

Drops of Demon Sword Master blood dripped off of my sword onto the ground. Stepping onto the corpse of one monster on the edge, I looked into the distance. I then said to Qing Qian, “Melon, report on the battle situation and our losses...”

Qing Qian nodded. After half a minute, she looked at me and said, “Brother Xiao Yao, right now we still have 117 people in Dragon City. Of them, 81 are from the main guild. There’s still 2000+ players at the bottom of the mountain. But I don’t suggest we call on them. Thus, Brother Fox had them grind levels near Ba Huang City. This is the 16th wave. There was a total of 24,000 Demon Sword Masters this time. Players killed 7459 of them. Of that, [Zhan Logn] killed 2971, which is pretty good. After this battle, [Zhan Long] definitely won’t fall behind in terms of points.”

I smiled. “Yep. I’m pretty satisfied with this kind of result..”

Li Mu stepped forward and said, “Xiao Yao, let’s not fight the BOSS. Why don’t we just let the NPCs kill it. Otherwise, we can create a special BOSS killing team. You’ll be the tank. We can then fight along with the NPCs and kill the BOSS like that. That way we can get the experience and rewards.”

I took a deep breath, “Yeah. We’ll act on the opportunity given. Let’s begin creating that special team right now. I’ll be the Tank. Dong Cheng, Dancing



Forest, Tang Xue, and Lian Po will be the DPS. Darling Duck and Thousand League will handle the heals. Wan Er, Qing Qian, and Wolf will deal damage and stun. Let's get a few more Healers. The less people we use the better. Otherwise, our losses will become greater and greater. Qing Qian, of our losses, how many held an officer position?"

Qing Qian pursed her lip and said, "Just now, during the Demon Sword Masters, the battle scene was chaotic. We had lost quite a few. Of them, Lin Xiao Xie, Tearless, Winter Snow, Star Blade, Moonfeather and Gentle Touch the six flag bearer level players all died..."

I was slightly stunned, "Oh. Even Moonfeather died?"

"Mhm." Qing Qian nodded with a smile, "Feeling a stab in your heart?"

I looked at everyone and smiled. "If any of [Zhan Long]'s players died, of course I would feel begrudged. However, seeing as this quest came to us, then there were bound to be sacrifices. The only thing I can do is lead everyone to kill as many Hybrid Demons as I can and make sure that everyone here can recover their losses by the end of this quest. I believe that every player in [Zhan Long] will receive a generous reward because while we had lost the most players, we have also killed the most monsters!"

Not far, Jian Feng Han smiled. "Li Xiao Yao, stop showing off. The seventeenth wave of monsters is about to come. Let's see if your [Zhan Long] can still stand after that!"

I wryly smiled. "Just you watch. Even if our last player dies, we will never retreat...."

"Alright...."

Jian Feng Han smiled as he gripped his sword. He didn't reply but I knew that he must be feeling extremely awkward. That was because when the Demon Sword Masters attacked, [Vanguard]'s main guild of around 200+ players all retreated into the city. They weren't willing to die a pointless death from these Level 4 Hybrid Demons.

Simple raised her staff, her pale cheeks covered with ash and dust. Her clean robes were also dirtied with quite a bit of dirt, but her eyes had a solid

determination in them. It was because of this sister who was the Vice Guild Master that Jian Feng Han could command with no worry. There wasn't a battle that she did not command to victory. He must feel a lot of pride in a sister like that.

When I thought to that point, I couldn't help but think of my own sister, Meng Yao. She was naturally talented. And with the intelligence of that brat, she would definitely become a great help and become one of the top players. As long as we patiently waited, Meng Yao Ge Jing, this ID will soon be known by every player and she will become my right hand as one of [Zhan Long]'s representatives.

.....

"Brother Xiao Yao..." Qing Qian looked towards me.

"What's up?" I asked with a smile.

The beautiful and cute [Zhan Long] Vice Guild Master smiled back and said, "This Dragon City Defense battle is practically on a country scale. Currently, in the [Zhan Long] hall, there's only you, me and Sister Cang Tong. How about this, the player with the most points, besides the three of us, in this defense battle gets to enter into Zhan Long Hall. With that many points, there must be a proportional reward..."

I looked at the Dragon City rankings. In the rankings chart, our [Zhan Long] held a number of positions. I had number 1, Dong Cheng was number 4, Dancing Forest was ranked fifth while Li Mu was seventh. The top player was probably going to be from one of those three. Li Mu had been working hard the entire time, and was a viable choice for Zhan Long Hall. Right now, there was still a chance, although not a big one. After all, the chances of a Swordsman killing monsters was much lower than that of an Archer or a Mage. However, Li Mu entering [Zhan Long] hall was going to happen sooner or later. Let's first talk about getting Dong Cheng and Dancing Forest in first.

And so I nodded and said, "Ok, we'll do just that!"

"Ok ok!"

Not long after, the BOSS appeared, but none of the players were able to

touch it. It was quickly killed by Frost and Luo Lin.

No other way, we just had to wait for the 17th wave.

.....

“They’re here, the seventeenth wave...” Li Mu excitedly pointed to the distance.

The sound of birds flying suddenly rose from the distance forest. In the next moment, giant figures suddenly appeared. They were at least five meters tall and carried a heavy mace. Its skin was thick and it had a loincloth wrapped around its waist. The enormous giant brandished its weapon and began charging towards Dragon City,

“Forest Giant, a Lv117 monster, Level 4 Hybrid Demon. It’s attack power is extremely high...”

I gripped my blade in front of my chest and smiled. “Let’s pull back our defense line. We’ll only guard 10 yards of land. This time, we need to do our best to minimize our losses. Everyone it’s time for battle!”

Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Ran Min all nodded. This time there were only 10 people lined up in front. They were all the guild’s strongest players. I, Wan Er, and Matcha stood at the very front. Then there were two rows of defense shields to avoid any openings.

“Peng peng peng....”

The ground under our feet began to shudder. It was the Forest Giants beginning their climb. After 16 waves of monsters, Dragon City’s walls were now covered in dents. Who knew how long it would stand.

# Chapter 566 The Terminator

“Kong!”

The first Forest Giant charged up onto the city walls. Dancing Forest shot a [Meteor Shot] from afar, attracting it straight towards us. Very soon, the second and third followed behind it. I quickly sprinted forward and let out [Blade Spin]. That however wasn't enough to stop the charge of the three Forest Giants. In the next second, the three giants rammed right into One Second Hero's shield!

“13261 ! ”

“11279 ! ”

“12337 ! ”

.....

“F\*ck, Yong Jie!”

Darling Duck raised her staff but the heal fell on empty air. One Second Hero had already knelt to the ground. His shield was smashed to bits. His eyes widened as he stared at the Forest Giants and muttered, “F\*ck.. what a heavy mace...”

In that moment, one of the top Knight players in our guild was instantly killed. I cast all of my attacks to attract one of the Forest Giants to myself. Wan Er split up with me and went after the next while the third was given off to Li Mu, Wang Jian and Matcha. With a swing of his mace, the Forest Giant created enormous damage and could even be used as an area attack. A few of our Mages and Assassins that were too close were instantly killed.

“Keng keng keng....”

Three continuous attacks fell onto my Zhen Yue Sword. On the good side, my [Frost Armor] was already a high enough level, and could take these attacks. I swung both of my swords, and relied on my 20% drain to recover my health. Dancing Forest and Dong Cheng both fired their spells. The 100+ players that [Zhan Long] still had standing on the wall managed to hold their defense.

One after another, the Forest Giants had charged into the city. This time, the NPC army became the true main force. The Desolate Dragon Army swordsmen fought with their lives on the line. Even the Blizzard Army's Warhawk Knights in the sky dove towards the ground to deal damage. However, the Forest Giants raised their maces in a rage and "Peng peng peng" smashed the Warhawk Knights into mush. Rivers of blood flowed across the ground.

.....

After killing a dozen of the Forest Giants, I glanced backwards and saw that Tang Xin knelt to the ground and also died. She had been attacked by two giants at once and was instantly killed!

"Oh no...."

Wan Er switched to her Iron umbrella right before she was thrown back by one of the giants. She hit a crumbled wall. Her hair in a mess, she looked towards our men, "Not good. The seventeenth wave monsters are just too strong. No matter how much we fight against these, we won't be able to hold the city..."

I gritted my teeth, "Retreat! Immediately retreat! Get near the Ancient Hero Ran Min..."

Everyone raised their weapons and began to retreat while I took the rear. I was probably the only one with the survivability to take on a couple of giants at once without dying.

"Grr!"

The Ancient Hero Ran Min roared and charged forward. He raised his arm and released an explosion. "Ka Cha!" he dashed across the crowd of Forest Giants. In the next moment, all of their necks broke. When Ran Min finally halted, a whirlwind of energy swirled around him. He swept out his sword, creating an energy slash cutting the legs of another two giants in half. His attack power was just too strong!

"F\*ck, so strong..." Li Mu gaped.

I nodded, "Mhm. Then we'll just raise our defense around Ran Min. We'll lure the monsters over one at a time. Right now, these are already Lv 117 Level 4

Hybrid Demons. This is already far above our own power. If we keep fighting like this then we'll all die."

"Alright!"

Dancing Forest raised her arm and shot out an arrow to lure one of the Forest Giants here. I came forward to block. The rest of the people dealt attacks. It took around 12 seconds to kill one. That was around two rounds of skills. Killing monsters like this wasn't too bad, at least it was very safe. Even if these were Level 4 Hybrid Demons, they wouldn't be instantly killing us.

"Ao ao...."

In the midst of screams, the 37th Forest Giant fell to the ground and dropped a shining ring. Li Mu picked it up and smiled. "15% drain for close combat players. What do we do with it?"

"ROLL!"

"Ok!"

After half a minute, the ring ended up with Wei Liang. That little loli girl's luck wasn't bad. She got another strong ring. At the same time, this told us that even though these Forest Giants were only Level 4 Hybrid Demons, their drop rates were equivalent to that of a BOSS. The highest drop was probably a Valkyrie Tier equipment. But a Valkyrie Tier equipment with OP stats was still pretty amazing. Besides, this kind of drop rate would only happen in an event where these Hybrid Demons came to attack a city. If it was next time and the players were entering the Hybrid Demon territory instead, then the drop rate might even only be 10% of what it is now. Maybe even on the same level as the drop rate that we normally get.

Not far, Yan Zhao Warrior, Jian Feng Han, Misty Cloud, Han Bei Song, and Soaring Dragon all took their guilds and relied on the NPC army to defend. Now that the battle had reached the 17th wave, it was time for the players to step down from the stage. Otherwise, if we continued to fight on the frontlines then we would just be looking for trouble.

Time quickly passed by. The Forest Giants swung their maces and killed countless Ba Huang City soldiers. They however had also suffered great losses.

Over 30,000 giant corpses lie on the city walls. The human camp paid the price with the Desolate Dragon Army swordsmen, as they were completely wiped out. There were only several hundred still left on the walls.

“Eh....”

One of the captain level NPCs stood in a pool of blood, the sword in his hand slightly shaking. His face was filled with pain as he said, “My brothers... they’ve all died under the mace of these Giants. I...and yet I still stand here alone. They.... They had promised to return to Ba Huang City with me after this battle at Dragon City. We even agreed to drink until the morning at the most famous bar in town and watch the pretty elf girls dance. We... have we all died here. Those Hybrid Demons.. Just what the f\*ck are they....”

Luo Lin raised his bloody sword and said, “Jus, do not let your bravery waver. We are fighting for Ba Huang City, and we are fighting for humans. Everything we are doing is for the sake of justice. As long as the invasions of these Hybrid Demons do not stop, then we must stand guard at this city. Even if we all die, then our descendants will remember our bravery....”

“My prince....”

Jus gritted his teeth and said, “I understand, it’s just... do we really have hopes of winning?”

Luo Lin shook his head, “I don’t know either... come, send a messenger to the camp stationed at the bottom of the wall. Tell them that the wall needs more soldiers. Furthermore, push the bodies off the northern cliff, or else we won’t have a place to stand.”

Frost couldn’t help but let out a gasp, “My lord, this is the last vestige of these brave soldiers... once they end up in the hands of the Hybrid Demons, then they will only become their feast. We.... how can we do that to our brothers?”

Luo Lin furrowed his brows and said, “Frost, don’t misunderstand. If these brave soldiers bodies were sent to the south of Dragon City, don’t say a waste of time, it’d be a waste of manpower. Plus, if we burn their bodies, we’ll only bring disease and panic. At that point, the result may end up even more serious. Do not hesitate, just follow my orders!”

Frost set her jaw, “Yes my lord! You, follow orders..”

A group of Dragon City warriors dragged the Desolate Dragon Swordsmen’s bodies off the wall and threw it off the cliff. Luo Lin’s frown increased as he waited for reinforcements. Frost then sat on the edge of the observation deck. A light breeze blew on her hair and she let out a sigh. I couldn’t tell what she was thinking of.

.....

“The BOSS is here!”

Everyone went into a state of chaos. The Guild Master of [Valley of the Gods] Lu Dong Bing raised his staff and said, “The seventeenth wave’s BOSS is finally here. We.... should we advance?”

War Tent was stunned, “Boss, [Valley of the Gods] only has 9 people left. Can we even fight against a seventeenth wave BOSS?”

Lu Dong Bing replied, “We’ll just attack along with the NPCs. A Divine Tier BOSS, it’ll probably drop some kind of Divine Tier equipment. That’ll be the first of its kind. Do you not want it? Only ambitious people can reach their goals. If we don’t try it out, how do we know it can’t be done?”

“Alright!”

Lu Dong Bing walked forward, his staff covered in rising flames. He then threw a huge fireball out. A scream that made the entire valley tremble came from the bottom of the wall. Even Dragon City trembled slightly. An enormous giant charged forward. He was around seven meters tall and wore a thick coat of armor. In his hand, he wielded a flaming sword. He was running straight towards Lu Dong Bing.

Lu Dong Bing’s face was practically purple. He had already used three [Dimensional Leap]s to run 60 yards. War Tent raised his sword and dashed forward and skillfully used a [Blade Rush], cutting right into the BOSS. He then let out a Lv 10 [Combo] + [Skyshaker Slash] right behind the BOSS, attracting the BOSS’ attention. It suddenly spun around and used a [Mountain Slash] right on War Tent!

“27261 ! ”



Instant kill!

War Tent’s arm had practically been ripped apart by that attack. He howled in pain as he knelt to the ground. That wasn’t even the end of it. The BOSS let out a roar and suddenly light began to rise from under him, killing the other three [Valley of the Gods] players that were around him. Then with a swing of his blade, and a kick he charged right towards Lu Dong Bing.

.....

“F\*ck...”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and sprinted forward. I grabbed the BOSS’ stats from afar and put it directly in the guild chat. The level was so high that it had exceeded our predictions. There was no longer any way for us to see any details about his attack and defense——

[The Forest Terminator] (Divine Tier BOSS)

Level: 117

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: [Flame Slash] [Scorch Domain] [Burned to the Bone] [Shivering Earth, Swaying Mountains]

Introduction: The Forest Terminator, the prince of the Forest Giants, he has an incredible attack power and physique. He once lead his tribe to attack the Hybrid Demon army, causing Lin Han’s army to suffer heavy losses. In a fit of rage, Lin Han sent forth the Level 7 Hybrid Demons Sword Spirit Cavalry to the south and overthrew this Forest Terminator, the prince of Barbarian Giants and forced him and his tribe to become a part of his army. Legend has it that if you meet the Terminator in a forest, then there is only one path for you and that is death. If you are currently reading this introduction, then it is highly suggested that you escape

.....

“Should we?” Li Mu couldn’t hold in his excitement.

I shook my head, “Not yet, let’s first watch and see what the NPC army does!”

“Alright!”

.....

In the distance, the BOSS caught up to Lu Dong Bing. He raised his sword and walked forward, then spun around around and activated [Scorch Domain], finishing off all of the [Valley of the Gods] players. And thus, [Valley of the Gods] finally left the stage of this Guarding Dragon City event.

“He he...”

Jian Feng Han opened up the wings on his back and flew out. He roared, “Everyone in [Vanguard], prepare to kill the BOSS. I will lure the Terminator towards Luo Lin. Let’s see whether or not this Ba Huang City prince will kill him or not!”

# Chapter 567 Shuddering Earth, Swaying Mountains

“Clever Jian Feng Han...” Wan Er said with a wry smile.

.....

Jian Feng Han threw out a [Through the Clouds Slash]+[Corrupt Wolf Blade] onto the BOSS. The second the two attacks hit, the Terminator opened one hand and gathered all of his energy into his palm. He then grabbed Jian Feng Han's legs and roared, throwing Jian Feng Han straight into a wall. He then smacked his hand forward and dealt 16227 damage. He nearly smacked Jian Feng Han's breakfast out.

“D\*mn you!”

The BOSS raised his blade. In that split second, Jian Feng Han saw through the attack and with a terrifying calm, he smacked the ground with his hand. “Pa!” He leapt up, dodging the BOSS' attack. He then flipped over and threw out a kick. Then with a beautiful S formation, he evaded the attacks from the BOSS, luring the aggro towards his direction successfully. Then, he opened up his wings again and flew straight towards Luo Lin.

.....

A dozen Dragon City soldiers stood guard around Luo Lin. Furthermore, there were another several hundred generals from Ba Huang City standing near him. These were all general level BOSSes. The lowest level NPC among them was probably a Valkyrie Tier.

“My lord, what do we do?” One of the commanders asked.

Luo Lin brought out his blade and said, “We'll charge and kill that barbaric bastard!”

“Yes!”

At that moment, Luo Lin charged forward from the middle of the NPCs. A fiery flame appeared on his blade. Luo Lin angrily sliced towards the Finisher. Who

knew that this Divine Tier BOSS was extremely intelligent. He threw a punch with Dou Qi energy straight into Luo Lin's sword!

"Peng!"

Sparks flew and Luo Lin's attack was shattered by a fist. The worst part was that the Terminator then raised his other fist and smashed it into another Ba Huang City general's shoulder. "Peng!" He drove the general right into the ground. He then raised a fiery blade and "Pu Chi!" plunged it through the general's body. Flames gushed forward, turning him to dust!

"D\*mm\*t!"

Another one of the NPC generals was stunned. He quickly unsheathed his blade and created a golden Dou Qi shield around him. He then roared, "Battle Shields!"

The Terminator laughed and raised a boot. "Peng!" he smashed apart the battle shield and stepped right onto the general's chest. I could hear the sound of ribs cracking. This BOSS level NPC flew out like a bullet into the air. The attack dealt a mortal injury, he was not going to survive. The Predators swooped down and caught his body in the air, ripping it apart.

"Peng...."

The Terminator suddenly shuddered. He had been stabbed in the back by Luo Lin's long blade. Luo Lin's face was filled with rage, "Enough you bastard. Just how many more of my men do you want to kill?!"

"Ge ge...."

The Finisher didn't show a hint of fear in his face. He let out a wild laugh and then swung his blade, ramming it right into Luo Lin's. He then pushed forward with his natural strength, forcing Luo Lin to retreat a few steps. Luo Lin gritted his teeth and began funneling Dou Qi into the long sword. His body was starting to shake and he roared, "Bastard, have a taste of Dragon City's ancient skill!"

The heavy sword began to turn red. Luo Lin rushed forward and "Peng!" the blade stabbed through the BOSS' thick armor. Blood spurted out. He had broken the BOSS' defense. The Terminator's health dropped around 20%. It screamed in pain and then rammed into Luo Lin's shoulder. Then, with a

“Keng!” it crashed right into Luo Lin’s Dou Qi Armor. Then with a roar, he used his sword to smash through the Dou Qi and then threw a punch!

“Peng!”

Luo Lin was thrown into the air. Dou Qi whirled around his body, allowing him to stand while in the armor. He wiped away a sliver of blood away from his mouth as he smiled. “Bastard, is that all you’ve got? Then prepare to die!”

As he said that, he threw a slash. It was another [Shield Break]! The Terminator’s health dropped another 20%. At this rate, Luo Lin should be able to finish off this Divine Tier BOSS within five attacks. Just how strong was he?!

Right as Luo Lin was about to deal with the third attack, the sword in his hands went “Bang!” and shattered. Around 30% of the sword was broken. That sword’s materials were not enough to carry Luo Lin’s terrifying skill and strength.

.....

“My lord...”

Su Ke raised his battle axe and looked into the sky, muttering, “Even a godly weapon made by the ‘Enforcer’ wasn’t enough to hold Lord Luo Lin’s strength? This.... Just how strong is Luo Lin?”

With a slash, the Terminator let out another laugh and then threw out three cuts that forced Luo Lin backwards. He then threw another punch, forcing Luo Lin to spit blood out onto the ground.

“Hurry up and support Lord Luo Lin!” Su Ke roared as he dashed forward.

Luo Lin’s figure stood tall against the wind. He wiped some blood off and said, “Bring me a sword....”

Frost was speechless.

“He he..” Jian Feng Han gripped his long sword and said, “Brothers of [Vanguard]. It is our turn! Archers, lure the BOSS over here! Let’s put a little more back into this. The BOSS will definitely drop equipment! The stronger the leader, the stronger the team. Let’s move it!”

A group of [Vanguard]’s players charged forward, quick to grab the

opportunity.

.....

“Hei hei, this group of trash....”

Against this kind of an attack, the Terminator remained calm. He raised his sword. Within a 20 yard radius of him, fiery blades began to whirl around. Anyone who was within that range would take enormous damage. There weren't any Healers that would be able to keep up with it.

Within the first moment of contact, nearly a dozen of [Vanguard]'s players had died. Their defense was too meek. They couldn't hold against the attack!

Only Jian Feng Han who stood at the front was able to survive. He dealt a [Skysaker Slash]+[Combo] right into the BOSS' back. When the Terminator raised his blade for a slash, Jian Feng Han quickly used a [Blade Rush] to dodge the attack. That movement could only be achieved by a highly advanced player. He quickly turned around and retreated. Enough damage was already dealt, there was no need to deal anymore. All he needed to do now was to command the ranged players to deal damage. Simple was already leading the command and casting her own spells. [Magma Lacne]+[Indigo Sea Arrow] all fell onto the Terminator. The BOSS took the hit. At this rate, [Vanguard] was going to get the equipment.

“D\*mm\*t!”

When the BOSS' health dropped to 30%, he threw a slash right into Goodbye Tears' shoulder, dealing 15347 damage. He then opened his palm and threw a fireball right into Goodbye Tears. It was the [Scorched to the Bone] skill and dealt continuous damage——

“17827 ! ”

“17827 ! ”

“17827 ! ”

.....

Goodbye Tears eyes widened, “F\*ck... is this magic damage? I can't...”

His knees gave out and he died on the spot.

Don't be Foolish raised his spear and retreated, his face pale, "That Monk was killed, what are we going to do?"

North Pole threw a fireball and said, "All we can do hold him off. Open up your [Dou Qi Armor]. We have to hold off. Don't Be Foolish, go!"

"I don't want to die... "

Don't Be Foolish' face was extremely pale. He hesitantly stood there, "What do I do?"

Jian Feng Han gritted his teeth, "I have less than 20% health. Foolish, go tank the BOSS. Otherwise, everyone else is screwed. Hurry up. Don't hesitate. Healers, focus on Don't Be Foolish!"

Don't Be Foolish could only grit his teeth and activate [Dou Qi Armor]. When he charged forward, the BOSS dealt a [Flame Blade], burning his body. The BOSS then dealt a chain of three attacks, each hitting right at his weak points. Don't Be Foolish fell to his knees. No matter how many heals the Healers gave him, it was useless. He looked towards Jian Feng Han from a distance and muttered, "I'm heading out to get food this quick? Guild Master, do you want an extra egg?"

Jian Feng Han didn't have the time to say goodbye. He quickly raised his spear and charged straight for the BOSS. At the same time, Su Ke caught up to them with a group of Dragon City soldiers Ran Min and Frost stood and watched from afar, protecting the injured Luo Lin.

.....

Time passed by quickly and very soon the Terminator only had 10% of his health left. His final skill finally came! With a roar, a pillar of fiery light blasted into the sky and the Terminator shouted, "Chaotic power sleeping beneath the earth, awaken! Discipline these barbaric people and rip apart their strength. Come forth to me—— [Shuddering Earth, Swaying Mountains]!"

At that moment, The earth began to tremble and a 10.0 earthquake suddenly came upon us. All of the people on the city wall took damage from the shockwaves. In the middle of the trembles, the shockwaves engulfed the players and the NPCs, but they didn't penetrate through. It only hit the players

closest to the BOSS, which were the Dragon City warriors and [Prague], [Vanguard], and [Enemies at the Gate]. The attack was terrifying!

“Careful! Anyone who isn’t attacking, immediately retreat!”

I stepped forward several steps and immediately raised my hand, blocking the attack. Behind me, Qing Qian, Dancing Forest, Thousand Suns, Wolf, and Fox all dodged to avoid being instantly killed. Dong Cheng activated her [Undefeated] skill, however Lian Po, Bai Qi, Dong Cheng Lei, Wang Jian, and Rainy were all swept away by the shockwave. [Zhan Long]’s players quickly went from 90, to 17 left!

“Quick, heal pig....” Wan Er shouted.

Darling Duck and Thousand League immediately gave me a [Grip of Compassion]. My health jumped up, and the situation returned under our control.

Looking into the distance, [Prague] only had Yan Zhao Warrior standing alone with critical health. [Vanguard] only had two people left as well. Jian Feng Han had protected Simple, allowing her to survive. Misty Clouds had protected Han Bei Song and Who’s Blue. The worst were the NPC soldiers. They had practically all been killed!

.....

I waved my hand and gave myself a heal and then gulped down a potion. I then pointed my sword towards the Terminator and roared, “Motherf\*cker, you killed so many of my men. Healers, follow me. I’m going to cut that BOSS apart!”

Frost and Ran Min all raised their blades and charged towards the BOSS. I lowered body and activated [Blade Rush], dodging the BOSS’ [Flame Blade]. I then crossed my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Zhen Yue Sword and dashed forward, hacking at the BOSS thigh. I then threw another [Fierce Wind] blade. I retreated and then activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash] + [Blade Spin].

Jian Feng Han didn’t give in either. This was the BOSS’ last 10%. After that final skill, he didn’t have much attack power left

“Grrr....”



Waving its blade and killing all people around it, this 17th wave BOSS truly was strong. It was much stronger than all other BOSSes that we had seen up to this point.

# Chapter 568 Wintry Clothes of a Minstrel

“Shu shu....”

Snowflakes fluttered around my armor, creating the intricate patterns of [Frost Armor]. My Dragon Reservoir sword was covered in blood as it hacked into the Terminator again and again. As I fought this BOSS I had to bear with the pains of being burned. My health kept dropping from all the damage I took but Darling Duck and Thousand League made sure to heal me.

“Kong!”

The Terminator roared and opened his palm to cast the tormenting [Scorched to the Bone] BUFF on me. My health dropped even faster now every. Luckily not far from me, Wan Er raised her dagger and shouted, “Darling Duck, [Purify]!”

Darling Duck quickly raised her arm and “Shua!” [Purify] fell on me. All I could feel was a cool breeze wash over my entire body. The [Scorched to the Bone] effect disappeared. Thankfully we were able to keep our Healers alive, otherwise there would’ve been no way we could deal with this BOSS.

.....

Jian Feng Han raised his blade and watched from afar. [Vanguard] only had two people left and that was Jian Feng Han and his sister Mu Rong Jun. There were no Healers to help them recover. Jian Feng Han had no way of fighting against the BOSS. In reality, he didn’t even have the courage to battle it. All he could do was grit his teeth, “We lost so many of our main forces, fighting that BOSS. Are we just going to give it to Xiao Yao Zi Zai?”

Simple opened her eyes wide and said, “Then what are you going to do? We don’t have any Healers to heal us. Just getting near the Divine Tier BOSS will lead to an instant kill. Three levels. That’s actually a pretty big price. We need more reinforcements. Otherwise, [Vanguard] will be considered to have formally left this Dragon City Defense Battle...”

Jian Feng Han muttered, “We should still have some divisions in Ba Huang City

right? Why don't we just use them!"

Simple nodded, "We do have more divisions. The seventh division's entire guild of 3000 are left untouched. However, the Guild Master of that division has denied providing reinforcements to Dragon City. He said that he wasn't willing to let his brothers die for nothing."

Jian Feng Han roared, "What does that mean? Is the Guild Master of [Vanguard] me or him? Just what gives him the right to make decisions?"

Simple smiled. "Ah Han, you're still too inexperienced. Did you forget? Last time when [Vanguard]'s seventeen division Guild Masters all met up in Shanghai, you greeted every Guild Master except for the seventh division one. The only reason was because his sister was in [Zhan Long]'s Defense Army. You weren't even willing to give him a second glance. We're in this situation because of that."

Jian Feng Han grunted and threw a punch into the brick wall.

"You've made a decision?" Simple asked.

Jian Feng Han revealed a cold smile, "Yes. If he cannot be used by me, then he can be abandoned by me. After I finish this defense battle, I will rebuild the seventh guild and personally pick the Guild Master. [Vanguard] does not need to waste resources on a man like this!"

"Mhm, that's good!"

.....

From a distance, Yan Zhao Warrior silently stood there. He seemed to be sending a message. It was clear that this lone Guild Master was dispatching more reinforcements. [Prague] had around 50,000 players enlisted, and close to 40,000 online at the moment. They should have more soldiers to use. And now that we were at this stage in the battle, if he didn't get more reinforcements, there didn't seem to be much point in fighting.

Misty Cloud raised his long sword and looked at the BOSS from afar. He smiled. "Good luck Xiao Yao, [Zhan Long] can push through. Take that son of a b\*tch, the Terminator and finish him!"

Han Bei Song also smiled. “That’s right, it’s the seventeenth wave. Good luck!”

.....

Dong Cheng, Dancing Forest, and Thousand Suns were all focused on dealing damage. Very soon, the BOSS only had a sliver of health. I activated a [Combo] attack with my Dragon Reservoir Sword and three times the damage came out from the dragon power. That one attack cut off the Terminator’s leg!

“Peng!”

With a scream, the Terminator fell to the ground, but not before dealing one last flame attack onto Matcha’s shield. However, I was still the one to deal the last hit. I threw my Dragon Reservoir Sword forward and “Pu Chi!” slashed through the BOSS’ neck. Finally, the BOSS was dead!

“Shua!”

Golden light fell upon me and I took 50% of the experience from the BOSS kill, leveling me up to 102!

“Hua la la”, a pile of equipment dropped. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K immediately ran up to protect it. There wasn’t really much need to protect it at this point. The BOSS’ [Shuddering Earth, Swaying Mountains] had practically killed all of the Assassin type players on the wall. There was nobody left to come and steal our rewards. Furthermore, with me standing by, there wasn’t anyone with the guts to try a thing like that. After all, dying here meant losing three levels. Even if they were gutsy, they wouldn’t try a stunt like that.

.....

I walked forward and picked up the rewards that the BOSS dropped. There were three pieces of equipment, a couple of gems and some cards. Afterwards, I turned to everyone and said, “Let’s go. We’ll split up the rewards beside Ran Min. This place isn’t safe. The 18th wave of monsters are about to arrive!”

“Yes sir!” Everyone nodded in agreement

We walked over to Frost and Ran Min. I then spread out the equipment I held. [Zhan Long]’s seventeen remaining survivors gathered around. Of the

equipment, there was a glimmering Mage staff that had a faint blue light shining around it. It had an oppressive atmosphere around it. There was also a detailed leather armor with an elegant design and glowing runes flowing around it. I could tell it was an above average piece of equipment. Next was a pair of wrist guards that had deadly blade designs sewn into the edges. I could feel warmth radiating from it by just holding it in my hand. It had a white glow around its edges, making it most likely a Divine Tier equipment. Nevermind, I'll get to it later. I started with the staff. When I waved my hand over it the stats appeared in the sky. At that moment, Dong Cheng and Tang Xue the two Mages gasped in awe——

[Moonkiss] (Saint Tier – Superior)

Magic Attack: 2550 – 3250

Magic Power: +109

Stamina: +107

Agility: +105

Additional: Increases the user's magic attack power by 40%

Additional: Decreases all skill cool downs by 30%

Additional: Increases the user's Max HP by 4000

Special: [Moon Kiss] Under the moonlight, all magic type attack damage dealt by the user increases by 50%

Required Level: 100

Required Charm: 120

.....

I raised the staff and said, "Well, Dong Cheng and Tang Xue, start the ROLL!"

Dong Cheng started and rolled a 15. Thousand Suns smiled. "Oh, sister Cang Yue's luck doesn't seem to be too great. Looks like this Moonkiss is mine..."

Who could predict that when Thousand Suns rolled she got a single digit—— 7 points. At that moment, her face paled, "Eh.... looks like Lady Luck isn't standing on my side..."

Dong Cheng took the staff quickly equipped it with a grin, “There’s no other way. Thank you very much...”

I then moved onto the next equipment. It was the snow white leather armor with fine detail. Looks like it was made by some kind of master. I waved my hand over it and the stats appeared in the sky— —

[Wintry Clothes of a Minstrel] (Divine Tier)

Type: Leather

Defense: 1050

Agility: +129

Stamina: +125

Strength: +122

Magic: +120

Additional: Increases the user’s agility by 40% and the user’s defense by 20%

Additional: Increases the user’s physical close combat damage by 30%

Additional: Increases the user’s Max HP by 4000

Special: [Aria], During close combat battles, the enemy’s movement speed decreases by 50%. Lasts for 3 seconds

Special: [Heaven’s Ode], Once this skill is activated, then heavenly sound waves will spread out over 100 yards, dealing a 100% chance stun to all enemies. Lasts for 7 seconds. Uses up 100 points of rage. Cool Down is 12 hours.

Introduction: Bu Lian Shi, A legendary ancient heroine. She was an expert at playing instruments. Legend has it that the sound of her Gu Qing was enough to make both gods and demons drop tears. Furthermore, she could raise the spirits of any. She became known as a legend. Bu Lian Shi was a woman that bards sang of throughout history. She was wed to a king and lived a happily ever after. The king had a set of wintry clothes specially made for her as a sign of his love. Legend has it that whoever wears this set of clothes must be a worthy heroine.

Required Level: 100

Required Gender: Female

Required Charm: 150

.....

As I held the Wintry Clothes in my hand I couldn't help but smile, "Lady Luck is smiling on us.... This Bu Lian Shi's Wintry Clothes, the armor of one of the wives of the three great kings. En... looks like practically all of [Zhan Long]'s female Assassins are dead... Wan Er, Qing Qian, you guys are the last two left. Here, ROLL for it!"

Wan Er smiled. "Wu, I'm so nervous, this is a Divine Tier set of armor.."

Qing Qian gripped her hands and nodded in agreement, "I'm nervous too..."

I looked up at them and said, "Nervous for what? Just ROLL already, we have other matters to attend to..."

"Alright..."

The two girls rolled, getting a 64 and an 83. In the end Wan Er won. I didn't care either way. On one hand I had Qing Qian who was like a sister, and then there was the little miss who I loved. I would've been content with whoever got this equipment. However, these clothes truly were strong. That [Heaven's Ode] skill could stun any enemy at 100% chance for 7 seconds. Such a strong skill could rival even my [King Domain]. No, it actually surpassed it. Seven seconds of stun. That meant that we could attack them with whatever we wanted. This kind of fortune wasn't something we could get any time.

I handed the Bu Lian Shi's Wintry Clothes to the beautiful little miss. As expected, high tier equipment was not the same as normal ones. Worn on the beautiful little miss made her seem even more enchanting. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K couldn't take their eyes from her. I gave a small cough, reminding them to keep their thoughts in check.

"Ha ha..." Li Mu raised his long sword and said, "I heard that the Vice Guild Master Cang Tong already has close ties with Xiao Yao. He he, say, why do you suppose Li Xiao Yao that bastard has such good fortune?"

Wang Jian nodded, "That's right!"

Wan Er's pretty face turned pale, "Eh, who said so?"

"The entire server knows it..." Wolf smiled.

Wan Er was stunned. Dong Cheng giggled, "They're just teasing you dummy!"

.....

I smiled and then picked up the BOSS' last piece of equipment. It was a pair of wrist guards. Looking closer at the stitches, it looked as though the blades had dragon like designs. Either way, it looked familiar. I looked at my own wrist and felt like it was very similar to the [Defeat the Dragon] wrist guards. Time to look at the stats! Maybe there really was such thing as coincidence!

My luck was just too great, hahaha!



# Chapter 569 For My Ratings

[Divine Dragon Slaying Arms – King] (Divine Tier)

Type: Heavy

Defense: 1650

Strength: +135

Stamina: +132

Agility: +130

Magic Power: +128

Additional: Increases the user's magic defense by 65%

Additional: Increases the user's Max HP by 4000

Additional: Increases the user's base attack by 500

Special: [Defeat the Dragon], activates the power of a dragon's claws and grabs any target within 50 yards to your side. Consumes 50 Rage

Special: An equipment made specially because of the player Xiao Yao Zi Zai's Divine Dragon Slaying Arms equipment, a new King Tier wrist guard has been created and is tied to the player Xiao Yao Zi Zai. All other players have no way of equipping it

Required: 100

Required Charm: 150

.....

"F\*ck...."

Ran Min's eyes widened, "Divine Tier... King Tier equipment? This... this is tied to that Li kid. There's no justice in this world. Just what is going on?"

Wan Er grinned, "This is what it means for there to be infinite possibilities in the game... Hmph hmph, if Pig wasn't wearing this Valkyrie Tier Divine Dragon Slaying wrist guard, then how could we get a Divine Tier wrist guard? I say that

this King Tier goes to Xiao Yao and how about everyone ROLL for his [Defeat the Dragon]. This way everyone wouldn't have been excited for nothing...."

Wang Jian's eyes lightened up, "Eh? Brother Xiao Yao is willing to let us ROLL for his [Defeat the Dragon]?"

"Why wouldn't I?"

I smiled back at him. Either way, the King Tier [Defeat the Dragon] has a lot of the stats, so I'm not losing out on anything. It's defense, health, and attack have all grown. Most people knew of my [Defeat the Dragon] skill and how it was good for killing long range enemies. Even if it was just a Valkyrie Tier equipment, it was enough to make Wang Jian, Li Mu, Ran Min, or Matcha drool.

And so, I took off the Valkyrie Tier wrist guards and put it into the ROLL.

Half a minute later, Wang Jian came out as the victor. Giving him these special wrist guards actually wasn't bad. Of [Zhan Long]'s core heavy armor type players, Wang Jian had the best maneuvers. He was even a little stronger Li Mu. If we were to look at all of [Zhan Long], his maneuvers were only slightly worse than Wan Er, Qing Qian and I. He was definitely a strong and skilled player.

Wang Jian happily took the new equipment. I in turn equipped the King Tier [Defeat the Dragon] wrist guards. Even though it didn't look as good as the old one, the stats were much better. It was enough to make me extremely happy. Especially since the [Defeat the Dragon] skill was even stronger now. It could grab anyone within 50 yards. This meant that I would be outside of the range for Archers and Mages and still be able to grab them. Just thinking about it made me excited. Of course, this was a nightmare to anybody else.

.....

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon Rider)

Level: 102

Attack: 6346-7732

Defense: 9047

Health: 34322

Magic Power: 9430

Charm: 275

CBN Battlenet Rankings: 12

.....

My base defense just broke 9000. This was extremely good news for [Zhan Long]. If I didn't have enough defense, then all of the Level 4 Hybrid Demons and the Divine Tier BOSS would crush me. Plus, my health rose up to 34,000. You could say that I had the highest health in all of Ba Huang City. My attack power was close to 8000. Now that I had a boost in attack power, that also meant that my [Cleansing Rain]' healing effect increased quite a bit as well. At the same time, all of these combined made my solo-ability much stronger, whether it was grinding or killing BOSSes.

Afterwards, I split up the Pardon Cards and the Gems. In this one BOSS kill we managed to get 4 Level 7 Spirit Stones. These were good materials for strengthening equipment. If a weapon was strengthened to +7, then its attack or defense would increase by 35%. It was a boost that top tier players could not go without. Pretty much all of the equipment on me were at least +6, while my weapons were +7. Currently, Level 7 Spirit Stones sold for 30,000-50,000 on the market. They were extremely expensive. It was something that only money players could get. Most normal players could only strengthen to +3 while RMB players went straight to +7. This meant their hidden stats were 20% higher. Even if something was the same equipment, strengthening would only make it so that the equipment was much stronger. Unless the player had some godly maneuvers, otherwise they would only end up defeated.

There was no such thing as equality in this world. Everywhere you looked there was some kind of inequality. The weak could only be preyed on. If I only grumbled about inequality, then there truly would never be fairness. Only under fair rules can we topple over the hierarchy of the unfair.

.....

After all of the monsters from the seventeenth wave were killed, a whole 20 minutes passed without any other movement. This seemed a little strange.

I strolled over to the edge of the wall and stepped onto a broken rock. The Forest Terminator's [Shuddering Earth, Swaying Mountain] had broken apart

20% of Dragon City's Northern Wall. Looking at the wilderness just north of us, I couldn't help but feel slightly unsure. If another wave came, we might not actually make it through.

"Brother Xiao Yao...."

Qing Qian leaned against the wall beside me and said, "We only have seventeen people right now. Let's not talk about killing a BOSS, dealing with Level 4 Hybrid Demons will already be hard enough. What do we do? I suggest that we stop reserving our forces. We still have 2500 players from the divisions in the southern forests. They've been feeling impatient for a while now. Why don't we bring them over here. Even if they were to die in battle, at least we can give them a taste of what a real enemy is like. Brother, what do you think?"

I thought about it for a second and then sighed, "Coming to Dragon City was originally something I was obligated to do, since I wanted to protect my master, Frost. Now, the entire guild has taken such massive damage. I felt a little guilty already from the beginning and now I have to send my last remaining 2500 men into the mouths of the Hybrid Demons? How am I supposed to face all of the brothers of [Zhan Long]?"

Qing Qian giggled, "Brother Xiao Yao, you've been thinking too much. In the beginning, I took my sister here to [Zhan Long] because I wanted to fight side by side with Brother. I didn't come here so that I could leech EXP under your protection. I think the other 2500 are the same. They came here because of their respect for you and so that they can fight alongside the CBN ranked 12th Xiao Yao Zi Zai. You are their hero. Just fighting beside you is a type of reward, is it not?"

Wan Er joined in with a smile, "Qing Qian is right. They all want to join. We have no reason to protect them and keep them away from battle. Even if it means dying here, at least they had died on the battlefield and not under the hand of some small monster in Ba Huang City Forest... It's just 3 levels. Even if they lost 100 levels they could get it back within 7 days. What we need is battle experience, not the result."

I couldn't argue over the two beautiful Vice Guild Masters and so I finally gave a nod, "Alright then, Melon, bring them over. This time we need to move the

formation back and have Ran Min and Frost become our first line. This way we can rely on the BOSS' strength to better protect ourselves. Go, we do need more ranged and healing support."

"Yes sir!" Qing Qian smiled. "They're already waiting for us at the Southern wall. As long as Brother Xiao Yao gives the command then I shall send the message!"

"Alright!"

.....

Not long after, a large group of players donned with the [Zhan Long] insignia entered Dragon City. There was a total of three divisions. The three Guild Masters stood before me and greeted, "Guild Master!"

I nodded, "Have everyone create a formation 100 yards out of the northernmost wall. I assume you all know by now that these monsters are terrifying."

One of the Guild Masters said, "Yes, we've been watching the battles at Dragon City through a screen. Fei Er was even giving a live update. We understand the strength of these monsters. Don't worry, we aren't those [Flying Dragon] or [Wrath of the Heroes] players, we understand our limits!"

I was stunned, "Fei Er was announcing it? She's in Dragon City?"

"Yup! Look over there...."

I looked towards where the division Guild Master was pointing. Right next to one of Dragon City's flags, a beautiful Archer held onto the pole and was standing there. She stood in the most optimal spot for seeing the entire battlefield. On her shoulder was the insignia for ZGTV. When she saw me looking at her she smiled. "Guests, we seem to have been noticed by the Guild Master of [Zhan Long], Xiao Yao Zi Zai... Hiiii, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, look up here! Keep up the good work in the Dragon City's Defense Battle! You've made a very interesting battle!"

I was a little speechless as Fei Er sent over a message, "Give a smile, it's for my ratings..."

I coughed and gave an awkward smile to Fei Er. I then shouted, “Careful, don’t get picked up by the flying type Predators. If that happens then the live broadcast will come to an end...”

“Wow, evil bastard, you never hope for any good luck on me!”

Fei Er shook her fist and suddenly realized that she said a bad word. She immediately straightened out and continued her announcing, “Cough cough, just now the signal wasn’t too good, I believe that everyone didn’t hear what just happened. I’ll continue the announcement. We are currently waiting for the 18th wave of Hybrid Demons to attack! At the same time, Fei Er will announce the battle situations for Jiu Li City and Fan Shu City. Of course, compared to the Defense Battle at Ba Huang City, they are much different. [Legend], [Hero’s Mound], and [Judgement]’s total losses are under 50%, whereas [Zhan Long], [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Enemies at the Gate] have lost over 90% of their players. This truly is a battle to the death!”

.....

I decided to ignore Fei Er’s announcing and continued to watch for any movements from the Hybrid Demons.

Finally, after we waited for 30 minutes, we suddenly heard the sounds of dragon roars. The roars shook the entire forest, making leaves rain down. All of the players and the NPCs went pale. Everyone knew that this roar could only have come from the dragon tribe.

“It can’t be dragons, right?” Wan Er’s eyes widened.

I shook my head, “I don’t know, but we will find out soon...”

“Yes....”

.....

After a few minutes, the leaves rustled again and a fierce head emerged from the forest. More and more emerged, and finally we saw a group of people who had the tail and claws of a dragon appear on the field. They held long halberds in their hands. They raised their sinister heads and roared. The sound hurt our eardrums. They weren’t actual dragons, but they were the legendary Dragon men. These were Level 4 Hybrid Demons again!

# Chapter 570 Despair Again

Large numbers of Dragon Men dashed across the field and whipped their long dragontails. They climbed up the cliff below Dragon City as though they were walking on flatlands. The halberds in their hands gleamed with a terrifying light as blood lust saturated their eyes!

“Mother...”

Yan Zhao Warrior stood in front of a formation with around 3000 players. He looked at the distant Dragon Men team and gritted his teeth, “Prepare your defenses. These Level 4 Hybrid Demons are Level 118. I hope we can defend against this first charge!”

Not far away, Jian Feng Han had only managed to gather around 800+ of [Vanguard]’s players. To think that the de facto Ba Huang City’s Number one guild, [Vanguard] would fall to such a place could only make one sigh.

I looked behind me and saw that the 2500+ [Zhan Long]’ players were already in formation. I smiled. “Everyone hold your positions, I’m going to check out the monster’s stats. Even though we can’t see their attack and defense, at least we’ll know what skills to watch out for, so we won’t be at too much of a disadvantage!”

Wan Er nodded, “Be careful!”

.....

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and walked to the edge of the wall again. I could read the stats and details of the Dragonman that was at the very front  
——

[Bloody Tear Dragonmen] (Type: Level 4 Hybrid Demons)

Level: 118

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: [Sword Tail Strike] [Deathly Blood Tears] [Dragon Armor]

Introduction: Bloody Tear Dragonmen are a pitiful group of human like warriors that were contaminated by Dragon essence. As Hell's Battlesong Lin Han traveled the depths of hell, he found quite a few geysers of air polluted by the dead dragon tribes. Afterwards, he captured a group of human warriors and threw them into the geysers, forcing them to transform and become a monster that wasn't human but not dragon either. Lin Han then stole their souls and turned them into an army that was under his command.

.....

As I retreated, I said in the team chat, "[Sword Tail Strike] is probably an attack from their tails, so everyone needs to be careful. I'm not sure what [Deathly Blood Tears] is supposed to be, but [Dragon Armor] is definitely some kind of defense skill. These Bloody Tear Dragonmen definitely have a high defense. Archers, remember, you must use [Shield Break] on all of the Dragonmen and decrease their defense by 15%. This way, we can optimize everyone else's attack... Do not attract the aggro of too many. Let's make three, hundred man teams, and each one will kill one dragonman. Do not get too aggressive. Having our 2500 players kill 10 at once is already pushing it..."

Everyone nodded, "Understood, Guild Master!"

Very soon, the first Bloody Tear Dragonman swung his halberd and charged over. Luo Lin, Su Ke and the other NPC had all brought a group of Ba Huang City cavalry to hold them off. Each of the cavalymen held a sword in hand. Luo Lin's eyes were filled with bloodlust. He shouted, "Behind us is our home, there is no retreat! No matter how great the northern Hybrid Demons are, or how strong they are, we will kill all of them! Even if it means battling to the death!"

"Kong kong kong...."

The Dragonmen all charged over and clashed with the NPC army. However, this was a two pronged attack, and so groups of Dragonmen also charged towards the player camps. I stood at the front, while Matcha, Wan Er, Li Mu, and Wang Jian all stepped out of the formation. All tank players were like angels and were destined to be beat up until they were barely recognizable.

I raised my hand and locked [Great Realm of Desolation] on the first



Dragonman!

“Peng!”

“5012 ! ”

I then threw another attack, [Blade Spin]. However, the Dragonman roared and golden rays of dragon power covered his entire body. [Dragon Armor] had activated. My Zhen Yue sword slashed at the Dragonman, but the damage I dealt was pitiful——

“2716 ! ”

“2811 ! ”

“3012 ! ”

.....

“F\*ck, so difficult...” Dong Cheng muttered from behind me.

I smiled back and then charged forward to attack the Dragonman. When the fierce face appeared in front of me, it immediately slashed at me with a claw and then spun around. The spikes on its tail turned into a sword and it threw [Sword Tail Strike]!

“Keng!”

Sparks flew and my Flame Prison Armor took the hit. It dealt 6000+ damage to me. This Level 118 Hybrid Demon seemed to have much more attack than before. My 9000+ base defense still took this much damage. It wasn't going to be easy on the other players.

Just as I predicted, on the frontline, Li Mu and Wang Jian had all taken over 15000 damage from that [Sword Tail Strike]. Thankfully we had enough Healers, otherwise there was no way we could fight these.

.....

And so, the fierce battle continued. These Bloody Tear Dragonmen had extremely high AIs and their aggro was extremely similar to that of a BOSS'. Within 1-2 seconds, 100% of their aggro could switch. And so the main tank player only had 1-2 seconds to deal as many attacks as they could to prevent

the aggro from moving and killing the other DPS and healing type players.

“Careful...”

Old K almost missed and the Dragonman that was under his control charged towards the players with 30% health. It dealt a [Sword Tail Strike] and instantly killed one of the divisions’ Swordsmen. Then with a sweep of its sharp claws it killed another two Archers. At the same time, a system notification rang out

——

“Di!”

Battle Notification: Please note, the Bloody Tear Dragonman has killed the player “Yue Yao Chen” and [Deadly Blood Tears] has activated. Their attack power has increased by 10%!

“Di!”

Battle Notification: Please note, the Bloody Tear Dragonman has killed the player “Lemon Smile” and [Deadly Blood Tears] has activated. Its attack power has increased 20% .”

“Di!”

Battle Notification: Please note, the Bloody Tear Dragonman has killed the player “Solemn Immortal” and [Deadly Blood Tears] has activated. Attack power has increased 30%

.....

Li Mu was stunned, “F\*ck, that [Deadly Blood Tears] is pretty much Guild Master’s [Kill for Blood]. Killing one person increases attack power by 10%! We can’t let that happen. Hurry up and kill it! Old K, man up and charge!”

Old K raised his battle axe and charged forward, immediately attracting the Dragonman. Within a few attacks, he dropped to critical health, forcing Old K to use his [Oppose the Heaven’s] skill. Then with critical health, he hacked the Dragonman to death. Who would have thought that a monster would force Old K to use [Oppose the Heavens].

The other guilds were not doing much better off than we were. Within [Prague]’s formation, a few of the Dragonmen had already hit 100% with their

[Deadly Blood Tears] and were now wreaking havoc. After all, the only players left were from their divisions. Of them, only Yan Zhao had the ability to hold them off, and that was not enough. Every one of the Bloody Tear Dragonmen was like a BOSS massacring the players. With their [Dragon Armor] they were even harder to kill. All 3000 of [Prague]’s players were immediately pushed to chaos. All they could do was retreat and rely on the NPCs.

The worst part was that a few of Ba Huang City’s small guilds had also hiked up onto the city. They were even weaker than [Prague]’s divisions and only became boosts for the Dragonmen’s [Deadly Blood Tears]. The walls were quickly dyed in blood.

“Gyaa....”

Wang Jian watched the scene and then looked beside him. He couldn’t help but mutter, “This 18th wave really is going in for the kill. These Dragonmen’s defense and durability was just too unreasonable.... At first, I thought that having 300 kill one of them was safe, but it looks like I was wrong..”

I softly replied, “The Hybrid Demon army is getting more and more difficult to deal with. Can you even imagine... we still have 12 hours to go. All we can do is try our best....”

“Yes!”

.....

In the end, within one hour, [Zhan Long]’s 2500 players were cut down to 1500. We took massive losses. In the distance [Prague]’s 3000 only had 500 left. If there wasn’t a strong tank to hold off the Dragonmen, then it was near impossible to avoid getting killed by them. After all, the Dragonmen’s [Deadly Blood Tears] had no ceiling. One of the Dragonmen had killed over 30+ of [Prague]’s players and was nearly invincible. Even Yan Zhao Warrior was almost instantly killed by it. In the end, Frost’s [Razor Rotation] was the finishing attack. These monsters were truly terrifying.

The NPC army’s losses were also heavy. The newly dispatched team of cavalymen had basically been crushed. Only a handful of teams could hold off the Dragonmen Army. Even the top BOSS level generals were fighting a bitter battle with these monsters. How could they deal with the continuous charges of

the Dragonmen? In the blink of an eye they were ripped apart.

“Ah....”

Luo Lin’s voice trembled and he charged right into the army of Dragonmen. He swept out his blade and crushed all of them. However, the Dou Qi that radiated off of the sword was already starting to get dim. Su Ke immediately shouted, “King Luo Lin, don’t be rash. Your sword won’t be able to take this kind of strength. This is the last godly weapon that the kingdom is willing to give you!”

Luo Lin roared, “So what? I can only do this. I can only fight with my life. Only this way can I face the soldiers that had followed me and fought to their deaths. What else can I do?”

Behind, the commander of the Blizzard army dashed over. Angela raised her Destroyer and said, “Brother, I’ll lend you my Destroyer. It’s also a godly weapon. This will be able to take your Holy Realm strength!”

Luo Lin shook his head, “Angela, never give up your sword. To the commander of an army, your sword represents your power and your life!”

Angela’s shoulders sagged helplessly, “Brother....”

.....

Su Ke raised his battle axe and cut a Dragonman in half. Blood splattered his face. He raised it to wipe the blood away and said, “We’ve faced death side by side as we traversed to the Graveyard of the Heroes for the sake of finding the godly weapon Despair. We originally meant to use it to hold off the incoming invasions from the Hybrid Demons. However, now that their armies are upon us and Dragon City is about to fall, why do we not see the king bring out Despair? Why must we bury and hide this ancient godly weapon?”

Luo Lin was enraged, “Su Ke. Do not say another word. This is not something that is up to you to decide!”

Angela gritted her teeth, “Brother, say no more. I will return to the city right now and ask father. Either I bring Despair back to this city or else I will not return!”

Luo Lin was stunned, “Angela?”

“I’m heading off now!”

Angela raised her long sword and jumped off the wall, disappearing into the blizzard, leaving behind a blood splattered general. For the sake of defending Dragon City, the Blizzard Army was practically demolished.

.....

The situation in the player camp wasn’t much better. All we could do was kill a few of the Dragonmen at a time and support the NPCs as they slaughtered the Hybrid Demons. This took a lot of strength and effort. Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao Warrior had been on the battlefield for so long that they nearly cried. Their losses were far greater than they had expected. This was something that we had never before experienced in any of the previous events.

Nearly half an hour later, we finally received news from Ba Huang City. One of the messenger soldiers climbed up the hill and knelt before Luo Lin, “Your majesty, we have news of Despair!”

“What about Despair?” Luo Lin asked.

“The godly weapon Despair has already arrived at Dragon City!”

“Huh?” Luo Lin grew excited, “Where is it?”

Right at that moment, an old majestic voice suddenly bellowed from the observation deck on the south side of Dragon City——

“I have brought Despair! Lin Er, you have worked hard! You are the pride of Ba Huang City! Next, leave the rest to me. It’s time I warmed up my old bones for humanity!”

.....

Luo Lei walked over from the observation deck with Despair in his hand.

# Chapter 571 The Power of the Strongest Sword Saint

Behind Luo Lei, the commander of Desolate Dragon and known as the strongest general in Ba Huang City, Forgotten Sea gripped his sword. He quietly stood behind his king. When he saw Luo Lei hike up onto the city, he roared, "Fierce Tiger Army, force everyone over. Do not reserve any of your power. Let's show these Northern Hybrid Demons the true strength of Ba Huang City's warriors!"

South of the city, an enormous army of cavalry rushed over, followed by foot soldiers, archers and other soldiers. It took all the way until the 18th wave for Ba Huang City's royalty to finally decide to bring out the true guns.

.....

Luo Lei raised Despair and slowly walked over to the observation deck. Very soon, three of the Dragonmen charged right towards him. They seemed to have realized that he was an important figure. Luo Lei didn't seem worried at all. He unsheathed his sword and Despair's light dazzled across the field. Fierce flames of power rose off of the blade, forcing the three Dragonmen to retreat. They didn't even dare to come forward. They all covered their eyes and screeched, "Ah, what is this weapon? I've been blinded....."

Forgotten Sea roared and slashed apart the Dragonmen. He stood before Luo Lei and said, "Young knights, guard the city!"

After the Fierce Tiger Army's commander Rocklin was killed by Chi Yu Han, the command of this army fell upon Forgotten Sea. Either way, this army wasn't the one that he had personally trained, so Forgotten Sea didn't care for them too much. He merely sent a large number of cavalry forward to block the area. The archers and crossbow carts followed behind, strengthening the defense machines of the city.

Luo Lin stood there, stupefied. The sword in his hand had already been burned red hot from all of the power he channeled into it as he said, "Father,

Despair....”

“What is it, Lin Er?” Luo Lei asked.

Luo Lin lowered his voice, “Father, the Hybrid Demons have been charging at my formation one after another. Each wave is filled with strong monsters that are lead by a terrifying general. It is something that our normal soldiers have no way to hold off against. And so.... I ask that Father please allow me to use Despair. With Despair, I will be able to completely eradicate them. Otherwise, I won’t be able to fight against such strong Hybrid Demons. If Lin Han were to come, then I don’t even have a sliver of a chance at victory. At that point Dragon City will be lost...”

Luo Lei let out a long sigh and turned to his son, “Despair has already been deemed a godly weapon of the state, and represents the power of Ba Huang City’s Empire. Right now, it is not time for you to rise to the throne, do you understand?”

Luo Lei was stunned, “Father, this is just a weapon. I... I just want to protect my people. I...Never have I thought of usurping your power!”

“Alright....”

Luo Lei seemed to be a bit annoyed as he said, “That is enough! Lin Er, take your men to the city to rest. Leave the situation to me right now. Your father’s sword has not grown rusty yet. Besides, I’m wielding Despair. I will not shame Ba Huang City.”

“Al...alright then...”

Luo Lin’s face was pained. He looked to the people of Dragon City and said, “Frost, Su Ke, Da Lin, follow me into the city. We need to rest and repair our equipments. Everyone must be tired...”

Frost raised her Severing Beauty, “My Lord? We... we cannot give up our defense. Dragon City is our home...”

“Say no more. Follow my orders!”

“Alright.... Yes, my lord!”

.....

A large number of Dragon City's NPC army all retreated, leaving the Ba Huang City Fierce Tiger Army to defend. There were around 50,000 NPC soldiers there. That was enough for the Hybrid Demons to deal with.

The player camp remained as they were. There was no reason for us to retreat. Besides, everyone was waiting for the 18th wave BOSS!

"Ka Cha..."

My Dragon Reservoir Sword cut through the head of one Dragonman. Then, with a sweep, I cut through the throat of another Dragonman with my Zhen Yue Sword. Once I was used to the attributes of the monsters, soloing two of them wasn't too much of a problem. The 1500 players from [Zhan Long] were now my most precious treasure, and I needed to protect them.

These two short hours seemed more like a long and everlasting torture.

Finally, there were no more Dragonmen climbing up from the wall. All around us there were Bloody Tear Dragonmen, NPC, and player bodies. The blood formed rivers that flowed off the sides. Equipment, cards and the like all lay scattered around. Everyone did a quick sweep of the battlefield. Right at that moment, a bone chilling screech sounded out from the distance....

"The BOSS is coming...." Wan Er's beautiful eyes looked into the distance and said, "The seventeenth wave BOSS was enough to injure Luo Lin. This 18th wave BOSS, who knows if Luo Lei will be able to hold him off?"

I smiled reassuringly to her, "I don't know, but let's see. Most likely, the players won't be able to fight this BOSS. We'll act as the opportunity comes up..."

"Yes!"

.....

In the next moment, a black clothed figure suddenly flew out with a shriek. It was a general that was completely clothed in black armor and wielded a longsword. He was covered in dragon scales and claws and an enormous dragon insignia stood out on his chest. The armor looked to be extremely thick. Clearly, he was using the scales as a type of defense. His longsword was a deep emerald green with dragon engravings along the hilt. As he came in, he went straight for



an attack and slashed through a team of Cavalrymen from the Fierce Tiger Army, instantly killing them all.

“Ge ge....”

Under the Iron Helmet was a handsome face with a sinister expression. As he looked at the NPC troops along the wall, he opened his hand at them and smiled. “You ants, when the dragons disappeared from the earth, you lost your faith. Now, I will help you regain that faith. Face your judgement of death!”

“Hong!”

A fierce flame exploded and created a shockwave that spread right into the group of people. A team of archers were burned to crisp!

“F\*ck...”

The show of strength was so great that Li Mu couldn’t help but step back. He gritted his teeth, “Just what is up with this BOSS. How is it so strong? Isn’t this the prelude to the extermination of mankind?”

I nodded in solemn agreement. I then cautiously stepped forward a few steps and read out the BOSS’ stats in the guild chat——

[Black Dragon Soul – Men Lou] (Divine Tier BOSS)

Level: 118

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: [Crushing Strike] [Dragon Flame] [Grip of the Holy Dragon] [Blood of the Gods]

Introduction: Men Luo, an Ancient Holy Dragon. He comes from a tribe of black dragons and is considered to be one of their strongest warriors. In a short 2000 years, he was able to gain the teachings of [Blood of the Gods] and became one of the main members of the dragon tribe. In the end, his arrogance and pride were too great, causing him to leave the City of Dragons and become a wild dragon. Finally, he was pursued by several Sword Saint level humans.

When he escaped to the Hybrid Demon Territory, he was offered shelter by Lin Han and became one of his members. Men Luo has a ruthless personality and loves to eat infants. He has been renowned as the most evil dragon. When confronting this evil beast, you must be cautious

.....

I took a deep breath and said in the guild chat, “Be careful, this is a Level 118 Divine Tier BOSS. This shouldn’t be something that we can fight against.... [Crushing Strike] is a sword essence type attack, while [Dragon Fire] is a ranged attack. It’ll probably be around a 10×10 range. I can’t tell what is going on with the [Grip of the Holy Dragon]. We shouldn’t attack for now. Let us just hold our positions and see what happens!”

All of the [Zhan Long] players nodded in agreement and shouted, “Yes sir!”

Clearly, nobody was willing to deal with this evil beast. Who cares if this type of super BOSS could drop a Divine Tier equipment? The reality was that nobody was willing to trade their life to get that type of equipment. Especially in this situation when the NPCS holding off this BOSS weren’t Luo Lin or Frost, but rather Luo Lei who wielded the sword Despair. To be honest, I didn’t have much hopes for the strength of Luo Lei. This was a king that stayed hidden in his palace most of the time. He was deeply submerged in the battles of deception. Just how much strength did he have to fight against the Northern Hybrid Demons?

“Attack!

Forgotten Sea raised his long sword and roared, “Charge! Bring me Men Luo’s head. I want to see just how much of a monster this Holy Dragon really is!”

A team of Fierce Tiger’s soldiers all charged forward and surrounded Men Luo. They began hacking at him, but all of the blades and halberds only created sparks against the Dou Qi that surrounded Men Luo, as if no damage had been made whatsoever. Men Luo actually grinned widely and then swept out his sword, cutting every one of the soldiers in half. He then opened his palm and roared, “[Grip of the Holy Dragon]!”

“Hong!”

Flames started to rise around him and a Black Dragon Claw appeared before him and surged forward. The attack range was around 40 yards and dealt mortal damage to all of the enemies in its line of attack. Even if the target was a heavily armed cavalryman, he was still instantly killed. All of the archers and swordsmen were all burned to death.

“Gu Dong...”

I gulped and said, “This [Grip of the Holy Dragon] looks a lot like Qing Qian’s [Grip of the Firefox]...”

Qing Qian’s eyes were wide, “That... If [Grip of the Firefox] had even 10% of its power, then I’d give thanks to the gods...”

“Ha ha....”

“Idiot Brother Xiao Yao....”

“.....”

.....

On the city wall, Men Luo charged into the crowds of people and slaughtered all of them. One after another, he continued activating [Grip of the Holy Dragon], creating chaos. Not only was he killing countless people, he was also leaving damage to the wall. This Men Luo was just an 18th wave BOSS and he was already such a demon. There were still 6 waves left. Motherf\*cker, just thinking about it made my head hurt. How were we supposed to fight?

“Motherf\*cker, that b\*st\*rd!”

Forgotten Sea roared and charged forward with his blade raised shouting, “Men Luo, you b\*st\*rd from hell, have a taste of my sword! I’m going to teach you what it means to be the top of the Sword Saints!”

“Hong!”

Flames appeared on Forgotten Sea’s blade. He suddenly leapt into the sky. Runes created by his spirit essence began to form in the air around him and then sink into his blade. In the next moment, he suddenly dashed forward and cut straight towards Men Luo!

Men Luo suddenly looked up and smiled. “Weakling!”

He stomped against the ground and leapt up, charging right towards Forgotten Sea's blade. He then threw his left fist forward and "Peng!" punched away Forgotten Sea's attack and threw Ba Huang City's strongest person right back into the city wall. Furthermore, he quickly caught up and sheathed his sword. Then he grabbed Forgotten Sea's shoulder and pulled him in with his mouth open wide!

"Pu Chi.... Pu La...."

Blood spurted out and an arm flew into the air.

We couldn't tell what was happening, all we could say was that it glitched out on us.

## Chapter 572 Cursed Weapon

“D\*mm\*t!”

Seeing his beloved general almost get cut into pieces, Luo Lei finally couldn't hold it in any longer. He roared and raised Despair, charging towards Men Luo. Dou Qi swirled around his body. His sword flashed. Men Luo instantly knew that there was danger. He immediately turned around and retreated. Then opened his hand at Luo Lei, throwing [Dragon Flame]!

Luo Lei gritted his teeth and roared, “[Shield of the Protector]!”

“Peng!” A golden light began to rise around his feet, blocking Men Luo's [Dragon Flame]. I couldn't tell, but Luo Lei was actually pretty strong. He swung Despair and smiled. Dou Qi began to rise off of the blade and at that moment, ancient runes began to appear on Despair. One after another, the crimson runes swirled around the blade and a haunting song rang out.

“Come at me!”

Luo Lei's voice boomed and he sprinted forward yelling, “Have a taste of Ba Huang City's martial arts——[Five Essence Slash]!”

[Five Essence Slash] channeled the sword essence, creating a powerful slash that landed right on Men Luo's chest plate. Men Luo's body flew backwards and blood dripped from the corner of his mouth. Then, he suddenly turned around and ran and “Peng!” kicked off of the city wall, flying forward with terrifyingly fast maneuvers.

.....

“Ahhhh....”

Forgotten Sea had lost his left arm. He leaned against his blade to stand up and shouted, “Archers, shoot him to death!”

A team of Fierce Tiger Archers all raised their bows to attack. Arrows rained down from the sky in a volley, but they all bounced off of the Dou Qi armor around Men Luo. Even if we had funneled Dou Qi into the attack, it still

wouldn't have broken through the BOSS defense. Forgotten Sea saw this and spun around. He pointed to a cannon on the city wall and said, "Use the Demon Cannon. I will blow him away!"

One of the officers in charge was stunned, "Commander, that Demon Canon's strength is alarming. Won't.... Won't it collapse this Dragon City? What if... if Dragon City gets destroyed, how are we supposed to take responsibility?"

Forgotten Sea smiled cruelly, "Cut the small talk. Dragon City can be rebuilt, but once Ba Huang City is lost, then our empire which was built upon tens of thousands of years of history will be gone. Hurry, use it!"

"Yes my lord!"

On the cannon deck, a dozen soldiers pushed over the Demon Cannon. A mage stood beside it and chanted several spells to bring forth the demon fire. "Peng!" The Demon flames became a fireball that shot from the cannon and flew straight at Men Luo.

"Oh?"

Men Luo turned around and smiled. He then opened his left hand straight at the Demon Cannon. "Peng!" it exploded and the entire city shivered. Ash and dust scattered throughout the air, obstructing everyone's vision. It took almost a minute for all of the dust to settle. It wasn't until then that we saw that Men Luo still stood on the city wall, with his hand still open. He then smiled. "Now why would you despise me this much? Did you think that a toy like that would be able to harm me?"

"D\*mm\*t...." Forgotten Sea gritted his teeth.

Men Luo opened his hand and activated [Dragon Flame]. Flames began to rise around the Demon Cannon and within seconds, the iron melted into a puddle. The Great Mage quickly began to chanting a wind spell and barely managed to escape the attack from the Dragon Flames. Looking at the melted Demon Cannon, his face turned green, "F\*ck, what kind of a monster is this?"

"What do you think?"

Hearing the sound of a cruel laugh beside his ear, the Great Mage suddenly turned and saw that Men Luo stood right behind him like a Death God. He felt a

pain rise from his chest and he began to scream. Men Luo's hand had penetrated right through his body and grabbed a red beating heart. He pulled it out and burned it to crisp. The Great Mage's body twitched and Men Luo threw it into the distance.

Before it even landed, Men Luo raised his hand and used [Grip of the Dragon] to follow it, burning down a team of Fierce Tiger soldiers along with the body. Not even a single body was left in the carnage.

.....

"Your majesty...."

A soldier whose legs had been burned off crawled along the ground and screamed. Despair colored his face as he screeched, "Your majesty, how are we supposed to deal with this kind of a monster? Who will give us the courage to fight?"

Luo Lei's face was green. He walked forward and softly said, "All I can give you is an end to your pain, rest well!"

Despair flashed out and the soldier's head rolled away. Luo Lei was trembling. After Despair had a taste of blood, it began to create a "Sss" sound, as if it was burning. It was almost as though the blade was getting excited after having a taste of human blood. Luo Lei was the same. His face now had a faint expression of blood lust. His eyes seemed to look muddled for a second, and then suddenly clear again. He grinned cruelly, "Men Luo, you were originally one of the most honored and respected of the Dragon Tribe, and yet today, you are here to invade my empire and kill my generals. Today, no matter what, I will kill you here at whatever the cost!"

Men Luo raised his sword and coldly said, "Come you old geezer. If you have the ability to back your words that is!"

"Pa!"

Luo Lei disappeared from where he was and suddenly reappeared in the air above Men Luo. Despair was parried by the enemy's long sword. "Keng!" they clashed and an enormous shockwave spread out from the impact of the two forces. Following after, Luo Lei increased the pressure and forced Men Luo

straight down into the wall. Dust scattered into the air again.

“Sha sha....”

Men Luo stood up and wiped away some of the blood from his mouth. He began to reveal his true Black Dragon nature. He leapt up and dealt seven attacks, throwing Luo Lei in to the air. Then, he opened his hand and activated [Dragon Flame]+[Grip of the Holy Dragon]. Luo Lei roared in pain and half of his arm was burned black. But he continued to swing his Despair!

“Ka Cha....”

A bloody mark appeared on Men Luo’s chest. The armor had been split in half. Luo Lei threw a punch forward, pushing this Demon Commander backwards.

“Ge ge ge....”

Huffing for air, Luo Lin stood in the sky. He then pointed Despair straight to the ground. At that moment, a red energy began to accumulate in the sword. Then, Luo Lei’s injuries seemed to completely heal right in front of us. It seemed as though that energy was increasing his recovery.

.....

“This....” Qing Qian’s small mouth quivered, “Just what kind of a skill is that?”

Wolf was stunned, “What’s going on? Despair had that kind of a skill?”

Wan Er shook her head, “That’s not it...”

I gripped my hands and said, “Yea, this isn’t some kind of a skill. From what it looks like, Despair is sucking away the souls of the dead soldiers and increasing Luo Lei’s recovery. Motherf\*cker, Despair isn’t some godly weapon, it’s a cursed sword!”

“F\*ck....”

Li Mu was shocked, “Then what do we do?”

“Nothing...” Matcha looked towards the sky and said, “all we can do is hope that a victory comes from these two. From the looks of it, Men Luo is still more advanced than Luo Lei by two levels, however Luo Lei is wielding the godly weapon Despair. It’s hard to say....”



.....

In the sky, the battle situation continued in a stale mate. The two people seemed to be completely equal. They both had their advantages. After a few minutes they were both covered in injuries.

Men Luo only had around 10% of his health left. His face was red from all the battling. Slashes ran across both of his arms. He smiled at Luo Lei and said, "Even if you have Despair, you are just relying on these pitiful humans. While I.... I have the blood of the holy dragon! Come, rise before me, this ancient blood, let these mortals witness your true power!"

In the next moment, Men Luo's veins suddenly grew and all of the bones in his body cracked. His size began to increase. We'd seen this before, it was Dragon Transformation. This piece of sh\*t finally revealed its true body!

One by one, the armor fell to the ground and in the next moment, Men Luo's body was replaced by that of an enormous dragon. It raised its claws and slammed straight towards Luo Lei!

"Peng!"

Even if Luo Lei was completely armored in godly equipment, he wouldn't have been able to guard against this attack. He was thrown straight into the wall. He roared in pain and three slashes were left on his chest from the claws. Blood spurted forward. He had been so intimidated by the strength that his face was ashen. He immediately pointed Despair at the countless bodies, but only a few souls were sucked back to his body for healing.

Men Luo laughed, "Did you not know? Strength is just like the rain from the heavens, it is not infinite. This Despair is just a medium, but...you, Luo Lei, your strength is just that much. You are like a small spring. You cannot take too much of the rains from the heavens. Even a godly weapon cannot help you. Weakling, take that weapon to your death!"

The dragon claws descended upon Luo Lei and "Pa Pa Pa!" dealt three blows. Luo Lei's armor all cracked upon and his chest was almost slashed completely open as he screamed in pain.

.....

“Father!”

Angela cried out but couldn't do anything. She raised her Destroyer and rushed forward, trying to help. She slammed the sword right into the dragon's head. However, Men Luo continued to focus on Luo Lei and didn't pay any attention to Angela. Her strength wasn't strong enough to deal any harm to him.

Right at that moment, we heard a shout. It was Luo Lin!

“[Holy Slash]!”

The sword in his hand grew red hot and he threw a strike that left a deep injury. Luo Lin's strength truly was superhuman. However, the moment he threw that attack, his blade was destroyed. It couldn't take that kind of strength.

“Angela!” Luo Lin's face was green.

“Brother?”

“Give me the Destroyer!”

“Yes!”

She tossed the Destroyer to Luo Lin. He roared and flames began to rise off of the blade. He then shouted at Men Luo, “Die, you scum of the dragon tribe and bring your army back to the North!”

“Pu Chi...”

Power swirled around the blade of the Destroyer, creating a whirlwind around the blade. He struck right at the Dragon's head. Blood poured forward as the dragon shrieked. Men Luo tumbled down the hill and like that, the 18th wave BOSS was destroyed.

.....

“Come, sages, hurry up and heal my father!” Angela cried out as she watched the dying Luo Lei. Tears dropped from her watery eyes.

Luo Lin threw the Destroyer aside and rushed to Luo Lei's side. He covered his father's chest with his hand and used his Holy Domain power to heal his father's

body. He shouted, "Father, father... you'll be alright!"

Luo Lei opened his blood crusted eyes and put his hand on the godly weapon Despair. He whispered, "Lin Er.... your father really is old, he really has gotten old...."

Forgotten Sea said, "Your majesty, what are your orders?"

Luo Lei whispered, "Take the injured soldiers from the Fierce Tiger army and retreat into the Hunters Valley. Hand the command over Dragon City to Luo Lin. The Dragon Army will be under his command. Lin Er, you must hold Dragon City! The future of the continent, rests on you..."

Luo Lin nodded, "Yes, Father. I will not disappoint you! But... Despair..."

"No..."

Luo Lei's voice grew faint, "This weapon... it is an evil weapon. You cannot touch it. Or else... the consequences will be dire. Use your sister's Destroyer. It will be of use to you..."

"Father, I...."

Luo Lin looked frustrated, "Alright...."

# Chapter 573 Fantastical Beast Armor

Dong Cheng scrunched her elegant eyebrows and softly said, “Why wouldn’t Luo Lei leave Despair behind? Everyone can tell that we have a chance of winning if Luo Lin is wielding Despair. Any other weapon won’t work. How are we supposed to deal with the BOSSes after this? Relying on our players definitely won’t work....”

Wolf nodded, “Yea, King Luo Lei’s methods are too improper...”

Wan Er looked towards me, “What do you think?”

I was silent. After a few seconds of pondering, I said, “Luo Lei and Luo Lin are both people who have spent their whole lives chasing after power. I’ve met many people like this and once they get crazy, they’re even scarier than demons.”

Dong Cheng shook her head, “I don’t get it...”

Dancing Forest smiled. “Cang Yue is still young, not understanding is normal. That’s a good thing. You need to stay innocent!”

Dong Cheng immediately giggled and stuck her 34Cs out with a smile, “But of course. Our Brother Xiao Yao only likes innocent girls....”

I glared at her, “You really are innocent... ”

Li Mu wiped away some of the drool beside his mouth and said, “Stop messing around, the 19th wave is almost here....”

“Yeah!”

.....

I walked forward several steps and looked over the edge of the wall. All I could see was the dark wilderness. The cold blizzard wind continuously smacked against the cold city. The 19th wave, who knew what was waiting for us. The player camp was practically all gone. At least 2 million of Ba Huang City’s players died in Dragon City. Either way, [Zhan Long], [Prague], [Vanguard], and [Enemies at the Gate] and the other big guilds had been crushed and yet these

Hybrid Demon waves still continued to come one after another, as though there were no end.

“Neigh neigh...”

We could hear the whinnies of battle horses in the distance. Li Mu was startled and said, “Cavalry?”

I nodded, “Yes!”

The trees in the forest shook and one after another, heavily armored horses appeared. The soldiers were all clothed in heavy armor with a sword at their hip. Furthermore, each one of them had a fierce tiger or panther at their side. This was a group of beast taming cavalry. Just one glance and I could tell that they were difficult to fight. This meant two times the damage. The pressure that we were under was even greater now....

Among the enemies, one of the cavalymen rode before the army. He had military rankings decorated on his shoulder. He raised his sword and roared, “Attack, for the honor of our king, the time to wash away the tens of thousands of years of shame that the Hybrid Demons have suffered!”

The earth began to tremble and hundreds of thousand of cavalymen charged over. When they were only 150 yards away from me, I read out the stats and my heart dropped, “F\*ck...”

Li Mu, “What is it? Hurry up and show us the stats!”

I then posted the stats of these Hybrid Demons in the guild chat. Everyone fell silent. The Northern Hybrid Demons were really trying to kill us——

[Beast Tamer Cavalry] (Type: Level 5 Hybrid Demons)

Level: 119

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: [Sword Break] [Chaotic Dance] [Pet Separation] [Fantastical Beast Armor]

Introduction: Beast Taming Cavalrymen, this is a group of heavily armored cavalrymen that lived in the plains of the Barbarians. They are extremely talented and can talk with beasts. They can even tame fierce tigers. The young Barbarian Cavalrymen were completely loyal to their kingdom. Afterwards, when the Hybrid Demons invaded their land and all of the royal family had been killed, these Beast Tamer Cavalrymen contracted a disease and finally become a branch of the Hybrid Demon Army.

.....

“Everyone be careful...”

I raised my sword and retreated several steps, “These monsters have the [Sword Break] skill. It’s the Swordsmen fifth advancement skill and deals a fan like attack to all enemies within a 10 yard radius. It’s best if we do not let them anywhere near the rear end of our formation, or else our losses will be too great.”

Wang Jian nodded in agreement, “We will do our best. These Level 5 Hybrid Demons, who can say what abilities they have? I feel like besides Brother Xiao Yao who’s already a fifth advancement Swordsman, it’d be much too hard for the rest of us to hold off these Level 5 Hybrid Demons....”

I smiled. “Yes, let’s battle with all we have. As long as we have no regrets!”

“Yes sir!”

[Zhan Long] all pumped their fists and prepared for battle. In the distance, [Prague], [Vanguard], and [Enemies at the Gate] and the other dozen guilds all began forming their formation. Luo Lin sent out a command to all of the Desolate Dragon Heavy cavalry and archers to stand guard. As the signature army of Ba Huang City, the Desolate Dragon army had at least 100,000 men and was now completely under Luo Lin’s command. Even if Luo Lin didn’t have a weapon, he still had a deadly power at his command.

.....

“Kong kong kong...”

At the bottom of the mountain the heavy cavalrymen all unsheathed their swords as they trotted up the wall. They were clothed in a thick armor. One

glance and you could tell that they had an impressive defense power. In addition, they each had a ferocious beast at their side. Once they reached the city walls, they clashed with the Desolate Dragon team. These Beast Tamer Cavalrymen were extremely strong and flashes of light continuously burst among the NPC army. Blood spurted out and the bloodbath began.

On the city wall, Frost gritted her teeth and pointed to the team on the western side, shouting, "What are you waiting for? Hurry up and use your longbows. Let's deal a critical attack to these Level 5 Hybrid Demons. Aim well, and make sure you don't kill our own soldiers!"

Su Ke nodded and put down his battle axe. He then raised the copper long bow that rested on his bow. "Shua!" an arrow flew out, piercing through the eye of one of the Beast Tamers. The other 500+ Dragon soldiers all switched to their bows and aimed at their enemies. Even though there weren't many of them, but they successfully put more pressure on their opponent.

"Keng!"

Frost pulled out her Severing Beauty Sword and dashed forward. In the next moment, an explosive crack sounded out and the power shook the entire valley. A pile of Beast Tamer corpses flew up into the air. At this point, Frost wasn't reserving anymore of her power. She put all her might into killing these Hybrid Demons. She understood that we were quickly losing soldiers and the 3000 that can fight now would quickly turn into 500. If she didn't try hard, then Dragon City would really fall.

"Kong kong kong..."

A team of Beast Tamer Cavalrymen penetrated through the NPC army and finally noticed our existence. They turned around and charged straight towards us.

"Keng keng..."

I whipped out my Dragon Reservoir and Zhen Yue Sword and stood in front of our players with a calm voice, "Do not underestimate our enemy but do not be afraid of them. Create 200 man teams and take on one of the Beast Tamers. After all, it isn't a BOSS, so its health won't be more than 1,000,000. All heavy armors in the first row, hold them off and kill them. No matter how many come,

we kill them all!”

Everyone’s eyes were wide as they nervously began to shift and prepare for battle.

“Kill!”

Wang Jian and Li Mu all began the first attack. [Halberd Whirlwind] and [Covering Sword Slash] both flashed in the crowd of monsters. I then activated [Great Realm of Desolation]+[Blade Spin] to attract the aggro of two of the cavalymen. One after another the damage numbers popped up——

“5128 ! ”

“5532 ! ”

“4917 ! ”

.....

Thankfully my attack power really helped out.

“Die!”

The two Beast Tamers raised their long swords and their [Sword Break] hit me square in the chest. Then they each dealt a normal attack. My health quickly fell at a shocking rate——

“5272 ! ”

“5721 ! ”

“4529 ! ”

“4417 ! ”

.....

Then, two tigers roared and pounced right onto me. My health nearly disappeared in the one go. I immediately activated a [Cleansing Rain] and then received another heal from Darling Duck. My own Flaming Tiger roared at the sight that its owner had received such damage. It swung its claws and activated [Flame Claw]+[Burstfire Raid] right at the two tigers. However, there was still a gap between their strengths after after an exchange of 2 – 3 blows, my tiger was left with critical health. However, it didn’t run away with its tail between its



legs and [Flame Armor] activated as the tiger continued to bite at the enemy, all the way until it was cut down by one of the Beast Tamer.

I was feeling a little annoyed. My little tiger's rank just wasn't high enough, but its AI wasn't low. It did all that it could to protect its owner. It had the loyalty but not the strength.

Both of my swords sliced out, continuously cutting into the two Beast Tamers. I charged forward and herded them away, not letting them get near the group of [Zhang Long] players behind me. I put all my strength into holding them back, even though it took all of my energy just to keep them here. On the side, [Zhan Long]'s heavy armor players were all getting killed. These Beast Tamer Cavalrymen dealt 15,000 damage with every swing. Not being able to hold them off was normal. All they could do was to hold off these Level 5 Hybrid Demons in exchange of their lives.

"Kong kong..."

When the Beast Tamer Cavalrymen's health dropped to 50%, a roar sounded from behind it. A fierce tiger leapt over and turned into a ray of gold that was absorbed into the Beast Tamer. A golden tiger insignia glowed above his armor — —

"Di!"

Battle Notification: Please note, the Beast Tamer Cavalryman used the skill, [Fantastical Beast Armor]. Attack and Defense have all increased by 30%

.....

The situation was truly getting bad. Just one [Sword Break] was enough to practically kill Wan Er, Wang Jian, Li Mu, and Old K. All of [Zhan Long]'s top tier experts could only roam the battlefields to avoid attacks. Qing Qian and Wolf were both light armor classes and so they didn't even dare get close. Even the Archers' stuns had a lower chance of success. For a Lv 90+ player to try and stun a 119 Hybrid Demon was extremely hard...

This was just as though our battle power was cut by ten fold. The Beast Tamer Cavalrymen's attack power was just too strong. No matter how well our team worked together or how great our maneuvers were, we were still suffering

great losses. Within an hour, [Zhan Long]’s 1500 players quickly dropped to only around 700, and the death rate wasn’t slowing down. It seemed as though everyone had a premonition of defeat and death hanging over their head. Even the guild chat didn’t have a single smile or laugh.

In the distance, [Prague] could only retreat to the southern side of the city. There was already no more road for them to retreat back to. Yan Zhao Warrior and only around 200+ soldiers left, they had no choice but to launch a counter attack.

[Vanguard] was slightly better off. Jian Feng Han had pretty good stats and could hold off a Level 5 Hybrid Demon. Plus, Simple dealt a lot of damage. Like this they managed to hold their formation.

.....

“Ahhh...”

Screams of pain filled the field and blood flowed freely along the city wall. The Desolate Dragon soldiers no longer could take this much damage.

Luo Lin roared and charged forward with an open palm. He then suddenly spun around and Dou Qi swirled around as he shouted, “[Tempest]!

“Hong!”

A tempest began to rise around Luo Lin and all of the Beast Tamer Cavalrymen were swept up by the wind and crushed to pieces. Even under an environment where he didn’t have a weapon, Luo Lin was still able to deal so much damage, but at a cost. His eyes were a crimson red and he huffed. He continuously punched at one of the dead Beast Tamer’ bodies and shouted, “Die Die Die! You bastard, don’t even think about touching a single inch of my home. Don’t you dare!”

.....

In the sky, a cold laugh rang out, “Haha, is that so? Luo Lin, you look so impressive right now....”

# Chapter 574 Luo Lin's Transformation

“Huh?”

Luo Lin suddenly looked up, his clear eyes widening, “D\*mm\*t, Lin Han!?”

As the clouds parted, Lin Han appeared in the sky, wielding a sickle in his hand. Of the Fourteen Kings of the Northern Hybrid Demons, he was ranked the eleventh strongest. In addition, the last time they'd fought the Hybrid Demons at the Graveyard of the Heroes, it had been Lin Han who'd defeated Luo Lin's Ba Huang City and Dragon City armies. He'd even nearly killed Luo Lin. Luo Lin would probably never forget this debt for the rest of his life.

Lin Han smiled and said, “What's wrong, didn't you obtain Despair? How come you're battling without any weapons? Ha ha, is our honorable Ba Huang City's king not even fit to wield a weapon? Or is it possible that a new fighting style has become popular on the Southern continent?”

Luo Lin silently stood at the edge of the ruined wall, glaring at his enemy. He slowly drew out his words, “Lin Han, did you come here with the sole purpose of ridiculing me? Come, if you want to kill me, then come at me!”

Lin Han made an exaggerated bow and said, “Oh, your honorable highness, please don't misunderstand, I don't want to take your life—that's just too boring! I'm just testing you to see just what the situation on the southern continent is. Just what kind of fighting styles are popular? I've heard that you've built some kind of Magic and Martial Arts Academy in every single kingdom, and use that to train your kingdom's young talents. I've even heard... that not only does this Academy of yours teach poor commoners, but also royal nobles. Is this information correct?”

Luo Lin grit his teeth, “Why are you asking about these things?”

Lin Han licked his lips and smiled. “It's nothing, just that I haven't gone past Dragon City in over ten thousand years. I'm starting to miss the taste of the woman heroes. Doesn't your Magic and Martial Arts Academy have a lot of naive cute girls who have little to no skill, but still go out onto the battlefield to

cut down monsters? How about you introduce me to one? Oh wait... no... no, one isn't enough. Why don't you introduce me to a hundred? You are, after all, the prince. You shouldn't be short on women, right?"

Luo Lin's body trembled with anger. Dou Qi began to revolve around his fist. He looked up at Lin Han and roared, "B\*st\*rd! Don't you even think about setting foot in my homeland. I, Luo Lin, swear that I, even if it means fighting with my life on the line, won't allow you and your scum to violate Dragon City with your presence—no matter the cost!

"Alright... "

Lin Han raised his thumb for Luo Lin and chuckled, "Then let me see what it means for a Ba Huang City prince to fight with everything on the line!"

As he said this, Lin Han raised his hand and stowed his sickle, Misfortune, on his back. He then raised both of his arms into the air and smiled. "Seeing as you don't have a weapon, I won't bully you. Here here, come, I'll triumph over you with just my bare hands. I wish to see just how this graceful and honorable prince is able to protect the women of his homeland. Or, will it be that we Northern Hybrid Demons, who've trained for thousands of years, invade Ba Huang City and r\*pe your beautiful women!"

Luo Lin raised his fist, and with a "Hong!", flames burst forth. Without another word, he jumped forward and threw a punch towards the enemy.

Lin Han smiled and swung his arm forwards. With a "Peng!" he blocked Luo Lin's attack. He then charged forwards and raised both of his fists to attack. Luo Lin didn't have a chance to guard against it, and quickly dodged to the side, only to receive a punch from behind. His body flew into the sky. Dou Qi revolved around him, halting the momentum of his fall. He then gathered his power into the palm of his hand as he grabbed onto the air, and threw a fierce kick!

"Peng!"

His combat boot struck towards Lin Han's neck, but didn't deal heavy enough damage. Instead, Lin Han smiled, grabbed onto Luo Lin's leg, and immediately brought down his right elbow. We all heard the "Ka Cha!" sound—Luo Lin's leg had been broken!

“Ahhhh.....”

A scream of pain rose up into the sky. However, Luo Lin didn't retreat. With a wave of his arm, flames began to rise around his arm, and he threw a flaming cut out. At the same time, he dealt a kick with his left leg. “Pa!”, he forced Lin Han to retreat. Although he did this, his situation wasn't much better. Once Lin Han had retreated, he immediately charged forward again. With a slide, he slammed a punch into Luo Lin's shoulder!

“Peng!”

Luo Lin roared in pain, and fell from the sky, right into Dragon City. Even though it had been a bare handed duel, there was still a large gap in their strength. Luo Lin had close to Holy Domain power, while Lin Han was at least at the peak of Holy Domain. He'd even obtained the power of a demi-god. One could just imagine how much of a gap this represented.

.....

Dust flew into the sky. A group of Desolate Dragon soldiers dashed forwards to where Luo Lin had landed and shouted, “Your majesty! Your majesty!”

On the city wall, Frost unsheathed her Severing Beauty Sword and charged straight out, sending out a [Razor Rotation].

“Oh?”

Lin Han turned around and was hit by Frost's cut. A small amount of blood flowed from his shoulder. The attack had broken his defense. He smiled. “Well lookie here, the commander of the Dragon City knights has gotten better! Hei hei, you look pretty nice. How about you return to the Hybrid Demon Territory with me, and I'll train you some more. Maybe you'll become a strong warrior who achieves the level of a demi-god, or maybe you'll even become the 15th king!”

Frost tightened her grip on her Severing Beauty Sword, her voice shaking. Despair was in her eyes. “Either you kill me, or, or I swear on my life that I'll kill each and every one of you Hybrid Demon Kings!”

“Ha ha ha....”

Lin Han raised his head and laughed, “I admire your courage and charm. Unfortunately, you’re just a little girl whose level is still that of a Sword Saint. Who cares if you’re a little stronger? Here, seeing as you want to die, I shan’t disobey the request of such a beauty...”

As he said this, Lin Han raised his hand, and power began to collect around it, and then proceeded to wrap around Frost. She was stunned. She couldn’t move at all! Lin Han, on the other hand, was gathering flames in his hand. This was a deadly hit that was like that of a god. If it hit her, Frost would be a goner.

“Motherf\*cker!”

I cursed out loud and raised my sword. With two or three strides, I charged up the city wall. Behind me, I heard Wan Er shout, “Pig you dumb\*\*\*, don’t be rash!”

“Shua....”

I leapt up into the air, turned around, and raised my left arm. [Dragon’s Hook] activated, and with a “Sou!” it pierced right through Lin Han’s arm. I then dragged it towards me. At that moment, Lin Han missed his mark, and Frost was thrown to the ground from the shockwave of the attack. Lin Han then grabbed the Dragon’s Hook and threw a heavy kick right towards my chest!

“Peng!”

I heard my ribs crack under his foot as I shot out like a bullet, right back towards Dragon City!

“Hong!

“27179 ! ”

.....

“F\*ck....”

Wolf took a deep breath, “Just a simple kick was nearly able to kill Brother Xiao Yao. Just what’s with his power?”

In the sky, Lin Han coldly laughed at me, “Little ant, don’t be in a rush to die. Your life will be mine sooner or later.”

Lin Han then rose back into the sky. He raised his knee and, “Peng!”, kicked Luo Lin, who’d just been helped up by his underlings, back into the ground. Directly afterwards, he dealt another two punches into Luo Lin’s shoulder. He chuckled, “Luo Lin, oh Luo Lin. You useless trash that doesn’t deserve to be a prince. How about this. Once I’ve finished conquering Ba Huang City, I’ll let you be the flag bearer of the rear camp. I’ll even get women especially for you. How does that sound?”

Luo Lin flipped around and threw a punch into Lin Han’s abdomen, roaring, “If you want to kill me, then just do it!”

“Is that so? Looks like you don’t want to be a flagbearer... then go ahead and die!”

Lin Han raised his iron arm. Necromancy began to swirl around his fist. Once this attack landed, Luo Lin would be fated to die.

“Brother!”

In the distance, Angela shouted. “Keng!” the Destroyer struck Lin Han’s shoulder, sending the Hybrid Demon King retreating. Lin Han halted his momentum, and shouted, “Oh? Is this the legendary Destroyer? Ha ha ha, even though its strength is far inferior to Despair, it’s still a godly weapon...little girl, what’s your name?”

Angela grit her teeth and spat, “B\*st\*rd, shut up!”

Lin Han grew furious, and began to charge right at her. Suddenly, a Sword Spirit Dragon Rider flew over. He greeted Lin Han and said, “My lord, Heaven’s Blade – Da Lun has sent a message. We’ve suffered a powerful counter attack from Fort Tornado, and Lord Gwen has suffered great losses. Therefore, Heaven’s Blade – Da Lun asks that you provide reinforcements at Fort Tornado!”

“This...”

Lin Han clenched his hands and barked, “I got it. Seeing that Lord Da Lun has personally sent the command, I’ll obey. Let’s go, follow me to bring in reinforcements! “

“Yes!”

Lin Han turned around and glanced at Angela, Frost, and Luo Lin, and smiled. "We'll... let's play again later!"

.....

We watched as Lin Han flew away. All of us couldn't help but let out a sigh of relief. If Lin Han were to personally lead an army of strong enemies, then we wouldn't have been able to last for even 48 hours. Now that Lin Han had left, we still had a sliver of a chance at victory.

With the help of the others, Luo Lin finally managed to rise up. He wiped away the blood on his mouth, and put a hand on the halberd of one of the knights, "Let me borrow this, thanks...."

The knight was stunned, "Whatever your majesty needs..."

On the wall, the Beast Tamer Cavalrymen were still wreaking havoc. However, now that Luo Lin had taken severe damage, everyone was getting more and more nervous, and the soldiers were losing faith.

One of the commander level NPCs walked over and greeted Luo Lin, "Your highness, why don't we head back and rest. Let's have the Saint Healer cast a spell on your injury. Otherwise, you won't be able to battle any longer."

Luo Lin's eyes carried a cold glare in them as he said, "No, we can't waste any more time. Lu Ge, immediately gather the Purple Star cavalrymen. There should be around 20,000, right?"

"Yes, your highness. What do we need to do?" Lu Ge asked.

Luo Lin smiled. "Take the 20,000 cavalrymen, and follow me to Hunter's Valley!"

"Your highness..... Hunter's Valley...that's where the royal lord is at. There's only 5000+ Fierce Tiger injured cavalry there. What are we going to do? These 20,000 cavalrymen should stay on the city wall to help with the battle situation.... These are our last elites..." Lu Ge didn't continue his questions.

Luo Lin turned around and coldly glared at his subordinate, "Heed my command and immediately bring me the troops!"

"Yes sir!"



# Chapter 575 Bloody Holy Domain

After hastily helping Luo Lin down the mountain, the NPCs left, taking a large number of elite warriors with them. They left the battle situation to Frost and Su Ke.

.....

“That’s not right...” I furrowed my brows, puzzled.

Qing Qian was stunned, “What’s not right?”

I replied, “Something just doesn’t feel right. Why would Luo Lin choose to go to Hunters Valley at this time. It’s clear that he’s going after Despair.... After suffering that kind of shame over and over again he’s about to snap. Luo Lin’s dream ever since he was a child has been shaken and swayed time and time again. I suspect that for the sake of obtaining a greater power, Luo Lin will do something unreasonable. Wan Er, what do you think?”

The beautiful little miss bit her lip and then tugged on my hand, “Don’t say any more. Pig, you, Qing Qian and I should go down to Hunters Valley to check it out!”

“Ok!”

I handed the command of battle to Li Mu and Matcha and the three of us hurried down the blood spattered path to the city.

.....

The Hunters Valley was on the border of Firestone Canyon and was less than a kilometer away from Dragon City. On the way, we saw injured soldiers from Ba Huang City struggling down the path. In addition, there were a number of soldiers pushing crossbow carts and blades up to the city. Below the city, there was a group of Purple Star elites congregating. Luo Lin didn’t even have the chance to heal his injuries. He just changed his armor and rode on a battle horse. Under his command, the army charged towards the Hunter’s Valley.

“Sha sha....”

I took the two beautiful Vice Guild Master's into the forest. The two girls used [Stealth] while I hid in the grass with [Camouflage]. We followed them all along the path to Hunters Valley. On the valley's floor, everywhere we looked there were injured soldiers crying out in pain. This battle had affected Ba Huang City too harshly.

At the center of the main area, a broken flag rested on the shoulder of a general covered in blood. Right nearby there was a simple and crude tent. Luo Lei leaned against Despair and sat on the ground, tired and weary. There wasn't a sliver of the kingly presence he displayed before. The Desolate Dragon Commander Forgotten Sea was nursing his shoulder where his arm got cut off. He leaned against a tree and received a healing spell from one of the Saint Healers.

"Your highness...."

Forgotten Sea muttered in grief, "Will Ba Huang City be unable to escape this catastrophe? How about, we go to the Tian Ling empire and ask for help? Once the Tian Ling Empire sends out their masters, then we'll be able to guard Dragon City. As long as Dragon City exists, then our Northern Gates will never have to open, and these Hybrid Demons won't be able to cross over the Ice Ridge Mountains."

Luo Lei shook his head, "No, my whole life I have never bowed my head to that old geezer Rob. Besides, he's probably holding a grudge against me over that past battle. Against me and against Ba Huang City. I will never bow my head to the Tian Lin Empire, or else Ba Huang City will only become a servant to the Tian Lin Empire. I won't do anything that brings shame to our ancestors."

Forgotten Sea tightened his grip, "But your highness. We've already obtained Despair. Lin Han won't forgive us! Plus... this Despair.... It's a double edged sword. You can probably tell too, the Prince finds the sword extremely important and desires it."

"Is that so?"

Luo Lei wryly smiled. "This is a sword representing the royal power. When I denied him, was he going to snatch it away from me? Besides, an evil demon hides within Despair. Lin Er is too young. He will definitely become possessed by

the spirit and become a puppet. I will not let him go down that path of no return.”

Forgotten Sea muttered, “Alright, I hope that your choice was the right one!”

.....

Right at that moment, a messenger quickly dashed forward, “Your highness, the prince Luo Lin has brought 20,000 soldiers to come and greet you!”

“Huh?”

Luo Lei was stunned, “He dares trespass on military grounds without my permission?”

“I do not know....”

“Let him in!”

“Yes!”

Not long after Luo Lin brought a group of his personal advisors and walked into the valley. His body was covered in injuries and he tightened his fists as he walked up to his father and said, “Father...”

“Lin Er, what is the meaning of this?” Luo Lei was stunned.

“Lin Han came by.” Luo Lin softly said.

“He....”

Before Luo Lei could even finish his question, Luo Lin suddenly knelt to his knees, his face filled with grievance as he said, “Father, I, Luo Lin, implore you, to give me Despair. As long as I have despair then I’ll be able to block Lin Han’s attack. As long as I have Despair, I’ll be able to let Ba Huang City avoid this disaster and I’ll be able to protect the tens of thousands of citizens behind us. Father... I’ll only use Despair this time. Once the Hybrid Demons have been forced back, then I will return it without any complaints....”

As he was talking, Luo Lin trembled. A pair of clear tears rolled from his eyes as he begged in a trembling voice, “Father, I cannot take this kind of shame again. I do not want to be like a fish waiting for its death when I face that b\*st\*rd Lin Han. I am not willing to see the young men of Ba Huang City get

killed or the women being r\*ped. I don't want to see all life on this earth be burned to the ground. I want to kill all of the Hybrid Demons and send them all back to Hell. Father, I beg of you..."

Luo Lei shakily stood up and rested his hand on his son's shoulder, "Lin Er... this Despair, just how well do you understand it? When I first touched it, I could hear the cry of despair. When I felt its sharpness, I could feel just how wild it was. Lin Er, this Despair isn't as simple as you think it is. I do not want you to turn into a fighting demon. I don't want that kind of an outcome, do you understand?"

Luo Lin looked up and softly said, "Father, I don't care about anything else. I just care about protecting my people and my home. That is enough!"

Luo Lei took a deep breath, "No matter what, I cannot give you Despair. I really can't..."

"Father!"

Luo Lin strode forward and said, "My attitude will remain the same. No matter what, I have to bring back Despair. I will use that sword to cut off Lin Han's head, whether you will let me or not!"

"Lin Er, what are you planning?" Luo Lei roared.

On the side, Forgotten Sea raised his sword and said, "Luo Lin, don't forget, you are one of Ba Huang City's princes. Are you not going to obey your orders?"

Luo Lin laughed coldly and looked at Forgotten Sea, "There's too many useless trash at Father's side. It is only because of this that he has been too cowardly to advance. He doesn't even dare face Lin Han and the other demons. However, I can. When I have Despair, I will bring Lin Han's head to father. Afterwards, whether it is cutting my head off or burning me, that is something for you guys to discuss among yourselves."

Forgotten Sea stabbed forward and said, "You dare rebel?!"

Luo Lin roared, "Lu Ge, what are you waiting for?"

On the side, Lu Ge suddenly pulled out his sword and hacked towards Forgotten Sea's remaining arm. Luo Lin quickly kicked away Forgotten Sea's

sword. Then, with a sweep, his sword connected and hit Forgotten Sea's neck. "Ka Cha!" The sword sliced clean through.

In the next moment, Forgotten Sea's eyes widened and his head rolled off. "Pa Ta!" it hit the ground and blood splattered all over the ground.

.....

"Ah!"

Luo Lei cried out and roared, "Luo Lin, you unfilial son. What are you doing!?"

As he said that, Luo Lei raised Despair in a fit and "Pu Chi!" pierced it through Luo Lin's armor, right into chest. "Si si" the sword began to drink up Luo Lin's blood. Luo Lin then grabbed the blade and slowly pulled it, thrusting it further into his body. Blood rushed to his eyes and he revealed a cruel smile. It was as though he was a completely different person as he glared at his father, "Now, Despair is mine...."

Luo Lei was stunned, "You?"

Luo Lin's eyes were cruel as he quietly said, "Old geezer, your dynasty has come to an end. From now on, Ba Huang City will be under my rule. I've already returned the favor of life to you. You are no longer my father and we have no relation left!"

As he said that, Luo Lin suddenly raised his arm. Flames began to rise and he threw a fireball at Luo Lei's shoulder. "Hong!" He'd been ripped into two pieces and then burned until only dust was left.

"Sha sha...."

Luo Lin grabbed the hilt of Despair and slowly pulled it out. The blade was red hot. This sinister weapon had already become a part of Luo Lin. Furthermore, Luo Lin's Dou Qi was also starting to transform. He smiled and energy began to gather around him. He laughed, "Ah, what a free feeling. Is this what Holy Domain energy is like?"

Finally, Luo Lin had reached the Holy Domain!

.....

"D\*mn it...."

All of the Fierce Tiger soldiers pulled out their swords and roared, “Luo Lin, you rebel. You actually dare kill our king? You killed your own father! You are a demon. Hurry and kill him!”

Luo Lin looked up at the group of people, his eyes didn’t carry any emotion, “Lu Ge, you know what to do. Kill them. Do not leave any survivors. Make it look as though the Barbarians had invaded the camp!”

Lu Ge nodded, “Yes your highness!”

The Purple Star army massacred everyone in the valley and screams of death rose up into the sky.

.....

Looking at the situation in the distance, we were all helpless. All we could do was watch the cruel situation unfold from our hiding places.

Wan Er’s small shoulders shook and her voice trembled, “Luo Lin, that bastard, he actually fell to the dark side. And.... and killed his own father! He even killed all 5000 soldiers from the Fierce Tiger army. It is just too cruel....”

I gritted my teeth and said, “Wan Er, Qing Qian, we cannot be too loud. We’ll quickly head back to Dragon City. We must tell this news to Angela and Frost. We cannot let them fall under Luo Lin’s tricks. Otherwise, Ba Huang City really will fall and all of the players of Ba Huang City will have nowhere to go.”

“Yes!”

The three of us carefully left the Hunters Valley and sprinted back to Dragon City. In the distance, I could see Frost killing a group of Beast Tamers in the distance.

I rushed over and shouted, “Frost!”

The beautiful master knocked away two of the heavy knights and smiled to me, “You’re back. I was worried that you were killed by one of the Beast Tamers... that would’ve been very sad...”

I felt my heart warm up, but I couldn’t bear to be the harbinger of bad news!

.....

I was afraid, that I would lose her.

# Chapter 576 Heavenly Flame Tiger

“Sha sha...”

I stepped onto the snowy grounds on the city wall. I looked up at the sky as snowflakes continuously fell from the sky. Dragon City was in the middle of a blizzard, just as I had left it. I looked at the beautiful face in front of me, but I kept feeling like it was about to disappear right before me.

“Luo Lin...” I started, gripping my Dragon Reservoir Sword. “Luo Lin has killed King Luo Lei, General Forgotten Sea and has taken Despair. He’s already commanded the Purple Star Army to rebel against Ba Huang City. Frost, you need to be careful of him!”

“What?”

Frost took a deep breath and stood there in shock, “No... no that’s not possible. Luo Lin would never do something like that. It’s not.... Where did you get this news?”

I reached out and pointed to the eastern side of the city, “From the Hunters Valley, just beside Firestone Canyon. The army that camped there with Duke Luo Lei has already been completely slaughtered. This, I saw all of this happen with my own eyes.”

Frost shook her head in denial, “No... no that’s impossible... Luo Lin does everything for the sake of humans. He’s even willing to forfeit his life. He, why would he do something like destroy Ba Huang City? Besides, Duke Luo Lei is Luo Lin’s own father....”

I walked forward and put a hand on Frost’s shoulder. I then turned her around and looked at her square in the face, “You must believe me, just this once. Do not trust Luo Lin any longer. I do not want anything bad to happen to you. Frost, in Dragon City, you are my everything. I do not want to lose you.”

Frost stared at me blankly. She suddenly started violently coughing, hacking up blood as she gripped her fist and softly said, “I.... I can’t believe it. I really can’t believe you...”



I grit my teeth and said, "It's very simple. You just have to send someone to check out the situation in Hunters Valley and you'll know the truth! I think, Luo Lin will bring Despair here very soon. Frost, you must be cautious of him. I will stay at your side and protect you, using everything I have."

Frost nodded and looked into the distance. She then roared, "Qing Luo, take ten riders and rush to Hunters Valley to check out Duke Luo Lei's situation. Make it fast!"

A female general of Dragon City leapt onto her horse and raised a beaten longsword, "Team six, follow me!"

Frost looked at her for a long time and said, "Qing Luo!"

"What is it my Lady?" The female general Qing Luo asked.

Frost hesitated and said, "Be careful. Do as much as you can to cover up your tracks and don't get discovered. Hunters Valley, may be more dangerous than we think. Also, do not trust anyone. Once you've received your information, report back to me."

"Yes my lord, do not worry!"

A group of cavalrymen dashed out and disappeared into the wilderness.

.....

The 19th wave of Beast Tamer Cavalrymen had almost all been killed. Angela gripped her Destroyer as she stood on the City wall and fought side by side with Frost. Behind her, the Blizzard Army and Desolate Dragon Army were currently immersed in the bloody battle. The last batch of Beast Tamer Cavalrymen were finally scattered apart and been killed one by one.

"Careful...."

I went back to the [Zhan Long] camp and said, "This time, not only do we have to deal with the BOSS, we're going to have to deal with Luo Lin as well!"

Wolf asked, "Brother Xiao Yao, has Luo Lin really changed?"

"Yes." I nodded and said, "The Desolate Dragon commander Forgotten Sea was killed by Luo Lin. He also took Despair and burned Luo Lei to a crisp. Now he's slaughtering all 5000+ Fierce Tiger soldiers that are in Hunters Valley and

capturing their spirits. After that, Luo Lin's injuries will be completely healed and his strength will be higher up in the Holy Domain. Furthermore, he's destroyed all evidence. Angela and Frost may not trust the word of a player like me. That makes this a little hard, since we need to protect Frost and Angela, the two important NPCs. They are now Ba Huang City's most precious treasures."

"Gu Dong" Li Mu gulped and said, "Mother... Luo Lin that b\*st\*rd, he really wasn't any good. For the sake of a weapon, he would even kill his own father. He's practically just like Jian Feng Han..."

Not far in the distance, Jian Feng Han raised his eyebrows, "Li Mu, what do you mean by that?"

"Nothing at all!" Li Mu grinned, "I'm just saying that the [Vanguard] Guild Master Jian Feng Han is very decisive and wise!"

"Hmph!"

Qing Qian blinked a few times and said, "Let's get prepared now. The 19th wave BOSS is almost here. This time, Luo Lin and Luo Lei are both not present. Looks like we'll have to rely on Frost and Angela. Who knows if we can kill it this time."

I nodded and looked at my skills list. I quickly set up three [Azure Dragon Crossbows]. As for the level 100 Mohist Skill—[Purple Lightning Cannon], it wasn't of much use in this situation. The Purple Lightning Cannon used a heavenly power to destroy a city wall. It dealt extreme damage to buildings. However, using it on BOSSes wasn't as useful.

.....

"Kong kong...."

A cry broke through the clouds. We all looked up to see what was happening. There didn't appear to be anything in the sky, however an enormous bear started come out of the mountain forests and Ran Min was stunned, "Is this a wave of BOSSes? Why is there a bear? It doesn't look as though it has a high AI...."

"No..." Wan Er shook her head and pointed at the bear's back, "Look at the bear's back. There's a person sitting on it. The BOSS should be him."

I nodded, “Yup. Beast Tamers, this is a Lv 119 Divine Tier BOSS, the 19th wave of Hybrid Demons. I can’t see it’s stats. I can’t even see its skills. We need to be careful....”

“Yea. Plus, it has a ball on its head...” Wang Jian squinted at the BOSS, “It’s too far. Even Brother Xiao Yao can’t see it’s introduction?”

“Yea. Let’s wait a little more....”

“Alright!”

The wild bear roared and swiped at the Dragon City wall, beginning its climb. Once he made it onto the wall, he roared again and slashed with its claws. A wave of flames swept through the crowd of people and a whole team of soldiers were burned to crispy chips. That bear’s attack was incredibly terrifying. The man that sat on its back wore leather armor and carried a purple colored ball. His red eyes glanced around at the surroundings and laughed, “Ah, the human world. I’ve finally arrived. You petty and lowly humans and moon elves, accept your divine punishment!”

Finally, I was able to see the BOSS’ introduction. It truly did look above normal  
——

[Beast Tamer Adolf] (Divine Tier BOSS)

Level: 119

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: ???

Introduction: Adolf grew up in the wild ever since he was a baby. He had an innate ability to survive and spent most of his time traveling in the mountains. Later, by accident, Adolf received a magic ball. He used the magic ball to exert control over a large numbers of animals. Furthermore, he could freely summon any beast to come assist him during battle. This magic ball was originally the core of the ancient magical beast the Kirin. When Lin Han found out, he immediately invited Adolf into the Hybrid Demon Army, becoming one of its

strongest branches.

.....

“Is Adolf really strong?” Wan Er asked with her eyes widened.

I shook my head, “I’m not sure, I can’t see his stats!”

Li Mu said, “Let’s not scout it out, in case we get immediately killed....”

Qing Qian smiled. “Agreed!”

.....

This time, a group of NPC soldiers already charged forward under Angela’s command. The BOSS then gave a command and the bear slapped away all of the soldiers.

“B\*st\*rd!”

Angela was enraged. She raised her Destroyer and it seemed to grow as she threw a flaming attack right into the Adolf’s shoulder!

“Peng!”

“712267 ! ”

An enormous damage number flew up, shocking everybody. Just when did the Ba Huang City princess get this strong.

“Ahhhh....”

Adolf shrieked in pain. Furiously he threw a punch at Angela. “Peng!” She flew back from the force, but didn’t seem to take any injury. On the side, Frost’s [Razor Rotation] flew out and pierced right through the BOSS’ body. After spinning and stabbing three times in a row, the BOSS’ health instantly fell. Looks like this BOSS wasn’t up to the level of a 19th wave BOSS!

“What’s going on?” Old K widened his eyes, “This BOSS sucks way too much. Can he not even beat Angela?”

Wolf shook his head, “I don’t know, I don’t get it....”

.....

Right as everyone was puzzled over the situation, Adolf revealed a cruel smile

and wiped away the blood on the front of his chest. He then raised the magic ball in his hands and shouted, “Icy Spirit sleeping beneath the earth, heed my command and awaken. Rip apart the enemies before me and command respect from every living thing on this earth——Ice Domain Wolf!”

“Kong kong....”

The roars of a wolf sounded out and the snow in the air began to coagulate, creating some kind of transportation circle. An enormous snowy colored wolf leapt out from the circle and raised its claws right at Angela. “Pu Chi!” Angela was forced backwards and she even spat out blood. The armor guarding her chest was practically crushed. This Ice Domain Wolf’s close combat attack was far higher than Adolf’s strength!

That wasn’t even the half of it though. Adolf raised his magic ball again and roared, “Sleeping in the Sea of Fire, Flame God, heed my command and awaken. Rip apart the enemies before you and command respect from all living things on this planet——Heavenly Flame Tiger!”

“Kong...

The earth around us began to shake and a fierce tiger appeared. It leapt out and swept its claws at Frost. At that moment, a hexagram appeared on its attack. Frost quickly raised her arm to form an icy shield. “Peng!” the attack landed and forced her to retreat several steps. Severing Beauty swept out and cut through the tiger’s right leg. At the same time, she was hit by one of his sharp claws in her shoulder. Wu wu, she cried out as she was thrown backward a dozen meters. She threw her Severing Beauty out, piercing the Heavenly Flame Tiger’s chest. She then opened her hand and shouted, “[Ice Spear]!”

“Peng!”

The Heavenly Flame Tiger’s fire was extinguished and it was frozen into a statue.

However, the battle was far from over. As a godly summoner, Adolf could continuously summon any beast he wanted. Within the blink of an eye, fourteen beasts appeared.

.....

“Charge, we’ll hold one of them off!”

I raised my sword and charged over. We needed to help Frost divide the attacks. She already took on some injuries and wouldn’t be able to withstand such a concentrated attack.

# Chapter 577 Dragon Turtle Armor

“Keng!”

A summoned ice bear slammed its claws onto Matcha’s shield, throwing [Zhan Long]’s number one female Knight careening backwards. Claw marks were even left behind on her shield. The beasts that this beast tamer summoned were just too strong. They were all Divine Tier BOSSes. No wonder Frost and Angela couldn’t hold them off.

I charged forward in a zigzag line and spun around. I threw a slash with my Zhen Yue Sword, hitting the Ice Bear’s forehead. Even if it was a Divine Tier BOSS, it couldn’t ignore my combat power. The Ice Bear’s enormous body swayed to the right. I had already swept out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and “Pa!” slammed him back towards the left. I then kicked out my battle boot, hitting the BOSS square in the jaw. It was just like a real life battle. Even Yan Zhao Warrior was shaking his head and commenting, “Li Xiao Yao’s battle capabilities, aren’t as simple as being familiar with the game mechanics any longer....”

Jian Feng Han grunted and didn’t say anything. He wasn’t an average person either when it came to battling. He was after all the heir to the Mu Rong Family in Hang Zhou and had been learning boxing techniques ever since he was a child. Even though he was only in the Royal Air level, he was still considered pretty strong for his generation. He was still far behind compared to someone like me who has had years of life and death battle experience.

After all, without experiencing a battle with your life on the line, how could you truly understand the principles of martial arts?

.....

“Roar....”

The Ice Bear swung its sharp claws at [Zhan Long]’s players and dealt severe damage as I couldn’t completely drag its aggro. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K were on either side, trying to hold off his attacks and decrease the number of

players that were harmed. However, this strategy did not save everyone and there were still players who cried out in pain as they were killed under the claws and teeth of the enormous BOSS.

In the sky, two phoenixes screeched. Angela raised her Destroyer and pointed it at the sky, "Shoot them down!"

A group of Blizzard's archers all raised their long bows and aimed at the phoenixes, dealing a volley of arrows. They pierced through the enormous bird's wings, but didn't manage to kill it. That only angered the bird. It screeched once more and dove downwards, throwing a wave of flames right across the city walls while the other monsters continued their massacre. The Beast Tamer Adolf didn't have much power himself, but he managed to summon 14 beasts at once, pushing the Ba Huang City and Dragon City NPCs into a corner.

Arrows and spells flung about and after 7 minutes, Wan Er and I finally brought down the Ice Bear.

In the distance, I could see Frost's beautiful figure flashing around in the sky. "Pu Chi!" Her Severing Beauty slashed through the neck of the Fire Wolf. Dou Qi funneled into the blade and the Fire Wolf's body was completely captured in ice. Frost then dealt a light punch, breaking the wolf into a million pieces.

"Wu..."

She looked at the cut on her shoulder and raised her elegant eyebrows. She then looked up, right as one of the phoenixes charged right towards her. She didn't waste a single moment and raised her blade. Dou Qi rose around her and she suddenly flew forward. She threw a slash at the bird, creating a blade of energy that cut the phoenix in half.

"Peng!"

Frost had killed two of the beasts at once but she took an attack from behind. It was the Heavenly Flame Tiger. She coughed up some blood and slowly raised her Severing Beauty while turning to face that tiger. Frost gritted her teeth and raised her left fist. Frosty energy and blood swirled in the air around it and she threw the punch forward, making the Tiger cry out in pain as it retreated. A group of NPC soldiers then chased after it and hacked it to death.



That was [Ice Punch], one of Frost's strongest skills.

.....

"Angela!"

Frost looked at the princess on the wall and commanded, "Take some people to control the beasts. I'll kill Adolf. Once he's dead, he won't be able to endlessly summon beasts to help him!"

"Alright!"

Angela swung her blade and took a group of Ba Huang City Knights with her to hold off the beasts.

Frost raised the bloody sword and charged right at Adolf. The sword spun around her and she roared, "Adolf, are you done playing? Right now, your evil life will come to an end!"

The veins in Adolf's eyes were popping out. He raised the magic ball above his head and roared, "Frost, you pigheaded woman. You're just looking to die!"

"Keng!"

Severing Beauty cut right into the magic ball, creating sparks. Frost slightly shifted and raised her boot, dealing a quick kick right into Adolf's chest. Frost's body was petite, but she was incredibly nimble. In addition, each attack was surrounded by Dou Qi. She threw another [Ice Punch] into Adolf's shoulder!

"Die..."

Adolf was infuriated. He opened his palm and threw a wave of flames at Frost. He did not expect however that not only did the attack not land, but a sword also pierced right into his body with a "Pu Chi!" going straight through his armor. Icy energy channeled through the sword and began freezing Adolf's body. Frost immediately pulled out the sword and Adolf screamed in pain. It looked as though he was about to collapse and he only had 10% of his health left.

Normally, when a BOSS only has 10% of his health left, he would deal his final counter attack. Instead, Adolf pulled on the reigns of his bear and turned around to escape. He knew that even with his final skill would not be enough to

kill Frost!

“Grrr!”

The bear roared and charged towards the city. Frost took some damage as well and even if she wanted to chase after it, she didn't have the strength to.

“Don't let the BOSS run away!” Wan Er pushed my shoulder, “Pig, go!”

I didn't have the time to respond and just picked up my sword, activated [Haste] and charged over. I chased him all the way to the edge of the city wall. I raised my hand and activated [Dragon's Hook]. “Sou!” it flew out and pierced right through Adolf's shoulder. The [Dragon's Hook] grabbed onto the BOSS. However, when I pulled it back, something didn't feel right. My strength wasn't comparable with that of the BOSS and so I was pulled down with the BOSS down the mountain.

“Huh?!”

I turned around and pierced my sword into the city wall. “Keng Keng!” the attempt failed and I was pulled downward. F\*ck, I was like a lamb being pulled into a group of wolves. If this continued, I was doomed!

Right at that moment, Frost jumped over the ledge and dove down to my side. Then, with her pale hand she grabbed the [Dragon's Hook] and smiled. “Idiot, how would you have the strength to control a bastard that's been training for tens of thousands of years? Let me do this. Thank you...”

As she said that, Frost grabbed the [Dragon's Hook] and turned around. Then, with a powerful tug she smiled. “Adolf, the time to go to hell has come!”

“Peng!”

I heard the Dragon's Hook tighten and Adolf cry out. He was pulled right off of his bear and hung from the city wall. At that moment, all of the Dragon Knight archers shot their arrows, turning him into a hedgehog. Frost pulled hard on the Dragon's Hook and then swung Severing Beauty, slamming Adolf back onto the wall with a “Peng!”

Frost spun around and with lightning fast speed dealt three slices. Adolf screamed and knelt to the ground. His two legs had already been broken and

his health dropped to the bottom. He turned into a blood red light that flew into the sky. His magic power had been released and like that, was killed by Frost.

“Hua la la...”

We actually got equipment, even though... it was just one piece. On top of that there was an item. D\*mm\*t, what was going on. Either we got a lot of rewards or we didn't get anything. Just what was the logic behind these drop rates?

.....

However, everyone still excitedly rushed over. After all, a Divine Tier BOSS had dropped it.

The equipment that was dropped was a chest armor. Crimson runes were etched into the edges. It looked almost like a turtle shell. With a single glance I could tell it was extremely powerful. I raised it up and waved my hand over it. The stats appeared before everyone. Li Mu, Old K, Wang Jian were all stunned. This armor really was epic——

[Dragon Turtle Battle Armor] (Divine Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 1750

Strength: +132

Stamina: +130

Agility: +125

Magic: +123

Additional: Increases the user's defense defense and magic defense by 45%

Additional: Increases the user's attack power by 25%

Additional: Increases the user's Max HP by 5500

Special: [Dragon Turtle Armor] Increases the user's defense by 2000, furthermore, it ignores 20% of the damage taken

Special: [Dragon Turtle Rage] Once activated, all defense and resistance stats increase by 50%, Furthermore, gives the user the power of the Dragon Turtle and creates a Frost Breath in a 40×40 range attack. Lasts 15 seconds and uses 90 rage

Required Level: 99

Required Class: Heavy Armor Class

.....

“Gu dong....”

Li Mu gulped and said, “This is a god tier armor...”

I nodded as I stared straight at it and said, “The person who gets this armor won’t even need to add any durability and they’ll still be as hard a rock. This armor gives a whole 3750 points in defense!!”

Matcha smiled. “The let’s roll, what are we waiting for?”

I nodded and set up the ROLL rules. All of the heavy armor players who participated in the battle could join. Only the top ten players who received the most damage could roll. There was no other way. This was a general rule that everyone in knew about. If any more people joined, then it would be too much. After all, sometimes, more than a thousand people participated in a BOSS killing. If any more participated in the ROLL then nobody would try hard to kill the BOSS. On the other hand, once the BOSS was killed then all of the guilds would only let their top three players roll to stack the quality equipment. [Vanguard] and [Flying Dragon] were those types of guilds.

.....

I gripped the dice and rolled it. It flipped a few times and landed on 11.

“Ok....”

I nodded and didn’t say anything.

Wan Er couldn’t help but smile and said, “Pig, don’t want to say anything?”

I slapped my thigh and pointed at the dice on the floor, “F\*ck, what kind of number is that. D\*mm\*t all....”

Wan Er hugged my arm and laughed, “Idiot!”

# Chapter 578 Ancient Heavenly Tiger

Finally, all of the rolls came out for the Divine Tier Armor. This was Ba Huang City's first Divine Tier armor, something that all of [Zhan Long]'s players as well as Ya Zhao, Misty Cloud, and Jian Feng Han desired. Everyone knew the importance of this armor. Whoever ended up with the armor would become a lethal weapon, a true battle machine that could not be broken——

Matcha: 17

Old K: 41

Yue Yao Yan: 10

Wang Jian: 55

Li Mu:61

.....

Finally, it was Li Mu who ended up with the armor. Yan Zhao's eyes stared so hard, they were about to roll out, "This.... What kind of a situation is this? Do [Zhan Long]'s players all have some OP luck? Everyone else only had a dozen or so points, and it ended up with someone who rolled a 61. That's just too unjust...."

Li Mu put on the Dragon Turtle Armor and pointed his blade at Yan Zhao Warrior and roared, "You middle aged man, who are you saying is trash? Tell me again, you...."

Yan Zhao squinted his eyes, "Now that your defense is so high, I can't deal with you. Just you wait until I get a Divine Tier equipment. Then we'll have a go at each other. Don't forget, you're also a middle aged man!"

Li Mu shuddered and retorted, "I'm only 25 years old, I just look a little older that's all..."

Dancing Forest said, "Give it up, Elder Li, seeing as you have the same last name as our Guild Master, we won't reveal your secret!"

Li Mu was speechless

.....

Qing Qian walked over and knelt on the ground. She raised a round ball and smiled. “Isn’t this that magic ball that the BOSS dropped?”

I was stunned, “Yea, that’s it.... The BOSS actually dropped that too. Normally, this was Adolf’s weapon. It shouldn’t have dropped. Qing Qian, why don’t you look at the stats?”

Qing Qian nodded and waved her hand over it. The stats of the magic ball appeared——

[Spirit Core] (Demon Harvest Item) : After the Ancient Kirin died, all of its magic power was accumulated in its core which was left behind. This core has an immense power. Legend has it that the core was left behind by the Kirin. That spirit beast is rumored to have the power to shake the earth!

.....

“What the f\*ck? Is that its stats?”

I was a little puzzled. I then asked Wan Er, “Little Miss, what do you think this is? Is this some kind of joke being played on [Zhan Long]? Besides.. What’s a Demon Harvest item? How do you even read that word in the middle??

Wan Er thought for a moment and said, “Demon Harvest, that’s a “nian” word, you read it with the second accent. It’s the same word as “year”, but people rarely use it. Hehe, pig, you need to read more books~”

TL Note: The “nian” word being discussed can be used to represent “year” or “harvest” but it is a relatively uncommon way of writing the word. It is normally written as 年 but in the context its written as 季

I stared and said, “Oh shut up, you just went to check the game’s dictionary. Can you deny that?!”

Wan Er’s face went completely red, “Say any more and I’ll break off all ties...”

I stayed silent.

Dong Cheng grinned, “Hey, don’t use every moment to flirt with each other, OK? Back on topic, what does a “Demon Harvest Item” mean?”

Li Mu stroked the runes etched into the edge of his Turtle Dragon Armor and

muttered, “After the previous update, Destiny’s equipment tiers changed. It was originally, Emperor, Valkyrie, Saint, Divine, and afterwards it was Epic God. However... there was a new update. Now, there’s another two equipment levels above Divine Tier. One of them is the Demon. Do you get it now?”

Dong Cheng squinted and said, “Eh? When they updated, they increased the number of tiers? D\*mn, why didn’t they just say that Shi Luo Ye messed up and is now making up for two equipment tiers?”

Wan Er immediately walked forward and covered her friend’s mouth. She then looked around and said, “Dong Cheng, watch what you say. Don’t let the author hear you, or else you’ll end up with a bad ending...”

Dong Cheng was silent.

.....

Dancing Forest said, “With the situation now, how should we deal with this Demon Tier Spirit Core? Should we ROLL for it? Or should we keep it in the guild storage and see what we do in the future?”

Qing Qian raised the core and smiled. “I don’t know, let’s ask Brother Xiao Yao. He’s the one in charge!”

I coughed, “Why are you asking me? Why don’t we raise a fire when we get back and throw it in some soup and hand everyone a bowl. That way everyone gets a pierce and nobody won’t miss out. Ha ha ha...”

Wan Er glared at me, “Either way you’re still a Guild Master. You need to be more serious, idiot...”

At that moment, the Flaming Tiger God beside me started to roar and shake its cute head as it rubbed against my leg. I could tell it wanted something from the way its eye widened and it wagged its tail.

Li Mu laughed, “Is that a tiger or a dog? Is it trying to act like one?”

I was speechless.

At that moment, the Flaming Tiger God slowly walked over to Qing Qian’s side. Qing Qian liked the tiger a lot and rubbed its head smiling, “Hi, sister Cang Tong...”



Wan Er was a little speechless, “Pig, hurry up and change the tiger’s name...”

Right as I was about to respond to her, the Flaming Tiger God suddenly growled, this time more fierce than before. He began to sniff the spirit core. All the fur on his body stood up and flamed began to whirl around him. He had entered into a battle stance. Then, he opened his wide jaws and swallowed the spirit core whole!

“Pu chi!”

The precious Spirit Core was swallowed by my Flaming Tiger God. Qing Qian was stunned, “Brother Xiao Yao.... that... he ate it. What do we do? What do we do?!”

I panicked and dashed forward. I picked it up with and forced its mouth open with both hands. I then shook it up and down and side to side, “Idiot, spit it out. You can’t eat that!”

The Flaming Tiger God just softly wagged its tail but did not spit it out. Instead, “Gu Dong!” the ball dropped into his stomach. With that, it was gone...

Wan Er grinned, “This... what’s going on...”

Li Mu grunted, “The result was, Guild Master’s pet will get indigestion...”

Wang Jian laughed, “That’s too funny right?”

Then, right at that moment, the Flaming Tiger God roared and jumped out of my arms. It then shuddered and began glowing. It raised its head and roared. The light flew into the sky, creating a pillar that cut through the clouds. It seemed as though the little tiger was transforming. Its body slowly began to change and golden runes appeared all around him. His claws had a red glow and his body turned bigger. A magic circle appeared under his feet and I heard a bell beside my ear. My heart nearly stopped——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, your pet [Flaming Tiger God] has transformed into a Demon Tier BOSS pet [Ancient Heavenly Tiger]. You are the first player to obtain a Demon Tier pet. You have obtained 10 points of charm as a reward!

.....

The light slowly started to dim and the little tiger purred. The impressive aura it had was gone and now he shook his tail and stalked over to me. It then rubbed its head against my leg, as though it was asking for forgiveness. This little b\*st\*rd is so human-like it was funny.

Wan Er, Wolf, and Li Mu were all stunned. After half a second, Wolf said, “Brother Xiao Yao, it seems from the situation that your Flaming Tiger God ate the Spirit Core and transformed? What’s its tier?”

I took a deep breath, “Demon whatever tier. Wan Er, what was it called again?”

Wan Er, “Demon Harvest Tier...”

I said, “OK!”

Qing Qian smiled. “What are you waiting for? Brother Xiao Yao, hurry up and let us see the Demon Tier pet stats! It’s definitely going to be awesome. Ho ho, this is the beginnings of dominating the world!”

I nodded and waved my hand over the air, revealing the Ancient Heavenly Tiger stats before everyone——

[Ancient Heavenly Tiger] (Demon Tier BOSS)

Level: 101

Attack: 10100-12120

Defense: 10100

Health: 40400

Magic: 15150

Attack: ★★★★★★★★★★

Defense: ★★★★★★★★★★

Health: ★★★★★★★★☆

Agility: ★★★★★★★★

Magic: ★★★★★★★★☆

Skills: [Flame Claw] [Flame Armor] [Fierce Roar] [Vampiric Strike] [Burstfire Raid] [Ancient Fire Branding]

Excellency: 100%

Stats calculation [Attack =  $\text{Level} \times 50 \times (1 + 100\%) - \text{Level} \times 60 \times (1 + 100\%)$ , Defense =  $\text{Level} \times 50 \times (1 + 100\%)$ , Health =  $\text{Level} \times 200 \times (1 + 100\%)$ , Magic =  $\text{Level} \times 75 \times (1 + 100\%)$ ]

.....

These stats impressed not only everyone else, but it also impressed me. This Demon Tier's growth rate was just too incredible!

Li Mu took a deep breath and said, "He already has a base attack of ten stars and an excellency rating of 100%. All that's left is the growth from the Demon Tier. This really is impressive. Its base attack is already 10,000. Plus the hidden stats from the tier. It's possible that its attack power is even higher than Guild Master's real attack. It's probably half from the Demon Tier and half from its master's attack...."

I replied, "Yes. Actually what I'm most grateful about is the 40,000 health. Finally, my pet won't die so easily...."

Wan Er smiled. "The Flaming Tiger God has transformed quite a bit. This is a good thing for Zhan Long. Besides Li Xiao Yao, we've got another Tank..."

I thought about it for a second and said, "That Spirit Core was originally a treasure for the guild, but... but since the Flaming Tiger God swallowed it whole, I never would've expected it. There was no other option, all I can do is make up for it..."

Li Mu was stunned, "You don't need to.... Everyone's brothers here. Seeing as the Flaming Tiger God ate it, then he ate it. It wasn't something you meant to happen anyway. Guild Master, you don't have to worry about that much."

I smiled. "Don't say anymore, I can earn the money back!"

Afterwards, I took 50% of the money in my bank out. This was also meant as compensation for the players that participated in this Dragon City event. I split it up based on each players' accomplishments and damages. I spent a total of 3

million. This meant that I still had 3 million in my bank. That was pretty good. At least it was a number that I never imagined I would have.

.....

After handing out half my savings, I rubbed my Ancient Heavenly Tiger's head. Yep, this little b\*st\*rd can finally step back onto the battle stage!

In the distance, we could hear the clang of metals. The twentieth wave of Hybrid Demons had finally arrived.

## Chapter 579 Who to Trust

The sound of heavy horse hooves broke through the tranquility. North of Dragon City, an army of cavalrymen appeared in the forest. They were all heavy cavalrymen clothed in black armor and had a black veil covering their eyes and faces. Each was equipped with a long sword. The mounts beneath them had a horn growing atop its head.

.....

“It’s the Nightmare Cavalrymen....” Angela said as she looked at the Hybrid Demon Cavalry. She grit her teeth, “I’ve only heard about these brutal corps from the ancient books at the Empire’s Academy. I never would have imagined that the North still had these cavalrymen. Furthermore, there’s so many of them....”

One of the generals lowered his voice and said, “Your highness, the Nightmare Cavalrymen have already appeared. This area is far too dangerous for someone of your status. Please relocate to another area and let us hold off the Nightmare Cavalry.”

Angela shook her head and softly said, “I won’t leave, even if it means I lose my life. I will not depart even half a step from Dragon City! Brother and Father have already taken injuries. If I don’t hold the northern border of Ba Huang City, then what is the point of me being the princess? Send my orders, have all of the Blizzard Army cavalrymen come to our aid. Fan Shu City wouldn’t choose to attack Ba Huang City at a time like this. We still have 50,000 soldiers over here. Take my arrow banner of command and bring them here!”

“Yes your highness!”

.....

Frost didn’t add anything. She quietly sat on the ledge of the observation deck. She stabbed her Severing Beauty into the snow on the side and ripped off some cloth. She grit her teeth and began to wrap the wound on her arm. Her elegant eyebrows furrowed as she winced a little. I could tell by her expression

that it hurt quite a bit. But she didn't make any sound. She knew that Dragon City right now was in more danger than ever before. Now that Luo Lin was gone, she couldn't reveal any weakness, or else the soldiers would lose faith.

Hooves pounded the ground at the bottom of the mountain and a large team of Nightmare Cavalrymen bounded up the mountain. Normally, cavalrymen would not have been able to fight on a hilly landscape like they could on flatland, but mountains of Hybrid Demon, Human, Moon Elf, and Barbarian bodies made it easy for them to charge up to the city wall. The commander in front raised his blade and smiled. "Kill! Rip apart these humans and let them have a taste of fear and despair!"

"Keng!"

I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Zhen Yue Sword and retreated several steps, "Alright, prepare our defenses! The Nightmare Knights are Level 5 Hybrid Demons. I can't see their skills so everyone prepare!"

"Yup!" Li Mu and Wang Jian both retreated. Li Mu stood at the front. After he got the Dragon Turtle Armor, his defense was even a little higher than my own. We could even call him the main Tank.

"Be careful!"

Not far, Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior, and Misty Cloud all took their broken armies and created a defense line. Currently, there were only a few guilds that could remain on the city wall without retreating. As for the other guilds, [Hero's Mound: Division One] was already completely destroyed. Even Wang Zhe Cheng had been killed. Everyone from [Flying Dragon] had also been killed. Drunken Spear had fought off four Hybrid Demons after losing his Healer before dying. Even [Thousand Mound] was completely gone. Ba Huang City only had four guilds left to guard the city and each one of them only had a few hundred or so men.

"Die!"

One of the Nightmare Cavalrymen lunged over. His blade carried a dark glow to it. He threw a [Dark Slash] right at Li Mu's shoulder!

"13212 ! "

Li Mu's body dipped from the weight of the slash, blocking the attack. He raised his Tian Chen Sword and threw a [Combo] at the enemy. Wang Jian also provided support by dealing damage. However, the Nightmare Cavalrymen was already beginning its second attack. "Si si" lightning began to channel through the blade. Suddenly it accumulated into a ball that blasted right between Li Mu and Wang Jian!

The blade cut through the air, creating a dimensional crack that grew and encompassed a circular range. It dealt enormous damage to all of the players around the area!

"13271 ! "

"17266 ! "

.....

Li Mu was OK, but Wang Jian was nearly killed instantly. The two immediately retreated. On the side, there were a few Swordsmen and Berserkers that were in the area who were instantly killed. Right at that moment, Wan Er's dagger flashed and successfully stunned the monster. Then with a few slashes to the Nightmare Cavalryman. I also raised my blade and charged towards the Nightmare Cavalryman and lunged forward...

In the city, several of the [Dimension Ripper]s appeared, sucking several players into the split. One after another, the Blizzard Army soldiers were ripped to pieces. Screams of death rang out in the air. Angela raised her Destroyer and charged forward, but it wasn't enough to decrease the Ba Huang City deaths.

Frost stood up and jumped off the observation deck. She gripped her sword and charged into the crowd. Those [Dimension Ripper] did not deal much damage to her. She was at the top of Sword Saints and was merciless. She charged through the crowd and killed with every attack she made. But even so, Frost couldn't hold them off by herself. In the end, a group of the Nightmare Cavalrymen charged right into the Dragon Knight camp and cut down several of the knights.

After killing my twelfth Nightmare Cavalryman, I noticed that the players that were around me had basically all been killed. The long ranged team did not escape unscathed. The losses we were suffering far exceeded my estimate.

Within 30 minutes, [Zhan Long] only had 100 or so players left in the city. Bodies scattered the ground. Just seeing the scene was chilling.

[Vanguard], [Prague], and [Enemies at the Gate] weren't any better off. Even Misty Cloud cried out as he was cut down by three Nightmare Cavalrymen. All of the players behind him were slaughtered. [Enemies at the Gate] finally could not go on. Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao took their survivors and retreated. The situation was worse than we could imagine.

.....

After a difficult hour of killing, we had finally made it through half of the slaughter from the 20th wave. [Zhan Long] only had 30+ people left. Each of them were covered in injuries. Before our formation lie 300 Nightmare Cavalrymen corpses. Even though our losses were great, the monsters also took a hit. At the very least we put all our effort into it.

The player and the NPC army was about to be finished off, but finally we heard the sounds of battle horses.

“Wu wu...”

Seven Nightmare Cavalrymen were fighting Frost at the same time, forcing her backwards.

Right at that moment, a sword flew over!

“Hong!”

The spinning blade activated a tempest and killed all seven of the Nightmare Cavalrymen. Furthermore, the crimson blade looked extremely familiar. A man reached up and the sword flew right back into his hand.

Frost spun around and saw the familiar figure. Relief washed over her face, “My lord...”

A man stood atop the city wall and it was none other than Luo Lin, dressed in a cape that was dyed red. He grabbed Despair and smiled. “Frost, you’ve worked hard!”

I grit my teeth and shouted, “Frost, do not trust him!”

Frost was stunned, “I....”



Suddenly, a female knight dashed up onto the city wall. It was Qing Luo, the scout that Frost had sent out. She was one of Dragon City's Dragon Knight team leaders. Her eyes were filled with sorrow, "Frost, I've come back!"

Frost nodded, "How is the situation in Hunters Valley?"

Qing Luo said, "When I reached the Hunters Valley, all I saw was a sea of blood. Countless half beast half human troops had massacred everyone there. Even Duke Luo Lei and General Forgotten Sea had been killed. There were no survivors from the Fierce Tiger Army. Luo Lin personally lead the Purple Star Army there and claimed vengeance for Duke Luo Lei!"

Frost's eyes widened, "King Luo Lin, is that true?"

Luo Lin revealed a grieved expression and gripped his fist saying, "Those d\*mn\*d half men half beasts, to think that they'd ambush our camp. Father.... Father was killed by the hands of a wolf-man. I.... I'm too useless. I wasn't able to save Father. I.... I have disappointed father...:"

"Dang..."

Destroyer hit the ground as Angela stood there, shocked. "What? You're saying... Father... he..."

Luo Lin nodded, "Angela, Father's dead..."

"No!!!"

Angela knelt to the ground, tears rolling down her cheeks, "Father, father..."

.....

I grit my teeth and strode forward, roaring, "Luo Lin, what a great act you've put up. You killed Duke Luo Lei with your own hands and now you're blaming it on the half men? Is that sword Despair not the one that you stole from Duke Luo Lei's hands? You are a traitor and you still want to trick everyone!"

Luo Lin's eyes turned cold, "Adventurer, even though you are fighting for the sake of Ba Huang City, you must still watch your mouth. Otherwise, if you dare tarnish my name, I will not forgive you!"

I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword, "Come at me if you have the guts!"

Wan Er and Qing Qian grabbed my arm to hold me back. Wan Er lightly shook her head and softly said, “Li Xiao Yao, say no more. I beg of you... no more.... Can’t you see? Frost, Angela, they all trust in Luo Lin. Not you...”

I grit my teeth and stared straight at Frost and shouted, “Frost, Frost, look straight at him. I do not have any reason to slander him. There is absolutely nothing good that will come out of it for me...”

Frost’ voice trembled as she looked at Luo Lin, “Your highness....”

Luo Lin was stunned. Frost had never called him that. He couldn’t help but ask, “Frost, do you believe in him, and not me? Have I not put my life on the line for Dragon City, for Ba Huang City as well?”

“No, no that is not it....” Frost bit her lip until blood came out. “I... I don’t know who to trust. However, your highness, I ask that you, with Despair in your hand, fight for the sake of humanity’s future. Do not let us fall to the claws of the Hybrid Demons... Whether or not I believe in you, that is of no importance...”

Luo Lin nodded, “Yes, I understand. I will fight!”

.....

I was speechless.

# Chapter 580 Battle's Silence

“All soldiers, heed my command!”

Luo Lin raised Despair. Suddenly, he sliced through the air and cut a dozen Nightmare Cavalrymen in half. He then sprinted forward and threw Despair out. “Keng!” the blade cut right into a brick wall. Power surged outwards and engulfed the Nightmare Cavalrymen who had charged forward. Luo Lin stood in the air, the power from the Holy Domain rising around him. He opened his hand and an enormous shock wave passed through the hills. A whole group of Nightmare Cavalrymen were instantly killed. This just proved that there was still an enormous gap between Holy Domain and Saint Tier. The Luo Lin that stood before us now, was no longer the same Luo Lin we had known before.

.....

“Long Live Prince Luo Lin!”

A group of Blizzard Army knights all raised their swords and cheered. Everyone had been so pressured by the offensive from the Hybrid Demons that they barely had the chance to breathe. It was all the way up until Luo Lin brought out Despair that we could finally feel the chance of victory. It seemed as though just with Luo Lin's presence, we had faith that Dragon City wouldn't fall.

The fierce battle continued and the Nightmare Cavalrymen continuously charged up the city wall like a river. They clashed with the NPCs that Luo Lin brought with him. Both sides had no way to retreat. They would fight to the death!

“Pa.... pa..... Pa....”

As bodies fell to the ground, the piles of corpses grew even higher.

“Si si....”

I gripped my sword as I stood at the frontlines. Glancing around, I noticed a subtle change, among the countless corpses on the city, Despair was amid the pile. All I could see was that from one of the heads of a corpse came slivers of

red light. It was as though something was being pulled out and lured over and was continuously streaming towards Despair. The light would then circle the blade and then slowly become absorbed.

In the sky, Luo Lin looked up. The same red light appeared around his body. He took a deep breath and revealed an ecstatic expression. On that handsome face, a cruel smile flashed on his face, but disappeared just as quickly. Luo Lin truly was no longer the same Luo Lin as before.

Even though he was helping kill more Hybrid Demons, that didn't change the fact that Luo Lin killed his father for the sake of more power.

.....

Luo Lin raised his palm and an enormous [Holy Domain Palm] descended upon the battlefield from the sky, crushing a team of Nightmare Cavalrymen into meat. Luo Lin smiled. "Ants!"

At that moment, a group of Ba Huang City soldiers and Dragon Knights all raised their blades and whooped, "King Luo Lin! King Luo Lin! Long Live Ba Huang City! Long Live King Luo Lin!"

Su Ke raised his battle axe and laughed, "King Luo Lin has finally entered into the Holy Domain. Hahaha, Ba Huang City and Dragon City finally have a true leader! Hybrid Demons, don't you dare even think about touching an inch of Ba Huang City and the continent. Die!"

Da Lin swung his chains, trapping three of the Nightmare Cavalrymen and smiled. "Hurry up and kill! These b\*st\*rds attack speed and movement speed is just too high!"

.....

"Brother..."

Angela picked up the Destroyer and walked towards Luo Lin along a blood splattered path. She looked up at her brother, her eyes containing a sliver of fear. With a trembling voice, she asked, "Brother.. Are you sucking the souls of the dead soldiers?.... Are you using them to boost your power? You... how could you?"

Luo Lin was stunned, “Angela, what’s wrong?”

Angela’s body shook harder and she suddenly shouted, “Answer me, yes, or no!”

Luo Lin was silent for a few seconds and finally gave a firm, “Yes!”

“You....” Angela grit her teeth and pointed towards Ba Huang City, “They are all brave warriors from our home. They had died for the sake of defending Ba Huang City. Their sacrifice is sacred. Brother, how could you do something like that to their souls? How can you disappoint the faith of our father?”

“The faith of our father?”

Luo Lin dipped his head as his body shook. After a second we realized that he was actually laughing. He looked down at Angela and softly said, “My stupid little sister. You don’t understand the situation, do you? The Northern Hybrid Demons are invading. If we don’t use everything we have, how are we supposed to face Ba Huang City and the Tian Ling Empire? Yes, I am sucking away their souls, but that is Despair’s special ability. The stronger the power from the soul is, the stronger I get. After these brave warriors have died, their spirits may still be used to protect our lands. Is that not what they should want to do?”

Angela smiled, her eyes filled with despair, “After having their souls sucked away, and having their humanity and dignity trampled upon, how could you call them warriors? They are just a group of pitiful humans that are being exploited... Brother, you’ve really changed!”

“Shut up!”

Luo Lin was starting to get furious. He pointed to the north and said, “If I don’t do all I can to make myself stronger, who can hold off these strong Hybrid Demon kings? When Lin Han brings his troops here, who will hold him off? You? Angela, tell me, can you protect Ba Huang City with your mercy and kindness?”

Angela trembled as she looked at Luo Lin. She grit her teeth and softly said, “I beg of you... don’t fall deeper and deeper. Otherwise, I do not see any hope for Ba Huang City...”

“Don’t worry!” Luo Lin said, “I know what I am doing. I also know what it is

that I want to do!”

“Alright....”

.....

Right at that moment, a whistle rang through the air. Finally, the 20th wave BOSS appeared. The earth began to tremble. Not long after, a group of Nightmare Cavalrymen appeared in the forest at the bottom of the wall. Furthermore, among the Nightmare Cavalrymen, a fierce general appeared. He held a blade in his hand and was dressed completely in black armor. He rode on a bony mount that had hooves of fire. His mount pawed the ground, as though it couldn't wait to charge.

“He's finally here...”

Wan Er leaned against the cold wall. Her eyes scanned the area. The Wintry Clothes softly fluttered in the wind. The way it was wrapped around her chest made it look even more luscious and full. She muttered, “The twentieth wave BOSS. Who knows what its stats are. Pig, are we going to participate in this battle?”

I pondered for a second, “We'll help the NPCs. We aren't that pathetic of a main force! Either ways, [Prague], and [Vanguard] don't have the strength to kill the BOSS. We... Just you and I will be acting. Li Mu will act as the close combat force. We'll have the ranged players and the Healers provide support from afar. We should be fine like that. The truth is, we don't have that many people left. We'll just have to do what we can. Let's try and get this BOSS to drop some more equipment. We're already reaching the final stages of this defend the city campaign. There's no reason to slack off now.”

“Yes, understood!”

.....

At the bottom of the mountain, the BOSS general pulled out his sword and raised it above his head. He revealed a cruel smile, “Nightmare Cavalrymen, in our final assault, break into the city. Let those miserable humans know that no matter how hard they try, they will never be able to defeat the Hybrid Demons! Kill!”

Hooves pounded the earth and an army of Nightmare Cavalrymen charged forward under the command of the BOSS. I stood on the edge of the wall to look at the BOSS' stats. As the BOSS got closer and closer, I could finally see its details. Once I saw them I immediately turned around and dashed back, sharing the stats while I was running——

[Battle's Silence – Tang Xiong] (Divine Tier BOSS)

Level: 120

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: [Fading Slash] [Battle Rage] [Chilling Intent] [Dance of the Gods and Demons]

Introduction: Tang Xiong, a superior commander from the ancient times. Ever since he was a child, he was extremely talented, whether it was in music, swordplay or even war tactics. When he was only 17, he reached the Sword Saint domain. By the age 30, he had already reached the Holy Domain and became one of the super commanders in the Holy Domain. Afterwards, he was ambushed in a great battle and died while fighting. After Lin Han obtained his body and soul, he was revived and became the commander of the Hybrid Demon Army

.....

“The BOSS is here...”

I took a deep breath, “Later, we cannot tank the BOSS. We have to do what we can to slow down the BOSSes attacks and defense. We'll let Luo Lin fight with him. We just need to provide support from the side.”

Qing Qian blinked a few times, “But Brother Xiao Yao, Luo Lin is a bad person. Are we really going to help a bad person?”

I gave a defeated smile, “Then, Qing Qian, what should we do instead... All we can do is make every step forward count. We'll talk about it after Tang Xiong is killed. Right now, Dragon City is in danger. If we lose it, then that will be worse

than the other result.”

“Yes, I understand!”

.....

“Create the formation!”

In Dragon City, one of the Purple Star commanders lead his troops into a formation. However, before it was even finished, Tang Xiong had already reached the top of the city wall. He threw a cut that flew forward and slashed through the NPCs. It was [Fading Slash]! Blood splattered all over. That wasn't even all. The cape behind him flew up as [Battle Rage] activated. Sharp blades began to form in the air around him that killed all of the NPCs that were around him. It was as though a God of War had descended upon us.

“Too arrogant!”

Luo Lin roared and charged forward. He raised his fist and threw a [Flame Punch] that struck right into Tang Xiong's chest.

Tang Xiong smiled. He slightly dodged to the side. “Peng!” he rammed into Luo Lin's fist, ingeniously blocking the Holy Domain attack. He then raised his hand and cracked his horse whip. The iron horse whinnied and Tang Xiong spun around, dealing an attack!

“Hong!”

Luo Lin retreated several steps as the Holy Domain energy rose around him. Despair was stabbed into a pile of bodies a little ways away from him. He opened his palm and the sword began to tremble. The sword's spirit and Luo Lin's heart were now completely in sync. It flew across the field to its new owner. He reached out and grabbed the sword. Afterwards, Luo Lin made a cross slash and clashed with Tang Xiong. What I had not expected was that Tang Xiong appeared to be extremely strong. He swung his sword and faced Luo Lin without any fear. The Nightmare Cavalrymen that were behind him were immediately killed from that initial attack. They swung their blades and each threw a [Dimension Ripper] towards Luo Lin.

“D\*mm\*t....”



Luo Lin's battle robes were ripped up and he actually ended up at a disadvantage.

.....

“Charge!”

I charged forward and let out a [Blade Spin]. “Keng!” the Zhen Yue Sword cut through Tang Xiong's chest. I then opened my hand and aimed [Great Realm of Desolation], locking some of the aggro on myself.

“Fly, are you trying to die?”

Tang Xiong turned around to face me, a cruel smile playing on his lips.

# Chapter 581 Flying Scythe War Horse

I was slightly stunned, “Fly, are you talking about me?”

Wan Er was around 20 yards away from me and smiled. “You better be careful....”

Tang Xiong suddenly charged over. The battle horse quickly accelerated and reached my side within seconds. He leapt up and dealt a [Fading Slash], followed by three slashes from his [Chilling Intent]. The damage numbers leapt up ——

“17636 ! ”

“12231 ! ”

“+7732 ! ”

“+1500 ! ”

“11123 ! ”

“23171 ! ”

.....

That last attack was practically enough to instantly kill me. However, I immediately activated [Reflect]. “Bang!” the attack reflected and I barely managed to avoid being killed. Behind me, Darling Duck and Thousand League quickly healed me and my health jumped up. At the same time, I activated my [Halberd Flame] and burned the BOSS. I needed to do everything I could to deal damage, that way the BOSS would actually drop equipment.

“Shua!”

The blade flew at me extremely fast. I saw the blade coming and raised my Zhen Yue Sword to my shoulder. I then walked in a “Z” formation. “Keng!” I blocked the attack and spun to the side, dodging another attack. Energy began to gather under my feet and 98.1% of [Strength of a Thousand Men] fell upon the BOSS. I then followed the attack with a [Fierce Ice Blade], slowing down Tang Xiong’s movement speed.

“Have a taste of [Battle Rage], youngster!”

Tang Xiong became infuriated and activated his [Battle Rage]. Rivers of power exploded against my [Wall of Dou Qi]. My shield was starting to crack under the enormous pressure. Right at that moment, Wan Er appeared behind the BOSS and activated [Gouge], stunning the BOSS with a “Peng!”. She then activated [Blade of the Death God]+[Twin Blade Harmony]. From a distance, Dong Cheng activated [Lightning Finger] while Dancing Forest let loose a [Meteor Shot].

But that did not last long. Under the continuous damage from [Battle Rage], Wan Er, Li Mu and I couldn’t hold against it and immediately retreated.

“Take your judgement!”

Tang Xiong raised his blade and threw several cuts. My health had already dropped to the bottom. The worst part was that my [Wall of Dou Qi] had shattered. If I took a hit without any shield then it would be a critical hit!

“Wan Er!” I roared.

Wan Er’s beautiful eyes glanced at me and she immediately understood what I meant. She waved her hand and the Wintry Clothes began to glow. In the next moment, a beautiful woman appeared in the sky above Wan Er and quickly turned bigger. It was Bu Lian Shi, a woman from the Three Kingdoms period. She softly strummed her instrument, activating [Heaven’s Ode]!

“Hong!”

The [Heaven’ Ode] sent shockwaves that moved 100 yards. Tang Xiong and his group of Nightmare Cavalrymen were all within the range and took the hit. It gave a 100% stun that lasted for 7 seconds. Furthermore, it increased Wan Er’s attack damage.

.....

Tang Xiong stood in his original place while Li Mu and I charged at him, continuously attacking him for five seconds straight. We then quickly retreated. Luo Lin and Angela also raised their weapons and attacked for several seconds. Within that short 7 seconds, we managed to decrease Tang Xiong’s health by 30%. The Despair that Luo Lin held didn’t just look impressive, it was also incredibly sharp!

“Kill!”

Su Ke roared and lead the Dragon City Knights charging towards the BOSS. Everyone fought with all their strength. If we didn't kill Tang Xiong this time, then this wave of attacks would never end.

I immediately retreated and took a deep breath when I saw that I was at critical health. I had already understood that this level of battle wasn't something that a player could take control of. Even if players had reached their fifth advancement like me, fighting against a high tier BOSS like Tang Xiong was basically looking for their death!

After recovering all of my health, I charged again, this time setting up [Azure Dragon Crossbow], [Black Tortoise Realm] and [Seven Star Transportation] before going out. I did not hold anything back with the sole goal of draining the BOSS' health. Luo Lin was the primary attacker. As he was attacking however, he took a lot of damage. Blood dripped down both of his arms. Despair continuously recovered his wounds using the souls that it sucked away. Luo Lin's weapon was far better than Tang Xiong's.

“Ahhh....”

Finally, when Tang Xiong's health dropped to 20%, he suddenly went crazy. He pointed his sword at the ground and shouted, “Come, the power that rests in the depths of hell, heed my command. Kill all enemies in your path——[Dance of the Gods and Demons]!”

The earth began to shake and numerous demon spirits broke through the earth, gathering around Tang Xiong, creating a fiery shell. The fiery spirits funneled into his arms. The battle horse whinnied and suddenly charged at Luo Lin. Tang Xiong swung his sword and threw an attack that rammed right into Luo Lin's [Star Armor]!

“Peng!”

With that one attack, Luo Lin was thrown into the air and he coughed up blood. He halted the momentum in the air and grit his teeth, shouting, “Are you still trying to trap me? Tang Xiong, go to hell! You were never supposed to be upon this earth. This isn't your world!

As he said those last words, he charged straight from the sky and raised his sword as he prepared a kick. Each attack rammed into Tang Xiong's shield but it repeatedly reconstructed itself. Even though he used his final skill, it looked as though he couldn't stand against Luo Lin's attacks. Not long after, Tang Xiong's health dropped to below 5%.

“Charge!”

Li Mu glanced at us, “Right now is the best time..”

I jerked my arm and activated [Great Realm of Desolation] on Tang Xiong. However, before it even finished casting, Luo Lin raised his arm and roared. A cruel smile rose on his face and he hacked right into Tang Xiong's shoulder and said, “Now, can you finally die?”

Tang Xiong's sword drooped and “Keng!” it fell to the ground as his arms lost their strength. He reached out to grab Despair's blade, he smiled as well, “Luo Lin, you have finally arrived!”

Luo Lin hesitated slightly, then became infuriated. He flicked his wrist and cut an enormous hole in his enemy's neck. He then spun around and threw a beautiful kick. “Ka Cha!” Tang Xiong's head flew off like that and the body plummeted. “Hua La la” a pile of gold dropped.

.....

“Neigh neigh...”

The iron horse whinnied as it lost its master and pawed and the ground nervously. A large crimson magic circle appeared underneath it and his body slowly sunk into the center and started disappearing.

“Huh?”

Frost raised her Severing Beauty and descended towards me. She smiled as she looked at me, “Do you want it?”

“Want what?” I asked.

Frost' eyes rested on Tang Xiong's mount and smiled. “This mount!”

My eyes filled with determination, “I want it!”

“Alright!”

In that moment, Frost suddenly charged over and opened her hand, “[Ice Spear]!”

“Peng!”

Frost’s [Ice Spear] sealed the battle horse in its place before it completely sunk into the ground. She grabbed its tail and pulled it out. That battle horse began to cry out and raised its back legs, about to kick Frost. However, it did not expect Frost to wave her hand and “Pa!” slap away the hooves, giving it no opportunity to act up. The battle horse then spun around and created a blade in front of it and rammed right into Frost’s chest!

“Peng....”

Sparks flew and Frost retreated several steps. Blood dripped from the corner of her mouth, but she still grabbed its reigns. She then released waves of Dou Qi onto the horse, for a whole 20 seconds. Finally, it lowered its head and let go of its rebelliousness and bowed before Frost. Frost then waved her hand and the battle horse disappeared and was sealed into a stone.

Frost turned around and held the stone in an open palm. She looked at me and smiled. “What are you waiting for?”

I softly touched it and felt her lightly trembling. Frost seemed a little out of breath. She looked up and quietly said, “Hurry up and become stronger. Hurry...”

.....

I nodded. Behind me, Wan Er, Qing Qian, Li Mu, and Wolf all ran over to me as Qing Qian guarded the drops and Wan Er smiled. “You got a mount?”

I replied, “Yes, I did....”

“Let’s see its stats!” Wang Jian smiled.

I waved my hand over the sealed rock, revealing the stats of Tang Xiong’s mount for everyone——

[Flying Scythe War Horse] (Divine Tier BOSS level Mount)

Level: 100

Strength: +210

Stamina: +208

Agility: +205

Magic: +200

Attack Power Increase: +75%

Defense Increase: +100%

Movement Increase: +245%

Max HP increase: +7000

Mount Durability: +50%

Mount Stamina: 200

Recovery rate: 0.5/minute

Level: 100

Bound Player: Xiao Yao Zi Zai

.....

“D\*mn... these stats....”

Li Mu took a deep breath, his eyes widening, “This basically increases a player’s stats to a whole new level....”

Wang Jian smiled. “It’s a Divine Tier, and a BOSS level. That’s understandable....”

Old K was puzzled, “I get all of the other stats, but what’s with the stamina?”

Wan Er explained, “You need to look at the forums more... a mount’s stamina refers to how fast and long it can run. A player’s mount has three stances, the first is walk, which is at the same pace as the player’s own speed. That stance doesn’t take much stamina. The second is galloping, which increases the mount’s speed by 100%. Every minute takes 1 point of the mount’s stamina. The third type is charge, which increases the mount’s speed by 150%. Furthermore, it deals a ramming attack on the target. Every minute of uses

consumes 2 points of stamina.”

Qing Qian smiled. “In other words, for a mount, the higher the stamina, the better...”

Old K was stunned, “What about Little Li’s war horse? Is 200 points good?”

Wan Er grinned, “It’s really good. That’s enough for him to be moving at full speed for 3 hours. How could that not be good? Imagine, three hours of galloping. In a real battle, that’s unimaginable.”

I didn’t say much else. I just slid my finger along my Dragon Reservoir sword and dropped blood on the stone. Suddenly a golden light rose and soared into the sky. In the next moment, the system successfully recognized my ownership and I obtained the mount: Flying Scythe War Horse!

.....

“Xiu xiu.....”

The battle horse appeared at my side. I leapt onto the horse and raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I looked like an expert horseback rider. Furthermore, my stats suddenly leapt up. While I was mounted on a horse, my stats were just too strong——

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon Knight)

Level: 102

Attack: 6501-7942

Defense: 9047

Health: 42922

Magic: 11030

Charm: 285

CBN Battlenet Rankings: 12

.....

On the side, Wan Er smiled. “What a handsome look...”

Frost also smiled. “Now you look the part of a Dragon Knight.... Finally starting



to look strong...”

I was speechless.

Qing Qian raised the three equipments, “Brother Xiao Yao, are we going to look at these equipment stats?”

“Yup, let’s begin!”

“Alright!”

## Chapter 582 Goodbye Forever

The Flying Scythe War horse kicked its front hoof and the mount system page appeared before me. It was relatively simple to see, what decreased and increased. The Ancient Heavenly Tiger scratched its head beside me. Just now, while we were killing the BOSS, that little tiger stuck to Tang Xiong and kept clawing at him and actually didn't get killed by the BOSS. Just from that, I could tell that his defense was far above average.

At that moment, the Ancient Heavenly Tiger roared and glared at the Flying Scythe War horse. It seemed as though it wasn't satisfied with its new partner. However, the Flying Scythe Warhorse's AI was also pretty high. It snorted and then kneeled down to the Ancient Heavenly Tiger, as though showing its allegiance. With that the little tiger waved its tail and ran over to Wan Er's side. It purred and rubbed its soft head against the beautiful little miss's thigh. Just looking made me a little envious.

.....

Qing Qian raised the three equipments and split them up, sharing the stats with everyone.

There were two Saint Tier equipments and one Valkyrie Tier Equipment. After all, I wasn't the one who killed the BOSS, and so the drop rate wasn't very high. The two Saint Tier equipments went to Dancing Forest and Darling Duck, while the Valkyrie Tier was taken by one of [Zhan Long]'s members. After we finished splitting up the awards, we continued to guard Dragon City, waiting for the next wave of monsters.

"There's still 4 hours left...."Wan Er flashed a smile to me, "I think I can see a little hope left for us..."

Wan Er flashed a smile to me, "I think I can see a little hope left for us..."

However, I was still worried, "Hard to say. There's just too many variables. This 21st wave, who knows what it's going to be...."

"Yes, that's true."

.....

We all held our breaths as we waited for the next wave. On the city wall, Frost raised her Severing Beauty and looked into the distance from the observation deck. As she did, she would glance at Luo Lin every now and then, her expression filled with doubt. Luo Lin held Despair as he walked along the wall, continuously sucking the strength from the dead souls. As he was doing this, everyone could tell that Luo Lin's strength and his speed were increasing at a terrifying rate.

"Lu Ge!" Luo Lin turned around to look at his vice commander.

The Purple Star Vice Commander, the barbarian Lu Ge nodded and said, "Your highness, do you have orders?"

Luo Lin furrowed his brows and said, "Are the 60,000 reserve soldiers from Purple Star ready?"

Lu Ge lowered his voice and smiled. "Don't worry your highness. The 60,000 from Purple Star, the 50,000 from Nightmare Army, 30,000 from Desolate Cloud, and the 70,000 from the Imperial Guard are all ready. There's a total of 210,000 that have gathered at the Eastern side of Dragon City. Furthermore, as my lord has commanded, they are boiling Cold Resistance potions and are currently splitting it amongst themselves. Not long from now, they'll have bodies that are invincible to the cold. Once our armies can go north, then wiping out the Hybrid Demons will no longer be a dream!"

"Good! You did well!"

Luo Lin smiled, his pupils dilating, "Never again will I be controlled by another person. Whether it's the Northern Hybrid Demons or the Tian Ling Empire, I, Luo Lin, am the ruler of myself!"

"Yes my lord! I will follow you wherever you go and serve you!"

"Yes."

Luo Lin looked at Luo Ge and smiled. "Don't worry, Ba Huang City is a fertile land. In the future, you will get ⅓ of its territories!"

"Thank you very much your highness! I will strive to serve you well from now

on!”

“Good!”

.....

War drums broke the silence as the sun peaked over the mountains. Under the golden rays of first light, a large army of Hybrid Demons appeared just north of Dragon City. Among them, there were countless Level 5 and Level 6 Hybrid Demons. We could even see the figures of some Level 7 Hybrid Demons. In the sky, a system bell rang out, making everyone nervous——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations all Ba Huang City players. The Dragon City Defense Event has now entered into its last stages. After this, the 21st wave will be the last wave of Hybrid Demons. At the same time, it will also be the strongest. If the players and the NPC army successfully guard the city well, they will receive a great reward!

.....

“Keng keng keng....”

Li Mu, Wang Jian and the others all pulled out their swords. They didn’t care any longer. Now that we had reached this point, nobody cared how strong these Hybrid Demons were. No matter what, we had to kill them. There was no retreat nor any choice.

“Careful, the Hybrid Demons are coming...”

Wan Er slightly trembled, “There’s Level 5 and Level 6...”

“Gr....”

Enormous dark beasts appeared at the bottom of the city. Dream Eaters, Level 6 Hybrid Demons. Furthermore, there were a large numbers of Beast Tamer Cavalrymen and Nightmare Cavalrymen all awaiting us. They charged right towards the city.

Frost stood up and cried out, “Archers, fire! Don’t reserve any of your firepower! Right now is the moment, do not hesitate!”

A large group of Ba Huang City and Dragon City soldiers all raised their

weapons and began their defense. Burning Oil and boulders dropped down in waterfalls off the north side while the archers continuously shot arrows. Even the Azure Dragon Crossbow that I set up activated. Over half of Dragon City was in ruins. Now was the time we needed to use all of our power.

Luo Lin's eyes grew cold and he raised his blade," Everyone, put all your strength into defending! We must defend against the attack of these evil demons!"

"Peng Peng Peng...."

One after another, golden shields rammed into the ground. The Purple Star Army Cavalrymen created their formation. This was the last battle, and they were holding nothing back!

.....

"Grr...."

The Dream Eaters roared as they charged up the city wall. They shook their heads and raised their claws, slashing a whole group of cavalrymen into mush. Their claws were almost like [Soul Army] and could easily break through shields without any effect.

Large numbers of Hybrid Demon Cavalrymen charged up the wall, clashing with our soldiers. The damage they suffered from the defense machines was just too little.

Luo Lin was infuriated and he raised his sword, charging into the crowds of monsters. As he swept out Despair, sword essence shattered the sky and plummeted downward!

"Hong!"

That sword essence covered several hundred meters and numerous Hybrid Demons were ripped to shreds from that one attack. But Luo Lin was not finished. The Holy Domain power swirled around him, condensing into a tornado that charged out. He had already reached an invincible state. Even the savage Hybrid Demons couldn't help but tremble as they glanced at this Ba Huang City prince. They hesitated and lost all will and courage to fight.

"Brother..."

Seeing the crazy Luo Lin, Angela couldn't help but softly mutter, "We.... just what happened to us..."

.....

Right as Luo Lin was showing his power, a crimson light suddenly appeared in the sky. A figure shot out from the light and swung the scythe in its hand. "Keng!" it rammed right into Despair. It was Lin Han! This King tier Hybrid Demon had finally arrived!

Luo Lin's body slightly shuddered, but he didn't retreat. Holy Domain power began to gather in his left hand and he threw a strike out, right into Lin Han's chest. Lin Han cried out as he flew back a dozen meters. The Holy Domain armor in front of his chest had been shattered and a drop of blood dripped from the corner of his mouth. He wiped away the blood and cruelly smiled. "Luo Lin, you have not betrayed my expectations. Despair has finally ended up in your hands...."

"Pei!"

\*TL Note: He basically spat at him

Luo Lin's eyes were red, "With Despair, I now have the power to kill you. Lin Han, don't you even dare think of escaping from this place!"

Lin Han laughed out, tears nearly crying out as he laughed. He pointed at Luo Lin and said, "Luo Lin, oh Luo Lin, you are my partner. You are my brother. Why would I want to run away? I'm still waiting to take Dragon City and rule Ba Huang City with you!"

Luo Lin grit his teeth, "Dream on! How could I be brothers with you!?"

Lin Han coldly smiled. "Poor bastard. As the 15th king of the Hybrid Demon Territory, did you not feel anything at all when you came? Did you think that your strength really came from taking Despair with you from the Graveyard of the Heroes? Did you really think that all of those times I really couldn't kill you? Don't be naive. Now that you have killed your own father and taken Despair and the strength of souls has seeped into Despair's strength, do you still want to keep up your appearances?"

Luo Lin began to tremble, "You... you're lying!"

“I’m lying?”

Lin Han laughed, “If I’m lying, then why is it that you have 200,000 man army camped at Firestone Canyon. Why are you using the bones of the dead soldiers and taking their disease to infect them? Why have you figured out the truth behind the hidden path towards the Bloody Plains through the Ice Ridge Mountains? Did you think I didn’t know what you were planning? You were creating a 200,000 Hybrid Demon Army and wanted to sweep through Ba Huang City, Tian Ling Empire, the Swirling Abyss City, the other seven empires and create a human Hybrid Demon Army to go against us 14 Kings. Ha ha, I truly admire you. Your ambition makes me tremble!”

Angela’s voice shook, “Brother, is that true?”

Luo Lin immediately glanced back at her, “No...no! I would never betray humans. Don’t listen to his lies. He’s just trying to drive a wedge between us! Everyone, prepare for battle! Battle to the death for Dragon City!”

Lin Han laughed, “Pighead. Then I have no choice, the Death God of the North has already been infuriated..”

.....

“Hong hong hong....”

Lightning struck the earth and the sky immediately turned dark. A silver blade cut through the sky and descended upon us!

“Peng!”

Dragon City shook from the impact, as though it had been cut in half. The light cut all the way to the Ice Ridge Mountains, creating a several hundred foot slice through the ground. Even the hard earth wasn’t enough to stop this blade!

“Who is it?” Luo Lin’s voice trembled.

In the sky, a general clothed in silver armor carrying a silver blade stepped across the sky towards us, a smile on his face.

.....

Frost trembled, “Godd\*mm\*t all. That’s... that’s the Fist of the Dragon – Igoras....”

“Igoras?”

Wan Er looked at me, despair in her eyes, “Of the fourteen Northern Hybrid Demons, he’s ranked 5th. He’s one of the three Saint Dragons. Dear lord.... This time we’re finished. A second king actually came....”

As though the gods were playing with us, Igoras’ appearance wasn’t the last. A roar sounded from the bottom of the mountains and a crimson Battle Axe broke through the sky and cut through the mountains once again. All we could see was a barbarian step through the sky and smile at us, “Oh, lookie here. The humans just keep getting smaller and weaker....”

Frost grit her teeth, “The Berserker Lei Ding... Heavens.... How come that d\*mn\*d b\*st\*rd came too?”

The Berserker Lei Ding, one of the berserkers Fallen Gods. He was ranked fourth among the fourteen kings!

.....

“Hong!”

A green tornado steadily charged towards the continent from a distance. The Berserker Lei Ding raised his battle axe and turned around to look. The battle crazed look on his face immediately turned into one of respect as he smiled. “Goddess Xi Fu, how come you are here?”

“Ts ts....”

Lightning cracked and split the skies. An extremely erotic female general appeared carrying a long sword. She stepped onto a cloud and power swirled around her. She smiled. “I just want to know, just what is it that’s preventing our Hybrid Demon army from crushing the continent?”

Eternal Moon Blade – Xi Fu, ranked third among the Fourteen Hybrid demon Kings. She was originally a battle goddess from the ancient times. After she fell to the darkness, her strength increased exponentially, and she has an existence equivalent to that of a god.

Lei Ding pointed at Dragon City and smiled. “It’s those ants. Also... Luo Lin that bastard doesn’t seem to want to work with us. I think, we have to give him a taste of true power. Otherwise, that little kid won’t know just who his true



master is!”

Xi Fu smiled. “Then we shall. Kill! We don’t have a lot of time to wait. Immediately crush Dragon City so we can enter the next stage of our plan!”

“Yes!”

Lei Ding turned around and smiled. “Brother Lin Han, Igoras, seeing as the Goddess Xi Fu has given the command, then what are we waiting for? Let’s go, and crush everything trying to stop us!”

“Alright, that is just what I want!” Igoras laughed.

.....

“Sha sha....”

Frost stepped onto the snow and slowly walked to the edge of the city. She looked up at the four kings and slowly said, “Even if my strength is small and weak, I will never give up the dignity of life. Come at me, because humans will never give up!”

Lei Ding laughed and gripped his battle axe and charged over, “How about you have a taste of my battle axe?”

“Hong!”

The battle axe began to burn with bright flames. Frost grit her teeth and created her [Heavenly Feather Shield]

“Peng!”

Under that one attack, the Heavenly Feather Shield fell apart. Lei Ding then threw another cut. “Ka Cha!” Frost’s arm was cut off like that. She cried out and immediately retreated, her face pale as the snow.

“Frost!”

I felt a stab in my heart and I immediately charged forward. I did not expect, however, for Lei Ding to suddenly turn around and hurl a [Battle Axe Throw]!

“Peng!”

I blocked the attack with my Zhen Yue sword, but I couldn’t hold against it. I flew backwards and my health dropped to the bottom. It felt as though all of

the bones in my body had broken at once.

.....

Igoras laughed and raised his halberd as he shouted, “Die, [Eternal Silence]!”

“Hum....”

Dragon power seeped into the city and in the next moment, tens of thousands of Dragon City and Ba Huang City’s soldiers began to shudder. “Peng Peng Peng!” Their bodies spontaneously combusted and were instantly killed by the power of this god like warrior.

Blood dyed Dragon City. This absolute power and pressure made all of the survivors feel an intense despair.

“Damm\*t!”

Da Lin raised his chains and charged forward. He swung them, trying to wrap them around Igoras. This “Fist of the Enormous Dragon” didn’t yield and instead grabbed the chain and threw a punch right back!

“Peng!”

Da Lin cried out and was crushed into mush.

“Ahh...”

When Su Ke saw his friend die under the fist, his eyes went red from anger and grief. He raised his battle axe and lunged towards Lei Ding out of frustration and despair.

“He he, another suicidal one...”

Lei Ding revealed a cruel smile. He swung his battle axe and “Ka Cha!” Su Ke’s head flew off into the distance, leaving his body behind. With that, the Dragon Knight’s commander died.

.....

“.....”

Luo Lin stood there as his subordinates were killed one by one, but he didn’t dare make a move. Suddenly, he looked towards Xi Fu and smiled. “Goddess Xi Fu, how about I send a greeting gift to you?”

Xi Fu smiled. "If you want. Don't make me wait too long!"

.....

Luo Lin turned around and charged forward. He raised his blade and threw a slash!

"Peng!"

Snow fluttered and Frost stood there. Blood dripped from her chest. The Severing Beauty sword in her hand was broken. She stared emptily at Luo Lin and muttered, "Is this your answer?"

Luo Lin let out a crazy laugh, "Frost, sometimes, humans are forced to make a choice. Do not blame me!"

I sprinted forward, disregarding how low my health was. I activated [Dragon Transformation] and stared right at Frost. I could feel my heart being crushed, "No.... no...."

Frost looked past Luo Lin at me, her eyes filled with fondness and she smiled. "Goodbye...."

.....

"Pu...."

Blood splattered. In the next moment, Frost's head was taken by Luo Lin. Her body standing in the snow.

A blade stabbed into my heart and thousands of thoughts ran through my head. I leapt up and raised my sword at Luo Lin, "B\*st\*rd! B\*st\*rd!"

Luo Lin spun around and swept out his sword, "Leave!"

"Hong!"

I felt the intense flames burn my body but I still didn't retreat. I pierced my Dragon Reservoir sword forward, right into Luo Lin's chest. Blood flowed out, but Luo Lin didn't seem to feel anything. He laughed and threw a kick at my chest!

"Peng!"

I flew into the air across the wall. Luo Lin rose into the sky with Despair in his hand as he roared, "Youngster, if you want to die, then I will fulfill your wish!"

He suddenly dove down. I could feel the killing intent surrounding his Despair.

I raised both swords to parry the attack but I felt both my arms go numb from the impact!

“Peng peng....”

The Dragon Reservoir Sword and Zhen Yue Swords’ blades both snapped instantly. All I had left in my hands were two destroyed swords. Luo Lin threw another ferocious kick at me!

.....

“Luo Lin, that is enough. We’re leaving!”

Xi Fu had given the command from the sky.

.....

I fell right into the ruins of Dragon City. I didn’t even have the strength in my body to get up. All I could do was sit up and hold Frost’s body. She was ice cold and “Pa!” turned into a million pieces of light that scattered into the sky.

I reached out but I couldn’t even grasp a single piece of her. I looked up at the sky, tears overflowing.

“Ahh.....”

Grief overwhelmed me.

.....

If, dying once was enough to bring her back.

I’d die a million times.

# Chapter 583 Thundering Heavens

“Aooo...”

Beside me, the Ancient Heavenly Tiger nudged my hand with its soft head as though trying to comfort me.

“Sha sha....”

I could hear a pair of leather shoes trudging through the snow behind me. Wan Er placed her hand on my shoulder, “Alright, it’s over... it’s really over... “

I suddenly grabbed the broken Severing Beauty sword that lay beside me. It was covered in Frost’s blood. When I thought of her smile, tears quickly welled up in my eyes.

.....

The Dragon City Wall was a wretched scene. The walls had been sliced in half by Igoras’ slash. Almost all of the Ba Huang City soldiers that were on the city walls had died and blood dyed the ground. Angela was kneeling among the ruins. She glanced at Su Ke, Da Lin and the other Dragon City generals’ bodies and began to cry. Her shoulders shook, “Why.... why would it turn out like this. Brother, why would he betray the humans? He said that he would fight for the dignity of all humans until the very end....”

On the side, a young general softly said, “Your highness, we.... We should retreat. The Hybrid Demons will definitely attack again. At that point, we won’t be able to stand against their slaughter....”

Right at that moment, we suddenly heard the sounds of war drums coming from the south. In the distance, we could see an enormous army with battle flags waving in the sky. They all wore a fiery red armor. Furthermore, at the front, a 30 year old commander raised his long sword. He looked up at Dragon City and let out a sigh, “F\*ck, we came late. Dragon City has already fallen..... Luo Lin, Frost, they haven’t all died, have they?”

On the city wall, Angela slowly stood up. The soldier beside her, “Your highness, that... that’s the Tian Ling Empire Army. Prince Theodore has personally led the

Flame Dragon Army here, Tian Ling Empire's strongest...."

Angela's eyes were filled with despair, "So what? They're just here to split up Ba Huang City's territory... Father and Brother are all gone, and with that, Ba Huang City's power..."

"Your highness, then... then what should we do?"

"Have the entire army retreat to a camp outside of Ba Huang City. We must protect the capital!"

"Yes, your highness!"

.....

"Sha sha...."

Wan Er carefully helped me up. As I glanced at my surroundings, my heart ached at the sight around me. The old magnificent and stern Dragon City looked as though it was a field. Practically everything had been destroyed. Frost, Su Ke, and Da Lin had all died in battle. When I thought of Frost, my heart ached again. I staggered and nearly fell over.

"Li Xiao Yao....."

Wan Er looked at me with red eyes, "Don't be like this, I'm afraid...."

I smiled weakly at her, "Wan Er, I'm fine, I'm fine... I can take it... It's just, I just lost a master is all, an NPC...."

As I said that, tears threatened to fall again. To me, Frost wasn't as simple as an NPC.

.....

In the middle of the debris, a hand reached out. One of the female dragon City knights walked out of the debris, covered in injuries. She carried a sword that had already been broken. It was Frost's most trusted general——Qing Luo. She glanced at me, then began to shake. Tears dropped down her cheeks, "Lady Frost, she.... Did she already die?"

I silently nodded.

Qing Luo shook harder as tears ran down her face. After a minute, she looked up and said, "Lord, you're Frost's student. We.... what should Dragon City do

from now on? Do we still have a future?”

I felt my voice crack a little and said, “Frost had spent her entire life protecting Dragon City. Now that Frost has died, then I will take up her duty and do everything I can to protect the city. Qing Luo, I do not know for what reason the Hybrid Demon army retreated, but we must immediately heal the injured soldiers and repair the city. Every life saved counts. Let’s see how many people are still alive from Dragon City...”

“Yes, Lord Dragon Rider!”

Qing Luo searched my eyes, as though looking for consolation and reliability. Frost, Su Ke, and Da Lin had all died in battle, while Luo Lin had betrayed the empire. In all of Dragon City, I was considered the one with the highest rank. And so, I became the temporary leader of Dragon City.

.....

“Ahhh....”

I heard a cry from the ruined stones. I dashed over. Wan Er, Li Mu, and Wang Jian rushed over to help. We pushed away a large boulder. Below it, we saw the Ancient Hero Ran Min. His two legs had been crushed by an enormous boulder and his body was burned black. It was from the Enormous Dragon Fist, Igoras’ magic. Plus, Ran Min’s left arm also took a hit from the Eternal Moon Blade Xi Fu. When I was fighting with Luo Lin for the sake of Frost, Ran Min dealt with Xi Fu, Igoras, and Lei Ding the three kings all by himself.

I looked at Ran Min’s miserable state and said, “Are you ok?”

Ran Min looked at the ranking on my shoulder and grit his teeth, “You’re a Dragon Knight? Has Dragon City already fallen? I.... even when I fought to the death, I still wasn’t able to protect this city. I wasn’t able to fulfill my promise, right?”

I quickly shook my head, “No... no, not at all! We’ve already done all that we can...”

Right at that moment, a system notification suddenly rang through the sky. It continued on until everyone heard it. Li Mu, Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao and I all looked up at the sky in the north. Finally, this event that

lasted for 48 hours had finally ended. But in the end, the result was that we had lost....

“Ding!”

System Notification: It is with great regret that I notify the players, [Dragon City Defense] event had been failed. Dragon City is now considered no man’s territory. Luo Lin had betrayed the humans and has officially become the fifteenth Hybrid Demon King——Revered One – Luo Lin. In Dragon City, Frost, Da Lin, and Su Ke have all died in battle. The reward of all players who participated in this quest has decreased from 5 times to 3 times. Congratulations to the top ten players!

“Ding!”

System Notification: In this Ba Huang City event quest, the top ten players are: Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Simple, Cang Yue, Jian Feng Han, Cang Tong, Dancing Forest, Drunken Spear, Yan Zhao Warrior, General Li Mu, Thousand Suns over Snowy Lands. Of them Xiao Yao Zi Zai got the highest number of points: Level+5, Charm: +30, Gold: +300,000, and he has obtained the item [Thundering Heavens] (Holy Ghost Level 2), The player Simple has obtained the second ranked reward: Level+4, Charm+25, Gold+200,000, and has obtained the item [Princess Robe] (Divine Tier). The player Cang Yue has been awarded the third ranked rewards: Level+4, Charm+18, Gold+ 150,000, and obtained the item [Flame Beast Burst Raid] (Holy Ghost Level 1)!

.....

“Shua shua shua” I rose all the way to level 107. Beside me, Wan Er and Li Mu all rose at least 3-4 levels. Basically no matter if they had died or not, as long as they hadn’t been instantly killed by the monsters then they were still able to earn back the levels that had been lost. The rewards went from 5 times to 3 times, but it was still enough to amaze us.

I opened up my bag and saw in the corner a deep purple skill book. I took it out and held it in my hand. Lightning seemed to flow through the cover of the book. Furthermore, it was a Holy Ghost Level 2 skill book. Clearly, it had already surpassed the S, SS, and SSS, rankings. This should be the next set of rankings. Either way, the skill looked to be extremely OP——



[Thundering Heavens] (Holy Ghost Level 2): Accumulates the power of the Nine Heavens and summons a lightning dragon that damages all targets within a 100×100 radius. Furthermore, the Lightning Dragon has a penetration effect. Lasts for 7 seconds. The cool down is 6 hours. The damage is proportional to the user's attack power. Required Level: 100, Consumes 10 charm to learn, Required Class: Heavy Armor

.....

Without hesitation, I waved my hand over it to learn the skill. A new row now appeared on my skill list.

Li Mu clapped his hands and muttered, "It's finally over, even though we lost...."

Qing Qian looked towards the horizon in the north. Snowflakes danced in the sky and she blinked a few times, "Now that Dragon City has fallen, what will Ba Huang City do? Why haven't the Hybrid Demons gone after Ba Huang City then?"

I pointed to the south and said, "The Tian Ling Empire has already sent out reinforcement army. The Flame Dragon Army is the Tian Ling Empire's strongest branch, and is possibly the strongest army on the continent. The Hybrid Demon Army probably had some doubts. Plus, Luo Lin had just fallen, and he took 210,000 Ba Huang City soldiers with him. They're probably thinking of some way to demonize that branch. That requires time. The next step is to wait for the new changes."

"Look!"

Qing Qian pointed to the north and said, "Another crowd of monsters are coming... it looks like... wu, Level 1 Snake Warriors? There seems to be a thousand of them. What's going on? This event just finished and the Hybrid Demons already want to send their next round of attacks?"

Wan Er pulled her dagger out with a "Keng!" and shouted, "Prepare for battle! Have the players that revived in Ba Huang City to immediately come over. Even if Dragon City has fallen, we still must defend every inch of the earth!"

I gritted my teeth and dashed forward. I stepped onto the ledge of the wall

and saw the group of Hybrid Demons screeching. When I thought of the expression in Frost's eyes as she said goodbye, I felt as though my heart had been ripped out. It had hurt so much that I could barely breathe. I immediately activated my new skill. At that moment, the air around me began to spark with lightning. Clouds suddenly darkened the sky and an angry lightning dragon fell upon the Snake army!

"Hong hong hong..."

The mud, trees and stones all left the ground. Furthermore, more dragons descended from the sky and danced through the monsters. The lightning wreaked havoc. Within those 7 seconds, it actually instantly killed quite a few of the Level 1 Hybrid Demons. Furthermore, any of them that managed to survive were only left with critical health. One after another, their faces turned pale. They whipped out their halberds and screeched, "D\*mm\*t, how come they have such a strong force? Hurry up and tell the king. We cannot occupy Dragon City in such a short time!"

The group of Level 1 Hybrid Demons retreated like a tide. I still remained silent. Wan Er softly said, "Ay, they really do bully the weak and fear the strong..."

.....

At that moment, a System Notification appeared. It said that the Ba Huang City and Dragon City maps were going to be closed after 30 minutes and remain that way for 10 hours. Afterwards, the maps would be updated in a new format.

Yan Zhao Warrior from [Prague] brought a group of people and slowly strode over, "The battle is finally over. Li Xiao Yao, what do you plan on doing after this? What is [Zhan long]'s next step?"

I looked at him, and then glanced at the north, "[Zhan Long] doesn't have any plans currently. I, on the other hand, will be heading to the Hybrid Demon Territory."

"Eh...."

Yan Zhao Warrior was puzzled, "What are you doing in the Hybrid Demon Territory? Are you trying to die?"

My heart felt sour, "No matter what, I will find Frost's head. I cannot let her

remain there all by herself and suffer shame and loneliness..”

Yan Zhao was speechless.

# Chapter 584 The Future of Dragon City

Members of [Zhan Long Hall] ——

Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Reason: The Founder of [Zhan Long] and current guildmaster  
Yue Qing Qian, Reason: In the Battle of Jiu Li City and Ba Huang City, she received the second most points in [Zhan Long], and is a current Vice Guildmaster

Cang Tong, Reason: Placed second in the Hero's Rising Tournament, and is one of the Top Ten in the CBN Battlenet Rankings, lead the [Zhan Long:Defense Army] to help seize Dragon's Den

Cang Yue, Reason: [Zhan Long]'s numbers one mage, placed third in the top players for the [Dragon City Defense] event, undoubtedly the Damage Queen

.....

On the screen name, the four members of [Zhan Long Hall] were listed out. Li Mu just missed out on the cut, and the most likely candidate for the next member was him.

It was already afternoon and rays of sunlight broke through the window and scattered onto the desk. Warmth filled the air. I held a cup of coffee in one hand and looked at the empty plate that I had just finished, "The server should be done updating now, right?"

"Don't be so impatient...."

Wan Er sipped from a cup of juice and said, "We still have another half an hour or so. Besides, you want to go to the Hybrid Demon Territory to find Frost's head right? But... how much do you understand about the Hybrid Demon Territory? Have you prepared your equipment, items, and potions yet? To top it all off, do you even have a map of the Hybrid Demon Territory?"

I took a deep breath and said, "I have a general map of the Hybrid Demon Territory. Across from the Ice Ridge Mountains are the Bloody Plains and the Graveyard of the Heroes'. However, there's a lot of Hybrid Demons in the Bloody Plains, so charging through there will be more difficult. I'll first try going around through the Graveyard of the Heroes. North of the Bloody Plains is a

bridge called, "Spector's Ropeway". Through that rope bridge, I could pass through the abyss. If I keep heading north, I'll reach the territory of the Hybrid Demons.

Wan Er grinned, "Idiot, then do you know where Frost's head is?"

"I.... I don't know...."

Whenever I thought about that, I felt incredibly weak. In reality, I didn't have a single clue as to where it was.

Wan er smiled. "Nevermind, I'll help you research it. There should be some clues about it. I'll ask my master..."

"Wan Er's master?" I was stunned.

Dong Cheng smiled. "That's right, Wan Er's master. The Hermit God Elen. It's rumored that he has god level strength. However, not many have seen her fight. He has the ability to understand the laws of heaven and earth. He should know something about where Frost's body is. I say.. Brother Xiao Yao, you should at least tell Wan Er and I the truth. Do you want to revive Frost with her head?"

I pondered for a few seconds and then looked up at the two girls and said, "Even though I know that it is a crazy notion, but I.. I must do everything in my power there is to try. Even if there's no hope, but as long as I am in the game for one day, then I will try to help Frost revive."

Dong Cheng wryly smiled. "Frost really is lucky, to have such a good student like you. She has died without any regrets..."

I smiled bitterly, "Every time I think of the expression Frost had as she died, I feel like I am in some kind of nightmare. If I don't revive her, then I think I will always live in the shadow of this event for the rest of my life. Even if it is just a chain of numbers, it was enough to not let me sleep peacefully."

Wan Er looked out the window and said, "Idiot, you're always so serious about everything. There's no saving you now.... Don't worry, Dong Cheng and I will do everything we can to help you and support you. Just tell us whatever you need!"

"Yes!"

I nodded with a soft smile, “You guys really are great friends. At least I know that I am not alone. The way that Yan Zhao Warrior looked at me, it seemed as though I was going to the Hybrid Demon Territory to die....”

“Did you think it wasn’t?” Wan Er looked at me with a frustrated expression, “If there’s more than 7 Level 1 Hybrid Demons at once, then you’ll get instantly killed, even if you are on a horse, you’ll get killed all the same. Let’s not even mention the ones that are higher than Level 2. If you fought them one on one, then it’d be incredibly hard for you to kill one Divine Tier BOSS. Even if you could kill it, it’d be extremely dangerous. And so, Yan Zhao’s worry isn’t uncalled for. I recommend that you at least bring Dong Cheng and I. As well as Dancing Forest and Darling Duck. Then we can charge forth with a five man team. That way, the chances of victory are greater....”

I shook my head without hesitation, “No, this is personal business. I cannot drag you guys into it. Besides, at the moment, I’m the only one with a mount. If I take you guys, then my movement speed will decrease. That’ll just make it less convenient. I think I should go alone. That way, charging in and escaping would be much simpler. But I thank you for your intentions.”

Dong Cheng looked at me annoyingly, “Well well, so you’re abandoning us now. We really can’t love you...”

I couldn’t help but smile, “That’s right, after you get online, you should work on your fifth advancement quests. After this event, at least 10 of [Zhan Long]’s members can reach their fifth advancements, right?”

Wan Er nodded, “Just about. I’ll be heading to my master’s place anyway. While I’m there, I’ll help you ask about Frost’s head.”

“Ok! See you later in the game!”

“Ok!”

.....

I returned to my dorm and got online. I began preparing for my long trek.

“Shua!”

I appeared in the middle of Ba Huang City. It was not a field of overgrown grass. Not far from me, Qing Luo took a group of Dragon City warriors and was

looking for any broken weapons to make blades and armor for their brothers. In this day and age, iron was scarce. Damaged weapons and armor could be recycled to create new equipment. However, it looks as though the Dragon City soldiers still had quite a bit.

“Lord Dragon Rider!”

Once Qing Luo saw me, she sprinted over with her sword in hand and said, “My lord, I’ve already finished checking everything. There’s a total of 305 Dragon City soldiers that have survived. My lord, what should we do now? Should we continue guarding the city, or should we move our troops elsewhere?”

I replied, “Let’s move our troops to the Eastern Forest then. The beasts and river there make the area extremely fertile. Qing Luo, you need to recruit people from everywhere to boost the Dragon City strength. Also, recruit some chefs and laborers. When the time is right, we will rebuild Dragon City and continue to be the Guardian of the City.”

Qing Luo happily responded, “My lord, we... can we really rebuild Dragon City?”

I nodded, “Yes. Never give up hope. Before Frost died, at what point did she give up us and give up on Dragon City?”

Qing Luo smiled. “Yes yes! I understand my lord. It’s just....” She revealed a troubled expression and I asked, “Just what?”

“It’s just that, recruiting soldiers and laborers requires a large amount of Gold. Furthermore, we still need to buy horses and weapons. You should know, that the Lords of Ba Huang City won’t give us a single cent. This will all depend on ourselves. Dragon City is now a pile of ruins. All we can do is dig up a few thousand gold at most. But that is far from enough.”

I helplessly smiled and flipped through my bag, taking out 500,000 Gold. The bag was pretty heavy in my hands as I handed it to Qing Luo and said, “Here. That should be enough for you guys to last for a period of time. Afterwards, send people to Ba Huang City to find Princess Angela. For now, she handles the matters in the city. Battle Horses, weapons and the rest. Ba Huang City will definitely help us out on those. What you need the most right now are workers.

Quality over quantity, they must be strong. Dragon City's future rests on them."

"Yes my lord!"

Qing Luo blinked a few times and said, "My lord, what are your plans after this?"

I smiled. "I want to go to the Hybrid Demon Territory in the North."

"Huh?" Qing Luo was stunned, "My lord, you're heading to the Hybrid Demon Territory? That... what are you doing there? That is where the Hybrid Demons run rampant?"

I softly said, "No matter how dangerous it is, I have to go and bring back Frost's head... That's right, also make sure to take care of the ghost of Ran Min. Help him recover. Ran Min's battle power will be a great help for us."

"Yes!"

Qing Luo looked at me and said, "My lord, I wish you a good journey!"

"Yes!"

.....

I fished out a City Return Scroll and returned!

I then fixed up my equipment so that it was back in shape. Afterwards, I shopped around the plaza and bought quite a few Level 10 herbs and potions. Many of the herb pickers had discovered many herbs. Even though it was expensive, I still leveled up my Alchemy to level 10, thus gaining an almost endless amount of potions. Just one could recover 3500 MP. I then bought a few more level 10 red potions. I also prepared a lot of the Master Swordsman Cards to bring with me. They added both attack and defense. Using these cards in the Hybrid demon Territory was the best.

I continued to roam around the city for a bit. I took the Ancient Heavenly Tiger and my Flying Scythe Horse. As Ba Huang City's first player to ride a horse this was pretty eye catching. Almost everyone stole a second glance at me and my Flying Scythe Horse. After all, it was a Divine Tier mount. It was already much more imposing than the other mounts. To this day, Ba Huang City only had three mounts appear. One was my Flying Scythe Horse, and the other was a donkey infected with scabies and a wild ox. Clearly the Flying Scythe Horse was



much more dazzling.

Finally, after a while, I got some news. It came from my future girlfriend the Cang Tong, “Pig, I found some information regarding the Hybrid Demon Territory!”

“Yes? Hurry up and tell me!”

“Yep. My master said, that after Luo Lin took Frost’s head along with the 200,000 soldiers to the Hybrid demon army, his army was sent to the North of Firestone Canyon, south of the Graveyard of Heroes in the Revered One’s plains. In reality, Luo Lin and his 200,000 rebel force have already become one of the greatest forces the Hybrid demons have in the continent. If the humans launch a counterattack, then the first defense will be them! Don’t be rash yet. Afterwards, Frost’s head was sealed in ice and hidden within one of the seven maps of the Hybrid Demon Territory, the Storm Abyss and is guarded by Son of the Storm – Gawain, and the Fist of the Dragon – Igoras. If you want to get Frost’s body back, then you have to pass through those two obstacles. Pig, do you really want to go?”

I gripped a fist and said, “We have to go! If there’s any new information, Wan Er, you need to tell me!”

“Yes, I got it. Good luck!”

.....

After I finished replenishing my reserves, I leapt onto my horse and galloped out of the city. My robes fluttered behind me. The city quickly disappeared behind me. My path was already set. I was going to go through Dragon City and go straight through the Ice Ridge Mountains. I couldn’t go through the Bloody Plains. If I went around, I’d go straight through the Revered One’s Plains.

# Chapter 585 Herb Picker

The Flying Scythe War Horse whinnied and galloped towards Dragon City. It was incredibly fast. The trees from both sides of me flashed by. The Ancient Heavenly Tiger raised its claws and ran behind us. The little tiger was easily fast enough to catch up with us.

What was originally a 30-40 minute journey, the Flying Scythe War Horse managed to finish within 10 minutes. Along the road, the sight of me on my horse gained the admiration of the Ba Huang City players around me. Normally, there were already few heavy armor players that reached level 100, much less ones that had such a high tier horse like mine.

.....

The horse hooves hit the ruins from the city wall. I stood before Dragon City once again. There wasn't a single soul all around me. There was only a small team of Ba Huang City scouts roaming the area. They were carrying out a guard of Dragon City. Now that Dragon City had fallen, and was even cut in half by Igoras, it had already lost its ability to be used as a defense. However, Ba Huang City, couldn't just give up on this city.

A harsh wind blew past, fluttering my cloak. I gripped my Dragon Reservoir sword and softly touched the Ancient Heavenly Tiger's head with my left hand. I then stroked the mane of the Flying Scythe War Horse and softly said, "Let's set out!"

I urged my horse down the mountain. Even while the war horse was on a steep climb, it ran as though it were on flat grounds. With more energy and spirit than any other horse, it immediately reached the plains north of the Ice Ridge Mountains. In the distance, I could hear the sounds of the trees in the forest swishing. I reined in my ride. "Shua Shua Shua!" three iron spears pierced through the air, cutting right into the cliff in front of me. It was the level 1 Hybrid Demons, The Demon Hunters!

"Charge!"

I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword while my Ancient Heavenly Tiger followed behind. I swung the blade, throwing a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] into the dense thicket, chasing out three Demon Hunters. The Ancient Heavenly Tiger roared and raised its claws, throwing a [Flame Claw]. It followed the attack with a [Burstfire Raid] that exploded right on the three Demon Archers. I then pulled out my Zhen Yue Sword and began hacking at the three Demon Hunters!

One after another, damage numbers popped up. Of course the Demon Hunters didn't sit by and watch. They all raised their iron spears and threw them from a distance. "Keng keng keng!" The spears created sparks against my chest plate as they clashed. While I had a mount, my defense increased quite a bit, so I wasn't afraid against these Level 1 Hybrid Demons——

"2718 ! "

"2843 ! "

"2911 ! "

.....

Leveling up meant that my strength also increased. My 9000+ base defense was not just for looks. Even their [Spear Toss] only dealt around 3000 damage. This was far different from the initial 10,000 damage that I suffered. Furthermore, the [Spear Rush] attack was even more pathetic, dealing only 1000+ damage to me. That wasn't even enough for my Dragon Reservoir Sword's [Drain] effect to activate. All of that plus the havoc that my Ancient Heavenly Tiger God wrecked, I dealt with the three Demon Hunters within minutes, while I barely received any damage. I still had 77% of my health left, and so I didn't bother adding any heals or potions. I had the effect of [Chi You Body] and my recovery rate was impressive. Within a dozen seconds, I was back to almost full health and didn't need to waste any skills or potions.

I ignored all of the items that the three Demon Hunters dropped. My bag was already full of cards and potions. I was undertaking this journey alone, and the monsters wouldn't drop any potions for me. I couldn't give up precious herbs like that for the sake of one or two low level equipments. That would be too unreasonable.

The Flying Scythe War Horse reared up and whinnied, beginning our journey around the Bloody Plains. This time, the Hybrid Demons on the Bloody Plains were far more active. Within less than an hour, I had already killed over a hundred Level 1 Hybrid Demons. After the Hybrid Demon Army fell at Dragon City, all of these low level demons grew more arrogant and aggressive and were moving out of the Bloody Plains en masse.

.....

“Sha sha.....”

When my warhorse stepped onto the black dirt, I became more cautious. I opened up the big map and the small map to familiarize the situation. I was already starting to get close to the Graveyard of the Heroes. According to the information the beautiful little miss gave me, I was getting close to the Revered One's Plains. At least it wasn't far.

“Grrr....”

The Ancient Heavenly Tiger roared and suddenly rushed into a row of bushes. I steered my horse and rushed in to follow it. At that moment, I saw the rays of the falling sun illuminate the land around us. In the distance, a wild plain appeared. The system then gave a notification: Please take caution, you have entered a dangerous map——The Revered One's Plains!

“Mother..!”

I tightened my fist. This Revered Ones Plains was Luo Lin's new territory? That b\*st\*rd killed Frost, and even cut her head off to give as a gift to the Hybrid Demon King. For the sake of power and strength, Luo Lin had given up on all of the laws of a Knight. He was neither just nor fair, killing his friends and subordinates. That kind of trash should be cut into a thousand pieces!

Of course, I couldn't be too rash. Luo Lin was now the fifteenth King of the Hybrid Demon Territory. According to the newest information on the forums he was at least a Demon Harvest Level BOSS. If I tried to kill him on my own then I would die without a question. Plus, I was going into such a dangerous map on my own, I had to lie low. My most important task now was to find Frost's head!

I urged my horse forward and slowly entered a plain of wild grass that grew as

tall as a man. Once we entered, we immediately went into [Camouflage].

In the distance, I could see battle flags waving in the wind. Just south of the Revered One's Plains was a black nameless city. It had just been created not long ago. Camped around it was a troop of demonized soldiers. There were even black hearted merchants that came in and out of the city for trade. Most of the merchandise was human, moon elf, and barbarian slaves who were clearing the grounds and cutting wood. Luo Lin was a prince of humans and had not yet given up the human lifestyle. He was probably planning on rebuilding the productive capability and human technology in the Revered One's plains in his new empire.

Outside of the city, I could easily tell that the garrisoned troops were Ba Huang City's Imperial Army soldiers. The insignias on their shoulder had not changed at all. If I wanted to get through these plains, I had to pass through this city. It had already been built into a fort. There was a 20 meter high wall that ran along the road and was heavily guarded. There was no other way to get through. The only way in was through the great gates of the city.

I took a deep breath and strode towards the city. I'll try to mix in. If worse comes to worst, then I'll just charge through!

.....

On the plains outside of the city were crowds of NPC that continuously flowed in through the gates. I glanced at them from a distance. First watch carefully and then act.

Very soon, three barbarians who held a battle axe, long sword, and blade respectively walked to the city. Ten Imperial Soldiers surrounded them. One of the officers roared, "Who are you. How dare you trespass into this royal territory. Do you not know whose territory this is?"

The barbarian carrying the battle axe smiled. "I know, isn't it that Prince Luo Lin's territory.... Lord, us three are just soldiers from Dragon City looking for a safe place. In Ba Huang City, we've killed people and are now being ostracized and so we want to join the Revered One's empire and work for him. Please, lord, let them know!"

The officer glanced up and down at the barbarian and smiled. "Alright then.

Its very easy to become one of the citizens of the Revered One. However... you must understand how to show some respect, right?”

“Of course....”

The barbarian walked over and held out a heavy bag full of coins. The officer counted out the coins and smiled. “Enter. And may the Revered One be at your side!”

After another few minutes, a female knight wearing tattered clothes dashed right to the gate. She wore a hood over her head and a long sword at her waist.

“Halt!”

The NPC officer walked over and roared, “Who are you? Take off your hood!”

The female knight took off her hood, revealing the face of a beautiful young moon elf. Her eyes however were extremely cold as she hissed, “Get out of my way, my name is Odelia...”

The NPC shuddered, his face paling, “The Ambusher, Odelia? Ah... it’s the Holy Domain Assassin that is being wanted throughout the seven empires... what are you doing here?”

Odelia smiled. “Don’t worry, I just smell the scent of gold. I won’t kill Luo Lin because of his bad odor. I heard that the Dark Elves are about to start a war with the Hybrid Demons. I’m thinking that this will be good for business. Do not block my way. I’m meeting with the Eternal Moon Blade – Xi Fu. Hopefully there, I’ll find business with a lot of gold!”

As she said that, Odelia glared at him and said, “Do not block my way or else I will kill you. Even Luo Lin won’t be able to save you!”

The NPC officer grit his teeth and pointed behind him, “Lady Odelia, please enter. The gates of the Revered One will always remain open for you!”

“Haha, now you’re being obedient....”

Odelia grinned and lead her horse into the city.

.....

“Let’s go!”

I patted the neck of my Flying Scythe War Horse and urged it to walk forward slowly. The Ancient Heavenly Tiger followed right behind us. We had to mix right in. I didn't have much time left. Who knew what these Hybrid Demon Kings would do with Frost's frozen head. I heard that after a person has died, their soul power wouldn't remain in the human world for long. I needed to bring her head back before her soul enters into the cycle of rebirth.

When my horse reached the wall, the NPC officer stared at me. He had just let in a group of barbarians that were herding sheep. He walked over with a few soldiers and roared, "Youngster, who are you? You.. you carry the Ba Huang City insignia! D\*mn\*t! You must be a spy that Angela sent here, isn't that right? I will crack your helmet open and see just who you are! Immediately arrest him! Take him back for interrogation!"

I moved my hood away and smiled. "Do not misunderstand. I'm just a regular adventurer. My purpose in the Hybrid Demon Territory is very simple. I... I'm here to pick herbs!"

# Chapter 586 Odelia

“Herb Picker?”

The NPC officer looked at me and coldly laughed, “A Ba Huang City adventurer coming to the Hybrid Demon Territory to pick herbs? Do you think I’m stupid? You must be a spy! Otherwise, provide proof!”

I fished out my alchemy job certificate and said, “This, is this enough proof?”

“Alchemy proof, anybody can get that!”

“Is that so?”

I smiled and pulled out the Dragon Reservoir Sword on my back. “Keng!” the sound of Saint Tier long sword being unsheathed was impressive. It was even enough to make that NPC hesitate. I then took out my bag and grabbed 1000G of gold. I waved the bag in front of him and then threw it to him, saying, “I heard that there was a strange type of flower in the Hybrid Demon Territory that can be used to create miracle pills. And so, I definitely cannot miss a chance like this....”

“Wah....”

The NPC officer weighed the bag of gold in his hand and then smiled. “Seeing as you’re just an herb picker, then there’s not much else I have to say. Here is a Safe Passage pass for anywhere within the Revered One’s territorial bounds. I hope that you find that precious herb from the Hybrid Demon Territory, or some kind of thousand year old bones. Ha ha...”

I received a black metal pass and gave a quick nod. I pulled on my horse’s reins and led it into the city.

Behind me, the NPCs began to talk. After those greedy humans had been demonized, they seemed to have increased their appetite for gold. No wonder it was so easy to sneak in——

“Congratulations my lord. With just one person, you got 1000G!”

“That’s right. Youngsters, I’m going to Ba Huang City soon to marry a new



wife. That way... I will never be alone on those cold nights... hahaha!"

"But my lord, after we drank the Demon Soup, we've lost the ability to reproduce. It's already the seventh day I woke up this morning without any wood..."

"D\*mm\*t, how could I have forgotten about that!"

.....

I put the hood back over my head and covered my face. I then took my Ancient Heavenly Tiger and Flying Scythe War Horse and strode into the city. There were humans and Hybrid Demons scattered everywhere. I never would have imagined that it was possible for humans to do business with the Hybrid Demons, and even converse! There were even a few humans who were selling other humans. They had a line of young female moon elves tied together on a rope. The world that this game created was just too savage!

I quietly walked forward and made sure to stay low. Finally, I reached the northern gate of the city. In the distance, another gate officer walked over and roared, "Traveler, hand over your Safe Passage Pass, or else you will be put to death!"

I fished out the pass from my pocket and said, "Is this it?"

"Yes. Hand it to me and then I'll let you pass!"

I handed the pass over to the officer and then urged my warhorse forward, galloping out of the city gates. In that split second that I dashed away, one of the soldier roared, "Do not let him go. I recognize that b\*st\*rd. He was one of the adventurer's at Dragon City that helped Frost! I heard that.. That he was Frost's student! He's really strong. If he's here, that means he wants to take revenge for Frost!"

"What!?"

The officer was furious, "Men, chase after him and kill him! Send for the troops and prepare for pursuit! We must kill him and take his head! If we do, then we'll be rich from the rewards!"

I pulled out both swords and angrily slashed the two soldiers in front of me. A

combo attack exploded and I shouted, “You traitors of the human race, die!”

My Ancient Heavenly Tiger also joined in the fray. My Dragon Reservoir Sword and Zhen Yue Sword each cut off a guard’s head. However, the officer behind me had already brought another crowd of soldiers charging over. They were all Thunder Tier monsters and had around 50-80,000 health. The gate officer was a demi BOSS and had around a million health. He wasn’t much stronger than a Level 5 Hybrid Demon.

I took the chance to charge out. As I was on the warhorse I immediately spun around in my seat and raised my hand, casting [Great Realm of Desolation] onto the gate officer. The skill blasted right through him, causing him to raise his sword and charge at me.

I sent a command and my Ancient Heavenly Tiger used [Burstfire Raid] into the crowd of NPCs while I focused on the attacks of the gate officer. I retreated as I fought. After I retreated around a hundred meters, I had finally whittled the gate officer’s health down to critical. His expression grew flustered, “D\*mm\*t, this b\*st\*rd is really strong. I’m not his equal! Retreat, we must have the Hybrid Demons in the city come and pressure him!”

I smiled coldly, “You want to leave?”

I raised my left arm, activating [Dragon’s Hook]. “Shua!” It pierced through the gate officer’s body as he ran. I then activated it to retract, bringing him right to me. With a slash of my Dragon Reservoir and Zhen Yue Swords, “Ka Cha!” his head flew off. I then grabbed it and raised it in front of the soldiers, “Tell Luo Lin, that one day I will be back for his head for Frost!”

I then hung the head on my war horse’s neck and urged it forward. Behind me, the gate opened up and a group of Imperial Army Cavalrymen thundered out. The knight at the front waved his spear and shouted, “Charge! Cut him to pieces. We cannot let that b\*st\*rd go. Otherwise, if King Luo Lin finds out, then we’ll all die!”

I laughed and commanded my Flying Scythe Horse to gallop forward at full speed. Each second took one point of stamina, but that was of no consequence at the moment.

The Flying Scythe Horse’ movement speed was incredibly fast. After all, it was

a Divine Tier BOSS mount. Very soon, we lost the NPC cavalymen. A little further in front of us was the wilderness. Once I entered into the forest, I immediately activated [Camouflage]. The cavalymen followed me in, and began to scout the area for a long time. One of the officers shouted, “Split up! We must continue the search. No matter what, we have to find that b\*st\*rd and cut him to pieces!”

.....

I ignored those Revered One’s cavalymen’s pursuit and continued heading north. The first step of my plan was complete. I had managed to pass through Luo Lin’s territory and go around the Bloody Plains. Yup, if I continue North for another hour, then I’ll head west. After that, I’ll end up in the legendary Hybrid Demon Territory’s Seven Great Maps.

“Ji ji....”

A black figure suddenly flashed across the sky. The grass waved slightly, as though noticing something. The thing suddenly dove downwards. But I had already seen the monster coming. It was a Plunderer, a Level 3 Hybrid Demon. It was a demon that had wings and thirsted for blood!

I raised my arm and activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

“7312 ! ”

In that one attack, the Plundered immediately fell downwards. I then ran forward and raised my left hand, pointing the Zhen Yue Sword at its back before charging forward. I threw the monster straight at the ground. The Flying Scythe War Horse whinnied and then reared up, stomping onto the Plundered while my Ancient Heavenly Tiger activated [Flame Claw] and pounced forth. I quickly threw another seven or eight slashes. Under the assault of both man and pet, this Plundered immediately died and even dropped an Emperor Tier leather boots. I however, paid no attention to it.

Before I could even celebrate, I heard another “Ji ji” in the distance. I looked up and was nearly shocked to death. A whole crowd of Plunderers were coming at me. There were at least a hundred. If they all came at me, then just one round of attacks was enough to kill me! Under so many attacks, even my 40,000 health and 9000+ defense would be useless!

I quickly collected my Ancient Heavenly Tiger and stroked the mane of my Flying Scythe War Horse. It slowly knelt to the ground. Now, both man and horse quietly hid in the brush, not even releasing a breath. With that we entered into foliage with [Camouflage] and watched as they then sent Plunderers out to search. When it finally quieted down, I waited for another ten minutes before relaxing and calling out my Ancient Heavenly Tiger. It wasn't until then that I continued with my trek north.

After walking for around half an hour, I suddenly heard the sounds of hooves beating the ground. Following that, a man shouted, "The recon team found some tracks left by a horse. He must be hiding around here. I suggest, my lord, that we search this forest. If we do that, then we'll definitely be able to capture him!"

"Alright, commence the search!"

I looked up and stared through the forest. I saw a large group of Level 4 Hybrid Demon Sword Masters standing outside of the forest. There were at least ten thousand. It was on the same scale as when they were attacking Dragon City. Motherf\*cker, just for the sake of searching for one person. Isn't this overestimating me a little? On top of that, the commander of the Sword Mages was a general that rode on a flaming beast. He wore a suit of fiery armor and carried a battle ax—

[Ax Blade – Sterry] (Divine Tier BOSS)

Level: 110

He was a valued general under the Revered One Luo Lin and is one of the Hybrid Demon commanders.

.....

Motherf\*cker, Luo Lin really is reaching the heavens in a single leap. After he became a Hybrid Demon King, he actually obtained the servitude of such a high level BOSS. I definitely couldn't provoke this Ax Blade Sterry. Not only him, but the countless Sword Masters that he brought with him. Nevermind, escaping was most important. I locked onto the north and urged my battle horse forward, entering into the charging state. The horse's speed increased by 150% and I practically flew through the forest.

“Shua!”

A wave created by the axe passed through the forest. Before I ran too far, four of the Hybrid Demon Sword Masters appeared before me. They had already noticed me and charged right over with their swords raised, “You reckless youngster, daring to trespass in the north. Did you think that the Hybrid Demon Territory was a place that you could enter and leave as you please?”

I didn’t respond and turned my horse around, charging right over. I swung both of my swords and slashed right at a few of the Sword Masters. The Ancient Heavenly Tiger also continuously activated all of its skills. [Flame Roar] surged through the forest and the Sword Masters constantly had damage numbers pop up. At the same time, however, their attacks also landed right onto me and my little tiger.

“Shua!”

“+7992 ! ”

“+1500 ! ”

.....

I spammed [Cleansing Rain] while using [Drain] at the same time and quickly killed two of the Sword Masters. I then took the chance to make my retreat while the third Sword Master followed close behind.

Even worse was when two flying mounts appeared in the sky. It was the Sword Spirit Dragon Riders, Level 7 Hybrid Demons. Behind them, were hundreds of thousands of Sword Masters!

.....

“F\*ck....”

I cursed under my breath and urged my horse forward. At the same time, I hacked two of the Sword Masters to death. Pain seared across my back as one of the Sword Spirit Cavalrymen threw a charge right at me!

“12828 ! ”

So painful! They live up to their name as Level 7 Hybrid Demons!

“Ha ha, youngster. Die!”

Behind me, the Ax Blade suddenly roared. Flames began to rise off of his ax and he threw it right at me. The power of it was terrifying.

I immediately turned around and began my defense. Despair filled my heart. The speed of the pursuit from these NPC was just too high. It was far above what I had initially imagined.

Then, right as I was about to give up, a beautiful figure suddenly passed by. It stopped right in front of me and pulled out a sword that slashed outward!

“Keng!”

That one attack knocked away the slash from the battle axe. The girl glanced at me and said, “He he, you’re pretty gutsy....”

As she said that, she raised her cape and “Hua!” covered me. The two of us immediately entered into [Stealth] mode. Then, I felt someone pull my arm and I fell off my horse. We dashed forward and I could hear the wind rush past my ears. In the blink of an eyes we traveled extremely far. All I could do was stare, and mutter, “Odelia....”

“Oh, you actually remember my name?” She asked with a smirk.

# Chapter 587 Poison Dragon Bait

I glanced behind me and saw Sterry raise his ax. He brought a group of Demon Sword Masters and stood at the edge of forest. His eyes glared coldly as he roared, "That... that's Odelia's Cape of Invisibility. D\*mm\*t, why did that woman get involved with the battle between the Hybrid Demons and Ba Huang City? Doesn't she only care for gold?"

One of the Demon Sword Masters said, "My lord, Odelia's personality is extremely whimsical. It's hard to predict what she'll do next. Maybe she knows that youngster? Or, she knows Frost who was killed and so she's helping Frost's apprentice?"

Sterry grit his teeth, "No matter what, seeing as Odelia is helping him, then she is now our enemy. Spread out and pursue them. Even if she has the Cape of Invisibility, it won't be enough to protect that evil youngster. He dare trespass in the Hybrid Demon Territory. He's questioning the power and dignity of our Dark Powers!"

"Yes my lord!"

.....

A group of Demon Sword masters spread out and began to search for us. In the sky, Level 7 Hybrid Demon Sword Spirit Cavalrymen spiraled around in the area, searching for me. Looks like the Hybrid Demons of the Revered One are ready for war.

"Hua hua..."

I heard another swishing sound and Odelia grabbed my arm again. My feet left the ground by two meters and we flew forward. After flying a distance, she finally uncovered the cloak and our figures appeared in the plains. She, however, kept her pretty face hidden under the hood of her heavy cloak and smiled as she looked at me, "Youngster, you probably are wondering why I would save you, right?"

I nodded, "Yes."

Odelia laughed and stared into my eyes, “What value do you think you have to me? In terms of strength, even though you are considered strong among human adventurers, you’re still weak. I can toy you to death with a single thumb. In terms of looks, you.. Eh, actually you’re pretty handsome...”

She suddenly looked down, her cheeks slightly blushing. She then strode across the grass and looked up with a smile, “However, after I stepped into the Holy Realm, I’ve already lost interest in handsome men. Over hundreds of handsome men have died under my blade. And so, don’t even think about that...”

I calmly said, “Most importantly, I haven’t thought of much else. All I want to know is, why would you save me?”

Odelia grunted and smiled. “Actually, I saw the money you handed out to those guards. You’re quite extravagant, aren’t you? That heavy pouch of money should have a lot of gold right? And so, now that I’ve saved you, shouldn’t you give me a gift in return? You should know, I’m an assassin. I earn most of my money from killing people and not saving. Consider yourself lucky today.”

I wryly smiled. “Alright. And here I thought you were fighting for justice. I never would have imagined...”

“Cut the small talk. If you’re grateful then give me money!”

“How much...”

“How much is your life worth?”

I pondered for a second and then fished 2000 Gold from my bag and handed it to her. When Odelia saw the money, she grinned widely and laughed sweetly, “There you go. This is more like a Dragon Rider. Looks like Frost chose wisely when she made you her apprentice. Too bad, when Frost took you as her student, she never thought that she would die so early.”

I grit my teeth, “Odelia, even though I am grateful for you saving me, I will not allow you to slander Frost!”

“Oh?”

Odelia gave me a puzzled look. Finally, she grinned, “Looks like, Frost is very



important to you, isn't that right?"

I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword and summoned my Flying Scythe War Horse again. I then softly said, "What do you think? I came to this Hybrid Demon Territory for the sole sake of finding Frost's head. I want to return her to her home and I will do it at any cost."

"So it was like that..."

Odelia seemed to fall into deep thought. She then quickly smiled at me and said, "To be honest, I could tell that your armor and blade are very strong. Seeing as you came into this dangerous territory alone, I can kill you and take all of the money that you have on you right now. The equipment that you have isn't as simple as 2000G. However.... I'm feeling pretty good today. How about this, do me a favor and that will make up for me saving your life. Afterwards, neither of us will owe each other anything and we can sleep peacefully at night. How does that sound?"

I thought about it for a second. This demoness' smile seemed sincere. But if she ever gets angry then it would be no joke. I definitely couldn't offend her. There were still more things I needed to do. I couldn't die here. And so, I nodded and said, "Ok, tell me. What do you need help with?"

Odelia smiled and pointed to the mountains in the north and said, "I want you to go with me into that map and help me get a rock."

"A rock?"

"Yup. Simple right?" She smiled at me and patted my shoulder, "Do it well and maybe my mood will be good again. I might even teach you a high level skill. Or.... the thing that all men want to do. You understand...."

She slightly lifted up the short leather skirt, revealing her pale thigh. She then softly stroked it with her hand and winked at me.

I shuddered. F\*ck your whole family..... Just where did this beautiful assassin get her charm? Are the developers trying to kill us?

I nodded and said, "Let's go then, and see what kind of rock you want me to get first!"

“Ok!”

.....

And so, Odelia walked forward. She hid her pretty face under the hood once again. I urged my horse forward and followed behind. But even with my movement speed, I still couldn't catch up with her. This type of Holy Domain NPC was just too strong. Even her movement speed was nearly impossible to catch up with. My Flying Scythe War Horse galloped forward at full speed for 20 minutes. At that point we had passed through a set of mountains made up of red rock. I then heard a bell ring inside my ear——

“Di!”

System Notification: Please take caution, you are entering a dangerous map ——Territory of the Wild Dragon Tribe!

Map Introduction: During the Ancient Times, the Dragon Tribe ruled the earth. None of the humans dared to get near this godly tribe of beasts. Then, when the humans, moon elves, and elves began to learn martial arts and magic they began to get stronger. As the dragon tribe's rule suffered a threat, more heavenly dragons were killed by the strong human warriors. When Dragon City fell, so did their rule and the Heavenly Dragon Tribe had no choice but to mix with humans and lower themselves to be their mounts. However, there still remained one group of high level dragons that left the Dragon City who left to go to a distant land, creating the Wild Dragon Tribe and Wild Dragon City. In that city, there were countless dragons who had extremely high attack and didn't get near any strangers.

.....

Looking at the introduction to the map, I cautiously looked at my surroundings and said, “Why do I feel like... coming to a place like this to get a rock won't be as simple as I thought? Odelia, just what are you planning?”

Odelia smiled and then make a smooching face while smiling, “Don't worry, I wouldn't harm you. You should know, finding a man with determination, a strong body and incredibly skillful is very hard. How could I let you die?”

I nodded hesitantly, but I could hear my heart pounding. Yea right she was

reluctant. Just how many cents was I actually worth in her mind?

Right at that moment, I suddenly heard the roars of a dragon. Right afterwards, a pillar of flame rose into the sky. Odelia immediately turned around and threw her cloak of invisibility over me while holding me. She then softly said, "If you don't want to die, then don't say anything. That's the Fire Dragon Guard.... Hmph, the Wild Dragon Tribe really are starting to strengthen their forces!"

I was stunned, "What did you say?"

"Shh!"

"....."

A few minutes later, the Fire Dragon turned to look around the area. He blinked a few times and surveyed the area for longer. Finally, he turned around and flew into the distance.

It wasn't until then that Odelia relaxed and said, "Hurry, after the Fire Dragon Sentry leaves, then five minutes later the Ice Dragon will come to take his place. That is our only chance to get into the Wild Dragon Territory!"

Without any hesitation, I charged forward at the heels of Odelia. I looked at the map. Either way, if I wanted to get to the Stormy Abyss, I'd have to pass through the Wild Dragon Territory. Otherwise, I'd have to pass through the Bloody Plains, and that was a risk I wasn't willing to take. I just had to brace myself.

As we ran, we went deep into the Wild Dragon Territory. Not long after, Odelia turned around and placed her hand on my shoulder, "Listen well, there's a poison dragon that is hidden not too far ahead from here. It's a flying type and specially targets beasts that pass through here, or humans. However, I do not know where he is hiding. We have to kill him in order to enter the Great Hall of the Wild Dragon Territory. And so... youngster, you charge your horse forward and do not look back, nor get scared!"

I shuddered, "You're making me bait?"

"Well lookie here, you really are smart!"

“Do I have any other choice?”

“What do you think?” She slowly pulled out the long sword on her back and smiled evilly. Motherf\*cker, I couldn’t offend her!

.....

I didn’t say anything else and raised my sword, urging my horse forward. When we galloped through parts of the forest and the crushed rock, an enormous shadow suddenly passed over us. Due to my cautious nature, I ran while glancing at the situation around us. All I could tell was that something had noticed me. If it wasn’t Odelia, then it was that Poison Dragon!

Just as I expected, less than two minutes later, a “Hua!” sounded out from the forest and a green dragon flew into the sky, baring its claws. It grabbed onto a tree and pushed off, charging straight towards me. It widened its mouth and roared, its fangs dripping with poison.

“He’s coming!”

As I was on the warhorse, I activated [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost Armor]. At the same time, I turned around and activated [Binding Chains] on this Level 115 Saint Tier BOSS!

“Peng!”

“MISS ! ”

The dragon was just too far away, the [Binding Chains] couldn’t reach, missing the target!

I then raised both of my swords and turned my horse around to charge. Motherf\*cker, making me be the bait? No chance! I wasn’t planning on surviving in the Hybrid Demon Territory, but no matter what the enemy is, the only option was to take the initiative!

# Chapter 588 Dragon God Essence

“Shua!”

My Dragon Reservoir Sword slashed through the air, aiming straight at the flying dragon’s abdomen. I raised my Zhen Yue Sword and “Keng!” parried an attack from the dragon’s claws. Then, with a push, I rammed the claws away. If I couldn’t even deal with a Saint Tier BOSS, just how was I supposed to retrieve Frost’s head from the Hybrid Demons?

I blocked the attack with my blade and completed seven continuous attacks at once. The Poison Dragon roared in pain. In terms of attack power, it was far from my level. But at that moment, that trash raised its head and hurled [Poison Spray]!

“Pa!”

I felt my face start to burn as it was covered by the poison. My health quickly dropped in seconds. I immediately cast [Cleansing Rain] and used [Heal] to keep my health up. Despite this, it seemed that I was not able to keep up with the rate at which the poison sucked away at my health. I didn’t have a spell like [Purification] and had no way of vaccinating this poison’s effect. There was no other way. All I could do was try my best to survive. I activated [Halberd Flame] and bore with the poison as I charged forward.

.....

Right as my health dropped below 30%, Odelia finally arrived. She leapt up, both of her hands gripping her sword and she channeled her power straight into its blade. As she descended from the sky, she stabbed the blade through the Poison Dragon’s head. “Ka Cha!” it pierced right through and the Poison Dragon’s health bar immediately vanished before my eyes. It cried out and fell to the ground. “Peng!” the heavy body now lay lifeless on the forest floor.

My jaw dropped as I stared at Odelia.

Odelia flashed a smile at me and used my Ruler’s Mantle to wipe the blood off of her blade, “What’s wrong? Isn’t my killing technique top grade?”

I shook my head, “No... just, why did it take you this long to get here?”

“Oh...” Odelia plucked a small blue flower from her hair and smiled. “Just now in the grass I saw a really pretty flower and went to pick it. So, does it match my cute blue cape?”

I nearly coughed up blood, “In your mind, is my life just that worthless!?”

“No not at all....”

She reached out and pointed at my chest with a smile, “Maybe in your next life, I’ll be willing to be the apple of your eye. Such that whenever you look in the mirror, you will use the most loving eyes to gaze at me.. Ever since I met you, I have known, you are even more important than my own life!”

I groaned, “What are you talking about? That sentiment level isn’t much higher than some wild rabbit hopping in the forest, right?”

“Oh wow....”

She smiled. “You don’t have to be so cautious of me. I’m truly confessing to you! Hurry up and let’s set out. We’re not too far from the Great Hall....”

I turned my horse around. As I recovered my health, I said, “Didn’t you say that we were going into the Wild Dragon Territory for an insignificant piece of rock? Then why do you have to go to the Great Hall? Why does it sound like nothing good is going to happen there?”

Odelia looked as if she didn’t care about my questions and just looked up at the sky, “The moon is really round!”

I said, “That’s the sun!”

“Ah, the sun is really round. I like the feeling of its warm rays!”

“.....”

.....

After we walked through the forest for another couple of kilometers, I noticed that the map in front of us was completely red. That meant to say that if I went in with my level and equipment, I would die for sure.

“Careful!”

Odelia swung her cloak over me again. Right above our heads, seven dragons were scouting via the air. They were all dragon tribe members that were protecting the Great Hall. As expected, this place was practically hell!

“Sha sha...”

When we reached the border of the forest, I could see the markings made by an axe on the Great Hall. Dragon Nests surrounded the area. Right at the center was a raised stand that held a crimson crystal rested at the center of it. It was around the size of a soccer ball. What was it....? I searched the game forums very quickly and found a description——

[Dragon God Essence] : When the last Dragon God died, his strength accumulated into this crystal. It is now a treasured artifact that represents the strength and bloodlines of the Dragon Tribe. It is the most precious treasure in the entire Dragon Tribe.

.....

“That rock you want me to steal, it wouldn’t happen to be that Dragon God Essence, would it?” I spun around to ask Odelia.

She smiled sweetly and patted my shoulder, “You scoundrel. Who said we were stealing it? We’re just borrowing it. I just think it looks interesting and want to play with it. Don’t worry, do I seem like the kind of person to trick others?”

“You aren’t?” I smiled.

As I said that, I turned around to look at the Dragon God Essence. Right beside it was an enormous black dragon deep in sleep. It blew soft flames from its nose while it dreamed. That fuckt\*rd was probably guarding the Dragon God Essence. Motherf\*cker, if I get discovered, wouldn’t I be burned to ash!?

“Hurry up!”

Odelia grabbed her long sword. Rivers of Holy Domain Energy began to circle around the blade. She reached out and pushed me forward, “Go ahead. Once you get that Dragon God Essence you’ll probably waken the Black Dragon. That b\*st\*rd isn’t really strong, but he is a descendent of the Holy Dragons. You cannot run back here, otherwise you’ll awaken the other high level dragons.

And so.... When you get the Dragon God Essence, you have to charge forward and use your sword to cut through the cliff. Afterwards, you'll see a small path. That leads to the Wild Dragon Territory's sacred land—— Heart of the Dragon Nest. Once you're in the Heart, find a way to get out with your skills. I'll wait for you at the entrance of the Wild Dragon Territory!"

As she said that, Odelia smiled. "You said that you want to retrieve Frost's head from the Stormy Abyss right... But I think that Igoras and Gwaine don't even think of you as a fly. Especially Gwaine, the Son of the Storm. He's extremely familiar with the Stormy Abyss, and he's number one in terms of his knowledge of meteorology. If he finds out, you won't even have the chance to run away. And so... if you help me now, I will help you too and do all I can to grab Frost's head for you. How does that sound. It's a pretty good deal right?"

I grunted, "It is pretty good. Even though I might be getting tricked into something, it doesn't seem as though I have any other choice. Odelia. Do not trick me, or else I will chase after you to the corners of the world!"

Odelia giggled, "Don't worry my little warrior, go!"

.....

I stopped thinking more about it and unsheathed both my swords. I urged my warhorse forward and summoned my Ancient Heavenly Tiger to fight with us. We charged right into the Dragon Tribe's Great Hall. At the same time, I swung my sword and activated a level 10 [Haste]. Like that, my Flying Scythe War Horse dashed into the Great Hall, its hooves bounding against the paved ground. We quickly arrived at the raised platform. However, before we even reached it, the dimension around us seemed to shift!

Behind me, Odelia's voice shouted, "Charge forward, I'll make a path!"

A blade flew out and "Keng!" it cut right through the dimension. More accurately speaking, it broke the dimension. Who knew how strong Odelia, this Holy Domain expert truly was. She even managed to easily break through a dimension that the Dragon Tribe had set up!

I then charged forward and let my Zhen Yue Sword fly forward. My Flying Scythe War Horse passed by the raised stand and I reached out, grabbing onto the Dragon God's Essence. I stuck it straight into my pouch, and bolted for the



exit. At that moment, the giant Black Dragon suddenly opened its eyes and blinked in fury, “D\*mned humans, you actually dare steal our Dragon Tribe’s treasure! You’re looking to die!”

I didn’t respond and charged towards the center of the Great Hall. Just as Odeila had said, there was a small path in the wall with ancient Dragon Script carved into it. Behind me, the Black Dragon roared and was flying straight at me. It blew a Dragon’s Breath, cutting the Ancient Heavenly Tiger’s health all the way down to critical, while I was left with 20,000. I staggered to the wall and began hacking at it!

“Peng peng...”

Sparks flew and slash marks appeared on the stone wall, but it did not penetrate the ancient stone.

“Kong!”

Behind me, I could see the Black Dragon had almost reached me. It was incredibly fast for its size. It swung its claws and dealt a quick attack right into me. All I could do was cross my swords in front and hoped to parry the blow. When the claws rammed into my blades, I was shot backwards. My defense was far too low for this!

“19391 ! ”

I quickly gulped down a potion and swung my two swords at the wall. Finally, a small crack formed. I raised my Cloud Stepping Boots and gave it a powerful kick!

“Peng!”

A two meter tall opening appeared in the broken rock. I quickly charged into it!

.....

It wasn’t until that moment that I noticed that the Dragon God’s Essence in my bag grew cold. If it was just a normal rock, then what was the point of stealing it?

“Peng!”

I heard a loud explosion and I looked behind me, only to see Odelia raising her long sword. She cut through the stand. In the midst of the ruined rock, there appeared to be another dimension that was protecting a flaming item. Odelia raised it in her palm and smiled. “Hmph, that sneaky Igoras. Did you think that I wouldn’t be able to get the Dragon God’s Essence?”

The Black Dragon suddenly spun around and roared, “D\*mm\*t, Odelia that female thief has taken the Dragon God’s Essence. Hurry, and grab her!”

As he said that, the Black Dragon roared at the sky and blew a flame straight into the air. Dragon’s began to roar from all around as they flew into the air.

Odelia raised the hood of her cape and suddenly disappeared into thin air. No matter how much the Black Dragon tried to sniff her out, it still couldn’t find any hint of Odelia’s presence. It then roared in Dragon Language, “Elite Dragon Guards, immediately enter the Heart of the Dragon’s Nest and find Odelia’s partner. Kill him!”

AT that moment, I heard several shrieks and three green spirit dragons descend from the sky. They were all around 3 meters long and incredibly nimble. They all had the claws and Dragon Breath skills. Furthermore, they were all Level 115 Saint Tier BOSSes. If they caught up to me, then I’d be screwed!

Without another thought, I turned around and charged down the path. Running as fast as I can!

.....

I took the rock in my bag and threw it out. Motherf\*cker, I really was tricked by that Miss Odelia.

# Chapter 589 Dragon Spit Pill

“Ji ji....”

Behind me, I heard the screeches of the three Dragon Spirits. They dug their claws into the cliffs as they crawled my way. I wasn't actually worried about Saint Tier BOSSes. Fighting them one on one wasn't a problem. But dealing with three at once, even if I were to launch a counterattack on them, I wouldn't necessarily survive. All I could do was run as fast as I could. The Flying Scythe War Horse's hooves beat on the uneven path. All of the obstacles had slowed down its speed. I did not however unmount. After all, it increased most of my stats. Having it was better than not.

.....

“Grr...”

The Ancient Heavenly Tiger roared and suddenly turned around. It threw a furious slash at one of the Dragon Spirits. Right afterwards, it dealt a [Fierce Roar]. The attack made the Dragon Spirit cry out as damage popped up——

“8721 ! ”

“7432 ! ”

“7716 ! ”

.....

I couldn't help but exclaim in my mind. This Ancient Heavenly Tiger was just too strong. It was nearly on the same level as me. After the [Flame Claw]+ [Fierce Roar], flames began to rise around its four paws and it activated [Burstfire Raid]. At the same time, it roared as it took an attack. [Flame Armor] activated and flames began to twist around the little tiger, greatly increasing his defense. The three Dragon Spirits used [Dragon Breath] on the Flame Tiger, but didn't deal much damage——

“3818 ! ”

“3417 ! ”

“3541 ! ”

.....

Once I saw that, I understood the reason. While the little tiger had [Flame Armor] activated, almost nobody could actually break its defense. Too bad it only lasted for 7 seconds and had a cool down of 30 seconds. However, that wasn't too bad. The most critical 7 seconds was enough. After all, in this situation it was enough to allow the Heavenly Flame Tiger to deal with three Saint Tier BOSSes at once!

Behind, the sounds of tiger roars and dragon whistles rang through the cave. I watched as the little tiger only had 30% of its health left. At that moment, I immediately summoned it back. The little tiger then dealt a final [Vampiric Strike], receiving 7000 health before turning around to run. It moved extremely fast. But the three Spirit Dragons that chased after it were also equally fast.

I urged my horse forward and opened the small map in my system. The Heart of the Dragon's Nest map was a long winding path that ended in the distance. At the end of the path was a crimson hall. Seeing that made my heart beat faster. There was another great hall at the end of the Wild Dragon's forbidden area. What treasures were hidden there?

Did I just strike gold?

“Pa!”

My Flying Scythe War Horse suddenly jumped, hurling me forward. The rugged path made me return to reality. Let's not talk about some hidden treasures, I needed to survive the attacks of these three Spirit Dragons first!

“Ji ji...”

The sound of the savage dragons' screeches traveled down the tunnel. The dragons of the Wild Dragon Tribe truly had no humanity. Two of the Dragon Spirits lunged right at me once they saw me. “Keng keng keng!” their claws scratched at the back of my Flame Prison Armor, bringing out three damage numbers. Motherf\*cker, the attack power of these Saint Tier BOSSes wasn't too bad, but if they all came at once, then I wouldn't be able to take it——

“6218 ! ”

“6633 ! ”

“7102 ! ”

.....

After the three strikes, the third Dragon Spirit spat out a [Dragon’s Breath]. In the next moment, I was submerged in a sea of fire. The terror of a heavy armor player against magic attacks appeared again——

“16363 ! ”

My health quickly dropped to the bottom!

I shuddered and quickly retreated, gulping down a health potion while activating [Cleansing Rain]+[Heal]. I then opened my hand and activated [Binding Chains], trapping one of the Dragon Spirits in place. I spun and locked onto the other Dragon Spirit and threw a [Blade Spin]. I then activated [Ice Domain], dealing damage to the third Dragon Spirit.

I battled as I retreated. But no matter what I threw at them, they kept following right behind me, slashing at me with their sharp claws and throwing [Dragon Breath]s. I continued down the path to the end. All I hoped was that there’d be an opening there so that I could get out of this enclosed place. As long as there was grass, then I’d be able to use my [Camouflage] and save myself.

However, I was disappointed. After running for 10 minutes, there wasn’t a single piece of grass on the map. Motherf\*cker, my health had already dropped below 40%. With my close combat, and long range skills plus the support of my little tiger, one of the Dragon Spirit’s health had finally dropped below 10%. After all, with my fifth advancement class and level 107 strength, killing a Saint Tier BOSS shouldn’t be a big problem.

.....

“Peng!”

I rammed the Dragon Spirit with critical health away from me and then retreated with my horse. My little tiger roared and slammed a claw onto the Dragon Spirit’s forehead while I activated two [Combo]s and a [Seven Star

Fragment Slash]. I dealt my strongest attacks, cutting the other two Dragon Spirits' health down to 23%. I then quickly turned around to run. If I didn't run, then I'd die right here.

When I turned around, I saw that the Great Hall was only around a hundred meters away from me. As I looked more closely at it, I noticed that it wasn't exactly a great hall. It was just a bunch of stone pillars encircling a room. At the foot of the pillars were some grasses that looked like precious herbs. Furthermore, there were elegant runes that shimmered off of the pillar. Streams of magic power flowed through the air, creating an enormous dimension. I was stunned. This didn't seem like some kind of treasure cove. It looked more like it was sealed away. Was there some kind of force that was hidden away here?

"Ji ji...."

The three Dragon Spirits cried out and chased up after me. Without any hesitation I lunged towards the pillars. I then suddenly turned around and made my counterattack. After all, there was no way I could retreat any more!

However, right as I took my stance, the three Dragon Spirits screeched in pain and a sharp blade flew right at them. They angrily glared at me, but seemed too afraid to come any closer. It seemed as though the place I was standing on made them terrified.

Once I noticed the situation, I felt a surge of happiness. Right on the spot I set up two [Azure Dragon Crossbow]s and first targeted the Dragon Spirit with critical health. I then raised my Zhen Yue Sword and activated [Blade Spin] while I swept my Dragon Reservoir Sword out, activating [Seven Star Fragment Slash]+[Great Realm of Desolation]. Like that, I relied on the mysterious power to kill the BOSSes.

.....

While my [Azure Dragon Crossbow] stood behind me, the enormous bloody god that stood behind it was too strong. It continuously shot arrows one after another that cut through the Dragon Spirits go ahead of it. The other two Dragon Spirits were infuriated but didn't dare come and attack. My little tiger stood guard by my side, its fur raised in aggression, as though it wanted to rip

the Dragon Spirits to pieces.

It was at that moment that I noticed that there were herbs all around the pillars. Furthermore, they were herbs that I couldn't see from the outside. They weren't within the normal grade herbs, but rather a Heavenly Tier Level 1 Herb. Something that has never appeared in Ba Huang City before.

[Dragon Spit Grass]: Heavenly Tier 1 Herb. Used to make pills. An extremely precious grass that only appears where Dragons roam

.....

I looked at my own job system page, My alchemy had already risen to Level 10. Once I break into the Heavenly Tier then I'll be able to make them into pills. In reality, after level 100, Alchemy and Herbalist skills could be mixed, leaving just Alchemy skills. I opened up my skills and saw [Dragon Spit Grass] at the top

——

Heavenly Tier Level 1[Dragon Spit Pill]: Dragon Spi Grass x3, Demon God Grass x7, Alchemy Stove x10

I brought a few tacks of Demon God Grass and I could get Dragon Spit Grass here. Yup, there was not much left. I just let my [Azure Dragon Crossbow] continue to shoot the remaining two Dragon Spirits while I took the chance to rush towards Heavenly Tier Alchemy....

I quickly picked the herbs, sweeping the area of all its Dragon Spit Herbs. I had collected around 200+ of them. Afterwards, I glanced at the Dragon Spirits that didn't dare attack and smiled, "B\*st\*rds, if you dare, then come after me!"

This provoked the two Dragon Spirits even more.

I began to create the potions. I used three Dragon Spit Grass, and 7 Demon God Grasses and 10 Alchemy Cauldrons to make these Heavenly Tier Level 1 Pills. I confirmed the recipe and "Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, you have created [Dragon Spit Pills] x2. Your alchemy mastery experience has increased by 20. Due to the fact that you are the first player to make Dragon Spit Pill, you have received Charm +11

.....

I was a little stupefied. In my memory, I had never gained so much experience in my alchemy at once. Furthermore, I didn't think that no one else had created a Heavenly Tier Level 1 potion. However, that made sense. It wasn't until after the Dragon City Defense Battle that players started rising up to level 100 and Heavenly Tier was activated only after that level. Plus Dragon Spit Pills were incredibly rare. It wasn't something that anybody could get. And so, the fact that I was the first made sense.

I opened up my bag and saw the red pill. I took it out and glanced at the stats. I was shaking with excitement. Motherf\*cker, this Heavenly Tier Level 1 Potion was really amazing——

Heavenly Tier Level 1 [Dragon Spit Pill] : Recovers 5000 MP and 10,000 Health, Uses: Dragon Spit Grass x3, Demon God grass x7, Alchemist Cauldron x10 . Cooldown is 30 seconds. After consumption, the user's health will increase by 20% for a period of time. Furthermore, it increases the user's Magic power and Attack power by 5%. Must be level 100 to use.

.....

Recovers 5000 Blue and 10,000 Red, and has a cool down that went from a regular potions 60 seconds to a mere 30 seconds. Just as I expected, after players reach level 100, these Heavenly Tier potions are truly top. Plus, it increases my health by 20% afterwards. In reality, one Dragon Spit Pill recovers around 18,000 of my health in total. This was a completely OP potion!

Excited, I quickly used up the rest of the Dragon Spit Grass, getting two stacks of the Dragon Spit Pills, a total of 200+. In the blink of an eye, I gained a lot more confidence in the Hybrid Demon Territory.

.....

However, right at that moment, the two Dragon Spirits were completely enraged. They didn't care anymore about the restricted area. Their claws began to glow red and they charged right after, screeching as they flew.

“Mother, so they're finally coming after me now?”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and laughed, “Come at me!”

My sword flashed and I threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash], breaking one of



the sealing pillars. At that moment, the pillar began to shake and the ground shuddered. In the next moment, all of the sealing pillars cracked and the sealing power evaporated.

“Ji ji....”

The two Dragon Spirits lunged over. They did not expect, however, for the stone wall to suddenly crack and a red claw rose up and “Peng!” slashed them to bits!

# Chapter 490 The Red Dragon Queen

“Ah!?”

I shuddered and couldn't utter a word. What was that thing?

.....

The earth shook violently and I couldn't keep my footing. I raised my sword and charged towards a pile of rocks, finally regaining my balance. The pile rose up slowly and an enormous person sat up from the Heart of the Dragon Nest. A crack appeared in the ground and dust scattered throughout the area. Behind the stone was an extremely pretty face. Around the face were green dragon scales. “She” suddenly shook her head, black hair appearing from out of the dust. As she raised her palm, dragon claws slowly retreated into her hands. She slowly opened her crimson eyes and stared at me. At the same time, I saw a line of words above her head. I was scared sh\*tless when I read it——

[Red Dragon Queen – Zhi Shu] (Vice God Tier BOSS)

Level: ???

Introduction: Red Dragon Queen, one of the Fire Guardians of the Saint Dragons. The members of the Red Dragon Tribe were considered to be of the highest class among the gods of the Dragon Tribe. And this Red Dragon Queen was even praised as being the most beautiful of the Dragon Tribe. However, in order to obtain the purest blood from the Gods of the Dragon Tribe, the Fist of the Dragon – Igoras ambushed the Red Dragon Queen while she was slumbering and sealed her in the Forbidden Area of the Dragon Tribe and forced her to give birth to an heir of pure blood. After being sealed for ten thousand years, the Red Dragon Queen has a very violent personality. Do not provoke her, otherwise you risk being torn to pieces.

.....

“Sha sha....”

I slowly retreated backwards, but the back of my armor hit the wall behind me. It was then that I realized there was no way for me to retreat. I looked at

the Red Dragon Queen's appearance, and felt my heart pound harder and harder. Motherf\*cker, that hill of rocks that I was standing on wasn't a hill but rather the Red Dragon Queen's left breast. F\*ck. Now that the stone skin began to turn green, the full chest trembled right in front of me. What the f\*ck was with that cup size!

I was done for. The Red Dragon Queen's rage after being forced to breed will probably end up on me!

My brain went completely blank. What was up with this. Life is too hard!

Odelia, I hate you!

.....

And then, right at that moment, the Red Dragon Queen's eyes rested upon me. Then in a voice garbled with dragon speech and human, she said, "Young human, I've already%#¥@&....Now, I #@%...¥&.... I hope you&\*&¥¥#....."

I was stunned, "You... what did you say? A bug....?"

The Red Dragon Queen sobbed. After falling into silence, as though reorganizing her language, she finally started again, "Young human, I have already slept ten thousand years and have finally woken up. Now, since you were the one to wake me, I want to thank you for your assistance. I hope that you will accept my graciousness and let me help you do something in return!"

I took a deep breath. My face nearly turned purple from the terrifying situation. Looks like I won't actually die here.

I looked up at the Red Dragon Queen's eyes and said, "Your body is so great, even walking out of here will be hard. Don't mention doing me a favor. Although, I do really need a strong person to help me finish these impossible tasks...."

Zhi Shu smiled and raised her hand. She then spouted incomprehensible dragon magic spells. In the next moment, her 20 meter long body suddenly became extremely small, and was around 1.65 meters tall. She was clothed in a red armor and looked like a female warrior. However, I knew, that within her body was hidden an incredible strength and wasn't as simple as a girl that was

1.65.

“Is it ok now?” Zhi Shu smiled.

I was puzzled, “You can actually shapeshift?”

“Of course. All high level Dragon Tribe members can shape shift. Even turning into another person isn’t a hard task.”

As she said that, the Red Dragon Queen Zhi Shu retreated a step and knelt before me, “Please accept my thanks. From now, for 48 hours, I will be your servant. Master, whatever you want, just tell me. Zhi Shu will complete it for you, even if it means dying!”

.....

“Ding!”

System Notification: [Red Dragon Queen – Zhi Shu] has willingly made you her master and will be your servant for 48 hours. She will fulfill whatever request you have. Please, cherish these 48 hours!

I was beside myself and couldn’t believe what was happening. This Red Dragon Queen was really willing to work for me for 48 hours? If it was like this, then going to the Stormy Abyss to retrieve Frost’s body was going to be much more likely now. After all, this Red Dragon Queen was a Vice God level BOSS. She was even the leader of the Red Dragon tribe!

I looked at her and asked, “Zhi Shu, are you really willing to do anything for me?”

The Red Dragon Queen nodded and blushed slightly, “Yes, Master. Even if you were to say something unreasonable, then I will do it. You are the one that allowed me to regain my life. If you really want, then there is a bed behind this wall and a hot spring....”

My head went blank again, “That.. you’re thinking too much. Let us head out. We need to leave the Wild Dragon Territory first. I don’t want to stay here for another second...”

“Yes, master!”

Zhi Shu immediately turned around and raised a hand. The snow white hand

quickly became a dragon claw. Flames began to rise around her and she slammed at the wall. “Hong!” an enormous tunnel appeared before us and went on for about a hundred meters. It was just enough for a person to enter. Motherf\*cker, the wall had been burned through. This Red Dragon Queen’s power was just too great...

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and put away my mount and quickly stepped into the tunnel. As I ran through Zhi Shu easily followed behind me. At that moment, I felt a sense of inferiority. She was one of the leaders of the great Dragon Tribe and could fly. While I... was a land bug in her terms. This truly was a sad reality.

.....

We suddenly emerged from the Heart of the Dragon’s Nest. A strong ray of light hit my eyes, nearly blinding me. When I appeared outside, I saw a dozen dragons scouting through the air. There were blue dragons, jewel dragons and even wind dragons among them. The blue dragons revealed a shocked expression as he shook, “F\*ck, the Red Dragon Queen was released. Dear gods, her seal has been broken. If Lord Igoras finds out, then all of us will die. What do we do?”

One of the Jewel dragons roared, “What is there to say? This is catastrophic for the Wild Dragon Territory. All high level dragons, come to me. No matter what, we must kill the Red Dragon Queen. Otherwise her vengeance will destroy our Territory!”

“Roooooaaaaaar....”

A group of dragons growled savagely.

Zhi Shu smiled. “Master, what do you need me to do?”

I muttered, “There’s no need to kill anyone. Just get me out of here safely...”

“Alright!”

Zhi Shu suddenly spread out her arms and took a deep breath. She then smiled again, “Scum of the Wild Dragon Territory, the shame of all dragons. The ancient Dragon Gods no longer sympathize with you. Come, let me show you what the strongest of the ancient Holy Dragons really is!”

As she finished, Zhi She's body rose up. Flames twisted around her. In the next moment, she turned into an enormous flaming Dragon. She turned around to look at me and said in Dragon tongue, "Master, come ride my back. I will take you from this place!"

"OK!"

I leapt up and slid down her large wing right onto her back. I then raised my two swords and stood on the nape of her dragon neck. At that moment, I truly had the sense that I was a "Dragon Rider". Only, Zhi Shu wasn't actually my mount. I didn't even dare think a crazy idea as conquering the Red Dragon Queen as my mount. That would be too terrifying.

"Grr!"

Zhi Shu roared and raised her claws, rising straight up into the area. All of the Wild dragon Tribe's high level dragons followed right after. The Red Dragon Queen didn't say much and just swung her sharp claws, creating waves of flames that rolled right into the Wild Dragon Territory!

"Peng peng peng...."

Each wave dealt a strong attack. One after another, the blue dragons, the red dragons and the black dragons dropped to the ground. Some of the small dragons were burnt to crisp by the Red Dragon Queen. Her strength was just too strong!

We quickly burst through the cloud layer. The Red Dragon Queen soared out of the Wild Dragon Territory. As I looked down at the earth, I could see the landscape swiftly change. After ten minutes of flying, I patted her dragon wings and said, "Zhi Shu, descend. I need to keep a low profile when I enter the Hybrid Demon Territory. If we keep flying like this, we'll eventually be discovered by the Sword Spirit Riders."

"Yes my lord!"

Zhi Shu turned around and flew downwards. As we neared the ground, she suddenly turned back into a person and grabbed my arm. Like this we softly landed onto the ground. We were surrounded by forests and the Wild Dragon Tribe didn't dare chase after us. They weren't idiots. The Red Dragon Queen

was so strong that even if they were to come after us, they would die.

.....

I stepped onto the grass and Zhi Shu said, “Master, can I ask you something?”

“Yes?”

“For what reason did you want me to take you to the Hybrid Demon Territory? I want to know what I’m doing”

“Alright....”

I took a deep breath and said, “A few days ago, an enormous battle occurred in the Dragon City of the continent. The Hybrid Demon Army attacked our wall as I was guarding it. We had lost and the godly weapon Despair was taken while my master——Frost, was betrayed by the traitorous Luo Lin. He then took Frost’s head and hid it in the Stormy Abyss. My journey this time was for the sake of retaking her head. No matter the cost!”

Zhi Shu was stunned, “Master... you are one of the warriors of the humans?”

“Yes.

“Alright, then I will follow Master. That’s right. The Stormy Abyss is one of the areas in the Hybrid Demon Territory. Before, it was governed by the fifth Hybrid Demon King. Who is it now?”

“The Son of the Storm, Gwen and the Fist of the Dragon Igoras!”

“What?!”

Zhi Shu suddenly turned around with rage in her eyes, “Master... you’re saying the Fist of the Dragon? He.... he’s in the Stormy Abyss?”

I nodded, “Yes. What’s wrong? Zhi Shu are you afraid now?”

“Afraid?”

Zhi Shu suddenly smiled. “He’s tortured me for ten thousand years. I hate him to the bone, so much that I want to cut him into a thousand pieces. How could I be afraid of him?”

.....

I didn't say anything else and continued walking forward with the Red Dragon Queen. I finally couldn't hold it in and asked, "Zhi Shu, can I ask a question?"

"Yes? Master, please ask...."

"Igoras,. Did he really have a relationship with you?"

The Red Dragon Queen was speechless from the question. After a few seconds, she finally nodded, "I think so. However... however, master, do not worry. I did not give birth. I wouldn't give birth to a Igoras' b\*st\*rd. The fertility of dragons was originally pretty weak, much less between dragons of different species. Thankfully it was like that, otherwise I would never be able walk with any dignity. I must kill Igoras with my own hands!"

I smiled. "Ok, then if I can help you, I will provide it!"

"Thank you master...."



# Chapter 591 The Stormy Abyss

Walking forward, the foliage around us became more decayed and rotten. Since we walked into the forest, there were no longer any level 1-2 Hybrid Demons. However, that didn't mean much to the Red Dragon Queen and I. I could still manage to kill quite a few within a minute, where as Zhi Shu could kill all of them in one stroke. Furthermore, she and I were no master servant relation, so I also received part of the experience from the monsters that she killed. Even though it wasn't much, at the rate she was killing them, it would add up to quite a bit in the end. If we didn't come here for the sake of regaining Frost's body, then bringing this Red Dragon Queen along to a high level map would be a wonderful thing.

.....

We continued forward and saw a pitch black plain. Twilight had fallen. A ghostly howl rang through the plains. Hearing it made me subconsciously shudder. I urged my horse forward and pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword. After a few steps, I heard a bell beside my ear——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Please note, you have stepped into the dangerous map ——[Death Plains], one of the maps of the Seven Hybrid Demon Territories. It is guarded by The Berserker Lei Ding and Hell's Battle Song – Lin Han!

“Death Plains?”

I furrowed my eyebrows and looked ahead of me. There was a dark abyss between the Death Plains and where I stood. The abyss began from the Bloody Plains, and cut across right to where I was. The only way across was the narrow road before me. It lead to a rope bridge that disappeared into the fog. Demonic magic radiated from the bridge. I could even see a ghost rise up from its chains.

“Ghostly Rope Bridge...”

The Red Dragon Queen Zhi Shu smiled. “I've heard about this rope bridge. Rumors have it that it's melded from the souls of evil demons. It's seven

kilometers long. Only a fearless warrior can overcome the Ghostly Rope Bridge. If the heart waves even the slightest, then you will fall and be crushed to death at the bottom of Death Valley...”

I sheathed my sword and put away my horse. I then walked forward and grabbed onto the chains of the rope bridge. The chains were as thick as my arm. I strode forward and stood on the first plank. Once my weight shifted on, the bridge began to sway. Fortunately, my sense of balance was pretty good and I was well practiced in martial arts. Walking across only took basic skills.

Looking at my careful expression, Zhi Shu smiled and strode over. “Pa!” She stepped right onto the Ghostly Rope Bridge and slowly walked forward and said, “Master, the legend of the Ghostly Rope Bridge is only there to scare away cowards. However, I do believe that there is something that has been following us from behind. Master does not need to worry though, no matter what the thing is I will kill it for you!”

I nodded, “Yes, let’s head out then. Once we’re across the Ghostly Rope Bridge, then we’ll enter the map of the Death Plains. After the Death Plains is the Stormy Abyss. There we’ll arrive at our destination.”

“Yes!”

.....

Man and Dragon, one after another, walked along the rope bridge. I pulled out my weapons, my Dragon Reservoir Sword in one hand and my Zhen Yue Sword in the other. I then collected my Ancient Heavenly Tiger. Even though the little thing was a Ghost Harvest type pet, it didn’t necessarily understand the skill of walking across chains.

Wind blew past my ear, fluttering my hood. The Red Dragon Queen looked back at me with her big eyes and continued forward. As her master, I couldn’t be too terrified, or else I would be looked down by this Queen of the Dragons.

The further we went, the thicker the fog became. Even the chains became slippery from the water that collected on it. I had even lost my footing and slipped a few times. Thankfully, I was gripping the sides very tightly, so I wasn’t about to fall. Otherwise, It would’ve been truly hard to walk across.

“Careful, something is getting close....”

I gripped my sword and looked at the mpa. Three red dots were charging right towards us.

“Ji ji....”

I heard the screeches from above. They were three Plunderers, Level 3 Hybrid Demons. They broke through the fog and flew at us. They then raised their claws, throwing an attack right at me.

I smiled. Then raised both my swords and threw a [Wind Slash]+[Fierce Ice Blade]. Then I dealt a seven slash combo. The first Plunderer’s health quickly dropped to the bottom. The power behind my explosive attack was real. Right before its death, the Plunderer dealt one last attack. I quickly slid forward. Then turned around and slashed with both my swords, killing it in one stroke.

The other two monsters rushed over. Zhi Shu wryly smiled and then raised her arm. A flaming dragon claw appeared in front of her hand. “Pa Pa!” the dragon claw rushed forward, crushing the two Plunderers. It was an instant kill!

“.....”

I was speechless. Compared to Zhi Shu, my strength was just far too small.

However, the beautiful Red Dragon Queen smiled. “master’s strength is already top among the human adventurers. Being able to kill a Level 3 Hybrid Demon on your own is already quite a lot. These Hybrid Demons are equivalent to actual demons among the humans. A town’s entire army isn’t enough to kill just one of them, much less a Level 3 Hybrid Demon....”

I was stunned and chuckled to myself, “If I was really strong, then how could I watch as Frost was killed right before me...”

“Ay....”

Zhi Shu smiled sympathetically, “Do not worry, Master. I think... I think that even if Frost had died in battle, she would still feel proud having a student like you. After all, you entered into the Hybrid Demon Territory for her sake. This already proves that you care about her. In this world, how many people are willing to go this far...”

I nodded and said, “Queen Zhi Shu, I want to ask something.”

“Please ask.”

“After someone dies, can they revive?”

“This...” Zhi Shu was puzzled and said, “All living beings in the sky and on the earth go through the cycle of life. Normally, I would say that it is impossible. However.... The existence of a soul and its shell also goes by the laws of life and death. If you could find her soul, and then create a new body, and have the soul possess that body, maybe that would achieve your goal. However...Master, do not put too much hope in that. Frost’s spirit power will not be weak. It would be difficult to find a body that can hold so much power. That would be too hard. This is also the reason why throughout history, very few people have been able to revive from the dead.”

I gripped my sword and said, “No matter what, I will revive her!”

“Yes!”

Zhi Shu silently looked at me and smiled. “Don’t worry.. Even if Zhi Shu is no longer your servant, I will help you as a friend!”

“Thank you...”

Right at that moment, more screeches sounded through the clouds. The Ghostly Rope Bridge shuddered. It seemed as though more things were coming.

As I expected, a few minutes later, black lizards started crawling towards us along the Rope Bridge. They were a group of very special lizards. They had suction pads on their feet, allowing them to easily crawl along the rope bridge. Scales wrapped around their entire bodies like armor!

Iron Wall Lizards, Level 4 Hybrid Demons. They are a type of lizard that lives deep in the forest. It has suction pads on its feet that allows it to run along cliffs.

A level 117 Hybrid Demon, I can kill it!

I raised both my swords and charged forward. I then slashed forward, cutting right into the group of lizards. As I was killing them, I gulped down a Heavenly Tier Level 1 Dragon Spit Pill, recovering 10,000 of my health while continuously

being healed. This way, I could solo this Level 4 Hybrid demons with my stats. I killed them one after another. I then used a Demon Sword Master card, increasing my Fifth Class Advancement hidden boosts. I was confident I could deal with them.

“Ao ao....”

When I killed the Nth Iron Wall Lizard, I reached out and grabbed the equipment that was dropped. I glanced at the time. I had already been fighting with these Level 4 Hybrid Demons for 2 hours. I have no idea just how many I had killed, but I figured it was all to grind levels.

The Red Dragon Queen behind me seemed to be a little annoyed. “Shua!” she reached out and grabbed my arm. Afterwards, she dove downwards. “Pa!” she shook the rope bridge!

“Hummm....”

The Rope Bridge shuddered and a crowd of lizards fell off the rope bridge. Zhi Shu put me back onto the rope bridge. I smiled. “This way will be much easier. Master, let’s hurry up If you think that Frost’s soul is still in her remaining body, then let’s hurry up. Otherwise, who knows what the Hybrid Demon Kings are going to do with Frost’s head? Maybe, they want to reconstruct Frost’s body, and make it into a Hybrid Demon King. Do you want the next time you meet her for her to be your enemy?”

I shuddered and didn’t say anything. I sheathed my sword and began to sprint forward. I said, “No matter what comes at us, Queen Zhi Shi, you have to help me kill it!”

“Alright!”

I ran forward. On both side, there were at least 3-5 Level Hybrid Demons that could fly. However, none of them could get close to us. They were all instantly killed by the Red Dragon Queen. This also gave me quite a it of experience at the same time.

Not long after, we made it out of the fog. We had finally made it out of that long Ghostly Rope Bridge. I leapt up and lightly landed on the plains. I then summoned my Flying Scythe War Horse. I leapt onto my horse and then called

out my Ancient Heavenly Tiger, entering into a battle stance.

Right in front of me, it was as though they had received information, a group of Level 3 Hybrid Demon Hellhounds howled and charged at me.

I glanced at the map and said, “The Stormy Abyss is just west of us. Let’s head over!”

“Yes!”

Man and dragon rushed into the distance. One group of the Hellhounds that caught up to us had been easily killed by the Red Dragon Queen and I. After 3 hours of killing and running, we finally made it to the border of the Death Plains. There seemed to be nobody there to block us. After going another 1000 meters, we saw an enormous tornado that remained in the plains. Just below the tornado was the entrance to the Stormy Abyss. When I looked down into it, I felt my heart stop.

Frost, are you in there?”

# Chapter 592 Lanais

“Grr.....”

A few hellhounds lay in waiting at the edge of the forest. They watched the Red Dragon Queen and I from a distance but didn't dare to attack. Too many of their partners had been killed by us. Their AI wasn't too low, so they at least knew what it meant to be afraid. Especially towards the Red Dragon Queen. She completely overpowered the Level 3 Hybrid Demons, showing them what true power was.

“Wu wu...”

Suddenly, one of the hellhounds seemed to sense a terrifying force and lurked away with its tail between its legs. In the next moment, a strike fell from above. “Peng!”, four of the hellhounds had been crushed into a past and the ground the was struck sunk a couple meters.

“What was that?” I furrowed my brows.

Zhi Shu squinted her eyes, “Hmph, so a suitable enemy has finally appeared?”

A flag appeared from the forest. In the next moment, a general riding a beast charged over. He brought with him a group of Level 7 Demon Sword Masters. It was none other than Hell's Battlesong Lin Han, the man who brought Luo Lin to the demonic side!

Lin Han smiled and laughed coldly. He looked at me from a distance and smiled. “Hei hei, isn't this Frost's “most prided student”? What, you actually had the courage to enter the Hybrid Demon Territory. You really are a bug that doesn't fear death. For what reason did you come here? To kill Luo Lin for revenge? Oh, he's in the Revered One's Plains. You've gone the wrong way. Here... there's nothing, but Frost's head. Of course, there's no use for that any more...”

I grit my teeth, “You motherf\*cker....”

“You dare curse at me?”

Lin Han laughed coldly and raised his sword, “Fight with me! Let us kill this little b\*st\*rd.... Oh, .... And that woman who’s helping him—the Red Dragon Queen Zhi Shu. Kill that Queen. Do not be polite, I think... that Igoras that old b\*st\*rd won’t mind if we kill his woman. After all, this dragon mother never gave birth, hahahaha....”

Zhi Shu and I decided to attack at the same time. As my Flying Scythe War Horse stepped onto the Death Plains, I pulled out my Zhen Yue Sword and threw it into the air. The blade spun with Dou Qi and cut right through the crowd of Sword Spirit Cavalrymen. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword with my right hand and slashed a [Seven Star Fragment Sword], activating a crowd skill. At the same time, my Ancient Heavenly Tiger activated [Burstfire Raid]. It raised its head and used [Flame Roar], throwing a shockwave!

Lin Han was enraged, “Die!”

He then sprinted forward. Lin Han’s sickle carried a sharp power. I quickly raised both my swords. I’ll block first!

“Keng!”

My arms went numb from the impact. I was close to dropping my blade from the force. But i hardened my resolve and held on. “Peng!” I pushed Lin Han’s sickle back with my Zhen Yue Sword while I stabbed my Dragon Reservoir Sword at Lin Han. I then threw a [Wind Blade]+[Fierce Ice Blade]—

“4621 ! ”

“5102 ! ”

I was able to break through his defense. Lin Han shuddered as the light of the [Fierce Ice Blade] hit him. Furious, he raised his sickle and roared, “Youngster. No matter what, I will not let you leave. Die! [Death’s Flame]!”

Flames began to rise off of the sickle. It was a skill!

Without any hesitation, I urged my horse forward. My blade began to glow and a skill activated—[Reflect]!

“Dang!”

“50288 ! ”



The [Reflect] completely ignored all defenses and threw back the damage at full power. The attack made Lin Han shudder. Unfortunately, 50,000 damage wasn't much in his mind. He slashed his sickle, sweeping it right onto my shoulder. He then threw a punch. Against this Hybrid Demon King tier BOSS, I was not his equal. I retreated along with my horse. My Ancient Heavenly Tiger charged forward and threw a [Flame Claw]+[Vampiric Strike]. It then activated [Flame Armor], allowing it to take three slashes without dying!

Right at that moment, flames rushed into the air. "Shua Shua!" a bloody head fell to the ground after a short wail. I don't know when, but the Red Dragon Queen Zhi Shu activated a dragon claw and crushed the group of Sword Spirit Cavalrymen. The hundred or so Sword Spirit Cavalrymen had disappeared in the blink of an eye. Zhi Shu then brought her hand down and dragon power descended from the sky. She smiled. "Hell's Battlesong, do not bully my master. Here, fight with me!"

"Peng!"

Lin Han shuddered and fell into the mud. Dirt covered his body. Angrily, he rose up and charged at the Red Dragon Queen. The two forces rammed into each other in the air. Zhi Shu remained in her human form as she fought. Both of her arms had turned into dragon claws that scratched at Lin Han's abdomen and chest, leaving behind long bloody marks. At the same time, Lin Han's Misfortune Sickle also cut into Zhi Shu's legs. The pale thighs were bloody now, but she didn't pay attention to it. After all, the recovery rate of the dragon tribe was far above that of humans and ghouls. This was an absolute advantage that she had against Lin Han. After all, she was a queen level saint dragon. Her recovery rate was terrifying.

The slashes on her leg quickly healed up. Zhi Shu opened her palm, and she smiled. Magic began to appear on her palm and she quietly said, "Sleeping Ancient Power, I summon thee with my blood. Follow my will and assist me in killing this strong enemy. I, the Red Dragon Queen-Zhi Shu implore you——[Grip of the Dragon Tribe]!"

"Hong!"

A holy light rushed into the sky and a dragon scale blade appeared in Zhi Shu's

hand. She actually managed to summon some kind of ancient godly weapon. She gripped the sword with both hands and lunged at Lin Han, throwing a slash!

Lin Han didn't dare overestimate her and raised his blade to block. He did not however expect there to be so much power that it threw him backwards. He spat out blood. His own strength was a level below Zhi Shu's. A kick then flew straight into his chest. Zhi Shu's attack rhythm was very fast. She continuously threw attacks. Within moments, she had dealt a dozen or so attacks at Lin Han, nearly breaking Lin Han's left leg and right arm. If he hadn't had a body that was on a king level, he probably would've been killed by the Dragon Blade.

"Ahhhh..."

He cried out and retreated. Lin Han raised his Misfortune and retreated back a dozen meters. He suddenly dove towards the ground and disappeared into the dirt. Was he planning on tunneling down to escape?

The Red Dragon Queen smiled and stomped the ground, "Get out of there!"

"Peng!"

The entire Death Plains shuddered. "Pu!" Lin Han tumbled out and landed in front of Zhi Shu. He stood there, the wind blowing at him. Loose hairs were pulled out from his knot and blood flowed out of his injuries. He only had around 30% of his health left. My heart began to beat faster. Was the Red Dragon Queen really that strong? She could even deal with the 11th Hybrid Demon King, Lin Han?

.....

Right at that moment, a song rang from the distance. Right after, a green energy wrapped around Lin Han, quickly healing him up. Then, dark clouds began to cover the sky. A beautiful figure wielding a red long bow appeared from the clouds. She was clothed completely in armor. She had a beautiful face and her long hair danced in the wind and the cape fluttered behind her. She smiled and said, "Oh... Lin Han, my old friend. Why have you fallen so low? Let me see. Just who dares to behave so atrociously in the Hybrid demon Territory? Turning our Hell's Battlesong into a dog..."

Lin Han looked up. Happy but angry, he exclaimed, "Lanais, you... why are you

here?”

Zhi Shu and I looked up. It was none other than the ranked sixth BOSS of the fifteen Hybrid demon Kings, Lanais. She was the Queen of the Elves. In the information, it stated that Lanais was originally the daughter of the King of Elves and was the Princess. Unfortunately, she turned into a Hybrid demon later on. The weapon in her hand was “Jiang Yun” and was a godly bow. This was a mysterious yet very attractive queen. Her strength was not much weaker from the goddess Xi Fu.

.....

Lanais did not look at Lin Han and just glanced at Zhi Shu, “The Red Dragon Queen? We... I don’t believe we’ve met again for over ten thousand years. At that time, on the Elven Continent, the Dragon Tribe was friends with the Elves. I never imagined that we would meet with our swords in hand. Really, ahahaha, this is just too interesting...”

The Queen Zhi Shu swung her Dragon Blade and didn’t bother to talk much. She leapt up and the Dragon Blade turned big, almost as big as half of the horizon. She threw a powerful strike at Lanais!

“Huh? You’re really attacking?”

Lanais smiled and opened her left palm. Roaring, “Shield!”

“Hmm” an enormous heavenly shroud descended, enveloping Lanais, providing a layer of protection. In the end, the Queen Zhi Shu’s Dragon Blade rammed into the shield, but it didn’t have a single scratch on it. The Queen Zhi Shu was forced backwards. Lanais’ power was far more powerful than Lin Han’s. It was already getting hard to deal with him.

The Queen Zhi Shu retreated a step. Lanais smiled and quickly pulled back the string of her Jiang Yun Bow. An indigo colored arrow condensed on the string. “Shua!” it flew out. Quene Zhi Shu flipped to dodge the arrow. However, Lanais’ second and third arrow flashed out. Queen Shi Zhu hit the ground wiht a “Peng!” She ducked to dodge it, but the third arrow flashed right beside her neck. It scratched the shield on her scales, bringing out blood.

She opened a hand and roared, “Die!”

A powerful dragon energy filled the air and three dragon palms rushed towards Lanais. The elven queen cried out. She raised her bow and retreated a dozen meters. Blood dripped from her mouth. After taking Zhi Shu's attack, she wasn't feeling much better either.

Zhi Shu leaned forward and began gathering energy in her legs. "Peng!" She kicked off the ground and shot out like an arrow, right towards Lanais.

"Oh?"

Lanais had a surprised expression on her face that made even me a little shocked. This female BOSS' mannerism was just too shocking. This high level elf's slight emotions and dignity was clearly displayed. She watched as the Queen Zhi Shu spiraled towards her. She then opened up her left hand. Energy gathered at the center and she shouted, "Gravitational Field!"

"Shua!"

The Queen Zhi Shu dropped to the ground and "Peng!" crashed into the earth. Dirt scattered. It was Lanais' skill!

Then, right as the [Gravitational Field] locked on, the Queen Zhi Shu also threw her sword forward. In the air, it turned into an enormous net of Dragon power than landed onto Lanais. The net tightened around her, getting tighter by the second. Lanais waved her bow to fend off the attack. She glared at Zhi Shu and said, "Red Dragon Queen, you are too cowardly!"

.....

rew my blade forward. "Pu Pu Pu Pu" it pierced through Lanais' body. Zhi Shu also charged forward, dragging me off of my Flying Scythe War Horse. She then quickly charged into the distance and said, "Master, you're injured. I can feel two strong powers coming towards us from the Well of the Gods and Demons. Looks like Xi Fu and Da Lun, the demons who guard that well have heard the news. We must hurry into the Stormy Abyss, or else we won't have much time...."

# Chapter 593 If You Love Me then Please Give Me Money

Queen Zhi Shu's flying speed was incredibly fast. I could barely keep my eyes open against the wind rushing past my face. The tornado above the Stormy Abyss was getting closer and closer. Lanais and Lin Han both suffered injuries and weren't willing to pursue us. I lowered my voice and asked, "Zhi Shu, are we just going to charge in there? Will this tornado kill us first?"

"Don't worry, I'll protect you master!"

Zhi Shu glanced downward and began to chant a magic spell. Lines of golden runes began to wrap around us and form a protective shield. In the next moment, we charged right into the tornado. This time, I couldn't see anything at all. After three minutes of flight, we charged out of the tornado and into the Stormy Abyss. It was so deep you couldn't see the bottom. At the center was a strong gale that carried flames and swirled around. Zhi Shu held me in her embrace as she gripped the walls and slowly crawled downwards into the abyss.

I looked carefully and saw that there was a path on the edge of the Stormy Abyss. On it were countless Hybrid Demons. We didn't have time to grind this map however. Da Lun and Xi Fu, those two super BOSSes would arrive any minute. That, added on with Lin Han and Lanais. The Red Dragon Queen wouldn't have a chance to hold them off. Furthermore, this Stormy Abyss had Gawain and Igoras those two BOSSes. This journey was truly dangerous.

"Master!"

The Queen Zhi Shu sternly said, "Quickly expand your awareness. Where is Frost's head hidden? We'll fly directly there!"

"Ah?" I exclaimed. I then closed my eyes and reached out my Yi Hai. Layer by layer, it expanded. There was a total of twelve floors. It wasn't until I reached the second to last floor that I suddenly shuddered. I felt a familiar presence. That icy force was so clear and dear to me. The second I felt it, tears began to

well up in my eyes. I widened them and pointed to the eastern side of the second floor. “Right there!”

“Yes!”

Zhi Shu charged downwards. As we dove, we attracted the attention of the inner Hybrid Demons. A group of Sword Spirit Cavalrymen rode their dragons and flew straight at us. There were countless members in their charge. Just with their numbers alone, it was enough to instantly kill me!

.....

“They’re coming!”

Zhi Shu looked towards the bottom and said, “Gawain and Igoras that b\*stard have already sensed my strength. Master, I will fight them off by myself. You go and get Frost’s head!”

“Alright!”

“Hua!” After we broke through one wind wall, we charged right to the second floor. There was a caved in area on the cliff that gave way to a large hall. At the center of the hall was an enormous ice pillar with Frost’s head inside. I could even see Frost’s expression as she died. It was one of helpless attachment.

“Go!”

Zhi Shu suddenly pushed me, throwing me towards the cliff. I raised my hand and activated [Dragon’s Hook]. I locked onto the cliff and pulled myself over towards it. Behind me, the tornado grew stronger. Zhi Shu reached out her arms to contain it. “Peng!” she spat out blood from her mouth. Even her [Dragon Scales Defense] appeared. Only like this was she able to block that attack for me.

A general completely clothed in azure armor carried a purple sword and charged over. He smiled. “Oh, Igoras. This... isn’t this the wife that you’ve adored for over ten thousand years, but haven’t been able to have sex with?”

Igoras raised his sword and slowly appeared from the shadows. He grit his teeth, “Zhi Shu, why are you here? What happened to the Wild Dragon Territory?”

The Red Dragon Queen grew furious, “Ignaus, you b\*st\*rd, you actually dared to ambush me in my sleep. You are the traitor of the dragon tribe. I will cut you down!”

Igoras glared at me, “That kid... isn’t that Frost’s student? D\*mm\*t, he actually snuck into the Stormy Abyss. Is he trying to steal Frost’s body?!”

Gawain grew furious, “Stop him!”

.....

I didn’t keep watching and charged straight towards the ice pillar. I raised my long sword and slashed right at it!

“Keng!”

Sparks flew from it. The ice pillar was incredibly solid. The impact of the sword made my arm even more numb. Despite this, I continued. I even activated [Dragon Transformation]. I swung my swords and hacked at it. “Keng keng keng!” I banged the Ice pillar, leaving slash marks on its smooth sides.

Behind me, Queen Zhi Shu waved her two arms, moving the [Dragon Blades] right to Igoras and Gawain. At the same time she was also wrapped up in the enemy’s power. Blood flowed from injuries all over her body.

“Leave!”

Igoras slashed into Zhi Shu’s shoulder, throwing the Red Dragon Queen into the Abyss with a slash mark left in the sky.

I rammed into the Ice Pillar. It was like I went crazy. Frost’s body was right in front of me, yet I couldn’t get it no matter what I did.

“Kid, go die!”

Igoras pointed his sword and charged at me. The moment he attacked, I suddenly heard Queen Zhi Shu’s shout, “Igoras, do you still remember the command from the Dragon Gods?!”

Igoras, shuddered. He turned around. A black torch flew right towards him and he roared, “Ah? Medusa’s Rock?! Gods, Zhi Shu you crazy b\*tch!”

“Peng!”

The black rock suddenly exploded and Igoras' body slowly turned to rock. The Son of the Storm, Gawain coldly smiled. He swept out his blade and a long slash appeared on Zhi Shu's chest. With a scream, she fell into the cliff.

.....

"Shua!"

Gawain raised his Purple Wind weapon and threw a kick into my chest!

"Peng!"

"16367 ! "

I fell into a crack in between the rocks. When I looked up, Gawain raised his fist and threw a punch right into the pillar. "Bang!" the pillar cracked and Frost's head fell into his arms. He glanced back at me and smiled savagely, "You want Frost's head? Then get it with your life. Ha ha ha, ants will always be ants. Crushing you is so easy!"

I shuddered. While I was still in [Dragon Transformation], I raised a hand. "Pu Chi!" my Dragon Hook pierced right into Gawain's shoulder. The hook then quickly shrank back, taking me along with it. "Peng!" I rammed into Gawain's body. I grabbed a corner of the frozen head with one hand. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and "Pu Chi!" cut into Gawain's neck then roared, "Give her back to me!"

Gawain grew furious. He then flew forward and rammed my face into the cliff with a smile, "What are you? Did you think you would be able to steal something from my place?"

还给我！"No matter what, I did not let go of the head. I furiously glared at Gawain. I then swept out my foot and "Peng!" kicked Gawain. Then, with a twitch of my right arm, I activated a combo, cutting right into the BOSSes weak spot. Then, I hacked at him with all I could and pulled Frost's head back to me. I was close to going crazy as I roared, "B\*st\*rd, give me back Frost's head!"

At the same time, my Ancient Heavenly Tiger roared and appeared behind Gawain and activated [Flame Armor]. Gawain spun around and threw a slash, killing the little tiger in one clash. I turned around and kicked off the wall. Man and sword dove straight into the pile of rocks. My health had plummeted to



rock bottom. I then gulped down a health potion and used a [Heal], but it was still difficult to turn the situation around with my strength.

I held Frost's head close to my chest. I began to see red as blood filled my eyes. Despair began to fill my heart. With a shaky voice, I cried, "Frost, I.... I really have no way... no way of retrieving you. I... I don't have the strength to not let you leave me. I....I...."

Gawain smiled. "Weak human. You know that you're incapable? To dare and come to my Stormy Abyss and steal something of mine. You're just asking to be killed!"

I began to tremble. I gripped Frost's head close to me and faltered. I didn't care how much health I had left. My Dragon Reservoir Sword trembled and I said, "Let's battle.."

I knew, that if I battled, I would die. I had already done everything I could. There was nothing I could do to change this fate. This was as far as I was going.

I was completely trapped.

.....

Right at that moment, a dainty voice rang throughout the abyss, "Well lookie here, aren't you brave. You actually dared to talk back against the Son of the Storm and try to fight him. You're such a brave and idiotic youngster, I'm starting to like you more...."

I shuddered. Why was this voice so familiar? This... that's the Holy Domain Assassin... Odelia?!

As I had suspected. Beside me, a hidden figure suddenly charged out from the shadows. I could hear the clinking of bells ring out and a cloak wrapped around me. Her sword flashed and her Holy Domain energy exploded before Gawain. It was a light type attack!

"[The Light of Buddha]!"

With that one attack, Gawain couldn't help but cover his eyes and roar, "Who is it? What coward!"

Odelia didn't say anything and just reached out to grab my arm. She then

jumped down and grabbed the Red Dragon Zhi Shu's body from the rubble. Her Invisibility Cloak fluttered and wrapped around all three of us. The Holy Domain energy filled the air as we charged right out of the Stormy Abyss.

At the bottom of the abyss, a large number of Hybrid Demons chased after us from behind. I opened my hand, activating my big skill—[Thundering Heavens]!

Thunder roared. The domain seemed as though it was being ripped apart. The Hybrid Demons screeched in pain. Even Gawain couldn't help but retreat several steps to avoid the might of the skill. He grit his teeth, "This kid... he actually has an ancient power!"

.....

My health continuously recovered itself. I held onto Odelia and weakly said, "Odelia, yo.. Why are you here? You... did you save us?"

Odelia blinked a few times and smiled. "No problem. Yes, I was the one that saved you. How could I let you go die? Even though, I'm an assassin that only cares about money. But... but my conscious is still clear. Ish. After all, I want to bathe in the Saint's light once in a while. Isn't that right, Queen Zhi Shu?"

Zhi Shu weakly closed her eyes and she smiled. "I saw that you stole a dagger from the hall, isn't that right?"

"That...."

Odelia revealed a smile to show that her trick was exposed, "I say, Red Dragon Queen, you're a vice god level existence. Don't think too much about the details...."

Zhi Shu smiled. "All in all, I want to thank you. Otherwise, Master would've never been able to accomplish this task."

"Yes!"

Odelia glanced at me and mischievously smiled. "Kid, love me now?"

I was stunned, "That....maybe... it's love?"

Odelia smiled. "Oh, then alright. If you love me then give me money...."

I was speechless.

.....

# Chapter 594 A Chase by an Absolute Force

“Sou....”

Odelia was completely wrapped in Holy Domain energy. She flew like a cannonball out of range of the Stormy Abyss. The three of us rushed into a forest in the distance towards Ba Huang City.

.....

“Careful!”

Zhi Shu widened her eyes and said, “It’s the Arrow of Lanais....”

In the air, a cold arrow flashed by. Odelia cried out as it struck her shoulder and pierced through her chest. Blood spurt out. She was too focused on running away, and forgot about the ambush in the air.

“How is that possible?” Odelia stared into the sky, “How... how can Lanais see me? My.... my Invisibility Cloak is a godly weapon passed down over the centuries....”

Queen Zhi Shu softly said, “Lanais is the Queen of the Elves. She has a bracelet called “Eye of Heaven”. It allows her to see through all of the illusions in the world, and so our invisibility won’t escape her sight. Hurry and get into the forest. Otherwise, we’ll be laid bare before Lanais’ arrows. We’ll get killed eventually...”

“I’m working on it! Be quiet!”

Odelia suddenly slowed down and accelerated a second later. “Hong!” some dirt exploded behind us. Lanais had shot another arrow into the sky and it left a five meter deep ditch in the ground. The power of each one was terrifying.

I looked up and saw Lanais raise her Jiang Yun Bow. She stood on the air, her eyes filled with killing intent and she said, “Hmph, did you think that you guys could leave this place? Stop dreaming. There are nine Hybrid Demon Kings chasing after you. Do you really think you can escape?”

The Queen Zhi Shu covered the injury on her arm and said, “Odelia, enter into

the Death Forest up ahead. Afterwards, look for a hole or cave of some sort to rest. I need some time to recover my strength. Gawain's Purple Wind Sword has practically crushed all of my Dragon Veins. All I need is 5 hours. In that time, I'll have 80% of my power back. With that, I'll be able to help!"

Odelia nodded, "I'll do my best!"

As she said that, she looked at me, and then at the arrow in her chest and said, "Actually, I'm starting to feel like I chose the wrong deal to make. After all these years, this is the first time that I've fought for justice, and all I've gotten is a heavy injury like this. Plus.. I've made enemies out of all of the Northern Hybrid Demon Kings. From now on, I'll be wanted even in the Hybrid Demon Territory...."

I looked at her, "Then you'll just have to fight for justice until the end!"

Odelia was speechless.

.....

In front of us, an enormous figure rose up between the trees. Right afterwards, completely crimson giants appeared. Each covered in stone skin. They were around 10 meters tall. They raised their arms and smashed a fist towards Odelia, roaring, "D\*mn\*d humans, you must die here! Don't you dare think of stealing something from us!"

"Peng!"

Odelia dodged the attack. She put on the Invisibility Cloak so that the Giants couldn't see her. Despite this, Odelia's face was pale, "Blood Giants... D\*mm\*t, looks like Lanais isn't just trying to scare us. Nine Hybrid Demon Kings really are coming after us..."

"Hurry up and fly forward!" Queen Zhi Shu looked into the sky and said, "As long as we separate Lanais from her Eye of Heaven, then we'll be able to hide using the Invisibility Cloak. That in addition to decreasing our breadth, then we'll definitely be able to get past this problem!"

Odelia grunted, "You want to avoid Lanais' eyes? Alright then...."

As she said that, Odelia suddenly pouted her lip and blew a long whistle. In

the next moment, an enormous eagle suddenly flew up from the distance and swept right towards Lanais. It reached out its two claws and attacked the opponent. Lanais took the hit by surprise and raised her arm to defend. She roared, “B\*st\*rd, get out of the way or die...”

She then pulled back on her Jiang Yun Bow. Lanais opened her hand. Energy suddenly whirled around and roared, “Flames!”

“Hong!”

Flames flew up and the eagle turned into a pile of ash.

“Ye Ge.....”

Odelia felt her heart get crushed, but she still dove towards the forest. The Queen Zhi Shu summoned her strength and materialized Dragon Claws. She then charged towards the ground, digging a long tunnel. Odelia reached out and dragged me into the hole. For the sake of caution, the Queen Zhi Shu dug another hundred meters, all the way until we passed through two layers of rock before she stopped. She then dug a burrow for the three of us and then put away her dragon claws and quietly sat there.

“Relax your breath and bring your power down to the bottom..” The Queen Zhi Shu’s red eyes flashed in the darkness.

I pulled out my Zhen Yue Sword. It’s light brightened the area around us. I then pierced it into the ground and looked at Odelia. She had already pulled out the arrow that had pierced into her. She cried out from the pain as blood poured out.

I took out a few Dragon Spit Pills and said, “Use this to stop the bleeding?”

Odelia took it. “Pu La!” She ripped open the leather armor in front of her chest, revealing the snow white mounds underneath. She then crushed the pill and rubbed it over the wound, stopping the blood for the moment. She then smiled. “Well lookie here, this little thing really is useful...”

I rubbed my head, “It’s ok....”

“Teehee” Queen Zhi Shu said, “Master, you only came for the sake of Frost’s head isn’t that right? Now that you have it, why don’t you try using a City

Return Scroll for Ba Huang City?”

I nodded and ripped a scroll. The second I did, I received a notification. Because I was carrying a certain item, I couldn't teleport. Looks like I had to walk Frost's head back to Ba Huang City. I shook my head and said, "I can't."

Odelia wrapped her wound up and took a deep breath, "Let's wait for a little bit before we leave. This place is just too dangerous...."

"Yes!"

Right at that moment, the earth above us shook. "Peng peng peng!" The sounds rumbled around us as the earth and dust continuously fell on our heads. Odelia furrowed her eyebrows and brushed some of the dirt off, "Looks like the Blood Giants are ripping apart the entire forest. Lanais won't give up until she finds us...."

The Queen Zhi Shu said, "Don't worry, when I came down, I had already closed the entrance of the tunnel. They won't discover us. Unless all of those Hybrid Demon Kings really dug a hundred meters down...."

Odelia softly said, "I hope so. I don't want to die here, I still have lots to do in my life... Red Dragon Queen, hurry up and recover your strength then!"

"Yes... I've already begun." Zhi Shu looked at me and said, "Master, now that you've obtained Frost's head, what's your next step?"

I thought about it for a moment, "I'll think of a way to revive Frost."

"How are you going to do that?"

"I've thought about it... I'll go and find the Hermit Ai Lun for help...."

"Huh?!" The Queen Zhi Shu was stunned, "The Hermit Ai Lun is still alive? I never would've thought. That old geezer is still alive. He's probably an ancient god by now? Ah ha, if he's alive then that'll be easy. The Hermit Ai Lun is the only human that was able to rise to the god level. Unfortunately, his god level was crushed in the Battle of the Gods, and so all he has are shattered pieces. Otherwise, he should have enough power to push back the Northern Hybrid Demons right? However, he's done extensive research into the power of souls. He shouldn't let your hopes down. Maybe... maybe you actually will be able to

revive Frost!”

I was stunned, “Really?”

“Yep!”

“That’s great...”

Queen Zhi Shu smiled and said, “However, I’ve heard that the Hermit Ai Lun is extremely eccentric. He might not help you. For that, you must be prepared....”

I said, “That should be fine. My friend is his student.”

“Oh? Your friend? What kind of friend?”

“Girlfriend...”

“Oh, so it was like that....” This tens of thousands year old queen smiled sweetly, “Then it shouldn’t be a problem. No matter how eccentric Ai Lun is, he should care a lot for his own student. After all, he’s only taken that one student throughout his entire life.”

.....

“Ding!”

I received a message, it came from Wan Er, “Pig, how’s your quest going? Is the Hybrid Demon Territory experience savage enough? Have you found Frost’s head yet? You’ve been playing for 17 hours straight, are you tired yet?”

I quickly replied, “Not bad. We’ve already found Frost’s head. However... right now we’re being chased by nine of the Kings and are now hiding out in a tunnel. I don’t know when we can make it back to Ba Huang City....”

“Huh?” Wan Er opened up a call and smiled. “Our pig is that strong? He was actually able to steal Frost’s head from the hands of the Hybrid Demon Kings?”

“Yup!” I thought about it for a second and said, “I must walk to bring Frost’s body back to Ba Huang City, and so I’ll be fighting the entire way. Who knows how far I’ll make it.”

Wan Er smiled back. “You’ve already done pretty well! Keep up the good work. Dong Cheng and I will bring a group of people to wait for you at Dragon City. Once you hit Dragon City, we’ll take the rear for you!”



“Ok!”

.....

I quickly turned off the messenger. The pounding above our heads continued. After the Blood Giants finished their smashing, it was Lei Ding's turn. After he finished, Gawain road a storm and devastated the area. This didn't take much imagination. The whole Death Forest was probably just a field of dirt now. These Hybrid Demon Kings were all incredibly strong. Changing a reality like this was a small matter for them.

The pounding and roars grew closer and closer to us. It was all the way until we could see the power of the lightning burst from the opening of the tunnel did it finally start to quiet down. After a whole two hours of explosions, these Hybrid Demon Kings finally gave up. Even the voices above our heads became more distant.

Continuing on, we waited for another 3 hours. Finally, the Queen Zhi Shu opened up her eyes. She stretched out her hand and a flame rose up in her palm. She smiled. “Master, I've recovered 90% of my power. We can set off now. This place is extremely dangerous. The longer we stay, the more danger we're in.”

“Ok, Odelia, how about you?”

The beautiful assassin pulled out the longsword on her back and smiled. “Even though I don't have the same recovery strength as the dragon tribe, but I've still recovered 70% of my strength. How about you?”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and pulled out my Zhen Yue Sword, “Even though my strength is nothing compared to you guys, I'll still do my best...”

# Chapter 595 [The Lament of the Gods]

“Sha sha....”

My sword tip broke through the rock and I popped out to check the surroundings. Right above us were several hundred Sword Spirit Cavalrymen counting the airs. Furthermore, there were crowds of Demon Sword Masters on the ground. However, none of the Hybrid Demon Kings seemed to be guarding here. They probably thought that we had escaped elsewhere and went to look around.

Odelia tugged on my leg and asked, “What’s the situation?”

I replied, “All of the Kings are gone. However, there are quite a few Level 4 and Level 7 Hybrid demons...”

“Pa....”

Queen Zhi Shu leapt out and stood in the air with a smile, “I’ll fly with Master. Odelia, charge Southward with me. Once we enter Ba Huang City territory then we should be safe. The Hybrid Demon Kings are worried about the might of the Tian Ling Empire, so they won’t start any large scale attack southward.

Odelia smiled. “Alright...”

The Red Dragon Queen didn’t say anymore and reached out to hold me. In the next moment, we shot off into the sky. A group of Demon Sword Masters started yelling and charging towards us. But all Zhi Shu had to do was raise an arm and shout, “Get out of my way. Anyone who blocks me, Die!”

“Hong!”

She then spat out a dragon flame that created a fiery whirlwind. Hundreds of Demon Sword Masters were all burnt to ash. I gaped at the attack. As long as we don’t encounter any Kings, then the Red Dragon Queen could probably go on a rampage in the Hybrid Demon Territory. Actually, as long as we don’t meet two or more of them, then she wouldn’t have any problem whatsoever.

Odelia smiled and flew beside us. Of course she was happy doing anything

that didn't require her help.

We flew extremely fast and broke through the cloud layer. We then followed along the Ghostly Rope Bridge and made our way into Death Canyon. In the sky, a group of Sword Spirit Cavalrymen caught up to us. Odelia then smiled, and pulled out a sword as she flew forward. She threw it straight at them. It flew out and pierced through the crowd of Sword Spirits. She then grinned widely and shouted, "Explode!"

"Peng!"

The Holy Domain energy hidden within the sword exploded and dozens of Sword Spirits all turned to meat. The rest didn't dare follow us because they all knew that the beautiful assassin wasn't something they could deal with. One of the Sword Spirits roared, "Hurry, go report to Lord Lin Han. These d\*mn\*d b\*st\*rds have escaped. Chase after them! We cannot let Frost's head leave this place,. Otherwise we'll be destroyed by her vengeance!"

.....

We flew over Death Canyon. The Red Dragon Queen decided against going around and charged right over the Bloody Plains, the nightmare of all players!

The entire ground was red with rivers of lava cutting across. In the sky, there were hundreds of Level 3 Plunderers flying around. The Red Dragon Queen easily dealt with them all by activating [Blaze Domain]. All of the Plunderers that were hit were instantly burnt to crisp. Countless pieces of shining equipment fell into the lava, which seemed like a waste.

On the ground were Hellhounds, Bloody Tear Dragon Men, and Gravedigger Demons roaming the area. But they couldn't reach us and could only screech at us from the ground. Each one of them looked at us with eyes of hunger and desire. What a painful feeling, to want something but not be able to get it!

After a hour of flight, we could finally catch a glimpse of Dragon City in the distance. Even though it was still cut in half and in ruins, but... it still had a chance of being recovered. After all, there were hundreds of players that were in the city now. Looking from afar, all of their shoulders had a crimson insignia floating above them. It was the same as the one above my own shoulder. Wan Er, Dong Cheng, and Li Mu brought all of our brothers to meet us!

We were but a step away. But right at that moment, the sound of war drums began to boom and crowds of Sword Spirit Cavalrymen flew up into the sky. On the ground, a whole army of Nightmare Cavalrymen galloped down the plains. The Fist of the Dragon Igoras and Lin Han appeared in the sky at the same time. Igoras raised his long sword and coldly looked at us, “Zhi Shu, my most beloved Red Dragon Queen. Did you really think that the Stone of Medusa was enough to petrify me for a lifetime? I knew you would return to the continent of the humans and so you had to pass through Dragon City. Give up. You cannot escape. Be obedient and stay. Create a new future for our Dragon Tribe. This isn’t what you should be doing!”

The Red Dragon Queen coldly laughed, “Scum, do not talk to me!”

As she said that, she glanced back at Odelia and said, “I... I’ll use a curse to deal with all of the Nightmare Cavalrymen and Sword Spirits. Odelia, you take my master and return to Dragon City. I can see, there are a lot of Master’s friends there. They will definitely protect the master. I can only help you up until this point....”

“Curse?” Odelia was stunned, “After you’re done with the curse, then you’ll become incredibly weak. I can’t leave you here by yourself. As a warrior of Justice, I cannot...”

Zhi Shu smiled. “Don’t say that. You’re someone who has killed hundreds of people for gold. Don’t say you’re a Warrior of Justice...”

Odelia looked over at me, “The Red Dragon Queen is about to sacrifice herself for justice, what do you think?”

I stared at her, “I’ll stay. When Zhi Shu is done with her curse, I’ll take her away. Do what you want you fake Warrior of Justice.

“Well, are you looking down upon me?”

Odelia raised her long sword and said, “It’s just dying together, it’s nothing much. Today, I’m definitely going to be a Warrior of Justice!”

.....

In the sky, Igoras raised his sword and laughed, “War drums, advance!”

One after another, giant beasts appeared. They carried strong beastmen who beat war drums on their backs. The drums shook the earth. After the battle of Dragon City, a new battle had begun once again just days later.

The Red Dragon Queen Zhi Shu looked up. Flames began to whirl around her, pushing me and Odelia away. The next moment, red scales began to appear on Zhi Shu and she wielded a Dragon Blade. This was her strongest battle stance!

“Hum hum....”

The earth began to tremble and boulders split in two. Golden runes rose up. Everything within a few meters was under the control of the Queen Zhi Shu. She closed her eyes and began to shiver. Her power was becoming stronger and stronger.

“Ah?!” Igoras roared.

Lin Han raised his sickle, Misfortune, “Brother Igoras, why’d you suddenly shiver?”

Ignas roared, “D\*mm\*t, this crazy old bat... she’s using a dragon curse. That’s... that’s one of the three great Dragon Curses. I’ve only seen it once in my life! That time, Elder Diamond, The Dark Dragon King and Heaven’s Angel Dick had all been killed. It was a nightmare....”

“This... what do we do? Run?” Lin Han was stunned.

“We can’t escape. This place has already been sealed by her!” Igoras raised a long sword and said, “We can only pray. Hurry up and activate your strongest defense skills. As long as we can last until we aren’t cursed to death, then we can easily kill the weak Red Dragon Queen!”

“Alright!”

The sickle in Lin Han’s hand flashed. He roared and a crimson shield rose up around him, “[Hell’s Defense]!”

Igoras raised his sword and black dragon scales began to appear. He shouted, “[Breath of the Dragon King]!”

.....

The Queen Zhi Shu closed her eyes and looked at Ignas, “Die!”

She raised both of her arms. The Runes rose from the ground in a circle, creating a strong current in the air. The godly power of the curse began to expand. The Queen Zhi Shu shivered and she brought down her arms and shouted, “Destroy everything—— [Lament of the Gods]!”

“Hong!”

The sky lost its color and I practically couldn’t see anything. Then, a strong light engulfed the area. I closed my eyes but I still heard the cries of the Sword Spirit Cavalrymen and the Nightmares. They didn’t have a single defense against the might of the curse.

“Ahhh....”

Igoras’ screams were lost in the wind as his body was ripped to pieces. Within seconds, his legs were pulled apart and his left arm disappeared. All that was left was his right arm carrying his long sword. He bled all over his body and stood shakily in the sky. All of the injuries on his face were to the bone. This Black Dragon King looked even more sinister now.

Lin Han was in a much better situation. Most of the power from the Red Dragon Queen’s curse had been focused on Igoras’ body. It was only due to this that Lin Han got it easier.

Bones of Hybrid Demons littered the ground. With this one attack, Zhi Shu had killed over half of the Hybrid Demon army. My experience went up two levels. I was already at 109!

.....

“Wu....”

After using that curse, the Red Dragon Queen’s body softened and she fell to the ground. Odelia gaped at the scene. I urged my horse forward and caught her falling body in the air. I then charged forward with my Flying Tiger God and shouted, “Odelia, you idiot, why are you standing there? Hurry up and follow me!!!”

I the distance, the war drums sounded again. The broken Hybrid Demon Army had not given up yet.

In the sky, Igoras cried out in pain from all of his wounds. He shouted, “Red Dragon Queen, just you wait! This debt, I, Igoras will return it to you tenfold one day. Just you wait!”

Lin Han raised Misfortune, “D\*mm\*t!”

Igoras roared, “Lin Han, what are you waiting for? Hurry up and chase after them! Kill that b\*st\*rd and the Red Dragon Queen. Don’t forget, you’re the one that made Lin Han a traitor. If Frost revives, you know better than anyone who she’ll hate more than anything!”

Lin Han was stunned. Killing intent began to rise around him, “Everyone, charge towards Dragon City. Kill! Kill all humans in the vicinity!”

.....

“Peng peng peng....”

The hooves of my Flying Scythe War Horse pounded the ground. I raised my sword and carried the Red Dragon Queen towards the city. On the border, Wan Er wielded her dagger and glanced over at me, her eyes filled with urgency, “Pig, hurry up and come!”

Beside her, Li Mu raised his sword and shouted, “Prepare the Death God Arrows!”

# Chapter 596 Kill the Gods and Destroy the Demons

“Huh? How does [Zhan Long] have Death God Arrows?”

I was stunned but didn't think more about it any further. I just galloped forward. The moment my horse stepped into the city limits, I felt a familiar feeling all around me. It was like I had escaped from hell and returned to home. I could even feel tears welling up in my eyes as I ran forward.

Behind me, Lin Han had already caught up!

“Hum!”

Misfortune carried the power of death on its blade. “Peng!” it crushed the ruined walls of the city and a dozen [Zhan Long] knights were instantly killed. The attack left an enormous slash mark in the walls.

Dancing Forest raised her bow and shot several arrows, but none managed to stun Lin Han.

Li Mu rode on a black battle horse and he charged forward swinging his sword. Lin Han roared and swept out his sickle, throwing Li Mu and the horse into the air. Despite the power behind the attack, they weren't instantly killed. That b\*st\*rd's defense and health have both gotten strong.

.....

I ran forward and carefully put the Red Dragon Queen down. I then turned around and pulled out my Zhen Yue Sword while charging at Lin Han. Motherf\*cker, I have tens of thousands of [Zhan Long] brothers as my support. What was I afraid of? Kill!!

I swung both my swords. My war horse jumped up, landing me right in front of Lin Han. I activated [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost Armor] while throwing a seven attack combo. One after another, my blade hacked into Lin Han's armor, creating cuts all over. Dancing Forest shot her [Shield Breaker], decreasing the BOSS' defense by 17.2%. This way, I could completely break through!



After the chain of attacks fell on him, Lin Han was furious. He threw a kick right onto my horse's neck and then raised his sickle to deal another attack!

“Bang!”

I raised my Zhen Yue Sword to defend, but didn't manage to completely avoid this BOSS' fierce attack. The blade pressed into my shoulder and I was forced tumbling down along with my horse. That one attack dealt 17383 damage. My battle horse got up again and stepped onto the city wall. It then retreated a dozen meters, and “Peng!” it rammed into a stone pillar. Not bad, this kind of damage won't kill me!

“Brother Xiao Yao, wait for a moment!” Wolf shouted, “Use the Death God Arrows. Don't take any risks!”

A hundred Death God Arrow machines were pushed forward onto the wall. Matcha raised her long sword and waved it, letting go all of the arrows. They flew out with their poisonous vines. All of them locked onto Lin Han, that super BOSS. “Pu pu pu!” They pierced through Lin Han's body and the poison seeped out, continuously cutting down his health.

“Ahh...”

Lin Han struggled in the vines and cried out. The Death God Arrows stuck out of his chest like a porcupine and his health greatly decreased. Never had anyone suffered such an attack.

I then raised my Zhen Yue sword and asked, “Wolf, how did you guys get the Death God Arrows?”

Wolf smiled. “That... Fan Shu City's [Emerald Porcelain] obtained the blueprints for these and managed to create 500+ of them in a short period of time. The beauty Cang Tong is good friends with Promised Love and so we bought a hundred of them. Who knew we'd use them so quickly? And against a super BOSS like this? I don't know if it'll work though...”

“Well, there's definitely an effect.”

I looked at the struggling Lin Han and softly said, “Who knows how long we can last...”

Lin Han roared in fury and the air began to whirl around him. Suddenly, the deathly power exploded, creating a whirlwind around him. Fury filled his eyes as he shouted, “Get out of my way you ants!”

“Hong hong hong...”

The Death God Arrows flew into the sky. Lin Han swung his Misfortune and crushed the Death God Arrows. A hundred of them, disappeared in seconds. In exchange, the players on the ground had decreased his health by 20% and now he only had around 57% of his health.

.....

“The Sword Spirit Cavalrymen and the Nightmare Army has arrived...”

Wan Er raised her two daggers and stared into the distance. She sent out a command, “Yue YaoYan, start forming our defense. Everyone else, follow me to hold off Lin Han. Seeing as Lin Han dares to step back into this ruined city today, then us [Zhan Long] better invite him to stay... the Ancient Ran Min is hidden behind Dragon City. Plus, Qing Luo has some Dragon City Warriors with her. This is our battle of vengeance. We must kill Lin Han!”

I nodded, “Yes!”

On the side, Odelia smiled. “Lin Han is a super war god that has fought in Hell. How could he be that easy to kill? I think, you guys will still need some of my help....”

I said, “Then help us. Don’t just talk....”

Odelia revealed an awkward expression, “But...”

I glared at her, “If you kill Lin Han, then I’ll give you 100,000 Gold!”

“Really?!” Odelia eyes sparkled.

.....

In the sky, Sword Spirit Cavalrymen continuously charged over. [Zhan Long] was taking great losses. Within 10 minutes, we lost over a thousand players. What was even worse was that Lin Han waved his sickle through the crowds. He raised his arm and dealt a [Death’s Whirlwind], instantly killing all players within a 20×20 yard radius. Everyone could only retreat as they fought. Lin Han had

fought so hard that his eyes turned red and he slowly pushed forward with his Hybrid Demon corps.

After 20 minutes, Lin Han's army had charged all the way to the center of Dragon City. We had no way to retreat anymore. Behind us was Dragon City's second layer of walls. During the last battle, it hadn't taken that much damage. But, it had been broken at the center by Igoras. On the map, I could see that Ran Min and Qing Luo were hidden there, waiting to make their ambush.

"Keng!"

I crossed my blades to defend against a slash and was pushed backwards a dozen meters. I stood at the top of the ruins of the wall. Suddenly I heard a weak voice whisper to me. The Queen Zhi Shu said, "Master, find a way to lure Lin Han over. I'll give him one last attack!"

Excited, I glanced back at her, "Zhi Shu, you still have strength?"

"Yea, I've recovered some. I hope that my vice god power will help!"

"Alright!"

.....

I urged my horse forward and raised my hand. "Pu Chi!" My Dragon's Hook pierced through Lin Han's forehead. I had completely provoked this King BOSS. He swung his sickle and charged over, "B\*st\*rd, don't you dare even think about reviving Frost. This is something that we of the Hybrid Demon Territory will not allow!"

I quickly retreated and signalled to Wan Er and Li Mu to not follow. I then commanded my horse to jump. We jumped off the second row of walls with Lin Han on our tails.

"Hong!"

The sound of a dragon cry rang through the air. Zhi Shu leaned against a pillar and raised her right arm. A large [Dragon Claw] appeared above her arm and began to flare up. A powerful force suddenly descended from the sky and fell upon Lin Han's head!

"Peng !"

Dust scattered into the air. Lin Han was sent stumbling to the ground by the Red Dragon Queen's attack. His health had plummeted quite a bit as well. He raised his hand with a shout and swung his sickle, cutting into her chest. She had just finished using a curse and all of the power she had used to protect herself with had yet to accumulate back.

Lin Han had gone completely crazy. He swung his sickle again, cutting one of the Dragon Warriors in two!

"Shua!"

A beautiful shadow flashed beside him. Odelia's long leg threw a powerful kick right into Lin Han's back. Then, she raised a sword with both hands and "Pu Chi!" stabbed it into Lin Han's back. It went all the way into the hilt.

"Ah..."

Lin Han cried out and grabbed Odelia's wrist. "Hong!" he threw the beautiful assassin to the ground and gave a stomp. Odelia cried out and slumped in the middle of a pile of rocks.

Right at that moment, another figure sprinted over. It was the Ancient Ran Min. He raised his blade and hacked into Lin Han's shoulder. "Ka ka ka" he threw three attacks. Lin Han's entire left arm was cut off. But, the strength was still uneven on both sides. Lin Han roared and threw an attack. Ran Min retreated. As he looked up, Lin Han was already channeling death energy and he threw Ran Min into the wall.

Qing Luo gasped and charged forward with her sword. She threw a [Dragon Slash], but was also kicked away by Lin Han.

I couldn't just stand by and watch. I activated [Dragon Transformation] and sprinted forward. I then swung both my swords at Lin Han while the NPC Dragon Warriors shot arrows in attack. Lin Han turned around to face me. He was covered in arrows. "Wu wu" he cried out. But as before, he still swung his scythe. The king tier BOSS was just too powerful. Furthermore, Lin Han was only ranked eleventh and yet he was this strong!

.....

I took two slashes to the chest and my health dropped. Darling Duck and

Thousand League quickly healed me and my Rage finally filled up. I jerked my arm and activated the special skill of my [Ring of the Ruler] —— [King Domain]!

“Brothers, charge! Let’s kill him!”

I whooped and Li Mu, Wang Jian, Bai Qi, Ran Min, and Wan Er all charged forward. Lin Han only had 4% of his health left. With everyone’s attacks, Lin Han was a goner.

.....

“D\*mm\*t, don’t you ants dare think of killing him!!”

Lin Han swung his sickle and [Zhan Long] players continuously died in front of me. However, this wasn’t much. As long as we could kill Lin Han, then what if the [Zhan Long] players die once? This was an impressive feat. As long as we killed Lin Han, then it was enough to shock the entire Chinese Server, maybe even the whole world!

One Second Warrior slammed his shield into the ground, activating [Fierce Sun]. Everyone activated their special skills and used their greatest skills. Lin Han shuddered and was on his deathbed.

Finally, after 60 seconds of killing, my face was covered in blood, but I persisted and kept swinging my swords.

.....

“Ahhhh....”

With a scream, Lin Han, the reputed Hell’s Battlesong, the super BOSS finally lost all of its health and screamed as it knelt to the ground.

“Motherf\*cker!”

Li Mu excitedly ran up and stabbed his sword into Lin Han’s neck. He then raised his boot and “Pa!” sent the head flying. Blood spurt out and it was extremely gory. At The same time, a system bell sounded beside our ear. Very good. Li Mu was the one to finish off his last health. This way, [Zhan Long] had truly killed this BOSS——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations to player General Li Mu for successfully killing the eleventh ranked vice god BOSS of the fifteen Hybrid Demon Kings——[Hell’s Battle Song – Lin Han]. As the first player to kill a Hybrid Demon King level BOSS, the player General Li Mu has obtained the following rewards: Level+5, Charm+50, Gold+500,000, and your reputation in the city has increased greatly!

.....

“Hua La!” Lin Han dropped his reward right after the system notification. There were equipments!!

# Chapter 597 Blade of Hell

“Shua Shua Shua....”

All of the players that were around when Lin Han died received a large amount of experience. Rays of light fell down around the entire battlefield. This helped the players that lost levels in the last battle to make up for it in addition, Lin Han fell to the ground while his head was far away. His body dissipated into light, leaving behind a pile of equipment. Wang Jian grinned widely, “Motherf\*cker, this Vice-God BOSS actually died.... Brother Xiao Yao, you’re the guildmaster, and the person who brought Lin Han to Dragon City. Plus, you were the main force in killing him. Why don’t you decide how the equipment should be split up?”

I nodded and walked over to him. I knelt down beside the drops and picked up the three equipments. There was a dagger that glowed softly, a crimson cloak that had runes embroidered onto it, and a bright red ring that looked a little murderous. Equipment from a vice god BOSS must be good. Plus, even though Li Mu’s charm wasn’t considered top tier, it still was pretty good.

First, I raised the dagger. It fit perfectly in the palm of my hand and had a smooth handle. The curved blade even carried a thin red line that ran along its edge. I reached out and waved my hand over it. The dagger’s stats lit up and appeared in front of all the players of [Zhan Long]—

[Blade of Hell] (Divine Tier – Superior)

Attack: 3020-4000

Agility: +40

Stamina: +140

Strength: +135

Magic: +132

Additional: Increases the user’s attack power by 45%

Additional: While attacking, this weapon ignores 40% of the target’s defense.

Furthermore, there's a 10% chance that it will deal four times the normal damage. This does not overlap with critical damage

Special: [Chilling Light] While attacking a target, there is a 30% chance it will activate an Ice Type attack, decreasing the target's movement speed by 50% for 3 seconds

Special: [Kiss of Death], Summons a reaper from hell and deals critical damage to all targets within a 10×10 range. Consumes 100 points of Rage. Cool down is 6 hours.

Required Level: 100

Required Charm: 110

.....

Just looking at the dagger made Li Mu tremble a little in excitement. His eyes nearly rolled out of his head as he said, "F\*ck, a weapon with an attack power over 4000 has finally come out. It's a little shameless how strong it is.... The stuff that a vice god BOSS drops really isn't simple..."

Wang Jian added, "Looks like [Zhan Long] is getting another super assassin.. Brother Xiao Yao, what are your plans for the dagger?"

Without hesitation, "Of the players that participated, the ten who dealt the most damage to the BOSS, has a level over 100, and has a charm over 110 can ROLL. Whoever rolls the highest gets it."

Dancing Forest raised her long bow and smiled, "Well that makes it simple. There's only four people who fit these requirements...."

"Yep!"

The system already helped me pick out the four people. It came out to be Wan Er, Qing Qian, Wei Liang, and Wolf. These were already [Zhan Long]'s top four assassins. I waved the [Blade of Hell] and smiled, "Well, the entire server's first Divine Tier dagger. Now it all depends on which one of you gets it. Why don't you all ROLL!"

And so, the four all hit ROLL. The next moment, the results came out——

Qing Qian: 99



Wan Er: 83

Wolf: 91

Wei Liang: 87

.....

All of them had pretty good luck, but Qing Qian came out as the top. With her 99 points, she took the Blade of Hell. Even though it was just a simple ROLL, but everyone knew that in this entire server there were only 15 Hybrid Demon King BOSSes. This Blade of Hell was one of the top equipments. If it were put up for sale, it would at least be 100M RMB or above. In other words, if [Zhan Long] was any other guild, it would attract a lot of people trying to scam it out of our hands.

In the next moment, the Blade of Hell appeared in Qing Qian’s hand. I then went on to the next piece of equipment. It was a crimson cloak. I slightly shook it in my hand and its stats appeared in the air——

[Cloak of Zi Ling Luo] (Divine Tier)

Defense: 1450

Strength: +130

Stamina: +128

Agility: +125

Magic: +122

Additional: Increases the user’s magic attack power by 33%

Additional: Increases the user’s physical defense by 25%

Additional: Increases the user’s MaxHP by 3700

Special: [Dance of Heaven and Earth] , After activating this skill, the user’s magic attack will increase by 50%, Lasts for 7 seconds

Required: 100

.....

Holding the cloak in my hands, I said, “This is a cloak for mages. Come, the

ages who dealt the top ten most damage all ROLL. Luck will decide who gets this precious cloak!”

There weren’t that many mages that had obtained their fifth advancement in [Zhan Long]. There was only five of them. Dong Cheng and Thousand Suns walked forward to ROLL. The next moment, this Cloak of Zi Lin Luo appeared in Thousand Suns’ hands. She couldn’t stop smiling as she wrapped it around her shoulders. Both her health and magic attack increased quite a bit.

I took a deep breath and looked at the last piece of equipment. It was a ring. I glanced at it, and felt a little disappointed at it. D\*mn, it’s only a Valkyrie Tier equipment. With a ROLL, it ended up with One Second Hero.

“Two Divine Tier Equipments and One Valkyrie...” Dong Cheng pursed her lips, “Lin Han this Vice God BOSS doesn’t have that great of a drop rate. And here I thought he would drop some godly weapon...”

Wan Er smiled and said, “Don’t think too much about it. This game advances on a timeline. At this point in the game, even if the BOSS were a Hybrid Demon King, can’t drop any god tier equipment. Besides, the BOSSes level and strength increases as the players develop. This has to happen in order for the game to continue. Just be patient, there will be god tier equipments sooner or later....”

As she finished saying that, Wan Er turned around to look at me. Seeing my face covered in drops of blood my worn out sword, and the slashes across my armor, the little miss felt a little ache in her heart that shone in her eyes. At the same time, she tried to hide it and turned her face the other way, “Just how was your experience in the Hybrid Demon Territory? Looks like, you’ve fought a lot. Frost’s head, have you brought it back?”

I nodded, “Yup. I got help from the Red Dragon Queen Zhi Shu and the Holy Domain Assassin Odelia. It was quite an adventure, going to the Stormy Abyss to steal back Frost’s last remains. It’s in my bag right now. Wan Er, take me to your master. The Red Dragon Queen said that in the entire continent, only your master the Hermit Ai Lun might have a chance of reviving Frost...”

Wan Er put her dagger away in the sheath at her hip and sweetly smiled, “Ok. Should we head out now?”

“Ok. Wait a moment...”

.....

I then walked over to the ruins and helped Odelia sit up. She wiped away some of the blood at the corner of her mouth as she muttered, "When did Lin Han get so strong? Those d\*mn\*d Hybrid Demon Kings, each are stronger than the last..."

I asked, "Odelia, are you ok?"

Odelia nodded, "Yup, I'm fine. Why don't you go check on the Red Dragon Queen.."

I chuckled and turned around to check on Zhi Shu. As I was doing that, she had already reached her hand out and pulled out a bag behind her cloak. She then looked up and smiled, "Master, I'm fine. Let's head out. Frost's ghost should still be lingering outside the gates of hell. We must find a way to revive her."

"Yes!"

"Keng!" I sheathed both of my swords. I then looked at everyone in [Zhan Long] and said, "Thank you everyone. It was only thanks to the help of everyone that we were able to kill Lin Han that b\*st\*rd. Now, I will be heading off to another quest. As a reward, I've decided to let General Li Mu formally enter [Zhan Long Hall] as he contributed the most in killing Lin Han. Are there any objections?"

Everyone raised their blades and cheered. One player shouted, "Guildmaster is so wise! Boss should've entered [Zhan Long Hall] a long time ago. If he doesn't soon, then he'll never find a wife...."

Excitement filled Li Mu's face, "Xiao Yao, really? You're letting me join [Zhan Long Hall]?"

I grinned, "Would I trick you? Seeing as there are no objections, then I'll announce it right now. General Li Mu has officially joined [Zhan Long Hall] and become the fifth member. The reason for his admission: The Leader of the Valiant Bravery Camp, he is the one who killed the Hybrid Demon King Lin Han!"

Li Mu was wild with joy, "Yes, Yea! Ha ha, now I have proof for my fame!"

I nodded, “Qing Qian, why don’t you add Li Mu into [Zhan Long Hall]. I still have to go do another quest. Everyone else, keep up the hard work!”

“Yes!”

As I turned around to leave, Qing Luo suddenly walked forward with a broken sword. Blood dripped from the corner of her mouth as she said, “Lord Dragon Rier, We... what should we do about Dragon City?”

She looked over at the mess in the city and said, “Seeing as we have already killed Hell’s Battlesong Lin Han, and heavily injured the Fist of the dragon-Ignaros, this is a great strike to the force of the Hybrid Demons. I think... we should take this opportunity to rebuild Dragon City. Otherwise... the Northern Gates of Ba Huang City will remain defenseless...”

I nodded, “Yes. Dispatch someone you trust to Ba Huang City and find Princess Angela to talk about this. If Angela agrees, then she’ll naturally provide labor and resources for you to rebuild Dragon City. I still need to do something very important...”

Qing Luo bit her lip, “Lord Dragon Rider, what can be more important than rebuilding Dragon City?”

I was startled by the question and smiled back “Even though Dragon City is going to be rebuilt, then it is just a shell without a soul. What I am doing right now, is finding the spirit of Dragon City. Without her, then Dragon City won’t be the same Dragon City....”

Qing Luo seemed to understand the meaning behind my words. She grinned, “Then I wish you a successful mission. I will have some Dragon City soldiers patiently wait here with me for the good news!”

“Yes!”

.....

Finally, after I had finished arranging everything, I reached out and held Wan Er’s hand. I then looked over at the Red Dragon Queen and said, “Zhi Shu, Odelia, can you guys still fly? If you can, can you guys take me and her to The Sea of No Return to find the Hermit God Ai Lun?”

The Red Dragon Queen lightly shook her arm, revealing dragon scales and she smiled, “Master, don’t worry. Even though my body is very weak right now, flying is a small task for me. Let’s set off!”

Wan Er wrapped her arms around my waist and the Red Dragon Queen grabbed my left arm. “Peng!” She shot into the sky and the three of us rushed towards the west. Odelia followed close behind and smiled, “Hey, wait for me. You haven’t paid me my money yet! I took such heavy damage, I need at least 1000G in medical fees....”

# Chapter 598 Body of a Virgin

“Hua hua...”

The wind whistled beside my ear. The Red Dragon Queen was flying extremely fast. We soon rose above the earth. We quickly flew over many large forests. As we rushed through the layer of clouds, a beautiful scene unfolded before us. Ba Huang City truly was a beautiful city. Everything within its borders looked beautiful even from above.

Wan Er squinted her eyes against the wind, but didn't seem uncomfortable. She squirmed a little, revealing her alluring body.

“What's up?”

“Nothing...”

She wrapped her left arm around my neck, her cheeks a little pink. She smiled at me and didn't say any more.

I looked down at her, only to see that this extremely beautiful girlfriend's 34Ds were currently pressing against my armor. The Wintry Clothes of Bu Lian Shi had soft leather covering her chest. The sight made my head spin a little. It wasn't just her. Even as I looked at her, my heart skipped a beat. I couldn't help but lean further down and give her a soft kiss on the cheek.

“Wu...”

Wan Er's face turned an even brighter shade of red. Her embarrassed look was like that of the girl next door. How was this that proud and domineering little miss of the Lin Family?

“I thought... I thought...”

She muttered a few words, but didn't finish her sentence.

“What did you think?”

“I thought that you fell in love with Frost that NPC... That's why you went to look for her in the Northern Hybrid Demon Territory...” She looked up at me, her eyes filled with love as she said, “I'm a really narrow minded person, I can

get jealous really easily, dummy...”

I nearly laughed out loud from the cute look on her face. I hugged her closer to me and kissed her on the lips, “Wan Er, Frost is my Master. She’s the one that brought me into Dragon City. Besides, she trusts and relies on me a lot. A person isn’t as minor as grass or trees, even if it’s an NPC. I will do my best to protect her. After all, she is my master. She is one of the people that I care about.”

Wan Er stared into my eyes, “Then what about me?”

“You....” I thought about it for a second and then smiled, “You’re the one that I love. You’re the little miss that I want to protect and you’re the only one that can make my chest tighten so much that it’s hard to breathe. What do you think?”

Wan Er’s blushed again and hugged me tightly, “\*sshole, when did you learn to say so much flattery?”

I replied, “What’s wrong, you don’t like it?”

Wan Er softly said, “No, not at all. Hurry up, say some more. No matter who listens to them, these words would make anyone happy....”

I was speechless

.....

“Cough cough...”

At that moment, the Red Dragon Queen Zhi Shu softly coughed and smiled, “Master, it appears she really isn’t just a normal friend. I should’ve guessed long ago...”

Wan Er’s face turned red and she stuck her tongue out, “Wah, this Red Dragon Queen’s AI is really high...”

Zhi Shu smiled as the scales on her arms shimmered, “AI? I could’ve pretended I didn’t know anything. But... but I’m very happy today. And I can tell you right now, every high tier NPC’s AI is based off of a real person’s memories. That is to say, I am a memory from someone. I was just shaped and born from the environment around me. It’s natural that I have a high AI and emotional

capability. Even though we aren't humans, but our emotions and rationale is very similar to that of a human's. On the flip side, we aren't actually the person whose memories we were born out of, but rather just a fragment of memory and soul."

Wan Er and I were stupefied.

After half a second I muttered," Zhi Shu, do you know what you just said?"

The Red Dragon Queen shook her head with a smile, "Beloved Master, I didn't say anything. What did you hear? Odelia, did you hear anything? Anything at all?"

Odelia shrugged as she flew and shook her head, "Nope. However, I do know, that your master owes me a lot of money. And it doesn't look like he has any plans of returning that. I don't feel good about that at all..."

I was speechless.

As I had thought, this type of game not only trains the players' spirit, it even has an effect on the players' body, memory, and thoughts. It really isn't simple!

.....

Not long after, the Red Dragon Queen began to spiral downwards. Wan Er pointed to the border of the sea and said, "My master is in that little hut. Let's head over there right now!"

In the distance, a small green hut rested beside the sea. Beside the wooden hut was a small garden with vegetables growing in it. There were even a few chickens that ran around in the garden.

"Shua!"

The Red Dragon Queen charged over and in the next moment, the four of us landed in front of the little hut. I carefully looked at the surroundings. There were fertile trees and running water. Birds chirped and sang. I couldn't help but smile, "Wan Er, your master really knows how to enjoy life. This place not only has an ocean view, but the flowers are constantly in bloom..."

Wan Er grinned, "Yup, I'll go knock!"

"Alright!"



As Wan Er walked up the little steps to the hut, the door had already opened up. An old man who looked to be around 70 years old stood there. He held a walking stick in his hands and looked over at Wan Er, “Little girl, aren’t you supposed to be raising your class? Why have you come back? Hmph hmph, all of the good stuff has already been extorted by you. No matter how cute you act, it’s of no use!”

Wan Er smiled and went to hold Ai Lun’s hand as she said, “Master, what are you talking about. I’m not trying to get something from you this time. It’s just... one of my friend’s needs your help!”

“Oh?”

Ai Lun looked over at me, and then the other two NPCs. His eyes sparkled and he smiled, “Please forgive me for not recognizing you... so the Red Dragon Queen Zhi Shu has granted us with her presence. Forgive me for not welcoming you sooner!”

Zhi Shu smiled, “Lord Hermit God, thank you for your courtesy. The relationship between the Dragon Tribe and the humans hasn’t been repaired for over ten thousand years. The Dragon Tribe has almost completely disappeared from the continent. It is rare that you can still remember us Dragons.”

The Hermit God softly caressed his long white beard and he smiled, “Isn’t the Red Dragon Queen underestimating this old man? This... from your breathing, I can tell that your strength is in the middle tier of the Holy Domain. Plus... you have a strong killing aura around you. To top it off, you’re incredibly beautiful. Are you.. The legendary, crazy for gold, Holy Domain Assassin Odelia?”

Odelia unsheathed her blade and smiled, “Old geezer, do you have the guts to try? Who’s crazy for gold? I just trust gold more...”

I quickly grabbed Odelia’s hand and said, “Don’t get angry. This time it’s us who has a request for him... that, Lord Hermit God, I’m here this time because....”

The Hermit God Ai Lun cut me off and said, “Youngster, you don’t have to say any more. I know why you are here. You’ve even brought the Red Dragon Queen and Odelia. It appears that I can’t not help you. Besides, you’re the

friend of this little girl. And it looks like she really cares for you a lot. I'm going to have to help you on this. Where's Frost's head?"

I took out her head from my bag. A thick layer of ice was enclosed over it. I could barely see her appearance from here.

The Hermit grunted and said, "If you want to lure Frost's soul to a new body to revive, then it'll be a very complicated process. First, we must create a strong magic circle. This way, we can force her soul from her remnants. In addition, Frost must have been filled with despair when she died. She's probably hidden herself away, unwilling to be found."

I took a deep breath, "Then... what should we do?"

The Hermit said, "First, the magic circle requires a hundred Soul Gems. Then, there needs to be 1000 pages of runes. Furthermore, today at noon is the moment the Gates of Hell open up and all souls on earth will be summoned. No matter where Frost's soul is hidden, she will be lured to the gate. At that moment, it'll be easy to find her."

I said, "Then that'll be easy. What about Frost's body. How should we find it?"

"That's easy...."

The Hermit God smiled, "Several thousand years ago, I was most passionate about practicing Taosim and becoming a hermit. Around 3400 years ago, I was hunting around in the sea and found the body of a virgin. I hid this body in a cave at the bottom of the sea. From what the sea demons have been saying, it seems to be the body of the sea demon princess. Her spirit had already been taken, but it is a perfect body. I believe that it'll be the perfect fit for Frost's pure soul."

"Can you take me there for a look?" I asked.

The Hermit God gave a firm nod and smiled, "Yes. Let's go, I'll take you there to look!"

.....

The Hermit God Ai Lun hobbled over to a cliff. As he walked closer to the edge, he pulled out his walking stick and rammed it into the ground with a

“Peng!” The power from the hit rushed out into the sea in a shock wave, splitting the waves in two. Furthermore, this power seemed to shape the waves into another world, revealing a path right before our eyes.

I was slightly stupefied by the scene before me. Wan Er lightly tugged my hand and giggled, “Let’s go, dummy...”

Zhi Shu and Odelia followed behind us as we walked into the depths of the sea. After walking for a short time, we saw a cave. The Hermit God walked straight into it while Wan Er pulled me in. A cold breeze brushed through the cave. The Red Dragon Queen looked around and raised her hand, lighting up the area around us with her flame.

In the middle of the cave was a body lying at the center of an ice bed. The body didn’t actually touch the bed, but rather seemed to be suspended there. It was a woman who looked to be from a prestigious family. She was covered from head to toe in precious silks and jewelry. A heavy gemstone necklace lay on top of her chest.

The Hermit God stood at the side and exclaimed, “This body is that of the daughter of the Sea King. I just happened upon it by chance. To top it off, it’s the body of a virgin. A coincidence like this is very rare...”

I took a deep breath. I imagined Frost shaking a fishtail as she flew at me and couldn’t help but shudder. “Lord Hermit God, are you sure this is the body of a virgin? Her... her bottom half is that of a fish. How can she not be a virgin....”

“Pu....”

Wan Er, Odelia, and the Red Dragon Lady all laughed out.

The Hermit God politely coughed and then sternly said, “A body that hasn’t been profaned is a virgin....”

Odelia smiled, “Are you sure that at the beginning it wasn’t for the sake of obtaining this woman that you stole her from the Sea Demons?”

As though she had hit the nail on the head, the Hermit God muttered, “You.. don’t you guys tarnish my name... I, how could I do something so vulgar... youngster. Immediately get 100 Gem Stones and 1000 pages of runes. There’s only 3 hours until the 12 hours is up, so you have to hurry...”

I nodded and said, “Wan Er, you wait with the here. I’m going back to the city to buy everything. The Flying Scythe Horse is extremely fast, I’ll definitely be able to get back here in time.”

Wan Er smiled sweetly, “Then hurry up, ok....”

# Chapter 599 A Single Wish

I took out my City Return Scroll and smashed it!

“Shua!”

I went straight back to Ba Huang City. I then quickly fixed my equipment and then bought out all of the Soul Gems in the city. The current Soul gems were around 5000+G, and some scammers would hike the price up to 10,000. I however didn't haggle too much and just bought all of them. In a short 10 minutes, I managed to get 47 gems. However, that still wasn't enough. And so, I sent a call for help to Fox, “Fox, hurry up and help out your brother!”

Fox was stunned, “F\*ck, what's wrong with you?”

I said, “Help me collect Soul Gems. Anything between 5,000 and 10,000 is fine. Hurry up, I need 53 more. Also, where can I buy buy Rune Papers? I'm not too sure about that one.”

Fox laughed, “So it was like that.... [Zhan Long]'s guild storage has 24 right now. I'll help you buy some more... and the Rune Papers are simple. All of the shops next to the four city gates sell it. Every 1 hour, they restock, 200 at a time!”

“OK ! ”

I flipped onto my horse and raised my sword, charging towards the stores. Just as he had said, there were Rune papers. However, there were only 171 there. Each one was 10G. It seems like it was some kind of material for making things. I quickly bought all of them and charged towards the East Gate, buying all of the Rune Paper there. After searching through all four of the stores, I collected 600+ pages. That wasn't enough. I needed to wait another hour for them to restock. There was still 41 minutes until then. There was enough time!

.....

I wandered around the marketplace while shopping. This time, for the sake of reviving Frost, I had used up all of my luck. It doesn't matter if I spent all of my money, as long as Frost revived and she returned to Dragon City, then it would

be all worth it. Furthermore, if I brought the Dragon's Den up to a Level 8 City, and turn it into one of the major cities, then I would get as much money as I needed. If Dragon City really was lost, and the Hybrid Demon Army really invaded, then Ba Huang City and my Dragon's Den would turn into a pile of ruins. This was extremely important.

After half an hour, I went and swept through the marketplace, buying all of the gemstones again and then bought all of the papers and gems for 7000RMB. I then strengthened my [Defeat the Dragon], [Ruler's Mantle], and [Ring of the King] all to +7. Fox then brought 53 Gem Stones to me which I put directly into my bag. Now the 100+ Gem Stones were in place. I quickly turned around to go to the four stores and finished buying all 1000 pages!

"Xiu Xiu....."

I summoned my mount and flipped onto it. I then called out my Ancient Tiger God and dashed out of the city. I caught the attention of the players from all around. Practically everyone could tell that I was [Zhan Long]'s guildmaster Xiao Yao Zi Zai. After all, the [Zhan Long] insignia and the CBN Battlenet Ranking that floated above my head was too noticeable.

After leaving the city, I quickly ran off into the distance. Less than an hour later, I reached the eastern beach of the Sea of No Return. I could see Ai Lun the Hermit God's little hut in the distance. I then urged my horse down towards the path made by the ocean. Within three minutes, I reached the cave and got off my horse while putting my tiger away. Wan Er walked over with a smile, "Are you done preparing?"

"Yup!"

I nodded and walked towards the Hermit God. I took out a hundred Soul Gems and the thousand Rune Papers and said, "Lord Hermit God, the materials you need are here. Can we start the Revival Spell?"

The Hermit God nodded and took the materials, "Everyone, move away!"

Wan Er tugged on my hand and told me to back away a little. The Hermit God walked to the front of the cave and grunted. He then raised one hand and then pushed it downward. The dimension seemed to twist under his control. The hard rock turned into dust. What was originally a large boulder turned into a

flat land. This kind of strength was extremely scary.

The Hermit God gripped the Soul Gems and then threw it onto the ground. At that moment, the Soul Gem shattered, creating a Revival Magic Circle. Afterwards, he used the Rune Paper and burned them one by one. The power from the magic circle seeped into the Gem Stones.

“Hummm....”

The entire magic circle slowly appeared, while the Hermit God stood at the center. He looked up at the roof of the cave and then raised his arm. “Peng!” holy energy slammed up, punching through the rock and charged into the sky. Rays of light fell upon the magic circle. It looked as though they came in the shape of a constellation.

“Sha sha....”

The Hermit God brought Frost’s head from out of the ice crystal and softly said, “Frost, the Guardian of the Continent, I hope that your spirit is still in the mortal world. Hurry up and return to revive. There are still many people that aren’t willing to see you leave. This is once in a billion opportunity. If you miss this one, then you’ll never be able to return to the mortal realm....”

I stared at the Hermit God and gripped my fists, “Why hasn’t anything happened yet?”

Ai Lun opened his eyes and looked at me, “The time hasn’t come yet. Don’t be rash. Just patiently wait for 12 to come.”

.....

I looked at the game’s time. There was still 7 minutes until 12. The wait was extremely painful. I paced around a few steps and crossed my arms over my chest. I then leaned against a rock and closed my eyes, quietly passing these minutes by. If Frost could revive, then Ba Huang City had hope. Otherwise, everything I had done would’ve been for nothing.

Finally, the time had come. When the seconds ticked to 12, Ai Lun looked up into the sky and roared, “Frost’s soul, come back!”

He then knelt to the ground and punched the ground. “Peng!” Golden light

spread out through the ground and sent out a shockwave from his position. On the map, you could see the golden light wrapping around all of Ba Huang City's map. It even reached the Hybrid demon Territory, Chi You Tribe, the Dark Moon Elf Territory and even the Barbarian Giant Land. Almost the entire continent was captured in this old man's summoning.

"Wa....."

The Red Dragon Queen Zhi Shu backed away several steps, her left arm turned into a dragon claw and began to flame. As she saw Ai Lun's appearance, she muttered, "Such a strong Vice God power. The Hermit God Ai Lun really lives up to his name..."

Odelia squinted, "Frost's soul, will it really come back?"

However, despite how intensely we stared at the sky, we couldn't see Frost's spirit. Frost's head began to spark as it rested in Ai Lun's hand. We could see Frost's hair and skin slowly evaporated into light. Within moments, Frost's head disappeared and was completely wrapped in light in the sky. It wavered around the Sea Demon Princess' body but didn't completely absorb into it.

.....

After five minutes, I grit my teeth, "What's wrong... what's wrong!"

Sweat rolled off of Ai Lun's face. He threw the nth fist into the ground. Weary, he finally knelt to the ground and said, "I... I.... I can't actually feel any of Frost's power. What... just what is going on? Why can't I feel her... Is Frost's soul not in the mortal realm any longer? Is that to say... she's already entered the next cycle of reincarnation? D\*mm\*t, did I fail?"

Wan Er was speechless, "Master..."

Right at that moment, the Revival Magic Circle began to shake. "Peng peng peng!" The sound was endless. One after another, the Soul Gems began to explode. All of the power hit Ai Lun's body. He cried out in pain. Slashes appeared on his body from the blood. It was as though he had been pulled from hell.

What was even worse was that the light from Frost's head suddenly exploded with a "Peng!" Countless sparks flew into the air and turned into dust near the



sea. Even Frost's last remnants had completely disappeared.

"Ts ts...."

The sound of flames suddenly rose up. The mermaid princess' body began to deteriorate and burn from the \_\_\_\_\_ of the power. Layer after layer, the young body began to fall apart, turning into a pile of dust. All remains of it had vanished.

.....

Huh!?"

I suddenly began to tremble. My knees buckled. Was all of that for nothing?

My mind was blank and I shivered. I looked up at the stars in the sky and muttered, "Frost, Frost, will she never be able to revive again?"

Ai Lun knelt beside me and said, "I'm sorry. Youngster... I've already done all I can. But... but I really can't find where Frost's soul is. I... I've failed. Frost's soul isn't something that I can control. I... I've really failed...."

I leaned against the wall, despair filling my heart.

Wan Er bit her lip. Without a word, she quietly walked over and hugged me.

The Red Dragon Queen revealed a helpless expression, "Master... don't be like that. Even... even though we can't revive Frost, but.... But I will still stay at your side and guard you... I won't leave..."

"I was silent.

.....

After an hour, the Revival Circle was finally destroyed. This quest to revive Frost had failed, and everything I had done was for naught. Frost had finally left this world, along with all the hope we had left for Dragon City.

"Sha sha..."

I slowly stood up from the ground and gripped Wan Er's small hand, "Wan Er, let's go back to Dragon City now...."

Wan Er widened her eyes, "Pig, are you ok? Why are we going back to Dragon City...."

I smiled, "I'm fine. Seeing as there's no way to revive her, then I will take up the position as the Guardian of Dragon City. After all, now that I'm the Dragon Rider, then I'm technically the leader right? Qing Luo and the others are still waiting for me....."

"Ok, alright!"

.....

An hour later, we arrived in Dragon City. This ruined city was in the middle of being rebuilt. At the bottom of the wall, countless Ba Huang City smiths and army men were stationed there and were moving large rocks.

I slowly made my way up to the observation deck.

I quietly sat at the border of the icy platform. Snowflakes covered the sky. After the Hybrid Demon Invasion, it was finally starting to snow again in this city. Each time Frost stood guard here, she watched over the dark power that threatened humanity.

I pulled out the broken Severing Beauty and carefully wiped away the traces of blood on it. My heart was bitter and I muttered under my breath, "Frost..."

.....

Suddenly, a blue light flashed across the blade. It was as though a spirit were calling out to me, "Hurry up and find me!"

"Huh!?"

I was stunned. I quickly stood up and searched the area around me. I trembled as I repeated, "Frost, Frost...."

.....

"Shua!"

A crimson light flew by. "Peng!" it crashed into the wall behind me. A man walked out of the flames and said, "Youngster, I've finally figured it out!"

# Chapter 600 Superior God

When the flames died down, the Hermit God Ai Lun smoothed out the burnt edges of his clothing. He then grabbed my shoulders with a wild look in his eyes. In one hand, he held the broken Severing Beauty Sword and said, "As it turns out.... Frost's spirit was never on the continent. It wasn't in the head or the body, but rather in the Severing Beauty. It was always at your side!!"

I looked at the Severing Beauty Sword, unable to believe what I was hearing, "Real... really?"

"Would I be lying?"

As the Hermit God raised his long sword, a light began to swirl around it and he said, "I can already feel the power of Frost's soul. And to tell the truth, I've never felt such a strong power..."

At that moment, I heard someone walk up behind me. The Red Dragon Queen and Odelia had arrived. Zhi Shu was stunned, "Lord Hermit God, you said that Frost's Spirit Power is extremely strong. What's going on?"

The Hermit God grunted and said, "The spirit in this broken sword looks to be weak on the surface, but when I channeled my own spirit into the sword, it had far surpassed my expectations. Plus, the icy power had completely forced out the spirit power that I channeled into the sword. It was Frost, defending herself. Frost's soul... it's in a stage of awakening. Even I feel a little terrified in the face of this power. In the ancient time, this type of power was known as "Power of a Superior God"

"What, Superior God?"

The Red Dragon Queen was startled, and her face paled, "What, how is that possible? High class... that's just a legend from the Battle of the Gods period. Even then, the High class had already disappeared..."

The Hermit God nodded, "That's right. However, based on the power that's awakening in Frost's soul, after she was killed, the soul had been promoted to God Status. Only a Superior God can completely handle that kind of a process..."

this, this also explains why Xi Fu, Lanais, Igoras, and Da Lun, these dark gods want to imprison Frost's head. It's because they already understand what her identity is. They want to destroy Frost's God Status and use it for their own purposes..."

I felt a rush in my blood and I raised the Severing Beauty Sword and asked, "Frost's identity? Frost... just what is her identity?"

The Hermit God looked straight at me and softly said, "Youngster, don't be intimidated by it. Your master, Frost, she is very likely the reincarnation of one of the ancient Twelve Superior Gods. Only, her power has yet to awaken. It was only because of this that Luo Lin was able to kill her. Otherwise, even ten Luo Lin's wouldn't be enough to deal with her power."

"Gu dong..."

I gulped and said, "Then.. then how do we revive Frost? It doesn't matter who she is. What's most important is, how are we supposed to revive her?"

The Hermit God Ai Lun continued, "Can you feel what Frost's spirit is trying to point towards? Tell me, where is Frost telling you to find her?"

"This..."

I furrowed my brows and closed my eyes, focusing hard on the energies around me. I then pointed towards the Northwest and said, "Over there, past the Ice Ridge Mountains and 1000 kilometers along the border of the Bloody Plains Frost is pointing me in that direction..."

Northwest 1000 kilometers..."

The Hermit God grit his teeth and looked at Zi Shu and Odelia, "In the ancient times, northwest of the continent, were there any traces of Gods?"

Odelia shook her head, "I don't know... I'm only 22 years old, and haven't lived for that long, so I haven't gotten a clue..."

The Red Dragon Queen squinted her beautiful eyes and said, "If you're talking about traces of god... there seems to be the Ice Cave of Time!"

"The Ice Cave of Time..."

The Hermit God smiled, "I know.... Among the Twelve Superior Gods, only the

Ice Goddess specialized in the practices of ice magic. From ancient texts, it states that when the Ice Goddess had fallen, she lingered in the World Tree for three years. During this time, she had encased her power within the World Tree's leaves, nurturing a seed. This seed then fell onto the continent. It looks like.. After twenty thousand years, the Ice Goddess had died, but the seed had given birth to Frost. If it's like that, then it all makes sense..."

As he finished talking, the Hermit God looked at me and said, "Youngster, don't think too much about it. Take the Severing Beauty Sword and go with us to the Ice Cave of Time. When we're there, everything will become clear!"

I nodded, "Alright!"

Wan Er raised her dagger and walked over with a smile, "Master, I'll go with you!"

The Hermit God smiled, "Ok, then let's hurry. I can feel, Frost's spirit seems to be anxious. If we get there too late, maybe someone else will have already reached the place..."

"Yes!"

And so, I quickly wrapped my hands around Wan Er's thin waist while the Red Dragon Queen held onto the back of my armor. With a powerful thrust, we left the air. Odelia followed close behind and all of us left Dragon City, going straight northwest.

.....

North of the Ice Ridge Mountains was Hybrid Demon Territory as well as the Ice Cave of Time. The three NPCs and two players cut through clouds and flew through the chilly night air. I squinted my eyes against the wind blowing against my face. After flying close to an hour and a half, we finally slowed down and began our descent. In front of us was a red dot on the map with the name——[The Ice Cave of Time]!

"Pa!"

Zhi Shu landed on the ground before the enormous ice cave. She raised her eyebrows and smiled, "Master, we've already arrived. However, this Ice Cave of Time has several ancient hybrid beasts. Why don't I, Odelia, and Ai Lun fight

them off for you?”

Without hesitation I said, “We’re pressed for time, so we’ll just charge right in!”

When I looked at the broken Severing Beauty in my hand, Frost’s spirit seemed to pulse more often and much brighter. She was urging me on. Even though I didn’t know what was happening, it couldn’t be anything good.

“Sha sha....”

Right as I stepped into the Ice Cave, an Ice Giant that I couldn’t see the level of had already plunged at us. I swung its iron arms straight at Wan Er and I. I raised my two swords and “Keng!” blocked the attack, losing 6000+ health in the process. Motherf\*cker, just what kind of monster was this? It wasn’t a BOSS and yet it could still deal so much damage.

The Queen Zhi Shu dashed over, flames appearing on her dragon claws. “Ka Cha!” she slashed at the Ice Giant. Odelia raised her sword and charged over. With incredibly precise and deadly attacks, “Ka ka ka!” she cut through them all. With that, a dozen of the Ice Giants were crushed. When the Hermit God Ai Lun activated his flame skill, a crowd of the Giant Ice Eagles screeched in pain and fell to the ground and ran off like chickens. As a vice god level NPC, Ai lun’s power was not much different than the Red Dragon Queen.

.....

“Hurry!”

Zhi Shu looked into the distance and said “I can feel seven extremely strong forces coming straight at us. It’s most likely Hybrid Demon Kings. We must hurry up and enter the bottom level of the Ice Cave. The Hybrid Demon Kings have already noticed us!”

As she said that, she grabbed my arm and took Wan Er and I flying straight into the depths of the Ice Cave of Time. She then raised her arm, shooting flames that felled the Ancient Hybrid Beasts. Odelia and the Hermit God also rushed over, while Wan Er and I watched in amazement and fear. We were about to face seven of the Hybrid Demon BOSSes. Even though we had the Red Dragon Queen, the Hermit God and Odelia on our side, it still seemed as though

we were outnumbered. Especially if Xi Fu, Lanais, and Igoras were among them. That was more than enough to overpower the Red Dragon Queen!

“Hong!”

A cold wind passed by my ears. Never had I thought that the Ice Cave of Time was so deep. After a whole five minutes, we finally reached the bottom level of the cave. There seemed to be a passageway that lead to the end of the cave. All around us was a chilling energy that swirled around the entrance.

The Hermit God stood still, his eyes cold, “The Ice Passage of Time. Legend has it that this is the second well of reincarnation within the three worlds. This Ice Passage of Time is the seventh root of the World Tree. It gathers the purest ice energy of the World Tree right here. Furthermore, Frost was born from the World Tree. Youngster, take out the Severing Beauty Sword. I will help with Frost’s rebirth!”

I quickly took out the Severing Beauty Sword. At that moment, it began to shudder so hard that I couldn’t keep a grip on it.

The Hermit God took out numerous runes. He roared, forcing the runes into the ground. A golden light exploded, quickly turning into a Revival Circle. Right afterwards, the Hermit God cut his finger and shouted, “With my blood as a guide, reconstruct this body. The Body of Frost’s soul. With the spirit of the Earth’s justice, I, the Hermit God Ai Lun demand—— [Revive]!”

“Hong!”

The golden light around us rushed into the sky above us, concentrating the godly power into one small point. The Ice energy in the Ice Passage of Time began to collect around the revival circle, gradually creating the body of a woman. Her entire body was snow white with elegant curves. Her eyes were closed, and her beautiful face was admirable. It was Frost.

The Hermit God’s body began to shudder as cold sweat dripped down his forehead, “Even though we have Frost’s body, but we’re still missing the fire of life. Youngster, we have to channel blood from a human into Frost’s body. You know what to do!”

Without another word, I walked forward. I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir

Sword and sliced into my left arm. I then pressed it against Frost's arm. "Pa Pa Pa!" the blood dripped out. Frost's body was starting to gain a healthy color. Despite this, her eyes remained closed.

"What's wrong?" Wan Er asked.

The Hermit God grit his teeth, "Frost's soul... it isn't willing to listen to my summons and revive. This.. she doesn't trust me..."

.....

"Hong!"

An explosion sounded out above us. Following the sound, a man clothed in black armor burst out of the smoke and landed on the ground before us. He carried a long blade and smiled, "Frost, that Superior God has finally reborn? Ha ha, Hermit God Ai Lun, you d\*mn\*d old thing. Did you really think that I would let you revive Frost?"

Cold sweat dripped down Ai Lun's forehead. He painstakingly held the magic circle up and said, "Red Dragon Queen, Assassin, help me hold them off for the moment. We have to hold up until Frost revives. Otherwise, we'll all die here!"



# Chapter 601 The Power of a Superior God

The Queen Zhi Shu raised her arm, turning it into a fierce looking dragon claw. Flames began to rise around her as she entered into a red battle stance. Both her feet rose from the ground and a fireball began to accumulate in the palm of her hand. She then threw the attack at the second strongest BOSS in —— Heaven's Blade – Da Lun!

“Oh?”

Da Lun coldly laughed. He raised a boot and threw a kick that cut through the air. “Peng!” Queen Zhi Shu was thrown backward.

“Pu...”

She spat out blood as she fell to the ground.

The Heaven's Blade flashed a cruel smile and then licked the blood off his hand, “It's been so long since I last tasted such pure dragon's blood... Red Dragon Queen, I just want to throw you into a well and raise you in it so I can taste your blood every day. Oh, you know what, I think, I will do that. You aren't leaving today. You're mine.. Don't even try to resist. It hasn't been 12 hours since you used the Lament of the Gods curse. You have no way of resisting. Just quietly come with me and I won't let you suffer too much....”

“Sha sha....”

The Queen Zhi Shu stumbled as she slowly stood up from the ruins. She looked up at Da Lun and glared, “Is that right? Then why don't you come at me...”

As she said that, she roared and she raised her arms. Flames rose around her and began to burn even more ferociously. Despite this, everyone could see that the stress on her was extremely great. She continuously bled as she was activating the spell.

“Oh? Touch of the Red Dragon Queen?”

Da Lun laughed out and said, “I never thought that you'd have the strength to

use a skill like this. That's truly hard. After sleeping for ten thousand years, our incredible Red Dragon Queen's training has improved quite a bit. Well, what are you all waiting for? Hurry up and charge! Kill the Red Dragon Queen and bring me Ai Lun's head. We must steal Frost's spirit seed. Hmph, she is the only Superior God that was reincarnated by the World Tree. As long as we train Frost's spirit seed, then sooner or later, she'll become a Hybrid Demon King!"

In the sky, a figure dashed by. It was the Eternal Moon Blade – Xi Fu, Son of the Storm – Gawain, Fist of the Dragon – Igoras, Lanais, The Berserker Lei Ding, the Revered One Luo Lin. Motherf\*cker, even Luo Lin that traitor arrived!

"Arghh!"

Luo Lin raised his Godly Weapon Despair and roared as he rushed over. His eyes locked onto me and he shouted, "It's you again you b\*st\*rd! You're just set on ruining my plans. Today, I will burn you to dust!"

I quickly turned around and pulled out both swords. I then activated [Frost Armor] and raised my Zhen Yue Sword for a [Blade Spin]!

"Keng!"

Luo Lin swung his arm out and knocked away the blade while it was still in the air. Before he could descend, The Queen Zhi Shu raised her Dragon Arm again, and three [Touch of the Red Dragon Queen]s flew out. "Peng peng peng!" it rammed against the barrier around Luo Lin. His shield took the hit, but he didn't suffer any serious injuries. He smiled savagely, "Red Dragon Queen, is that all you have?"

"Luo Lin, careful! You idiot...."

Lanais shouted and Luo Lin dipped his shoulder. By the time Lanais had warned him though, he had already been stabbed. Odelia appeared behind him. She then waved her blade and "Ka Cha!" cut right through Luo Lin's right shoulder. Luo Lin smiled and grabbed Odelia's blade and kicked her!

"Peng!"

Odelia gave up her [Camouflage] and crashed into the ice wall behind her. "Pu Chi!" she took an arrow to her chest. Lanais' attack was extremely deadly. Right after that, she dealt another dozen arrows, forcing Odelia into a corner.

“Agh!!”

In the sky, the Berserker Lei Ding raised his Battle Axe and threw a cut. “Hua!” the battle axe began to glow with a dull crimson light that encased the area around us as it fell. “Hong!” it threw the Red Dragon Queen into the air. The cut to her shoulder went to the bone. Her [Touch of the Dragon Queen] was broken. As expected, his strength was just too great!

.....

Right at that moment, the Hermit God Ai Lun looked over at me and roared, “Youngster, what are you waiting for? Are you just gonna stand there until we all die in battle? Hurry up and summon Frost’s soul to enter the body! She doesn’t trust me! Only you can let her revive willingly!”

Without saying another word I rushed towards the Severing Beauty sword. Then, I held it with one hand and pierced it into my own arm. Blood spurted out and I fell to my knees shouting, “Frost, wake up! Can you feel my blood? If you can, then please hurry up and wake up! Otherwise everyone will die one by one!”

“Hum hum...”

Slivers of icy power and frost began to swirl around the Severing Beauty, as though it was responding to me. I then continued, “You said to me that the conviction of Dragon City was to never give up and never accept fate. Well, now I have done it. What about you? Now that you’ve been defeated, are you just going to give up and become someone’s b\*tch?”

“Hong!”

Finally, the Severing Beauty gave an actual response and flew out of my arm into the air. Rivers of spirit power began to flow out of the broken sword and gather in the air, turning into Frost’s appearance. She looked at me and warmly smiled. She then closed her eyes and embraced the body!

“Shua....”

A deep blue icy power suddenly burst out, lighting up the entire Ice Cave of Light. “Peng!” it exploded and everything was submerged in darkness while Frost’s body quietly stood there, without moving a single muscle.

.....

“D\*mm\*t...” Igoras raised his long sword, “Frost has revived!”

“No!”

Lanais squinted her eyes, “Right now, I can’t feel her Sword Saint power or Holy Domain power....”

Heaven’s Blade Da Lun raised his weapon—— Seven Deaths, and shouted, “Looks like Frost’s revival has failed. What are we waiting for? Hurry up and kill them! Then we can report back to the lord. Luo Lin’s army is already beginning training. It’s time we formally declare war on the continent!”

The Berserker Lei Ding and Gawain raised their blades together and lunged towards us. Their purpose was clear, to tear apart Frost’s new body so that there was no way she could revive again.

“Sha sha...”

I raised my swords and stood in front of her body, assuming a defensive stance. My Ancient Heavenly Tiger roared beside me. This time, however, we were up against two Hybrid Demon Kings. No matter how brave the little tiger was, it was also a little unconfident.

.....

“He he....”

Lanais smiled and said, “Looks like, even I would have a moment of false alarm. Frost’s revival has failed. After we kill the Hermit God, the Red Dragon Queen, and the Assassin, then there would be no one left on the continent that can stop us. All those aristocrats and noblemen of the Tian Ling Empire, the Moon City, and the Iron Skull City are just a group of weak flies!”

As she said that, Lanais raised her long bow. “Ji ji!” the longbow was pulled back and a deep red arrow formed. Se then roared, “I summon thee, [God Destroying Arrow]—— Finish off Frost, this so called Superior God trash!”

“Sou!”

The arrow flew out in a straight line like lightning. I quickly stepped forward and raised my swords. I was going to defend Frost, even if I had to use my own

body as a shield!

“Peng!”

“29772!”

The arrow pierced through my body and shot straight towards Frost’ pure white neck. I spun around, my heart dropping, “No!”

Right at that moment, Frost’s long eyelashes slightly fluttered and her eyes opened. The look in her eyes was incredibly pure, as though they couldn’t see any of the impurities of this world. At that moment, she raised her arm, and “Pa!” she caught Lanais [Arrow of the Destroyer].

“Frost....” I barely managed to whisper as I gaped at her.

Frost looked back at me and smiled, “I’ve returned....”

As she said that, Frost looked up at the sky. A murderous look flashed across her eyes. Golden power began to coalesce around her body. She then raised the broken Severing Beauty. Rivers of ice energy began to collect on the blade, reforming the blade making it even more majestic. She rose into the sky. Then, with the power of the stars collecting on the blade, she rammed it into the Berserker Lei Ding’s Battle Axe. “Peng!” she forced him backwards. Then, she tightened her left fist and threw an [Ice Punch] at Gawain.

“D\*mm\*t!”

Gawain raised his arm to block and roared, “[Shield of the Tempest]!”

“Peng!”

The [Shield of the Tempest] was crushed to bits, and the [Ice Punch] hit him square in the chest. He spat out blood and was thrown backwards. He paled, “D\*mm\*t, Frost is using the power of Superior God. She’s awakened her God Status!”

Xi Fu smiled, “Trash, back away!”

As she said that, the Goddess Xi Fu roared and raised her long sword, “[Moon Blade]!”

A moon colored glow began to collect on the blade. The Goddess Xi Fu was an

ancient war goddess, and was not just an average warrior. The [Moon Strike] turned into three rays of attacks that rained upon its target.

Frost's face remained calm and she retreated several steps. Then, she raised her blade, "[Shield of Ba Huang]!"

Golden light rose up and formed a shield around her. "Peng peng peng!" it took all three attacks. Frost's body slightly trembled and was forced back by the Goddess Xi Fu. Frost seemed to be slightly weaker than her. However, I didn't know when, but the Severing Beauty Sword left her hand and dealt an attack straight at Xi Fu's back. "Keng!" it broke through the Goddess Xi Fu's chest plate. Frost then raised her snow white hand and gripped it, "[Fallen Star]!"

"Peng!"

A meteor flew at Xi Fu, sinking her deep into the wall. Several Seconds later, we heard an explosion and the Goddess Xi Fu was thrown into a pile of rubble. She raised her Moon Blade with a savage look in her eyes, "Frost!"

Frost smiled, "Yes, is something wrong?"

As she said that, Frost raised her left arm in front of Wan Er and I. A teleportation circle appeared and she shouted, "Don't be stupid. Hurry up and take the Red Dragon Queen and Odelia and leave!"

[] [] []

# Chapter 602 [Grip of the Sealed God]

I dashed forward and used [Haste] to accelerate. I grabbed Queen Zhi Shu from the rubble, while Wan Er went to help Odelia up. Then, along with the Hermit God, the three of us rushed towards the Teleportation Circle!

“Sha!”

Once I stepped into the Teleportation Circle, I felt like something was pulling my body. In the next moment, a light flashed, blinding me and I appeared in the dawn light of Dragon City. Right on the observation deck.

Even though Frost’s power had awakened after she revived, it seemed that she still couldn’t hold off all of those Hybrid Demon Kings. That much was obvious.

.....

“Huh? Lord Dragon Rider?”

Not far away, Qing Luo rode towards us with a group of Dragon City soldiers who had just come back from doing her rounds. With a stunned expression, she looked at me and asked, “Lord... you.. Had did you suddenly appear here? On this continent, there’s only a handful of people that have the power to teleport you to here..”

I turned around and looked towards the teleportation circle, fear filling my heart, “Hurry up and come!”

“Lord, who are you calling to?” Qing Luo was even more confused.

Right at that moment, a beautiful figure dashed out of the teleportation circle. She waved her hand, making the teleportation circle disappear. She trembled and held the arm that was shot by the arrow. Looks like Frost still took an attack from Lanais.

Slowly turning around, Frost looked at us and smiled, “The feeling of coming home really is the best...”

Qing Luo was stupefied. After seven whole seconds, happiness filled her face

and she lunged into Frost's embrace, "Lady Frost, you've finally returned! You've finally returned...."

.....

"....."

Frost opened her arms but appeared hesitant as Qing Luo was in her embrace. After half a minute, she finally revealed a smile and patted Qing Luo's hair, "Don't cry, Even though... even though I don't remember a lot of things, I do know, that you are one of this city's core guardians..."

Qing Luo looked up, "Lady Frost, you don't remember everything?"

Frost nodded slowly and softly said, "It's as if everything was a dream. I remember a lot of the things that happened in the past. Each scene seems to be buried deep in the sea of my consciousness. I can remember an ancient battle between gods, where the king of the gods had been destroyed. I remember the misery and sorrow caused by the nightmare of the Demon Disease. I can even remember how my body slowly turned into dust. I... I remember so much that I can't identify who I am. Maybe I am still, the 'Frost' of Dragon City?"

I softly murmured, "Frost...."

She looked at me, and then walked over. She then raised her hand and wiped away some of the blood on my neck and smiled, "I know who you are. I also know that you have traveled very far and without hesitation, despite the threats of death, you searched for me. I will always remember you. You are my closest relation... Now, I want to ask, what is your name?"

"Li Xiao Yao..."

"Ok, Li Xiao Yao." She quietly looked at me and then smiled, "You truly deserve the position of Dragon Rider. You are the pride and honor of Dragon City, as well as myself. I feel honored to be your master. Now that I have returned to Dragon City, Li Xiao Yao, are you going to continue to stay at my side? Dragon City needs you, as do I."

I nodded, "Yes!"

Qing Luo was filled with happiness and the soldiers behind her whooped in



excitement. Frost's return gave Dragon City a seed of hope. Qing Luo cried out, "Perfect! Now that Lady Frost has returned, Dragon City has hope now! Right now, I've already begun to reconstruct the city and recruit soldiers. Frost, do you have any new instructions?"

Frost turned around to face the north and softly said, "The Hybrid demons will come at us again. Now that I've revived, Da Lun, Xi Fu, and Igoras won't ignore us any longer.... If, we only rely on the warriors of Ba Huang City to defend, then Dragon City will fall once again. As a city of the Dragon Tribe, we must have true Dragon Knights. Only Dragon Riders can truly guard this city!"

"Dragon Knights?" Qing Luo's eyes widened, "Lady Frost, are you saying? We... are we going to search for dragon mounts? But, from what I know, dragons haven't descended upon this earth for thousands of years. Who knows where they are hiding. Without a dragon, how could Dragon City get Dragon Riders...."

Frost grinned, "That's because men have never had the bravery to cross over the Ice Ridge Mountains and adventure into the Territory of the Hybrid Demons. In the depths of the Hybrid Demon Territory is the Territory of the Wild Dragons."

On the side, Queen Zi Shu stared at her, "Lady Frost wants to find dragons from the Wild Dragon Territory to bring back to Dragon City and train? Please don't take offense from the directness of my words, but the grown dragons of the Wild Dragon Territory have extremely explosive personalities, and are very savage. They swallow humans for enjoyment. Training them is a little delusional..."

Frost shook her head, "No, I don't want to train the grown dragons. I want to get some dragon eggs to breed."

The Red Dragon Queen was stunned, "That's even harder... In order for a dragon to mature, it takes 1000-4000 years. The average lifespan of a human is only dozens of years. Furthermore, the Dragon Riders don't have the blood to ride these dragons.

Frost softly said, "I know. I will think of something. We can discuss this later."

As she said that, she turned around to look at me and smiled, "Hi, Li Xiao Yao.

Why don't you accompany me for a walk around Dragon City. The memories I have of Frost were destroyed from the shock of her death. Everything about Dragon City is muddled to me...."

I nodded, "Ok!"

As I said that, I took Wan Er's hand and said, "Let's go. Come with me and walk with my master..."

Wan Er smiled, "Ok...."

Finally, right at that moment, a system bell sounded beside my ear. The reward was here. Furthermore, it was the reward for a hidden quest——

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations Player Xiao Yao Zi Zai for completing the Hidden SSS Tier Main Quest [Reviving Frost]. You have received the reward: Level+3, Charm +40, Gold 500,000 and your reputation has greatly increased. You've also received the Passive skill: [Grip of the Sealed God] which bars players that have been killed by you from reviving for 60 minutes!

.....

I went to look at the details of the skill. I was a little speechless. With this passive skill, that meant that anyone who I killed wouldn't be able to revive. Furthermore, they would be stuck in a ghostly state for 60 minutes. Even if they had a revival skill, they still wouldn't be able to revive.

Wan Er grinned, "Pig is now a Death God.."

I was speechless

.....

Right at that moment, a cavalrymen suddenly charged down the mountain. He had come from Ba Huang City. He flipped off his horse and knelt before Qing Luo and shouted, "Reporting to Captain Qing Luo. There have been some problems in Ba Huang City!"

"What's wrong?" Qing Luo asked.

The messenger responded, "Tian Ling Empire's number one commander,

Prince Theodore has brought 50,000 men to the northeastern border of Ba Huang City, Nine Springs Valley. He's spread the word that by sunset, he will occupy the Nine Springs Valley. This cannot happen because it is an important tactical location and has always been where Ba Huang City trains their troops. There's already 7000 of our soldiers positioned there. And so, Angela has lead 30,000 men down to the valley to meet Theodore. However, the situation does not appear to be in our favor. Now that prince Luo Lin has rebelled and Duke Luo Lei is dead, after the fall of Dragon City, the Tian Ling Empire has expressed its desire to swallow us. And so, Angela wants me to report to you, in hopes that Captain Qing Luo will assist us and provide reinforcements to help Ba Huang City battle!"

Qing Luo nodded, "Alright, I understand..."

The Cavlarman nodded with a smile. As he looked up, he suddenly noticed Frost standing behind Qing Luo and retreated several steps in shock. "That.. isn't that the Lady Frost? You... how are you still alive...?"

Frost walked forward and smiled, "You don't have to report back to Angela. I'll head over there right now!"

"Oh, ok my lady.."

.....

Frost looked at me and said, "Li Xiao Yao, as a Dragon Rider are you willing to go with me?"

"Ok!"

Queen Zhi Shu chimed in, "Then how about I come along as well!"

Odelia pulled out her long sword and walked towards the city, "I came for the sake of gold. I do not participate in any struggles for power among the humans. Li Xiao Yao, I will be waiting for you here to give me what's due. For every day that you don't give me it, then I'll stay here in Dragon City while eating and living on your pay!"

I raised my eyebrows and smiled without saying a word. I wasn't about to give her the money any time soon. As long as Odelia was around, there was probably some use she could be.

I reached out and took Wan Er's hand while Frost grabbed my arm. Then, with a whistle, she took me dashing towards the Nine Springs Valley. She was incredibly fast, even the Red Dragon Queen could barely catch up.

.....

The scenery flashed before us and within five minutes we appeared in the Nine Springs Valley, before the sun even set. In this enormous valley, it was filled to the brim with soldiers. The Tian Ling Empire, Ba Huang City, and Jiu Li City were all confronting each other. On one hand, the location was ideal for defense. Whoever occupied the area meant that they held the keys to the gate of Tian Ling City, Ba Huang City and Jiu Li City. One could just imagine how important this place was.

In front of us was an army of soldiers lead by Angela. She gripped her Destroyer as she rode on her white horse and said, "Prince Theodore, I respect you as the commander of the Tian Ling Empire army, and so I politely ask that you take your troops away. This is Ba Huang City territory. Otherwise, even if it means we die, we will protect every inch of this land! Every year, Ba Huang City has sent generous gifts to the Tian Ling empire. We only ask that Tian Ling Empire does not seize us!"

Theodore smiled and raised his longsword, "Angela, if I didn't personally lead an army to give you reinforcements, then Ba Huang City may have already fallen into the hands of the Hybrid Demons. I want to ask, just what right does Ba Huang City have to say that they can guard Dragon City and defend against the Hybrid demons. From what I see, not just the Nine Springs Valley, even Dragon City, and Ba Huang City Forest should fall under the protection of Tian Ling Empire. Our Tian Ling Empire's millions of troops is more than enough to guard the continent against the Hybrid Demons!"

Angela coldly smiled, "And if I don't agree?"

"Then I will no longer be polite."

Theodore suddenly pulled out his long sword and said, "You pigheaded Ba Huang City aristocrats can go down the path to your doom. Come, Iron Horse Cavalry, prepare to charge! We'll show these kids what true strength is!"

.....

Countless iron adorned cavalrymen raised their weapons, ready to charge. All of them moved at the same time, charging straight towards Ba Huang City.

Right at that moment, Frost slowly descended. Wna Er and I also softly landed. The moment Angela saw Frost, he began to tremble, “Frost... Lady Frost, you... you’re still alive?”

Frost smiled, “Yes. Li Xiao Yao has brought me back from the underworld. Let’s not talk about this right now. Why don’t solve our current problem first!”

As he said that, Frost walked towards the center of the battle and shouted to Theodore, “Dragon City will be guarded by I, Frost. Prince Theodore has no need to worry. Please immediately take your army back to Tian Ling Empire. Otherwise, I will not be kind!”

Theodore coldly smiled, “Frost? You still haven’t died? I heard that you have the strength of a top tier Sword Saint. Never would I have thought that some Sword Saint would be this arrogant. Did you know, that our Tian Ling Empire has at least 50 other Sword Saints? Our Iron Horses will stomp all over the legend of the Sword Saints! Charge, kill Frost!”

Hooves pounded the earth and several thousand Iron Horsemen raised their long swords while charging at Frost.

.....

“Ah....”

Frost smiled softly and leapt up. She flew a hundred meters into the sky as golden light radiated off of her body. Then, she pointed with her pale finger, channeling energy into it. In the next moment, she lowered her arm, bringing an enormous power down upon the ground!

“Peng!”

The earth shuddered and the earth a thousand meters before the Iron Horses sunk. Dust scattered, turning it into a moat. A group of Iron Horses charged forward. Seeing the extremely deep ditch, all of them were scared out of their wits.

.....

“Do you still want to step into Ba Huang City’s territory?” Frost asked with a cold voice.

Theodore sheathed his sword and looked at Frost from a distance and shouted, “Retreat! Looks like Ba Huang City does have the power to guard its city. Looks like we won’t have to worry too much any more.”

[] [] []

# Chapter 603 A Period of Living Together

The soldiers of Tian Ling Empire retreated. Theodore looked at Frost with fear. Holy Domain power began to flash on his sword and he urged his horse away, never looking back.

.....

Angela looked at Frost with surprise and relief, "Lady Frost, you've truly revived?"

Frost nodded, "Yes. With the help of Li Xiao Yao, I have awakened. Not only have I revived, I've also awakened my memories and training from my previous life. Right now, the power in my body is slowly awakening. However, the process is extremely long. I've only recovered ten percent of my strength. If more than three of the Hybrid Demon Kings were to come at me at once, then I may not be able to fight them off. Especially Xi Fu, Da Lun, Lanais, and Igoras. Those four have a god level power."

Angela's small mouth widened, "Huh? Frost.. You have the power of a Superior God?"

"Yes."

"That's wonderful...." The princess was a little breathless from excitement. She leapt off her horse and smiled, "Now that Lady Frost has returned, she will become a strong shield for Ba Huang City. She is the strongest possible candidate for guarding Dragon City and the Dragon's Den!"

Frost smiled, "Your highness, Dragon City is currently being rebuilt. I will soon begin to recruit our old soldiers and create an undefeatable Dragon City Army. However, Dragon City will need the support of Ba Huang City's resources. Right now, we need an enormous amount of stones to create Black Cliff Crossbow Machines and new blacksmith shops. More importantly, we need laborers and gold."

Angela nodded, "Everything you need, Ba Hang City will do its best to get it to you."

Frost smiled and looked towards the Tian Ling Empire, “I will plant a lot of Snow Grass on the South Border of the Ice Ridge Mountains and raise war horses there. Your highness, in the wilderness northeast of Ba Huang City, there’s a type of horse that is incredibly resistant to the cold. Dragon City will need a thousand of them. I want to train warriors that don’t have dragon steeds on these horses. Can Ba Huang City send some elite cavalrymen to tame these horses. Afterwards, we’ll raise them in Dragon City.”

“Ok!”

Angela raised her Destroyer, the current Ba Huang City Royal Sword and said, “Just leave this to Ba Huang City. I will send our best soldiers to do this. Now, should we retreat? With so many soldiers stationed at the border will definitely put the Tian Ling Empire on its edge. Right now, there’s no need for us to offend the Tian Ling Empire.”

“Yes...”

.....

Yet another problem was solved. Frost, the Queen Zhi Shu, Wan Er and I returned to Dragon City together. The time period for the servitude contract between Queen Zhi Shu and I was almost over. However, she had already promised that she will help Frost develop Dragon City again. Frost happily agreed to the Red Dragon Queen’s offer. Besides everything else, just the fact that Zhi Shu was a vice god level Holy Dragon was enough to prove that she would be of great assistance to Frost.

I glanced at the time. I had already been online for 37 hours straight. Finally, Frost had revived and I hadn’t failed her expectation. Li Mu, Qing Qian and the other officer level players took the players to the border of Ba Huang City, the Depths to train levels. Wan Er left to play with Dong Cheng and Thousand Suns to grind skills. They needed to quickly grind them up to Heaven’s Tier Level 1. That way, they’d be even more powerful!

Time to log off and rest!

.....

“Shua....”



Everything was dark when I opened my eyes. I took off my helmet and took a deep breath. I looked over at the other bed and saw that Glasses bro was squirming in his bed. He violently shuddered a few times. He must've been in the middle of an extremely intense maneuver. This however was just a side effect from the brain waves not being completely in sync with the game. I've seen Wan Er play with her helmet once, and there were no unusual movements. She laid there very peacefully. Of course, everyone's style was different. Glasses Bro had a more volatile personality. Whether one squirms or not has nothing to do with their skill.

I took a quick shower and changed into a clean set of clothes.

After this, I walked out into the yard. Rays of sunlight fell upon my skin, warming me up. I bought a box of lunch from a vendor on the side of the road. I then sat down and ate three boxes all at once. It wasn't until then that I finally felt like I was 80% full. On my way back, I walked onto a small path of fallen leaves. I took out my phone and scrolled to Shen Bing's number. "Du du" a few seconds later, Shen Bing's flirty voice sounded through the phone——

"Oh? You're finally willing to give me a call?"

I smiled, "What are you talking about sister Shen Bing?"

"Come on, out with it. What do you need? I'm currently busy... I'm helping Wei Fan that idiot kill a Level 110 Saint Tier BOSS. I nearly got instantly killed. Acting as a spy really is hard work..."

"Uh huh." I nodded and then said, "Sister Shen Bing, has there been any new information regarding Blood Scythe? Most importantly... what's that Ou Yang Chuan's situation like? Do we have anyone tailing him?"

Shen Bing said, "As for that.... Blood Scythe has been pretty stable recently. They've just been maintaining their normal underground business, drugs, arms dealing, and underground fights. They've already bought off the Hang Zhou police and so they aren't touching Blood Scythe. Even if they were to try, they wouldn't use any weapons. Right now, Ou Yang Chuan has moved into Blue Water Street. Also, three fights occurred in Yang Zhou and Huai An cities. Seven people died in total, and they all died from being torn to death by claws."

I was stunned, "Have the Artificial humans already been transferred to the Su

Bei area?”

“Yes.” Shen Bing continued, “Normal police have no way of handling them. Their movements are just too quick. And so, the police of all areas are now secretly developing special forces. However, the effect isn’t very noticeable. The business with the Artificial Humans has finally caught the government’s attention. Seven senior officials in the army are meeting in the capital for a secret agreement. We must deal with the Artificial Humans situation without causing a mass panic. The Secret Service\* have already begun looking into the movements of the main suspects. We must find the mastermind behind Blood Scythe within a month and find the cure for the modified people.”

TL Note: A different Chinese government agency, not the American presidential security detail

I took a deep breath and said, “Mobilizing the troops, this situation really is getting out of hand... what do you need me to do right now? Has Captain Wang said anything?”

Shen Bing smiled, “As for you, you can just peacefully protect your little miss Wan Er. Do your best not to provoke Ou Yang Chuan. That Yang Yan level practitioner is the thorn in HQ’s eye. However, you are our last strong card, and we don’t want to lose you so easily. Ou Yang Chuan is just a greedy underling. Just for his services, Wei Fan has bought several villas in the Xi Hu neighborhoods of Hang Zhou. Plus, he’s gotten himself countless women. He’s probably living more carefreely than you. Best is to not bother with him.”

I was a little speechless, “Extravagance and living carefree are two different things. Don’t insult my ID. Otherwise, I’ll kill you even if it means killing myself....”

Shen Bing laughed, “Tonight at 8, Room 301 in the Xi Hu District’s Ou Yang Restaurant. I’ll wash myself thoroughly and wait for you. Do you dare to come and take me down with yourself? If you dare, then come quickly. Ha ha ha....”

I grit my teeth, “You win! I’m going to go to sleep!”

“Oh....” Shen Bing smiled and said, “I just heard some interesting news. Looks like you went to the Hybrid Demon Territory by yourself and revived your master? You really are amazing. The person I’ve chosen really is special!”

I felt goosebumps rise on my arm, “I mainly relied on the help of two other NPCs. Otherwise I would’ve been instantly killed countless times. Ok, no more talking. I’m going to sleep! I’m nearly dead!”

“Ok ok, go ahead~”

.....

I returned to my dorm and went straight to sleep.

When I woke up, it was already 7 o’clock in the morning. Wan Er’s call came just in time and we went to eat breakfast together.

Late autumn had finally settled in and the chilly weather had set in.

Wan Er wore all black with a red scarf. With her elegant heels, the entire atmosphere she gave off was above normal. Dong Cheng had a similar outfit on. These two little misses didn’t have a worry about money, and had enough to spend on dressing up. When I got close to them, Wan Er walked over with a smile on her face. She reached out and tugged on my sleeve, “You haven’t washed this outfit in seven days right?”

My face went red, “Actually, it’s been 14 days...”

“Woow, such a shameless guy. Later, take it off. I’ll help you wash it...”

“Don’t. Winter’s almost here. Being a little gross will be hidden under all the jackets for the wind!”

“You...”

Wan Er’s hands were in fists as she looked at me with a huffy expression. It looked as though she was going to kill me.

Dong Cheng giggled, “Wan Er, talk with him about the serious stuff!”

“Ok...”

Wan Er looked straight into my face and said, “Li Xiao Yao, I want to announce a very important thing to you!”

“Oh? What is it?” I asked with a smile.

Wan Er’s face went completely red, “That... that...”

Dong Cheng impatiently rushed her, “Don’t that that me... here I’ll say it! Brother Xiao Yao, you know about the South part of Liu Hua University, right? There’s a lot of villas and buildings that you can rent. Each one has around ten rooms. It has everything, from kitchens to living rooms. Our Wan Er wants to rent one. Why don’t you come and live with us. After all, that would be a bit safer. Please keep your dissent to yourself.”

I was stunned, “Oh? Doesn’t that mean we’ll be living together?”

“Yup, do you have any problems with that?” Dong Cheng asked with a mischievous look. “Logically, shouldn’t you be looking forward to this? After all, the little miss will just be around the corner....”

I turned red and rubbed my nose, “Am I really that kind of a person? I am a just and courageous police....”

“Hmph, then I’ll take it that you agree!”

I looked at Wan Er and said, “Wan Er, I think you should ask what your father thinks first, shouldn’t you? Otherwise, I won’t be able to explain it to him. Am I right?”

Wan Er nodded, “Yup, I was just about to ask him that....”

As she said that, she pulled out her phone and began a call. The three of us stood in the chilly autumn wind using gestures to communicate——

“Daddy~~~” Wan Er sweetly called out.

A cheerful voice came out from the other side, “Oh, Wan Er, why are you calling me? I’m on the way to Nanjing. I can’t eat with you today.”

Wan Er smiled, “That’s fine, you don’t have to eat with me. Dad, I have something I want to formally let you know.”

Lin Tian Nan smiled, “Oh, looks like you’re acting first and then reporting. Come on, out with it As long as it isn’t anything that oversteps the boundaries, then I’ll definitely give it to you.”

“It’s like this...” Wan Er hesitated for a second, and then said, “Our university has a neighborhood of villas. Dong Cheng and I want to move into one of them. The environment there is much better than the dorms. Daddy will say yes

right?”

Lin Tian Nan immediately felt something wrong, “Is Li Xiao Yao going to move in with you?”

“Yup. The villa is around two kilometers away from the university.... If he doesn’t go, then safety would be an issue. I heard that the people in the Blood Scythe are really cruel. You’ve even offended them....”

Lin Tian Nan was speechless, “Alright. Then you can move in. However....”

“However what?”

Lin Tian Nan smiled, “However, you guys can live on the second floor. I will set people up in the first floor. Don’t worry, they won’t interfere with your lifestyle or your games.”

“Hmph, dad, are you sending more people to monitor me?”

“Not at all, just for security...”

“Hmph, sounds so nice!”

[] [] []

# Chapter 604 Leaving a Window Open For You

“That...”

Standing in the chilly wind, I felt a leaf fall onto my shoulder. I then continued to ask, “Then the rent for a villa should be pretty expensive right? It has ten rooms, it’s like a little castle.”

“Not too expensive...”

Wan Er smiled, “80,000 a month!”

I shuddered, “Mother, so that’s what rich men spend money on for mistresses...”

Wan Er glared at me, “Pig, I won’t be able to provide for Xiao Yao Zi Zai the guildmaster of [Zhan Long]. Alright, let’s not talk about this for now. I’ve already signed the lease. All we have to do now is send the money and we can move in!”

“Good.”

I thought about it for a second and then said, “Is Tang Qi also going to live with us? After all, he did come to Liu Hua University to protect Dong Cheng.”

“Can we not?” Dong Cheng seemed a little unwilling.

I comforted her and said, “Actually, Tang Qi isn’t a bad person. He likes you, and he’s a very responsible person. How hard is it to find a person like that? Tell him to come with us. That way, Wan Er’s dad won’t suspect me of suspicious stuff for living together with two beauties.

Wan Er cocked her head and smiled, “Do you have some unspeakable motive?”

I glared at her and looked at her rising mounds. I then coughed and said, “There really aren’t any at the moment. Let’s go. We should go eat. Afterwards, we can think about moving.”

Wan Er played with her phone with one hand and hooked her elbow with her other hand. She then walked into the cafeteria with a smile, “Ok, it’s all set. I’ve already successfully sent the money. We have Building Seven. We can move in tomorrow morning.”

As she said that, the beautiful little miss giggled, “Oh? I can finally bully pig all day!”

I immediately called Tang Qi and told him the the news. When he heard it, he was so happy he sounded like he just ate a sweet piece of candy.

Wan Er’s phone suddenly rang. She had received a message. When Wan Er read it, her face immediately turned unhappy. She furrowed her brow and said, “I knew it. It must be more complicated than that. Here it is....”

Dong Cheng and I gathered around her to look. The message came from Lin Tian Nan, “Wan Er, your cousin is moving back from France tomorrow to work in Hang Zhou. I plan on letting her move in with you guys. That way, it would be more convenient for us all and you guys can look after eachother.”

.....

Dong Cheng fluttered her eyes and willy smiled, “Isn’t he just asking relatives to look after Wan Er for him? Brother Xiao Yao, your unspeakable plan to climb through Wan Er’s window just got wrecked...”

I smiled bitterly, “F\*ck, it really has been....”

Wan Er’s beautiful eyes widened as she looked at me, “Idiot. Were you really thinking about that?”

“Yup....”

“Then I’ll leave the window open for you....”

“.....”

When the inherently innocent little miss acted like a hoodlum, I was immediately defeated. I quickly switched the topic to discussing with the two little misses about how to move in and how our schedules would work. For example, all the clothes were left to Dong Cheng to watch, the floor was left to Dong Cheng to sweep, and the snacks would all be bought by Dong Cheng. The

more Wan Er and I talked about it, the more blessed we felt. All Dong Cheng could do was stomp her feet, making several of the male students from the tables around look over at us and drool.

.....

The next morning, we began to move our things. Actually, I only had one set of baggage, a box of clothes and some bedding. I just needed to make one trip and I could move it all. Glasses Bro stood on the side and bitterly watched me work, “What the f\*ck, you’re really going to go and live with Wan Er?”

I nodded, “Yup, would I be lying to you?”

Glasses Bro said, “Brother, listen to me. This kind of living co ed is really bad. This is the prelude to a man who lacks commitment and responsibility. When you’ve crossed the lines of justice and morality and broken the bottom line of friendship. For one, this greediness ignores the needs of the common people. I just want to ask one question—— are there any empty rooms? Oh I also want to ask, how much money is it....”

I thought about it for a second and then smiled, “I’m afraid that won’t happen. I’m worried that Wan Er won’t agree. How about this, I’ll ask after I finish moving in. I have your phone number. If there is an empty room, then I’ll let you know.”

Tang Gu rubbed his hands together, his drool nearly falling out, “It’s no problem if there aren’t any empty rooms. I don’t care if we have to squeeze in.”

“GTFO!”

“F\*ck, what are you thinking about? Am I the kind of person that would ask to share a room with a girl? Clearly not. I want to live with another guy. Eh, no that doesn’t sound right.... I don’t swing that way either....”

“.....!!!”

.....

When it was close to noon, we piled our bags onto the A4 and Wan Er’s seven series. We then drove the two cars to the seventh villa in the university. It had a relatively big yard as well as eight parking spots. Green vines climbed up the



wooden poles. It was already late autumn and the chrysanthemums were starting to bloom. Their sweet fragrance wafted to our noses. When the two girls got out of the cars, they were extremely excited. When we arrived, the building manager brought the keys. We just happened to be right across from the security office. Looks like safety wouldn't be much of an issue in the area.

Before we had time to move the boxes off the car, we saw a cloud of dirt start rushing over. When we looked more closely, all we saw was Tang Qi carrying a mattress on his back and two bags in each of his hands. With dust all over him, he ran towards us with his mouth hanging from a hundred meters away. Expressionless, I put up a thumb, "He truly deserves the rank of a Royal Air expert..."

Tang Qi waved his hand and smiled, "Ha ha, when I was... when I was training... I ran up and down the mountain in one breath..."

I was speechless.

We began to move the baggage out of the car and into the hall. The decor was extremely luxurious. No wonder it was 80,000 a month. The entire house was already furnished completely. The four of us went up to the second floor. There was a total of eight rooms. Five rooms, two bathrooms, and an exercise room. There was even a running machine. Now was the problem of picking rooms. There were three rooms next to the garden. Dong Cheng, Wan Er and I quickly called dibs. All Tang Qi could do was choose the other room. The final room was reserved for Wan Er's cousin.

We set up our gaming equipment and made our beds. Almost everything was unpacked already. Wan Er's room and mine were right next to each other. We could open the window and talk to each other from there. This time I was close enough to her. In reality, this way was much easier for me to protect her. I stood in the room and leaned against the wall. I could feel Wan Er on the other side. I gripped my fist. Motherf\*cker, I can finally truly become a personal bodyguard!

.....

At noon, Lin Tian Nan sent some people over. There was a total of four security guards, two chefs, and two maids. This kind of treatment was just too

lavish. But, for the sake of the apple of his eye, the Tian Xin CEO would just have to take on this trouble.

After we finished eating, we went online. It was time to start dealing with the real business.

“Shua!”

When I appeared in Ba Huang City, I first repaired all of my equipment. Now that I had the Dragon Spit Pill, I didn’t need to stock up on potions. I looked at my skills and stats. Yup, my priority now was to rush all of my skills to Heavenly Tier Level 1. Actually, now that I was Level 112, in reality, I could rush my skills to Heavenly Tier Level 2.

I opened up the city sytem page. One of the powers of a city master was that I could teleport directly to there!

“Shua!”

I appeared in [Zhan Long]’s Dragon’s Den. After all these days, the city had finally reached level 4——

[Dragon’s Den] (Level 4 City)

City Owner: Xiao Yao Zi Zai

City Guardian: Chi Yu Han & City Vice Guardian: Chi Yu Qing

City Buildings: 17

Military: 55 (Swordsmen x20, Piao Dao Warriors x20, Halberd Wielders x15)

Laborers: 2724

City Scale: Large City

City Production Power——

Food: 9240/hour

Wood: 9000/hour

Stones: 9000/hour

.....

Our military numbers were still too small. But the production rate was

incredible. Chi Yu Qing's business sense was amazing. With her, Dragon's Den would grow much faster than most player cities. This was one of [Zhan Long]'s advantages.

I looked at the status of the different buildings. The Falcon Nest, the Barracks, the Equestrian Range, the cavalry barracks, the shooting range, and the tavern were all leveled up to four. This meant that we had fulfilled the requirements for a Level 5 city. I immediately leveled it up. "Ding!" a system notification popped up, the leveling would be complete in ten hours. Just a little more and I would be able to level it up to six. At that point, then I would be able to recruit the Heavy Iron Knight's\*.

\*TL Note: I missed the translation for this. Instead of Heavy Iron Artillery, it should be Heavy Iron Knights. Sorry for the confusion!

In the distance, Chi Yu Han raised his Heaven's Spite sword and rushed over on his horse. He leapt off and knelt before me, "My lord, lately there have been many roaming hunters in the area. They're all envious of the riches of the Dragon's Den. Quite a few have even been killed by me."

I nodded, "Good, you did well..."

Chi Yu Han then stood up and said, "I heard that there was a great war in Dragon City. The Hybrid Demons had invaded the human fort.... I wasn't able to help my lord and I feel extremely regretful. However, I haven't recovered over 50% of my strength yet. I'm afraid I wouldn't have been much help. Otherwise, I would have lost my own life as well!"

I smiled, "Yes. Without my command, do not leave the Dragon's Den. Your duty is to just guard this fort!"

"Yes my lord!"

Chi Yu Qing also raised her whip and walked over. She swung her thin hips and with a flirtatious look she smiled, "City Owner, we now have over 2000 city residents. The city has been developing very well. We've even attracted quite a few merchants and adventurers to join. I believe not far in the future, that the Dragon's Den will be second only to Ba Huang City. Maybe, maybe we may even rival Ba Huang City and become a city ready for war!"

I was stunned, "There's no need...."

“Why’s that my lord?” Chi Yu Qing was puzzled.

I spread out my hands and said, “Because, right now Ba Huang City is under the command of Princess Angela, and so the order made by Duke Luo Lei to wipe out the Dragon’s Den is invalid. Now, the Dragon’s Den can re enter into Ba Huang City’s territory.”

“So it was like that. That’s a good thing then. Otherwise, we’d have Ba Huang City to our east, Jiu Li City to our North, and Tian Ling Empire to our west. There’d be no way we could live under that competition.”

“Yes, that is it exactly!”

I patrolled the Dragon’s Den and sent out a dozen or so commands. This city was growing just as I had wanted it to. With my two swords on my back, I urged my horse out of the city towards Dragon City. It was time I went to see if my master had any new quests. There were a lot of things waiting to be done in Dragon City. Frost definitely had some things for me to do.

[] [] []

# Chapter 605 A Dick Headed Bird

Snowflakes danced in the wind and the rebuilt Dragon City stood on the hill.

At least 50% of Dragon City had already been rebuilt. The place where Igoras' sword had crushed the wall had already been fixed. Furthermore, the broken North Wall was done being rebuilt. This time, not only did they use extremely sturdy rock to hold up the wall, they also put sharp blades and knives throughout the wall to help increase the defenses. The entire city looked like it was made of iron. Even if the Hybrid Demon Kings were to invade again, the outcome may not be the same as before.

This proved one point, and that was if the government's heart was set on something, then there was no achievement that couldn't be accomplished.

.....

My Flying Scythe War Horse snorted and stomped the ground as it charged towards the city. A group of sentries welcomed me, shouting, "My lord!"

I nodded to them and rushed to the observation deck. As I had expected, Frost, Qing Luo, and the Red Dragon Queen were all there. When I flipped off of my horse, Frost turned to look at me with a smile, "Li Xiao Yao, you're here?"

I replied, "Yep, I'm here to see the status of Dragon City. I also want to see if there's anything you need me to complete."

Frost helplessly said, "Right now there are two extremely critical tasks that need to be completed. The first is that I need a group of iron made blades. Second, I need to go to the Wild Dragon Territory to steal some dragon eggs."

"One at a time."

"Yes." She then went into deep thought. After a few seconds, she said, "Last time during the battle of Dragon City Defense, almost all of the blades that we had used couldn't cut through the high tier Hybrid Demon bodies. The capability of our arrows was even more limited. I've researched a little more about it. Of the different types of Hybrid Demons, for example the Demon Hunters, the Grave Digger Demons, the Demon Sword Masters, and the

Hellhounds, they all have death as a trait. Plus, most of Ba Huang City's blades are made from cold iron that originate deep in the mountains. The fact that they couldn't cut through the Hybrid Demon's bodies was to be expected."

I smiled and said, "Looks like we're going to need some fire type blades then, right?"

Frost nodded, "Yep, that's the idea. However, fire type weapons are extremely rare. I've asked Princess Angela, and according to her, just northeast of Ba Huang City is a Beast Spirit Valley. That's where the barbarians and the beasts live. The Beast Spirit Valley used to be the origin of a volcano. There, there's a large number of fire type materials that we can use. The problem is that a lot of ground elves are currently guarding the map. There's at least 100,000 dwarven warriors, so we cannot offend them. We can only go there and make a compromise. There's a problem though..."

Frost revealed an annoyed expression and said, "However, I'm not familiar with these dwarves... the only person that has ever made contact with dwarves in the city is currently in a tantrum..."

Qing Luo muttered, "Just, he stole some things and dug out some of the blue gems that were embedded into the hall in Dragon City!"

I smiled, "Are you talking about Odelia?"

"Yup."

Frost nodded and said, "Right now, the task I'm giving you is to convince Odelia and let her bring you and Qing Luo and a group of soldiers to the Beast Spirit Valley and find the dwarves. There, you will trade for a large amount of fire type materials. Like this, we'll be able to create a lot of fire type arrows, spear heads, and blades to deal with the Hybrid Demons."

I raised a fist and smiled, "Don't worry, leave this job to me!"

"Ok!"

.....

Snowflakes fluttered in the wind. But, with Frost and the Red Dragon Queen here, I didn't feel cold at all, but rather a warm feeling of hope in my heart. This wasn't because I had become a fifth advancement Dragon Rider. My Cloud

Stepping Boots crushed the snow underneath me as I walked into the castle. In the city hall, quite a few blacksmiths were smelting the metal to make weapons. “Ding Ding!” they hit the burning hot metals. Some patrolling Dragon City soldiers saluted me as they went by. Looks like my reputation in Dragon City was far different from before.

I walked towards one of the Dragon City Soldiers. He gripped his long halberd and stood guard before the great door that guarded the armory. A bruise colored his cheek. I walked over and asked, “What’s up with your injury?”

The soldier miserably said, “That Odelia, she insisted on entering our armory, saying that her treasure was in there. I didn’t let her and so she beat me. When I reported this to Frost, Lady Frost said to let her do as she pleased... Lord, that Odelia is a beautiful devil. Please send her back to where you found her!”

I furrowed my brow, “That... where is Odelia?”

“In the Holy Dragon Hall!”

“Ok!”

The Holy Dragon Hall was an ancient building below the city. Actually, it was just a lot of totems in a circle. The people of Dragon City all go there to pray to the dragons for fortune and protection.

.....

When I walked through the entrance of the Holy Dragon Hall. From a distance, I could see the golden statue of the ancient dragon resting at the center of the hall. There were nine pillars standing in a circle around it. There were also black dragons, red dragons, azure dragons, fire dragons, and ice dragons carved into all of the pillars. It was incredibly majestic!

“Huh? That’s not right. There was something ruining the atmosphere. There appeared to be a person climbing up the gold dragon statue. That’s right, it’s Odelia!

“Wu wu...”

Odelia hung onto the head of the dragon. Her butt stuck up as she hung for dear life. “Pa!” she broke off one of the dragon whiskers and happily bit down

on her new treasure, “24K pure gold. Wow...”

As she said that she put the dragon whisker into the bag on her back. Afterwards, she glanced around at the enormous dragon head. She reached out as though she couldn't bear to leave with it. All that reflected from her beautiful eyes was the gold of the dragon. Without another word, “Keng!” she pulled out a sharp sword!

“Motherf\*cker...”

I was stunned and rushed forward shouting, “Odelia, what are you doing?!”

With three strides, I leapt onto the back of the dragon and shouted, “That's the symbol and pillar of our Dragon City. How could you do that...”

Odelia held onto the Dragon Head and pouted her lip, “Don't you bother with me. Otherwise I'll kill you! This dragon head is mine.... All of this gold is mine..”

“Didn't I just tell you, you can't touch this statue. Otherwise, Frost will definitely beat you up!”

I grabbed the edge of her dress and dragged her down. Despite this, Odelia tightly held onto the dragon head and didn't let go. I then reached out and grabbed her hip and dragged her downward, “I already said, don't take it....”

“Ya yay a....”

Odelia began to activate her Holy Domain power. Energy began to sliver around her arms and she glared at me, “No no, I want all of this gold! Youngster, don't you dare try anything. Otherwise I'll really get angry!”

“Hua la!”

I suddenly took a handful of gold out of my bag. It was incredibly heavy. There was a whole 200,000G in it and said, “Follow me. If you help me do something then all of this gold is yours. There's 200,000. That's more than enough for you to be as rich as a country!”

“Huh!?”

Odelia lunged forward. I turned around and tore the bag out of her grasp. I smiled, “I haven't finished talking. You still have to agree to something. Furthermore, you cannot touch any more of Dragon City's stuff. Otherwise, you



won't get a single cent of this money!"

"This... that..."

Odelia thought about it for a long time and said, "Alright then, I'll take this 200,000. Don't you dare play any tricks. Otherwise, I'll go and join the Hybrid Demons and bring Ignoras and Lanais here to kill you all. Then I'll tie you to the top of a cliff and let those little birds with the heads shaped like dicks bite you to death!"

".....!!!"

.....

"Alright, well out with it. What do you want me to do?" Odelia pulled her long sword out of her sheath and crossed her arms over her full chest, talking to me seriously.

I grunted and said, "Dragon City needs to go to the Beast Spirit Valley to mine a large amount of fire type minerals. However, we have to do this with the permission of the dwarves first. You're more familiar with them, and so we were hoping you could take me there to compromise with them to let us mine. First and foremost, the negotiation with the dwarves must succeed. Otherwise, don't even think about getting any of this gold! Even if you tie me to the edge of the world, then I'll make those little birds into soup and give them to you to drink."

"Ah...."

Odelia shuddered and said, "Alright... I've made some bargains with those dumb dwarven men before. They love buckwheat ale, but it's near impossible to plant buckwheat on the mountains. And so, I got 100 swords from them with 1000 gallons of buckwheat ale. Yup, that was already many years ago. That... that...."

I stared at her and said, "Don't try to delay this. You have to help me finish this task..."

"Alright. Because you have gold.." Odelia bit her lip and said, "However, my only job is to help you and the dwarves reach an agreement. When that is over, then don't go looking towards me for hard work like mining. I wasn't made for

harsh work like that!”

I nodded, “Alright. Then we’ll do it like that!”

Odelia giggled, “Also, there are quite a few half human half beast people living in the Beast Spirit Valley. You should call on a few helpers. Otherwise, I won’t be so sure that you’ll be able to return alive.”

“Ok!”

Right at that moment, a bell sounded in the air and I officially got the quest  
——

“Ding!”

System Notification: You’ve received the SSS tier Quest [Minerals of Beast Spirit Valley]!

Quest Details: Travel to Beast Spirit Valley with Odelia and reach an agreement with the Dwarves. After entering into the Beast Spirit Valley, you must clear out all of the half man half beast and barbarians first. After that, you’ll be able to gain the ability to mine the minerals. However, you must be careful. Those half man half beast tribe and barbarians are extremely savage. At most you can bring four people to help.

.....

An SSS tier quest, but it wasn’t a main quest, so it shouldn’t be too hard. Five people was enough!

I sent out a message to Wan Er, Dong Cheng and brought Darling Duck along for heals. Qing Qian would be good for damage. I would then be the tank. I began preparing for everything. The four girls all agreed as well. With a quest, who wouldn’t want to grind in a new map!

[] [] []

# Chapter 606 Hercules

We all decided to set off from Ba Huang City and so I took Odelia from Dragon City to there.

“Sha sha....”

My footsteps rang through the forest as I stepped onto branches and fallen leaves. When I broke through the thick brush and vines, I appeared before Ba Huang City. Odelia raised her sword and looked at the city, “Oh, Ba Huang City... it’s been awhile since I was last here. I vaguely remember that the barley ale here was pretty good.”

I said, “As a girl you actually want to drink that badly?”

Odelia made a fist with Holy Domain Energy and circled it around. She looked at me and smiled wickedly, “Youngster, have you seen a woman this strong?”

I whistled, “Don’t even try. Frost is much stronger than you.”

“Wu....” Odelia furrowed her elegant brows, “You b\*st\*rd, just you wait. I’ll train to be even stronger than Frost. Then... then I’ll lead an army of thousands of soldiers to your Dragon City and kidnap your Goddess Frost. Then I’ll sell her off to become the wife of a barbarian bandit!”

I smiled, “With Frost’s strength, that half beast half man barbarian wouldn’t even be able to raise a finger before her, isn’t that right?”

“Hmph!”

Odelia couldn’t respond. She bit her lip and said, “Let’s go and enter Ba Huang City. Did you say that you were bringing four other friends along? Don’t think any more about it. That pretty student of the Hermit God is one of them right?”

“Smart!”

“Hmph. I pray for the day you guys break up!”

“B\*tch...”

.....

I strode into Ba Huang City's territory. The four girls were already standing on the north bridge. Wan Er stood at the very front, adorned in her elegant leather armor. Her beautiful face was as beautiful as the moon. She smiled with her arms crossed as she leaned against the marble railings of the bridge. Her long legs were only slightly hidden by fluttering cloth.

Qing Qian was completely clothed in a fiery red armor. She held the Divine Tier Dagger, Blade of Purgatory while her Cold Iron Blade Shield pet was beside her. It was her new Valkyrie Tier BOSS pet. She patted its head as she giggled, "Hercules, you better work hard. Don't let Brother Xiao Yao look down on you!"

I smiled inwardly. So this Cold Iron Blade Shield was called "Hercules". That was just too amusing. It made me think of how the red spider tried to fight against the gods.

Dong Cheng Yue was wearing a brand new mage robe while she played with a fiery staff in one hand. Beside her was a Sabertooth Tiger. The tiger was a Saint Tier BOSS type pet. It was the reward she got from the Defend the City points. It was an extremely strong pet. If my Ancient Holy Tiger hadn't evolved, then this Saber Tooth Tiger may even be stronger.

Darling Duck leaned against a pillar and waved her staff as she smiled, "Guildmaster, why don't you try the feeling of my new Fifth advancement healing skill!"

As she said that, she waved her staff. "Shua!" A soft green light fell upon my body. I was stunned. I felt a warm feeling spread throughout my body. Yup. This was the level 100 healer skill——Magic Reflect Shell. It let the person being protected ignore a certain amount of magic attacks. This also meant that in the upcoming battles, this [Magic Reflect Shell] was going to be the strongest enemy against mages!

Afterwards, Darling Duck waved her staff again. At that moment, a glowing battle axe symbol appeared below my feet——

"Di!"

Battle Notification: The Player Darling Duck has cast the effect [Hundred Battles] on you. Your physical attack and magic attack have increased by 25.7%. It will last for four minutes and 21 seconds. Leveling the skill will increase the

duration of the skill. It is also directly related with the healer's healing ability!

.....

[Hundred Battles] was another main skill for fifth advancement healers. It also greatly increased the ability of healers as a support class. Now there was nothing that could sway the top position as a BUFFER.

I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword and smiled, "Yup. Looks like everyone has gotten a lot stronger. Let's go and head towards Beast Spirit Valley. I'll share the quest with you all!"

Very soon, I successfully shared the quest with everyone. The four girls all appeared in my team list. Wan Er smiled, "Let's head out and finish this quest quickly!"

With a flip of her cloak, the beautiful little miss lead the way. Dong Cheng and Qing Qian followed close behind. I lead my horse and took the rear, protecting Darling Duck. Even though the five of us were extremely strong, that didn't mean we should be careless. There were enemies throughout the forest outside. [Zhan Long] was the biggest winner in the Dragon City Battle, but that also meant that we had made too big of a splash. There were at least thousands of people out there that wanted to shake our position. Wang Zhe Cheng, Not Ordinary, and Soaring Dragon all wanted Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Qing Qian and the other main [Zhan Long] members to lose 50 levels or more.

When we entered into the Ba Huang City Forest, we began to move more quickly. Odelia then raised her long sword and walked behind me. Her clear eyes were filled with caution as she watched for everything around us. Even though she was the most wanted assassin on the continent, Odelia still dared to walk into Ba Huang City. That truly requires a lot of courage. On the other hand, Ba Huang City stopped going after her. Angela had forgiven all of her crimes. Odelia on the other hand, continued her old habits. Even if she were to commit a crime in Ba Huang City, it would probably be looked over due to her help with Frost's revival. Plus, Angela needed all the help she could find, and definitely wouldn't want to offend this Holy Domain expert. Compared to her father and her brother's techniques, Angela was much softer and kinder.

.....

Throughout the way, we met multiple groups of Ba Huang City players grinding levels in the forest. Quite a few of the males would stare at the girls in our group with adoration. Some of them even whistled. Most of them could recognize Cang Tong, Cang Yue, and Qing Qian as the top three beauties in [Zhan Long]!

In the Butterfly Forest, not far ahead of us, there was a group of ten players grinding levels. One of them was a level 97 Barbarian Knight who looked at us. He whistled and shouted, "Isn't that Cang Tong and Cang Yue? F\*ck, right on time. The NPC beside them doesn't look bad either, she just has a smaller chest!"

As he said that, he blew another whistle. In that single moment, he had enraged the female assassin in our group!

"Die!"

Odelia grunted and stomped the ground. "Peng!" A shockwave rushed through the forest. In the blink of an eye, she appeared before the Barbarian Knight. Her thin body rammed the barbarian so hard that he cashed into the tree right across. She then rushed forward, pressing her blade into his throat. Odelia's eyes were extremely cold and she smiled, "If you have the guts, why don't you repeat what you said. Whose chest is small?"

The knight was stunned, "This NPC actually dares to attack players?"

Odelia raised her hand. Flames rose up, swallowing the knight's pet wolf in a split second. All that was left was a pile of ash. Odelia then smiled, "How's that?"

The Barbarian trembled violently and said, "Your... your chest isn't small. It's enormous and full..."

"That's about right!"

Odelia took her sword back and nimbly dashed back to us. The frightened barbarian knight nearly went into shock. If this pretty NPC lost her temper, then he would've already lost his little life.

I strode forward and said, "Let's continue forward. No need to bother with her. She's too embarrassing...."

Odelia ran in front of us and strode to my side, “These stupid men. How could they understand the little secrets deep in a woman’s heart...”

I didn’t say anything else. Wan Er burst out in laughter and said, “Let’s hurry up. We shouldn’t attract too much attention. Otherwise, once we get into the Beast Spirit Valley, then maybe other guilds will try and ruin our quest.”

“Ok!”

.....

After walking for around 50 minutes, we finally reached the border of Ba Huang City’s territory. We stood on a piece of land that had yet to be developed. Weeds grew in a thicket before us. The map had a bright red “Beast Spirit Valley” written boldly above it. After all, we were standing at the entrance of the valley. The steel fortress stood before us. It was around 3 meters tall. Dwarves stood at the top of the wall. Their crossbows were only 1 meter tall. Otherwise, the short archers wouldn’t have been able to reach them.

“Halt!”

A voice came from inside the fort. We could see a battle axe being swung around in the air, but we couldn’t see anyone. The person continued, “Who are you, to dare and trespass on dwarven territory. Announce yourselves!”

Odelia put her hands on her hips and laughed, “Well lookie here. Who is it. Do they dare to stand up and talk? I can’t see you....”

On the city wall, the dwarf carrying the battle axe was incredibly angry. He leapt off the wall. He looked to be around 1.2 meters. He angrily shook his fist, “I’m already standing. You d\*mn\*d human woman. You dare to slander me. Tell me your name or die a death of a thousand arrows!”

Odelia giggled, “My full name is Odelia – Da Fu. Remember it well and report it back to your Dwarven King. He will remember me!”

The dwarven general was stunned, “Alright then, I’ll report it now....”

.....

Around ten minutes later, a group of dwarves rushed to the top of the city wall. Among them, there was one that wore a purple crown on his head. He

walked over to the city wall and said, “Odelia is here?”

At the bottom of the wall, Odelia smiled and said, “Your majesty the Dwarven King, do you still remember me? I was the one who used 1000 gallons of Buckwheat Ale for your 100 swords!”

“You’re really Odelia?”

The Dwarven King’s face turned into a mask of rage and he suddenly pulled out his sword and pointed at us, “Release your arrows and kill them all!”

.....

“Sou Sou Sou....”

Arrows fell like rain. I was stunned and immediately charged forward. Then, I crossed my swords in front of my chest. At the same time, I activated [King Domain] to protect everyone. I then reached out, grabbed Darling Duck and rushed backwards, yelling, “Hurry up and get out of their range!”

After retreating a hundred meters, we were all safe.

“Odelia!”

I glared at the Holy Domain assassin behind me and said, “Do you want to explain yourself?”

Odelia shifted her eyes and stuck her chest out angrily, “That group of dumb dwarves really are evil. Without another word they actually dare raise a hand against an old friend. They have no idea of what loyalty and justice is. I cannot allow them to live another day in this world. Let me kill them all!”

I glared, “Cut the crap. I’ll go talk with them!”

.....

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and urged my horse to the bottom of the city wall and shouted, “I am the Dragon Rider of Dragon City, a student of Frost. We came here to make a deal, however I do not know how my friend Odelia has offended your majesty.”

The Dwarven King coldly laughed, “Odelia, that despicable b\*st\*rd. She said that she was going to use 1000 gallons of Buckwheat Ale in exchange for our



long swords. However, only the top layer of the Buckwheat Ale was top quality. Everything in it was fake crap. It made 274 of our dwarven warriors get food poisoning. They had diarrhea day after day. They even grew thinner!”

I turned around and glared at Odelia.

She smiled and raised her hands, “That year the continent was plagued with bad weather so the harvest wasn’t good. You have to understand me, dearest one....”

I was speechless.

[] [] []

## Chapter 607 Hero's Wings

I turned around and glared at the city. There's no other choice. Only I can wipe Odelia's ass now.

"Your highness!"

I cleared my throat and continued, "I believe this is all a misunderstanding. I will make up for my friend's mistake. How about this. I will give you 1000 gallons of quality Barley Ale for compensation. I hope that you won't continue to hold her responsible. Actually, I will send you 2000 Gallons of Barley Ale, in return for your forgiveness."

Barley was a type of seed that you could buy in the Ba Huang City's shops. I believe it was around 10 coppers for every pound. It was pretty cheap. Giving them 10,000 gallons wouldn't be a problem!

The dwarves' eyes lit up, as though they were thirsty alcoholics. But at first one seemed a little doubtful. "Really? Are you really willing to give us 2000 gallons of Barley Ale?"

I nodded, "Absolutely. If I said I am going to give you them, then I am going to give them to you!"

"Alright!" The Dwarf King smiled, "Dragon City's Dragon Knights truly are above average. This is a real hero's attitude. Tell me, youngster, why did you come here?"

I grunted and said, "Actually, my trip here this time was by Frost's command. I want to pass through this fort and go into the Beast Spirit Valley to mine some fire type weapons. That way, we could fight off the Hybrid Demons."

"Oh?"

The expression on the Dwarf King's face suddenly turned cloudy, "Young Dragon Rider, there's something I don't understand. The Beast Spirit Valley is the backyard of us dwarves. Even though there are some half beast half barbarians that have occupied the area, however, it's still my land. If you want to go into there to mine those minerals, then that will be sealing the death

contract for us dwarves. After all, you guys are using those weapons to deal with the Hybrid Demons. That doesn't seem to have anything to do with us dwarves, isn't that right?"

I was startled. Odelia walked forward from behind me and pulled out her sword, "Old b\*st\*rd, don't you forget. If the Hybrid Demons want to occupy Ba Huang City, then they would leave you dwarves alone? Have you forgotten how Commander Lin Han had banished your tribe 5000 years ago?"

The Dwarven King grit his teeth, "Lin Han that d\*mn\*d b\*st\*rd!"

Wan Er walked forward and said, "Your Majesty the Dwarven King, Lin Han was already killed by us in Dragon City. Did you not receive the news?"

"What? You... you guys killed Lin Han?"

Wan Er nodded, "Yes. You can send scouts out later to check the information but Lin Han has truly been killed."

"Yes!"

The Dwarven King made a fist and said, "I will send out scouts right now. Once I have checked out the news, then I will agree to partner with you. However, if you want the authority to mine fire type ore from our mines, then you must exchange it with 100,000 Gallons of Barley Ale. That way, we can get through five winters. How does that sound?"

I nodded "No problem!"

.....

The great gates of the fortress opened up and a dwarf riding on a wild wolf dashed out. At the same time, I opened up my messenger and contacted Fox, "Fox, I need your help!"

"Oh, what's up?"

"Help me buy some barley from the merchants in Ba Huang City. I need 100,000 kilograms. Let me know, how long does it take for the stores to refresh?"

"This I know. It refreshes every hour, with 5000 kilograms each time. Every city has a total of 4 NPC merchants. I'll send people out to Jiu Li City and Fan

Shu City to buy it. We'll get it all in two hours. It won't actually take that long.

"Ok, then I'll leave it to you. When you're done buying it all, head to Beast Spirit Valley. I'll send the coordinates to you later. Bring a team of a thousand people to escort it. Be careful."

"Understood. Don't worry!"

.....

Like that, we all waited before Beast Spirit Valley. Around an hour later, the dwarf riding on the wolf returned. He carried the royal flag in his hand and he shouted cheerfully, "Your majesty... the news is real. While Hell's Battlesong Lin Han was chasing after the Red Dragon Queen and Odelia, when he took an ambush and was killed in Dragon City. This happened seven days ago. That's right, it's the Odelia right in front of you. The Dragon Rider had killed Lin Han himself!"

The Dwarven King cheered. He quickly raised his long sword and leapt off the city wall. "Peng!" he landed on the ground and said, "So what you said was real! Odelia, everything we owe each other is finished. You have cleared the shame for our entire Dwarven tribe!"

Odelia stood up tall and straight in front of the Dwarven King. She then reached out and touched his crown and smiled, "Well well, you really are too respectful. What can I say, I've completed my task?"

I nodded, "That's right, now please let go of his majesty's crown. Unless you want to be turned into a porcupine?"

Odelia unwillingly gave up on the idea of stealing the king's crown and said, "Then I'll head back to Dragon City to report back!"

"Yup!"

.....

We continued waiting. Around an hour later, a group of [Zhan Long]'s Second Division players appeared outside of the Beast Spirit Valley. Fox had brought 1000 players that he had personally picked to escort the 100,000 kilograms of Barley. Under my direction, everyone put their bags of barley before the fort.

Not long after, we pushed the small mountain. All of the dwarves became so happy that tears nearly flowed out.

“Aiya....”

The great doors opened up and the dwarven king smiled, “My friends, the doors of the Beast Spirit Valley will always be open for you. However, please be careful of those half beast half barbarians. When you see them, kill. Do not have mercy!”

I nodded, “Yes!”

Fox then said, “Old Li, I’ll be taking my men outside to grind then. At the same time, I’ll stay on guard for you. So that you won’t be ambushed while you’re grinding. If the [Zhan Long] guildmaster and two vice guildmasters are killed by a crowd, then the rumors that spread out definitely won’t be easy on the ear!”

Wan Er softly smiled, “Fox is really attentive. Then we’ll do it like that. Let’s go into the valley!”

“Alright!”

.....

The quest officially started and signaled our five man team to enter into the Beast Spirit Valley. We had to kill all of the half beast and half barbarian men. As an SSS tier quest, the difficulty must be pretty high.

When we entered into the fort, there were dwarven warriors surrounding us. Just the simple Barley Ale was enough to make that the happiest people in the world. In reality, life was really simple. When we were young, a toy, or a small car was enough to make one satisfied. But the older we got, the more lonely we felt. Despair was like an abyss that many people lost themselves in, forgetting what their original goals were.

“Screech....”

A couple of Goshawks flew past us in the air. This was a ring shaped fort, allowing the dwarves to live within the high walls. Just outside of the walls was the dwarven Beast Spirit Valley. The wild valley looked as though it were on fire with all of the autumn leaves. From a distance, I could see quite a few half beast men carrying battle axes and roaming the borders. It looked as though they

were wandering soldiers. Each of them were wearing tattered armor. However, when Wan Er walked close to 50 yards away from them, three of the half beast men immediately turned red and aggroed. They swung their battle axes and long swords and charged over, yelling, “D\*mm\*t those humans actually dare tresspasses on our territory. Kill them all!”

“Charge!”

I urged my horse forward and charged over, activating a skill——[Assault]. At that moment, my Flying Scythe War Horse’s speed suddenly accelerated. “Peng!” I rammed into the first beastman, pushing him back quite a bit and stunning him for one second. This was the greatest advantage to this fifth advancement skill and was just too great.

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw a slash right onto the half beast!

“Pu!”

“8521!”

I had completely broken through his defense. This type of Level 115 Thunder Tier monster was much weaker than the Level 1 Hybrid Demons. And so, it was much easier to kill these. Wan Er and Qing Qian stunned the other two half beasts. Dong Cheng waved her staff. “Pa PaPa” her [Magma Lance] had hit both of them. Within 7 seconds, the three half beastmen screamed and died.

The quest then updated. We had completed 3/10,000 of monster killing portion. Looks like we had to kill 10,000 of the monsters in order to complete this quest. Furthermore, we had to search for the vein that actually had the fire attribute rocks.

Our five man team continued pushing forward. More and more half beast and barbarians were killed under my Dragon reservoir Sword. Around half an hour later, I heard a “Ding!” and a “Level+1” appeared above my head. My skill had leveled up. I had used my [Combo] so many times that it was the first to become a Heavenly Tier Level 1 skill. The skills name had even turned gold.

“Congrats!” Wan Er smiled, “Hurry up and try it out. What does this Heavenly Tier Level 1 Skill do differently?”

I nodded and charged at the first halfbeast man that was rushing at me. I then activated my Heavenly Tier Level 1 [Combo]. At that moment, I felt a strong force rush through my arm. In the next moment, a golden light surged from my body, splitting into six different golden rays of light that flowed off of my swords. The two swords crossed and then swung out, throwing slashes onto the half beast man. One after another, damage numbers flew up. My attack power had risen quite a bit.

“5412!”

“5528!”

“5319!”

“5117!”

“5323!”

“11228!”

.....

I had even activated a critical damage attack. Seeing so much damage being dealt in that moment had stunned all of the girls. Darling Duck widened her small mouth, “40,000 damage in a single moment.... Isn’t that just too OP? Just how many players can actually block a skill like that?”

I looked at the blood on my Dragon Reservoir Sword and said, “Everyone should hurry up and level their skills to Heavenly Tier. It’s effect is much higher than the Level 10 skills, at least by 20%!”

“Yes!”

We continued killing monsters while we chatted in our team chat——

I said, “How’s [Zhan Long]’s development these days?”

Qing Qian: “Everything’s normal. Our grinding rate is number one in Ba Huang City. Plus, with Dragon’s Den as our fort, our development is definitely top in Ba Huang City. Even [Vanguard] and [Prague] have no way of matching us.

I smiled and asked, “Then have we been provoked by any guilds?”

“Well we have, but they’re all minor guilds, and so it was easy to deal with.”

Qing Qian smiled, “[Hero’s Mound: Division One] and [Soaring Dragon] tried provoking us twice. Li Mu and Sister Matcha lead a team of people and dealt with it. Brother Xiao Yao you don’t have to worry about it. Just focus on your quests and setting up Dragon City. There’s a lot of things that you as the guildmaster don’t have to do yourself. If you did it all then you would die from being overworked.”

I looked at the progress of our quest, “We have to kill ten thousand thunder tier monsters. I think that already have enough on our plate.”

“That’s fine, as long as we get rewarded at the end!”

“Yup.”

.....

“That’s right...” Wan er suddenly looked at me and said, “Has Fei Er from ZGTV contacted you lately?”

“Nope, what’s up?”

“It’s about the alliance, Hero’s Wings”

“Hero’s Wings?”

“Yup.” Wan Er smiled and explained, “It’s a tournament that the World Games Coalition stated. It happens once a year and is the hottest tournament in the world servers. The “Hero’s Wings” is a cup I believe. It’s also an honor. Five people get to participate in each team, and the team that comes out as the champion gets the “Hero’s Cup” for a year. In other words, the team that wins basically climbs up to world fame. Are you excited yet? “

I laughed, “What do you think....”

[] [] []



# Chapter 608 Ming Jun

Wan Er continued, “Last year, the hottest game was and the final champion was a Korean team. And so, the Koreans took the ‘Hero’s Wings’ cup. This year, the hottest game is but who knows which country’s team will take it. America, the Netherlands, and the Russian servers all seem to have very high level players. However, [Vanguard] was once a King team. Furthermore, is a chinese game. Last year, during the “Hero’s Wings” cup, Fang Ge Que’s team took second place and almost won against the King team....”

I grunted and said, “The champion of the ‘Hero’s Wings Cup’, besides the trophy, what else do they get as a reward?”

Dong Cheng giggled, “I know this one. Besides the cup, there’s other rewards too. Because the game has a lot of publicity, the sponsors give a lot of rewards. Last year I believe the reward was around 120,000,000 USD for the champion, and 30,000,000 to the second place winner. This year, has around two to three times more popular, so the reward won’t be small.”

As I rode on my Flying Scythe Horse, I couldn’t help but shudder, “Dong Cheng, you aren’t tricking me are you? Is the reward really around 12,000,000 USD? Isn’t that like a trillion RMB?”

Wan Er softly smiled, “Dong Cheng isn’t tricking you. The reward really is that big. Because this is a worldwide event, corporations from all over the world are investing in it. Last year the total reward was around 300 million USD. You can just imagine what it’s going to be like for this year.

I was stunned, “That.... If those corporations invest so much money, what do they get back?

“That’s simple....”

Wan Er stabbed her [Blade of the Death God] at a half beastman and smiled, “The competition’s map has ads and sponsorships throughout the arena. What’s most important, even more so than the competition, is the live transmissions. The ratings for this competition are incredibly high, so the ads

won't be boring."

"Alright then...."

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and cut down a critical health half beast man. I then set down my determination and said, "I'm taking the championship for this year's 'Hero's Wings'! If five of us are competing, then with Wan Er, Dong Cheng and I, our chances of winning won't be low!"

Qing Qian smiled and said "That's right. The 'Hero's Wings' competition is normally three 1v1 rounds, one 2v2 round, and one 5v5 round. I think that if Brother Xiao Yao and Sister Cang Tong make a team, then the first two 1v1 would be easy to win. Even if we meet the last Korean King team, it still wouldn't be a problem. Afterwards, the two of you guys would then fight another 2v2. With three settled rounds, then rushing to the championship won't just be a dream!"

After all that, I was starting to get excited, "That.... When does the 'Hero's Wings' competition normally start?"

Last year it started on Christmas. This year, I don't know...." Wan Er saw my excited expression and smiled, "What are you getting so excited for... it's still too early. Either way, when the time comes just make sure you register!"

I nodded, "Yup. A five person competition. I think us five would already be enough... with a tank and a healer, then the 5V5 would be well in our favor."

"Yup. Anyway, just talking about all this isn't enough. Let's finish this quest first!"

"Ok!"

.....

As we continued traveling through the valley, looking for half beast men, the barbarians also launched attacks on us. My Dragon Reservoir Sword and Zhen Yue Sword were both dripping in blood. In order to kill 10,000 monsters, it was bound to be a lot of work.

Not long after, I heard a "Di!". One of my friends was messaging me. It was ZGTVs main MC, Fei Er——

“Hello handsome Zi Zai!” Fei Er’s sweet voice came through.

“Yup, beautiful Fei Er, what’s up?”

“Well.” Fei Er smiled and said, “It’s about the competition for the ‘Hero’s Wings’. You should know about it right now. The officials in charge of the ‘Hero’s Wings’ have already begun planning for the 2017 competition. At the moment, they’ve received quite a bit of investment, and so they’ve decided to hold a public release. China’s Shanghai Center of Gaming has taken the responsibility of hosting it. This year, the game is in and so they want to invite 300 players from all over the globe to join the feast. [Zhan Long] is one of the top ten guilds in the China Server and you are one of the top 20 CBN Battlenet Rankings, so you would naturally receive an invitation. Do you have the time to go?”

I nodded, “I should have time. Fei Er, if this this is being held by Shanghai, then why are you here to invite me?”

“Because... I’m the MC....”

“Eh, alright...” I then asked another question, “Besides me, is anyone else from [Zhan Long] invited?”

Fei Er smiled, “Let me look. Um.. besides you, Cang Tong, Cang Yue, General Li Mu, and Yue Qing Qian have been invited. Actually it’s the five players that are in your [Zhan Long Hall] that are being invited.”

“Ok, got it. Thanks!”

“No problem. Good luck! The ‘Hero’s Wings’ competition isn’t too far in the future. Work hard to become one of the top three in the China Server. That way, you’ll be able to participate in the world competition. Afterwards, bring the 2017 Cup back to China!”

“Ok! I’ll do my best!”

“He he, that’s good. I’ll continue leveling up. My levels too low, I’m always being bullied by people...”

“Do you want me to send people to help you level up?”

“No need, I have quite a few male co-workers that are fighting to bring me

along. You understand...”

“Too well, Haha....”

“Hmhm then I’m leaving.”

“Good bye.”

.....

I turned off my communication device and turned around to face Wan Er, “Fei Er really did contact me, just as you predicted. [Zhan Long] also has Li Mu, Melon who are also being invited to the ‘Hero’s Wings’ Conference.”

Wan Er smiled, “Then we should start planning. For the five man team, are we set on these five people. How does that sound?”

I thought about it for a second and nodded, “Yup, then we’ll set it as that!”

Qing Qian seemed to be a little doubtful. She pouted her lip and said, “But... our team already has Sister Cang Tong that assassin. If you add me in, wouldn’t that be a little superfluous? If we fought a 5v5 like that then we would be a little disadvantaged....”

“No.”

I glanced at Wan Er and smiled, “Qing Qian, your sister Cang Tong’s defense isn’t much lower than my own. Plus, her Iron Umbrella can block magic attacks. On top of that she has skills like [Blade of the Death God] and [Hermit God’s Arrival]. She’s nowhere near a typical assassin. She could pretty much act as a warrior. You’ll be the control while she and I hold the front lines.”

Wan Er smiled and threw a punch at me, “Pig!”

Qing Qian smiled as well, “Alright then. I’ll just hold you back a little....”

Darling Duck was a little speechless, “As the number 2 assassin in the china server Qing Qian, how could you consider yourself as dragging them down? Then what can the seventh healer in the China Server say....”

Dong Cheng smiled, “Stop being modest already. Let’s hurry up and kill. I don’t want to spend all night on this quest!”

“Ok!”

.....

After ten hours, we finally managed to kill all of the half beast men and barbarians in the Beast Spirit Valley. “Ding!” the quest notification appeared: Now that you’ve cleared the Beast Spirit Valley, head over towards the Flame Mountains. Kill the Barbarian General Ming Jun that is guarding the mines. Afterwards, bring the head to Frost. She will then send teams of laborers to mine the Beast Spirit Valley. Furthermore, you will get a generous reward!

“Alright. Time to kill the last BOSS!”

I lead my horse forward and looked at the red mountains. There were caves and cracks all over it. I smiled and said, “Who knows what kind of a BOSS it is this time....”

“We’ll know when we get there. Pig, you lead the way!” Wan Er said.

“Alright!”

My Flying Scythe War Horse whinnied. I then brought out my Ancient Heavenly Tiger and stepped into the flame red mountains. As I expected, there were shiny rocks all around us. These were the fire type metals that Frost was talking about. These metals held an indescribable importance for Dragon City. It is because of these materials that we will be able to hold off the godly weapons when the Hybrid demons invade!

Deep in the mines, there were decayed bones scattered around the ground. Within a pile of bones, there was a barbarian general that carried a battle axe in one hand and had flames rising all around him. He coldly looked at us and said, “Greedy humans trying to touch the mines of the Beast Spirit Valley in vain. I suggest you leave immediately. Otherwise, you will end up just like these dead bodies before you!”

I looked at the BOSS and couldn’t help but feel a shock. Motherf\*cker, it was actually a Divine Tier. No wonder it was so arrogant. I quickly copied the BOSSes stats into the team chat——

[Barbarian Guardian – Min Jun] (Divine Tier BOSS)

Level: 115

Attack: 11200-11500

Defense: 10500

Health: 120,000,000

Skills: [Flame Slash] [Fierce Flame Heart] [Blood Axe Roar] [Rip the Heavens]

Introduction: Ming Jun, A hero level existence among barbarians. Originally, the barbarians that used to live in the north were slowly pushed out by the Hybrid Demons. Some of them have even fallen under the claw and tooth of the Hybrid Demons. Afterwards, they plundered everything around them, turning into the enemy of dwarves, humans, and moon elves. But, because they are too tyrannical, the dwarf tribe of Ba Huang City had no alternatives. All they could do was live with their actions in the Beast Spirit Valley.

.....

I gripped my long sword and said, "I'll go first and attract the aggro. Afterwards, you guys attack. Wan Er and Qing Qian, don't get too close. This BOSS's attack power is just too high. 11,500 points. I'm afraid you guys won't be able to take it. Especially Qing Qian. Your health just barely hits 15,000, you'll be instantly killed..."

Qing Qian nodded, "Ok. I'll take care of interrupting the BOSS's skills!"

"Ok!"

.....

Standing in my original position, I roared. An iron wall began to rise around me and [Wall of Dou Qi] activated. Right afterwards, snow began to flutter around me and [Frost Armor] also activated. With a roar, I activated [Dragon's Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] to BUFF everyone. Only then, did I urge my Flying Scythe War Horse into a charge!

"Peng!"

I rammed right into the BOSS, successfully stunning him for a second. I was level 112, and the BOSS was level 115. The success rate of the skill was over 75%. It was only because of this that we dared to fight against a Divine Tier BOSS. If he was a Level 140 Divine Tier BOSS, then we probably would've called

Fox back into the Beast Spirit Valley.

[] [] []

# Chapter 609 Hidden Dragon Armor

“Youngster, die!”

Ming Jun woke up from his stun. He waved his battle axe and threw a [Flame Cut] at me. I reflexively raised my Zhen Yue Sword to block it. “Keng!” sparks flew. I felt my left arm go numb, and I couldn’t hold it off any more. The blade was pressed against my shoulder. I could only take the strike.

“11294!”

I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword and my Heavenly Tier level 1 [Combo] began to flash before the BOSS’ chest. My Ancient Heavenly Tiger God roared and threw a slash at the BOSS’ back. I then swung my swords, throwing out [Combo]+[Fierce Ice Slash], dealing enormous damage in a few moments. MingJun glared at me with fury, as though he wanted to swallow me in one gulp.

.....

“Keng keng keng....”

Sparks continuously flew off my Flame Prison Armor. Ming Jun’s attacks were incredibly quick, putting a lot of pressure on Darling Duck to heal me. However, the worst part was the BOSS’ skills.

“Hong!”

The Battle axe began to flame, as Ming Jun cruelly smiled, “Die!”

“[Fierce Flame Heart]!”

At the same time the Battle axe fell, a ball of flames engulfed me, dealing 15,000+ damage. Even afterwards, I was continuously feeling the pains from the burns for seven seconds!

Wan Er raised her dagger and stood in the distance, “Quick, cleanse the burning effect!”

Darling Duck raised her hand and cast [Purification]. The effect on my body slid off. She then used another [Grip of Compassion] and I activated [Cleansing



Rain]. I had just barely made it out alive. At the same time, Qing Qian dashed out. [Blade of Hell] began to glow from her dagger, cutting down 19,000 health from the BOSS!

Such a painful attack made Ming Jun roar. He raised his arm and spun around and roared, stunning us!

“Di!”

Battle Notification: Barbarian General – Ming Jun used [Blood Axe Roar] and dealt 9784 damage to you. Furthermore, you’ve been stunned for four seconds!

Not only did the attack hit me, Qing Qian was also stunned.

“Oh no!”

Dong Cheng activated [Thunderbolt Finger]+[Icicle Spell], but it was all too late. However, right at that moment, Wan Er suddenly became extremely calm and used her Iron Umbrella to block the next attack. With her left hand holding the umbrella, and her right hand open, she shouted at me. The next moment, the stun effect went away. [Awakening Spell] was a fifth advancement assassin skill. The only thing it could control was the stun effect. That was because stun was a special effect that couldn’t be cleansed.

I swept out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw several slashes at the BOSS’ hip. Using my damage, I pulled Ming Jun’s aggro right back to me again. Afterwards, I said, “Qing Qian, use [Glacial Hammer] and [Grip of the Firefox] to deal distance attacks. Leave the close combat to me. Wan Er, hold off on the cool down for your [Awakening Spell]!”

As I said that, I raised my arm and activated [Reflect]. “Dang!”, the skill reflected the BOSS’ [Flame Cut]. I then swung my blade and continued attacking. Wan Er quickly interrupted the BOSS’ [Blood Axe], giving it another 25 seconds of cool down. This 25 seconds was considered “Safe Time”. She then waved both her daggers, activating [Frost Revolution], sealing the BOSS in ice and greatly messing up the BOSS’ attack rhythm.

Within ten minutes, Ming Jun’s health dropped to 20%. The fight went by very smoothly. Even Darling Duck couldn’t help but smile and comment, “Ah... our teamwork is incredible....”

Dong Cheng giggled, “That’s why we’re the best!”

In reality, the [Purification] dealt with [Fierce Flame Heart], while [Awakening Spell] dealt with [Blood Axe Roar] and [Reflect] dealt with Flame Axe. This barbarian BOSS was starting to get frustrated with our team. On top of that, while I was on my mount, I had over 40,000 health so he couldn’t instantly kill me either. Even more so, we all had strong pets. Thus, killing him wasn’t a big problem.

“Careful, it’s the last skill!” Dong Cheng shouted.

I said, “Keep your stun skills. We’ll just wait for his skill!”

“Ok!”

Before I even finished talking, a thunderous boom rang through the sky. Clouds rolled over our heads. The BOSS raised his battle axe. In the next moment, two chains of lightning fell from the sky and locked onto the battle axe, bringing power down from the sky. At the same time, he activated [Blood Axe Roar] and shouted, “D\*mn\*d adventurers. You will pay for your arrogance!”

Wan Er quickly cast [Awakening Spell] to bring me out of the stun. At the same time, she began waving both of her daggers, casting [Blind]+[Gouge]. However, neither succeeded. I then opened my hand and activated [Binding Chains]!

“Peng!”

“MISS!”

The success rate of interrupting a big skill wasn’t very high. Qing Qian had retreated with two MISSES as well. This place was about to turn into a field of flames. Everyone had that premonition!

I quickly retreated and commanded my Ancient Heavenly Tiger to continue attacking. At the same time, I opened my hand and activated [King Domain], increasing everyone’s attack and defense. Lightning then began to run through my arms and I began activating a big skill as well—— [Thundering Heavens]!

The Saint Tier Level 2 skill began to activate and countless lightning dragons

descended upon the ground. At that moment, the BOSS' [Rip the Heavens] had finished casting!

“Dong Cheng, Qing Qian, [Invincibility]!”

Right as I shouted, the two girls quickly entered into an [Invincible] state!

“Hong!”

The first battle axe fell upon the ground, creating a shockwave that rocked the earth. I lost around 10,000 health. At the same time, I continued activating [Thundering Heavens], making the dragons continuously ram into the BOSS. Like that, we fought savagely. Electricity flashed all around as the earth shook. Both the BOSS and I were suffering, I however had Darling Duck giving me heals from afar. Wan Er was also casting multiple [Ice Pick Whirlpool]'s to help. Practically all of the pets were roaring in distress. Qing Qian's Cold Iron Shield Pet and Dong Cheng's Sabertooth Tiger had already died in battle. Wan Er's Purple Kirin Dragon shakily flew in the air, barely hanging in. My Ancient Heavenly Tiger managed to maintain 30% of its health as it fought.

We continued like this for nearly 14 seconds. Finally, the [Rip the Heavens] effect ended. For the first time, I managed to survive through a BOSS' final skill!

.....

After the final skill finished, Ming Jun had no more magic to spend on us. He screamed and fell under the slash of my Dragon Reservoir Sword.

“Shua shua shua....”

All of the girls leveled up, and I got a large amount of experience. Despite that, I was still a ways from leveling up. When Ming Jun knelt to the ground, “Hua La!” he dropped a pile of equipment. The Divine Tier BOSS had been killed by me, who had 366 charm. The items that he dropped must be pretty good. Everyone excitedly walked up to look.

There was a total of three spoils. One of them was an exquisite hairpin, designed for females. It was similar to a helmet. Besides that was a dazzling ring. And the last equipment was a majestic armor that was glowed with a deep green. I picked up the hairpin first——

[Black Moon] (Divine Tier)

Type: Leather Armor

Defense: 1000

Agility: +125

Stamina: +122

Strength” +120

Magic: +118

Additional: Increases the user’s physical attack power by 17%

Additional: Increases the user’s Max HP by 3500

Special: [Black Moon], ignores 10% of all damage dealt to the user.

Furthermore, it turns the damage into the user’s own health

Required Level: 105

Required Charm: 100

.....

I held up the pin and said, “It’s a leather equipment. Wan Er and Qing Qian can use it. You want to roll?”

Wan Er shook her head, “No need. The helmet that I’m using right now is already divine tier!”

Qing Qian smiled, “Thank you Sister Cang Tong!”

“Let’s continue....”

I picked up the second piece of equipment. It was a ring. From the designs, it looked to be a flame type. When I held it in my hand, I felt warmth seeping in my palm. When I looked at the stats, it really was a fire type——

[Purple Flame Ring] (Divine Tier)

Magic: +128

Stamina: +125

Agility: +122

Strength: +120

Additional: Increases the user's magic attack power by 24%

Additional" Increases the user's fire type magic damage by 40%

Special: [Purple Flame Shield], summons a powerful shield from the ring, protecting the user from a certain amount of damage. Uses up 50 points of rage. Cooldown: 2 hours

Required Level: 105

.....

As I held the Purple Flame Ring I said, "This is made for mages. The stats are pretty good. It increases attack while providing a shield type special attack. It's pretty good for staying alive."

Dong Cheng reached her hand out and smiled, "Give it..."

I could only give it to her. There was no other way, after all she was the only mage. If I didn't give to her, then who would I give it to?"

Afterwards was the last piece of equipment. It was a deep indigo armor. It gave off an extremely atmosphere. It must be a special piece. And so, I quickly grabbed it and smiled, "I'm the only heavy armor here, so this is mine..."

"Alright..." Wan Er smiled, "But you gotta let us look at the stats first!"

"Ok..."

I waved my hand over it. The armor stats appeared in the team chat. It really didn't let me down. I finally had a Divine Tier Armor too——

[Hidden Dragon Armor] (Divine Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 1850

Strength: +135

Stamina: +132

Agility: +130

Magic: +127

Additional: Increases the user’s physical and magical defense by 50%

Additional: Increases the user’s physical attack power by 32%

Additional: Increases the user’s Max HP by 6000

Special: [Thousand Layer Cliff] every time the user receives damage, the Hidden Dragon Armor will convert it into strength, and increase the user’s defense. Losing 100% of your health increases your defense by 1%. The maximum is 200%

Introduction: Hidden Dragon Armor, A blacksmith master used the scales of a dragon and combined it with heavenly metals to create this armor. Legend has it that it was the armor of ancient kings. It’s rumored that no blades could pierce through it. Afterwards, when King You of Zhou executed his vassals, he lost the loyalty of his citizens. In the end, he even lost his kingdom. This Hidden Dragon Armor was then lost among the public. After being passed from hand to hand for thousands of hundreds of years, it was taken by Ming Jun

Required Level: 105

Required Charm: 200

.....

“This armor....”

Qing Qian pursed her lips and said, “This is even more impressive than Li Mu’s Dragon Turtle Armor. Especially with that [Thousand Layer Cliff]. The max you can increase your defense is 200%. That’s basically adding another layer of a Level 10 [Wall of Dou Qi]. Does that mean that no physical attacks will touch Brother Xiao Yao?”

I secretly smiled. I quickly exchanged the Flame Prison Armor for my Hidden Dragon Armor. My stats increased drastically. Especially my defense. Once the [Thousand Layer Cliff] effect takes hold, then my defense would be crazy——

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon Rider)

Level: 112

Attack: 6544-8062

Defense: 9455

Health: 45717

Magic: 12130

Charm: 366

CBN Battlenet Rankings: 12

.....

[] [] []

# Chapter 610 Thousand League Moonlight

Seeing the stats for the Hidden Dragon Armor, Wan Er couldn't keep her jaw closed. Finally, she smiled and said, "Seeing as [Thousand Layer Cliff] is such a thick armor, then pig should let me use him to grind my blades. Darling Duck can heal you. All I have to do is cut down your health 200 times and we'll be able to raise your defense by 200%. Add that on with your [Wall of Dou Qi] you'll have at least 50,000 defense. Do you have any idea what that means?"

Qing Qian smiled, "That would be.... A person would need a godly weapon that has a shield break capability in order to break Xiao Yao's defense. Besides, their shield break would have to at least surpass 30%. Otherwise, it'd be pointless to use it. The currently top players have a base attack of around 5000. Their equipment and skills bring that to 3 times at least. So they would have at least 20,000 defense. If their weapons don't have a shield break ability, then their attack wouldn't be nearly as high as Brother Xiao Yao's defense...."

Wan Er looked at her own dagger and smiled, "Thankfully I do...."

Qing Qian also glanced at her own Blade of Hell and smiled, "My weapon also has around 40% shield break...."

Dong Cheng swung her staff and said, "I on the other hand don't. But with magic attack, no matter how high his defense is, he'd still cry out in pain...."

I was speechless.

.....

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword. "Ka Cha!" I cut down Ming Jun's head. With that the quest notified that I had completed the portion. All I had to do was bring it to Frost and report back to her. And so, I put Ming Jun's head into the bag and said, "Let's go. We need to go to Dragon City to report on the quest. This is an SSS Tier main quest and we luckily got our hands on Divine Tier and Saint Tier equipments."

"Yup, let's go!"

Our team of five returned back. Outside of the Beast Spirit Valley, Fox was still



leading his grinding team. We waved to them and then turned around to head to Dragon City. After half an hour of travel, we reached the walls. From a distance, the city walls invoked a sense of nostalgia. The laborers were smelting iron. On top of that, there were ten black cannons that were being slowly carted into the city.

“Lord Dragon Rider!”

Qing Luo raised her long sword and smiled, “Looks like you’ve already finished the task that Lady Frost gave you. Have we received permission to use the Beast Spirit Valley?”

I nodded, “Yup, what’s with those cannons?”

“Oh? Those black cannons are the legendary Black Crystal Cannons. They were shipped from the Zhe Yuan City.”

“Ah?” I was stunned, “We have relations with Zhe Yuan City?”

“Yes. We originally didn’t, but since Lady Odelia has friends in Zhe Yuan City, Lady Frost spent a lot of resources to buy these ten Black Crystal Cannons. Plus the shipping cost, we spent a total of 400,000 Gold. On the good side, we got that gold from Ba Huang City.”

“So it was like that...” I smiled, “ Looks like Odelia still has some use for Dragon City.”

“Of course. Let me take you and your friends to go meet Lady Frost!”

“Alright!”

Qing Luo took our five man team up to Dragon City. When we were within the city’s plaza, we saw a group of Dragon City soldiers training new recruits. Each one carried a longsword and roared as they funneled Dou Qi into their weapons. Afterwards, they whooped. The soldier morale was pretty good. Frost stood on a deck above the training grounds. She watched the new trainees and smiled, “The graduates of the Academy of Ba Huang City really are good. All of them have reached the Earth level. If they can materialize their Dou Qi then we’ll have a chance against the Hybrid Demons. Plus it’s free... they all came with a set of armor and a sword. Every month, each one gets 2G, and they don’t spend more than 10G each. So affordable. I really want ten thousand of them.

Too bad Angela isn't willing to give more....."

When I heard her say that, I nearly spat out blood. I walked over and said, "Frost, we're back!"

"Yup."

Frost turned around and smiled, "Li Xiao Yao, you must be bringing good news, right?"

I nodded. I pulled out Ming Jun's head and said, "This is the commander of the barbarians in the Beast Spirit Valley. He's already been killed. Right now, we have permission to mine in the tunnels. Send people down there anytime!"

Frost grinned, "Ok. I knew it, you wouldn't let me down. Having you in Dragon City really is our good fortune!"

I nodded with a smile, "Yup. Do you have anything else?"

"Not at the moment. Here, this is your reward!"

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, you've completed the SSS Tier Quest [Beast Spirit Valley Mines], You've received the reward: Level Experience 40%, Charm+10, Gold+20000, Furthermore you've received the reward item: [Thousand League Moonlight] (Saint Tier BOSS Mount)!

.....

"Oh? A Saint Tier mount?"

I laughed. My luck today was pretty good. This quest wasn't even a main quest, and yet I was still able to get such a good mount? I took the mount egg out to take a look. It was pure white, and a white battle horse was carved into the surface. Yup, a white horse was in it. This was a dream mount for all players. From my memory, Zhao Yun and Zhou Yu, the most heroic of all heroes all rode on white horses. Of course, Liu Bei's horse was also white. Even though the Liu Bei who rode it wasn't very strong.

"What, Pig did you get something? Looks at that happy face." Wan Er smiled.

I raised the pet egg and said, "Thousand League Moonlight, a Saint Tier BOSS

level mount. He's a godly mount that can gallop for a thousand leagues under the moonlight. It's stats cannot be much worse than my Flying Scythe War Horse's...."

Wan Er bit her lip and said, "Too bad. We're assassins, so we can't ride mounts. Otherwise... wu wu, If only I knew at first, then I would've chosen to be a swordsman instead...."

I hugged her thin shoulders and said, "Don't be regretful. Assassins can use [Camouflage], and you have the number one attack output. To have lots you must first learn to give up!"

Qing Qian then said, "No matter what, Brother Xiao Yao's Flying Scythe War Horse is better. We should sell this pet egg. Or should we do something else?"

Without another thought I said, "Let's give it to someone else. Who in [Zhan Long] needs it the most."

As I said that, I opened up the conversation log and asked, "That... I want to ask. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, Bai Qi, Matcha, what are the mounts are you guys using?"

Li Mu said, "I have a black Valkyrie Tier BOSS mount. Wang Jian that youngster spent 50,000RMB to buy a Saint Tier not BOSS level Hundred League Smoke. Old K and Bai Qi are both using Valkyrie Tier Purple Chestnut Horses. As for Matcha's mount.... Eh, I don't know what it is at the moment. I don't think she has a mount...."

I smiled, "Matcha, come on out. Are you using a mount right now?"

Matcha hesitantly said, "Boss, just this morning, I got a gold tier Mount——Mixed Breed Pale Moon. The stats aren't bad, but of course it can't match with the mounts that the others bought...."

I was a little speechless, "Yup, alright then... wait for me at Ba Huang City's North Gate. I just finished a quest and obtained a Thousand League Moonlight mount egg. I'll give it to you. You're one of our people in the [Zhan Long] office. I need to take more care of you!"

"Huh? Really? What's its level?"

“It’s a Saint Tier Level BOSS mount!”

“Yes yes!! Thank you BOSS! I love you to death!!”

“Hurry up and get over here then!”

“Alright!”

.....

“Shua!”

The City Return Scroll took me right back to Ba Huang City’s North Plaza. Not long after, the beautiful Matcha’s figure appeared in a teleportation circle. She carried a shining sword in one hand and was dressed in armor. Her pale white cloak fluttered in the wind. She was a level 105 Knight, and was one of the top knights in [Zhan Long]. At the same time, Matcha brought another girl with her. It was a level 84 young female knight. Her equipment looked to be pretty good. She carried a flaming halberd with her. She looked at me with a grin. Xi Yao Ge Jing, if that wasn’t my sister Li Meng Yao, who else would it be.

“Brother!”

Li Meng Yao walked forward and acted cute, “You’re giving the Thousand League Moonlight to Sister Macha, then what are you getting me.... I’m almost level 100 too. When are you going to give me a mount that runs fast?”

I smiled and rubbed her hair, “Work hard on grinding your levels. Only then will I give you one. Rushing from Level 84 to 100 will take at least half a month. Don’t worry, I will definitely get my cute sister a mount!”

Li Meng Yao smiled, “Alright. Look at how nervous you are. I’m just testing you. I’ll get my own mount. No way am I some kind of wimp that has to rely on her brother. I want to become brother’s right hand!”

“Yup, that’s my little sister!”

As I finished talking, I took out the Thousand League Moonlight and handed it to Matcha. I almost didn’t want to let go of it. It took her half a second to think of biting her finger to create a blood contract with her mount. In the next moment, a silver light flashed. A white battle horse slowly walked out of the dust and raised its head to whinnie. It was incredibly beautiful with a mane of

shining hair. Matcha leapt onto the horse and excitedly cried out, “Woah, my health increased to 40,000.... Even my attack power and defense power have increased....”

I walked forward and pet the Thousand League Moonlight and smiled, “Just the name is incredibly nice. Yup, this mount can last you until level 140 to level 150. I believe that this Thousand League Moonlight will become the dream mount of [Zhan Long].”

“Yup.....”

Matcha nodded with a blush.

I was a little stunned, “Matcha, why’s your face so red?”

Li Meng Yao softly knocked my shoulder and said, “Brother, you idiot. Your hand is on Matcha’s leg. It must feel pretty nice right?”

I looked down. Matcha’s leg was across the horse’s back. There wasn’t any armor wrapped around it. Just the thin muslin from the female armor. The feeling really was nice... I quickly took my hand off and apologized, “I’m sorry Matcha... It wasn’t on purpose.... That... I’ll leave first!”

Motherf\*cker, thankfully I didn’t let Wan Er see that. Otherwise, the jealous little miss won’t let me off easily.

Matcha on the other hand smiled to her Thousand League Moonlight and said “Boss is so terrifying, how are you going to pick up girls after this?”

I turned around and said, “Who said I was picking people up...”

“Oh?” Macha blinked a few times, “That, boss, how far have you gone with Wan Er?”

I said, “Eh... I haven’t gotten that far. That is...”

“Have you kissed?”

“That....”

“Looks like you have. Have you gone in bed yet?”

“No!”

“He he, you still have time to do that! Song Han said that females must have a

big chest in order to sell their cuteness...” Matcha giggled, “Boss, why don’t you even dare look me in the eye?”

I glared at her, “If you dare play more jokes on the guildmaster, then I’ll throw a flying kick....”

“Hmph, alright then. That’s right, BOSS. The beautiful Dong Cheng said that you guys are now living together in the university. Song Han said that he’s coming over tonight to steal some food. Why don’t you make some preparations. It’s already ten at night. Shall we come over to eat some hot pot? How’s that?”

“Then come. Just bring your own ingredients....”

“Yup yup!”

.....

[] [] []

# Chapter 611 I Am a General of Shu

It was getting dark and time to log off.

I pushed open the door as I was starting to feel hungry.

“Aiya....”

The door to the room next to mine opened. Wan Er raised her eyebrow and stood there in her pajamas. Her long silky hair rested on her shoulders. Her delicate pale face was like a jade. Her beautiful eyes stared back at mine in surprise. Suddenly, she looked down at her chest. The gown hung loosely against her chest. The full snow white mounds rose and fell quickly. Her face was red, “Eh.... I thought...”

I smiled and looked at her, “Did you think this was still the girl’s dorm?”

“That’s right....”

She turned around and said, “I’ll go and change. Wait for a second...”

“Yup.”

I leaned against the wall. Not long after, Wan Er opened the door again. This time, she had changed into a black casual shirt and a coffee jacket. The shirt was tight against her chest. I couldn’t help but think how anything would look good on a girl with a nice figure. That was simple logic.

Wan Er walked over and pulled on my hand smiling, “Earth to Xiao Yao. I heard Song Han, Old K, Fox and Matcha from the Zhan Long Office are coming for food right?”

“Yup, they said they want hot pot. How about we have the chef downstairs to make a soup base for us.”

“Alright!”

.....

Right at that moment, Dong Cheng’s door also opened up. She gripped her phone and said, “Hello? Bro, you say you want to come over too? You aren’t

even a member of Zhan Long Office, what are you crashing the party for? Ah.... you're here to see me? You're bringing delicious beef jerky too? Alright then. Brother, hurry up and come over. I love you the most hehe...."

"Ah Lei is coming over too?"

"Yup, is he not welcome?"

"No, he's welcome, the more the better."

"Yup!"

.....

Not long after, Tang Qi also got off the game. Somehow he got wind of the party and wanted to join in too. Gripping his hands, he disappeared into the night, saying that he was buying some alcohol. That trash must've become friends with Song Han and Old K in the game. Otherwise, he wouldn't have gotten news so quickly.

The villa had a large dining room. Wan Er, Dong Cheng, and I started to make tea as we waited for everyone to come. Around eleven o'clock at night, a taxi pulled up beneath our villa. Four people got out. Furthermore, Song Han carried chicken and ribs while Matcha had rolls of beef and lamb, and fish balls. Old K had a bundle of vegetables in his arms while Fox carried bottles and jars.

Dong Cheng shuddered with excitement, "D\*mn, so strong. Brother Xiao Yao's friends really aren't normal...."

I waved to them and jogged over to the taxi and said, "Doesn't Little Wolf have a license? We should get a car for the office. We can take it from the revenue from National Beauty."

"Really?" Song Han exclaimed, "To be honest, I've been thinking about it for a while. But, since Zhan Long Office just started, I was afraid that would be too extravagant.. Though, seeing as Brother Xiao Yao said that, then it's been decided. What kind of car should we get?"

Wan Er softly smiled, "I'll recommend one, the Volkswagen CC. Its 40,000 down payment and very practical."

Wolf shook his head, "No... that's even more expensive than Brother Xiao



Yao's A4.... We can't get a car that's better than Boss'. That's just our basic rules. Are there any other models you suggest?"

Wan Er thought about it for a second and said, "Then how about the Chevrolet Cruze. It's a ten thousand dollar car. It's also pretty practical and sturdy....."

Old K smiled, "Alright. I like that..."

Right at that moment, another car suddenly stopped behind the taxi. It was a large Volkswagen and it stopped right outside of our apartment door. Looks to be that they came for us. Old K squinted his eyes, "Oh? A Volkswagen? Looks like that's around 20,000RMB. Who is it? It isn't that expensive of a car... It wouldn't happen to be Ah Lei would it? Such an average car..."

Dong Cheng Yue squinted too and smiled, "Actually.... I think that's dad's old car. It's the W12 Splendor. It's the fourth model of the Individual line. Its around 2.2 million imported. Are you really sure that the car my brother's sitting on isn't much?"

Old K shivered, his face filled with mock vengeance, "Motherf\*cker, how did Ah Lei become the heir... don't you know anything about keeping a low profile? You just had to have a powerful father!"

Dong Cheng grinned, "No worries. My dad is a proper businessman. He doesn't steal or rob. He won't cheat you."

The car door opened up. It really was Dong Cheng Lei. He carried bags of vegetables in his arms while heled a husky out. The driver laughed, "Ah Lei, go on. I'll be in the area. When you're done eating, give me a call!"

"Alright, Uncle Li!"

Dong Cheng Lei rushed out of the car and said, "Brother Xiao Yao, all of you are here...."

I stared at him and was nearly instantly killed, "Ah Lei, what's with those bags of vegetables?"

"Oh, for the hot pot!"

"These vegetables are so fresh they still have a little dirt on it. You didn't pull

it from somebody's garden did you? What's with that husky?"

"Oh I needed to go to the bathroom on the way here and saw it on the side of the road. It looked pitiful so I brought it back to see if Yue Er wants to try a dog meat hot pot. Ahh, Brother Xiao Yao, aren't I smart?"

Tears nearly rolled down from my eyes. I was feeling incredibly sorry for his IQ. "Ah Lei, it's time for you to take your medicine...."

This few month old Husky wagged its tail and ran over to us. It circled around Wan Er and Dong Cheng the two beauties. Wan Er couldn't help but smile, "So cute..."

She reached out to pet it. It got so excited that it peed on the spot. At the same time, a female voice cried out, "Son, baby, where did you go? Don't make mommy worried. Hurry up and come out...."

"F\*ck...."

I glared at Dong Cheng and immediately took the husky. I sent it out the gates. As I expected, it was the middle aged lady's dog. When I returned, everyone had already started up the hot pot, as though nothing had happened. Ah Lei that b\*st\*rd, for the sake of his beloved sister, he seemed willing to do anything. But the fact that Dong Cheng has such a nice brother made Wan Er and Matcha a little jealous as well.

.....

By the time the hot pot started boiling, Tang Qi finally arrived outside. He carried two cases of beer and a bottle of Bai Jiu with him. There was even a bag around his neck with a couple pounds of duck in it. He was a little red from being choked.

"Shua...."

Dong Cheng Lei charged out, his hand in a fist as he growled, "Who are you?"

Tang Qi nearly cried, "Dong Cheng Lei, you actually want to punch me? Did you forget? Motherf\*cker, is there any reason for me to continue living on this earth? I spent most of this night running ten kilometers to buy this wine. Do you think that was easy?"

I calmed him down and said, "That's because you aren't that smart. There's a 24 hour liquor store just five meters away to the right."

Tang Qi's tears fell, "I f\*cking turned left...."

I nodded, "Yup. If you turn left then you'll end up in the middle of nowhere in no time. And, if you continue that way, you'll end up in Jia Xin. Even further out, you'll pass through Shu Zhou and end up straight in Yu Zhou's military training grounds."

Tang Qi said, "Your sense of direction is great... now can you get me a pair of chopsticks? I'm so hungry...."

Dong Cheng Lei roared, "Who are you talking about?!"

Tang Qi's tears were coming out, "I'm a famous general of shu...."

"Then why don't you sit down and eat!"

"....."

.....

There was a total of eight people. We sat around the hot pot and opened up the bottles of beer. After all, everyone was friends. That plus the fact that I had just finished a quest. Now that Frost had revived, I didn't have any worries left. It was a great time to let loose and have a few drinks with my brothers. As a practitioner, I could take more alcohol than normal people, even more so than these guys. In terms of drinking, I won't lose at all!

"Brother Xiao Yao!"

Wolf's face was flush red as he said, "The Hero's Wings Tournament will start in a month. This time, its for with a 5V5 format. In terms of teams, I think that [Zhan Long]'s main team should be you and the beauty Cang Tong. Plus Dong Cheng, Darling Duck and another person. Yup, it should be like that...."

I nodded, "Yup, how about I bring along Qing Qian as well. Wolf, you go with Matcha and Old K. That and two others. With that, you guys should be able to get pretty high in the rankings!"

Wolf smiled, "Yup. I've been thinking too, if we make a team with you, then we'll probably end up dragging you down. That much we understand."

Matcha giggled, “Wu, I’ve been left behind by boss again...”

Dong Cheng held her glass and filled it with Bai Ju. After drinking a sip, she drunkenly smiled, “Oh gentle and fair beauty, have you also fallen for Li Xiao Yao?”

Matcha was stunned, “Eh.... I wouldn’t say I’ve fallen for him. I just think that boss is pretty cool. He gives a sense of safety. At least I don’t like him like you do Dong Cheng....”

Dong Cheng’s eyes suddenly turned red. She pouted her lip and said, “For some people, no matter how much they love them, and how deep the love is they still won’t obtain it. I think that I’ve slowly started to understand that over these past few months.”

“Understand what?” Matcha asked.

Dong Cheng drunkenly smiled, “Star crossed lovers....”

“Pa....”

Wan Er softly leaned onto the table beside me, tears dripping onto the table. I started panicking. I helped her up and said, “Wan Er, what’s wrong?”

Wan Er softly pushed me away and said, “It’s nothing, don’t worry about me....”

I pulled her up. Wan Er quietly leaned against my chest, tears flowing. She then leaned next to my ear and hesitantly whispered, “I... I think I’m the bad woman.... I’ve taken away the thing that other people like. But I.... I also really love you. How could I.... let something I love so much go to someone else?”

I couldn’t help but smile, “Idiot, you and Dong Cheng are drunk....”

Wan Er smiled through her tears. Her cheeks were flushed. She reached out and hugged me. Without another word, she just fell into my lap and cried.

.....

Wolf shuddered, “Get a room you guys. I can’t stand watching any more. Brother Xiao Yao, just take her upstairs. If that’s not enough, you can bring Dong Cheng up too....”

We were all speechless.

[] [] []

## Chapter 612 A Life Long Friend

After gulping down a strong drink, Old K nearly had tears fall down, "Don't be so lovey dovey in broad daylight. This kind of actions lead straight to some 'papapa....The line between blessed happiness and suffering is as thin as the line between heaven and hell...."

I helped Wan Er up and smiled bitterly, "Blessed happiness? I have to make each and every one of them happy....."

Wan Er pushed my hand away and swayed, "I don't need your help. Dong Cheng.... Let's go out to get some fresh air on the deck!"

Dong Cheng stood up as well. Even Dong Cheng Lei couldn't keep her. All he could do was let the two girls go. Either way, Ling Tian Nan had security guards at the front, so their safety was no problem.

.....

I leaned against the seat and gulped down shots.

Old K was stunned, "Li Youngster, what are you doing, pounding so much at once. Do you have something on your mind?"

I looked up at him and glared, "Of course."

"What is it?"

"I ain't telling."

"F\*ck!"

Wolf laughed, "Come on, continue drinking. What's the point of thinking of those unhappy thoughts? How about we think of the more happier things?"

Matcha raised a glass of Coca Cola and smiled, "Yup, let's talk about some happier things...."

I added, "That's right. Have there been any big things that happen in Ba Huang City? What are [Vanguard] and [Prague] doing? Oh and [Hero's Mound: Division One] and [Flying Dragon]. Cang Cheng hasn't been trying anything has

he?”

Matcha smiled, “Well no. As for [Vanguard], Jian Feng Han has lately been taking Simple, Don’t Be Foolish, and the others on some big scale quests. They’ve pretty much finished all of the main quests in the Moonlight Forest. Yup. Because of [Vanguard] and [Valley of the Gods]’s rush to do main quests, Princess Angela was able to establish seven barracks and forts.”

I was surprised, “So it was like that. I’ve been putting all of my efforts into Dragon City and forgot about the quests in Ba Huang City.”

Matcha nodded, “Jian Feng Han and Simple are pretty close with several attendants for the princess. They managed to tap into those relationships, so getting quests wasn’t hard. That is one of their advantages. As for [Zhan Long]’s other competitor, [Prague].... They’ve gone to Jiu Li City three times within the past three days....”

“What?” I felt my heart drop a little, “What is Unce Yan Zhao planning?”

Wolf smiled, “I’ve looked into that. Yan Zhao Warrior went to Jiu Li City three times in a row to meet someone! To top it off, just yesterday, Yan Zhao brought a couple of his closest friends to Hang Zhou. He left quickly afterwards though.”

“Hang Zhou?” I was puzzled, “Which player in Hang Zhou has such a great reputation, to actually get [Prague]’s guildmaster to personally come and meet him? Unless... is it a female player?”

Wolf laughed, “Yup, Brother Xiao Yao guessed right. It is a female player. But it’s not the type of relationship you’re thinking. Yan Zhao just wants to bring her into his guild.”

“Who is it?”

“Yayayayayaya, six ya’s. That’s her ID. Her friends call her Six Ya. She’s a level 107 Flame Swordsman and has a hidden class. She uses [Front Line Slash], [Wall of Dragon’s Breath], [Flame Chain] and other skills the most often. She also has an A tier combo called [Quick Slash], which deals five [Thick Cut] . She’s really strong. Just her maneuvers are among the top. She’s an expert that only rose up recently. Originally, Jiu Li City’s [Emperor’s Blood] wanted to grab her. But after Yan Zhao personally went to Jiu Li City three times, and then made a trip to

Hang Zhou he managed to convince her. Just this morning, Six Ya joined [Prague]. She's well respected and Yan Zhao even rose her position as vice guildmaster."

"....."

Wolf continued, "Six Ya isn't the only one to join [Prague]. She also brought several friends along with her. They were all experts that were ranked among the top 500 in the CBN Battlenet Rankings. Bamboo Moon, a level 105 Wind Elf Musketeer, Wanderer, a level 104 human knight are both famous players in Jiu Li City. Yan Zhao successfully pulled them in before Fang Ge Que could get them."

I grunted, "Looks like, before Tian Ling City opens, Ba Huang City's balance of power will shift once more..."

"Yup."

Matcha commented, "Ba Huang City's second player fort should spawn sometime soon. We've already had our Dragon's Den for a month now. It should be sometime in the next two days! Boss, what should we do before the player city spawns? Should we act or not?"

I asked, "What do you guys think?"

Fox, "I think we shouldn't. After all, [Zhan Long] isn't the only power in play at the moment. If one guild takes two cities, then whether or not we can hold it is questionable. Plus, it would make us appear in a bad light."

I nodded, "That makes sense...."

At that moment, Tang Qi, who had been drinking against Dong Cheng Lei finally lifted his head up and said, "From what I see, Tian Ling Empire should open its gates after the first season of the Hero's Wings Tournament. At that point, all of the big guilds will send their elites to register for Tian Ling City. Then, the hierarchy between main cities and vice cities will emerge and take shape. [Legend], [Hero's Mound], [House of Prestige], [Zhan Long], [Vanguard], the legendary guilds will all try to take up the same space. A great war will be inevitable..."

Old K said, "People from [Hero's Mound] shouldn't talk. Focus on drinking Bai



Jiu.”

Tang Qi laughed, “Don’t... we can’t play the game for the rest of our lives, but we can be life long friends...”

Wolf smiled, “Then Little Seven, how about you bring 5000 players from your [Hero’s Mound] main guild to Ba Huang City and create a [Zhan Long] division. If you do that, then I’ll consider you my friend and drink with you every day....”

Tang Qi shuddered, “Nah, I can’t do something like that. Q-Sword would kill me....”

I glanced at the time and said, “Let’s continue drinking. Afterwards, you all can crash in the rooms on the first floor and go back tomorrow. Matcha, follow me upstairs. You can sleep with Dong Cheng tonight.”

Matcha smiled, “Alright Boss!”

Tang Qi smiled bitterly, “I want to sleep with miss Dong Cheng...”

Dong Cheng Lei roared and threw a punch!

“Peng!”

Tang Qi blocked it but was knocked off his sat. “Peng!” he crashed into the wall. The Qi around his body scattered. Even if he was a top level Royal Air expert, it would still be hard for him to hold against Dong Cheng Lei’s natural strength. That b\*st\*rd’s just too strong. Even I wouldn’t dare get him too mad. Much less Tang Qi.

Dong Cheng Lei glared at Tang Qi and roared, “You want to do what to my sister?”

Tang Qi grabbed the chair and pulled it up to sit on it and smiled, “Nothing at all, brother in law....”

Dong Cheng Lei was confused and turned around to me, “Brother Xiao Yao, what does Brother in Law mean?”

I replied, “It means he wants your sister...”

“Die!”

Dong Cheng Lei threw another drunk punch. Tang Qi raised the chair to block.

It easily broke under the force. Dong Cheng's punch hit Tang Qi square in the chest. Even his shirt had been torn by the force, revealing the muscle underneath. After retreating several steps, Tang Qi finally conceded, "Alright already, stop fighting. I'm about to cough up blood...."

Wolf and Old K laughed out, "Ah Lei stop beating him up. If he died we would have a lot of trouble cleaning up..."

We continued drinking all the way until midnight.

By then, Wan Er and Dong Cheng finally came down from upstairs. After taking a shower they had sobered up. Wan Er held her phone and called from the stairs, "Pig! Pig!"

I turned around, "Wan Er, what's up?"

"Ba Huang City has spawned a second player city!"

"Where?"

"Nightmare Plains!"

"Huh?" I was slightly startled, "Nightmare Plains is a pretty good spot. There's quite a few high level maps that haven't been opened up yet. Mount Xing Yun, Holy Flame Desert, Pan Gu's Abyss are all around the Nightmare Plains!"

"Yup!"

Wan Er ran to sit beside me and smiled, "Now there's a player city in the south and in the north, splitting the player areas of Ba Huang City right in half."

Dong Cheng continued, "Just now, Misty Clouds gave me some news. He said that this time [Zhan Long] can't participate."

"Why's that?"

"That's because guilds that already have their own cities cannot participate in the fight for other territories."

"F\*ck!"

I was speechless, "Looks like [Zhan Long] won't be able to help its allies. Let's see what it looks like tomorrow. Maybe we'll be able to fight around the borders. Either way, we can't let [Vanguard] easily take that city."

“Yup!”

.....

It wasn't until two in the morning that everyone tired themselves out and returned to their own rooms to rest. Thankfully, the security guards that Lin Tian Nan sent to us were extremely principled, and expressed that they were willing to camp out in the great hall so that the little miss' friends could stay in their rooms. Even Old K got a room, despite the little miss declared no relation with a shameless old thing like Old K who keeps on trying to make moves on Matcha.

I took a shower before going to sleep. When I woke up, it was already ten in the morning. Opening my eyes, I noticed a pair of bright eyes looking at me. Wan Er had pulled a chair out and was staring out the window. When I woke up, she jumped and said, “Pig, you're finally awake!”

“Wan Er, what are you doing in my room?”

“I couldn't sleep so I came to visit you. That's right, the members from Zhan Long Office have already left. They didn't want to wake you. They said it was because you deserved a good rest after staying up for so long to revive Frost. They're so thoughtful. They even took the two bags of beef that we left downstairs....”

I smiled, “That... I'll buy you some more later on!”

“Good!” The beautiful little miss clapped her hands, “I'll be waiting for it!”

I propped myself up and asked, “What time is it?”

“11:20.”

“Has the fight for the Nightmare Plains fort started?”

“Yup. But it will continue on for 24 hours, so there's no rush to watch the excitement.”

“Ok. What are we eating for lunch?”

“Meat....”

“Ok...”

.....

I got out of bed. For lunch, I went with the two beauties and Tang Qi to eat. On the way, I drove Wan Er and Dong Cheng to the grocery store to buy some food and snacks. When it was close to three in the afternoon, we logged on. It was time to see just what the fight for the Nightmare Plains looked like. Plus, Wan Er's cousin was going to arrive at the airport this afternoon. On the bright side I didn't need to pick her up, so I just left her be.

[] [] []

# Chapter 613 No Retreat

“Shua!”

I appeared in Ba Huang City. After repairing all of my equipment and organizing my potions, I went to the guild chat. Li Mu happened to be talking, “What’s up with this? They won’t even let us enter the Nightmare Plains? I got all prepared and brought 5000 people to the border, only to be told that we can’t enter. This is just too f\*cked up!”

I asked, “What’s the situation?”

Li Mu replied, “[Vanguard] and [Prague] are both the main characters of the event. They’ve killed just about the same number of monsters. [Enemies at the Gate] is slightly falling behind, [Flying Dragon] and [Hero’s Mound: Division One] aren’t worth the time. Do you want to go? Any of the players from the main [Zhan Long] guild aren’t allowed within a 2000 yard radius of the new city.”

I smiled bitterly, “Then why go? Kill the [Vanguard] players that are outside? They won’t suffer a limit from reentering the border would they? Looks like this city battle has nothing to do with [Zhan Long]....”

“Yup. Then should we just tell everyone to scatter and grind levels?”

“Alright!”

.....

Right at that moment, there was a sudden “Di”. I received a message. It came from Xi Yao Ge Jin, “Brother, come over, let’s grind levels together! I’m in the southernmost forests of the Nightmare Plains. There’s a lot of level 110 Thunder Tier monsters here. There’s even a lot of precious herbs. I just saw someone find the Demon God Grass....”

“Yup, alright. Wait for me!”

I invited Li Meng Yao into the team, creating a brother sister duo team. I leapt onto my horse and galloped out of the city. Unfortunately, I had to take a

roundabout route, otherwise I wouldn't reach the city.

In less than 20 minutes, I reached the outskirts of the Nightmare Plains. In the distance, a blue ray of light rushed into the sky, creating an enormous 2000 yard radius shield. Everything within it was the domain for the city battle. As a member of [Zhan Long] which already has a city, I couldn't enter. All I could do was go around it.

I could hear the sounds of fighting come from the distance. The [Flying Dragon] players were being killed by [Prague]'s members. The battlefield was plunged in chaos. A dull red city appeared at the center of the plains. There were players and NPCs killing each other. Who knows what kind of a BOSS was guarding this wild city. And who knows who will be the final victor. In the end, it's going to be between [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Enemies at the Gate]. [Zhan Long] has no way of joining, and [Enemies at the Gate] will have one less ally.

My Flying Scythe War Horse galloped across the plains. Within 5 minutes of circling the border, we reached a forest. I saw an orange dot slowly moving around in the distance. When I got closer, Li Meng Yao came out from the bushes. She carried her halberd and smiled, "Brother, you're so slow...."

I was a little speechless. I softly petted the mane of my Flying Scythe War Horse and said, "This horse is the fastest in Ba Huang City... there isn't a second as fast, so don't you go grumbling about how fast I am. Let's go. Take me somewhere where there's more monsters. I'll take you leveling!"

"Ok!"

Meng Yao turned around and lead me into the depths of the forest. After walking a few minutes, we could hear the howls of wolves. In the next moment, an enormous group of Rabid Wolves appeared from the forest. They were all Level 110 Thunder Tier monsters. They were the best fit for helping Meng Yao gain experience. We would have to go to the north and kill Hybrid Demons to find any higher level monsters. The problem was, even the Level 1 Hybrid Demons were enough to instantly kill Li Meng Yao. That was just too dangerous, and wasn't worth it.

Against this massive wolf pack, Meng Yao smiled, "Brother, I'll lure 3-5 of them over, would that be safer?"

I glanced at the Hidden Dragon Armor and smiled, “No need. Just watch on the side. I’ll take charge. These level 110 Thunder Tier monsters shouldn’t have enough attack to break my defense.”

“Huh? Brother, you’re just talking big!”

“Watch...”

I flicked the reign and the Flying Scythe Horse charged out. Around 200+ of the Rabid Wolves began dashing towards me. I activated [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost Armor] at the same time. The flame colored Dou Qi wrapped around my horse and I, creating a defensive stance. I then threw out my Zhen Yue Sword. [Blade Spin] slashed through the crowds. I raised both of my swords and charged forward, activating [Tempest Sword] into the crowd. In that instant, I killed a whole group of the wolves. That was enough to make Meng Yao’s experience fly up.

“Awoo...”

The Rabid Wolves weren’t going to sit around and wait. One after another, they slashed at my [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost Armor], but they only dealt around 300+ damage. With a wave of my sword, I could easily [Drain] the health back. Besides, I had [Cleansing Rain] and [Heal] still, and my recovery speed was incredibly fast. Killing me wasn’t going to be an easy feat for them.

I easily cleaned out the pack of Rabid Wolves. 200+ bodies piled the area around us. A large amount of equipment was dropped as well. There were piles of gold and Silver equipment scattered around. My sister collected everything she wanted. Anything we didn’t need, we left on the field. I changed a few of the equipments into God Army cards. Those Mohist Skills were so expensive to maintain. Getting my own low level equipments and breaking them down was a way to save money.

“So how is it? Am I just bluffing?” I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword over my shoulder and grinned at Meng Yao.

She smiled sweetly and said, “Yup. Brother is the strongest. Keep going. It’s hard to bring such a strong brother out leveling...”

I was speechless.

I brought my only sister around and continued roaming the area. Close to two hours later, I cleared out all of the Rabid Wolves. Meng Yao also leveled up to 90. She was getting closer and closer to level 100. As expected, leveling up with a strong player and killing high tier monsters made it so much faster.

.....

Without noticing, I had already killed my way to the border of the Nightmare Plains. Even if I used all of my strength, I wouldn't be able to break through that layer. On top of that, I would actually lose health. And so, I decided to not even try. I took Meng Yao back into the forest to kill more wolves.

After ten or so minutes, when I brought my sister back into the forest to see if the monsters had respawned, a group of people suddenly burst out of the enclosed area for the city battle. There was a total of 20 something people. They all wore the [Blood Contract] insignias on their shoulders. I even recognized one of them. It was [Blood Contract]'s number one healer——Who's Blue.

“Hurry up....”

Who's Blue raised her staff and looked back, “When we get out of the area, even if they kill all of us, we'll still be able to revive. Hmph, those [Flying Dragon] people are just too low!”

One of the archers gripped their long bow and said, “Vice guildmaster, Sheltering Guest was even killed by them.... What do we do? That Fierce Tiger's attack power is so strong. Motherf\*cker, with just one [Battle Axe Burst], he could cut down 13K of Sheltering Guest's health. That's just too savage....”

Who's Blue grit his teeth, “Fierce Tiger's using a Superior Saint Tier equipment. He had just bought the level 100 weapon from Fan Shu City. Of course the rest of his equipment is also really good. Let's not talk about this now. We need to find a way out of this situation. Afterwards, we'll re enter the area and meet up with the guildmaster. Who knows what his situation is. Either way, it can't be too good...”

The archer nodded, “Ok!”

And then, before the archer even finished talking, a shout came from behind



him, “You want to escape? Keep dreaming!”

Hooves beat the ground. “Shua shua shua!” the border flashed as people charged out. They were all [Flying Dragon] players. At the head of them all was Fierce Tiger, the vice guildmaster of [Flying Dragon], and also [Flying Dragon]’s number one berserker. He rode a black battle horse and had already activated the charge stance on his mount. He quickly caught up with them. He suddenly raised his battle axe and activated [Battle Axe Throw]!

“Sou!”

The battle axe flew through the sky. “Pu Chi!” it pierced right through the chest of the [Blood Contract] archer, dealing 14K critical damage. It was an instant kill!

“D\*mm\*t....”

Who’s Blue shouted, “Hurry, run!”

Not Yet Red muttered, “Sis, should we revive him?”

“No, reviving him would mean death anyway. Then he’d just lose another level. Go into the thicket, and split up. The fewer that get killed, the fewer losses we suffer. Fierce Tiger brought over 200 people with him. No matter how we fight, we won’t be able to win against them.”

“Alright!”

The sound of hooves beating against the ground was never ending. Fierce Tiger lead his army of [Flying Dragon] players. There were over 30 who were heavy armor players with mounts. When players rode mounts, their stats practically multiplied, making them even more violent. Fierce Tiger raised his battle axe, his eyes glowing, “Ha ha, [Blood Contract] tried ambushing the [Flying Dragon] formation, and so now it is time for their judgement. Kill Who’s Blue for me. She is the Vice Guildmaster of [Blood Contract]. Motherf\*cker, let’s see if Han Bei Song that trash ever dares to attack our formation ever again!”

.....

“Bro....”

Meng Yao stood up from the thicket and suddenly raised her halberd. Rage

flashed in her eyes as she said, “That [Flying Dragon] person is so terrifying. Clearly Who’s Blue is a girl. He actually dares to bully her like that... Brother, attack! Go kill them!”

I nearly cried from laughing, “Meng Yao, do you think I’m some kind of a superman? That I can take on 200 with just myself?”

Meng Yao smiled, “Yup. The brother in my heart is a hero. He’s a hero that can protect me and all the people around him. Go. If Brother dies, then Meng Yao will guard your body...”

I laughed, “You really are the best sister. Then I’m going. You hide here and don’t move. If you get found out by them, then I’ll get distracted. Those are [Flying Dragon]’s elites, and almost all of them are fifth class advancement players with those skills. No matter how good your maneuvers are, you won’t be able to fight them!”

“Got it!”

.....

“Shua....”

The leaves rustled as my Flying Scythe War Horse charged out. I used a Pardon Card and drew my Dragon Reservoir Sword and my Zhen Yue Sword. Beside me, my Ancient Heavenly Tiger began to materialize. I raised my left arm and my Zhen Yue Sword flew out, creating a perfect loop. “Ka Ka Ka!” it pierced through the first three heavy armor players in [Flying Dragon]. All of them received over 10k damage!

“10283!”

“11277!”

“10329!”

.....

I then raised my sword and activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash], cutting the three critical health players into pieces. Then, with my hand, I activated [Great Realm of Desolation] and locked it onto one of [Flying Dragon]’s archers in the distance!

“Peng!”

“13128!”

Instant Kill!

.....

At that moment, the [Flying Dragon] players had all been scared stock still. Even the [Blood Contract] players who were behind me were gaping. All of them couldn't even say a word——

Who's Blue finally broke the silence, “So.... so strong...”

One of [Flying Dragon]'s assassins opened his big mouth, “What's up with that damage? Has entered into the stage of 10k damage? They've all been saying that 10k health warriors and 10k health assassins are the future, but under Xiao Yao's attack, 10k health is nothing....”

Fierce Tiger's axe shook with rage, “Motherf\*cker, Xiao Yao Zi Zai... what the f\*ck are you trying to do? Isn't [Zhan Long] not participating in the City Battle? If so, then butt out!”

.....

In response to Fierce Tiger, I coldly replied, “I can't even enter the protected area, how could I participate in the City Battle? The only thing is, Who's Blue and the rest have already been chased out of the borders of the City Battle, and yet you guys are still trying to kill them all. If it's like that, then I'll just have to be rude this time. I came here to grind levels. However many of [Flying Dragon]'s people have come, then I will kill that many. I promise right now, that I would not retreat even half a step!”

[] [] []

# Chapter 614 Rising Dragon Shot

“Shit...”

Fierce Tiger stood there blankly with his battleaxe, and his right hand clenched into a fist, and veins stood out on his arm. His whole body was slightly trembling, and the 200+ [Flying Dragon] elite players were all standing behind him, waiting for his orders.

“Vice Guildmaster...” An assassin walked up and said, “What should we do now? Xiao Yao Zi Zai...he’s already not the old Xiao Yao Zi Zai anymore. Even if it was Jian Feng Han or Q-Sword here right now, they would also be wary of him. We...are we really going to start a fight with him?”

Killing intent flashed through Fierce Tiger’s eyes, as he replied, “No matter how strong he is, there’s only one of him. I don’t believe that 200 elite players can’t kill one single person! All knights prepare to use [Assault] and stun him on my order. Archers, use [Scattered Shot] to stun him, and use [Rising Dragon Shot] to kill him! On my command, attack!”

.....

Sure enough, Fierce Tiger was still that arrogant Fierce Tiger from before, and he has never once forgotten his identity as the Vice Guild Leader of one of the former top ten guilds. He still thinks that [Flying Dragon] calls the shots in Ba Huang City, even though [Zhan Long] had already entered the top five in the Guild Rankings. Despite all that, he still has the outright brazenness to make a move against the Guild Leader of [Zhan Long].

“Hum...”

A cold light suffused through the top of the Dragon Reservoir Sword, and it let out a low metallic cry. I raised my head and looked to the front. There were roughly 70+ heavy armored players that had already pulled out their weapons, and the 30+ players who already had mounts that were prepared to activate [Assault]. The Archers, Mages, Musketeers, and other classes were also geared up and prepared to attack.

Since I already used a Pardon Card, I wasn't worried at all. I'll just slaughter them all!

My arm trembled, and I released an [Azure Dragon Crossbow] behind me, and [Black Tortoise Realm] in front of me. This would substantially lower their approaching speed, and let me have more space to work. The individual combat strength of these players from Flying Dragon was not worthy to be put in my eyes at all, but it was hard to say now that there was so many of them.

Behind me, Who's Blue raised her staff, and a [Hundred Battles] BUFF descended upon my body. At the same time, the ten or so Knights from [Flying Dragon] urged their mounts to charge over. [Mixed Hair Donkey], [Green Maned Mule], [Crippled Wild Wolf], and other low leveled skills were all sent straight at me. A Level 104 Swordsman among them glared in my direction and locked his [Assault] onto me. Right before it approached, the body of the mount sank. The luster of the blade trembled in the surroundings, and it was the effect of [Blade Rush] on a mount!

"Sha sha..."

The Flying Scythe War Horse continuously retreated three steps, causing the [Rush] effect to MISS. I moved my left hand, hacked into his shoulder with the Zhen Yue Sword. The Dragon Reservoir Sword in my right hand then swept out at him, and he was cut down by my two swords. My attack power was just too high. Even a heavy armor player couldn't withstand this kind of assault from me — —

"11273!"

"12714!"

.....

Raising my hand, I threw the Zhen Yue Sword outwards and [Blade Spin] activated, forming a blade storm that repeatedly bore through the crowd. I then used my both hands to grip the Dragon Reservoir Sword, urging my horse to charge forward. My sword swept outwards, causing a Berserker that was riding a white horse to be pushed backwards with a "Bang". I took the opportunity and made a side step. Then, using my momentum, I unleashed a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. At the same time, my Ancient Heavenly Tiger God charged

over, using [Burstfire Raid] to trample across the crowd. It raised its head and let out a [Fierce Roar]. The shockwave surged in all directions, and the consecutive attacks instantly decimated 40+ people.

“Mother....”

Fierce Tiger turned pale with fright. He charged over with his battle axe raised. He raised his hand and successfully activated his [Dou Qi Armor]. Both his hands gripped his battleax as he let out a low growl: “Move up with me, Archers, seal off any retreat!”

The tips of a dozen or more [Scattered Shot] appeared in front of me, trapping me in my spot. Once I got stunned, I could get killed and there was no way of waiting out the stun. Moreover, there was an enormous dragon appearing on the bowstring of the longbows that the Archers were raising up. This was the attacking effect of the [Rising Dragon Shot], their fifth advancement skill. The armor breaking strength of this skill was particularly large, and getting hit would hurt me quite badly.

“Bang!”

The iron hoof of the Flying Scythe War Horse shook the earth, and I activated effect of [Wall of Dou Qi] again. Behind me, Fierce Tiger urged his mount to leap forward, and his whole body was blood-red. There was a pattern of a battleax hovering the top of his head, which struck down with a loud bang. This was exactly the fifth advancement skill of the Berserkers——[Burning One’s Boats], which concentrated Dou Qi into the weapon, and sacrificing 50% of his own defense to create an exceedingly strong attack towards the target!

The Zhen Yue Sword was raised, blocking the other party’s battleax. But the block couldn’t last, and it was smashed aside with a “Keng”. It seems that [Burning One’s Boats] couldn’t be blocked, and a heavy blow landed on my shoulder. Pain seared throughout my body!

“14221!”

I couldn’t help but feel that there was something unexpected about this. No matter how high Fierce Tiger’s attack power was, it shouldn’t have cut down so much of my health. There was still much to learn from fifth advancement skills. From now on, I’ll use live combat to observe and understand them. I needed to

learn as much as I can so that [Zhan Long] could succeed in the Hero's Wing's Cup!

I used all my strength to cut my Zhen Yue Sword forward, causing Fierce Tiger to immediately retreat half a step. I urged my war horse to turn around, and my Dragon Reservoir Sword carried the force of [Wind Blade] to heavily slash onto Fierce Tiger's chest armor. Sparks flew and an enormous damage number flew out——

“13128!”

I advanced forward to pursue him, and each flash of my Zhen Yue Sword was a hit. Fierce Tiger's almost 25000 health immediately dropped, causing him to turn pale with fright and retreat. But at this exact moment, the excessively concentrated [Scattered Shot] also stunned me once with a “Peng” sound, which persisted for 0.9 seconds. It was still fine though, with the protection of the little tiger and the Azure Dragon Crossbow, they wouldn't be able to kill me.

Behind me, Who's Blue and Not Red Yet were constantly healing me from a distance, and my defense was stacking from my Hidden Dragon Armor. I was already at the 4th level, increasing my defense by 4%. My blade swept horizontally across the crowd, and quickly, the casualty count for the opposing side reached 100+ people. Fierce Tiger hid within the crowd. His complexion was getting increasingly pale, “Is this m\*therf\*cker Xiao Yao Zi Zai still a person? He can really match one hundred men...quickly, Healers revive our dead brothers. Mages use [Lightning Eagle Wave] and [Lullaby] to put his tiger pet to sleep. Stop attacking the tiger, and we'll cut off Xiao Yao Zi Zai's left and right arms!”

An assassin team leader shouted, “Vice Guild Leader, it seems like there's a problem in the system. Our brother's [Revive] has already lost effect, and they can't resurrect those who died. What's happening?”

Fierce Tiger's pupils contracted, “What's going on? This isn't within the boundaries of the City Battle, resurrections should be possible. Why can't you revive? Are you guys joking with me?”

“I'm not, Vice Guild Leader!”

.....

When I heard them talking, I secretly laughed. These people from [Flying Dragon] still couldn't figure out what my [Grip of the Sealed God] does. The people who had been killed by me were doomed to be unable to revive within the next 60 minutes. They actually didn't know anything at all...

“Jiu jiu...”

The sound of an eagle's whistle came from the sky, and following that, a large group of Mages all fired their fifth advancement AoE skill——[Lightning Eagle Wave], which summoned a blue coloured eagle that was made out of lightning which attacked everything within a specific boundary!

I almost couldn't see anything in front of me. I was bombarded so much by the concentrated magic that I had to retreat several steps. My health plunged, and my Flying Scythe War Horse also let out a cry, but didn't have the strength to resist it. F\*ck, there really wasn't any good solutions to this type of AOE!

Within the team chat, Li Meng Yao's voice echoed out: “Be careful brother, don't get killed for real...”

I grunted, and suddenly retreated a few steps. Once I regained my balance, I returned the Zhen Yue Sword back to its sheath and opened my left palm. Streaks of lightning energy were condensed in the space between my fingers, and bursts of lightning appeared in the sky. The dark clouds rumbled. Fierce Tiger hastily raised his head, and was shocked, “MLGBD, we're screwed, this is... this is Xiao Yao Zi Zai's Holy Ghost Level Skill——[Thundering Heavens]? Quickly run, head towards the border of the City Battle so he can't follow...”

Unfortunately for them, it was too late. Without waiting for the people from [Flying Dragon] to retreat, [Thundering Heavens] had already successfully activated. The lightning dragons were like punishers that descended from the sky and massacred the crowd. Dirt was sent flying, and the lightning raged all around, causing the near 100 people left from Flying Dragon to let out cries of misery. One by one, enormous damage numbers flew into the air. These people absolutely couldn't withstand the killing power of a Holy Ghost tier skill——  
“23122!”

“21837!”

“23129!”



.....

Fierce Tiger had low health and tried to retreat, but his body was directly pierced through by the Azure Dragon Crossbow, causing him to slump onto the ground. It was a pity that he didn't drop any equipment, but all 200+ of the [Flying Dragon] players that Fierce Tiger brought over collapsed beside the border, and not a single one of them escaped.

"Sha sha..."

Li Meng Yao directly came out from the forest with Hercules, and laughed, "Brother is so awesome!"

I carried the bloodstained Dragon Reservoir Sword and laughed. I suddenly shook my arm, and a gust of wind surrounded my blade, dispersing the fresh blood that was stuck on my blade: "These pieces of trash, they're nothing in my eyes, hahaha..."

Li Meng Yao wasn't satisfied though: "Humph, I only praised you a tiny bit and your ego inflates?...brother, I want a white horse as a mount. I'll hit Level 100 in just another week, can you help me get it? Sister Matcha's Thousand League Moonlight is so pretty, I also want one like that..."

I nodded my head: "Yup, no problem. When I go back, I'll pay close attention to the market for white war horses."

"Yup yup!"

At that moment, Who's Blue walked forward with ten or so players from [Blood Contract], and gratefully smiled, "Many thanks to Guild Leader Xiao Yao who helped us here. Otherwise, we wouldn't be able to run from the Flying Dragon cavalry, and would definitely die a martyr's death."

I replied, "Yup, no worries, we're all friends. The system doesn't allow [Zhan Long] members to enter the boundaries of the territory war, so we can only cheer for [Blood Contract] and [Enemies at the Gate] from the side. Good luck! Even though it's hard, you still have a chance for victory!"

Who's Blue smiled: "Yup, Han Bei Song said that as well. He said that we should do our best to avoid the two giants, and let [Vanguard] and [Prague] fight it out till the end. Only after that will we have a chance. The only problem

is, Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao Warrior are both extraordinarily smart, and they understand this principle too. Who knows how this will end. There are still too many variables that will affect the outcome of this 24 hour war.”

After she finished talking, Who’s Blue took out a City Return Scroll and said: “Guild Leader Xiao Yao, we’ll go back first. We have to go back to the city and restock the necessities. After that, we’ll assemble a team to go back to the Nightmare Plains. 20000+ people from our [Blood Contract] are participating in the war, and we only have 17000+ left after a short few hours. This is really too tragic. I’m going...”

I waved my hand: “I won’t send you off, good luck to you guys!”

After that, I took Li Meng Yao to continue levelling in the surrounding forest, and used my fastest speed to increase her level. I was abnormally quick at killing monsters, so fast that I wouldn’t lose out to those top notch Mages like Dong Cheng Yue and Simple. Li Meng Yao’s levelling speed was naturally not a problem.

.....

This went on all the way until it was almost dinner time. With a “Di”, Wan Er sent over a message that said: “Pig, I’m going offline to go get my cousin. She’s arriving at Liu Hua University at approximately 5:30, we’ll go greet her together!”

“Yup, that sounds good.”

[] [] []

# Chapter 615 Qin Wen

In Xia Men, it was already getting close to dinner time. After she and I returned to Ba Huang City, we both logged off. It was 5:20, about time for Wan Er's cousin to arrive.

In reality, I knew deep down in my heart that this cousin was here to deliver the "Emperor's Command". Lin Tian Nan has probably already spoken with her. She was here to supervise everything I did. If I tried to make any moves on the little miss, then without another thought, this cousin would not remain courteous to me. Even though I wasn't afraid of that per se, it was still best to be careful. After all, if the family is happy, then everything else will seem better..."

.....

After washing my face, I felt refreshed again. I put on a nice shirt and walked out of the house. When I arrived in the garden, I noticed that Wan Er and Dong Cheng were already waiting at the door.

After a few minutes, a CRV slowly pulled up to the driveway and stopped before Apartment 7. "Ka Cha" the door opened and a long pale leg with heels stepped out. The owner had incredible curves that were wrapped in a short black skirt and white blouse. She wore a black trench coat on top of it and carried a small purse. The woman was fairly pretty. She looked to be around 25 years old. If Wan Er was a 10, then this woman was around a 9. Of course, if we were talking about the sexiness of a mature woman, then she would be a 10, and Wan Er would probably only be a 5. Our little miss had a younger prettiness to her beauty.

"Sis!"

Wan Er dashed forward and hugged the woman. She then sweetly smiled, "We haven't seen each other for at least two years right?"

Her cousin laughed and glanced over at Wan Er. She exclaimed, "Wan Er.... you've grown up so beautifully! You really know how to make someone

jealous!”

Wan Er blushed, “Don’t tease me the moment you see me, do you even want to live here?”

The cousin laughed and said, “Alright then. My good Wan Er, quick, introduce me. These three are your friends right?”

“Yup!”

Wan Er went to Dong Cheng’s side and smiled, “This is Dong Cheng. She’s my best friend. I’ve mentioned her to you a lot.... And then this. This is Tang Qi. He’s the Seventh Tang in the game and ranked 15th on the CBN Battlenet! Ai ya, Tang Qi, you’re drooling. This is my cousin. Her name is Qin Wen. You guys can just call her Sister Qin Wen...”

Tang Qi was stunned, “Sister Qin Wen? Eh.. alright then. I heard it as \*Kiss Sister.....”

TL Note: Qin Wen sounds a lot like Qing Wen, which means kiss in chinese

Dong Cheng glared, “Idiot, what are you thinking of?”

Wan Er pulled Qin Wen to me and said, “Oh, this is the security guard that dad wanted you to watch over. Li Xiao Yao. And ...”

Wan Er’s face turned pink. She drummed up the courage and looked up at me and said, “Sis, he’s my future boyfriend and I like him a lot. Thus, if you don’t like it then go ahead and tell dad!”

Qin Wen was startled. Clearly, she didn’t realize that her cousin would display such a show of courage right as she got off the car. She quickly recovered and smiled, “You don’t have to confess so much so suddenly. I’m not some kind of unreasonable person. I’ve seen lots of romance between young people. Don’t worry. Just don’t be too lovey dovey in front of me. As for your dad, I’ll help you out in convincing him to come around. Just don’t be too fiery about it....”

Wan Er smiled, “Yup. I understand. Sister really is nice...”

Qin Wen looked at me and said, “You’re Li Xiao Yao? The Xiao Yao Zi Zai of ?”

I nodded, “Yes that’s me. Qin Wen, do you play too?”

“Nope. I don’t have enough time to spend in the game. There’s a lot of things

I have to deal with in the company. I'm so jealous of you guys!"

As she said that, Qin Wen looked at me more carefully and said, "Wan Er told me that you were 25 years old? How come I can't tell? You look pretty young actually. And handsome... hehe, no wonder even the picky Wan Er has fallen for you. Xiao Yao Zi Zai.... you're so popular and mighty that no one dares to approach you in ...."

Wan Er was speechless, "Sis, you should be more dignified!"

Qin Wen smiled, "Alright alright. Help me grab my luggage. Looks like the place you're living in is pretty good. Are you renting it?"

"Yup."

"I'll talk with your dad tomorrow and have him buy the place. Renting isn't that convenient after all...."

"Wouldn't that be a waste?"

"A waste? I think, from how much your dad loves you, he would've bought the entire university a long time ago. Only then would he have let you go to school here."

Tang Qi and I were so speechless.

In this one moment, Tang Qi and I could both feel that country bumpkins like us were just too bothersome in this richer person world.

.....

We went up the steps to the apartment. Qin Wen began to unpack and prepare her room. Every room was pretty big. She had especially brought over a desk so that she could work from home. Everything in her room was different from that of us gamers.

She didn't finish until seven. As I stood in Qin Wen's room, I asked, "Where should we go for dinner to welcome you to the apartment?"

"There's a restaurant outside of the school. I've already made the reservations."

"Alright..."

After half an hour, the five of us left the school and went to a restaurant that was in the suburbs. Qin Wen had reserved a room for us. Wan Er ordered from the menu. Tonight, she was the one paying. Now that her sister had come back, it was her responsibility.

“Is it just the five of us?” Dong Cheng asked with a smile.

Qin Wen shook her head, “Oh, a friend of mine is coming too. They’re almost here.”

“Oh? Who’s your friend?” Wan Er asked.

“You’ll know when they’re here!”

“Hmph, you’re actually keeping us in suspense!”

.....

At around 8 in the evening, we heard a Xi Xi Suo Suo sound. In the next moment, two males and a woman came into the room. The men were all dressed in suits. One of them looked incredibly familiar. When I got a good look, I immediately stood up. Energy began to revolve around my fist as I roared, “Wang Ze Cheng?!”

It was Wang Ze Cheng. He had even brought his girlfriend Suo Yue. The other person was a young man around 20 years. From his appearance, I could already tell that he was Windy Walker. He was the Vice guildmaster of [Hero’s Mound: Division One], and was Wang Ze Cheng’s right hand man.

Wan Er was stunned, “Sis, how do you know him?”

Wang Ze Cheng reached out a hand and smiled, “Qin Wen, we haven’t seen each other in three years, is that right?”

Qin Wen smiled, “Yup, that’s about right... Wan Er, do you know Wang Ze Cheng? He was my classmate while I studied abroad in Japan. Before I came back, I send him a message. I didn’t think that he was also studying Chinese in Liu Hua University. We don’t normally meet, so I called him over to join and eat some dinner.”

Wan Er angrily looked over at him and said, “He’s part of the Booster company, who’s currently competing against Tian Jin Corporation. I’ve known

him for a long time. However, I don't want to say much about this person!"

Qin Wen was startled, "What's going on?"

Wang Ze Cheng smiled, "It's probably due to some misunderstandings... Ah that's right, I've probably done some things that have made Wan Er unhappy. It's all my fault. Later on, I will punish myself with a cup!"

Wan Er didn't say much. I lightly gripped her hand and softly said, "Alright already. If he's here, then he's here. Either way, you should leave your sister some respect. We'll talk about it afterwards."

"Ok."

Wan Er sat down and didn't say much. The situation was already awkward enough.

Wang Ze Cheng looked over at Tang Qi and smiled, "Oh, if it isn't the elder of the main guild, the Seventh Tang? I've heard many praises about you, I've just never gotten the chance to meet you. It really is fate that we meet now..."

Tang Qi smiled, "Oh, so it's like that.... I've been at Liu Hua University for a while. Mr. Wang must be very busy. How could your proud eyes fall upon a lowly person like me?"

Wang Ze Cheng smiled embarrassingly, "How could that be? Lately, I haven't been in class much. There's just been too many things going on at the company. I've been running around to Shanghai, Beijing, and Guangzhou for a while now. I've been so busy that I don't even know which way's north!"

Tang Qi said, "That's right. After you took [Hero's Mound: Division One] out of Fan Shu City, you already couldn't find the north. Q-Sword had given you a total of seventeen commands, and yet you only managed to complete three. That can't be real, can it?"

"How could that be?"

Wang Ze Cheng rubbed his nose and said, "There were some difficulties I encountered while I was out.... Besides, Ba Huang City's situation is just too complicated. How could the main guild in Fan Shu City understand? It was only natural that this had to happen."

Tang Qi smiled, "Ah... you say that, but the things you know in your heart is what you've done in Ba Huang City. How's your new girlfriend Not Ordinary doing? She's following your orders so obediently. You must have a good relationship right?"

Wang Zhe Cheng's expression turned incredibly ugly, "Tang Qi, you!"

Tang Qi slapped the table, "Motherf\*cker, do you want to fight me?!"

I coughed and said, "Tang Qi, youngster, stop talking. We came out here to eat. We need to conduct ourselves much better, that way the food will taste better. It's hard to get an opportunity for a feast like this. I don't want to fight or anything. Besides, today is the day that Qin Wen just returned to the country. Let's calm ourselves."

Tang Qi nodded, "Hmph, in respect to Li Xiao Yao and Qin Wen, I won't say anything more. However, Wang Ze Cheng, you remember this, the people you took from Fan Shu City are [Hero's Mound]'s players!"

Wang Ze Cheng smiled, "I've known that. There is no need to remind me."

Qin Wen widened her eyes, but was completely puzzled by what she was hearing, "This... it's really tense here. Why do I feel like I can't understand anything you guys are saying..."

Wan Er softly smiled, "Sis, I'll tell you all about it later on. Let's finish eating tonight first!"

"Ok."

.....

In reality, Windy Walker was able to hold his temper the entire time. He glared at Tang Qi and me, as though he couldn't help but beat us all up. However, Wang Ze Cheng knew the power of Tang Qi and I, and so naturally he wouldn't let Windy Walker try anything. On the other hand, Suo Yue sat there extremely calmly. Her eyes were filled with indifference. She had switched boyfriends too many times. It seemed as though she didn't even know what love was anymore.



## Chapter 616 Hero's Meet

After we finished eating it was already ten o'clock at night.

All of us walked out the door. Outside of the restaurant, there was a total of five cars parked there. Besides Wan Er and my car, there were three other Benzes. They were all Wang Ze Cheng's. A couple of young men clothed in suits were waiting outside. When Wang Ze Cheng got close, they shouted "Mr. Wang" and greeted him with a bow. This kind of style was something none of us could match.

After getting on the car, Wang Ze Cheng turned around and grinned, "Qin Wen, Wan Er, good bye and goodnight!"

Qin Wen nodded in acknowledgment. Wan Er on the other hand grabbed my hand and then hugged my arm and gave me a kiss. At that moment, Wang Ze Cheng's expression immediately turned into embarrassment. He turned around and climbed into the car.

Qin Wen raised her brow and asked, "Just what's going on?"

Wan Er softly said, "Wang Ze Cheng just isn't as simple as you had thought before. Sister, it's best if you leave him in the future."

Qin Wen nodded, "Of course I knew that. I only know him for business. I'm not some love struck fool. I wouldn't be nice to just anyone who was handsome. What I want to ask is, before this, what did Wang Ze Cheng do in Hang Zhou?"

Dong Cheng replied, "After he came, he and Li Xiao Yao made life hard for each other. It seems as though he has feelings for Wan Er. Furthermore he has a very special position. Otherwise, our Brother Xiao Yao probably would have beat him to within an inch of his life."

"Besides that?" Qin Wen pressed.

I rubbed my nose and explained, "Besides that, within the first week of starting school at Liu Hua University, he had stolen our classmate, Liu Yin's girlfriend, Suo Yue. On top of that, he made a move on Suo Yue right in front of

him. What I'm saying is, he did it, right in front of him..."

"What?!" Wan Er was stunned, "Pig, how come you've never told me about this?"

I coughed, "I was afraid that your innocence would be tarnished..."

Wan Er was speechless.

Qin Wen nodded and said, "Wang Ze Cheng was the most handsome boy in the university I was at in Japan. He had switched between a dozen girlfriends or so in that time. That I knew. However... I didn't think he would be that arrogant! Wan Er, from now on you must avoid him. I will talk about this with Uncle, and tell him to be more careful."

"Ok, then let's go back! Tomorrow, Dong Cheng, Li Xiao Yao, and I have to go to Shanghai...."

"Oh? What for?"

Tomorrow is the official announcement for the Hero's Wings Cup. We've been invited to the event. This way, we will be more informed with the connections there. Anyways, we'll be going there tomorrow..."

"Understood. That's good, because I have to go to the office tomorrow, so I'll be busy anyways. You guys do your stuff!"

"Alright!"

.....

We returned to our apartment. I logged on and trained my skills some more. I brought [Heal], [Wind Blade], and [Seven Star Fragment Slash] all the way up to Heavenly Tier Level 1. Only then was I satisfied and logged off. I had to go to Shanghai tomorrow.

The morning of the next day, I got up early. We had to arrive in Shanghai Game Center before 12.

We left around 8. I put on a new black jacket. The seasons were turning and it was starting to get colder and colder. Wan Er and Dong Cheng both wore thick jackets. They looked like two cute dolls. By the time the three of us walked down stairs, we saw that Tang Qi was running after us, shouting, "Wait. Can I

carpool with you guys?”

I was stunned, “You’re going too?”

Tang Qi muttered, “F\*ck, don’t underestimate me so much. At the very least, I’m still ranked 15th in the CBN Battlenet Rankings. Don’t all of the top 20 get an invite? Why wouldn’t I go... That... little miss, let me carpool....”

Dong Cheng pouted her lip, “Do what you want. Either way, I’m just here to get free food, free drinks, and free rides. Brother Xiao Yao is driving the car.”

I asked, “Which should we drive?The BMW or the A4?”

Wan Er smiled at me, “You decide!”

I thought about it for a second, “Then let’s drive the A4. It can fit the four of us comfortably. Driving the BMW7 is a little too high profile. It’s not in line with [Zhan Long]’s principles.”

Tang Qi rubbed his nose, “Ha, that’s funny. [Zhan Long] doesn’t lose one bit to [Prague], and [Vanguard] in Ba Huang City. You’ve only been established for three months and yet you’ve charged straight into fifth place in the China Guild Rankings. How could a guild like that keep a low profile?”

I turned around and glared at him, “Braggarts are prone to danger. Take care of yourself...”

“Eh...”

Tang Qi was awed and said, “Understood. Let’s set out then, Brother Xiao Yao!”

.....

We all climbed into the car and I drove towards Shanghai. Hang Zhou was only an hour away from Shanghai. The entire time, the two girls sat in the back and chatted about clothes, snacks, and makeup. I focused on driving. Tang Qi took a few calls. They seemed to all be professional calls. That b\*st\*rd really didn’t have a simple status. He definitely wasn’t as simple as a practitioner. Maybe he was just like Tang Gu and opened up several milk tea chains and is a famous person worth over a million!

At around ten in the morning, the A4 slowly came to a stop in front of the

Shanghai Game Center. We entered into a roundabout where there were three girls with name tags. One of them raised their hand and pointed to a place for me to stop. I pulled over to the place she pointed to. She then walked over to the window and asked, “Are you here to participate in the Hero’s Wings Cup?”

I pulled down the window. When she saw my face, she shouted “Ah!” and widened her eyes, “You look incredibly familiar... you are, you’re Xiao Yao Zi Zai, the guildmaster of [Zhan Long], right?”

I smiled, “That’s right. Cang Tong, Cang Yue, and the Seventh Tang are all in the car. We’re here to participate in the announcement. Do I just park the car here?”

“Yup, that’s fine. You can register it here with me!”

Wan Er and Dong Cheng both got out of the car. The girl who worked here was stunned. Clearly she had never met Cang Tong and Cang Yue in the game, these two beauties. The Seventh Tang was also very handsome and elegant. That b\*st\*rd really does have a good poise. He really is an obedient child from a prestigious house.

.....

When we entered into the great hall, we registered. At the same time, I noticed that there were quite a few people that I recognized. Among them, Q-Sword and Sword Tears were there. There was also quite a few foreign players. Some were from the west, and some were from Korea, Japan, India, and Russia. The girls who worked here brought over a flag and stuck it onto my shoulder. It was probably a way to signify my country. That was a pretty good idea. This way, we could at least easily tell.

“Look, who’s that?”

In the distance, I could hear a flirty voice. When I looked over, Tang Qi and I both shuddered. There, dressed in a white furry short skirt was a beautiful woman. Her legs were long and sleek. Furthermore, her face was fairly pretty and she had a full chest. The way she was standing was incredibly charming. Without thinking, I knew who she was. Especially from the way she looked at me and walked over. She grinned, “Well well, if it isn’t my Little Zai Zai? You’re so handsome in reality... mwah!!”

I felt goosebumps crawling over my arms and grabbed Wan Er's hand, "Help me hold her off...."

Wan Er smiled, "What are you afraid of? Is Mu Xuan gonna eat you or something?"

Helpless, I walked forward and said, "Mu Xuan, hi!"

Mu Xuan brought a girl with her and smiled, "Hehe, you're looking pretty good.... You're so strong in the game. I feel like the most perfect male player in the China Servers isn't Q-Sword anymore..."

I quickly coughed, "Keep it down..."

In the distance, Q-Sword glanced over at us and didn't say anything. Mu Xuan, Wan Er, and Dong Cheng quickly formed a circle. She praised Wan Er and Dong Cheng for their beauty and poise. She even asked that they become sisters.

Not much longer afterwards, another group of people came by. It was Jian Feng Han, Simple, and Fushen Thousand Blades. This was the first time I had met Jian Feng Han in person. He truly was an imposing young man. He smiled at me and gave me a nod, "Li Xiao Yao?"

I nodded back, "Mu Rong Han?"

Simple walked over and held her hand out for a shake, smiling, "No matter what conflicts happened between us in the game, we're still friends in real life, right? Li Xiao Yao, I'm Mu Rong Jun, in other words, Simple in the game. We've cooperated more than once in the game. This is our first time meeting in real life, I hope that we can take care of each other more often."

I smiled, "That's right. Every time we're in team battles, don't you also take care of me...."

Mu Rong Jun grinned, "It's nothing. You would do the same, no?"

.....

Not long after, another group came by. It was Ye Lai and his two vice guildmasters. This crazy gamer from Yang Zhou let out a big laugh and hugged me right as he walked over. He smiled, "Haha, and here I thought you were some frail boy in reality. Never did I think you were so well built!"

I glared at him, “F\*ck off!”

“Ha ha...”

.....

Right at that moment, another group of players walked in. They looked incredibly tired. After all, these were all players from the west. The girls that worked here introduced them, “These are all players from America. There’s a total of 51 of them. American players are the most important faction in Once the country battles activate, then every one of them will become our most powerful rivals!”

I couldn’t help but stare at them. These American players also glanced at us multiple times. One of them was a black man that was at least 200cm tall. He smiled to me and raised a fist, displaying his power.

“Motherf\*cker, does he want to fight?” Ye Lai flared up. He was practically out of his seat already.

I quickly pulled him back and laughed, “What is this little provocation? Just wait until he raises his middle finger...”

Jian Feng Han commented, “That American wearing the black down coat, I recognize him. In the country battles, he was the one who brought people and defeated China’s third level three city...”

As he said that, the man looked over at us. He seemed to recognize Ye Lai. He smiled, and actually pointed his middle finger. Motherf\*cker, looks like in the game , China and America had a lot of conflicts.

“Son of a B\*tch”

Ye Lai roared. He wasn’t going to hold off any longer. He threw a kick, sending the chair flying into the air.

“Peng....”

The American players were incredibly strong. With one step, he kicked away the chair and charged over. He raised a fist and was going to throw it right at Ye Lai.

.....

Ye Lai wasn't a practitioner. Furthermore, he wasn't as well built as those westerners. I quickly slid in front of Ye Lai and raised my hand, taking the punch!

“Peng!”

Under that strike, I didn't move an inch. The American player retreated and was stunned, “What's up?”

[] [] []

# Chapter 617 Living in the Martial World

“Kyle ! ”

A female voice came from the crowd behind the man, and the American youth immediately halted his punch and put his fist down. Behind him, a woman walked out from the crowd. It was a typical American girl. She had blonde hair that gradually faded into blue highlights. She had very distinct and delicate facial features, and her jacket was unzipped. Underneath it, she wore a thin low cut sweater that was tight over the two mounds on her chest. Her azure eyes glanced over me and the corners of her mouth suddenly rose. She laughed and spoke to that youth named Kyle, “Let’s go, guys!”

Clearly, this woman was extremely popular among the American players. One sentence from her was enough to make the enraged Kyle obedient and docile enough to follow her to sign in.

Mu Xuan looked at me with a startled look, and walked towards me. She patted the front of my chest jacket, and said: “Did that barbaric man hurt my little Zai Zai?”

My gaze was still fixed on the distant group of American players, as I replied: “I’m fine. Ye Lai, those people have a really bad temper. What in the world happened? I wasn’t that involved in [Conquest], and my ranking was also low. What grudges do we have with the American server?”

Ye Lai folded his arms across his chest and replied: “During the later stages of [Conquest], our two countries each had three main cities. During the most intense period, the Chinese server attacked two of the American main cities. When the American server retaliated, they attacked all three of our main cities, so...the enmity between the players of our two countries isn’t just your average squabble. Besides, [Conquest] is still open even after [Destiny] was released, and there are still approximately 2 million players online. Of the three Chinese main cities, there’s still one city under the control of the American servers.

Wan Er smiled, “What a pity, I’ve already quit [Conquest].”



Dong Cheng chuckled, “Otherwise, how could there still be one city that’s occupied by other people?”

I sighed, “Unfortunately, there’s a limit to our time and energy. There’s no way we can return to [Conquest]. Let’s just put all of our energy to use in [Destiny] then. Once Tian Ling City and the seven great main cities are opened up, the bridge joining the different country servers will be completed. At that point, I’m afraid, the country wars won’t be far off.”

Ye Lai nodded and said, “Yup, once the servers of the different countries are connected, the Heavenly Barrier disappears, and it basically means that the country war has started. However, there should still be a long time before the country war starts.”

.....

Not long after, another group of people walked over. Three youngsters who looked to be around twenty five and dressed in stiff button up shirts, walked over. The three people didn’t look half bad, and you could see the self confidence and arrogance exuding from their gazes. One of them was even pushing a wheelchair. In the wheelchair sat a youth clothed entirely in black. He also looked to be around 25, and he had a white coloured scarf draped around his neck. He looked,... Either way, I couldn’t really describe him or get a good read on him.

Once those four people entered, there was immediately a crowd of crew members that surrounded them. They were overly enthusiastic. One of the female workers was so excited that she almost cried. She screamed with tears in her eyes, “Ah...AHHHH!! That’s...is that Fang Ge Que? Wu wu, I’ve finally seen the real Fang Ge Que, Fang Ge Que...”

I was astounded: “Fang Ge Que?”

Wan Er looked into the distance with her eyes, as she nodded her head and lightly smiled, “Yup, the person in the wheelchair is Fang Ge Que. The nerves in his legs have been paralyzed since he was young, causing him to lose the ability to walk. Due to that, Fang Ge Que could more fully immerse himself in games, which lead him to becoming the number one player in China.”

Fang Ge Que slowly entered while being pushed by the wheelchair. There was

a faint smile on his face. He really did look very cultured. His slight smile exposed both his self confidence and modesty. I'm afraid this poise was something that Jian Feng Han, Tang Qi, or any of the other guys, didn't have. Perhaps, it was related to the paralysis of his legs. Once a person has received too many cold looks, they would instead become even more humble and respectful, and in turn this was also the most important quality in a person.

Ye Lai walked in front, and laughed: "Old Fang, we haven't met for a long time!"

Fang Ge Que couldn't help but laugh: "Ye Lai, it seems like you're still so energetic. What a huge body... have you been working out everyday?"

Ye Lai laughed: "That's right, I want to play games for a few more years, and live a few more years of this life with of burning passion."

"Burning passion?"

Fang Ge Que laughed and teased him, "Thankfully, it was us [Legend] who was the first to conquer the player city. When the second territory appears, only [House of Prestige] can compete with you. With [Judgement]'s current strength, you shouldn't be any less stronger than [House of Prestige]. Your passion won't be of much use."

Ye Lai replied, "Yup, it seems that's what it will end up being. However...once Tian Ling City opens up, [Hero's Mound], [Zhan Long], [Prague], [Vanguard], [Emerald Porcelain] and all of the top guilds will go to battle. Then it will be hard to say who becomes the final victor. It's also hard to say whether your [Legend] will continue to stay the champion.

Lu Chun Yang chuckled, and said, "You don't have to worry about [Legend]. Ye Lai, you old b\*st\*rd, you should worry more about yourself. You guys killed some of [Hero's Mound]'s players in Ba Huang City. Q-Sword won't let you off easily. Careful you don't let Q-Sword cut you down!"

Ye Lai grinned and shrugged his shoulders, "He can come at me anytime!"

I lightly bumped against Wan Er's shoulder, then took her and Dong Cheng to walk in front together. When I greeted Fang Ge Que, I extended my hand out and smiled, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai!"

Fang Ge Que raised his head to look at me, and accepted my handshake. He smiled, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai? Not bad, the Fort Zi Feng battle was very satisfying, especially when Magic Dragon Huo Li hit the river! This world will never see a second feat like that. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you are a person that has thoroughly made [Legend] taste defeat. I’m looking forward to duelling with you and [Zhan Long] again!”

I nodded my head, “We will soon!”

Chang Sheng Jue looked at me and said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, is it true that [Zhan Long]’s Dragon’s Den has already become a Level 5 city?”

I smiled: “Yup, we’re trying to become a Level 6 city now. What about it?”

Chang Sheng Jue grinned, “I was just asking. Your levelling speed is truly very fast, even [Legend]’s city has only just reached Level 3. Can you reveal the secret behind [Zhan Long]’s levelling technique?”

“Cough cough...” Fang Ge Que hinted, and said, “Chang Sheng, that’s another guild’s secret, don’t ask them like that...”

I couldn’t help but laugh, “It’s nothing. Actually, the reason why Dragon’s Den’s levelling speed is so high is because we have two Holy Domain level NPC’s as our Guardians. One has 100 points of Military Force, and the other has 100 points of Commerce and 95 points of Agriculture. When I’m not in the Dragon’s Den, Chi Yu Han can automatically recruit troops, while Chi Yu Qing can automatically recruit laborers to settle in the city and increase productivity. How’s the NPC commander in your city?”

Fang Ge Que was also candid, and smiled, “I’ve recruited a total of five NPC’s to be supervisors in the city. Two of them are Epic Hero tier NPC’s, and one has 89 points of Military Force, while the other has 91 points. The other three NPC’s all have 80-85 points of Agriculture and Commerce. They’re not that far from your Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing.”

Dong Cheng just had to add on, “That...let me say something that’ll make [Legend] green with envy. For the Dragon’s Den, since Chi Yu Han is the first commander, he can provide special troops, so the troops that Dragon’s Den recruits are very strong. Chi Yu Han can train Flame Crossbow Archers, Armored Heavy Infantry, Frigid Heavy Cavalry, Flame Hawk Archers, Cliff Dragon Cavalry,

and other top notch special troops. In regards to this, [Legend]'s city definitely can't compare..."

"What?!"

Lu Chun Yang's body slightly trembled, as he said, "D\*mn, is that even possible...is this Chi Yu Han good at any task you give him? Come on, we want one like him too..."

Fang Ge Que couldn't help but smile, "Chunyang, calm yourself...it's no matter, these are all small details. The wise man seeks to win the war, whereas the king seeks to conquer the world. We of [Legend] want to fight to become the overlord of the virtual world. We don't rely on NPC's or a city, but rather, on our united hearts."

Xuan Yuan Feng laughed: "That's right!"

I modestly smiled, "[Zhan Long] isn't looking to command the world, nor do we seek to unify the virtual world. We just want our youth to not be in vain, and be able to leave a mark on [Destiny]'s epic battlefield. That is enough for us."

Mu Xuan thought about it, and smiled, "If you don't fight, can your dream still be achieved?"

Fang Ge Que profoundly smiled, "In the chaotic virtual world, Hero's rise. If you don't fight, will you actually get a world that you can say belongs to you? The culture and society in games are only in the beginning stages of conception. In reality, if you want to obtain respect and acknowledgement, you can only use conflict to obtain it. Li Xiao Yao, you want to live carefree\* in the martial world of games, but this virtual world will definitely push you and your [Zhan Long] into the long river of war. Regardless of whether it's to protect your friends, or to obtain respect from others, you will have to rely on your strength.

TL Note: A play on his in game name, which means "Carefree"

I let out a long sigh and nodded in agreement, "Perhaps you're right. If someone is living in the martial world, how can he truly live life carefree..."

Fang Ge Que lowered his head and smiled, "You and [Zhan Long] are a group of very interesting people. Alright, we'll stop here for now. I'm slightly tired. I'll go to sleep after signing in. It seems like I'll have to talk during the afternoon

conference.”

“Ok.”

.....

Everyone watched as Fang Ge Que entered the hotel elevator. This man could be considered as the number one gamer in China. Not only because of his strength in the game, but also because of his character, his open-mindedness, and his ability to differentiate between right and wrong.

Not long after that, Li Mu carried his bag and walked into the hall. When he saw Wan Er, Dong Cheng and I, he became ecstatic. Not long after that, Qing Qian rushed over from the airport. Bai Li Ruo Feng, Quick Thunder Swift Wind, and other officer level players from [House of Prestige] also arrived. But, when they did, they didn't bother talking with us, in case a fight started. After all, we were enemy guilds.

We began preparing for the lunch banquet around noon. The opening ceremony officially began at 2pm.

.....

The big hall was bustling with excitement as several hundreds of players from around the world were all gathered here.

On the stage, ZGTV's Fei Er held the microphone and smiled, “The first season of [Destiny]'s Hero's Wings Tournament is nearing! Welcome, gaming elites from around the world! Today, we will bear witness to beginning of a long journey of the miraculous international competition! We are the witnesses, and we are also the creators of history! The epic of [Destiny]'s glorious war will be created by each and every participant that is here today!

As soon as she finished, Fei Er repeated the same words in fluent English and Korean. I finally understood why the officials of the Hero's Wings Cup would invite Fei Er to be the host. This little girl really had some skill. Without even mentioning her professional looks, she even had a special understanding of games and was proficient in many languages. She was the perfect choice for the job.

# Chapter 618 Journey to Tian Ling City

The opening ceremony itself was actually very boring. Li Mu, Wan Er, Qing Qian and I were already regretting the fact that we didn't bring a pack of poker cards to play Chinese Poker. Just when we were about to be bored to death, Fei Er finally announced the beginning of the player representatives speeches. First up was the number one gamer from China——Fang Ge Que. Lu Chunyang pushed Fang Ge Que's wheelchair to help him get up onto the stage, and Fei Er passed the microphone to him.

Gripping the microphone, Fang Ge Que looked at the several hundreds of players below the stage. He wryly smiled and said: "There are so many people here today, please don't laugh if I tremble while speaking...actually, I didn't prepare a script for today. But I would like to just say one thing. [Destiny] marks the first golden age in the history of gaming, and I hope that during this Hero's Wings tournament, we are friends first, and competitors second. If no one offends the people from the Chinese server, we won't offend anyone. We are modest and calm people, but that does not mean that we are weak. To those ambitious people who want to provoke the players of the Chinese Servers, then I just want to say one thing to you: 'If you have the courage to provoke us, you should have the courage to collect a thousand corpses!' Alright, I am finished speaking."

Fang Ge Que left the stage to a thunderous applause. Even though the Hero's Wings tournament hadn't started yet, the smell of gunpowder between the players was already extremely thick.

Following that, it was time for the Korean players to go up the stage. A player that I didn't recognise went up the stage and spoke a lot in Korean. After that, the accompanying staff used Chinese and English to translate his speech. The gist of his speech was: "Korean players are unparalleled under the heavens, just wait for our great simida-something\* army to bloodbath you noobs."

\*TL Note: a sarcastic comment on Korean names, since its the only phrase most Chinese people know

Li Mu stared at the Korean representative who was on the stage and clenched his fist, "I really want to beat him to death..."

I calmly smiled, "Don't rush. If you want to beat him to death, do it in the game. Besides, people who have the qualifications to come here aren't people who are easy to deal with. If you want to beat him to death, you must be strong enough..."

Li Mu rubbed his nose, "Alright, I'll work hard!"

At this moment, the American player representative went up the stage. It was that Kyle. After he went up the stage, a disdainful look appeared in his eyes. He looked at the many players below the stage, and started to use English to deliver his speech. My English wasn't especially praiseworthy, and I couldn't understand the majority of his speech. But when he finished speaking, he suddenly approached the microphone, and used clumsy Chinese and in a mocking tone, "When I entered, I saw... a few familiar Chinese players. You guys should wait and see...during the Hero's Wings competition, we'll definitely beat you guys into a pulp. Look properly...once the country war starts, your Tian Ling City will definitely be crushed by the iron hoofs of our Iron Skull City! This is your fate!"

Once this sentence rang out, the Chinese players were immediately furious. Jian Feng Han suddenly stood up, and roared, "Kyle, what shit did you m\*therf\*cker just spew! What do you even count for? You actually dare to talk nonsense here?!"

Ye Lai also stood up and shouted, "So do the American players only have this kind of character? Were your manners eaten by the dogs?"

Wan Er and Dong Cheng were also furious. I calmly placed my hands on top of the hands of these two little misses on the table, and said, "Don't get angry. Being angry will just let them get what they want. Just wait and see. This Kyle better pray he doesn't meet us during the Hero's Wings competition, or else I'll definitely repay him with ten times the humiliation!"

Wan Er nodded her head, "Yup!"

The crowd was extremely tense. Even the players from the American team felt that the situation wasn't too good. The beautiful woman with blonde hair

immediately put down her game helmet, and ran on to the stage in two or three strides. She took the microphone from Kyle's hand, and after glaring at him, she used a mixture of broken Chinese and English to apologize, "All of the Chinese people here, I'm sorry. Please forgive Kyle's ignorance. On behalf of Kyle, I'll...apologize. I hope that you guys won't take it to heart. Friendship comes first. I hope that we won't become enemies because...because of this issue..."

I furrowed my eyebrows: "Who in the world is this woman?"

Ye Lai softly spoke, "She's the guildmaster of Iron Skull City's number one guild——[Blades of War]. Her ID translated into Chinese is Sky Rose. She's a Level 111 Lava Swordsman, and she's number one in the rankings of the American server. No one has been able to challenge her number one spot."

Tang Qi laughed, "Her body doesn't look bad, and her personality doesn't look bad either..."

I couldn't help but laugh, "That kind of opponent is the scariest!"

Ye Lai was deep in thought, "Yup, the poisonous sting of a rose is often the most painful..."

Li Mu grinned: "With your appearance, I would've thought that you'd never tasted the flavour of a rose. Haha, I wouldn't have thought that Fatty Ye also had this kind of lament..."

Ye Lai glared at Li Mu, said, "With the appearance of your distinguished self, I think that you have no qualifications to laugh at me..."

"F\*ck your m\*th\*r!"

"F\*k off..."

.....

Not long after, the situation calmed down. Fei Er continued her announcements. After that, members from the Hero's Wings organisation came out to give short speeches and talk about this miraculous competition.

This went on until it was almost 4 o'clock. Finally, Fei Er announced a piece of information that made everyone extremely excited: "After the news conference



of this time's Hero's Wings, we will open the Seven Great Main Cities after 15 hours!"

"Fxxk, the seven great main cities are going to open?" Li Mu was startled.

Ye Lai squinted his eyes and smiled: "The Chinese area is going to be interesting..."

Mu Xuan replied: "The seven great main cities are about to open, which means that the resources of our Tian Ling City is going to be divided by the various big guilds. Sigh, everyone's going to be fighting over it, it's going to be so violent..."

Yan Zhao Warrior laughed: "No way, we are people with good morals."

"Ah?"

Mu Xuan was startled as she looked at the Yan Zhao Warrior who was beside her, "Middle aged man, when were you sitting here?"

Yan Zhao Warrior was also startled, "Do I really have no presence?"

A 20+ year old little miss that was sitting beside Yan Zhao Warrior laughed: "Guild leader, you're losing a bit of face..."

Li Mu slightly smiled, "Beautiful miss, are you the Six Ya that was in the legends? The newly collected vice guildmaster that Yan Zhao Warrior got? You're very pretty..."

Six Ya blinked her eyes, "Oh? What's newly collected? Do I have that kind of taste? I still prefer Q-Sword, Li Xiao Yao, General Wang Jian, these kinds of handsome guys..."

Q-Sword who wasn't far away shivered, and looked at Sword Tears, "Sister, why do I feel that someone is cursing me?"

Sword Tears lightly laughed, "Brother must have slept too late last night. Its all cause you went levelling like a madman again!"

.....

Thus, this went on until it was almost 5 o'clock, where the opening ceremony finally ended. The officials had organised a dinner party. Furthermore, they also

opened the hotel room doors for me, Wan Er, Dong Cheng, and the other people. Fei Er said that it was too late, and that it would be dangerous for us to drive at high speeds at night. And so, they planned to let us return back in the morning. However, I strongly refused it. The main cities were about to open in 15 hours, and I was planning to go online at exactly 7 o'clock to be the first person to enter Tian Ling City!

And so, I ate my dinner and took a group of people back to Hang Zhou in my A4. Ye Lai, Li Mu, Qing Qian, Q-Sword and the other people also took a night flight to return home. Everyone understood the significance of the first main city, and that the early bird catches the worm. People who were slower would be at inferior to other people in terms of resources.

When we arrived at Liu Hua University, it was already 9 o'clock at night. I tidied myself up and went to sleep. I set my alarm for 6 o'clock and went to sleep!

.....

Resting my head on my pillow, I extended my Yi Hai outwards. I could clearly feel Wan Er's faint aura in the neighbouring room. She wasn't a practitioner, and so there was a limit to the strength of her aura. However, at this short distance, it was much easier for me to protect her. This was due to the fact that while I was this close, any kind of aura that was slightly stronger than normal would be unable to escape my perception. Even if they weren't a cultivator, I could still tell the evil intentions that people had.

It was very quiet during my sleep. 8 hours later, I was awoken by the alarm clock. I turned over and stood up, then hurriedly washed myself up.

When I left my room, Wan Er and Dong Cheng had already prepared breakfast in the second floor's hall. It was an extremely simple breakfast, with milk, bread, fruits, and other things. They said that it was very healthy, but I was more used to eating two meat buns for breakfast.

Wan Er was holding her steaming milk as she laughed, "I heard that teleportation to the secondary level city from the Level 1 City hasn't been opened yet, so players can't teleport over, and have to walk to get there. Also, everyone was also teleported back to Ba Huang City during yesterday's

maintenance, so it'll definitely be extremely crowded when we log in, just like when the server first opened."

I laughed, "I suddenly feel energetic after hearing this..."

Tang Qi replied, "Li Xiao Yao, you have an advantage because of your mount. You can enter the main city the first moment that it opens. So, what are you going to do after arriving at Tian Ling City?"

I instantly replied without thinking, "I'll first have to understand the approximate geographical map of Tian Ling City before doing anything. There isn't any official information that's been released about it. Actually, I was planning to first look at the distribution of resources in Ba Huang City, such as the high grade herbs and mining sites. There's definitely going to be many resources that Ba Huang City doesn't have. I'll have to quickly take them over in the first refresh..."

Wan Er giggled, "You're trying to find the places in Tian Ling City where Dragon Spit Grass is grown?"

I didn't deny it, "Yup, the Heavenly Tier [Alchemy] and [Herb Gathering] skills have already combined. Dragon Spit Grass is one of the necessary materials for the Level 1 [Medicine Refining] skill. Whoever can get the most Dragon Spit Grass will be the first person to reach Level 2 in [Medicine Refining]. They'll also have control over the highest quality potions. It's going to be the Hero's Wings tournament soon, and you can just imagine how precious high quality medicine will be. This is something that will cause a big fuss."

Dong Cheng replied, "You definitely won't be the only person who thinks like that. Also, people who can arrive early in Tian Ling City will definitely not be low levels, and so they won't be too weak. You must be prepared. There'll definitely be a fierce fight!"

I clenched my fist, and smiled, "Whoever dares to steal my Dragon Spit Grass will do so at the risk of losing their lives! Don't worry, just leave the issue of Dragon Spit Pills for the Hero's Wings tournament to me."

"Yup yup." Wan Er happily nodded her head.

Tang Qi said: "Then prepare some for me?"

I nodded my head: "Sure. 1000G for one, do you want it?"

"Scammer!"

"Do you want it or not?"

"Give me 10!"

"OK, we have received your order."

"....."

.....

After eating, I returned to my room and went online!

"Swoosh!"

Light appeared in my eyes. I still had to wait for the server's opening time. There was still about 12 minutes left.

I quietly waited. When the server started the countdown, I was already continuously pressing the accept button to get into the game."

"Swoosh..."

The character interface appeared, and I directly entered. The screen flashed before my eyes, and I was already standing in Ba Huang City with my sword. There were players continuously logging in around me. I didn't think of it much, and summoned my Flying Scythe War Horse and called out my Ancient Tiger God.

Let's go, Tian Ling City!

# Chapter 619 Earth Dragon Canyon

The Flying Scythe War Horse dashed out in a cloud of dust, and swept past the thousand acres of fertile land that Ba Huang City used to train its troops. It crossed over the Butterfly Forest, and then continued westward for almost 30 minutes. It crossed over a vast piece of fertile land, and as it went forward, a scarlet territory had begun to appear on the world map——Zi Wu Mountain. This was a continuous mountain range that rested between Tian Ling City and Ba Huang City. It was a natural stronghold; anyone who wanted to enter Tian Ling City had to first pass through Zi Wu Mountain. Furthermore, there was a screen that separated Tian Ling City and Ba Huang City that was set up on Zi Wu Mountain, so the mountain range had never been stepped on by players of Ba Huang City.

The Flying Scythe War Horse was extremely quick, and when I glanced backwards, I was the only person on the fertile land. I had rushed out of the city at the first possible moment, and reached the Zi Wu Mountain as soon as I could. Even if the other players were quick, they could only arrive here after at least 5-10 minutes.

I suddenly pulled on the reins, and urged my horse to charge towards Zi Wu Mountain. I needed to fight to become the first person to reap the benefits!

“Roar...”

There were ferocious beasts covering the mountain range. Flame Tigers scuttled about the area. Furthermore, it was an active volcano. Even the mountain itself slightly trembled every so often. The sky was densely packed with volcanic clouds, and there was a piece of text on the game interface: 8 minutes and 24 seconds until the volcano erupts. Hm, have I arrived at the perfect time?

I raised my sword and urged my horse to charge up the hill. My mount ran up the narrow and scorching mountain path. A few Flame Tigers began charging towards us. They were Level 117 Thunder tier monsters, but they were just small appetizers to me. I swept out my blade, and [Seven Star Fragment Slash]

exploded in the crowd of monsters. The Ancient Tiger God then finished them off, while I charged straight up the mountain by myself. I had to quickly get across before the volcano erupted, or else I would be delayed.

Fiery rocks were spread densely on the mountain road. I raised my head to look, and saw a group of people on the mountain range. They were wearing fiery red armor. They were NPCs, and every person there carried a simple and crude crossbow. Looking in my direction, a big bearded greedy man laughed: "The Heavenly Barrier has disappeared, and the adventurers of Ba Huang City have to cross over this road to get to Tian Ling City. The time to hunt has arrived! Aim at them, kill everyone you see! These adventurers have killed countless prey in Ba Huang City. They're probably stinking rich!"

I couldn't help but break out into laughter. This system setting was really interesting, they actually had NPC bandits to intercept players going towards the main city?

I waved my sword, and a golden wall condensed around me. This was the activation effect of [Wall of Dou Qi]. Furthermore, [Wall of Dou Qi] was now at Heavenly Tier Level 1. Although it says it only gave a 200% defense bonus, Heavenly Tier skills have a hidden bonus. So its actual defense increase was definitely not just 200%.

On the mountain, the flying arrows were like rain, unceasingly bouncing against my Hidden Dragon Armor. However, these were only mountain bandits after all in all. Their attack power wasn't that high, and they only dealt a mere 200-400 points of damage. I could resist it, and so could players like Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Ran Min. It seems that this obstruction was just to raise the difficulty for the players. However it wasn't really going to delay the players at Zi Wu Mountain until dawn.

The Ancient Tiger God continuously roared behind me, and my experience bar was also constantly flashing. The killing power of my little tiger was getting higher and higher.

I madly sprinted down the path. With just three minutes left until the eruption, I had just crossed over the peak of the Zi Wu Mountain. I flew downwards, and kept going forward until i reached another fertile forest. As I

entered the forest, I looked backwards. Zi Wu Mountain had erupted, and it officially become an unstoppable spewing volcano. It seemed like the flames created a protective screen. There also appeared to be an eruption countdown: 59 minutes and 57 seconds. Yup, it looks like this mountain range erupts once every hour, and besides me and a few other players, the rest would have to wait for another hour before being able to cross over.

.....

I turned around, and urged my horse to continue running into the distance. I crossed over forests, mountain ranges, and a brook. Finally, after 20 minutes of galloping, I could see a majestic city appear in the distance across the enormous flat plain. The area of the city was roughly 5-8 times the size of Ba Huang City's, and practically the whole city wall was made by the most expensive materials.

“Ding!”

System Notification: You have already entered [Tian Ling City]!

.....

As I stepped onto the cobblestone of the city's front public square, I could heard the fierce stampede of horses shake the ground as a group of patrolling cavalry swept past me. I raised my head to look, and the grand gates of Tian Ling City opened widely for me. I urged my horse to enter, and a sweet piece of music immediately resounded into my ears. An aged yet solemn voice narrated about the history of the city to every adventurer that had visited for the first time——

After the ancient war between the gods and devils, the mighty heroes and warrior died in the Hero's Graveyard, with their spirits still living in the people's hearts. A wise and farsighted hero of man, “Luo Ge”, led 100,000 men and horses from the northern tribes to lay siege upon the Hybrid Demons of the North. Finally they entered the land south of the Ice Ridge Mountains. While the other six empires were continuously forced back, he unyieldingly set up an empire to stop the invasion of the Hybrid Demons. Hence, the legend of Tian Ling City began to spread across the continent. This city has 9753 years of history. During the ten thousand year long river of history, there have been countless humans, Moon Elves, and Barbarian heroes who have made their

mark. They have led heroic people to continuously prevent the invasion of strong enemies. Their feats have allowed Tian Ling City to stand tall in the northern continent, becoming one of the firmest forts. Now, the sounds of war are resounding once again on the continent. Enter Tian Ling City, and you will have the chance to be one of the heroes who shall write the story of a new epic!

.....

This stern yet brief narrative made my blood boil with excitement. The buildings of the Tian Ling City were indeed extremely sturdy. Furthermore, its military strength was tyrannical, which let me begin to understand why Da Lun, Xi Fu, Yin Ge, these types of God level BOSSes didn't advance after taking Dragon City. It was because they were scared of the military strength of Tian Ling City. This main city was far stronger than the strength of the three secondary cities combined!

Opening the map, I ran straight towards the imperial palace of Tian Ling City. As it was the first day of the city's opening, the doors of the imperial palace should be open to players. Otherwise it would be far too complicated and there would definitely be far too many complaints made....

The Flying Scythe War Horse neighed as it rushed into the main city. In the distance, white jade steps and an extravagant hall slowly came into view. There were over 10,000 soldiers guarding the main hall. In addition, countless moon elf, human and elf maids carried fruits, wine, meat and others delights into the hall, coupled with hundreds of civil and military ministers standing on both sides of the hall. All of whom were seemingly awaiting the arrival of players.

My Flying Scythe War Horse charged directly into the main hall, with no one to block my way. Also, I sheathed the Zhen Yue Sword as I could no longer maintain my murderous air, for it would be disastrous if I were to offend the king of the main city.

At the end of the main hall, there was a king dressed in battle armour, who stood proudly before his throne with his hand on his sword hilt. It was the present king of Tian Ling City ----- The Great Emperor Rob. On his right stood three members of the royal family in proper order. The First Prince Theodore,



Second Prince, Owen while the youngest was Princess Pearl. Each of them had a very dignified look and imposing appearance, seemingly discussing what ways there were to defend against the Hybrid Demon invasion.

As I took a step forward, Great Emperor Rob noticed me and asked, "Adventurer, have you come to Tian Ling City to join us? If it is so, then that would be perfect. Our Tian Ling City is just in need of people!"

I nodded my head, "Yes, your Majesty."

The third princess Pearl walked forward with a white longsword by her side and said, "Adventurer, you originally came from Ba Huang City, are you willing to acknowledge that you belong to Tian Ling City first and Ba Huang City second?"

Without thinking, I replied, "Yes, I agree!"

Instantly, a bell rang beside my ear

"Ding"

System Notification: Congratulations, you have successfully joined Tian Ling City. From now on, you will now fight for the glory and honour of Tian Ling City. At the same time, you are still a warrior of Ba Huang City and will be able to keep the Ba Huang City's City Badge -- [Let the Blood Spill over Ba Huang]. Please fight for humanity and never retreat even in the face of death.

.....

Above my shoulder, the Tian Ling City insignia slowly appeared. I should be Tian Ling City's first player but unfortunately, there was no reward. However, that wasn't what I was looking for and I immediately bid farewell to the Tian Ling Imperial Family. I was not familiar with them and so our relationship status was 0 and I could not possibly receive any quests for them. The sooner I left, the sooner I could find what I wanted!

Right as I walked down the steps out of the main hall, I could see a silhouette urging a horse with whips as it galloped in this direction. Turns out it was [Hero's Mound] Guildmaster -- Q Sword. He was riding a warhorse that had flames rising from it. He wore a suit full of high tier armor. He seemed slightly stunned as he glanced at me. It was as if he had never expected me to be this

fast. Afterwhich, he just urged his horse in the direction of the main hall in silence.

I too did not say much, and lifted my sword as I rode my horse out. On the way out, I met other players who were all knight class players with high speed, and greeted Ye Lai, Jian Feng Han, Lu Chunyang, Xuan Yuan Feng and others who also did not feel they had time for idle chatter. Well, this wasn't bad either. Time was precious and I don't have the time to chitchat.

Reaching the public square near the northern gate of Tian Ling City, I went to find the NPC in charge of the teleportation array. It was a barbarian warrior and he gave me a valiant look before laughing out loud, "Brat, you look like you're a little strong. Joining Tian Ling City was the correct decision. Would you like to activate the Tian Ling City Teleportation Portal to allow you to teleport to Ba Huang City?"

I chose yes and activated the teleportation portal. Now, I can teleport from Tian Ling City to Ba Huang City and also from Ba Huang City to Tian Ling City. Then, I bought a couple of City Return Scrolls to Tian Ling City. This way, I would then be able to return to the city from outside of the city, reducing the time required to travel back.

Soon after, I cruised around the interior of the city for a few minutes. After confirming that there was no profits to be made here, I began to check my herb picking list. Heavenly Tier Grade 1 herbal medicine, dragon spit grass. These resources could only found at areas where dragons roam. On the big map of Tian Ling City, I chose the Earth Dragon Canyon and Magic Dragon Nest to be my targets. Perfect, these two maps just happened to be right next to each other. Alright, I'll be going here!

I then bought some alchemy furnaces in bulk. I checked my bag, and I still had ten sets of Demon God Grass that are needed for the [Herb Gathering]. It should be more than enough.

Lifting my sword, I left the city and headed towards the south where Earth Dragon Canyon and Magic Dragon Nest were located. Both of them lie very close to the territory of Ba Huang City just bordering the Poacher's Camp. After the main city opened, these two maps also lit up. I had to leave soon, before all

the other players arrive!

.....

On the road, I didn't bother to tangle with the little monsters. In the distance, right at the foot of Zi Wu Mountain, a huge canyon appeared before my eyes. I could even faintly hear the sound of the howling wind in the distance.

Earth Dragon Canyon, here I come!

# Chapter 620 Fire Qilin Halberd

“Hu hu....”

A fierce wind blew past our battle robes. This hot wind came from Mount Zhi Niu in the east. That mountain continuously spews flames from its hot belly, preventing most of the players of Ba Huang City from going towards the eastern region. Either way, there weren't that many players that needed to travel there. After all, one of the requirements to join the Tian Ling empire was to be above level 100. Otherwise, there would be no way to limit the number of players that tried to join the Tian Ling Empire. Furthermore, the monsters on the way there were at least level 110 Thunder Tier or higher. Any players under level 100 would need an expert to protect them along the way, or else they would be killed by the monsters.

“Sha sha” the horse hooves brushed across the grass. I had already arrived at the border of the Earth Dragon Canyon. The map before me was completely dyed red. In other words, all of the mobs there were a much higher level than me. If I went by myself, then it would be too difficult to clear the map. Of course, this was just the assessment the system made based on my level. The system must not have taken into account my skills and equipment stats. Why else would the map appear red for me?

“Grr gr....”

Right in front of me, an enormous beast was hidden among the broken rocks and weeds. It stared at me with its light brown eyes and began to growl. I was the first enemy to appear before it. It was an earth dragon that looked like a lizard. Its head was conical and it had extremely sharp and long claws. Flames rose up from underneath its skin. From where I was, I could read its stats——

[Scarlet Earth Dragon] (Titan Tier Monster)

Level: 120

Attack: 7780-9950

Defense: 8500

Health: 600,000

Skills: [Engulfing Flame] [Flame Breath] [Rippers]

Introduction: Scarlet Earth Dragon, one of the guardians of the Earth Dragon Canyon. This type of earth dragon has only inherited 20% of the bloodlines of the true dragons. It is more similar to a lizard. They live above ground and rely on the power that they obtained from the bloodlines of the dragon to dominate. These earth dragons have taken up the responsibility of guarding the entrance to the Earth Dragon Canyon. They kill all intruders and are extremely savage and bloodthirsty

.....

“Hu hu....”

This Scarlet Earth Dragon had a body that was around ten meters long. It glared at me, and in a split second, it charged right at me. As it approached, it swung its claws, dealing a [Ripper] to me!

“Keng!”

Even with my sturdy [Wall of Dou Qi], sparks flew and I received 2317 damage. D\*mn, this high tier Titan monster is much stronger than the Thunder Tier monsters. They were about as strong as a Level 1 Hybrid Demons. Of course, after the system updated, the levels and stats of the Northern Hybrid Demons and their Kings have changed as well. That was necessary though. If they were still the same level as they had been in the past then they would get beaten up by the normal players.

I threw a [Blade Spin] and then dealt a [Wind Slash]+Normal Attack+[Fierce Ice Blade]+Normal Attack+Ram Combo. Five damage numbers jumped up. Tsk, my attack power really wasn’t just for looks. Even a high tier Titan monster can’t completely defend against it——

“10237 ! ”

“8411 ! ”

“11324 ! ”

“7926 ! ”

“7742 ! ”

.....

Add on the attacks of the Ancient Heavenly Tiger, and both owner and master practically pummeled it to death.

“Grr grrr...”

As though it couldn't stand being bullied by us, the Earth Dragon raised its head and roared into the sky. The flames above its mouth continuously engulfed the air around it. This was the [Engulfing Flame] skill. In the next moment he threw a [Flame Breath], dealing an attack that hit everything in a 20 yard fan. The Ancient Heavenly Tiger and I both took the hit. As expected, this monster's attack really hurt——

“7363 ! ”

“14273 ! ”

I was a little better off. After all, all of my equipments added quite a bit of magic defense. The little tiger cried out in pain and swung its claws at the Earth Dragon's head. It activated [Drain], sucking back some health. It then mercilessly continued its barrage of attacks.

Within thirty seconds, the earth dragon screeched and fell the ground and my experience flashed. I looked at the dropped items. There was a total 2Gs. This monster was so fat that it practically dripped gold. At the moment, the Gold to RMB ration was 1:1. These 2Gs meant 2 more RMB. For a studio that requires a lot of money to run, it was like striking gold, literally and figuratively. If we got 2Gs every minute, then in one hour we would get 120, and if we played 20 hours a day we would get 2400 RMB...

Of course, that also meant that the people farming had to have extremely high levels. Players with good equipment may be able to solo in this map, but any players without quality equipment would probably just become the Earth Dragon's feast. On top of that, as more and more players leveled up and got better equipments, they'll be able to come here and grind these earth dragons. The value of gold will quickly drop. After all, the market will always be pushed by the masses.

.....

After killing a dozen earth dragons, I was starting to feel that this wasn't a good strategy. I started roaming further inward towards the Earth Dragon Canyon. When I opened up the map, I noticed that there were a couple of green dots flashing in the distance. Yup, those were Tian Ling City NPCs. D\*mn, speak of the devil. How could a new map like this not have a quest in it? That would be completely illogical!

I urged my horse forward and charged through the forest. I was pleased to see that there really was an NPC camp there. A total of four people stood in a circle. There were two archers, one knight, and one healer. The healer looked to be a 20 year old young woman. She was helping one of the archers patch up a wound. Beside them was a bonfire that sent plumes of smoke into the air. Some kind of animal leg was roasting above the fire, releasing a strong fragrant scent into the surrounding area.

The knight was the team leader. His armor had apparent claw marks on it. The words "Scout Captain Lan Luo" glowed above his head. With furrowed brows, he gulped some water from a jug and roughly wiped his mouth. He let out a sigh and said, "This is the eleventh day we have been trapped here. We can't continue on like this. Even my battle horse was eaten. If we keep this up, we'll starve to death here..."

The healer girl wiped some tears away and said, Uncle Lan Luo, there are Scarlet Earth Dragons surrounding the Earth Dragon Canyon. There's no use. We've already tried breaking through seven times, and we've failed every time. We went from a team of 25 people, to only the four of us. I just can't bear to see another one of us dying."

Lan Luo let out another sigh, "Prince Theodore sent us here to report on the Earth Dragon King's situation. We cannot go back without completing anything. Besides, right now doesn't seem to be the time to consider the task.. I don't even know how we're supposed to get out. Prince Theodore's underestimating the Earth Dragons too much. He should've sent the Royal Knights here to scout instead."

.....

After listening to the conversation, I slid off my horse and walked forward. I knew a quest was coming. Without skipping a beat, I asked, “Do you guys need help?”

Lan Luo was stunned, “You... who are you?”

I smiled, “I am an adventurer from the Tian Ling Empire. I just happened to be passing by. If you guys need my help, please ask. I will do my best.”

“What, an adventurer of Tian Ling City?”

The healer girl was puzzled, “Those.... Those adventurers from the autonomous states have finally joined Tian Ling City? That’s wonderful! We really need your help right now..”

I nodded, “Yup, go ahead!”

Lan Luo looked at me with a doubtful glance, “Youngster, I don’t know why you are here. But... but can you really help us? You have no idea why these Earth Dragons are so terrifying..”

I spread out my hands with a smile, “Do you need me to try it out first?”

Captain Lan Luo was a straightforward man and he replied, “Alright. First, you need to kill five Scarlet Earth Dragons. Bring me their horns. Only then will I believe that you have the power to help us!”

“Ok...”

.....

This was too easy. I then turned around. Within a short 5 minutes, I returned with the five horns. I threw them on the ground and smiled, “Now, do you believe in my strength?”

The healer girl gaped, “Young warrior, you... you really can kill the Scarlet Earth Dragons? Lord... I can’t believe what I’m seeing. A human actually has the power to kill these Titan Tier monsters....”

At that moment, the fifty year old archer pointed at the insignia on my shoulder and said, “That... isn’t that the insignia of Dragon City? You’re one of Dragon City’s men! No wonder you’re so strong. Captain Lan Luo, I believe that we can trust him. Why don’t you tell him about the details of the quest!”



Captain Lan Luo nodded, “Youngster, seeing as you are one of Tian Ling Empire’s adventurers, then I’ll just tell you everything. This is how it all started. Two months ago, a band of bandits had stolen a treasure from King Rob——The ‘Fire Qilin Halberd’ That weapon was the one that King Rob used when he was younger and fought in the North East. He’s extremely furious and has commanded all of the knights in the empire to pursue and kill that band. Who knew that those bandits would run to a barren land like this! After the leader of the bandits brought the Fire Qilin Halberd here, he was swallowed up by the Earth Dragon King. We... we had no other choice. And so, we want to enter into the nest of the Earth Dragon King and find its feces to dig out the Fire Qilin Halberd....”

I was stunned, “You... you guys want me to find the Fire Qilin Halberd?”

Captain Lan Luo said, “Yes. Even though I know that this is an extremely dangerous task, but there is no other option... you don’t have to kill the Earth Dragon King. All you need to do is sneak into its nest and find its feces. Afterwards, you just have to dig out the Fire Qilin Halberd and bring it back to us. We will give you a generous reward!”

I nodded, “Alright!”

“Ding!”

System Notification: you have received the SS tier quest [Search for the Fire Qilin Halberd]!

Quest Details: Kill 100 of the Earth Dragon Guardians. You will likely obtain a [Dragon Costume Card] after killing those earth dragons. Turn yourself into an earth dragon and enter into the nest of the Earth Dragon King. When you’ve found its feces, look for the Fire Qilin Halberd in it. You must be careful while completing this task. Once it is complete, you will receive a generous reward.

.....

I didn’t even have the energy to laugh at such an amoral quest. Might as well!

I said goodbye to Captain Lan Luo and the others. I leapt onto my horse and turned around to leave. With my Ancient Heavenly Tiger, I charged out of the crowd of earth dragons. Not far ahead, I could already see some earth dragons

roaming the area. There were Flame Earth Dragons and Ice Earth Dragons. They were all Level 120+ Titan Tier monsters. Killing one was easy, but killing 2-3 at once would be difficult. If I had to take on 4-6, then I would have to run away. [Engulfing Flame]+[Flame Breath] were just too strong. I had to run at that point.

# Chapter 621-Beautiful Lady Dragon

Translated by: Sean

Edited by:

Time passed like drops of falling water. The corpses of Earth Dragons filled the path behind me.

After I killed 100 of them, My heart was filled with frustration. I should've gotten a Dragon Costume Card by now!

However, even after I killed another 100 dragons or so, it still hadn't dropped, and I wasn't feeling too good about my chances.

.....

I continued killing them, and within the blink of an eye, it was already 11 o'clock in the morning. The main city had already been open for 4 hours, and a lot of people had probably arrived already. I could already distantly see some people moving about at the edges of the Earth Dragon Canyon. This wasn't good news. Once someone came, I would appear disadvantaged as I was working alone. Furthermore, people who could get here would all be fifth advancement players who were Level 100+. These people weren't terrified of others at all.

As I was worrying about my situation, an Earth Dragon suddenly let out a wail and fell under my Zhen Yue Sword. When it died, a fiery red-coloured card simultaneously floated down to the floor. When I picked it up, I saw that it was the Quest Item that I needed—the Dragon Costume Card. The effects of the card were very simple. It could help me impersonate a dragon, and have the outer appearance and scent of the dragon race. This would prevent someone from being surrounded and attacked by the Earth Dragons.

My palm lightly shook, and the card was already fading away. It turned into rays of red light that seeped into my armor. Following that, my body suddenly trembled. My palm was beginning to transform into a dragon's claw, and my body was slowly kneeling down, and I had to rely all four of my limbs to walk. A

change was also happening to my head. My eyes were separating, and were now located on the two sides of my head. Furthermore, when I opened my mouth, I could see that my tongue that was at least 2 meters long, and there was a viscous liquid on it that would terrify people.

“Fxxk...”

I secretly cursed. If Wan Er saw this appearance of mine, she wouldn't want me, dead or alive.

The effect lasted for 2 hours. Time was precious, go!

I twisted and moved my bloated body. This body of mine was now that of a Frost Earth Dragon's and I brandished its claws and crawled forward. During the journey, my deep blue eyes glared at the other Earth Dragons beside me. As a result, these monsters actually didn't guard themselves against me, and there was even a Frost Earth Dragon that approached me and opened its wide mouth, speaking to me. It used the Earth Dragon's language that I could now understand to say: “Hi, little boy. Why are you looking like that? Are you a newcomer? Don't go away, brother. There's a beautiful Blazing Earth Dragon over there. Follow me to go look at it, I'll teach you something about life. Supposedly, that Blazing Earth Dragon came from the Magic Dragon's Nest!”

I was scared of being exposed, so I just followed it and crawled over there. There were two Earth Dragon's lying on the mound of earth. When I looked over into the distance, there was a female Blazing Earth Dragon crawling over there. It was chewing on the arm of a cave-dwelling werewolf, as it lazily looked around its surroundings.

My whole body trembled, “It doesn't look very good!”

The Frost Earth Dragon beside me disdainfully looked at me, and said: “Pei, you simply don't have the eyes to appreciate beauty. Look, the limbs of that Blazing Earth Dragon are full of energy, and there are flower patterns on her neck. And look at her butt, it's long and full of thick scales. When her tail moves, she'll also carelessly expose that private area that'll make people fascinated. Ah...I'm already getting excited. Brother, let's go and subdue her. You can go first, I'll go after you!”

I shuddered again: “There's no need, brother? Melons taken by force aren't

sweet. I learned this ever since I was a young kid....”

The Frost Earth Dragon looked disdainfully at me disdainfully, and said: “You’re so cowardly. You’ll be destined to be a loner for the rest of your life. Fine. Since you’re willing to give up such an extremely rare chance, then I’ll go by myself. When you see me sleeping and living with her later, then I’ll see you drooling. Since you won’t do anything, I’m not gonna let you get with her. Not even a chance!”

As he said that, he bent his head down, and dragged a bunch of bramble flowers on the mound of earth, and unsteadily walked over to confess his love.

I muttered to myself, and grabbed a rock from the mound of earth. I lightly threw it, fxxk you!

“Pa!”

The Blazing Earth Dragon got directly hit on its head, and it immediately let out an angry roar. I immediately retreated. I turned my tail and charged directly towards the nest of the Earth Dragon King, and thought to myself: “Waking her up from her sleep, Brother, I can only help you this much!”

.....

There were no other obstructions during my journey. I quickly entered the nest of the Earth Dragon King. I discovered that it was a dry caved in pathway. There were Level 122 Titan Tier Imperial Bodyguard Dragons, the guardians of the Earth Dragon King, everywhere guarding the surroundings. But with my dragon body, they simply didn’t pay attention to me, and let me go in. As I walked in, I raised my head to look around. I suddenly discovered that there were red grasses that densely covered the rock wall. I carefully looked at it, and was endlessly happy. It was actually the Level 10 herb, Demon God Grass. Mother, this Demon God Grass is extremely hard to obtain, and the price outside is also very high. There were so many Demon God Grasses here!

I ignored everything else, and first went to collect these grasses. I’ll level up my [Herb Collection] skill to Level 12 before doing anything else. Furthermore, Level 10 herbs were so precious. Not collecting them now would truly be a waste!

And so, I proceeded to collect the herbs while still in my dragon form. Fortunately, it didn't affect my movement at all. I had already collected several stacks of the Demon God Grass in my bag. I collected them all by the side of the road, and soon, my bag already had 20+ clumps of Demon God Grass. I felt like I just struck gold.

After advancing just a bit more, I entered the second underground layer of the nest. I could see that there were some fluorescent-light-emitting herbs mixed within the Demon God Grass. It was the treasure that I was painstakingly looking for, Dragon Spit Grass!

I excitedly collected it. There wasn't that much Dragon Spit Grass sadly. It seemed that even though I was in the Dragon King nest, there weren't many growing there.

.....

I meandered forward for another 30 minutes, and finally arrived at the ground floor of the nest. I moved forward again. Stealthily I saw an enormous Earth Dragon napping. Its whole body was covered with brown coloured scales, and its appearance resembled an alligator. Looking at it, its appearance was disgusting. There were even two 'Beautiful Lady Dragons' beside it that were attending to it. The claws of the Earth Dragon King were gently stroking the neck of the lady dragons, as it slept deeply.

"D\*mn...."

I grinned, and crawled around in all directions, looking for the feces of the Dragon King. After looking for a long time, I finally found an enormous chunk of feces next to a stone wall. It resembled a small mountain. It felt like this was the bathroom of the Earth Dragon King, and the stench stank very badly.

Furrowing my brows, I clenched my teeth. To a fearless person, no fence was high enough! Go forward youngster!

I waved my claws, and I searched around in the pile of feces, finally discovering a metal sword, a golden helmet, a cloak, a pipe, and other things that belonged to humans. However, I couldn't find the so called Fire Qilin's Halberd. I wasn't feeling too good again. Where in the world did this Fire Qilin's Halberd go? Is it possible that it was digested, and the Earth Dragon King didn't

poop it out?

It can't be possible, right? Great Emperor Luo Ke's weapon should at least be a Deity Tier weapon, even if it's the worst case scenario. Then how could it be digested? Was it made sloppily?

That can't be right. It should still be in a different place...

I continued rummaging. I rummaged through the Earth Dragon King's feces three times, but didn't find the Fire Qilin's Halberd. I was almost about to rage quit, but right at this moment, a Blazing Earth Dragon suddenly rushed over, and used the Dragon Language to loudly report: "Great King, it's not good! A group of strong youths brought their weapons here and are making a ruckus in our Earth Dragon's Canyon! They've already killed their way to the entrance of the Dragon King's Nest!"

The Earth Dragon King suddenly woke up from its sleep, and angrily shouted: "What did you say?? Those petty humans actually have the cheek to challenge the dignity of a Deity? Damn it! All members of the dragon race, follow me, I want to eat them alive!"

"Yes, Great King, I've already gathered the troops!"

As he said it, the Blazing Earth Dragon crawled over and used its claw to grab my neck: "Stinky brat, don't hide here and be lazy! The time for you to dedicate your life to His Majesty has arrived!"

I nodded my head: "Yes, please let me go first!"

.....

At this moment, the Earth Dragon King stood up, and headed towards the outside of the nest. I also finally discovered that, under the swaying of the Earth Dragon King's tail, where its 'chrysanthemum' was located, there was actually the tip of a golden halberd. Furthermore, there were raging flames that were circling around its surface. Immediately, I almost went insane. One portion of the Fire Qilin's Halberd was already pulled out, and there was still half a portion inside it! What kind of situation was this!?

What should I do!?

I painfully followed the group of dragons outside. On the outside, I could impressively see players that were wearing the Tian Ling City insignia killing monsters. There were roughly 25 people from the looks of it, and they were all from the same guild, [The Knights Templar]. They were originally the number four guild in Fan Shu City, and the guild leader was called Shang Li. The vice guild leaders Ye Du Ge and Reckless Solder, as well as the other people, were all here. I recognised this group of people. They were allies with [Hero's Mound], and they had previously attacked our [Zhan Long] during the Chi Yu Han rescue mission, and had caused quite a bit of damage to us. Motherf\*cker, we're actually meeting again today, it's truly an inevitable clash between enemies!

Looking at the Fire Qilin's Halberd that was sticking out of the butt of the Earth Dragon King, I immediately made a plan. Yup, these people definitely want to kill the BOSS, and this Earth Dragon King was a Level 122 Divine Tier BOSS. If they can kill it, then I'll seize an opportunity to obtain the last attack bonus from the BOSS. If they can't kill it, then they'll at least take out 50% of the BOSS's health, and it won't be too difficult for me to kill it then. Okay, I'll do it like this!

Besides, if it's necessary, I'll personally take care of this group of people. Once Tian Ling City opened, Wang Ze Cheng will bring [Hero's Mound: Division One] over, and become one of Q-Sword's wings and continue rampaging about. There'll definitely be a fierce battle between them and [Zhan Long] so there was no need to act weak or merciful. If they deserve to be killed, then I will kill them.

.....

In the distance, Ye Du Ge was holding his dagger as he said: "Guild leader, the Earth Dragon King is a Level 122 Divine Tier BOSS, and its stats are very high. We currently have over 12000 people online. Later, you act as the tank and the rest of us will deal damage. First clean up those Frost Earth Dragon's beside the BOSS! There aren't many of them, kill all of them in 10 minutes!"

"Okay!"

The Archers, Mages, and Musketeers aggroed the monsters. The Frost Earth Dragons beside me were aggroed over there and were killed one by one. It



didn't even take 10 minutes, and the Earth Dragon King was already standing there alone, roaring. They were going to start fighting the BOSS!

I twisted my body and went to the back to hide. I couldn't be seen by them.

.....

“Roar!”

The Earth Dragon King let out an angry roar, and stamped on the ground, running straight towards them. It opened its mouth and swallowed an Archer, killing him instantly. It swung its long tail, and killed another person again. Right at that moment, Shang Li activated [Assault], stunning his target. The golden longsword danced about and hacked and slashed. [Dou Qi Armor] was also successfully activated, substantially increasing his resistance. At the same time, [Divine Provocation], the fifth advancement skill of Knights, was activated. It was a skill that substantially attracted hate, which also made the Earth Dragon King firmly lock its attacks on him.

At the same time, another group of people from [The Knight's Templar] appeared in the distant hillside. With this, their total number of people almost exceeded a hundred. The Earth Dragon King was a Divine Tier BOSS. Although it was strong, it was completely unable to compete with Lin Han, Luo Lin, these types of main story Epic Tier NPCs. Being killed was something that would happen sooner or later.

.....

15 minutes later, the Earth Dragon King only had 7% of its health left. My opportunity was coming. After the Earth Dragon King swung its enormous tail and brought the ceiling caving down on them, 20+ players from [The Knights Templar] were instantly killed. The remaining people were all at critical health!

“Keng!”

I unsheathed my sword, and urged my horse forward. But to everyone else, it looked as though an Earth Dragon was charging forward. I used a Pardon Card, and my Zhen Yue Sword had already flew outwards, turning into a dragon flame that pierced through the bodies of three players, killing them instantly!

Immediately, the Earth Dragon King was astonished, and was extremely

appreciative towards me: “Brat, you’re actually saving me in this kind of time. After we kill this group of humans, I’ll definitely reward you heavily!”

At the same time, the whole body of the vice guild leader of [The Knights Templar], Ye Du Ge, trembled. He retreated a few times, as if he had saw a ghost: “Am I going blind? This Earth Dragon’s name is ‘Xiao Yao Zi Zai’?! What kind of f\*cking scam is this?!”

# Chapter 622 - Yuan Rong Combat Boots

Reckless Soldier was holding his rifle, and urged his black coloured war horse on. His other hand was holding a heavy shield, as he said “When did Xiao Yao Zi Zai become a monster? Whatever, let’s go! Slaughter him! Even if it’s the real Xiao Yao Zi Zai, we have to kill him! Now that Tian Ling City has opened, who does [Zhan Long] think it is? Don’t forget that this is the world ruled by [Legend] and [Hero’s Mound]. Xiao Yao Zi Zai is just a clown jumping around!”

Shang Li also nodded his head: “Move out, first kill that Frost Earth Dragon, then kill that BOSS!”

The several dozens of players from [The Knights Templar] uniformly charged over. Under the form of the Earth Dragon, I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and whirled around. A meteoric Dou Qi appeared on my blade, and in the next moment, [Seven Star Fragment Slash] exploded in the group of people. As before, it also turned into the Frost Earth Dragon’s breath attack. But the attack power was definitely mine, and a few Swordsmen and Berserkers were directly instakilled.

“Sha sha...”

I didn’t retreat but instead advanced, carrying my sword and charged towards Shang Li. To capture a group of bandits, I must first capture their king! A cluster of densely packed [Scattered Shot]’s flew over at me. Under my urging, the Flying Scythe War Horse let out a screeching neigh, and it aggressively stomped and shattered the rock, rapidly changing direction and speeding up, causing the attacks to MISS. At the same time, two MISSes consecutively appeared on the top of my head. I had just missed a mage’s [Lullaby]. Motherf\*cker, this was quite lucky. Once I got afflicted with Sleep, then it could really turn dangerous.

I clenched my teeth, and opened my palm towards the group of the people. It was the fifth advancement skill that came from Frost——[Ice Domain]!

“Bang!”

A frosty shockwave blossomed below my feet, and instantly, all of the players

from [The Knights Templar], regardless of whether they were close to me or far away from me, were sealed by ice. The multiple [Mana Shield]s were simultaneously broken by the ice seal. With a roar, the Ancient Heavenly Tiger had already charged over, killing its way into the crowd using [Burstfire Raid]. Taking advantage of the Mages and Archers that were frozen, it raised its head and used [Fierce Roar], instantly killing a group of people. There weren't that many Mages and Archers left after its charge.

I followed up by sweeping my sword into the crowd, rapidly attacking and killing crowds of players. The people who were killed by me couldn't revive for 60 minutes. In addition, The Ancient Heavenly Tiger and I basically instantly killed everyone we attacked. It was to the extent where the Healer's [Revive]s would be rendered totally useless even after they used a [Hundred Battles] BUFF.

.....

"Motherfxxker..."

Reckless Soldier broke out of the ice, with rage plastered across his face, "He attacked first, this is definitely Xiao Yao Zi Zai!"

"You don't say, his pet's already come out!"

Shang Li suddenly used his blade to attack from behind. His war horse raised its front hoof, and raging flames appeared on his blade. A heavy [Holy Fire Cut] landed on the back of my shoulder. "Clang", I trembled from the impact, and lost 6712 points of health. The attack power of this guild leader from [The Knights Templar] was not bad. With another [Holy Shield Strike], I was immediately stunned for 2 seconds. Ye Du Ge started charging at me from my flank. He threw a [Flying Dagger]+[Combo], coupled with the attacks from a few other Archers and Musketeers. My health immediately fell. Within the blink of an eye, I only had less than 10000 health! The feeling of being ganged up on and attacked didn't feel too good!

"Hu..."

After I broke free from the Stun effect of the [Holy Shield Strike], I raised my hand and activated [Cleansing Rain]. I quickly swallowed a Dragon Spit Pill, and my health was immediately restored——

“+8072 ! ”

“+10000 ! ”

I gently waved my hand, and [Binding Chains] was activated. It directly chained up the legs of Ye Du Ge. I slashed my blade, and the Dragon Reservoir Sword and Zhen Yue Sword shined. With a ‘ka ka’, the two swords sliced up Ye Du Ge, and also healed me for quite a bit of health——

“13241 ! ”

“+2648 ! ”

“9823 ! ”

“+1965 ! ”

My war horse turned around, and the Zhen Yue Sword blocked a slash from Reckless Soldier with a “Clang”. I used my arm to forcefully block Shang Li and his pet’s attacks. I used my Zhen Yue Sword to suddenly attack forward, to test the waters. With a “Pu Pu”, it penetrated Reckless Soldier’s combat armor. This was a famous Knight who had extremely high defense. I unexpectedly only dealt 5000+ damage to his health with this attack. B\*st\*rd, I had heard that Reckless Soldier’s basic defense was at least 9000+. Looking at it now, it seems that it was true. The equipment that I sought after was primarily for increasing my attack, and his was for increasing his defense. Even though we had similar base defenses, the added defense from his bonuses created an entirely different defense in real combat.

“Mother...”

Reckless Soldier angrily shouted. The heavy shield slammed on to the floor, activating [Heavenly Shield Wall]. He shouted: “You motherfxxker Xiao Yao Zi Zai dragon. If you have guts, come and kill this daddy!”

I couldn’t help but stare blankly. Was he trying to use defense to look down on my attack?

The Flying Scythe War horse advanced forward and suddenly rammed into him. With a “Bang”, Reckless Soldier lost his balance. I waved my hand, activating the Demon Sword Master Card and raised my attack power by 30%.

At the same time, I activated my skills. [Fierce Ice Blade] suddenly penetrated through Reckless Soldier's shield. Simultaneously, [Sword Tempest] engulfed the surroundings. Within the raging winds, I extended the fingers on my left hand outwards, binding Reckless Soldier. Three Dragon Reservoir Swords magically appeared around him, and they suddenly exploded out. [Great Realm of Desolation] had successfully activated, and within the blink of an eye, three enormous damage numbers appeared--

“9743 ! ”

“12477 ! ”

“15341 ! ”

.....

[Sword Tempest] and [Great Realm of Desolation] were counted as special skills that included Magic Attack within them, causing them to be remarkably effective when attacking heavy armor type players. Reckless Soldier's mount immediately disappeared, and he fell to his knees. He never would have thought that he would actually be instantly killed by my combo attack. Of course, I still had the appearance of an Earth Dragon in his eyes.

At this moment, Shang Li, who was behind me, had already retreated several steps. His target was once again shifted back to the boss, as he loudly shouted: “The BOSS only has 2% health left! Ignore Xiao Yao Zi Zai, and kill the BOSS first!”

The remaining 30 or so people hurriedly surrounded the Earth Dragon King. Shang Li had also charged over to become the Tank. The few remaining Archers and Assassins were trying to delay me. The Assassins already had [God's Dance], [Absolute Step] and [Twin Blade Harmony] charged up, just waiting to give me a decisive blow.

.....

Looking at this situation, I reacted instantly and swung my twin swords. I used [Dragon Transformation], and my blades swept outwards. A gust of air surged outwards, simultaneously pushing away a few Archers and Assassins. At the same time, I looked at the BOSS's health. It was nearly time for me to act. I also

deactivated my transformation of the Frost Earth Dragon at this moment. My heroic armor appeared before the eyes of the crowd, and the Flying Scythe War Horse that I was sitting on was also mighty beyond compare. I suddenly raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and pointed it towards the heavens. With a “Pa Cha”, a lightning bolt struck from the heavens, and gathered on the blade of the Dragon Reservoir Sword. The black clouds gathered in the sky, and in the next moment, countless bolts of lightning dragons descended from the sky. It didn’t differentiate between the other players and the BOSS, indiscriminately killing everything in the surroundings.

“Ah?!”

Despair appeared in Shang Li’s eyes, as he held his heavy shield, “What skill is this?”

The body of another Archer trembled, “Motherfxxker, it’s [Thundering Heavens], Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s Holy Ghost Level 2 skill...damn it, our operation this time is an utter failure...”

Before he finished speaking, the Archer had already been killed by the lightning. Though Shang Li had activated the effect of [Divine Shield]. Chunks of his health suddenly dropped, and he looked at me with bloodshot eyes, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, just you wait. I will definitely make you regret attacking [The Knights Templar] of your own initiative today. Just wait!”

“Boom!”

The lightning dragons fell to the earth, killing Shang Li. There were a few Archers and Mages in the distance that had already relied on their skills to escape outside the radius of 100 yards. Looking at the world-shaking attacks by the lightning dragons, they were all dumbstruck, and could only stare blankly as their guild leader got killed off.

The health of the Earth Dragon King was already low. It howled out in grief, and was continuously screeching in pain. Unfortunately, I couldn’t understand its words anymore. With a “Swoosh”, a golden light flowed out, and I levelled up to Level 114. Simultaneously, the Earth Dragon King also dropped a bunch of equipment with a banging sound. I ignored the equipment, and instead went directly to the tail of the Earth Dragon King, and grabbed the handle of the Fire

Qilin's Halberd. With a "Pu Pu", I pulled it out and furrowed my brows. The digestive system of this Dragon King wasn't too good...

"Sha sha sha..."

I did my best to wipe the Fire Qilin's Halberd in the grass. Only then did I throw it into my bag, and walked in front of the Earth Dragon King's corpse. I used my leg to kick away its front claw, and I saw three pieces of equipment quietly laid out there. There was a Saint Tier staff that was meant for Healers, which added 40% to the effect of heals. I could sell it for cash, but I could also throw it into the guild storage. I stashed it away in my bag. The second piece of equipment was another Saint Tier leather leg guard. Its stats were ordinary, so I threw it into my bag. I could throw it into the guild storage as a contribution.

The last piece of equipment was the one that I regarded as the most important. It was a pair of combat boots for heavy armored player. There was a faint glow of Dragon power on its surface. After all, it was a piece of equipment that dropped from the Earth Dragon King. I waved my hand over it and its stats appeared before me. Yup, this massacre wasn't in vain--

[Yuan Rong's Combat Boots] (Divine Tier Equipment)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 1800

Strength: +137

Stamina: +135

Agility: +133

Magic Attack: +130

Additional: Increases the user's Physical Defense by 27% and Magic Defense by 45%

Additional: Increases the user's movement speed by 50%

Additional: Increases the user's attack power by 22%

Special:[Strength of Yuan Rong], With strategies to assist Yuan Rong, there comes a miraculously strong power. [Strength of Yuan Rong] passively increases



the user's attack power by 1000 points.

Introduction: Yuan Rong Combat Boots, In the ancient times there existed a famous general who swept across the six kingdoms and united the world under one king. After his achievements he retired and lived a peaceful life in the mountains. With the natural minerals he found there, he created a pair of combat boots. Then, with the fur of spirit beasts, he forged it into a pair of Yuan Rong's Combat Boots. This pair of combat boots has had many owners, and has lingered for countless years. Legend says that whoever obtains the Yuan Rong's Combat Boots will obtain supreme military strength.

Required Level: 110

Required Charm: 200

.....

Looking at the stats of Yuan Rong's Combat Boots, I felt like I was nearly blinded...even if the stats of Divine Tier Equipment was extremely strong, this special effect was just too domineering. Raising 1000 points of attack was practically letting it compare with the stat increase from any godly weapon.

With a "Ka", I successfully switched out my equipment. The Ancient Cloud Stepping Boots had already exited the limelight, and were history. Now that the main city system was already open, it was about to become a power struggle between the top players. It was already time for the Cloud Stepping Xiao Yao to switch into the Yuan Rong and battle on all four fronts. This pair of boots arrived at a very good time, especially when the Hero's Wings competition was just about to kick off. Raising 1000 basic points of attack was simply too useful. When I looked at my stats again, my attack power had increased greatly--

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon Knight)

Level: 114

Attack: 7580-9122

Defense: 10166

Health: 45737

Magic: 12150

Charm: 366

CBN Battlenet Rankings: 12

.....

My skills, in total, added 60% to my attack. My equipment added another 269% to my attack. With 9122 points of attack as a base, my actual attack was  $9122 \times 429\%$ , which was a total of 39133 points of actual attack. However, it still wasn't as high as my defense. Using the formula to calculate attack and defense, my defense couldn't be broken by my attack. However, my Dragon Reservoir Sword could ignore 40% defense, so, if I used my attack to hit my defense, one sword attack would still hurt!

# Chapter 623 Magic Dragon's Nest

I happily walked around in my Yuan Rong Combat Boots, and looked again at the items that the BOSS dropped. I kept all of the Pardon Cards and Soul Gems in my bag, and held the Fire Qilin's Halberd in my hand. OK, this task could already be considered finished. I was feeling very happy. I could now go to Captain Lan Luo to collect my reward.

I urged my horse on, and brought out my Ancient Tiger God with me. In the distance, I saw ten or so players from [The Knights Templar] that were hiding in the bushes, as if they were planning to launch a surprise attack on me. However, I didn't pay attention to them. The DPS of this group of people was too low, and they wouldn't be able to instantly kill me even if they came at me together. Besides, I also had a Level 11 potion. If they couldn't instantly kill me, then I would be able to completely counter and kill all of them.

I lowered my head and looked at the Fire Qilin's halberd. There was a faint, glowing shimmer on its surface. However, this signified that it was a Quest Item, and I was unable to equip it. Also I was also unable to see any of its stats. But its stats shouldn't be too bad, and it definitely had a higher attack power than my Dragon Reservoir Sword, at the minimum. In any case, it was the weapon of the main city's emperor, so it definitely wouldn't be lacking.

My Flying Scythe War Horse entered the forest once again, and I arrived at the temporary campsite not long after. The two archers were currently using a small knife to cut some roasted horse meat. They cut one piece and handed it to Knight Captain Lan Luo, but he had a grieved expression, and said, "This is the meat of my mount, I can't eat it...you guys should eat it, I can still endure. Besides, I don't know if that kid can really complete the task. If he can find and return the Fire Qilin's Halberd, then it'll be a great achievement. Otherwise we'll have to report back our inability to complete the task..."

The young female healer consoled him: "Captain, you don't need to be worried. I feel that that young warrior can definitely complete the mission. My woman's intuition tells me that he is a person with an exceedingly strong willpower and strength, so much so it exceeds our imagination!"

“I hope that's the case!”

At that moment, the Flying Scythe War Horse dug its hooves into the grass. I got off the horse and ran to the campsite, with the glistening Fire Qilin's Halberd in my hands. It was the first thing Captain Lan Luo saw. Hope sprung in his originally listless eyes. He suddenly stood up, and said, “Good kid. As expected, you really brought the Fire Qilin's Halberd back...”

I walked up to him and raised the halberd in my hand. I laughed, “Is this the weapon of the emperor that you wanted me to find?”

“Yes!”

Captain Lan Luo excitedly snatched the weapon from my hands and laughed, “This is great, you really did it! Young warrior, your strength has made me astonished! Come, this is the reward that belongs to you!”

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, you have completed the SS Grade Mission [Retrieve the Fire Qilin's Halberd]. You have obtained the mission rewards: Level experience+17%, Gold+8000, and your reputation in Tian Ling City has increased by 2000 points!

.....

Yup, there's only a gold and experience reward. However, that was already enough, I didn't come here for equipment. Besides, I also got Soul Gems after killing the BOSS. That was already enough, after all, I couldn't be too greedy!

I turned around and looked into the distant thick grass. There were a total of 17 players from [The Knights Templar] who were still lingering in the thick grass. Unfortunately, this group of players didn't think that my level was high, or that my stats were also high, which also meant that I had already noticed them due to my [Perception] being higher than theirs.

I ignored them, and stood alone in the campsite. I took out my Alchemy Furnace, Devil God Grass and Dragon Spit Grass, and began activating my Level 11 [Medicine Refining]. Actually, it was a Heavenly Tier Level 1 [Medicine Refining], but I'll just call it Level 11 for the time being. After I put 3 portions of Dragon Spit Grass and 7 portions of Devil Grass into the Alchemy Furnace, it slowly transformed into 3 Dragon Spit Pills, which had unique recovery effects.

Following the sound of a bell, the skill level of my [Medicine Refining] continuously rose——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, you have successfully created [Dragon Spit Pill] ×3, and your Mastery has increased +30!

“Ding”!

System Notification: Congratulations, you have successfully created [Dragon Spit Pill] ×2, and your Master has increased +20!

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, you have successfully created [Dragon Spit Pill] ×3, and your Mastery has increased +30!

.....

This went on until I finished using up all of the Dragon Spit Grass in my bag. I looked at my Skill Mastery again. Hm, seems like there was still quite a bit of a ways to Level 12 [Medicine Refining]. Now that I’m level 114, I should already be creating Level 12 [Medicine Refining] pills. The best outcome would be for me to reach Level 12 [Medicine Refining] before the Hero’s Wings tournament starts. With Level 12 medicine as a backup, [Zhan Long]’s team will have a bit of an advantage when fighting in the Hero’s Wings tournament.

[Medicine Refining LV-Heavenly Tier Level 1]: Degree of Mastery 12360/50000

I had only completed 24.7% of the mastery level, and there was still a large gap. I'll have to continue working hard. However, I had already taken all of the Dragon Spit Grass in the Earth Dragons Canyon, so it seems like I'll have to find a new place to collect it from.

Opening the world map, I saw that 90% of Tian Ling City’s map was still dark, hiding its treasure to other players. In fact, many maps would require the player to first personally enter a location before lighting up. This would make the player’s adventure in the game have a greater meaning.

“Di!”

A single message came from the beautiful Cang Tong, “Pig, are you in the Earth Dragon Canyon?”

“Yup, why?”

“Big idiot...you went and PKed with people again...Shang Li from [The Knights Templar] is currently gathering troops at the east side of Tian Ling City. They have gathered 400+ fifth advancement players. Furthermore, it seems like they've roped in some players from [Hero's Mound]'s main guild, threatening to go to the Earth Dragon's Gorge to beat you until you eat sh\*t...”

“Eat sh\*t...” My whole body trembled, “The people from [The Knights Templar] really fuss over small matters. I've only killed around 100 of their people...”

“Also, the two big guilds [Hero's Mound] and [House of Prestige] are both gathering all of their manpower. According to my sources, they're trying to go clean out the Magic Dragon's Nest. Among these two guilds, Q-Sword and Bai Li Ruo Feng both have the [Medicine Refining] skill, and it seems like they're trying to level up their skill level, just like you. The main objective of their trip to the Magic Dragon's Nest is to look for Dragon Spit Grass. Should we from [Zhan Long] also go?”

“No need...” I thought for a while, and said, “Let Li Mu and Qing Qian take some people to farm levels and check out the maps. Also, the many territories in Tian Ling City have just opened up. We should pay some attention to various types of mounts. We must have some of the defense type mounts, attack type mounts, and speed type mounts, and snatch them before the other guilds discover them. We should develop more first rate players with mounts. During the coming team battle, these mounted players will be main force that will charge and kill enemies.”

“Yup, I know. Just leave the issue of looking for mounts to me. Are you going to the Magic Dragon's Nest alone?”

I slightly smiled: “Yup, it's convenient for a single person to come and go. That way, I won't have too many obstructions. If I bring too many people, it'll be inevitable to have a fight with [Hero's Mound] and [House of Prestige] where no one gains anything.”

“Ok, then take care of yourself!”

“I know, give me a quick kiss...”

“That, we’ll talk about it when we go offline!”

“.....”

.....

I looked at the map again. The Magic Dragon’s Nest borders the Earth Dragon’s Gorge, so it seems like it's more convenient if I want to go over. Perhaps I could even be in front of [House of Prestige] and [Hero’s Mound]. Yup, let's go!

I turned around and entered the forest. I quickly went into [Stealth] mode and hid amongst the bushes. A group of people from [The Knights Templar] hurriedly chased after me, but the explosive increase in speed when my mount went into Charge Mode let me brush off these pursuers in the blink of an eye. I circled around them, and went in the direction of the Magic Dragon’s Nest.

I galloped even further forward, and I went outside of the lush forest. This part of the Zi Wu Mountain was split into two mountain ranges, and the Magic Dragon’s Nest was surrounded by the Zi Wu Mountain in a loop-like shape. Taking advantage of the extinguished volcano, I sped up my horse to cross over the eastern Zi Wu Mountain. Everywhere that the iron hoof of the war horse stepped on was scorching lava. The Ancient Tiger God roared and chased after us. Suddenly, a strong wind blew against me from the center of the mountain I looked downwards, but I could only see the enormous shape of a mountain valley cover my vision. In the middle of the mountain valley, I could distantly see the the perilous peak of the mountain, which was in the shape of a dragon head. I didn't even need to think, the Magic Dragon’s Nest was there.

“Ding!”

System Notification: Please take notice, you have entered a dangerous map —[Magic Dragon’s Nest]!

Map Introduction: Magic Dragon’s Nest, this is an area that has been cursed. The corrupted Blue Dragon•Hilbert has already forcibly occupied this area for 700 years. Hilbert is an enormous dark element dragon which escaped from the

Hybrid Demon Territory, after being cursed by the Elf Queen Lanais. His soul was corrupted, causing him to become incomparably savage. Relying on his extremely great strength, he destroyed the 500 soldiers from the empire that were originally stationed here. After that, he assembled a group of inferior Earth Dragons to help him protect this area, causing the Tian Ling Empire's repeated attempts(3 times) to attack the Magic Dragon's Nest to suffer a miserable defeat. It is said that Magic Dragon Hilbert is very fond of treasures, and has collected many treasures within his cafe. However, this is also the true reason why many adventures have perished.

.....

Looking at the map introduction, I slightly laughed. This was going to be very simple. What I was planning to do was to sneak into the Magic Dragon's Nest and collect the Dragon Spit Grass. Normally, Dragon Spit Grass could only grow in the high quality living areas of the dragon race, which had the bloodline of an enormous dragon. As the name suggests, Dragon Spit Grass requires dragon spit in order to grow, and Hilbert was an authentic blue dragon that was a highly ranked member of the dragon race. There was no question about it, there was definitely Dragon Spit Grass there.

"Clang!"

I unsheathed my Dragon Reservoir Sword and tugged in the reins. The Flying Scythe War Horse immediately and mightily raised its front hoof and let out a long neigh, charging down the mountain range, straight towards the mountain valley where the Magic Dragon's Nest was.

After entering the mountain valley, it didn't even take me a few minutes before I met my first opponent, a cumbersome yet savage looking Earth Dragon. It had the head of the dragon race, but it didn't have any wings, causing it to only be able to crawl on the floor. A Level 121 Titan Tier monster, kill!

Looking at my Dragon Reservoir Sword, it's [Kill for Blood] ability was already at 100%. This was good news. The people from [The Knights Templar] had good value. At least they raised the attack power of my main weapon to the upper limit of 100%.

My blade swiftly and fiercely cut through the forehead of the Earth Dragon. It



opened its mouth and dealt [Engulfing Flames]. The 2000+ points of damage took me by surprise. The stats of the monsters here were much stronger than the monsters in the Earth Dragon's Gorge. However, this was also nice, as it could help me stack up the defense ability of my Hidden Dragon Armor. The longer I was online, the more exciting the battles were, and the stronger I was getting!

“Pu pu pu...”

Under the control of my thoughts, the Flying Scythe War Horse advanced and retreated, and cleverly dodged the attacks. I continuously to slice at the weak point of the Earth Dragon, it's neck, dealing a lot of critical damage. .

Less than 20 seconds later, the Earth Dragon let out a wail and fell. It dropped 2 gold coins, 37 silver coins, and a grayish-brown crystal.

# Chapter 624 Dragon Crystal

I leaned over and picked up the crystal. It had a faint glow and felt warm in my palm. The crystal was transparent, allowing me to see the Dragon Flame power inside. Even though the Earth Dragons weren't truly considered flying dragons, they were the closest relatives to the true dragons. Even so, holding Dragon Power wasn't an easy thing——

[Dragon Crystal] (Dragon Power 17 points) : This is an energy crystal that was created from a being that is closely related to the Dragon Tribe. A material for smithing equipment and weapons as well as fortifying cities. This crystal increases attack and defense effects and is closely related with the power of the dragon crystal.

.....

Materials for smithing weapons and equipment? It's probably similar to the ore that's used to increase attack effect. Nevermind, I'll just throw it into my bag for now.

After collecting the Dragon Crystal, I continued pushing forward. I purposely went around to the eastern side of the Dragon Nest. That way I could avoid seeing any other players.

The dense forest was practically covered with lower tier dragon tribe monsters. Getting there was a long and slow process. At the same time, I messaged the Head of [Zhan Long] Logistics, Fox——

"Fox?"

"Yea, little Li what's up?"

"Help me look up what Dragon Crystals are for. Is there a price for it on the market yet?"

"Alright!"

A few minutes later, Fox sent a message, "Dragon Crystals are used for upgrading equipment. It increases the dragon power of weapons and it can also

increase the Dragon Health Defense effect on armors. However, at the moment, there haven't been dragon type monsters and nobody's gotten any Dragon Crystal drops, so nobody knows what the effects are. In addition, the NPC army is buying all of the Dragon Crystals in the Eastern Plaza. Its one of the necessary materials for the Dragon Crystal Cannon."

"Yup, I got it!"

Content, I closed the the message window. If it's like that, then the Dragon Crystals are useful. All of the Silver, Gold, and Purple Tier Equipments that I got, I immediately made into God Army Cards. I needed to leave some more space for the herbs and the Dragon Crystals.

.....

However, after killing seventeen Earth Dragons, I only got two Dragon Crystals. That was enough to prove that the drop rate for these Dragon Crystals was very low. I didn't expect that it would be so low even with my 300+ charm. Any players with less than 100 charm probably won't get even one drop if they killed a hundred. As for players with under 50, they would have to kill 1000 to get one and that was an extremely painful and long process.

"Pu chi...."

I cut off a head with my Dragon Reservoir Sword. When another crystal dropped, I looked up into the distance. I could make out some human shapes in the distant mountain. I quickly leapt up and entered into the forest. After carefully watching, I could make them out better. It was [House of Prestige]'s Bai Li Ruo Feng, Quick Thunder Swift Wind and the others. Looks like this map was their first target after entering the city. Motherf\*cker, they have the Tian Ling City insignia on their shoulders too. The time of the Chinese Servers main city had finally arrived. The unavoidable conflicts were appearing one after another.

Nevermind them. The mountains were covered with Earth Dragons. There was enough for them to kill. I just needed to make sure I was the first to reach the Dragon's Nest.

.....

Not long after, another big group of people appeared. This time, it was [Hero's Mound]. Q-Sword and Sword Tears were both there. I could even see some other people who were from Ba Huang City. It was Wang Ze Cheng and Yan Suo. [Hero's Mound: Division One] had finally decided to join the main guild's events. To be honest, Wang Ze Cheng probably doesn't want this. He was perfectly content as guildmaster in Ba Huang City. However, there was no other choice. He had to go to Tian Ling City to unite with the main guild.

The two big guilds weren't particularly fast in their advance, while I was by myself. I could rely on [Camouflage] and go around them. If I really couldn't avoid them, then I would just fight them head on. With my Ancient Heavenly Tiger assisting me, the speed of my advance and my retreat would not be an issue.

Close to two hours later, I finally reached the Dragon's Nest. The peak of the mountain was shaped like a dragon's head. Below it was a dark cave that seemed to tunnel deeper into the mountain. As expected, the Blue Dragon lives here.

"Keng!"

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and I urged my horse forward into the tunnel. The ground was wet and slippery. After I entered, I found out that there was a total of three floors and I was currently on the first floor of the Dragon's Nest Cave. When I looked downward, I could see roaring flames and lava slowly bubbling at the center. The third floor was around 500 meters away from me. From a distance, I could see a blue dragon at the center of the nest. He rested at the top of a cliff and relaxed in the warmth from the flames. He was in the middle of a deep sleep. He blew flames through his nose as he snored.

"Gu dong..."

I gulped as I looked. The BOSS was so close to me. However, the best case scenario was that I didn't provoke it. This BOSS was not necessarily something I could fight by myself. Especially since I could see the faint words "Demon Harvest" tier above its head. Nevermind, I definitely couldn't kill a BOSS on this tier. Even if I called upon a hundred or so of [Zhan Long]'s players to come here and help, I still wouldn't be confident in our ability to kill it.

I glanced around. I cared more about the Dragon Spit Grass!

Within the walls of the nest, I could see grasses growing from the crevices. They were very thin but they grew in groups. Yup, those are the ones I want!

I looked forward, I saw a three meter tall Armored Dragon Man standing guard there. He had a crimson sword at his hip. When he saw me, he pulled it out and began to screech as it charged at me. Motherf\*cker, it was a Valkyrie Tier Vice-BOSS. It had around 4,000,000 health. Killing it would be hard. More importantly, it would take too much time.

My Ancient Heavenly Tiger roared and lunged forward to kill the monster. Close to three minutes later, I killed the Armored Dragon Man. My experience rose up quite a bit. On top of that, it dropped 200+ gold. However, I couldn't waste any more time here. Otherwise, if [Hero's Mound], and [House of Prestige] get here, I would have a difficult time acting.

.....

Standing on the first floor of the Dragon's Nest, I looked at the map to check out my surroundings. Around 70 meters ahead of me was a mass of Dragon Spit Herbs. However, between us were 27 Armored Dragonmen. If I killed them one by one, then I would be wasting too much time.

I glanced at me left arm and pondered for a bit. Yup, it was worth the risk!

I raised my arm and activated [Dragon's Hook]. I then locked onto a rock and activated it!

"Shua!"

The [Dragon's Hook] flew out with its long rope. "Keng!" It drilled itself into the wall. I then shank the rope, bringing me and my horse flying into the sky. I flew forward in a straight line. Right before I hit the wall, I released the hook. My Flying Scythe Horse whinnied and fell to the ground with a heavy thud. With that one move, I had passed over all 27 of the Valkyrie Vice-BOSSes. Looking up, I could see the Dragon Spit Grass. I happily began to collect herbs. Not long after, I had 71 stacks of Dragon Spit Grass in my bag. I looked around and saw that there were two other bunches in the adjacent cliff.

I put away my mount and activated the [Dragon's Hook] again. I aimed it at

the cliff with one bunch of Dragon Spit Herbs. I flew forward again and clung to the cliff. I was like one of those people who hung from cliffs to pick herbs. I continuously collected the Dragon Spit Herbs. I soon swept through all of the Dragon Spit Herbs in the area. This trip was extremely fruitful. When the players from [Hero's Mound] and [House of Prestige] discover that all of the monsters are still here, but the Dragon Spit Grass was gone. I can't even imagine what kind of expressions they'll have.

After picking all of the grasses from the first floor, I carefully looked around me. I noticed that there were a couple of ropes of vines. This was how I was supposed to get to the second floor. Under the hot wind in the cave, the vines began to swing!

Even though I could easily get to the second floor with my [Dragon's Hook] I decided to check it out anyway!

I put away my mount and then grabbed one of the vines with my hand. Then, I gave it a strong tug. It seemed pretty sturdy. I then leapt off and slid down the vines. The second floor was far beneath me. I gave a slight swing and then pulled out my Zhen Yue Sword. "Keng!" I stabbed it into the side of the cliff, sticking myself to the wall. Then, I swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword. "Ka Cha!" I cut down the vine that I was hanging on.

Hmph hmph, if it was like this, then won't [Hero's Mound] and [House of Prestige] not make it down here right? I'm really too evil.....

However, right at that moment, I suddenly heard a "Sha sha" sound from above the vine. A new vine sprout was growing in its place. After a few minutes, it grew back to the original length. I nearly spat blood onto the cliff. This system was set up so that players couldn't make lowly attacks like this. Nevermind, I'll just keep looking for Dragon Spit Herbs in the area!

On the bright side, after killing all of these Armored Dragon Men, I got another Dragon Crystal. At least I hadn't killed them for nothing.

Furthermore, after collecting all of the Dragon Spit Herbs, I had been making the medicine on the spot, in case I got killed and dropped the herbs. If that happened then it would be too much of a waste. How could I let the enemy rush skills in my stead.

.....

Right as I shot my Dragon's Hook at the cliff to pick more Dragon Spit Grass, I heard a scream. In the distance, a group of people charged into the Dragon's Nest. They were on the opposite side and could see me!

I couldn't allow that!

I quickly dashed away and hid behind a group of vines and activated [Camouflage]. That way, the players 150 meters away from me wouldn't be able to see me. Yup, those were [House of Prestige] players. Bai Li Ruo Feng lead the party with his bow in hand. He wore a full suit of high level leather armor and brought 100+ [House of Prestige] players with him.

"Huh?"

Bai Li Ruo Feng walked in the front. He looked up and said, "Dragon's Nest Floor One... why can't we see a single Dragon Spit Grass? This is illogical..."

Quick Thunder Swift Wind raised his battle axe and said, "Bro, maybe it only grows where the BOSS is? Look, the Blue Dragon Hilbert is laying there. Its drool is nearly falling out. Let's hurry up and kill it!

Bai Li Ruo Feng squinted and said, "Don't be impatient. Q-Sword brought 400+ of the elites from [Hero's Mound] and is right behind us. Who knows if they'll try and take the kill from us. Tell the brothers outside to be on watch. [Hero's Mound] has a pretty good reputation in Fan Shu City. Q-Sword isn't the kind to bully the weak, but that doesn't mean his underlings aren't. Especially that Division One guildmaster Cang Cheng. That man isn't benevolent in any way. While he was in Ba Huang City, he rose hell in the city during his fight with Xiao Yao Zi Zai."

Quick Thunder Swift Wind smiled cruelly, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai? [Zhan Long]? Ha ha, I'm closing in on their level. With that, [House of Prestige]'s revenge will be brought down upon them...."

Bai Li Ruo Feng shook his head, "No. Don't be rash and attack [Zhan Long]. Xiao Yao Zi Zai isn't a simple person. His allies, Ye Lai and Misty Clouds are even more complicated. [House of Prestige] is still in the middle of growing, so we shouldn't make too many enemies. Let's first develop ourselves and then make

alliances with other guilds. We shouldn't attack. If we do, we must give Xiao Yao Zi Zai and [Zhan Long] a crippling blow!"

"Ok, I understand..."



# Chapter 625 Hilbert

Before I had budged from my position, another group of people entered the nest. Q-Sword rode in on a warhorse while raising his sword with Sword Tears and Jian Tan following closely behind. Afterwards, Tang Qi and a bunch of others including Wang Ze Cheng and Ageless Beauty came into the cave with close to 200 players. Q-Sword had not brought all of his guild members into the cave since he knew not to “have all eggs in one basket”.

In the end, the members of [Hero’s Mound] and [House of Prestige] more or less came together. All of them had wide open eyes filled with bloodlust, as though they were looking to pick a fight.

Quick Thunder Swift Wind inclined his mouth, and laughed coldly, “He He, this show of force, [Hero’s Mound] truly is ranked second in the China Servers. Are you trying to force us, [House of Prestige], to surrender?”

Q-Sword leapt off the horse. He took a step towards a rock formation and indifferently glanced at Quick Thunder Swift Wind before replying, “Watch your lowly mouth, I heard that because of you, Quick Thunder Swift Wind, [House of Prestige] fought numerous fierce battles with Li Xiao Yao’s [Zhan Long]. I was just thinking, if your mouth was not so lowly, with Li Xiao Yao’s character he wouldn’t have made a move against [House of Prestige].

Quick Thunder Swift Wind shouted with fury, “Motherf\*cker. What did you say? Don’t think that just because everyone is afraid of you that I, would also cower in front of you!”

Bai Li Ruo Feng berated, “Swift Wind, shut up!”

Q-Sword then lazily laughed, and glanced at Bai Li Ruo Feng, “Ruo Feng, is this the vice-guild master you’ve been looking for? If [House of Prestige] has such leaders, I can bet a hundred yuan that [House of Prestige] will fall out of the top 10 rankings. What do you think?”

Bai Li Ruo Feng laughed faintly, “Don’t say such unkind words Q-Sword, this brat Swift Wind just has a rather explosive temper. He’s young so please do try

to understand his situation. That's right, hasn't [Hero's Mound] fought with [Zhan Long] a couple of times. Why are you speaking for Li Xiao Yao and [Zhan Long]?"

Q-Sword raised his head, and looked at the roof of the nest before chuckling, "I campaigned in Ba Huang City and fought against [Zhan Long] because I wanted to challenge a strong opponent. It was not purely due to my personal likes or dislikes.

Quick Thunder Swift Wind let out a cold laugh and suddenly looked at Wang Ze Cheng and Ageless Beauty before laughing again, "Yo, wasn't this girl previously Tyrant of Western Chu's? [Hero's Mound: First Division] truly isn't picky, you don't even care if she's second hand goods."

"What did you say?!" Wang Ze Cheng's face was full of rage. "You better watch your mouth!"

Even Tang Qi couldn't tolerate any further comments. He raised his Iron-Boned Fan and shouted, "Quick Thunder Swift Wind, your mouth is truly despicable. How about you control your own mouth before you stick your nose in other people's business?"

At that moment, the girl behind Quick Thunder Swift Wind stood out and said with a hint of anger, "Why would you say that to older brother Quick Thunder Swift Wind? He carried us from level 30 to level 100, he's a good person! Seventh Tang, you're...you're not allowed to say such bad words!"

Tang Qi laughed so hard that he had to clutch the wall for support, tears almost falling out of his eyes. "I've finally understood why Li Xiao Yao that brat was so helpless at that time. It's because --- there are people in this world who live in their world. So foolish and so naive that they would even defend scum."

Q-Sword sighed, "Tang Qi, that's enough. Don't say too much otherwise we will really get into a fight."

Quick Thunder Swift Wind coldly replied with a hint of laughter, "I don't mind a fight!"

"But I mind."

Q-Sword unenthusiastically said, "I brought [Hero's Mound]'s main force here

for the Magic Dragon and the Dragon Spit Grass. We're here to seek treasure and experience, not to PK. Although, if [House of Prestige] continues to provoke us, [Hero's Mound], and insult our members, I, Q Sword, do not mind shedding all pretense of cordiality and destroying all of you. Honestly, it won't take long."

Bai Li Ruo Feng trembled a little as he answered, "Q-Sword, please do not mind Swift Wind's words. Since all of us have come seeking treasure, why not..... [House of Prestige] enter through the left and kill our way through while [Hero's Mound] enters through the right. How does that sound? This way, there won't be any conflicts. Whoever reaches the third level first, will get to kill the Magic Dragon first. If either of us fails in defeating the boss, the other party will get a try. All's fair and equal."

Q-Sword gladly smiled, "En, Ruo Feng's promise is enough. Seems like [House of Prestige] still has some reasonable people. Let's just do it this way and start killing those demons. Wish you a smooth journey!"

"Same to you! He He."

.....

[Hero's Mound] and [House of Prestige] started to grind levels while I had finished gathering 50% of the Dragon Spit Grass on the 2nd level. As a person, we can't ask for too much. In any case, it was best that I left a bit for the others. Off to the third floor! I should be able to gather these herbs in secret on the next floor. Besides, the BOSS is so close to the third floor, there should be a higher concentration of the Dragon Spit Grass!

Raising my head to take a look, I took advantage of the time when the two groups of players were solely focused on killing the vice boss monsters before leaving my original position in a single movement. My Dragon's Hook latched onto a rock cliff of the third story and my whole body just flew upwards from the 2nd level to the third level like a ray of light. I nervously inhaled at the top of the cliff, not even daring to release a single sound.

I turned around to take a look. The Blue Dragon Hilbert was just 60 metres behind me sleeping soundly on a perch in the wall. It seems like it won't wake up till a player disturbs it.

Under the second floor, I killed 7 Armored Dragonmen, before walking

forward another 100 metres. Immediately, I saw Dragon Spit Grass growing densely together on the cliff. They looked just like Boston Ivy, covering the entire cliff. The sight of it made my eyes shine brighter as I hurriedly used my Dragon Hook to pull me closer. I contentedly picked a whole bunch.

Afterwards, I went to train my [Medicine Refining] skill. After close to 2 hours, I had reached 48720/50000 experience with a 97.4% proficiency in my level 12 [Medicine Refining]

However, there wasn't anymore Dragon Spit Grass left. Even after I checked the floor, there were no more resources left.

Hiding in a bush of red grass, I watched from afar. Sword Tears' sister raised her sword, blocking a move from one of the vice-BOSSes while killing monsters. Q-Sword, on the other hand, pierced his sword into the cliff, slowly making his way up. On the way, he gathered one clump of Dragon Spit Grass and 4 stacks of Demon God Grass. Without an item like Dragon's Hook, this action was truly dangerous. However, even if Q-Sword were to fall, he would've been fine. These type of high-skilled players were all very bold. Without such drive, he wouldn't have been able to lead [Hero's Mound] to attain China's rank NO. 2 position.

.....

Rationally speaking, it was a good time for me to return back to the city. Yet, I didn't feel satisfied either. F\*ck, this Magic Dragon's Nest should have been enough for me to reach Level 12 for [Medicine Refining]. This isn't right!

Thus, I continued to kill the demons. Thankfully, the heavens seemed to have noticed my unhappiness. Upon killing my number Nth Blade Dragonman, there was a "hua la" sound and a blood red map appeared. I picked it up and took a look. So it was a reward---

[Magic Dragon Bounty]: This bounty offer is from King Rob of Tian Ling City. Any adventurers able to kill the Magic Dragon Hilbert and bring its head back to Tian Ling City will earn bountiful rewards. Some of the rewards include : Demon Harvest Rank Equipment x 1 , Holy Rank Skill Book x 1, Dragon Spit Grass x 1000, Demon God Grass x 30000, Charm x 25.

.....

Instantly, a “hum” sound appeared in my head. Sh\*t! This is a wonderful opportunity to make money! Besides the incredible Demon Harvest Equipment, there was also a Holy Ghost Rank Skill book and 1000 Dragon Spit Grass. This was truly a dream come true!

Yet at that moment, I heard a girl laugh on the second floor. “Brother, come take a look at this. There’s a bounty quest!”

Q-Sword smiled, “What is it?”

Sword Tears explained excitedly, “Killing the Magic Dragon gives huge rewards. Here, you can take the bounty. After you kill the BOSS, you can return to Tian Ling City and obtain those rewards. A Demon Harvest Rank Equipment, it is the first in the world ah!”

Q-Sword chuckled, “Ok!”

My heart thumped as I looked at the bounty paper in my hands. Turns out that I would not be the only one receiving the quest. Anyone who kills the BOSS and removes its head afterwards to bring to Tian Ling City with the bounty paper will be able to receive the rewards. What the hell? What can I do by myself?

.....

Looking around, I suddenly found a huge passage on the right side of the rock wall and there was a rather horrid smell coming from it. I walked forward to take a look and surprisingly, it was a large pile of dragon dung. Hilbert may be a high ranked monster but he still needs to use the toilet and this was exactly the place in the Nest where he does his business. Urging my horse to go forward, I couldn’t help but hesitate and look closer. It was then that I realised that this cave was definitely not created by man but instead naturally formed. The deeper I went, the smaller the cave became and in the end, there was only space for one person. Eh, was this an opportunity for me?

Making use of the terrain and my damage then maybe I could just get ahead of Q-Sword, Bai Li Ruo Feng and the others to kill this Demon Harvest Rank BOSS!

Deciding on my strategy, I flicked my wrist and 50 God Army Cards revolved in

my hand. I immediately summoned [Azure Dragon Crossbow] at the deepest part of the cave and waited for the cooldown of the skill to end before I summoned another one. Afterwhich, I turned around to face the behind of Blue Dragon Hilbert. In one swift motion, I used [Great Realm of Desolation] and struck at the butt of the BOSS with my Dragon Reservoir Sword!

“Bang!”

“7332 ! ”

Perfect, it was enough break his defense! The 100% [Kill for Blood] stack I got from [The Knights Templar] was so useful!

After receiving such a blow abruptly, the Blue Dragon’s tail shook. It lifted its head and roared angrily. Next, it turned its huge body little by little while staring at me with its dark blue eyes.

I took a few steps and spurred my horse to dash into the hole.

At that moment, an earthshaking dragon roar could be heard coming from the bottom of the Magic Dragon Nest. Q-Sword trembled as he heard it on the round loop on the 2nd floor and shockingly asked, “What’s the matter? What happened to the Magic Dragon?”

Sword Tear answered, “I don’t know. Could it some mysterious demon that started a fight with it? Or perhaps something has angered the Blue Dragon?”

“Could it be someone who is trying to steal the BOSS?” Q Sword asked softly.

Sword Tears shook her head in response. “That can’t be brother. This is a Demon Harvest Ranked BOSS. Who would be so blind to anger such a BOSS. This isn’t something a player can kill alone!”

“En, that’s right. Let’s hurry though, I am still worried!”

“Yep!”

.....

As I retreated, I raised my long sword and sent a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] with a [Razor Rotation] flying towards the boss. To kill the boss alone, I could only rely on these long-ranged skills to whittle down his health.

However, the Blue Dragon angrily waved his claw towards me. “Bang! Bang! Bang!” and the cave opening was destroyed into several pieces. It glared at me with its beastly eyes before turning towards me and opening its toothy mouth. It was a [Breath of the Ice Dragon]!

# Chapter 626 Nation Suppressing Sword

I was completely filled with sorrow. One dragon breath had already taken away more than half of my health. Thankfully, the dragon breath couldn't be used limitlessly, which made me rejoice. The Blue Dragon Hilbert raised its head, and the dragon scales on its neck suddenly rose. A light blue coloured frost energy intensely rushed forth, and after about seven seconds later, it spat out its second dragon breath.

“24112 ! ”

The damage was roughly the same, but my [Cleansing Rain], [Heal], and my Level 11 Potion had already brought my health back to normal. I didn't think any more of it, and raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword. [Great Realm of Desolation] and [Seven Star Fragment Slash] were activated and I sent them over in a crisscross pattern. Simultaneously, I also set up an Azure Dragon Crossbow. After this, the Azure Dragon Crossbow's attack was going to be the main damage dealer.

The blue dragon let out many cries of anger, and waved its sharp claws to tear apart the rock wall with a “Pa pa pa”. I slowly approached it, step by step. Once I let it attack me in close-combat, I would definitely die. I could only retreat back into the depths of the rock cave. The defense of the Hidden Dragon Armor had already stacked to 54%, but its BUFF was only for Physical Defense. The only thing that could help me resist against dragon breath was [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost Armor].

Hilbert was the master off this Magic Dragon's Cave, and it was obvious how angry it was after being provoked. The entire bottom floor of the nest was shaking, as the enormous body of the blue dragon madly dug through the underground rock strata. I also seized every single possible chance to attack, and after about 30 minutes, Hilbert's health had already dropped to 71%. However, this speed was still too slow. In just a short while, the players from [Hero's Mound] and [House of Prestige] would undoubtedly have already cleared all the small monsters. By then, my already unfavourable situation would get even worse.



“Roar...”

As the dragon cried out, my health was constantly increasing and decreasing as I healed myself and got damaged. Finally, another 30 minutes passed. Hilbert could only attack me from a distance, and I could rely on [Blade Spin], [Great Realm of Desolation], the Azure Dragon Crossbow, and other long range skills, to attack it. If I was able to engage it in close combat, and it let me hack at it for 30 minutes, this BOSS would more or less die.

However, even if it was like this, the blue dragon had still lost all but 34% of its health. At that moment, I saw a group of [Hero's Mound] players entering the deeper floor through the crack in the wall. Q-Sword urged his war horse over, and his eyes were filled with astonishment: “Heavens...the blue dragon only has 34% health left. Who...who is killing this BOSS?”

Tang Qi pointed his finger towards the depths of the stone cave, and said: “Someone brought the blue dragon into that rock cave, and is exploiting the terrain to seal the BOSS's physical attacks! It must be like that!”

The beautiful lady Sword Tears asked: “Brother, what should we do now?”

Q-Sword's gaze turned cold, “What more do we need to say? We have the bounty notice. Plus that Hilbert is the key to our rise ...Seventh Tang, bring people over to clear out the surrounding Blade Dragonmen. The rest of you, follow me. Use long range attacks to bring the Blue Dragon's aggro over. Cang Cheng will be the Tank. This boss belongs to our [Hero's Mound]. Once Hilbert comes over, the mysterious expert within the rock cave will naturally show himself. We can reach a conclusion then.”

Tang Qi nodded his head, “Understood. Also, it looks like the people from [House of Prestige] have arrived as well. It seems that we'll undoubtedly have to share a part of the rewards. What should we do?”

Q-Sword slightly smiled, “We'll kill the BOSS first. Ignore them, and turn on the game recording system. Once [House of Prestige] takes the initiative to attack us, then we'll counter kill them.”

“Haha, guild leader is wise!”

.....

At this moment, a bunch of magic, arrows, and bullets landed on Hilbert's bum. Immediately, the Magic Dragon once again let out a miserable howl. It was basically 'Misfortune never comes alone'. I clenched my teeth. In the end, Man proposes but God disposes. A single person killing Hilbert was already impossible. It seems that I also can't come to an agreement with [Hero's Mound] either.

Although the people from [Hero's Mound] were completely focused on attacking, no one's damage could exceed mine. And so, Hilbert continued angrily digging his way towards the depths of the rock cave. Five minutes passed in this deadlock. Hilbert's health had dropped to around 6%, and it was finally incessantly angry. It raised its palm, activating his godly power, allowing [Holy Dragon Possession] to activate, causing its stats to explosively increase.

I smirked. I only needed 1 more minute! Perhaps then, all of the experience from killing the BOSS would belong to me.

But just at this moment, I suddenly heard Q-Sword's voice from the outside, "Give me a [Hundred Battles]! Let me try!

Raging flames surged forward, as Q-Sword's [Fierce Tiger Burst], a Level 11 Combo activated. Sure enough, he instantly pulled the aggro of the Blue Dragon. Following that, Q-Sword continuously retreated, causing Hilbert to immediately abandon me. It turned around and twisted its long body, letting out an angry roar. It then charged towards Q-Sword. At the same time, it let out a [Dragon Breath Baptism], throwing a group of players from [Hero's Mound] into a catastrophe, and they all were instantly killed.

Q-Sword retreated while raising his sharp blade, slashing at the enormous dragon. He loudly shouted: "Come, go invite the friend in the rock cave out!"

I couldn't help but laugh, and urged my horse to charge outside, with my sword in hand. I laughed, "How could I dare to inconvenience the leader of [Hero's Mound] to invite me out? I'll come out by myself. However, I was the first one to battle with this dragon, and you guys are stealing it from me when I had damaged it to 30%. Aren't you ignoring the rules too much here?"

I moved my arm, and the Ancient Tiger God within the magical formation let out a roar. I had already assumed a fighting stance. All righteousness and justice

was fake here. In this game, the one with the strongest fists would be the one calling the shots. I also knew this simple reasoning.

Sure enough, Q-Sword slightly laughed, and replied: “That won’t do, our [Hero’s Mound] has gone through untold hardships just to come here and kill this Magic Dragon. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, even though you attacked this BOSS first, we still want it. Otherwise, I’d have no way of explaining myself to my brothers!”

Jian Han held the sword in his hands, and suddenly urged his war horse forward as he shouted, “Knights, follow me and charge! Slaughter Li Xiao Yao! After all, leaving him here would be a disaster!”

A cold gaze also appeared in Q-Sword’s eyes: “Li Xiao Yao, I’m sorry to be unfair, but only one power can have the right of killing this Blue Dragon Hilbert!”

I urged my horse to run forward following the side of the rock wall to avoid the attacks, and laughed: “If you have guts, come and kill me!”

As I said that, I suddenly pulled the reins on my war horse. Immediately, three Swordsmen from [Hero’s Mound]’s main guild charged into the rock wall. I raised my hand and let out a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. The Ancient Tiger God used [Burstfire Raid], and the three Swordsmen uniformly fell to the ground and died. At the same time, I turned around and charged towards the Blue Dragon. I opened up my hands, and used [Great Realm of Desolation] to continue my attacks towards the BOSS. Only if I did it like this could I have all the rights to the killing of the BOSS.

I hurriedly charged forward, and there were a few Knights in front of me. In the instant that we were about to collide, I lowered my body, and used [Blade Rush] to instantly move forward 5 yards. I binded a Mage within the crowd with [Binding Chains], and activated [Assault]!

“Swoosh!”

The speed of the Flying Scythe War Horse explosively increased, and swept over the crowd like a bolt of lightning. I loudly rammed against the body of the Mage, causing the surrounding Archers and Musketeers to be dumbstruck. They had never thought that I would still brazenly charge through their frontline when I was being attacked by all sides. In that one second that the other party

was stunned, I raised my arms, causing my Dou Qi to explosively rise. [Sword Tempest] activated in but an instant, slaughtering 17 people near me!

Q-Sword angrily let out a low shout, but he had to personally pin down the attacks of Hilbert, so he could only angrily shout: “Seventh Tang, Stun the BOSS! Quickly, it isn’t too late to kill Li Xiao Yao after killing the BOSS!

Originally, Tang Qi also didn’t feel like making a move against me. He had been holding his paper fan, walking around me. He didn’t use the [Hexagram] in his hands, and was delaying it, making Jian Han so angry that he nearly wanted to rage quit. But after hearing Q-Sword’s command, this brat turned around and used [Hexagram]. With a “Bang”, he stunned the Blue Dragon Hilbert. His hit rate truly wasn’t bad.

I carefully looked at Hilbert’s health, and simultaneously paid attention to my own health. This group of Mages didn’t seem to be human, and were continuously releasing [Lightning Eagle Wave] and [Lullaby]. If I was even bogged down for a second, I would definitely be put to sleep.

I looked at the BOSS’s health drop bit by bit, and my heart had also gone up into my throat——

“4% ! ”

“3% ! ”

“2% ! ”

“1% ! ”

In the moment that Hilbert’s health dropped to 1%, I felt a sudden wave of lethargy hit me, as I was actually hit by [Lullaby]. My heart immediately turned cold, I was screwed!

However, it was at this moment when a [Scattered Shot] landed on my back, waking me up from the [Lullaby]. Mother, the Mages from [Hero’s Mound] probably didn’t think that they could put me to sleep.

[Seven Stars Teleportation]!

I suddenly activated the [Mohist Five Scrolls], causing the Ursae Majoris to appear under me. It The Blue Dragon Hilbert’s neck was positioned at the exact

position, and Q-Sword was only 3 metres away from me!

I moved my blade, and suddenly let out a low shout. The Dou Qi in my body bubbled forth, and I activated the fifth advancement skill——Ice Domain!

“Bang!”

The frost shock wave engulfed the surroundings, directly freezing everyone. It continued for 3 seconds. Only, a MISS appeared on top of Q-Sword’s head. His stats were too good, and his resistance towards my skills also far exceeded the remaining people.

I directly slashed my my blade outwards, and Q-Sword’s attack was abnormally simple. With a “Keng”, his landed on my shoulder. I withstood his attack, and turned around, dealing a heavy attack on the body of the BOSS. I turned around and used another chain of skills. Immediately, the Blue Dragon Hilbert finally died after letting out a wailing howl!

“Swoosh!”

Level 115!

However, at this moment, Q-Sword’s [Afterglow Slash] suddenly landed on my back, stunning me for 1.5 seconds. Ordinary attacks continuously flashed out, and the Flying Scythe War Horse finally couldn’t withstand the concentrated chain of attacks, and disappeared after letting out a wail. In the instant that my Yuan Rong’s Combat Boots landed on the ground, I immediately rolled towards the corpse of the enormous dragon.

I stretched my hand out, grabbing the equipment that the BOSS dropped. It unexpectedly only dropped one piece of equipment, which was a long sword that emanated a blood red luster——the Nation Suppressing Sword, a Level 110 Demon Harvest weapon!

I didn’t give a second thought to it, and immediately equipped this Nation Suppressing Sword. I quickly activated [Haste] and rushed forward. Then, with three cuts, I sliced off Hilbert’s head. I caught it and threw it into my bag. However, Q-Sword appeared behind my back like a shadow, and had a faint smile on his face, “Li Xiao Yao, are you expecting us to just accept everything here without question?”

My gaze swept across my health bar. I only had 20000+ health left. But as long as I fight Q-Sword off for a bit and find dense undergrowth, I'll be able to hide in it. There was at least a 40% chance of me succeeding!

I immediately made a firm decision, and raised my sword, charging towards Q-Sword with my Ancient Tiger God.

.....

“Hei...”

Q-Sword looked at me, and had a faint smile at the corners of his mouth. He seemed to have a calm confidence, and that calm made me feel somewhat uneasy.

# Chapter 627 - The Taste of Defeat

“Swoosh!”

The Dragon Reservoir Sword cut through the air, and I leapt up. I ingeniously angled the blade while midair, directly striking at the right side of Q-Sword's war horse. That was a dead angle since he couldn't shift his force. A mount still increased attack and defense. However, in the case of where both players had similar levels in technique, it was better to fight on the ground since there was more flexibility.

Facing my approaching blow, Q-Sword used his palm to push off the horse's back. He flipped around, leaping off of his mount. In the instant that he put away his mount, he moved his sword, and blocked my attack with a “Keng”.

The moment Q-Sword landed, the light of [Fierce Ice Blade] appeared on my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and the light of [Wind Blade] appeared on my Nation Suppressing Sword and I attacked on two fronts!

“Hmm?”

Q-Sword tightly furrowed his brows: “Two skills can be activated at the same time?!”

However, just as my twin swords were about to strike him, Q-Sword's right hand suddenly shuddered, and his long sword lightly tapped the point of my Dragon Reservoir Sword. He flicked his wrist, sliding the sword across mine. “Keng”, a blue light burst forth, and he broke my [Fierce Ice Blade]!

I was dumbstruck. He actually broke my attack skill. What skill was this?

“Sha sha...”

Q-Sword still had a calm face, and he slid forward. His shoulder sank as he rammed my wrist as it held the Nation Suppressing Sword. Following that, he spun around, and jabbed his elbow backwards. With a “Keng”, he struck my shoulder. Immediately following that, another blue coloured wave surged forth. Even my [Wind Blade] was broken! Facing a skill that could forcibly break my two skills, I was extremely shocked.

I raised my combat boots for a kick. “Bang”, my Yuan Rong’s Combat Boots struck Q-Sword’s leg. I used speed to fight speed, and rotated my arms, activating a [Combo] with my twin swords.

Q-Sword let out a low shout, activating [Spark Armor], forcibly taking my attack. When I activated [Blade Rush]+[Blade Spin], a group of Healers from [Hero’s Mound] healed Q-Sword, and a faint smile appeared at the corner of Q-Sword’s mouth, “Li Xiao Yao, you’ve lost this time.”

I retreated several steps, and my blade flashed out, suddenly killing two nearby Assassins. I was still shaken. Something was wrong, but I couldn’t figure out what.

Q-Sword raised his sword with both hands, and his arms suddenly became as red as fire. His originally handsome face was distorted with a sinister expression, as he faintly laughed, “I just learned this skill. How about I test it out on you?”

As he said that, the saber in Q-Sword’s hands was suddenly smelted by the raging flames on his arms. Following up, he raised his arms, and countless rays of sword light condensed in the air. As a “Blacksmith Swordsman”, Q-Sword had always learnt very OP skills, and he laughed while looking at me: “Holy Ghost Level 1 Skill--[Hundred Smelted Swords]!”

“Bang bang bang...”

In mid air, the countless rays of sword light indiscriminately struck the area surrounding me. I could only use my twin swords to block it. I couldn’t block it at all and my health dropped rapidly--

“13172 ! ”

“12221 ! ”

“11237 ! ”

.....

“Bang...”

My body slightly trembled. I leaned on the rock wall behind me. My best advantage, my health, was also fully depleted. The Nation Suppressing Sword in



my right hand dropped with a “Swoosh”. The equipment that I just got wasn’t mine in the end, and was still dropped. I didn’t even have the time to clearly see the stats of the Nation Suppressing Sword. Fortunately, the head of Hilbert was a Quest Item, and didn’t drop!

“Swoosh!”

I appeared in the graveyard of the Magic Dragon’s Nest in spirit form. I didn’t rush to get back and revive, but sat there on my bum at the foot of the cemetery’s angel statue. I stared blankly at the sky, and my mind was in a chaos. Just what in the world was that skill that Q-Sword used? He could actually break both of my main skills in an instant? It’s safe to say that...in reality, that kind of collision wouldn’t make me lose my attack power, right? After all, this is a game, the rules and reality didn’t actually coordinate that well, right?

I looked over the recent battle recording, and carefully observed a few parts of it. Despite that, I was still perplexed even after much thought. I couldn’t understand why such a situation had occurred. Within the game, there are skills that can be used to block, defend, and resist attacks. However, Q-Sword’s skill directly broke apart my skill. Furthermore, I didn’t see him enter any special mode or activate any special skill. What in the world was this?

“Di!”

A message arrived from Wan Er, “Pig, did you just get killed by Q-Sword 10 minutes ago in the Magic Dragon’s Nest?”

I was somewhat embarrassed as I replied, “Yup, I couldn’t beat Q-Sword in single combat...”

Wan Er, “It doesn’t matter. Winning and losing are both common in battles. I’ll treat you to hotpot tonight, so don’t feel too bad...”

Me: “Yup, I’m fine. It wasn’t even the first time that I’ve been oppressed. I’ve been oppressed by trash like Liu Ying and Flying Dragon before. What are those defeats compared to losing to the strongest person in battle technique?”

Wan Er, “Alright, then I’ll feel relieved. That’s right, I heard that...you dropped a Demon Harvest Nation Suppressing Sword to Q-Sword as well?”

Immediately, I was somewhat speechless: “Wow, bad news really travels a thousand miles. I was already holding the Demon Harvest weapon, and I unexpectedly dropped it. Sigh, I’ve lost face. It’s my fault for going to the Magic Dragon’s Nest alone...”

Wan Er sent over another smiley emoji: “It’s fine, idiot. It’s not actually like this. Li Mu and Qing Qian have been capturing mounts today while Q-Sword brought over the main force of [Hero’s Mound] to clear the Magic Dragon’s Nest. So it can be considered that you sacrificed yourself to obtain the chance for the whole guild to get more mounts! Okay, I’ll treat you to something nice tonight, I’ll pay for it!”

“Yup! Wan Er, play by yourself for a bit, I need to ponder this again!”

“Fine, go ahead!”

.....

When I opened [Destiny]’s newly opened forum for Tian Ling City, sure enough, I saw a stickied forum post that even had an extra red colour to it\*. It was a copy of a battle recording. Within a short 15 minutes, it had already surpassed 1 million views, and there had already been over 10000 replies to it. It was a post that Wang Ze Cheng had posted--

TL Note: In chinese forums, they use a red glow on the forum post to highlight things.

[Challenge] During a battle in the Magic Dragon’s Nest, [Zhan Long]’s guild leader Xiao Yao Zi Zai lost to [Hero’s Mound]’s guild leader, Q-Sword, and is returning in low spirits!

After that, it had a video attached to it. The video was nearly 2 minutes long, and it showed how my [Wind Blade] and [Fierce Ice Blade] were forcibly broken, as well as how I was besieged by a group of players from [Hero’s Mound], and finally how I was killed by Q-Sword’s Holy Ghost Tier skill, [Hundred Smelted Blades]. Basically, I was truly defeated in solo combat. Looking at the contents of the post, it perfectly described the phrase “Good things don’t leave the door, bad things travel for a thousand miles”--

[1st Reply] (Player Cang Cheng) : First post! [Hero’s Mound] is mighty! Q-

Sword is mighty!

[2nd Reply] (Player Ageless Beauty) : Handsome babe is also great!

[3rd Reply] (Player Yan Zhao Warrior) : F\*ck, this can't be right? Li Xiao Yao was really completely defeated by Q-Sword? This...how can this be? Q-Sword directly broke apart Li Xiao Yao's both skills, how in the world was it done?

[4th Reply] (Player Misty Clouds) : I can't believe that Xiao Yao's first battle in Tian Ling City was a loss...however, don't worry, just try again!

[5th Layer] (Player Quick Thunder Swift Wind) : Hahaha, Xiao Yao Zi Zai is such an SX! He actually thought that he could beat a grandmaster level expert like Q-Sword! Let me tell you, you're still lacking a lot!

[6th Reply] (Player Yue Qing Qian) : Q-Sword is truly shameless. So many people are attacking Brother Xiao Yao alone...and he actually has the face to ask someone to post something like this to ridicule Brother Xiao Yao...

[7th Reply] (Player Mu Xuan) : F\*ck, this makes no sense. How could Little Zai lose to Q-Sword? He didn't lose to Q-Sword during the Rise of the Heroes Tournament...

[8th Layer] (Player Drunken Spear) : Actually, after I finished looking at the video, I can impartially say one thing. Q-Sword is truly a genius that has an extremely high learning ability. This skill that he used to beat Li Xiao Yao, isn't it the legendary Pulse Break Style? Unexpectedly...the grandmaster of the Battle Reflux Style has started to use the Pulse Break Style, and furthermore, his understanding of the main aspects of the style is very deep. It is extremely hard. Li Xiao Yao didn't suffer any injustice when he lost.

.....

Basically, 40% of the people here were supporting me, 30% were trying to kick a person when they were down, sneering at how I wasn't as skilled as Q-Sword. The other 20% were maintaining their neutrality, and the remaining 10% were trying to pick up girls. However, a loss was still a loss, and there was nothing nice to say about it. I could only train myself more. There was nothing in this world that could be solved with just the snap of my fingers. Although my actual strength was growing at an incredibly fast pace. In the end, there were

still many domains that I hadn't explored in the game yet.

I return to the Magic Dragon's Nest in my spirit form, and found my corpse on the third floor. At least 60 minutes had passed, and the people from [Hero's Mound] and [House of Prestige] had already left. It seemed like they had actually fought a bit, which ended with [House of Prestige]'s defeat.

I revived myself and took out my City Returning Scroll. I left this area. The resources in this area had already been cleaned out, and there was nothing left that would make me reluctant to leave.

“Swoosh!”

I appeared within Tian Ling City, which was already full of players. Within a short 8 hours, the number of fifth advancement players that had entered Tian Ling City exceeded a hundred thousand, at the minimum. Furthermore, it would unceasingly increase. The main group of players were already starting to exceed Level 100.

I summoned my Flying Scythe War Horse, and climbed up the horse. I headed directly towards the imperial palace. When I entered, I could already see the Great Emperor Rob standing there from a distance. I took out the fierce looking dragon head from my bag, which was almost as big as half a car. “Bang”, I placed it below the steps that lead to the emperor, and took out the bounty for the Magic Dragon. I said: “Your Majesty, I have killed the Magic Dragon Hilbert. This is its head. I would like to claim my reward!”

Motherf\*cker, I've already lost the Nation Suppressing Sword. At least I still have the head of a Magic Dragon to console my sad heart....

As a result, half of the civil and military officers in the great hall were extremely shocked--

“Heavens, this...this it really the head of that ruthless Magic Dragon?”

“Who is this adventurer? He actually killed Hilbert, he's practically the reincarnation of a hero!”

“Your Majesty, the empire has a saviour! There's actually someone who could kill this demon Hilbert!”

.....

The Great Emperor Rob was also slightly stunned. After confirming it, he laughed: “Young warrior, your bravery and courage has extremely shocked me. Come, this is an honour that belongs to you! I hope that you can continue achieving meritorious deeds for the empire!”

In the end, the mission level of this bounty to kill the Magic Dragon was extremely high, and it was unexpectedly broadcast across the whole Tian Ling City with a system announcement--

“Ding!”

System Announcement: Congratulations to player Xiao Yao Zi Zai who has killed the Magic Dragon Hilbert and has brought the Magic Dragon’s Bounty from Tian Ling City’s Monarch! He has obtained the following generous rewards--[Sacred Heaven Sword] x1, [Flame Sword Style] x1, Dragon Spit Grass x1000, Demon God Grass x30000, Charm x25, and Level+1!

# Chapter 628 The Brilliance of the Pulse Break Style

Looking at the quest rewards, I couldn't help but feel a little startled. Sacred Heaven Sword. What was that? Is it a Demon Harvest Tier?

I quickly opened up my bag. There, the long sword glowed with a golden light. I took it out to read its stats. It actually had an attack power of 0-0. I was stupefied. It wasn't until I read the introduction that I felt myself calm down. There was actually another angle to this sword. Thankfully it wasn't just 0-0—

[Sacred Heaven Sword] (Demon Harvest Tier)

Attack: 0-0

Introduction: Legend has it that when the world was first created, the gods all descended upon the earth and taught the people how to harvest and create tools. The ancient humans used the spirit power of the gods to create a weapon to show to them. It was this Sacred Heaven Sword that. The Sacred Heaven Sword had not been unsealed yet and there wasn't a sword spirit in its body. All it has is a strong and durable body and can meld with any weapon, adding +2 to its tier. Furthermore, the weapon will retain its stats and special skills. Melding them together will only increase the stats.

.....

I looked at the Sacred Heaven Sword and then looked at my Dragon Reservoir sword and my Zhen Yue Sword. Now I was stuck choosing between the three. I finally decided upon the Dragon Reservoir Sword. After all, I loved the [Kill For Blood] on my Dragon Reservoir sword the most. On top of that, even Q-Sword had the Demon Harvest Nation Suppressing Sword. If I didn't get a Demon Harvest weapon, then I would be falling too far behind.

And so, I confirmed the melding and fused the Sacred Heaven Sword and the Dragon Reservoir Sword together. In the next moment, golden light exploded from the two weapons and they began to revolve around each other, slowly fusing together. All of the players stared as they watched. To think that fusing

two weapons would create such a big scene. Clearly, this wasn't a normal fusion.

After a whole ten seconds, finally, a new weapon floated in front of me. It had the same shape as my Dragon Reservoir Sword, but now the sword's body carried a golden glow. Furthermore, there were several golden figures etched into the blade. One was leaning over to pick the harvest. Another was carrying a lamb. One was carrying a bow to hunt, and another cutting wood for fire. One was hammering away at a mountain, while one was taming a horse. There was a total of seven pictures flashing on the sword's body. That meant that this sword was no longer just a weapon for killing. Rather, it was one that represented life. It was a godly weapon created with the power of the heavens and earth. However, these were all just secondary. What was most important was this weapon's stats. Glancing at the attack power, I was beside myself in excitement——

[Dragon Reservoir Sword] (Demon Harvest - Superior)

Attack power: 4120-5500

Strength: +155

Stamina: +152

Magic: +150

Agility: +145

Additional: Increases the user's attack power by 60%

Additional: Ignores 50% of the target's defense

Special: [Never Dull], the sword never dulls even after long term use

Special: Has a 15% chance of releasing the power of the stars. Deals three times the normal damage to the target

Special: Has a 25 % chance of dealing a superior critical attack

Special: Bound to the player Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Will not drop. Can still be upgraded one time

Special: Demon Weapon Number 007

Unique Effect: [Kill for Blood], every time a player is killed by this weapon, the weapon's attack power+1%. Highest is 150%. Disappears after logging off.

Introduction: During ancient times, there was a Dragon Reservoir located in the Southern Sea. Legend has it that Heavenly Dragons have appeared within the reservoir. The water in that reservoir is both sweet and clear. It also has the effect of strengthening bodies. One legendary blacksmith named "Qin Fang" hand picked the best materials and dug out the Heavenly Jade hidden deep within the Azure Cloud Mountain to assist in the creation. Then, he set up a grass hut right next to the Dragon Reservoir. After seven years of refining it, he finally created a godly weapon and named it the Dragon Reservoir Sword. Legend has it that this sword has the ability to draw upon the power of the stars, making its enemies go crazy

Required Level: 115

.....

After reading the new stats, I couldn't help but let out a laugh. It had basically carried over all of the stats from the Dragon Reservoir Sword, and even made it quite a bit stronger. [Kill for Blood]'s limit increased from 100% to 150%. That meant that it was an upgrade triggered by the system. Furthermore, I could still upgrade it one more time. Which basically means I got another chance to upgrade it. Now, even if the [Destiny] China CEO Ou Yang Nuo Yan comes to find me, I would still be within reason. Plus, the [Hero's Wings] tournament was about to start. If she really was Chinese, then she probably wouldn't come to take debts from me....

"Ka" I equipped the new Dragon Reservoir Sword. I was ecstatic. My attack power grew a great deal again. Now I was truly a killing machine——

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon Rider)

Level: 115

Attack: 9950-12450

Defense: 10166

Health: 46137



Magic: 12550

Charm: 391

CBN Battlenet Rankings: 12

.....

There was nothing more to say about that attack power. It was enough to make anyone cry out in pain. However, losing to Q-Sword really was a worrying thought in my head. It wasn't that I couldn't lose, but rather I didn't know how I lost. Nor did I understand how Q-Sword could break my skills even without something like [Azure Dragon Arm].

I looked again. That red skill book was still in my bag. I glanced through the stats. They were pretty good——

[Flame Sword Play] (Holy Ghost Level One): Increases the Dou Qi in the user's body, creating a flame attack to burst from one's sword play. Increases attack power by 20%. Required: Must be a Swordsman, Must have a level over 100

“Shua!”

The skill book disappeared and I successfully learned it. This was still good. From now on, I won't have a normal attack. Just attacking would give me the increase in damage of a skill.

.....

It was already three in the afternoon and I had just returned to Ba Huang City. I patrolled the border of the Dragon's Den and saw that the city had been developing quite well. Plus, it was only a 20+ minute ride from Tian Ling City. It was pretty close to Mount Zi Wu. Its location naturally had a lot of advantages. Thinking back to the city that [Vanguard] got in the Nightmare Plains, they would have to spend half a day to reach Tian Ling City. At least in that sense, the Dragon's Den was in a far better location.

When it was getting close to four, I logged off. I walked out and saw that the hallway was quiet. Wan Er and Dong Cheng were both immersed in the game.

I took my phone and walked out the door onto the small path in the garden. A soft breeze brushed past my face, making the leaves dance on the ground. As I

looked at the leaves, I began to think about the details of my fight with Q-Sword.

Right at that moment, my phone suddenly began to ring. It was Matcha's phone number——

"Boss, why'd you log off?"

"Eh, Matcha, did you need something?"

"Yup, do you have time right now? I want to see you."

"Yup. Shall I go pick you up from the office?"

"Alright!"

.....

I spread out my Yi Hai to check for any dangerous elements in the surroundings. Well, with Tang Qi upstairs, he as a Top Tier Royal Air Expert, was enough to protect Wan Er and Dong Cheng.

I walked out and started up the A4 and drove all the way to the [Zhan Long] office. When I reached the building, I saw that Matcha was wearing a yellow dress and standing outside. She clutched a folder in her hand and looked into the window at me with a smile, "Boss, take me to tour Liu Hua University, alright?"

I smiled, "Ok. What's got you into this mood today Matcha?"

"Let's go!"

"Alright!"

A few minutes later, the A4 pulled up into the garden outside the school. Students were continuously walking past us and all of them were in loving pairs.

Matcha continued holding the folder and smiled, "Boss, I saw the recording of your battle with Q-Sword a short while ago. You didn't lose unjustly. It's just like Drunken Spear had said, the skills that Q-Sword uses originate from the Pulse Break Style. Of the three main battle styles, that's the strongest. It's also the hardest to control. I never would have thought that Q-Sword, that master was willing to lower his head and study the Pulse Break Style."

I stopped the car and exclaimed, “Matcha, how do you know it was the Pulse Break Style?”

“Because I’ve studied it before!”

Matcha bit her lip and said, “Ever since Little Demon disappeared, there wasn’t anyone who could perfectly control the Pulse Break Style. And so, as the battle styles progressed, the Drunken Sword Style became the ruler. Boss, look at these...”

As she said that, Matcha opened up the file. The documents were covered with drawings of little people practicing fighting positions and maneuvers. It was incredibly detailed and precise. Besides that, it was exactly the events that occurred during the fight between Q-Sword and I. As I looked at this, I was even more stunned, “Matcha, you....”

Matcha smiled, “I’ve studied the Pulse Break Style too. I’ve seen a lot of the recordings of Little Demons battles. To be honest, after looking at BOSS getting beaten up by Q-Sword, I wasn’t too happy and so I went to do some research. First off, let me show BOSS where he lost!”

I nodded, “Ok, go ahead!”

At that moment, I was starting to truly feel that Matcha was the most fit to be our strategist. Now that I was looking at it, she truly had a solid grip on battles. She was even able to discern the different moves used in a high level battle.

Pointing at the pictures, Matcha continued, “First, is when you activated [Fierce Ice Blade]. [Fierce Ice Blade] is an attack that takes the shape of a long spear. And so, Q-Sword used his own blade to ram into the point of the long spear, causing it to slow down. Afterwards, he gave it another strong push in its weak point and so Boss, you didn’t notice. Q-Swords foot placements were also incredibly precise. It was only with that positioning that he was able to reach the correct amount of force and the correct angle. The three minor moves allowed him to interrupt your [Fierce Ice Blade]. Afterwards when you used [Wind Blade] with your Nation Suppressing Sword. At the time, your Nation Suppressing Sword was a Demon Harvest Equipment, and so Q-Sword knew that he couldn’t beat you in terms of strength. There was also no way that he could decrease your speed or force through his maneuvers. And so, he decided

to use the force of his body to knock the Nation Suppressing Swords's [Wind Blade] off angle. Afterwards, he used the force of the ram to hit the origin of the strength in your attacks—your arm. Once he knocked away your arm, he [Wind Blade] was also interrupted. Boss, did you know? In the recordings of your battle, the way you use [Fierce Ice Blade] and [Wind Blade] had been examined by Q-Sword at least a hundred times. It's only like this that he's able to so readily understand every detail in your moves."

I quietly leaned against the seat. I thought back to the battle and suddenly had a moment of enlightenment. It was just as Matcha had said. The difficulty of Q-Sword's Pulse Break was far above my own!

I turned around to look at Matcha and took a deep breath, "What do I do to counter the Pulse Break Style?"

Matcha smiled, "The Pulse Break Style is a type of battle method that occurs afterwards. There's no way to counter it. Unless you use the Pulse Break Style as well. You'd also have to be a better master at it than the other. But, that's a bit hard."

I grit my teeth, "Then how should I practice the Pulse Break Style?"

Matcha grinned, "Dummy boss. Did you think that this Pulse Break Style is some Defeat the Dragon Eighteen Palm Strikes\*? Actually, the Pulse Break style is a type of battle method. You attack after the enemy to counter their attacks. The Pulse Break is used to deal with the enemy's attacks. Afterwards, you dash out to avoid the enemy's counterattack. The Pulse Break Style's most important principle is either you don't attack, or you strike the most critical points. Otherwise, you're just waiting for the enemy to make their first move and then interrupt their pattern."

\*TL Note: A reference to a famous martial arts style from Jin Yong's *She Diao Ying Xiong Zhuan*

"Then what do I do...." I smiled, "I can't just get a beating every time I see Q-Sword, now can I?"

Matcha stuck out her 34Cs and smiled, "Well you can't. I won't stand seeing boss getting bullied by others Don't worry, I've looked through the forums and found a few methods of the Pulse Break Style. One of them is actually a book

that was written by Little Demon herself. After looking at these, you should know how to deal with Q-Sword. At least when you see him, you won't be at too much of a disadvantage! I've already sent the documents to your game mail box. Boss, how do you plan on thanking me?"

"I'll take you to hot pot!"

"Ok...."

# Chapter 629 Qualified Girlfriend

In the evening around six, we met up at the hot pot restaurant outside of the university.

A boiling pot of broth sat in the middle of the table. Tonight, Wan Er invited quite a few people with us. There was the four of us, Tang Qi, Dong Cheng, and Qing Wen. Matcha was also invited. So there was a total of six people. We all sat around the hot pot and began discussing some game business—

Dong Cheng said, “Brother Xiao Yao lost to Q-Sword today, but it wasn’t too bad. At least you managed to get the reward from the Magic Dragon, so it wasn’t too great of a loss, right?”

I nodded, “Yup.”

Wan Er said, “Then what did you do with the Sacred Heaven Sword?”

I smiled, “I fused it with my Dragon Reservoir Sword, upgrading it to a Demon Harvest Weapon.”

“Eh! A Demon Harvest weapon?” The little miss’ mouth widened, “The Demon Harvest Weapons all have a number. How much is the Dragon Reservoir Sword’s?”

“0007. Why, what’s up with it?”

“Idiot, the number on the equipment means that there’s a limit to the number of Demon Harvest Equipments. From the looks of that number, there should be a total of 10,000 Demon Harvest Weapons in the entire server. And your Dragon Reservoir Sword is ranked seventh among all ten thousand. I’ve looked into this. The Nation Suppressing Sword that Q-Sword got has a really high attack power, however it’s number 1028 in the Demon Harvest Equipments. This means that the Nation Suppressing Sword’s stats are far weaker than your Dragon Reservoir.”

I was startled, “So there was actually something like that?”

Wan Er grinned, “Of course....”

Matcha bit her lip and said frustratingly, “Hmph, during the battle in the Magic Dragon’s Nest, boss was the only one there from [Zhan Long]. Otherwise, how would he let Q-Sword take off with the Nation Suppressing Sword? It really isn’t nice, having so many people try to PK boss. They actually dare to spread the recording and say that boss had been beaten by Q-Sword.”

I rubbed my nose, “A loss is a loss. It’s nothing. The battle skills that Q-Sword used truly are strong.”

Wan Er looked into my eyes and smiled, “There you go, the character of a hero is one who can accept both wins and losses... however, Q-Sword now has a full suit of equipment for defense and health. Plus, he has a total of 22.4% in [Drain] effects. These are the typical warrior equipments. Other than that, to think that he would use such an intricate and complicated skill. This person is truly a terrifying enemy.”

I nodded, “Yup. Next time when we’re battling in the wilderness, us [Zhan Long] players must be more cautious when we see Q-Sword. Don’t fight him one on one. I’m afraid that right now, there isn’t a single player on par with him.”

Dong Cheng smiled, “Yup. Besides, we even have one of Q-Sword’s helpers at the table right now.....”

Tang Qi embarrassingly raised his bowl and said into it. “That... during the Magic Dragon’s Nest battle, I didn’t attack at all. Even when he entered into the range for the [Hexagram]. Besides, Q-Sword really has been using superb battling techniques to deal with Li Xiao Yao. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have spent half a month pouring over the details of the main battle styles.”

Dong Cheng tilted her head and looked at me, “Brother Xiao Yao, how do you plan on countering Q-Sword? Who knows, maybe [Vanguard]’s Jian Feng Han, [Prague]’s Yan Zhao Warrior and [Legend]’s Lu Chun Yang are also thinking of how to counter him.

I nodded, “Mhm. The recording of Q-Sword beating me had already turning viral. Sooner or later, Pulse Break Style was going to become the mainstream battling tactic. The rhythm in this game was extremely fast. There wasn’t enough time to stop or take a step back. I’m going to need to spend time

studying the intricacies of the Pulse Break Style...”

Wan Er smiled, “The requirements to execute the Pulse Break Style are very high. You must have top notch speed and reaction time. Only expert players can truly make the split second decisions that are necessary. Otherwise, the Pulse Break Style will only be a cumbersome tactic. Although, Pig, you have a good reaction time and your Twin Sword Play gives you more room for maneuvers. Learning the Pulse Break Style is a good idea. Eh... Sister, why aren’t you saying anything?”

Qin Wen held up a lamb roll and smiled, “I don’t understand anything you guys are talking about. No worries, you keep on talking. I’ll just focus on the food!”

“Alright then....”

.....

After we finished eating dinner, we sent Matcha back to the office and returned home.

By the time we reached the apartment, it was already eight o’clock at night. I logged onto the game and began to study the details of the Pulse Break Style. If it was as Matcha had said, then I wouldn’t need to understand the entire thing. All I have to do is get a basic understanding, so that I won’t be at such a disadvantage like I was this afternoon.

“Shua!”

When I logged on, I appeared in the Eastern Plaza of Tian Ling City. I first took out a stack of the Dragon Spit Grass in my bag and began to make them into pills. Not long after, I heard a bell ring. As I had predicted, I was the first to reach Level 12——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, you’re [Medicine Refinement] has leveled up! Because you are the first player to reach Heavenly Tier Level 2, you have received a reward——Charm +15

.....



Good, I got 15 points of charm too.

After that, I stopped focusing on my [Medicine Refining] and quickly went to check on my inbox. There were 4000+ emails in it. About 50% were from players trying to meet with me. There were even some girls wanting to hook up. I ignored all of them. There were even some from players in [House of Prestige] and [Flying Dragon] that were cursing at me. When I scrolled to my newest messages, I finally found a group that came from Matcha. When I opened it up, I saw that there was a total of seven documents attached. I downloaded all of them.

There were several documents that detailed the personal accounts of players who practiced the Pulse Break Style. They were all from at least a year ago. After all, besides Little Demon, there was practically no one else who had such a complete handle on the Pulse Break Style. And, after Little Demon left, that also meant that there wasn't anyone left who was an expert.

As I continued looking, I finally found the account from Little Demon. I sat down against a wall and leaned my Dragon Reservoir against myself. Relaxed, I sat there and began to read through the content. All in all, the Pulse Break Style was a technique, but it was also a process of immersing the user into the game. There were a total of four steps—

Judgement, The Pulse Break Style dictates that the user must understand the enemy and every detail of their combat style. Only then can the user accurately determine how to interrupt their skill.

Movement, this refers to moving into the right position and angle. This way, the user can place themselves in the most optimal position for maneuvers.

Clarity, this describes the time between the user's understanding and the moment the attack initiates. The moment to interrupt it is but a blink of an eye and only lasts while the enemy is 70-90% powered up for the skill. That is when the chance to interrupt the skill is the highest.

Attack, this is the most critical step. Victory and defeat is determined in this one move. Control over the attack timing was extremely important. That was the key point in the Pulse Break Style. Otherwise, it has no importance before any high level players. In that situation, whoever attacks first becomes

disadvantaged.

.....

As I read on, I saw that after Little Demon's written documents, there were also diagrams depicting examples. One of the pictures drew out a diagram of all of the important artery points and muscles in a person. The opponent's swordplay, punches, and kicks could actually all be interrupted. All attacks struck precisely at the enemy's weak points, increasing the chances of interrupting the skill.

I was an expert in terms of how these muscles twist and move. After training under the old geezer for so many years, I'd picked up a few things. However, my previous understanding wasn't for defeating an enemy, but rather killing them. Furthermore, I could easily see that Little Demon also didn't fully understand the acupuncture points and had made some minor mistakes. But, that couldn't be helped. After all, she wasn't a doctor. Her understanding was enough to make her undefeatable in the virtual world.

After reading the material for a long time, a full four hours passed by. It was already midnight.

I suddenly looked up and took a deep breath. There were just too many extraordinary things in the world. Who would've thought that one could learn so much about the intricacies in battle while playing a game.

"Di!"

I received a message from my beautiful future girlfriend the little miss, "How's your research going? I'm going to sleep soon...."

I replied, "Ok. I'll go to sleep later..."

"Take a break, go to the Great Hall in the Dragon's Den. We can duel each other there. I'll be your pretend enemy...."

"Ok!"

Wan Er really was very considerate. I raised my sword and began activating the teleport. In the next moment, I appeared in the Dragon's Den. Not far from there, I could see Chi Yu Han training a group of soldiers. Chi Yu Qing sat on the

edge of the observation deck, letting her legs swing in the air. I could hear her saying, “Those people over there, you go and move the boulders. Don’t be lazy.”

I didn’t bother greeting them and headed straight for the Great Hall. “Shua!” I entered the great doors and saw that Wan Er was already waiting for me with her daggers in hand. She smiled as I walked in, “How is it? Do you think that the lecture Matcha gave you helped?”

I nodded, “Mhm. At the least it should be useful.”

“Then come at me. Let’s start from the first step...” Wan Er sent out an invite to a duel. Afterwards, she smiled. “I’ll attack you with [Blade of the Death God]. Let’s see if you can interrupt it or not.”

“Ok!”

I got into position and quietly stood there. I could see Wan Er aiming her dagger at me. Her slight figure suddenly charged at me. Both of her daggers began to glow with the red energy from the [Blade of the Death God]. “Shua Shua Shua” The three attacks flew out!

It was too fast!

I raised my Zhen Yue Sword to block, ramming it into the center of Wan Er’s left dagger. I then made a sidestep and pushed my Dragon Reservoir Sword. “Peng!” sparks flew from the clash. Wan Er’s [Blade of the Death God] had shifted slightly, but it still pierced through my Hidden Dragon Armor. I then crossed my swords and “Keng!” I blocked the second attack. I retreated several steps and took the third hit.

Wan Er stood still and smiled, “Pighead, that isn’t right. The second step was a block. As for the first step, that seemed a little like the Break Pulse Style. But, it was a little slow. Again!”

“Ok!”

The second time we tried, Wan Er used the exact same attack and dealt three attacks at once from [Blade of the Death God]. This time, I was prepared. The beautiful little miss’ [Blade of the Death God] could be completed in one second. Each attack was 0.3 seconds long. That meant that I had 0.2 seconds to

find the loophole. Otherwise, it would be too late.

I emptied my mind and time seemed to slow down in that moment. I watched Wan Er's figure charge at me. My Zhen Yue Sword slightly shuddered. Within 0.2 seconds, I rammed it into the center of the left dagger. Then, I let out my Dragon Reservoir Sword. But instead of an attack, I shifted into a block. "Keng Keng", both strikes from Wan Er's [Blade of the Death God] had been interrupted. However, the third attack was coming. I remained calm and slid forward. Then, with a leap, I leaned backward and kicked Wan Er's wrist!

"Keng!"

The second strike had been interrupted. However, Wan er wasn't some noob and so she immediately leaned forward and threw a kick. "Peng!" she knocked me over and the third strike from the [Blade of the Death God] flashed by my neck. She grinned and took back the strike, saying, "Pig, for the sake of the Pulse Break Style, are you planning on giving up even the most basic defenses? If it was like that, then even if the Pulse Break succeeded, you would still be beaten to death by the opponent...."

I slowly crawled up from the ground and rubbed my nose with a grin, "Again!"

"Ok."

# Chapter 630 Autonomous Team

6 a.m. Morning again.

“Keng!”

Sparks rose around us in the Great Hall of the Dragon’s Den. My Zhen Yue Sword and Dragon Reservoir Sword unleashed two consecutive strikes to forcibly break the first hit of Wan Er’s [Blade of the Death God]. Simultaneously, I suddenly looked behind, and used my knee to heavily break apart her second attack. My Dragon Reservoir Sword also flashed at the same time, and it struck the tip of her blade on the third attack. My cloak flew upwards, and I relaxed my body as I avoided her strike and smashed my sword hilt on to the little miss’ right shoulder. Immediately, Wan Er let out an “Ah” sound when I struck a cluster of nerves and I broke through her third attack!

“Wu...”

Wan Er consecutively retreated several steps. I ran out and caught her slender waist. And asked, “Are you ok?”

“Yup.”

Wan Er stood up and massaged her arm. After that, she looked at me and smiled: “Pig, you managed to break through the three consecutive strikes of [Blade of the Death God] after one night only. You’re truly not simple...”

I face palmed and laughed: “Of course! Or else, how could I be fit for our unrivaled Wan Er!”

“Is that true?” She naughtily laughed: “Then do you want to go again one more time?”

“Sure!”

During the Nth duel that night, Wan Er still charged over as before. But, in the instant that she approached me, she ingeniously slid her feet, moving her to the side by 0.5 meters. She activated [Blade of the Death God] from my flank. Its speed was too fast, and the time that I had to respond to it was also less. But, I

still managed to quickly determine the angle and force. Without a second thought, I swung both of my swords. “Keng keng” I broke the first attack. However, it was too late for me to block the second and third attacks. All I could do was attempt to weakly block the attacks. Moreover, I couldn’t block it at all, and took damage twice. The beautiful little miss was too evil, she was using different maneuvers...

“How is it?”

With one hand on her hip and the other flicking her dagger, she smiled, “You big idiot...once I slightly maneuvered, you weren’t even close to blocking it at all. Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han aren’t idiots. Their angles and strength will slightly change during every attack. Your Pulse Break Style is much more difficult than getting health insurance.”

I nodded my head deep in thought: “Yup, but...it’s already 7 o’clock, it seems that there’s class today...”

“Yeah, and it’s also a compulsory class...”

“Are you going?”

“I’m going. Do you think I’m class-skipper like you?”

“Haven’t you skipped class a few times too? Go wake that other class-skipper up. We’ll go to class together...I’m gonna go wash up a bit, then we’ll head to class after eating breakfast together. You also have to wake those chefs up, they probably don’t know that we’re going to class today...”

“Fine...”

That afternoon, less than 50% of the spots were filled up in the big lecture theatre. The old professor stood on the platform at the front of the class and talked about the changes in culture in Cao Yuzhang’s three history books, while spitting saliva. Dong Cheng stuck out her tender chest as she leaned onto her textbook, fully concentrated on the lecture. On the other hand, Wan Er was leaning her head on Dong Cheng’s shoulder, her beautiful eyes squinted as she tried to take a nap. Every few minutes, she would open her right eye to see if anything had happened. After seeing that the old professor wasn’t looking at her, she would narrow her eyes and sleep like a beautiful little lazy cat.

I rested on the seat, and daydreamed. Not long after, Tang Gu who was sitting behind me jabbed my back, and whispered: “Idiot, you’re snoring...”

I was startled and woke up: “Impossible, I’m such a cultured and refined youngster, how could I snore while I’m sleeping?”

Tang Qi grinned, “Mother f\*cker, don’t tease him...”

Dong Cheng pushed off Wan Er who was on her shoulder, and said: “My arm’s sore. Brother Xiao Yao, take your family’s Cang Tong away...”

I was speechless. I extended my arm out, and Wan Er narrowed her eyes and looked at me. A beautiful smile appeared on the corner of her mouth, as she hugged my arm. She then hugged me like a little cat and slept again. This intimate action immediately made the surrounding group of pursuers green in the face. They were all clenching their fists, wanting to buy a shotgun and kill me from 50 meters away.

Tang Gu was feeling so sour that he was about to rage quit. He pointed at Wan Er who was in my embrace, and let out an ‘Ah ah ah’ sound. But he didn’t do anything more than that, because I had already raised my right arm. Tang Gu already knew that he couldn’t beat me. A wise man knows better than to fight when the odds are against him. He could only rub his nose and say: “This world is truly unfair, letting the pig get the good things...”

Dong Cheng giggled: “The nickname of Pig for our Brother Xiao Yao...seems to be fitting. However, I actually feel that, within this class, the male student that can match with our Wan Er is only this pig Brother Xiao Yao. If it was another man, then that would be casting pearls before a swine....”

Tang Gu’s entire body trembled: “Beautiful Dong Cheng, are you secretly mocking me?”

Dong Cheng innocently spread out her hands: “Nope, I’m only slapping your face in front of you...”

Tang Qi rubbed his face: “Why do I feel like I’m being shot by a gun..”

The group of male students behind us all said: “We all feel like we’ve been shot! Brother Tang Qi, let’s all gang up on that brat Li Xiao Yao! We know that you’ve trained yourself!”

Tang Qi laid on the table, narrowing his eyes, as he prepared to sleep. He lazily said: “Don’t be noisy, I’ve tried. I couldn’t beat him.”

Wan Er opened her drowsy eyes: “Don’t be so noisy, your voice is louder than the teacher. Are you going to let us sleep...”

At that moment, the old professor also pushed his glasses up, and said: “Hey, front row, please reduce your speaking voices. Don’t wake up the sleeping students in the back row. Everyone must respect each other.”

Dong Cheng: “...”

It was almost noon. The ring of the bell that signified the end of class woke Wan Er up, and at the same time, huge waves were also raised inside the classroom. A group of male students were excitedly shouting over there.

“What are they doing?” Dong Cheng was somewhat astounded.

Tang Gu replied: “I’ll go ask!”

In the end, Tang Gu ran back after half a minute, with a face full of excitement as he said: “After 72 hours, the preliminaries for the Hero’s Wings tournament is going to start! China has 3 spaces available for teams!”

“So it’s this...” I faintly smiled.

Wan Er rubbed her eyes: “Pig, let’s go eat.”

I nodded my head: “Alright.”

Tang Gu: “Why are you guys not excited at all!”

Wan Er pulled my arm and took me out the door, as she said: “Pig, we’ll go register in the afternoon.”

“Sure...”

Tang Gu: “...”

.....

Around 1 o’clock in the afternoon, we returned to our small villa and walked upstairs. Let’s prepare to register ourselves!

“Swoosh!”



I appeared in Tian Ling City, and I heard the sound of a bell echo out once I stepped in--

“Ding!”

System Notification: Respected players, you have already fulfilled the requirements for participating in the Hero’s Wings tournament. The registration will end after 71 hours. Quickly choose 4 powerful companions to participate in this journey of the Hero’s Wings that is filled with passion and hot blood! Maybe, if the God of Fortune descends on you, you can also hold up the trophy of the Hero’s Wings!

OK, as expected, I could already register. Let’s immediately gather companions!

Within the [Zhan Long] guild, it was also unusually lively. Everyone was chatting about assembling a team.

Li Mu: “D\*mm\*t, team this team that. Fine, we’ll just go as the General Family...Me, Wang Jian, Bai Qi, Lian Po, and we’ll just take Thousand League Spring...”

Wolf: “Whoa don’t, don’t snatch younger sister Spring...”

Bai Qi: “Little Wolf you bastard, when was she your younger sister Spring...”

I said: “Stop fighting, stop fighting. Talk it over nicely...”

Wolf cunningly laughed: “That’s fine. We’ll give Thousand League Spring to you guys. My group will be Matcha, Old K, Yue Wei Liang, and Dancing Forest. It’s quite powerful...”

Dancing Forest: “Oh, I have a team, how nice...”

Fox: “F\*cker, so you’re mercilessly throwing me away like this...”

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands laughed: “Glass Fox, just come over to my team. We already have me, Moon Feather, Tang Xin, and One Second Hero.”

Fox: “Sure!”

Li Meng Yao said: “Brother, brother!”

Me: “Yup, Meng Yao?”

Meng Yao: “If I can also get to Level 100 for the competition. How about I join sister Yue Yao Yan’s team?”

“Fine, then that’s settled!”

“Yup yup...”

.....

I closed the guild chat. Anyway, [Zhan Long]’s first team was already confirmed. I immediately started building the team. The four beauties Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Qing Qian, and Darling Duck entered the team in succession. After we were all in, I laughed: “OK, next, I have to bring the four great beauties from [Zhan Long] to the journey of the Hero’s Wings. Where do we go to sign up?”

Wan Er replied: “There’s a Special NPC for the Hero’s Wings tournament in the east gate’s plaza. We can register there after paying the fee.”

“Alright. Then quickly come over!”

“Okay!”

After a few minutes, the 4 beautiful girls from my team appeared. This east gate’s plaza was so full that even water couldn’t pass through it. The huge amount of players that gathered here to register came on like an endless stream.

I extended my hand out and held on to Wan Er’s little hands. I pulled her, and brought Dong Cheng, Qing Qian, and Darling Duck, these few beautiful ladies along with me. We forced our way into the crowd, and could finally speak to the NPC. We chose to register for the preliminary rounds of the Hero’s Wings tournament. Our levels fulfilled the requirements for registering. Every person gave a fixed amount of gold coins, and there was immediately a System Notification: Congratulations, your team has successfully registered! Please immediately enter your team name!

Dong Cheng laughed: “What name should we call our team?”

Wan Er: “Simple, let’s just call it Team Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Anyway, Pig is the team leader. We’re following him.”

Qing Qian nodded her head and laughed: “Good idea! Brother Xiao Yao is the

soul of our team!”

And so, I entered the four words Xiao Yao Zi Zai. The system immediately confirmed my team name. OK, everything is ready. Let’s just wait for the preliminaries to officially start 3 days later.

# Chapter 631 Pangu Abyss

The next morning, I woke up early.

In the hall of the 2nd level, Wan Er was sitting quietly while holding a brand new notebook. She was looking over the maps of Tian Ling City and Ba Huang City. Beside her sat Dong Cheng who was playing on her phone.

I walked forward and took a seat, saying, “Are there any activities today?”

“Yes there is!” Wan Er pointed at the computer screen and said, “Li Mu and Qian Qian have already decided for themselves. They are going to mobilise a hundred-man team to clear the high level maps in Ba Huang City. They plan to improve everyone’s equipments and levels before the Hero’s Wings Cup starts. En, the area they have decided to go to is Pangu’s Abyss which is at the east side of Ba Huang City.....”

“Pangu’s Abyss?”

“En.....” The beautiful elder sister laughed as she nodded her head. “Ba Huang City’s Map still has a lot of high level areas we haven’t even set foot in. This Pangu’s Abyss was newly released after the opening of Tian Ling City, which is why Li Mu and Qing Qian chose this place. Why don’t you join them too? With you, everyone’s killing rate will increase at least a little. The average level of the monsters at Pangu’s Abyss is around level 125 while our average levels aren’t even roughly close to level 106. That’s why you definitely have to go.”

I stood up and went to heat up some milk and said, “ Sure. At the same time, I’ll keep tabs on [Prague], [Vanguard] and some other guilds. Let’s try to keep the information that we will be grinding at Pangu’s Abyss a secret. As of now, [Zhan Long] has been marked by a lot of guilds and I don’t want any more time on issues that crop up on the side.”

Dong Cheng gently laughed, “Don’t worry about that. There’s no one in Ba Huang City who would dare raise a hand against us. Our main enemies will be [House of Prestige], [Flying Dragon] and [Thousand Burial]. [House of Prestige] is a guild of Jiu Li City, and so for the most part, they won’t come all the way to

Ba Huang City to make trouble for us. As for [Flying Dragon] and [Thousand Burial] um, let them come if they want. They'll just be delivering experience and equipments."

I couldn't help but break into laughter, "Yo. Sister Dong Cheng, where'd you get all that confidence?"

Dong Cheng raised her elegant eyebrows and replied, "Hmph, that's a for sure. Those guys are lousy fighters!"

Wan Er smiled and suddenly said, "Pig, did you know that there's a Hero's Stage arena next to the Eastern Gate Plaza?"

"Hero's Stage?"

"....."

I blankly shook my head, "Nope, I've been to Tian Ling City for the past two days, I've been rushing here and there, I didn't even notice anything. What exactly is the ...."

Wan Er explained, "It is just an area for players to self-initiate a single-elimination open tournament. Whenever there is a player who wants to go up to create a battle, he has to first pay a certain amount of gold. Every challenger would then have to pay 10% of the total prize pool to earn the right to challenge. So the longer you stay in the arena, the more rewards you will earn. I heard that last night, Misty Clouds stood on the arena for over 3 hours. In the end, he brought away close to 70,000 Gold..."

I trembled a bit, "What! That much?"

Dong Cheng leaned over and giggled, "Has our cheap Xiao Yao Brother, finally been moved to action?"

I thought about it, shook my head and answered, "Never mind. I'm not moved by this."

Wan Er's pair of pretty eyes stared straight into my heart as she looked into my eyes. She couldn't help but laugh softly, "Pig, you're scared to meet Q Sword and Fang Ge Que, these high-level players, and end up wasting all of your effort right?"

I laughed awkwardly, “What are you even thinking about? Am I such a person to be so easily terrified? I was just thinking, just let those frontline high level players go earn some money. As the guild master of [Zhan Long], I won’t go to join in the fun but if let’s say Q-Sword were to enter the arena and start a challenge, I will be very happy to challenge him and see whether or not my third-rate Pulse Break Style will be able to contend against his third-rate Pulse Break Style!”

Dong Cheng agreed, “En, that’s our Li Xiao Yao. How can we let Q Sword affect our confidence? If we have the opportunity, we should go! Even if there isn’t one, we should create one and go!”

I was expressionless. “How come that doesn’t sound like it means what it sounds like it means.....”

.....

After breakfast, I skipped classes and went online to grind at Pangu’s Abyss!

“Slash!”

I appeared in Tian Ling City, and went to repair my equipment and refilled my cards and potions from the storehouse. Afterwhich, I messaged Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Yue Qing Qian, Li Mu, Song Han and the other core members of [Zhan Long]. A group of seventeen people appeared next to the warehouse manager. They all looked at me and asked, “Brother Xiao Yao, what’s the matter?”

I started taking out some Level 11 Dragon Spit Pills. I held one up in front of my eye and said, “Heavenly Tier Level 1 pills. Each person is to take 30 and use them when fighting BOSSes or during PKs. It’s best for each of you to keep five with you at all times. Leave the rest for the Hero’s Wings Cup. This way, we’ll hold an advantage when PKing and as we don’t have too much stock, we get to save a little too!”

Li Mu was stunned. “Level 11 Pills? What the hell? ..... There are really level 11 Pills.....”

Wang Jian responded, “Don’t make a big fuss. When Dragon City killed Lin Han, brother Xiao Yao already had level 11 herbs. .... I heard that level 11 pills have started to appear in [Hero’s Mound], [Legend] and [House of Prestige] as

well.”

Ran Min rubbed his nose, “The speed at which these monsters train their [Medicine Refinement] is really fast.....”

I grinned. “Actually, I’m already at level 12 of [Medicine Refinement]. I just can’t find any level 12 resources.”

Wan Er carefully put away the potions, and raised her dagger as she reminded us, “Ok, let’s stop wasting time and teleport to Ba Huang City. We will be going from Ba Huang City to Pangu’s Abyss. I’ve already arranged for some people to stand guard at the entrance of Pangu’s Abyss. Either way, we better hurry and not let the other guilds be the early birds to steal our worm. It is rare that we’re the first to find such a high level map.

I nodded and replied, “Ok, let’s go!”

We quickly made our way to the teleportation portal and went to Ba Huang City. Each of us followed closely behind one another while I swept a glance towards the Hero’s Arena in the far distance. On the stage, there were two players battling it out, both of whom seemed to come from Jiu Li City. Around the stage, there were players numbering in the hundreds watching the match. The prize pool seemed to have accumulated to 5700 gold coins. Currently, the gold to RMB exchange rate was about 1:1. This 5700 RMB should be enough to lure those top tier high level players to join. All these second-rate players should be rather content.

“Shua!”

After teleporting to Ba Huang City, I summoned my Flying Scythe War Horse and Ancient Heavenly Tiger. A group of [Zhan Long] Elites could be seen with the guild insignia glowing on our shoulders. At this moment, the formidable [Zhan Long] crests merged together into one. The Heavy Armor Squad participating in today’s activity were all clad in the same uniform and had their own mounts. Together with the leather armored squad and the cloth armored squad, all of the players were 5th advancement players and all had their 5th advancement skills. This scene immediately made all players under level 100 in Ba Huang City raise their eyebrows. All of them stunned beyond words.

“Hey look. The main force of [Zhan Long] is there..... Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Cang

Tong, Cang Yue, General Li Mu, Yue Qing Qian, their whole core team is there. Where could they be going? I almost thought that they were going to abandon Ba Huang City. Who would have thought they would be the first to come back and visit us.....”

“Nonsense, they are probably here to clear some map? Isn’t the Hero’s Wings Cup about to start? The members of [Zhan Long] certainly aren’t going to stay idle right, especially their main force?

“I say, Cang Tong really has a nice figure, if only I could cop a feel.....”

“Get lost! So vulgar..... I don’t wish to touch this goddess, just a kiss would be enough.”

.....

My Flying Scythe War Horse galloped across the cobblestone and I was the first to rush out of the Eastern Gate of Ba Huang City. The players outside the city had noticeably decreased but there was still a constant influx of new players. All the level 20-100 players have to start from here before advancing to the higher levelled maps. With the continuous game hype, this main city will always be popular.

Looking behind me, our team set-up was very logical. Be it defense, attack or healing, we all had a complete set. In seconds, we formed 5 teams. The 5 man team I was in was also the same team that I would participate in Hero’s Wings Cup with. I guess this was good too, as we could improve our teamwork. Looking at how the final fight in the five matches of the Hero’s Wings Cup would be a 5v5, whenever the score became 2:2, the final 5v5 match would become very crucial.

Our party entered the jungle and passed through the Nightmare Plains. This was also my first genuine experience here in the Nightmare Plains. From afar, at the centre of the field, there was a lone towering city. It was [Vanguard]’s city, called Lone Blade City. The whole city was desolate and rugged, and was seemingly built out of a pile of stones. This Lone Blade City was truly vivid, looking exactly like a lone blade sticking out of the field.

Around Lone Blade City, there were at least 2,000 [Vanguard] players bustling about. After taking the city, they were not idle. I decided to lead the [Zhan



Long] players to travel around the border of the area. We came here to clear maps and I definitely did not wish to spend my time on them.

“The mounted troops squads are certainly nice.....”

Wan Er pursed her red lips as she looked forward at some knight players crazily running about. “With a mount, their moving very fast.....”

Dong Cheng nodded. “En.....”

I couldn’t help but laugh and pulled my reins. I then turned around, and stretched my open hand to Wan Er, “Come, let me take you on a ride, little miss”

“Ah?”

Wan Er opened wide her small mouth, and her pretty oval shaped face immediately turned a shade of red. She then grabbed my open hand. “Swoosh” and I pulled her up onto the horse. When mounted, one could carry another passenger, male or female didn’t matter as there were no limits. Thus, there would definitely be the scene of many male players riding with other male players in the future. It couldn’t be helped.

.....

However, whenever there was a passenger on the mount, fighting wasn’t possible. This small restriction therefore prevented cases like Zhao Yun saving the king type of legends. If one wants to fight, one has to place all their baggage on the ground.

After close to 20 minutes of riding, we entered the wilderness. Further forward, there were many historical sites and totems. Rays of holy light flooded the ground from the sky as though some ancient deity had descended into the human world. Wan Er sat in my bosom and she contently smile, “Pig, just 25 degrees east from north, we are roughly 1000 yards away from the entrance of Pangu’s Abyss.”

“En!”

I urged my horse to gallop in that direction with the Ancient Heavenly Tiger and the Purple Kirin Dragon clearing the monsters in front. One of them was a

Demon Harvest Rank BOSS tier Pet while the other was a Divine Rank BOSS tier Pet, both with tyrannical strength. The monsters on the road were barely enough to faze them. Also, there were 98 other [Zhan Long] core members behind us sweeping across horizontally. We were like a roller, crushing over all the enemies on the road, proceeding quickly towards our destination.

.....

“Sha Sha.....”

The thicket shook a little as a wind elf archer flew out with her bow raised. She laughed as she exclaimed. “Vice-guild master, we, the [Zhan Long] members are the only ones here for now. No one else has ever come here before!”

# Chapter 632 No Entrance

“Ok, alright then....”

Wan Er left my arms and jumped off the horse. With a dagger in each hand, she smiled, “Thousand City, spread your people out and start grinding levels. We’re going to enter the Pangu's Abyss. Thank you for your hard work! You’re doing us a great favor by keeping watch for our main force!”

A Dream of a Thousand Cities nodded, “Yup, I understand. Don’t worry, leave it to me!”

I urged my horse forward. Only then did I notice a flaming curtain in front of us. I subconsciously furrowed my brows. I then pulled out my Demon Harvest Dragon Reservoir Sword and said, “What’s with these flames?”

A Dream of a Thousand Cities said, “Guildmaster, you’ve seen it. These flames deal a lot of damage to players. That’s the reason why we haven’t been able to enter Pangu's Abyss. I’m just a small archer and I don’t have a healer to recover my health. I wouldn’t dare try my luck getting through that.”

I smiled, “Interesting. Then I’ll leave the rest to you guys.”

A Dream of a Thousand Cities crossed her arms over her cute 32Bs and smiled determinedly, “Yep, for the sake of [Zhan Long]....”

I smiled, “Yes....”

Li Mu brought his horse over and smiled, “Guildmaster, don’t smile with so much lust...”

I was speechless.

Wan Er raised the Iron Umbrella and addressed the people behind her, “Prepare your potions. Everyone, gather together and we’ll enter it all at once. There’s a curtain of flames separating the Pangu's Abyss and us. It’s a test for players. Healers, use your area heals for support. Once anyone’s health drops below 50%, immediately drink a potion. Do not hesitate. That will be all. Line up in rows and prepare to enter. Pig, you lead the way.”

“Ok.”

My horse and I slowly walked forward. The flame curtain was only a few meters away from me. I could even feel the heat radiating off of it. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Matcha all had serious expressions on their faces. That’s right, when it’s time to be serious, then everyone would put forth their utmost concentration. My Flying Scythe War Horse neighed and I slowly continued forward. At that moment, the flames began to burn me. The damage was enough to instantly kill a player——

“2461 ! ”

“2461 ! ”

“2461 ! ”

The situation wasn’t too bad for me since I had a high magic defense. However, the [Zhan Long] players behind me weren’t bad either. At most, they lost around 4000 health per second. Under the heals of the healers, everyone could basically make it through without too much of a problem. The map ahead of us was a several hundred meter deep abyss. As we walked towards the center, One Second Hero activated [Fierce Sun Wall] to help protect everyone. This way, the players who were in critical health could immediately recover and safely pass through this trial.

“Sha sha....”

My horse began to quicken its step. I was the first to charge out of the flame curtain. Behind me, Li Mu, Qing Qian, and Wan Er all walked out afterwards. When Dong Cheng came out, she still had 100% of her health left. There was no other way, the [Mana Shield] for mages was just too incredible. Its durability was terrifying. The average players couldn’t break through it.

Less than five meters ahead of us was an enormous abyss. Flames rose up from the pit. The sky was dyed red from the smoke and heat. The radius of the abyss was at least 1000 yards long. Golden runes floated around the edges of the abyss in the sky, giving us the feeling that this map wasn’t for grinding, but rather made for the scenery.

I continued walking forward. When we were next to the abyss, I immediately

heard a bell beside my ear. The Map Notification was here——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Please Note, you have entered the Epic Tier Map——  
[Pangu’s Abyss]!

Introduction: Heaven and Earth were originally in a state of chaos. The entire world was one enormous primal chaotic mass. The hero Pangu was born from within the chaotic mass. Using his own battle axe, he cut through the chaos and finally split this mass. The top semisphere turned into air, while the bottom semisphere turned into the earth. Pangu continuously grew larger and turned into a hero that held up justice. After the earth and heavens split, Pangu finally tired himself to death. His breath turned into the clouds, his voice the thunder, his left eye the sun, his right eye the moon, and his spirit breathed life on earth. This Pangu’s Abyss is the abyss that he had created with his axe. Legend has it that the battle axe Pangu used had cracked after he split the heavens and the earth had one part of the axe fall within Pangu’s Abyss. Obtaining this piece gives one the opportunity to recreate a godly weapon. Since the ancient times, many humans have coveted this piece but have lost their lives within this abyss. Masses of strong magical beasts have been lured to this area by the godly power. The Pangu Abyss is nine floors deep and is the grave of all greedy men

After reading over the introduction of the map, Li Mu had a fiery expression in his eyes, “Pangu’s Axe?!”

I smiled, “Yup. Looks like there’s a chance we can recreate Pangu’s Battle Axe... however, the prerequisite is that we pass through this map. Don’t forget this map’s difficulty level is above ours... furthermore, it’s an Epic Tier map. Before this, we have never encountered a map like this....”

Wan Er smiled, “Either way, the opportunity is right in front of us. All that matters is whether or not we can grab onto it.”

Matcha rode over and blinked a few times as she glanced around, “But, how do we get down there? The Pangu Abyss is so deep. Just standing here, I can’t even see a single floor....”

I glanced downward as well, but all I could see was light reflecting off of the clouds. I could faintly hear the roar of a beast. However, I couldn’t see anything

from the entrance, so I sent out a command, “Everyone, spread out. Find the entrance into Pangu’s Abyss!”

“Yes sir!”

The hundred players from [Zhan Long] spread out. After searching for 20 minutes, we still couldn’t find anything. In the end, Wan Er squinted and said, “How about we do the usual. Tie some vines?”

I nodded, “Ok, let’s try it out!”

Wang Jian looked around and said, “All of the plants around Pangu Abyss have been burned to death. We can only find them outside. But....”

He walked to the border of the flames and picked up a plant and then threw it. “Ts ts” The vine was instantly burned by the flame. He spread out his arms and said, “Brother Xiao Yao, you’ve seen it. That won’t work. What do we do?”

I grit my teeth. I raised my hand and pulled my Zhen Yue Sword out. I then lept off my horse and said, “Then there’s no way. We’ll just have to go down by climbing and stabbing our weapons into the cliff. This map just doesn’t want to give us an easy way to enter!”

Li Mu and Wang Jian both got off their mounts. They pulled out their weapons. Even though they didn’t have Twin Blade Style. However, they could still climb without a problem with just a blade in one hand. The only problem was that their left hands didn’t have any attack power or stat increases.

Wan Er, Qing Qian, Matcha, and Yao Yan all pulled out their close combat weapons. Dong Cheng on the other hand could only stand there in frustration, “Then... then what should a cloth armor player like me do? We can hold swords, but our strength isn’t enough. We can’t stab it through the cliff!”

I smiled, “That’s easy, Every heavy armor player will take a cloth armor along with them....”

Dong Cheng smiled and dashed over. She then grabbed my collar and smiled, “Alright. How about I go with our guildmaster. No one can argue with that....”

I was a little embarrassed. I looked over to Wan Er. She grinned, “Pig, hurry up. Be careful, don’t drop Dong Cheng....”

“Ok!”

I leapt into the empty space. Then, with my left hand, “Keng!” I pierced my Zhen Yue Sword into the cliff. Then, with my Dragon Reservoir Sword, I crossed it with my Zhen Yue Sword and tried to climb downward. Above me, Wan Er was taking Darling Duck, while Li Mu took Thousand League, and Wang Jian took Thousand Suns. One after another, they slowly climbed down.

I turned around to look, but the fog in the abyss was too thick. I couldn’t see ten meters past. This was too frustrating. Dong Cheng tightly clung to me on my back. She pressed her snow white face on the crook of my neck and smiled, “Trying to take this opportunity to take advantage?”

I raised my hand and let out a Dragon’s Hook and increased the speed of our descent, “Dong Cheng, you’re the Number two most beautiful girl in Liu Hua University. Please be more dignified. If you’re like this, then all of the people crushing on you will be miserable!”

Dong Cheng giggled, “Who cares about them?”

I was nearly choked to death from her response. I quickly descended. After falling around 200 meters, I finally saw the first floor of Pangu’s Abyss. The stone path was red hot. There were crowds of ox headed people carrying battle axes as they roamed the area. There was one right below us. My Dragon Hook shuddered and I charged downward. I raised both of my swords and dealt a five attack [Combo]!

“Peng peng peng....”

Sparks flew and the Ancient Minotaur actually defended. It raised its leg for a kick, shattering my defense. I threw my blade and activated [Fierce Ice Blade]+ [Wind Blade]. Both passed through the Ancient Minotaur’s body. At the same time, I summoned my Ancient Heavenly Tiger God to assist. Tilting its head, it rubbed against Dong Cheng’s face. “Alright Dong Cheng, why don’t you come here and help me kill monsters....”

Dong Cheng leapt up and raised her staff, dealing an [Indigo Sea Arro]+ [Magma Lance]. This Level 115 Titan Tier Ancient Minotaur cried out. Under my [Combo] it fell to its knees. At the same time, it dropped a card. Not bad luck, I actually got one——

[Ancient Minotaur Card] :Increases the user's attack power and defense by 20%. Lasts 120 minutes. Required: Level 100+

The stats weren't bad. It would be useful for grinding monsters.

I looked up and saw Wan Er bring Darling Duck down. However, I heard Li Mu grunt, "Guildmaster, be careful. Ah Lei that kid accidentally fell..."

I was stunned. All I could see was a dark shadow start falling down. It was Dong Cheng Lei holding his battle axe. He was already diving down towards us. Without another word, I retreated several steps and then charged forward. "Shua!" I grabbed Dong Cheng Lei's arm and pointed my left arm at the cliff. I activated my Dragon's Hook, bringing the two of us swinging towards the wall. This way, Dong Cheng Lei wouldn't fall to his death.

"Hu..."

Despite Dong Cheng Lei's bravery, his face had turned purple with fear, "That rock really is too weak to even stand. I had actually broke it off. Thankfully, Brother Xiao Yao is fast. Otherwise, I would've been turned into a meat pancake..."

Before he even finished, another person fell. This time it was Fox. Wan Er activated [Hermit God's Arrival] to save him. This trek was incredibly dangerous.

When everyone was standing on the floor again, Wan Er exchanged glances with me. Looks like we don't have time to be idle.



# Chapter 633 Successful Skill Break

One after another, there were unending amounts of people who fell from above. Wan Er and I relied on our accurate judgement and sent the members from [Zhan Long] safely to the stone path. After almost 10 minutes, all 100 people were safely standing on the first level stone floor of Pangu's Abyss.

We began to battle. The opponent was a group of Level 115 Ancient Minotaur. For the top level players like Wan Er and me, this wasn't much. But for players like Fox and Moon Feather, they were slightly pressured. Fortunately, we had a sufficient amount of Healers. Within our 100 people, we had 20 Healers. This was good enough.

"Hong..."

The battleaxe's of the Minotaurs suddenly emanated raging flames. This was its main skill--[Blaze Assault]. They used the sharp point of their battleaxes to suddenly rush in and attack the opponent. This was also the Titan Tier monster's move that did the most damage. With a "Keng", a spark appeared on my chest armor, and simultaneously, I lost 3700+ health. After all, this was a Titan Tier monster. This move was already similar to a Hybrid Demon Level 1 Demon Hunter's [Rifle Ambush]

"Keng keng keng..."

On the stone path, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, and the other tank players were all attacked. Even Old K lost 14000+ health after taking the hit. His face turned green from fear, "Is this motherfxxker still a normal monster? Even the attacks of Hybrid Demons aren't much higher than this..."

Wang Jian horizontally raised his blade, preparing to parry. However, that wasn't enough to block the [Blaze Assault] of the Minotaurs. He couldn't help but exclaim, "I'm gonna faint, I can't even block it. The levels and strength of these monsters seems to be able to crush us..."

Wan Er laughed: "No matter, at least you won't be instantly killed. Hurry inside, the Pangu's Abyss has a total of 9 floors. I don't want to waste all three

days before the Hero's Wings in here."

"Yup yup..."

Everyone spared no effort to kill monsters. I made a conscious effort to focus on the details of the fight, especially on the [Blaze Assault] skill. The starting motions of the skill were very obvious, it was the moment when raging flames appeared on the battleax. The charging up period was roughly 0.5 seconds, and after that, it was the fierce attack. Basically, the current tier of players were unable to block this kind of attack, and their defense was also not enough.

"Hong..."

The raging flames once again appeared on the battleax of the Minotaur in front of me. My heart began to race and I began shifting my weight. I struck the handle of the battleax, with the hilt of my Zhen Yue Sword at the right time. After the Minotaur charged its skill up for 0.3 seconds, I smashed my Dragon Reservoir Sword into the middle of the axe. I could only hear a "Keng" sound, as the [Blaze Assault] still ferociously hit my shoulder, dealing another 3000+ damage to me.

My heart fell. Was this skill impossible to break? It shouldn't be...

Motherf\*cker, let's keep trying!

I tried it over and over again. Finally, I heard the sound of the Dragon Reservoir Sword collide against something, and the Minotaur's [Blaze Assault] was directly blown apart. The raging flames from the skill flew out, but didn't cause any damage. I took advantage of this, and used cut down this Minotaur while it only had half health left.

"Roar roar..."

Another two Minotaurs roared. They brandished their battleaxes and charged over. One was in front, and the other was behind. They activated [Blaze Assault] at the same time and their aggro was also locked on to me. Darling Duck couldn't help but shout, "Be careful, guild leader!"

Without a word, I stepped onto the scorching rock and dashed forward. I quickly whirled around, and my Zhen Yue Sword and Dragon Reservoir Sword swiftly dealt two consecutive blows on the battleax of the monster.

Immediately, a blue light swept past. This was the effect of a successful intercept. I felt a rush in my heart. Yup, it seems like I've already found the most accurate angle and opportunity against this [Blaze Assault]!

[Wind Blade] exploded, forcing the first Minotaur to retreat. Suddenly, I sped up and switched directions. With a "Swoosh", I evaded the second Minotaur. At the same time, I quickly and violently attacked with my twin swords. With two "Keng keng"'s, the blue light surged forth again. It was extremely dazzling, as I once again succeeded in interrupting its skill. Furthermore, big words appeared within the blue light: "Successful Skill Break".

"Huh?!"

This time, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, One Second Hero, Wolf, and the other people all saw it. Wolf was astounded and his jaw dropped, "My...my eyes aren't tricking me right? Brother Xiao Yao, what skill is this? Successful Skill Break...fxck, Brother Xiao Yao broke through the Minotaur's ferocious [Blaze Assault]?"

Wang Jian narrowed his eyes: "Successful Skill Break...is that the Pulse Break Style? In [Conquer], the words that appeared when there was a successful Pulse Break was Successful Skill Break too..."

Matcha happily smiled, and her eyes were full of astonishment: "Boss...Boss's very fast at comprehending..."

Wang Jian asked further: "Brother Xiao Yao, is that really the Pulse Break Style?"

I nodded my head, "It should be. Matcha gave me a few forum posts and tutorials that were related to the Pulse Break Style. I focused on a few. I never thought that there would really be a skill like this in the game. It's too profound. You can break the opponent's skill. As long as you can follow your opponent's attack speed, then your opponent will have no methods to counter it..."

Wan Er lightly laughed: "Yes, a real grandmaster of the Pulse Break Style won't let the opponent release any skills at all. After that, he'll completely block and resist all of the opponent's normal attacks. According to legend, during Little Demon's pinnacle, she could completely defeat an expert while still having full health!"

Me: “....”

One Second Hero rubbed his hands, and laughed, “Guild leader, can you share those tutorials with these brothers of yours?”

I looked towards Matcha: “Can I?”

A slightly awkward look appeared on Matcha’s face, but she laughed it off, and replied: “That’s fine. However, you can’t share everything with everyone. Just share one copy with the core members of the guild...Of course, I’ll say this first. Even if you have the tutorials, over 99% of people won’t be able to understand the essence of the style. The Pulse Break Style isn’t suitable for everyone. If you can’t master it, it may even affect your initial combat skill. The gains won’t make up for the losses...”

Wolf laughed, “No problem, we’re just trying it out...”

“Alright.”

.....

We continued killing monsters. I kept practicing, and finally, the success rate of my Skill Break on [Blaze Assault] exceeded 80%. Naturally, the most important factor of my success was because I had thoroughly studied this skill. Against other monsters, my Pulse Break Style was immediately useless. Of course, the Pulse Break skill was still very useful during PK. After all, basically everyone used the same common skills, and everyone knew the cooldown and targeting period of these skills. Once I’ve thoroughly researched the characteristics of every class’s skills, it wouldn’t be a mere dream for me to break every skill.

After continuous research, I began to finally submerge myself into the experience of the game. It was just as Matcha had said, I was a person that was infatuated with skills and techniques. I would definitely love the Pulse Break Style

.....

Time passed very fast, and within 2 hours, we had basically cleared all of the monsters in the first floor of the Pangu Abyss. Besides the large amounts of combat experience that we got, the drop of these Titan Tier monsters weren’t

too bad either. There were quite a few Emperor Weapons, Purple Weapons, and other equipments as well.

I received a message from A Dream of a Thousand Cities who was outside the map. The surroundings were very safe. [Vanguard], [Prague], [Flying Dragon], and the other guilds were all busy with their own business. Tian Ling City was also very tranquil. There were only 3 more days left until the Hero's Wings competition, and right now, no one was willing to waste time to PK. Levelling up once would increase the chances of victory by a bit. For this rare honour, everyone was working hard in separate corners of the world map. And this time, the 100 people that we brought were all core members of the guild, which meant that there was less danger of secrets leaking. As long as no one knew that the Pangu Abyss was hiding a fragment of Pangu's Axe, there would not be anyone who would come over to share a cup of soup with us.

We advanced even further, and we had already killed our way to the end of the first floor's map. A steep cliff appeared in front of us. When we looked downwards, it was the distant map of the second floor. At the end of the steep cliff, there was a stone sculpture standing there. It was at least 5 meters tall, and it was a Minotaur leader that was holding an enormous axe in its hands. It had a golden nose ring, and a faint bloody colour appeared below its feet. When Wolf, Old K and the others were about to approach, the rock began to peel away.

"Sha sha sha..."

As the rock fell to the ground, the armor worn by the Minotaur slowly started to appear. Furthermore, a few words slowly appeared above its head. After it let out a low growl, it shook off the Sealing Stones all over its body. A huge and fierce face looked at us, and it suddenly opened its mouth to let out an angry roar. After that, it brandished its battleaxe and charged at us.

I raised my sword to meet it, and at the same time, I shared the stats of the BOSS in the group chat of the hundred man team--

[Minotaur Chief•Li You] (Divine Tier BOSS)

Level: 115

Attack: 8900-11200

Defense: 9000

Health: 80000000

Skills: [Strength of a Beast] [Flame Axe] [Flame Tornado] [Rage of the Minotaur]

Introduction: Li You, the leader of the ancient Minotaur tribe. It possesses a natural strength. Even the enormous God Xingtian has praised it for its bravery and strength. After Pangu created the ten thousand things in the heavens and earth, Li You brought the Minotaur tribe into the Barbarian Tribes, and was finally stranded in Pangu's Abyss. After being enticed by the fragment of Pangu's Axe, it became avaricious and savage, pledging its life to protect Pangu's Abyss.

.....

“Forward!”

After giving the command, I withstood the battleax of the Minotaur Chief Li You. I could see the motion of the battle axe. It banged against my twin swords which had been crisscrossed. Sparks appeared, and the Flying Scythe War Horse below me let out a wail before retreating several steps. Sure enough, the attack stat of this boss was absolutely not something we players could withstand.

“Roar roar...”

Li You angrily roared, and a blood red light appeared on his body. It was [Strength of a Beast], which raised its attack power by 25%. Furthermore, it raised its battleax and used an AoE attack towards a crowd of people in the distance--[Flame Tornado]. Immediately, a group of Archers were hit. Dancing Forest and Lian Po managed to quickly evade it and weren't killed, but four others were instantly killed.

Dancing Forest raised her longbow, and shouted: “Quickly use [Scattered Shot] to stun it, and use [Rising Dragon Shot] to damage it! The defense of this BOSS is too high, I'm afraid that other skills won't hurt it at all!”

A group of Archers changed their attacks to [Rising Dragon Shot] to attack it. The effect of it was truly not bad.

“Roar...”

Li You continued wreaking havoc. My few attacks couldn't aggro it, and [Binding Chains] also MISSED. Li You brandished its battleaxe and suddenly swept outwards, causing a [Zhan Long] Swordsman to get sent flying, directly landing in the Abyss's fire sea. He turned into a ray of white light, and his corpse appeared on the stone path. He could still be revived, which was gratifying.

As long as we could revive, then there would be no problem. This meant that we could definitely clear this Pangu's Abyss. That fragment of Pangu's Axe would definitely belong to our [Zhan Long]!

## Chapter 634 - Strength of Li You

“Roar...”

The Minotaur Li You’s attack pattern was generally a roar followed by a skill. While roar was the same every time, the attack afterwards was always different. Facing the defensive perimeter created by the teamwork of Li Mu and I, the three meter long BOSS’s battleax trembled and began to hum. Raging flames surged through the blade and the handle of the battleax instantly increased in size. It was the BOSS’s third skill--[Raging Flame Axe]!

“Hong!”

The battleax cut through the crowd. As the front row, Li Mu and I took the most damage. In the group of people who were crammed in the stone path behind us, quite a few players had taken the hit——

“13128 ! ”

“15277 ! ”

“20341 ! ”

.....

Fortunately for us, Li Mu and I had a sufficiently high defensive power. The players behind us however, were instantly killed. The Healers hastily revived them. Wan Er commanded: “Be careful of this [Raging Flame Axe] skill, it’s too strong...also, quickly revive them. People who’ve been revived twice should retreat and stay in the rear. You can only revive 3 times in 60 minutes. So let’s not get restricted by the system!”

Who would’ve thought that the Minotaur wouldn’t give us face, and after [Raging Flame Axe], it was a [Flame Tornado]. It instantly broke [Zhan Long]’s formation, and also insta killed a few people. After all, it was a Divine Tier BOSS, and it was also equivalent to the current strong powers that existed now. In fact, it actually should have this kind of attack effect. However, Li Mu, Wang Jian, and the others were still unhappy.



We continued killing, and I deliberately drew the main aggro of the BOSS. I then walked to a place where my back was against a cliff, directing the Minotaur's [Raging Flame Axe] at me. This way, we wouldn't harm the innocents.

After a few seconds, I found out where I went wrong. Even though the BOSS's aggro was on me, [Raging Flame Axe] would still attack in the direction where there were the most crowded people. It instantly killed another group of Archers and Musketeers again.

"I'm gonna faint, this BOSS's AI is too high..." Matcha held her shield as she said: "His [Raging Flame Axe] doesn't obey the rules of aggro."

I immediately turned around and dodged the BOSS's random attacks. I arrived in front of him with two strides. After two strikes, I could see the attack clearly. [Raging Flame Axe]'s charging period was roughly 1.2 seconds. Wan Er and Qing Qian's [Gouge] couldn't interrupt it. This wasn't a move that could be interrupted by a skill. However, trying out the Pulse Break Style might be able to work. After all, I was the only person here that had strength that was close to the BOSS'.

"Roar!"

Li You let out an angry roar. It was [Raging Flame Axe] again. The battleax buzzed and shook, and it had already entered the charging phase.

Without any hesitation, I urged my horse to gallop forward one yard at full speed. My body sank as I entered the enormous crook of his arm. I furiously slashed my Zhen Yue Sword against the BOSS' vein. My Dragon Reservoir Sword shuddered as it entered the BOSS' flesh. After that, I used both hands to raise my swords, and used my twin swords to heavily smash the BOSS' fire axe. I could only hear a "Keng" sound as countless sparks flew out, but I was still unable to interrupt the BOSS's skill. [Raging Flame Axe] still landed on the crowd, and an Archer from the [Valiant Bravery] team cried as he died straight after being revived.

"F\*ck..."

Li Mu felt his heart ache: "Isn't this BOSS too fierce?"

Wan Er waved her dagger and used [Blade of the Death God]+[Chain Attack], as a trace of helplessness flashed through her beautiful eyes, “Focus on dealing damage. All we can do now is take the hits, since pig can’t interrupt this skill...”

I clenched my teeth, and raised my swords to continue attacking. At the same time, I pondered about what I did wrong during my earlier moves. Could it be that I didn’t use enough force? Yup, that was probably the reason. After all, the BOSS was an existence that even Xingtian had praised. If I could break his main skill by using such weak strength, then that would be too easy.

15 seconds later, with a “Roar”, Li You started charging up [Raging Flame Axe] for the Nth time. His arm trembled as he concentrated the [Strength of a Beast] in his battleax

I clenched my teeth, and tried again. I won’t accept defeat!

“Swoosh!”

The Flying Scythe War Horse brought me along with it as it charged over to the BOSS. This time, I borrowed the strength of the horse’s charge to attack. With a “Peng”, the Zhen Yue Sword slashed out, and it quickly returned as I activated [Assault]. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and heavily struck the BOSS’s right hand. I barely grasped the timing, and I slashed my twin swords across. I spun around, dealing another slash, and heavily struck the central part of the BOSS’ [Raging Flame Axe].

“Peng!”

An enormous blue light surged out, and three huge words appeared in the sky between the BOSS and I.

“Successful Skill Break!”

.....

“Fxck...”

Li Mu was dumbstruck: “God, even the BOSS’ skill can be successfully broken through? Motherf\*cker, the Pulse Break Style is basically a skill on the level of God...”

Matcha was full of confidence as she laughed: “Obviously! With the data that

I've gathered, plus Boss's skill, it's practically unparalleled under heaven!"

One Second Hero rubbed his nose, and cunningly laughed, "But it seemed like guild leader was cut down by Q-Sword using the Pulse Break Style in the Magic Dragon's Nest...We don't even know when he'll be able to get revenge..."

I laughed: "Just wait for the domestic competition for the Hero's Wings Tournament. If there's a chance, I'll definitely use it to fight Q-Sword!"

"Yup, we're all looking forward to it!"

.....

I continued attacking. The second time, however, my skill interruption failed again. I was still very far from the success rate of 100%. The skill required for the Pulse Break Style was simply too high-end, and you would fail to successfully interrupt a skill if you missed it by a millimeter. And supposedly, that Little Demon had a 95% success rate of interrupting a skill during battle, which was simply inhuman. I really didn't know what kind of existence she was. However, when Little Demon was rampaging around the world, and helping Fang Ge Que conquer the world, I was still in the Special Forces, and so I didn't have a good understanding of the gaming situation.

After several more tries, I successfully interrupted his skill, drastically decreasing the killing ability of the BOSS. Soon, the Minotaur Chief only had 10% health left. He immediately activated his skill, [Rage of the Minotaur]. This was probably a skill that allowed the Bull God to possess it, raising its attack and defense by 20%. However, I withstood its attack. I also had 20 Healers healing me. This, along with the fact that I had a tanky health of 40000+, and the fact that the Minotaur Chief was the same level as me, made him be unable to instantly kill me. Killing him was also a matter of time now.

Quickly, with a miserable howl, the Minotaur Chief Li You heavily fell onto the stone path. With a "Hua La" sound, several pieces of equipment dropped. In the stack of items, there seemed to be the battleaxe that was originally in its hands. The players in our team that used battleaxes couldn't help but tremble. They were all excited.

I urged my horse to walk forward, and I embraced the rewards in my bosom. After that, I showed their stats one by one.

Wild Battle Gown, a Level 110 Saint Tier cloak. It got ROLLED away to Dancing Forest. Its effect that added 40% to long-distance physical attacks suited her job.

Wild Combat Boots, a Level 110 Saint Tier armored boots. It was ROLLED away to One Second Hero. The 45% increase in movement speed, and the 20% increase in defense also perfectly suited him.

Finally, the last item was the battleax. I clasped it with my hand, and extended my other hand to brush it off. Immediately, everyone was excited. Finally, we had obtained the first piece of Divine Tier Equipment after entering Pangu's Abyss. To an extent, it was worth it for the lives of many of our brothers--

[Remote Spring Strength BattleAx] (Divine Tier Equipment • Superior)

Attack: 3700-4250

Strength: +137

Endurance: +135

Agility: +134

Magic Attack: +130

Additional: Raises the user's attack power by 35%

Additional: Raises the user's splash damage by 30%

Special Effect: Strength of the Serene Spring. After killing your target, you will absorb your target's health and turn it into your own, to a maximum of 50%

Required Level: 110

.....

Holding this Serene Spring Strength BattleAx, I slightly smiled, "It's attack power is very outstanding, and it has a lot of explosive power. Especially that special skill, Strength of the Serene Spring. You could say that as long as the user kept killing people, they could guarantee that they maintained full health. If you killed some tanky Knights, one alone would heal you by over 20000 health. This is practically a weapon made for a death god."

Old K, Dong Cheng Lei, and the other Berserker type players from [Zhan Long]

were unable to conceal their excitement.

This time, the Berserkers that we had brought along with us was just those few people. And so, we decided to ROLL for it. In the end, Dong Cheng Lei happily put away the God Tier Weapon into his bag. However, his level was still a bit lacking, but there was no need to rush. He could just bring it in his bag for now, because sooner or later, he would hit Level 110.

We split another pile of Soul Gems, and the system announced that we had cleared the 1st floor of Pangu's Abyss.

Standing on the edge of the first floor, I looked at the rock wall. I unexpectedly found a precipitous stairway. Wan Er walked forward, and lightly laughed: "Was this left by the people that had come here to hunt for treasure? How considerate of them. Like this, we won't have to dangerously climb the rock wall."

"Yup."

I walked forward and held onto a protruding point on the rock wall. I followed the precipitous stairway as I went downwards. At most, this stairway could contain a single person walking through. And so, everyone carefully walked down the stairway in order.

After we had walked roughly two minutes, the second floor appeared before our eyes in the flaming mist. The guardians this time had switched to a group of Centaur Warriors. This was a group of monsters that had the shape of a human above their waistline, and the body of a wild horse below their waistline. They were all male, and waved a battleax above their heads. Once they saw me and Wan Er walk down the stone steps, they immediately roared with a fierce look on their faces, "Oh, these damned humans have come again! They've still not forgotten the Pangu Axe in this Abyss! D\*mn it, that is our treasure. We can't let them steal it! Kill them, kill them all!"

Immediately, all the Centaur Warriors within an approximately 50 yard range were affected by the summons, and they all charged over with their brandished weapons. There were a total of 20+ Level 116 Titan Tier monsters.

I rapidly jumped onto level ground, and summoned my war horse, mounting it. I brought the Ancient Tiger God out along with me as I started aggroing the

monsters, letting the others come down one by one.

The Centaur Warriors were all experts, and they activated [Whirlwind Slash] after waving their battleaxes. Naturally, we were at low health after receiving the baptism of nearly 10 [Whirlwind Slash]es. After [Cleansing Rain] and [Heal], I used all my strength to attack and recovered my health via drain on my attacks. And at this moment, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Wan Er, and the other people all landed. They helped reduce my burden by a lot. Darling Duck sent over a [Grip of Compassion] and along with a magic-reflecting shield. However, it seemed like these monsters were all using physical attacks, and this skill was of no use at all.

I stood firmly and continued clearing the area, step by step.

.....

After a whole day, up until close to 7 o'clock, everyone was madly grinding their experience levels in Pangu's Abyss. We had also killed our way to the 6th floor, killing a total of 5 BOSSes and countless amounts of Titan Tier monsters. There were a total of 3 Divine Tier Equipments and 5 Saint Tier Equipments that dropped, and our harvest was rather abundant, even though there was no equipment that I wanted.

After we had killed the BOSS of the 6th floor, Wan Er was somewhat tired as she looked towards me and laughed: "Pig, I'm hungry..."

Dong Cheng also rubbed her belly, and said: "I'm also hungry. Let's stop battling and go to sleep. We'll wake up at midnight and grind this map until tomorrow, clearing this map in one shot. How about it? It's already 8 o'clock...I'm so tired..."

I looked towards everyone: "Are you guys feeling tired?"

Li Mu nodded his head: "I suggest we go offline now and eat dinner. Then go online at exactly 6 a.m. tomorrow morning and clear the last 3 floors. How about it?"

Dancing Forest shook her head: "I don't want to, it's too early. What about 7?"

"Why?"

“At 6, the Wonton Stands on the streets aren’t open yet...”

“Fine then...”

# Chapter 635 Pig Gets the Good Food

I went offline, and prepared to go eat.

When I walked out of my room, Qin Wen was standing in the corridor, leaning on the wall next to Wan Er's room. She turned around and looked at me, then slightly smiled, "You're finally finished?"

"Yup." I nodded my head: "Why are you here?"

Qin Wen laughed: "Nothing much. I just got Wan Er's message saying that it was time to eat, so I'm just waiting here for the moment. Besides, it's not just us who are going out to eat today, we have to add one more pair of chopsticks."

I was astounded: "Who's coming?"

"Once you get downstairs you'll know."

.....

When Wan Er and Dong Cheng walked out of their rooms, we walked down the stairs together. In the villa's hall, sure enough, there was a black-overcoat-wearing man that was sitting there. Wan Er had a blank look, "Father?"

The man turned around, and sure enough, it was Lin Tian Nan. There were even a few people sitting on the sofa who looked like bodyguards.

Lin Tian Nan stood up, and faintly smiled, "I'm going to Beijing tomorrow for some business and I just happened to pass by today. I heard that you guys haven't eaten yet, so I came to freeload a bit. Am I not welcome?"

Wan Er laughed, "How can you be not welcome? Is the food prepared?"

"Yup, it'll be ready soon."

"Good, I'm dying of hunger..."

Wan Er walked over and sat down next to Lin Tian Nan. Lin Tian Nan looked at his most cherished and beloved daughter, and laughed, "You've been gaming so much that you've even forgotten to eat again. Am I right?"

Wan Er happily laughed, and guiltily said, "What are you saying, dad. This is



just normal level grinding that is common in games...our guild is just clearing an extremely high levelled map today, so we got delayed a bit.”

Qin Wen sat beside him, and crossed her arms over her chest as she lazily laughed, “How I envy these young people who do whatever they want. They’re not like us, who are so busy that we even forget our own surnames...”

Lin Tian Nan laughed, “Your surname is Qin...”

As he said that, he looked at Wan Er and said, “Don’t waste your whole day in the game, look, you’re going to get panda eyes soon. You should still pay attention to issues in the real world while playing games.”

Qin Wen shook her head and laughed, “Uncle, its about time I talked with you about this, don’t parent her too much. At Wan Er’s carefree age, she shouldn’t be worrying too much about everything. Doing what they want to do is the privilege of these young people. If you force her to do what she should be doing in the future, then you’ll be ending her happy times now...”

Lin Tian Nan was somewhat helpless, “I know that the relationship between you sisters are good, but Wen Wen, you shouldn’t keep spoiling her either...In short, playing games nonstop is never good. Wan Er, it’s going to be the winter vacation in a month’s time. How about I arrange an internship for you then?

“Winter vacation?”

Wan Er was blank, “Ah, it’s going to be winter vacation already? Then doesn’t that mean that we don’t have to use class time to play games...”

Lin Tian Nan almost spat out his tea, “You...anyway, I’ll arrange an internship for you in advance, and let you get used to managing the company and doing business. If not...your old man is getting older and older, but there’s no one who can share responsibility with me. Who can I rely on? I can’t possibly donate the entire Tian Xin Corporation to the country, can I?”

Qin Wen laughed: “Not necessarily...those people will be happy to death.”

Lin Tian Nan lazily sat on the sofa, and raised his head to take a deep breath. He said, “I’ve spent my entire life working hard on my empire of science and technology. I won’t ruin it by giving it to them. I’ve already lived for a long time, and I’ve already seen through some issues. Tian Xin Corporation can only truly

be the Tian Xin Corporation with me at its head. That way, we can out perform against our competitors. If not, the income of the Tian Xin Corporation won't be invested in R&D, but on other preposterous things."

I hushed him, "Be careful, the walls have ears..."

Lin Tian Nan couldn't help but laugh: "Ha, that's true."

.....

Wan Er sat there and pouted her small mouth: "Old man, where are you going to arrange me to have my internship at? Tian Xin Corporation?"

"No."

Lin Tian Nan shook his head, and replied, "The upper echelons of the Tian Xin Corporation all know that you're my daughter, and I'm afraid that no one will dare to give you any work to do in the Tian Xin Corporation. I'm planning to arrange for you to enter the Booster Company to work with our Tian Xin Corporation's partner company. I have some people there, and there are some people there from the Booster Company. I'll be reassured if you go there and have your internship."

"What?"

Wan Er was shocked as she stood up: "You're planning for me to go to Wang Ze Cheng's company as an intern? No way, I'm not going!"

Lin Tian Nan was astounded: "Wan Er, why are you so prejudiced against Wang Ze Cheng?"

Wan Er walked up to him and held his hand, as she said, "Old man, I trust your judgement. Don't tell me that you can't see that there's a problem with Wang Ze Cheng's fortune and identity?"

"Is there?"

Lin Tian Nan looked at the cups on the coffee table, as if he was deep in thought, and said, "Wang Ze Cheng has always been following the rules. Furthermore, he has a unique vision while doing business. Is it be possible that something happened that I don't know about?"

After he said that, Lin Tian Nan looked towards me, "Li Xiao Yao, what in the

world happened?”

I put down the cup in my hands, and dodged the question: “How about this, while Chairman Lin is arranging for the internship, arrange for me and Wan Er to intern together. Furthermore, it must be a branch of the company. If I’m beside her, then she’ll be absolutely safe.”

Qin Wen faintly smiled, “That seems like this is a good method. Originally, I wanted to ask Wan Er to come over to my company as an intern. However, going to the partner firm between the Tian Xin Corporation and the Buster Company seems to be more suitable. After all, my small shell company can’t compare to the big firms, after all.”

Lin Tian Nan thought about it, and said: “Alright, then that’s fine. We’ll do it that way.”

Wan Er pursed her lips, and unwillingly said, “Then that’s fine...with pig following me, I might be somewhat happy...”

“Pig?”

Lin Tian Nan was astounded. He then looked at me, and looked at his own daughter again. He seemed to have understood something, and his expression turned slightly ugly. He sipped at his tea while making a phone call.

“Do you know how Lin Tian Nan is feeling right now?” Tang Qi walked over and laughed.

I replied: “What?”

Tang Qi said, “Seeing you and Wan Er like that...he must be feeling like a farmer who has had his painstakingly grown cabbage stolen by a pig...”

“F\*ck off...”

“You shouldn’t use obscene language. If Lin Tian Nan hears it, he’ll deduct some points from his future son-in-law!”

“Fine. What are the people from [Hero’s Mound] doing today?”

“Nothing much. Grinding levels and killing BOSSes. Q-Sword just got a Divine Tier wristguard. Its stats are very strong. You should be careful when you meet him next time. Or else you won’t have the ability to retaliate again, haha...”

“F\*ck you.....”

“Your sister...”

“Again with the swearing!”

.....

During our dinner that night, with Lin Tian Nan here, Wan Er, Dong Cheng, and I were feeling particularly restrained, especially me. After all, I couldn't be too rampant in front of my employer. I also didn't dare to make any intimate actions with Wan Er, or else Lin Tian Nan could pull out a gun in a fit of anger. On the contrary, Qin Wen was very thoughtful, and her sweet voice controlled the atmosphere in this room. Otherwise, no one would feel satisfied from this meal.

After eating, Lin Tian Nan drove his car and left us. We all tidied up ourselves up and went to sleep.

It was a quiet night and I woke up again around 6:30 in the morning. I quickly washed myself up, and ate a simple breakfast. We couldn't be late to a [Zhan Long]'s activity with the top hundred players. Making everyone wait would make them lose their trust and respect for us.

.....

“Swoosh!”

I logged on at exactly 6:55. There were already many people beside me, so much so that a few people like Wang Jian and Li Mu were already bringing people along with them to kill monsters. After Wan Er, Dong Cheng, and I logged it, we began forming teams to clear the monsters in the 7th floor.

The 7th floor of Pangu's Abyss. There were dense fumes hanging in the air. As we walked around, we basically couldn't see our fingers after extending our hand out. Fortunately, we could see the monsters on the map. In the distance, a group of humans that were holding a halberd in their hands and wearing heavy armor were standing in the mist. There was a black coloured cloak behind each person, and it looked extremely mighty. Furthermore, they had an extremely high level. These were the Level 121 Titan Tier monsters--Holy Flame Warriors!

“Move out!”

Wan Er and I charged out side by side, and we had aggroed 3 Holy Flame Warriors. These depraved human warriors were all carrying a halberd as they made their way over. The halberd suddenly began to glow as they raised it, and raging flames surged forth. That halberd slowly trembled as it released a skill that we all recognised--[Halberd Whirlwind]!

“Hong hong...”

The raging flames mixed together with the halberd light as it attacked outwards. My health and Wan Er’s plummeted. Darling Duck quickly healed us, as she asked, amazed, “I’m fainting, isn’t this Wang Jian’s skill?”

Wang Jian nodded his head, “Yup, [Halberd Whirlwind]. It’s quite painful if you get hit, so be careful, everyone. A Level 121 Titan Tier monster is already quite frightening. To be safe, every squad should only kill one at once.

It was already too late to back out for me, and I could only brace myself to block it. At the same time, I carefully observed the starting motions of [Halberd Whirlwind]. This move would first accumulate the power of fire, then concentrate it in the tip of the halberd, which would then revolve outwards. The charging period of this skill was roughly 1.1 seconds, and the starting motion was extremely obvious. The source of the skill’s strength was also very clear to me, which was clearly the support of the legs and the movement of the arms.

And so, I left my mounted state, and stepped forward. I landed a flying kick on the legs of the Holy Flame Warrior, and slashed its left arm with my Zhen Yue Sword. I then swept out my Dragon Reservoir sword and I used its hilt to fiercely smash against the center of its right arm’s muscles, causing the two sounds of “Peng peng” to echo out. My luck this time wasn’t bad, and a blue coloured light surged forth. The big words “Successful Skill Break” floated in the air.

Wan Er was slightly stunned, “How amazing...success in only one try...”

The corner of Dong Cheng’s mouth rose, “Brother Xiao Yao truly has an innate gift for combat. The Pulse Break Style could emerge again in your hands...”

Based on my principle of not being arrogant or hot-tempered, I only laughed it out, and continued researching the particular details of the Pulse Break Style. This road was truly too long. Without reaching Little Demon's terrifying 95% success rate, there wasn't anything worth being arrogant about.

.....

My party quickly cleared all of the Holy Flame Warriors on the stone path. It was already the 7th floor, and the distance between us and the 9th floor was getting closer and closer. The 9th floor was destined to not be easy. Perhaps, we could see where the fragments of Pangu's Axe was when we reached the 9th floor.

# Chapter 636 Reincarnation Slash

After close to three hours of fighting, finally, we cleaned out almost all of the seventh floor monsters. There weren't even a handful of the Holy Flame Warriors left. At the end of the floor was complete darkness, just like before. But everyone knew that there was always a BOSS waiting at the other side. This floor was no different.

Li Mu raised his Tian Chen Sword and slowly walked to the front. As he stood at the edge of the cliff he muttered, "It seems we can't see where the BOSS is. What's going on?"

Dancing Forest raised her arm and shouted, "Li Mu, look up...."

Li Mu looked up and was so shocked and terrified that he immediately retreated——

There appeared to be a dark figure standing in the air. He carried an enormous broadsword on his back. His long hair was mussed up and fluttered in the wind. He was dressed in a suit of shining armor. He raised his arm and pulled out the broadsword. We could see a bloodthirsty smile appear under the shadows, "Finally, after so many years, I finally get a taste of live humans again. It truly is hard, for a man to actually reach the seventh floor of Pangu's Abyss. And there's so many of you. He he...."

"Hua!" A pair of black wings sprung from his back. The figure flew into the air. At the same time, a row of characters appeared above his head and I quickly read out his stats to our hundred man team——

[Fallen Wings - Mu Lun] (Demon Harvest Tier BOSS)

Level: 121

Attack: 11200-12400

Defense: 10500

Health: 200,000,000

Skills: [Wings of War] [Reincarnation Slash] [Thousand Sword Spin] [Eternal

Fear]

Introduction: Mu Lun, a famous hero from the ancient times. His power and strength had been corrupted by the Dark side. This guardian of justice finally fell to the dark side and became one of the Kings of Demon Beasts. Mu Lun recruited an army of Holy Flame Warriors in order to find a piece of Pangu's cracked battle axe. When he entered Pangu Abyss, he was sealed by a mysterious power and become one of the head guardians of the map. After being trapped for so many years, he's been nurturing his frustration and hatred. Now, the only desire he has, is to kill.

.....

"F\*ck...."

I retreated several steps and leapt onto my horse yelling, "It's a Demon Harvest BOSS. Be careful! This tier of BOSSes is so much stronger than those Hybrid Demon Kings!"

Wan Er raised her dagger and said, "Pig will be the tank. Everyone else, move with caution. This BOSS' skills look to be very strong and deadly..."

Qing Qian asked, "Brother Xiao Yao, how much defense does your Hidden Dragon Armor add?"

I glanced at my stats, "37%. I don't know if it's enough for this Demon Harvest Tier BOSS to throw hits at me...."

"Hard to say. Why don't we try it out first?"

"Ok!"

.....

My blade flashed and I threw out my Dragon Reservoir Sword, activating [Blade Spin]. "Ka ka ka" it pierced through Mu Lun three times in the chest. Blood spurted out. Ok, at least my attack power was enough to break his defense. At the same time, I opened my hand and locked [Great Realm of Desolation] onto the BOSS, dealing another heavy attack. One after another, the damage numbers flew up——

"7434 ! "



“7122 ! ”

“7421 ! ”

“10928 ! ”

The BOSS had an incredible defense, but my attack power was enough to break through. I only needed four attacks and in that moment I was able to lure 90% of Mu Lun’s aggro towards myself. This Fallen General raised his blade and roared. He glared at me with blood thirsty eyes, “He he, brat, are you from Ba Huang City? Perfect, I love to kill strong humans. When I kill you, I’ll crunch on your bones. My my, I truly look forward to it!”

“Hong!”

Mu Lun’s blade began to glow blood red. Spirits began to emerge from the surroundings and gather around the blade. This was his skill——Reincarnation Slash. As the name implies, the skill will send you straight back into the reincarnation cycle. I suddenly relaxed both my shoulders. I wasn’t able to absorb all of the force from the BOSS’ attack. The broadsword landed heavily on my shoulder. My Flying Scythe War Horse’s knees buckled and was nearly forced to fall from the BOSS attack.

“17822 ! ”

I did not make any retreat and began gathering frost energy on my Dragon Reservoir Sword. [Fierce Ice Blade] pierced through the BOSS. Right after that, I dealt another Level 11 [Combo]. Gold light exploded, stunning all of the players behind me. At that current stage in the game, very few players had managed to level their skills to Level 11. The experience requirements were just too high. However, even if players have Level 11 Skills, it didn’t necessarily mean they could take a BOSS like this head on.

Mu Lun let out a savage laugh. The wings on his shoulders turned red and his attack power increased a level. He swung his blade and dealt two slashes onto my Hidden Dragon Armor. Pain rushed into my chest——

“13121 ! ”

“14228 ! ”

Luckily, Darling Duck and Thousand League were both there to heal me so I could keep my health above 20% the entire time. With that little health, however, the BOSS could still kill me in one stroke. After all, he had such a high damage rate. [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost Armor] quickly shattered. That was the worst factor in this situation.

“Keng....”

Golden light scattered and fell. My [Wall of Dou Qi] had finally broken. Right after, my [Frost Armor] also disappeared. All of my main defenses had entered into Cool Down. It was getting dangerous!

Dong Cheng immediately put away her staff and yelled, “Ranged players, do not attack. Be ready to take more aggro!”

Mu Lun cackled and swept out his blade. He threw another [Reincarnation Slash]!

“Pu Chi!”

“28122 ! ”

That nearly killed me. In that moment, I lost over half of my health. My Flying Scythe War Horse whinnied and knelt to the ground and everything went dark. The attack crushed my Ancient Heavenly Tiger. Motherf\*cker, all I can do is watch everyone else fight while I was in my spirit form.....

Yao Yan dashed forward and said, “Hurry, revive guildmaster!”

Qing Qian grit her teeth and shook her head, “No, nobody revive Brother Xiao Yao. If you do that, our entire team will be destroyed!”

.....

Mu Lun sprinted forward and laid out destruction. Matcha and One Second Hero were instantly killed in three strikes. Wan Er was knocked away by a slash that hit her Iron Umbrella. There wasn’t a single person in [Zhan Long] that could hold off this Demon Harvest Tier BOSS. The reality was that Demon Harvest Tier BOSSes were much stronger than we could ever imagine. Especially when they had a high level.

“Healers, retreat. Retreat 200 meters! Matcha shouted in her spirit state.

“Vice guildmaster Cang Tong, sacrifice a level and take the hit for them. Let them retreat. Otherwise, a hundred of us will die....”

Wan Er gulped down a potion and charged forward. She activated [Hermit God’s Arrival] and kicked off the ground. Then, with a [Gouge] she stunned the BOSS. At the same time, she was thrown back by Mu Lun’s sword. A group of [Zhan Long] players had already retreated. Wan Er spun in the air. Then with a wave of her hand, the [Aria] effect activated, creating a 100% chance of a stun. However, BOSSes had a stat that reduced the effects, and so instead of being stunned for seven seconds, it was only stunned for 3.9, that was still enough to get the players out.

“Wan Er, hurry up and leave! Don’t force it! I shouted to her.

Wan Er nodded and sprinted away. In a flash, she disappeared into the air. In the end, all that was left were 31 bodies scattered on the ground. Li Mu and Wang Jian had both died as well, their dropped equipments lay on the ground. Mu Lun then left his battle state and his health returned to full. He lifted his sword and leapt into the air to take his place and await for us to pick a fight again.

.....

The healers slowly revived us all. In the next moment, “Shua!” I returned to the stone path again. I furrowed my brows and said, “My 10,000 defense actually couldn’t hold against Mu Lun’s attacks....”

Qing Qian smiled, “Brother Xiao Yao, how about we use some more extreme methods. Let’s increase your Hidden Dragon Armor’s stat to 200%. Maybe then we’ll have a chance!”

I nodded, “Ok!”

After that, I left the team and took off all of the equipments I had except for the Hidden Dragon Armor. That way, there was a limit to my health and defense. Then, I turned around to Wolf and Qwi Liang, “You two have about the right amount of attack. Make sure you control yourselves though. Just bring my health down to 50%. Darling Duck, Thousand Spring, don’t be stingy with your mana potions.”

Everyone nodded. When I only had 20,000 health, they raised their daggers and began activating attacks against me. The healers on the other hand continuously cast their spells on me. My Hidden Dragon Armor kept ringing!

“Di!”

Battle Notification: You’ve taken the required damage. The Hidden Dragon Armor effect [Thousand Layer Cliff] has activated. Your defense has increased by 77%!

“Di!”

Battle Notification: You’ve taken the required damage. The Hidden Dragon Armor effect [Thousand Layer Cliff] has activated. Your defense has increased by 78%!

“Di!”

Battle Notification: You’ve taken the required damage. The Hidden Dragon Armor effect [Thousand Layer Cliff] has activated. Your defense has increased by 79%!

.....

In less than 10 minutes, I finally hit 200%. The two assassins had accidentally let out several critical attacks, nearly killing me. My heart was pounding throughout the process. I had already hit Level 117, and when I got killed by Mu Lun, I had already lost a level. If I lost another, then I would just be set back too far!

“OK ! ”

I put all of my equipment back on. Afterwards, I managed to pry some previous Equipment Repair potion from Li Mu, returning my Hidden Dragon Armor to 100% sturdiness. Afterwards, I summoned my mount and my Ancient Heavenly Tiger and prepared for battle. With a smile, I addressed everyone, “Let’s not count that time we nearly all died and try again. Ranged players and Healers, let’s work a little harder!”

Everyone nodded, “Don’t worry, we understand. Guildmaster won’t be the one to die again....”

“Alright....”

.....

I turned my horse around and charged at Mu Lun again. I threw a [Great Realm of Desolation] and a [Blade Spin] at the BOSS while he was still mid air. The second attack snatched a lot of Mu Lun’s aggro towards me. He roared and charged over, “D\*mm\*t, it’s you again. This time I will rip you up into a thousand pieces!”

He threw a [Reincarnation Slash]+Normal attack at me. I had already recast [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost Armor] and my Hidden Dragon Armor started to glow with a turquoise light. The light was much brighter than it had been before. It was probably related to the 200% increase in defense. I slightly shuddered. This time, the BOSS’ attacks weren’t too critical. Adding 163% more defense really made a different—

“12127 ! ”

“8731 ! ”

“8548 ! ”

.....

The Healers behind me continuously cast [Grip of Compassion]. I also activated a [Cleansing Rain] to help myself. When I stabilized my position, I was already well prepared to fight it out with the BOSS. However, with the Ancient Heavenly Tiger’s assistance, it sometimes took the Aggro. Once the BOSS turned its focus at the little tiger, I immediately commanded it to retreat while I threw another attack. The long ranged players of [Zhan Long] threw all of their attacks, whether it was area attacks or stuns or DPS skills. If this continued, then the rhythm of the battle was completely in favor for the players.

# Chapter 637 Enchanted Painting

“Roar...”

Mu Lun roared, and a terrifying purple energy rose up around us. Instantly, almost 20 [Zhan Long] players, along with me, received a Fear status. After being afflicted with Fear, my body involuntarily retreated, making me lose the aggro of the BOSS. The BOSS immediately activated [Thousand Sword Spin]. One Second Hero, Star Blade, and some other people immediately died under the barrage of swords.

“Hurry.....”

Matcha was anxious as she raised her shield and retreated. At the same time, she shouted, “Purify Boss!”

Two Healers activated their [Purification]’s on me, but unfortunately, they both MISSED. [Purification] couldn’t remove the de-BUFF effect of [Eternal Fear]. Qing Qian held her dagger as she charged over. She opened her palm, and used [Awakening]!

“Swoosh!”

It was a success this time, and the negative status effect on me instantly disappeared. I hastily urged my horse to charge at Mu Lun, while I continuously slashed at him, redirecting the aggro back to me. Thousand League Spring started to revive Star Blade. A white light flashed and he was successfully revived. However, Mu Lun was immediately pulled over by the enormous amount of aggro caused by a revive. He waved his blade and sent a [Reincarnation Slash] at Star Blade.

“No, don’t let Star Blade die again!” I hastily shouted.

Matcha’s reaction this time was surprisingly quick, and she smashed her heavy shield into the ground. She opened up a hand, and a holy light emanated off her body. Her long sword dealt a heavy blow on the BOSS’s back, and [Divine Provocation] was activated. Mu Lun let out an angry howl, and sent a killing blow towards our godly tactician however, I brought the Ancient Tiger God

along with me to attack the BOSS and control its aggro. It allowed Matcha to escape with only a little bit of difficulty!

“Roar roar...”

Mu Lun was a Demon Harvest BOSS, so one could imagine his strength. He threw slashes of sword qi into the wall, and his stomps left fiery marks in the ground. [Zhan Long] changed its battle tempo according to the BOSS' changes. A quick change in tactics didn't mess up the formation of our troops. This was the pinnacle strength that a guild could have. Even if we were fighting a Demon Harvest Tier BOSS, we could use the strength of a hundred people to directly contend with it.

.....

“Keng keng keng...”

A stream of sparks streaked across Mu Lun's chest plate. When the BOSS only had 1% of his health left, Wan Er hurriedly retreated, and said: “Let Xiao Yao kill the BOSS, his charm is high, and his chances of good drops are way higher than ours!”

The close combat type players all retreated. Dancing Forest, Dong Cheng, and the other long-distance players also stopped attacking. I withstood the hits from the BOSS as I was showered by the light from [Purification]. I activated [Strength of a Thousand Men]+[Great Realm of Desolation] to deal lots of damage, and Mu Lun collapsed after letting out an anguished wail. In that moment, I was enveloped by a golden light as I levelled up with a “Swoosh”. I was Level 117 now, and I was second place in the Tian Ling City's level rankings.

In the place where Mu Lun collapsed, a bunch of equipment dropped out with a crash. My luck wasn't bad; a total of 4 pieces of equipment had dropped. I walked over and collected it all, and then waved my hand over the equipment. The stats of the 4 equipments appeared before everyone's eyes--

[Icy Flame Spear] (Divine Tier Equipment) : Attack 2900-4250, increases the user's attack by 37%, ignores the target's defense by 30%, Required: Level 111.

[Torrential Leg Guards] (Divine Tier Equipment) : Heavy Armor type players only, increases the user's defense by 35%, Special Effect: [Torrential Current]

reduces damage by 10%, Required Level 111.

[Ring of the Virtuous] (Divine Tier Equipment) : Increases the user's Magic Attack by 40% and the user's MaxHP by 4000 points, and the user's defense by 1000 points, Special Effect: [Halo of the Virtuous] Increases the mana recovery rate of all friendlies in the area around the user by 0.5%, Required: Level 111.

[Disillusionary Blade] (Saint Tier Equipment) : Attack 2500-3680, increases the user's attack by 30% and the user's one hit kill success rate by 7%, Required: Level 111.

.....

Holding up the four pieces of equipment, I couldn't help but laugh, "My luck isn't bad, 3 out of 4 were Divine Tier Equipments...too bad there weren't any Demon Harvest Equipments. It's truly a pity..."

Dong Cheng broke into laughter, "Do you think Demon Harvest Tier Equipments are some rubbish that you can find anywhere? Don't forget, there are only 10000 pieces of Demon Harvest Equipments in the entire server, don't tell me that you've forgotten that number 0007 is your Dragon Reservoir Sword? To be honest, getting the Earth Dragon King to drop a Demon Harvest Tier Nation Suppressing Sword is absurd already. Your luck really can't get any better than that..."

I sighed, "What a pity, it was taken away by Q-Sword..."

Ran Min clenched his fist and said, "No problem, our brothers will steal it back, sooner or later!"

I laughed, "Don't say such crazy ideas. We should first distribute the equipments. The Icy Flame Spear is an exclusive weapon for a Knight. Come, all the Knight type players in the team should ROLL for it together?"

A group of people happily rolled for it. This time, basically all of the knights present participated in the ROLL. Finally, [Zhan Long: Defense Army]'s Guild leader, beauty Yue Yao Yan, won the Icy Flame Spear with 88 points in the ROLL. At this stage in the game, a Divine Tier Weapon was still considered to be a peak level equipment. Adding 4250 points of attack, it was a weapon that few others could rival.



The second piece of equipment, the Torrential Leg Guards, was a Divine Tier Equipment and it was quite a bit better than my Halberd Wielder's Leg Guards. I also participated in the ROLL, but I unfortunately only got 37 points. Finally, it was taken away by Moon Feather. That was a pretty good outcome. If the strength of every individual person increased, then it would lead to an overall increase in our [Zhan Long]'s strength. After all, in the coming battles, every single person here would be relied upon to charge and break through the enemy's front lines. If they were strong, [Zhan Long] would be even stronger. The era of a single person taking on an entire army was already long gone.

The third piece of equipment, the Ring of the Virtuous, had the [Halo of the Virtuous] that was very impressive. The increase in magic attack alone was enough to make it very attractive. It was ROLled away to the number 3 Mage in [Zhan Long], "Right Hand Will Dance". He was the guildmaster of [Zhan Long: Division Four], and he had also joined in with the main guild's activity this time. His strength was not bad, and he was one of the necessary long range attackers for the upcoming team battle.

The last piece of equipment, the Disillusionary Combat Knife was ROLled away to the only Monk that was chosen for this 100 man group, "Devotion to Buddha". In reality, there was no ROLL, since he was the only person that fit the requirements. It was equivalent to us giving it to him. Devotion to Buddha was a handsome youngster. He was roughly 20 years old, and came from Xinjiang. He was pretty skilled, and was well-liked by the sisters in the guild. I felt that if it was not for people like Li Mu and Wang Jian watching, there would definitely be sisters trying to touch his bald head and flirt with him. After all, a pure and innocent Buddhist monk was something that girls would like.

.....

After we finished splitting the equipment, I split the remaining items. After that, I looked at the paved pathway in front of me, and the 8th floor was just a hundred meters away. I saw a precarious winding staircase located on the wall just to the right of us. And so, I sheathed my twin swords, and leapt off my mount. I extended my hand to grab a protruding rock, and said: "Let's go to the eighth floor. There are still two more floors, let's do this everyone!"

Wan Er and Dong Cheng followed me, while Li Mu, Wang Jian, Qing Qian, and

the others organised themselves into a line to scale the rock wall. Some Mages and Healers felt that it was especially difficult to do it, as their palms were burnt whenever they grabbed onto the protruding rocks. Pangu's Abyss got hotter and hotter as you went down the floors. It was practically hotter than a steamer basket\*. The Healers and Mages had a weaker physique, but fortunately, the players on the team who had these jobs all had high levels, so they could manage.

\*TL Note: A type of steamer used to make dimsum

The thick smoke pervaded the surroundings, practically obscuring everyone's field of vision. I was very slow in moving forward, since I was also paying attention to the other player's safety. As the guildmaster of this guild, I couldn't simply let everyone be the cannon fodder for me to ascend to the throne. As a person, I should have a clear conscience. Since we entered Pangu's Abyss, I had to be responsible for everyone as the guild leader.

"Brother Xiao Yao!"

Wolf gripped his dagger and climbed the rock wall; He resembled a nimble monkey. He called out from the distance, "I just got some news, when [Prague] was grinding the Firestone Canyon, a Demon Harvest Tier helmet dropped, and it's with Yan Zhao Warrior now..."

"Oh?" I was slightly stunned. I laughed, "Uncle Yan Zhao's luck is not bad, actually getting a Demon Harvest Equipment so fast..."

Wolf nodded his head and said: "Yup. However, they had to pay an extremely heavy price. Yan Zhao Warrior died twice, and his subordinates died a total of 700+ times. It was a Level 118 Demon Harvest Tier BOSS, and it almost wiped out the thousand man team that Yan Zhao Warrior brought. It was really brutal. The battle recording is already on the forums."

Me, "Ok."

General Li Mu was carefully climbing while chatting, "There's also the situation of Tian Ling City. In the Hero's Arena in Tian Ling City's East Plaza, quite a few champions have already been switched out. Just now, a female player called "Enchanted Painting" had been standing in the arena stage since morning until now. She's consecutively defeated Little Scholar, Jing Ke, Bai Li

RuoFeng, Blue Dragon Emperor, Ai Ye, Ji Yuan, and others.”

I was startled, “Enchanted Painting? I don’t believe I’ve ever heard of this person before this. What happened? Even Little Scholar, Jing Ke, and the others lost to her? She’s not simple...”

Wang Jian replied, “Brother Xiao Yao, do you know what combat style Enchanted Painting used?”

“I don’t know, what is it...” I blankly shook my head.

“Pulse Break Style!”

“What?” I was even more stunned.

Wang Jian said, “Enchanted Painting’s current ranking in the Tian Ling City Rankings isn’t that high, and she’s only ranked 1127 on the China’s CBN Battlenet Rankings. She’s not even higher than Little Wolf, One Second Hero, and the others...”

Wolf immediately protested, “F\*ck, don’t use me as a comparison...”

Wang Jian laughed, and continued, “However, I’ve just gotten the first-hand information on Enchanted Painting. Her background isn’t simple at all...she’s one of the four elders of [Legend], and she’s mastered roughly 30% of the essence of the Pulse Break Style. Her success rate in skill interruptions has reached 41% in battle. You must know that in terms of statistics, Q-Sword’s success rate in skill interruptions has only reached 28% during these past few days.”

I clenched my teeth, “Just what is the background of this Enchanted Painting?”

Wang Jian laughed, “It’s not quite clear who she definitely is, but someone leaked some information that she’s Little Demon’s younger cousin.”

“.....”

Wang Jian continued speaking: “She’s still in the Tian Ling City’s arena, announcing that she’s going to beat all the experts from Ba Huang City and Fan Shu City. She’s also openly challenging Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han, as well as...cough, as well as Brother Xiao Yao. She said that she’s not going to go

offline before 12 o'clock, and that she's accepting the challenges of any expert. Motherf\*cker, this girl is too awesome..."

Wan Er looked towards me and slightly laughed: "Are you gonna take up her challenge?"

I looked towards the ground of the 8th floor, and said, "I'll still avoid it for now. When I've finished clearing Pangu's Abyss, maybe this Enchanted Painting will have already been defeated by Q-Sword or Jian Feng Han!"

"Yup, let's just see what happens after we've cleared Pangu's Abyss. Enchanted Painting has [Legend]'s Fang Ge Que as her support, it seems like...after Fang Ge Que lost Little Demon, he had already planned to nurture Enchanted Painting as the number one close combat expert of [Legend]. It seems like Lu Chun Yang and Xuan Yuan Feng are going to lose favour now..."

"Haha!"

.....

# Chapter 638 Killing the BOSS with Zero Damage

After we passed through the dense fog, the 8th Floor was right before our eyes. However, just before we landed, we could already see the ground was covered in small red dots. Our landing point was already occupied by monsters.

“Everyone be careful, don’t just simply land!”

I turned around and looked at everyone, while saying: “Just wait for us to clear the monsters at our landing point, so we can avoid causing unnecessary deaths. Unless we’re killing the boss, it’s best that we don’t incur any stupid injuries.”

Li Mu nodded his head, “Yes sir!”

.....

I looked into the distance, past the dense fog. There were many evil beasts covered head to toe in scales that were climbing around the stone path; they were like tanks and forts. Their heads looked fierce, and their forehead was split into three natural sharp horns. Furthermore, their names also sounded very impressive, and their stats were also just as strong--

[Orange Rock Triceratops] (Titan Tier Monster)

Level: 122

Attack: 8000-10150

Defense: 9200

Health: 900000

Skills: [Enormous Rock Armor] [Three Horned Rush] [Rage Trample]

Introduction: Orange Rock Triceratops, one of the guardians of Pangu’s Abyss. These Orange Rock Triceratops were originally from the Triassic Period. After experiencing evolution over several hundred thousand years, they finally obtained hard scales and sharp horns. They were originally living within a deep

canyon, but after receiving the summons of a demonic power, these Orange Rock Triceratops gave up their originally carefree lives to serve as the guardians of Pangu's Abyss. They have also become the hunting target of many adventurers, because their hard shells which have stood the trials of several hundred thousand years are an extremely rare material that can be used to manufacture armors and shields.

.....

My blade trembled, and I was the closest distance I possibly could to the bottom without attracting them. I jumped downwards, and activated [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost Armor] in midair. From above, I used a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] to slash out, and a "Hong" sound exploded out on the stone path. I summoned the Flying Scythe War Horse, and quickly mounted it before the monsters could counterattack. After that, I called on my little tiger to fight with me.

"Roar roar roar..."

At least 20+ Triceratops charged over. I randomly slashed my twin blades outwards, but the defense of these monsters was too high, and I unexpectedly only dealt 9000+ damage. And after they roared and activated [Enormous Rock Armor], a layer of rock appeared on their bodies, and my Dragon Reservoir Sword only did 5000+ damage with each hit. Their defense was comparable to a BOSS', this was simply too fierce!

I urged my horse to stand within the group of monsters and receive the baptism of their skills. One Triceratops suddenly charged over, as if it was mad. A bloody colour appeared on the three horns on its forehead, and they knocked me back two steps with a "Pa". It was [Three Horned Rush]. It was a skill that could knockback its target, but its charging motion was extremely obvious. It was at least 2 seconds long, which made it very simple to read.

"Sha sha..."

The hoofs of my horse changed direction as it stepped on the floor, as I moved around a Triceratops that was about to unleash a skill. I raised my Zhen Yue Sword to deal a heavy blow on the neck of the Triceratops, and then used the enormous momentum of my Dragon Reservoir Sword to directly push it

away. With a “Peng”, it smashed the horns of the Triceratops, as I let out a low shout: “Screw off!”

“Successful Skill Break!”

This was very good. If the skill had a charging time that exceeded 2 seconds, interrupting it seemed to be much easier. As long as I could grab the opportunity to act within the first 60% of the charging period, then I was in the clear.

I turned around and my twin swords danced about. It made another correct judgement, and the three big words “Successful Skill Break” flew into the air once again. Tsk tsk\*, this Pulse Break Style is so manly and beautiful, I should’ve learnt it earlier!

I passed through the group of monsters while killing them, and the big blue words “Successful Skill Break” kept flying up into the air. I looked at Wan Er standing there beautifully as she lightly laughed: “How manly...”

Dong Cheng was instead releasing AoE magic attacks while in midair. [Thunderbolt Finger] and [Magma Lance] devastated the group of monsters, and Qing Qian’s [Grip of the Firefox] began to take effect. Finally, Ran Min, Dong Cheng Lei, and the others began to land. [Whirlwind Slash], [Halberd Whirlwind], and other skills were activated, which swept away the monsters at the landing point. Without even three minutes passing, there were 50+ bodies of Level 122 Orange Rock Triceratops on the stone path. Furthermore, these Triceratops even dropped a fiery-red carapace, and there were a total of 11 of them. When I collected them to look at them, it was actually something good--

[Shell of the Orange Rock Triceratop]: Material for making Level 11 Armors and Shields. It can be used to forge a Saint Tier Equipment. Requires Heavenly Tier Level 1 [Armor Forging] and [Shield Forging] skills.

.....

I asked: “Who has the highest [Armor Forging] and [Shield Forging] skills in [Zhan Long]?”

Fox whispered: “We have 7 people who have Level 10 [Armor Forging], and one who has a Heavenly Tier Level 1 skill. For [Shield Forging], we have 2 at

Heavenly Tier Level 1, and 20+ Level 10 ones. Just give these materials to me, I'll take care of it."

"OK!"

If Fox took care of it, I was also reassured. This guy was [Zhan Long]'s most earnest player. Although it seemed like he had a special temper, he was also very experienced at doing things. He was very cautious while solving problems, and he was the most suitable for doing these kinds of more complicated things like logistics. As for Little Wolf and Old K who had explosive tempers, they were still more suitable to fighting in battle.

As we continued advancing, all of the [Shell of the Orange Rock Triceratops]s were given to Fox and his two subordinates. When we returned, we could create a bunch of Saint Tier Heavy Armors and Shields for [Zhan Long]. This was what we needed the most. Raising the stats and combat power of a large quantity of our members was the true path to victory.

.....

After advancing for almost 3 hours, we had killed our way through the 8th Floor. We had finally made our way to the end of the path, with a precipice in front of us. There was an enormous Triceratops lying there, that was emanating an earthly aura from all over its body. Its eyelids were lazily drooping, as if it didn't put us in his eyes at all.

Li Mu looked at me while curling his lips, "Go, take a look at his stats..."

I was speechless, "Are you guys commanding your guild leader?"

Wan Er lightly laughed, "Who let you have the highest level here? Quickly go..."

"Yup."

I urged my horse forward, and I could already see the stats of this enormous Triceratops when I was about 40 yards away. Nobody would've thought that this big guy who was so enormous was actually a Magic Attack type BOSS--

[Horn of Darkness • Li Mei] (Demon Harvest Tier BOSS)

Level: 122



Magic Attack: 9980-11400

Defense: 10000

Health: 150000000

Skills: [Boulder Armor] [Green Rock Strike] [Chaotic Rock Dance] [Horn Rush]

Introduction: Li Mei, the former Triceratops King. After the summons of the dark power, he had degenerated into an endless cycle of reincarnation, turning into the guardian of Pangu's Abyss. Apart from his sturdy armor that is impervious to sword and blade, the Triceratops King also has the power to summon rock-type magic. One cannot imagine how terrifying the rock fragment attacks are. There was once a bandit team that had 10000 people in it, all of whom were killed by this Horn of Darkness Triceratops King, causing blood to flow into rivers. Once you encounter this Horn of Darkness, run away youth, or else you may never have the chance to.

.....

"Cute..."

Li Mu was speechless, "This motherf\*cker...what a high defense and magic attack, it's going to be a bit hard to take care of him..."

Qing Qian giggled, "Please, is there no better BOSS that's easier to kill than this Triceratops King? At least, it's like this. Do you wanna bet 10000 gold, that we can kill this Triceratops King without any damage?"

Li Mu grinned, "I'm not betting, I'll definitely lose every bet."

Qing Qian pouted her little mouth, "Isn't Valiant Bravery's boss too scared..."

Wang Jian, Lian Po, Bai Qi, and the others lowered their heads in shame.

Wan Er held her dagger in one hand, and bent her slender waistline with the other. She gracefully stood by my side, as she laughed, "It's true that it's much easier to beat it now. Pig can go fight it alone, and after he pulls its aggro by 100%, we can attack from afar. Darling Duck, Thousand League Spring, you and 20 Healers should give Boss [Anti-Magic Shield] in order, and then lock your heals on him. Even if the BOSS's magic attack was stronger, we can still beat it without losing anyone!"

Darling Duck lightly laughed, “Yup, such a shameless method...”

Wan Er lightly laughed, “The only requirement is that we must be able to break its defense. Don’t forget, this BOSS has 10000 basic defense, and it’s also a magic type BOSS, which means that it has a high magic defense. Let’s start, I’m already getting impatient...”

I knew why Wan Er was so impatient. She was a Moon Elf, and her resistance towards magic attacks was very strong. She could definitely fight side-by-side with me during this fight.

.....

“Keng keng...”

After taking out my twin swords, I opened up my hand, activating [Great Realm of Desolation] and targeted the Triceratops King!

“Peng!”

“6587 ! ”

Sure enough, I was almost unable to break through its defense, and this was before it even activated [Enormous Rock Armor]. I urged my horse forward with my sword in hand. At the same time, a cold arrow flew overhead with a “Sou”. Dancing Forest’s [Shield Breaker Shot] activated, and consecutively 5 times, lowering the BOSS’s defense by 19.7%. This was good enough.

“Roar roar...”

Facing my attacks, the Triceratops King rapidly stood up, and let out a discontented roar. Its head wobbled as the surroundings were suffused with the power of rock magic. In the next moment, an enormous green-coloured rock descended from the sky. With a “Peng”, it smashed into me and shattered into fragments, dealing a terrifying 29120 damage. That was almost enough to instantly kill me!

My face almost turned purple. Behind me, Darling Duck shouted, “I’ll go first!”

“Swoosh!”

The green coloured [Anti-Magic Shield] landed on me, wrapping around me. The Triceratops King raised its sharp claws, and the summoned rocks continued

to attack me. However, since I was under the protection of [Anti-Magic Shield], I didn't take damage 3 consecutive times, but I managed to instantly deal several tens of thousands of damage, pulling over 95% of its aggro. Under Wan Er's command, a volley of arrows and spells flew out. The long-distance players were starting their work.

“Roar...”

The health of the Triceratops King directly dropped, and within its rage, it continued activating skills--[Chaotic Rock Dance]!

“Hua la la...”

The rocks on the floor were all torn into pieces, and flew out, cutting me up, and almost caused the [Anti-Magic Shield] that Thousand League Spring BUFFed me with to instantly break during this [Chaotic Rock Dance]. I quickly launched attacks before the second [Anti-Magic Shield] arrived, and at the same time, Thousand League Spring also shouted, “Everyone deal damage! One [Anti-Magic Shield] will drain almost 30% of our Mana, if we have a drawn out fight, our Mana will get sucked dry!”

Wan Er nodded her head, and charged in front with her daggers in hand. The three consecutive hits of [Blade of the Death God] exploded on the BOSS's body, and its armor breaking effect was extremely obvious. After getting violently hit twice, the Triceratops' defense was also completely beaten. It immediately used a [Green Rock Strike]!

“Swoosh!”

Wan Er grabbed her metal umbrella, and opened it with a “Pa”. Under the defensive mode of the metal umbrella, [Green Rock Strike]'s damage was cut down by at least 50%, and our beautiful little miss naturally didn't die.

Just like this, with our two close combat fighters pulling all the aggro, the others gave the BOSS a painful beating. With the were 20 Healers standing in a line to heal us, it was near impossible for us to die. It was just as Qing Qian had said. Killing this magic type BOSS was very simple.

# Chapter 639 - Chi You Horsemen

[Anti-Magic Shield]'s toughness was related to the user's healing ability and the magic resistance of the player that it was used on. My equipment alone added 353% to magic resistance. Therefore, even if I was up against a Demon Harvest Tier BOSS, I could still maintain my extremely high magic defense. This, in addition to the effects of the [Anti-Magic Shield], allowed me to stand firm against this BOSS.

As we whittled away at the BOSS' health, the Triceratops King didn't stop trembling. Within 20 minutes, we had beaten it until it was at low health. It activated [Horn Rush] once every 5 minutes, but it wasn't able to instantly kill me. That fact was what sealed its fate.

When the BOSS only had 2% of its health left, Wan Er raised her dagger and retreated. I knew that she was trying to give 50% of the BOSS' experience points to me, because she hoped that I could get revenge on Q-Sword when we met again during the Hero's Wings Competition!"

.....

"Keng keng keng..."

My Dragon Reservoir Sword and Zhen Yue Sword left a deep gash on the Triceratops King's sturdy armor, while striking away at the BOSS' health. Soon, this overlord of the Triceratops let out a miserable howl before collapsing on to the ground. Its enormous body was like a small mountain that had collapsed, and it dropped a big bunch of equipment with a crashing sound. However, this time's drops didn't make a close combat player like me excited. All of the equipments that dropped were for magic type players--

[Lightning Cry Staff] (Superior Divine Tier Equipment) : Magic attack 3230-4400, Increases the user's magic attack power by 48%, and the user's MaxHP by 5000 points, as well as the user's defense by 700 points. Required: Level 112

[Robe of Darkness] (Divine Tier Equipment) : Defense 1200, Increases the user's magic attack power by 35% and the user's MaxHP by 4000 points,

Required: Level 112.

[Rock Controller's Boots] (Divine Tier Equipment) : Defense 1100, Increases the user's movement speed by 50% and magic attack by 28%. Decreases skill cooldown time by 30%, Required: Level 112

.....

"Lightning Cry Staff..."

Dong Cheng was getting a bit excited. She suddenly ran over to grab my hand, shocking me. I asked, "Dong Cheng, what are trying...it's broad daylight now. The Heavens and Earth are clear and staring straight down at you..."

Dong Cheng excitedly said, "Your ROLL luck has always been good, I want to borrow a bit of that luck. Brother Xiao Yao, please, bless me with the luck for that Lightning Cry Staff. Thanks, I just want the Lightning Cry Staff. Boo hoo...it's stats are too strong. It has high attack power and can even make me more tanky..."

I widened my eyes as I said: "What eyes are you using to see that I have good luck?" I've been in Pangu's Abyss until now, for almost 24 hours already, and I haven't won a ROLL since..."

Dong Cheng giggled: "No matter, I believe in you!"

"Fine, I hope that that you'll succeed!"

Finally, a total of 17 Mages ROLled together, and the numbers flew up into the air. When Dong Cheng ROLled, 99 points flew up into the air. Everyone in the map cheered. She had won...

"Wa!"

Dong Cheng was extremely excited as she hugged the Lightning Cry Staff. She was so happy that she couldn't control her excitement.

We continued on. The second piece of equipment, the Robe of Darkness, was ROLled away to [Zhan Long]'s 11th ranked Mage. He was a guy whose name we didn't even remember, and was a hairy legged uncle.

The boots were ROLled away to Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, making me relax. The fact that she obtained this pair of boots made me happy. Now,

[Zhan Long]'s two peak Mages each had a Divine Tier Equipment. This had a large benefit during the upcoming Hero's Wings competition.

.....

After we split the equipments, I walked over to the precipice. I looked downwards, towards the dense fog that was almost impossible to see through, as I said, "It's the last floor. The fragment of Pangu's Axe is just down below. Alright, if Pangu's Axe is really restored, it's at least a God Tier Equipment. There's no doubt about that.

As I said that, I leaped up, climbed along the wall towards the tenth floor. At the same time, I received a message with a "Di". It came from Dream of a Thousand Cities: "Guild leader, we've just noticed a batch of people that have arrived. They seem to be trying to enter Pangu's Abyss."

"Who is it?"

"People from Flying Dragon. Mu Tian is leading, he's a Level 104 Berserker.

"How many people are there in total?"

"It seems like there's around 400+ people. Their average level is Level 97.8. Guild leader, do you need me to summon a bunch of guys over to intercept them?"

I thought for a bit, and replied: "No need. Their average level is only Level 97.8, and they don't have a lot of fifth advancement players. They won't even pass through the curtain surrounding Pangu's Abyss. Thousand Cities, just quietly grind around the surroundings, there's no need to provoke them. Even if they came down, they wouldn't be able to threaten us at all.

Dream of a Thousand Cities replied with a smiling emoji: "Fine, I know! Cheers, guild leader!"

.....

The dense fog in front of me gradually dispersed, and finally, the terrain of the 10th floor of Pangu's Abyss appeared before my eyes. The unexpected thing was that, it wasn't an abyss that had magma splashing around it. This 10th floor was a spacious main hall. There were many Horsemen carrying spears in this

hall. The whole body of these Horsemen was covered with steel armor, and only their eyes were exposed. Furthermore, these Horsemen weren't randomly stationed. Instead, they appeared in organized rows! This was an entire army!

In the middle of the main hall, there was a fragment of an axe floating there, emanating Qi. The light of the axe was spread out, condensing into an image of an actual battleax. There was nothing to consider. This was definitely the fragment of Pangu's Axe, and above Pangu's Axe, there was an enormous disk shaped formation array. The centre of the formation array was spewing raging flames, and it was these raging flames that caused Pangu's Abyss be an extremely hot environment.

“Gu Dong.....”

I nervously swallowed my saliva which didn't get past Wan Er standing behind me. She couldn't help but laugh, “Pangu's Axe is right in front of you. Are you excited?”

I clenched my fist as I replied, “ Definitely!”

Li Mu smiled faintly. “However, we still need to clean up all these small monsters then we can get it.....”

Wang Jian squinted his eyes and said, “Those aren't mere small monsters. Brother Xiao Yao, can you read their stats?”

I leaped forward again and slid down a dozen metres. As expected, I was able to see them so I shared the calvary's stats in the party channel. Immediately, everyone was startled. This fragment of Pangu's Axe was truly not easily obtainable.

[Chi You Horsemen]

Level: 123

Attack: 8800-11400

Defense: 9000

Health: 1000,0000

Skills: [Blood Slash] [Chaotic Spear Pierce] [Chi You's Single Strike]

Introduction: Chi You Horsemen. In the past, they were one of the guardians of the Chi You Tribe and were originally the bravest and most valiant warriors the tribe, taming the most intelligent wild horses as their mounts. They had a spiritual armor around them that was impenetrable. Each and everyone of them held black iron pikes in their hands, which were excellent for piercing through armor and shields. These Chi You Horsemen have received orders from the fierce ancient gods and come to Pangu's Abyss to obtain the fragment of Pangu's Axe with the hopes that one day they will one day be able to revive Chi You's spirit with its help.

.....

Wolf took a deep breath and said, "Roughly 10 to 15 Chi You Horsemen form a squad and they move in a formation. We can only fight one squad at a time or else our party might end up getting destroyed.

Matcha carefully analysed them and mentioned, "At our landing point, there are two teams of Chi You Horsemen, which won't be an easy fight. Boss, why don't you use your Dragon's Hook to draw one of the teams. Otherwise, we won't even be able to reach the main hall of the ninth floor."

I pondered for a moment before grabbing my sword and leaping forward. "Pa" The sound of my boots hitting the ground drew the attention of fourteen Chi You Horsemen that were closest to me. One of them had even raised his pike and roared, "There's a brat that has entered Pangu's Abyss. Follow me and let's rip him to pieces!"

The other thirteen Chi You Horsemen followed likewise and charged in my direction. Although my stats were high, I didn't have the confidence that I could challenge fourteen Saint Tier BOSSes at once, especially when they are level 123 high ranked BOSSes. 'I should flee.' As I thought that, I turned around and rushed towards the outer wall which was more than ten metres away. Drawing from the force of my large stride, I was already five metres away from the wall. I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and thrust it into the rock to stabilize my body while my other hand released the Dragon Hook which locked onto a rock forty metres above me. After I was roughly forty five metres away from the hostile area, those Saint Tier BOSSes finally lost their aggro on me and gave up on killing me, walking back in the other direction.



When I climbed back up again, Matcha, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K and the others were all waiting to fight.. Wan Er opened her eyes wide as she said, “ So this is how we split up..... The first team, Xiao Yao and I will solo kill a Chi You Horsemen. Matcha and One Second Hero, each of you will aggro two while the rest, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K; all of you will kill one with your teams. I will mark them one by one. Don’t kill the wrong one and don’t let anyone receive too much damage. All of them are standard BOSSes, so they won’t be easy to face. Remember to keep the formation together and not stray too far. Otherwise, if you aggro another team’s BOSS, that would be disastrous.”

Everyone nodded in agreement while Wan Er started to mark them. In front, each of the fifteen Chi You Horsemen had a word above their head.

“ Xiao Yao’s attack target.”

“Li Mu’s attack target.”

“Matcha’s attack target.”

“Ran Min’s attack target.”

.....

The fifteen BOSSes were divided in an instant and I lifted my sword to charge forward while my hands shook a little, releasing a [Great Realm Of Desolation] to one of the monsters. Immediately, the 15 BOSSes’ aggro were on me. Lin Wan Er then shouted, “Advance together! Don’t let our guild’s Pig receive too much damage or else we will all die miserably.....”

Everyone swarmed around the area, each of them raising their sharp blades and charging forward.

I received a fierce slash from one of the Chi You Horsemen while simultaneously, taking another six other attacks. These Saint Tier BOSSes were really violent, even when I had 200% extra defense from [Thousand Layer Cliff], their damage was still impressive. I stubbornly defended against the BOSS without retreating as Thousand League Spring and Darling Duck constantly healed me, saving my levels.

In a matter of seconds, the BOSSes beside me were drawn away. Every 5 man team was able to kill a Saint Tier BOSS as the players were all the top players

from [Zhan Long], it shouldn't be an issue for five men to kill a Saint Tier Boss. Our BOSS was easily dealt with, especially with Lin Wan Er, Yue Qing Qian, Dong Cheng Yue, and Darling Duck in this 5 man team. Our killing speed was very fast. When other BOSSes were still at 50% health, we would have already decimated two BOSSes.

“Hua La. Hua La.....”

Regarding the BOSS' drop rate I was not expecting much but I was pleasantly surprised. To think that a Saint Tier Ring with 9% lifesteal would drop. I threw it over to Wan Er. As for me, I had a Peerless ring and a King's ring, both of which should do fine for me in the short-term.

In a few minutes, the fifteen BOSSes all became corpses while the hundred man from [Zhan Long] didn't take much damage. This truly deserves praise! At this point however, Qing Qian turned around and said, “A patrolling squad has come. There are seventeen Chi You Horsemen!”

# Chapter 640 Combat of Chi You

“Go!”

I held my sword and charged forward once again. This time, I pulled over two Chi You Horsemen, and with Darling Duck’s [Hundred Battles] BUFF, I could take them on relatively easily. On the other hand, Wan Er, Li Mu, Wang Jian, and the others each took one Chi You Horseman to control and killed them. [Zhan Long]’s hundred man team occupied a corner of the main hall, and we were killing this kind of Saint Tier BOSS while spreading out, but we fought in an orderly manner.

As I was killing, I stared at the Pangu’s Axe, which floated in the center of the main hall. A strong opaque aura in the shape of the axe emanated from the fragment. Beside the battleax, was a barbarian who had a sturdy body. He was kneeling on one knee beside the battleax, keeping his silence the entire time. He had not moved at all, even when our group of uninvited guests had entered the 9th Floor of Pangu’s Abyss he did not stir.

Ran Min held his battleax, and asked, “Pangu’s Axe, do we...”

I hastily shook my head, “No...don’t provoke Pangu’s Axe. Let it peacefully sit there. We’ll talk about it after clearing these Chi You Horsemen. Otherwise, if a Super-BOSS came along with a group of Sub-BOSSes, we would get instantly wiped out!”

“Ok!”

.....

We continued on and kept killing. A Chi You Horseman raised his iron spear, and held it high in front of him. A bloody light appeared on the tip of the spear. It was the starting motions for [Chi You’s Single Strike]. Without another thought, I quickly dashed forward. My body sank, and my shoulder smashed into the armpit of the Chi You Horseman. I raised my sword’s hilt, and smashed the area connecting the arm bone and the body of the Horseman!

“Peng!”

“Successful Skill Break!”

I managed to control my timing well, and this was already the Nth time that I managed to successfully interrupt a skill in Pangu’s Abyss.

Li Mu also seemed to be trying to imitate me, and struck the body of a Chi You Horseman while doing the motions of a Skill Break. However, he was pushed back and dealt a [Chi You’s Single Strike], depleting almost 17000 health. His expression quickly changed, “What’s going on? I clearly followed Xiao Yao’s motions exactly, why can’t I successfully perform a skill interruption? Furthermore, I also completed my actions while the monster was only done with 60%-90% of its starting motion...”

Matcha blinked her eyes, and replied, “Your movements aren’t smooth enough. Every single action while interrupting a skill is connected. Everytime boss performs a successful skill break, his movements are exceptionally smooth. Furthermore, all of his movements are completed in almost 0.1 seconds. The faster your movements are, the chances of you performing a successful skill break is even higher!”

Li Mu was stunned, “Finishing one entire set of movements in 0.1 seconds? How is this possible? I’m a Swordsman focused on strength, not a Swordsman focused on agility...”

Matcha laughed, “That’s why. Boss is a Twin Sword Swordsman, and the ability of twin swords to smoothly connect attacks is very strong, and is very suitable for the Pulse Break Style. As for you Li Mu, it’s still better for you to stick to the Battle Reflux Style. Steadily dealing attacks is much more suitable for you...in the history of games, those famous Pulse Break Style players normally look for equipment that can raise their speed. Only like this can they instantly explode out with a set of attacks to break an opponent’s skill.”

Right at that moment, I suddenly approached the body of a Chi You Swordsman. I flicked my Zhen Yue Sword with my left wrist. “Peng”, I struck the wrist of the Chi You Swordsman. I then rapidly threw multiple cuts with my Dragon Reservoir Sword. “Peng”, the blue coloured words “Successful Skill Interrupt” flew up into the air again. This time, I could even break his [Blood Slash] skill. The starting motions of [Blood Slash] took 0.4 seconds at most, and

my two actions were indeed completed in an instant. Furthermore, after performing a successful skill break, the opponent will have a definite time period where he has sluggish movement. I followed up with a violent barrage of [Strength of a Thousand Men]+[Combo]. This Chi You Horseman let out a miserable howl before falling to the ground. With a crashing sound, he dropped a pile of gold as well as a card.

“I’m gonna faint...”

Li Mu furrowed his brow, and said, “Just how does Xiao Yao do it...”

I bent down and picked up the card. With a wave of my hand, the effects of the card appeared in midair. Ze ze, its effect was even mightier than the Hybrid Demon Territory’s Card--Demon Sword Master Card

[Chi You Horseman Card] : Raises the user’s attack by 35% and defense by 25%. Furthermore, it raises the toughness of the user’s mount by 40%. Requires Player Level 110, and lasts for 180 minutes.

.....

“Swoosh!”

I activated the card. Anyway, we definitely have to kill a BOSS next, so there was no need to be conservative now.

It instantly raised my attack and defense by a lot. I could be even more unrestrained while killing monsters this time. The other players in the guild, such as Li Mu, Wang Jian, Song Han, as well as the other players who were of the Battle Reflux Style were bitterly trying to chase after the obscure meaning of the Pulse Break Style, but no one was successful. I could see it clearly, and I also understood why they couldn’t understand it. It was body coordination. The body coordination required by the Pulse Break Style was simply too high. Even if it was Wang Jian, who was nearly a truly top tier player when it came to maneuvers, wouldn’t be able to master it within a short time.

While everyone was silently killing monsters, Wan Er, who was holding her daggers, leapt up. Her twin daggers dealt an attack to each of the two arms of the Chi You Horseman, as her snow white legs wrapped around its armor, and she dealt a heavy blow to the right side of its stomach. With a "peng", a blue

wave surged forth, as the big words "Successful Skill Break" flew into the air.

"F\*ck..."

Li Mu's eyes went round, "This...beauty Cang Tong actually did a successful skill break, has she been secretly learning it the whole time?"

The corner of Wan Er's mouth rose. She used [Blade of the Death God] to take advantage of the successful skill break to deal a torrent of blows on the body of the Sub-BOSS. She quickly retreated after that, as she slightly laughed: "Nope...actually, I helped Li Xiao Yao train with the Pulse Break Style during the days before. Since I was a live target for a whole night, I also roughly know the key points of the Pulse Break Style..."

Li Mu, "..."

Wang Jian, "D\*mn..."

Matcha, "Incredible..."

.....

In the end, after 3 hours of slaughtering, we almost cleared all of the Chi You Horsemen in the main hall of Pangu's Abyss. There were some dangerous situations while we were clearing, and we had even lost a few players. Fortunately, we were able to revive them. On the other hand, the Flying Dragon team that Mu Tian had brought lingered outside Pangu's Abyss for almost 2 hours, before plunging into the curtain of fire. That move had lost a hundred or so of their people, causing them to finally give up on the plunder of Pangu's Abyss. After all, they understood their strengths and weakness and knew that they would just be sending themselves to their own deaths, even if they managed to come down. [Zhan Long]'s Li Mu, Qing Qian, Wang Jian, Dancing Forest, Cang Tong, Cang Yue, and the other core players were all in this abyss. If you wanted to kill this group of people, I'm afraid that you would definitely need the peak level experts such as Fang Ge Que and Q-Sword to personally come. Unfortunately, those two were currently clearing maps and missions to grind levels, and would definitely not become [Zhan Long]'s enemy at the moment. Furthermore, during the imminent Hero's Wings cup, our greatest enemies would be the players from other countries, such as America's Sky Rose, or Korea's KING Combat Squad, and not our own people.

"Sha sha..."

We all stood in front of the fragment of Pangu's Axe with our blades in hand. The corner of Qing Qian's mouth rose, "The most exciting time has come...who's gonna go start the BOSS fight?"

Wan Er laughed as she looked over towards me, "Go, my beloved!"

I rubbed my nose and said, "Pray that I can get Pangu's Axe without angering the BOSS!"

As I said that, I urged my horse forward, and raised my hand. I used a Chi You Horseman Card. After that, I refreshed my [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost Armor]. I charged forward at breakneck pace. "Pa Pa" my warhorse trampled across the ground as it charged up the stairs that led to the centre stage of the main hall. I looked around the surroundings, and sheathed my Zhen Yue Sword. I opened my left hand and grabbed the Pangu's Axe shard!

"Pa!"

A burst of scorching force surged through the handle of Pangu's Axe. This vigorous strength could simply make one go mad. If it was said that Luo Lin fell into the abyss due to the Godly Weapon Despair, then the feeling that Pangu's Axe gave me was enough to make me fall into darkness. I glanced at it as I gripped the Pangu's Axe in my left hand. Even though my level wasn't high enough to equip it, I could already see the stats of this weapon. I only saw a fraction of the stats, but that was already enough to make me almost go mad--

[Pangu's Axe Shard] (Epic God Tier Equipment)

Attack: 38500-52000

Strength: +500

Stamina: +500

Agility: +500

Magic Attack: +500

Additional: Increases the user's attack power by 150% and attack speed by 100%

Additional: Increases the user's one hit kill success rate by 50%

Special: Stats are sealed

Special Skill: [Death God's Allegiance], the power to despise everything. Ignores 75% of all of the target's stats. Also, there is a 50% chance to instantly kill the target.

Introduction: It was said that, during the primordial chaos, Pangu awakened from a dream, and saw that the heavens and earth was in darkness. Then, he used his battleaxe to cleave open the heavens and earth. Since then, the heavens and earth have been separated, and life appeared on the great earth. After cracking open the heavens, Pangu's Axe was burnt and broken apart by the Heavenly Fire, and a majority of the fragments became spirits that rested between the heavens and earth. One of the fragments has fallen to the great earth, and has retained a portion of the strength of Pangu's Axe. When the spirit awakens, it will once again create the original form of Pangu's Axe.

Required Level: ???

Required Prestige: ???

.....

The stats of this weapon were definitely on a level that could scare a group of people to death. I didn't dare go frighten everyone, and I hastily ran backwards. At the same time, the sound of a bell echoed out into my ears--

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, you have obtained the fragment of Pangu's Axe. This is the fragment of one of the strongest weapons within the heavens and earth. Take this fragment of Pangu's Axe and give it to the ruler of your current city, and you will obtain an unimaginable reward!

.....

My heart was extremely excited as I looked towards the distant Wan Er and said: "Wan Er, we're about to strike gold!"

"Ah? We've struck gold? Is Pangu's Axe ours?" Wan Er also excitedly replied.

However, at that moment, a fierce roar suddenly echoed out from behind.



Following that, a formless strength suddenly rushed over, binding the Pangu's Axe in my hand. Following that, the axe was dragged over with an irresistible force!

"Pa!"

Firmly grabbing the axe, the barbarian that was guarding Pangu's Axe slowly stood up. He held the axe in his hands, and looked up. He looked at us with his deep blue eyes. A malicious smile appeared on his lips, as he said, "Under the orders of the Chi You Emperor, I will guard Pangu's Axe. Only this axe can cut through Xuan Yuan's seal and revive the Chi You Emperor. You ants, don't tell me that you want to force the Chi You Emperor to be eternally sealed in the endless space? You're simply dreaming! Prepare to die!"

"Gu dong..."

I took a deep breath, and shouted, "Everyone, prepare for combat!"

As I said that, I got the stats of the BOSS from a close distance, and directly shared it in the team chat--

[Chi You Tribe General • Cang Gu] (Demon Harvest Tier BOSS)

Level: 123

Attack: 11800-13200

Defense: 10500

Health: 250000000

Skills: [Raging Flame Slash] [Combat of Chi You] [Dimension Breaking Slash]  
[Chi You Original Spirit]

Introduction: Cang Gu, a war general of the Chi You tribe who possessed a tyrannical strength. Cang Gu originally lived in the undeveloped wilderness, and was later adopted by Chi You. He was trained to be a military officer that would kill humans like gnats. He lead the Chi You Tribe in wars on all fronts, and has achieved many outstanding military merits for the Chi You Tribe. However, he was defeated during the Battle of the Second Huang Emperor of Chi You. The scattered survivors went to Pangu's Abyss, attempting to use Pangu's Axe to save the soul of Chi You. You must be careful, or else you and your comrades

will be decimated under the strength of Cang Gu.

.....

# Chapter 641 The Startling Skill Break

"Yup..."

I retreated as quickly as I could. Right now, I still didn't have the courage to fight the Chi You Tribe General Cang Gu alone. The stats of this BOSS were too strong, and it was currently the strongest BOSS whose stats we could read.

"Are we still using the same tactics?" Wan Er asked.

I nodded, "Yup, I'll go first. The remaining heavy armor types should just wait for an opportunity to move in. I don't think that the 200% defense buff from the Hidden Dragon Armor can withstand the attack of the Chi You General. All Knights, prepare to use [Heroic Ram] and [Divine Provocation] to control the BOSS' aggro. All in all, don't let the team get destroyed!"

"Ok!" Everyone nodded their heads, and Qing Qian blinked her eyes as she said: "Be careful, Brother Xiao Yao. Getting to level 117 wasn't easy!"

"I know..."

.....

... ..

As I held my Dragon Reservoir Sword, I urged my horse forward. Facing this Chi You General, who had a strength I couldn't estimate, I could only advance like this. I opened my palm and activated [Great Realm of Desolation] and [Blade Spin] together. Furthermore, before the BOSS approached me, I quickly opened my hands to use a [Binding Chains]!

"Peng!"

[Binding Chains] MISSED, and [Black Tortoise Realm] fell upon him. At the same time, I activated [Seven Star Teleportation], as I prepared to run for my life.

"Little brat, aren't you overestimating your own capabilities?"

Cang Gu looked at me, as he let out a cackle. The battleax in his hands flashed as the BOSS charged at me. It threw a [Raging Flame Slash] at my Zhen Yue

Sword as I tried to parry its attack. The fiery flames almost swallowed me up instantly, and immediately I felt my entire body burning. My health plummeted--

“26217 ! ”

While my body was enveloped in intense pain, I didn't retreat. I sent out a chain of slashes with my two swords as I waited for the cooldown of my skills to end. [Combo]+[Strength of a Thousand Men] whistled over, and I used all of my strength to control this BOSS.

The smile in Cang Gu's mouth grew even bigger. As he held Pangu's Axe, he suddenly charged over with an explosion of speed. The image of Chi You's fierce spirit appeared on the axe, and it suddenly smashed into my shoulder. Immediately, it seemed like an enormous palm was imprinted on my Hidden Dragon Armor, causing my [Wall of Dou Qi] to shatter with a bang. At the same time, an enormous damage number flew up into the air--

“37971 ! ”

.....

Wang Jian held his sword as his expression went pale white: “Motherf\*cker, we can't let Brother Xiao Yao solo that BOSS anymore, he'll be instantly killed! Everyone, follow me!”

As he said that, he had already begun charging over. He activated [Glacial Armor] as he slightly sank and pierced his blade through the Chi You General. He then spun around and activated [Halberd Whirlwind] causing the Chi You General to slightly tremble. He turned around, and threw a normal attack with Pangu's Axe sending Wang Jian flying back. He was about to continue chasing after Wang Jian, but Li Mu's [Covering Sword Slash] unexpectedly exploded on his face.

“Screw off!”

He raised his combat boots, and kicked Li Mu with one leg, sending the man and horse flying. It was simply too brutal.

Wan Er and Qing Qian charged over together. [Ice Pick Whirlpool] and [Grip of the Firefox] both exploded on the BOSS' body, and a total of 7 peak [Zhan Long]

players surrounded the BOSS. However, it was at this moment when Cang Gu suddenly stomped on the earth. With a “Peng”, a few cyclones oscillated outwards. The wind elements surrounded Pangu’s Axe, and in the next moment, the BOSS let out a loud roar. The battleax continuously slashed the air like thunder, and every single one of our 7 people got hit. None of us managed to dodge it, and one by one, damage numbers flew into the air--

“17272 ! ”

“24117 ! ”

“22190 ! ”

.....

The damage wasn’t very high, but every slash of this [Dimension Breaking Slash] had already torn apart space, forming a crack in the dimension. The violent stream of air formed a confined space, and we were all thrown into the air, trapped in a whirlwind. The effect lasted a whole 25 seconds. How could we keep this up?!

“Die!”

The Chi You Section General let out an angry roar, and threw a slice into Old K’s chest, forcing him to activate [Against the Heavens]. If not, he would’ve been instantly killed. Raging flames suddenly appeared on Pangu’s Axe, and when he turned around, he threw another slash. This time, Wang Jian had no way of defending, and was killed after letting out a miserable howl. His body, along with his horse was sent flying, turning into a corpse.

“Swoosh!”

On the ground, Matcha rode her mount and struck the General’s back with a “Peng”. At the same time, she activated [Divine Provocation]. She quickly retreated raising her shield in front of her. [Phantom Holy Shield] successfully activated!

“Peng peng peng...”

Three attacks hit her one after another. The Pangu’s Axe carried the power of [Raging Flame Slash], and [Combat of Chi You]. Under the barrage of attacks like

that, no matter what kind of defense our Matcha had, she would still get killed.

At the same time, Cang Gu charged forward in a frenzy. He swung his battleax, and killed off a group of long distance players including Lian Po and Fox. Within the blink of an eye, our [Zhan Long]'s hundred man team was swept up into the BOSS' savage strategy.

My horse and I were trapped in midair, and I couldn't help but shout: "Healers, can you [Purify] us?! We can't budge at all! We can't use our skills to control the BOSS!"

Darling Duck hastily used a group [Purify]. However, a few MISSES appeared as the [Purify] failed.

"Peng!"

I saw a figure get flung into the air by the BOSS. Wolf gripped his dagger as he miserably rolled on the ground towards us. His face was covered with scratches from the ground. He weakly raised a hand and cast [Awakening Spell] on Wan Er. He loudly shouted: "Little miss, it's up to you now!"

Wan Er's body loosened as the imprisoning effect of [Dimension Breaking Slash] wore off. When she landed, she instantly opened her hand and gave Qing Qian an [Awakening Spell]. She shouted, "Melon, I'll let you free Brother Xiao Yao!"

The second she was free, Qing Qian quickly cast [Awakening] on me as well. Immediately, my seal was also dispelled. The Flying Scythe War Horse let out a neigh, and I activated [Assault] before landing. With a "Swoosh", I charged towards the back of the Chi You Section General, and I violently struck him with a "Peng". [Fierce Ice Blade] pierced through the back of his chest armor, immediately pulling all the aggro towards me. I urged my horse to retreat, and let the Ancient Tiger God shield me. At the same time, I shouted: "Healers that haven't been killed, first revive all the dead Healers, then revive Wang Jian and the others! Pay attention to your own Mana, don't get drained out! Everyone disperse, don't let the BOSS wreak destruction!"

Darling Duck kept her own task in mind, and locked her heals on me, while Thousand League Spring went to go revive those killed players. As for Dong Cheng, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, and the other Mages, they relied on

[Dimensional Leap] to escape. We were finally starting to maintain a rhythm of attack. They must deal damage, or else, I don't know when we would finally kill the BOSS.

Like this, I could hold my own against the BOSS for roughly 15 seconds. After that, I let One Second Hero and the other Knights use [Divine Provocation] to pull away the aggro. Each of them would withstand 1-2 hits, and another person would then use [Divine Provocation] to shift the aggro to a different person. This was also the current greatest value for Knights. Practically every guild would nurture a group of high stat Knights. Only like this could they kill those BOSSes that were originally impossible to kill. For example, the current Chi You Tribe General that was right in front of our eyes. Even I couldn't withstand it. This was simply not a BOSS that any single player could take on.

"Sha sha..."

I set up a few [Azure Dragon Crossbow]'s on the ground, and simultaneously, I also used the effect of [Seven Star Teleportation] to control the BOSS, making him waste a bit more time on running. If not, every second would mean an extra death for the players of [Zhan Long].

Everyone was smarter this time around. A few Assassins stopped fighting directly with the BOSS, and instead waited for the BOSS to use [Dimension Breaking Chain Slash] first. Once Li Mu, Matcha, and the others were imprisoned, they would be responsible for activating [Awakening Spell] to dispel the sealing. Like this, we continued repeating the pattern. After roughly 50 minutes passed, we finally grinded this Super BOSS' health down to 10%.

"Be careful, I have a bad feeling..." Wan Er distantly said.

I slashed my Dragon Reservoir Sword and dealt another heavy blow while laughing, "It's like this every time..."

Just as I finished speaking and Cang Gu had finished killing almost 170 people of our players, he finally used his pre-death counter attack. He let out an angry roar towards the sky. The Pangu's Axe began to tremble violently and he angrily roared: "Unyielding Spirit of Chi You, please let your Original Spirit descend, and help me achieve victory against these valiant enemies!"

[Chi You's Original Spirit]!

"Swoosh!"

A blood red light was concentrated on the BOSS's body. At this moment, Wan Er suddenly raised her white arm, and a ringing sound echoed out from her breastplate. The [Heaven's Ode] from her Wintry Clothes of a Minstrel was activated!

"Swoosh!"

The sound waves swept outwards, sealing the Chi You Section General's super skill mode. She hastily looked towards me, and shouted: "Big idiot, stop looking at me! You have 5 seconds to interrupt this [Chi You's Original Spirit] skill!"

I shuddered. I finally understood why Wan Er made a move to stun the BOSS after 75% of the super skill's starting motion had passed. I felt that she wanted me to find a way to interrupt this move!

.....

... ..

I urged my horse to charge forward. My eyes swept across the shape of the BOSS. I looked upwards, and the balance of my body shifted slightly backwards. Yup, it's like this!

I smashed into him from the front. The Zhen Yue Sword flashed and smashed on to the BOSSes abdomen. After that, I raised my twin swords with both hands to violently smash his shoulder. With a "peng", a damage count flew up into the air, but the skill interrupt wasn't successful. There was still 2.7 seconds!

I hastily whirled my body around, and I tried a second time. I smashed against the BOSSes waist, while my elbow slammed against his neck!

"Peng peng!"

It didn't succeed again, but the body of the BOSS slightly trembled for a moment. The [Chi You's Original Spirit] that was trapped in midair was also affected a bit. It must be that my strength wasn't high enough!

Once I thought about this, everything else didn't matter!

[Dragon Transformation]!



[Peerless]!

[Dragon Transformation] would substantially raise my attack, while [Peerless] gave me 7 seconds of time, where I would ignore all blocks, defenses, and resistances. Furthermore, it was a super attacking skill that also increased my health and mana!

Desperately, I slashed at the BOSS' leg with my Zhen Yue Sword and then smashed the hilt of my Dragon Reservoir Sword into the BOSS' hip. Right as it shuddered, I urged my horse forward, and I stored up all my strength in my elbow to heavily smash against the BOSS' neck. Immediately, Cang Gu's entire body shook, and the bloody Original Spirit in the air instantly dispersed. A blue light surged forward, and the three enormous words appeared in the air--

"Successful Skill Break!"

.....

... ..

"F\*ck, we succeeded!" Li Mu was extremely surprised.

Even I didn't imagine that it would be a success. However, at that moment, Cang Gu awakened from [Heaven's Ode], and he had an indignant expression, "If we dueled one against one, none of you guys would be my opponent. You despicable b\*st\*rds, you are not worthy to be called the descendants of Chi You!"

"We're not even his descendants..."

Wang Jian laughed, and began a violent volley of attacks. A group of peak players from [Zhan Long] continued the attack. Qing Qian, Wolf, and the others used [Grip of the Firefox], [Flying Dagger], and other skills to deal as much damage as they could on the BOSS. We aimed to use the least amount of time possible to kill this Chi You Tribe General. He was too fast at killing our players. In the past sixty minutes, ten of our players had already died three times, making it impossible to revive them again.

# Chapter 642 Hand of Hell

“Careful, people are coming from above!” Wang Jian suddenly looked up. We could see a group of figures through the smoke that were climbing down from the seventh floor to the eighth. As before, our activity had not gone unnoticed by other \*ssholes.

“Who is it?”

I blocked the BOSS’ attacks and shouted, “Figure out which guild they’re from!”

Wang Jian grit his teeth, “It’s Jiu Li City’s [Emperor’s Blood]. The guildmaster Dragon Emperor is leading a team of around a hundred players.”

“No matter. We’ll just rush to finish before they get here. Once we kill this BOSS, then we’ll have no problem!”

“Yup!”

.....

I swung my two swords, cutting right into Cang Gu’s body and sliced up his body inch by inch. Under the concentrated fire from all of the players of [Zhan Long], Cang Gu’s health quickly fell. In the blink of an eye, it hit the bottom. Wan Er raised her dagger and said, “They’ve already reached the ninth floor. We can’t let up at all. Everyone, kill the BOSS. Li Xiao Yao, use your big skills!”

I nodded and retreated several steps. Then, with a roar, I opened my palm, and began summoning lightning. In the next moment, dark clouds blotted out the ceiling. One after another, slivers of lightning dragons shot down from the sky and began to attack the area around the BOSS. high damage numbers flew up. Even though everyone was throwing attacks, my [Thundering Heavens] still dealt more damage. The burning electricity swallowed up Cang Gu’s body. In that moment, we finally finished off this strong BOSS’ health!

“Argahh....”

With an agonizing scream, Cang Gu knelt to the ground and I leveled up to

118. “Peng!” Cang Gu’s body split open and the ancient battle axe shard as well as a pile of equipment all dropped. He he, since I was the one that killed the BOSS, the drop rate was extremely good. There was a total of four equipments. Li Mu glanced around and hinted, “Guildmaster, besides you, no one dares to touch these equipments. Hurry up, don’t let [Emperor’s Blood] assassins steal our spoils!”

I nodded and leapt off my horse. I then gathered all of Chi You General Cang Gu’s equipments. I threw the Pangu Battle Axe straight into my bag. I received a notification indicating it was a quest item. The 100 people in the team would all receive the rewards for the quest that comes with the battle axe. Basically, anyone who laid eyes on it would benefit from it. Knowing that was a very satisfying feeling as lot of the other people wouldn’t get the equipments from the quest. Then that would have meant that they would’ve come for nothing.

I glanced at the equipments that Cang Gu dropped. Besides the battle axe, there was a total of three equipments. One of them was an impressive armor with a tiger head imprinted on the front. There was also a pair of steel smelted battle boots. Then there was a necklace that had a flaming long sword pendant. It glowed with a war-like glow. Looks like these three equipments were pretty good. I first held out the armor. When I waved my hand over it, the stats appeared——

[Chi You General’s Armor] (Divine Tier)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 1880

Strength: +135

Stamina: +132

Agility: +130

Magic: +127

Additional: Increases the user’s defense and magic defense by 55%

Additional: Increases the user’s attack power by 25%

Additional: Increases the user’s MaxHP by 5000

Special: [Combat of Chi You] , activates the power of the Chi You Tribe and deals an armor breaking damage and ignores the targets defense. Furthermore, it increases the user's attack power by 40%. Uses up 70 points of Rage and requires 20 minutes of cool down.

Introduction: The armor of Chi You General Cang Gu, this is an armor that was smithed by an ancient godly blacksmith. Legend has it that people who wear this breast armor are impenetrable to blades.

Required Level: 115

Required Charm: 150

.....

Yup, this is a strong piece of armor. It's also a Divine Tier equipment, one of the top tier equipments at the current stage. Even my Hidden Dragon Armor is just a Divine Tier. However, due to the [Thousand Layer Cliff] that my Hidden Dragon Armor had, it was considered a defense type equipment, while the Chi You General Chest Plate was truly an attack based equipment. Besides the 25% increase, there was also the [Combat of Chi You] special skill.

I raised the Chi You General's Chestplate and said, "Ok, all heavy armor players ROLL. I wish you all luck. I won't join in, since I like my Hidden Dragon Armor's stats more!"

Li Mu, Old K, Wang Jian, Yao Yan, and Matcha, the top heavy players of [Zhan Long] all rolled. It was a good thing if any one of them got the armor and so I wasn't upset about it at all. Everyone rolled and after half a minute, Wang Jian received the armor. Unfortunately, his level was too low. He was going to switch it on when he was done with the quest.

Continuing onto the second piece of equipment, I raised the battle boots. I waved my hand over it and revealed the stats. As expected, this was another Chi You General equipment——

[Chi You General Combat Boots] (Divine Tier Equipment)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 1700

Strength: +132

Stamina +130

Agility: +130

Magic: +125

Additional: Increases the user's defense and magic defense by 27%

Additional: Increases the user's movement speed by 50%

Additional: Increases the user's attack power by 20%

Special: [Void Walker], Increases the user's movement speed by 90% and attack speed by 40%, furthermore, increases the time the user can stay in the air by 100%

Introduction: The battle boots of the Chi You General Cang Gu. This is a pair of battle boots that was created by ancient godly blacksmiths. It has limitless godly power. Legend has it that anyone who wears these battle boots will have unlimited capacity for maneuver techniques

Required Level: 115

Required Charm

.....

I raised the Chi You Combat boots and smiled, "Another treasure. Well, you guys continue to ROLL for it. I have the Yuan Rong Combat Boots so I don't need them...."

Wolf couldn't help but add, "Brother Xiao Yao! How can you not want any of the rewards? How good can your Yuan Rong Boots be that makes it better than these Chi You General Battle Boots? You can't just let go of everything, you're our boss. We can't let you become a nub...."

I waved my hand over the boots, showing them the stats. The attack power increase of 1000 points, and the 22% increase in attack stats were enough to make Wolf speechless. The brat rubbed his nose and smiled, "Alright alright, I was wrong. Brother Xiao Yao is impressive, secretly getting all of these top notch equipment. Motherf\*cker, I didn't know at all..."

I laughed, “Don’t worry. When I want equipment, I will fight for it. Otherwise, the beating I’ve gotten over the past nine floors of the Pangu Abyss will have been for nothing...”

Wolf nodded, “Yup, then Wang Jian, you and the other Heavy Armor players roll. It really isn’t fair, to think that the last boss would give out all heavy armor equipments...”

Wang Jian, Matcha, Yao Yan, Moon Feather, and Tang Xin all began to ROLL. This time, Yao Yan had the most luck and got the boots. She was so happy that she was jumping up and down. She grinned to Wan Er, “Look Wan Er, I just entered [Zhan Long] and managed to get these boots! He he, these are even better than Q-Sword’s, Jian Feng Han’s and the other top heavy armor players’ boots!”

Wan Er smiled back, “Well that doesn’t mean you’re stronger than them. Keep up the good work though...”

“Yup!”

.....

I then raised the last necklace, the last drop we got from this place. I raised my hand and waved it over the pendant. Lines of stats floated out and illuminated the night sky. At that moment, everyone was stunned. Morhterf\*cker, we actually got a Demon Harvest equipment. The last three Demon Harvest BOSSes were not killed in vain——

[Hell’s God of War Ares’ Broken Blade] (Demon Harvest)

Strength: +157

Stamina: +155

Agility: +152

Magic: +150

Additional: Increases the user’s attack power by 50% and user’s magic defense by 70%

Additional: Increases the user’s MaxHP by 7000

Additional: Increases the attack power of attack type skills by 15%

Special: [Thunderbolt] Increases the user's attack speed by 100%

Special: Demon Equipment Number 1002

Special: [Hand of Hell], summons a demonic arm that deals a 100% chance of Binding. Lasts 15 seconds. Only deals 66% of the effect on BOSSes. Uses 50 points of rage, Cooldown lasts 20 minutes

Required Level: 115

Required Charm: 220

Required Class: Heavy Armor Classes

.....

Seeing the necklace's stats, I couldn't help but feel moved by it. Especially that special skill [Thunderbolt]. It increases attack speed by 100%. That's practically a god tier stat for all Pulse Break Players. After all, you need a high attack speed in order to break the opponent's skill before they attack. Yup, I'm going to ROLL for this necklace. And so, I raised the necklace and said, "This is what I need. Here, heavy armor players all line up to ROLL...."

Beside me, Wan Er suddenly piped up, "Don't. The equipment requires 220 points of charm. I think.... Any players that have less than 200 charm shouldn't ROLL for this, since they don't fulfill the requirements. All they'll end up doing is selling it for money. Rather than handing it to the players with a lot of money, why don't we just make our own people stronger. Besides, its written in the rules for [Zhan Long] grinding, any equipment that requires charm, then the players who ROLL for it must have at least 90% of the charm. Otherwise, the team leader can take away the ROLL ...."

Dong Cheng counted it out and said, "So, any heavy armor level 110 players with over 198 points of charm, step forward for this amazing necklace. Don't miss this chance...."

Li Mu and Wang Jian both raised their hands. Li Mu smiled, "Well well, it must be fate that we three are the last left...."

Wang Jian rubbed his nose and smiled, "Don't, you guys just roll. I've already

gotten two Divine Tier Equipments in this quest. However, every time we fight the BOSS, I don't even get into the Top 5 in terms of contribution. I don't even have the face to fight for more. Boss, you and Brother Xiao Yao roll!"

I looked over at Li Mu and smiled, "Then I'm winning for sure! Li Mu has crap luck with ROLLS!"

Li Mu cursed, "F\*ck you, come on let's do this!"

"Shua Shua!" The two dice rolled on the ground and finally fell on their numbers. Two big numbers popped up——

"94 ! "

"1 ! "

.....

Tears nearly welled up in Li Mu's eyes, "F\*ck you, I'm going to go kill myself. How could I lose so badly..."

I was laughing so hard that tears rolled down my cheek. I then put on the [Broken Blade of Hell's God] necklace. This really was fate. What should be mine, will end up mine. I had a warm feeling on my neck radiating from the necklace. The stats were incredible. On top of that, the special skills were amazing too. During the battle of the Hero's Wings Cup, these special skills will be extremely useful. Thinking about it now, I was taking the Pulse Break Style at the moment, but I had a total of six special skills on me. Later on, if there were any materials published on the Drunken Sword Style, then maybe, I'll be the first player to combine the Drunken Sword and Pulse Break Style?

I glanced at my stats and felt a sense of accomplishment——

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon Rider)

Level: 118

Attack: 10010-12528

Defense: 10168

Health: 51617

Magic: 12970



Charm: 406

CBN Battlenet Rankings: 12

.....

“Hey....”

Wan Er softly bumped against my shoulder and smiled, “Pig, stop being so full of yourself. The players from [Emperor’s Blood] are here. Who knows what they want to say...”

# Chapter 643 Brilliant Fire Emperor

I lifted my head to take a look. As expected, Dragon Emperor, the level 115 Knight, had brought a group of players here. They had come straight from the eighth floor and landed on the ninth floor. All the monsters here had been cleared out by us, [Zhan Long], so they shouldn't have anything to argue over with us. The only problem was, the corpse of the BOSS Cang Gu was just beside my leg. They should've seen it already. So what exactly did they come down the 9th floor for? Could it be that they want pick a fight with us?

.....

Dragon Emperor raised his long halberd as he urged his horse forward. He smiled, "I've heard that Ba Huang City has an epic tier map called Pangu's Abyss. Yet, I didn't expect that [Zhan Long] would arrive here before us and kill the BOSS first. So unfortunate....."

I climbed onto my mount, pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword to face him directly. I chuckled and said, "Yeah, it certainly is very unfortunate. Otherwise, we wouldn't been able to see a group of people getting miserably PKed because they were trying to steal the BOSS.

[Emperor's Blood] vice-guild leader, Blue Dragon Emperor raised his indigo sword and said, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, we didn't come here to fight [Zhan Long] to the death. Since you have already taken the BOSS down, why don't you give this area to us. We're only here to gather herbs."

"Gather Herbs?" Wan Er was somewhat stunned as she immediately glanced around the whole area. It was only then that she notice the many different herbs growing on the walls on the ninth floor. Some of them were even Tier 10 Demon God Grass. Consequently, this little beauty looked at me with a face of joy. "Pig, we can first harvest the herbs before leaving ....."

The muscles on my face twitched a little as I said to her, "Others just said that they came here to gather herbs and now, you want to gather the herbs before leaving? This is obviously putting us against them ah....."

However, even though I said otherwise, I still unsheathed my Zhen Yue Sword. With two swords in my hands, I chuckled, "I'm sorry. We came to Pangu's Abyss planning to monopolise everything here. All of the monsters here have all been killed by the brothers of [Zhan Long]. Just to kill our way through to the 9th floor, many of our brothers from [Zhan Long] have sacrificed their levels to get here. Friends from [Emperor's Blood], I hope you can give us [Zhan Long] some respect and give this entire Pangu's Abyss to us, members of Ba Huang City. I believe that Jiu Li City too has many similar high-level maps like that of Pangu's Abyss."

Indignantly, Blue Dragon Emperor roared, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, just what are you exactly trying to imply here? Are you that greedy? Even after you killed the BOSS, you still want the herbs? What exactly do you think our [Emperor's Blood] is?"

Li Mu then swiftly lifted his long sword and commanded, "[Zhan Long], get into battle formations, prepare for battle!"

Old K, One Second Hero, Wolf and the other members then hurriedly raised their swords and crossbows and started to get into position. The front line was made up of Li Mu, Wang Jian, Bai Qi, Yue Qing Qian and Star Blade, all of whom were famous players in Ba Huang City. In terms of strength, sending 30% of our troops would have been enough to crush the an opponent that didn't even have a hundred men on their team

.....

... ..

"Sh\*t....."

Dragon Emperor lifted his long halberd. He glared at me and said, "Guildmaster Xiao Yao Zi Zai, if I don't remember wrongly, [Zhan Long]'s motto was to fight for the weak. If you were to act like this today against us weaklings, don't you think it's a little hypocritical?"

I couldn't help but laugh. I stabbed my Zhen Yue Sword into a stone slab in front of him with a "keng" sound and coldly said, "Fighting for the weak. Then who exactly is the weak? [Emperor's Blood] counts on their weak strength to steal [Zhan Long]'s hard-fought rewards. To the weakling who has provoked the

strong, whether or not I kill them is of no consequence. But do you think I'm stupid? Did you think mentioning my motto of "Fighting for the weak" would make me submit to you? Dragon Emperor, having said so, you should act more carefully. [Zhan Long] is a guild that fights for the weak. But more importantly.....we will never be bullied! Come! If you have the guts, try to advance past my sword. If you dare to come, we will fight with you!"

As I said that, I looked towards Wan Er and whispered, "Dear, why don't you take some people to harvest the herbs!"

Wan Er cheerfully nodded her head and took Dong Cheng, Qing Qian and the other sisters to gather the Demon God Grass around the walls. Meanwhile, I lead Li Mu, Wang Jian and Ran Min to maintain the defense line with the other core fighting powers of [Zhan Long].

Dragon Emperor mounted his war horse, and grit his teeth. Despite his fury, he didn't seem to have any plan. Putting up a brave front was a frightening idea but if he were to retreat in front of the players from his guild, he wouldn't have any face left. Therefore, he was left seated on his warhorse for a long time without any sort of plan.

.....

... ..

After roughly 20 minutes, all the Demon God Grass that was growing on the wall behind me was gathered clean. Wan Er looked at me and smiled, "My [Herb Gathering] has finally levelled to 12 ....."

I nodded and smiled, "That's good.....Let's retreat then. Let everyone return to the city!"

"We can't....."

Wan Er looked at [Emperor's Blood] and said, "[Emperor's Blood] hasn't left yet. They will wait for our main strength to leave first and kill the remaining members in the hall. That won't be good....."

I thought and glanced at Dragon Emperor and said, "[Emperor's Blood] Guildmaster, are you planning to waste more time with [Zhan Long] here? I'm thinking that [Emperor's Blood] won't even make it into the top sixteen of the

Chinese Servers for the Hero's Wing's Cup at this rate. Why don't you go and grind your levels and equipments?"

Dragon Emperor bit his lip and said reluctantly, "Brothers, let's go!"

I softly smiled as I looked at the large group of [Emperor's Blood] players make their leave. It was only when they had completely left did I pull out a City Return Scroll to Tian Ling City. I then shouted, "Let's all return back to the city and to King Rob where we'll receive our rewards!"

Everyone took out their city return scroll together and instantaneously, countless rays of light swept across as 100 players left the area back to the city.

.....

... ..

As I lead the elites of [Zhan Long] back to the Imperial Palace, I could see many players from the three big cities all rushing to complete the procedures to register as a member of Tian Ling City. However, since this was no longer the first day of opening, King Rob was no longer the person in charge of the registration process. Instead official secretaries were positioned outside the main hall to be in charge.

My Flying Scythe War Horse neighed loudly as it swiftly rode into the main hall. Behind, Wan Er, Qing Qian, Li Mu and the other members were all following me.

I slid off my mount and retrieved the fragment of Pangu's Axe from my bag. I then walked forward and presented it to King Rob, "Your Majesty, we have returned from Pangu's Abyss and have brought you a most valuable treasure....."

King Rob asked astoundedly, "Young warrior, what have you brought?"

I lifted the fragment and said, "This, this fragment of Pangu's Axe....."

"What?"

!"

King Rob trembled a little as he stood there in shock, "Pangu's Axe.....It has finally seen daylight again, this....."

On the side, Princess Pearl joyfully exclaimed, "Congratulations Lord Father for obtaining a fragment of Pangu's Axe!"

Prince Theodore added, "Huh? I heard Pangu's Abyss was guarded by the strongest members of the Chi You Tribe? Has this adventurer actually gone to Pangu's Abyss and killed that Chi You Tribe General Cang Gu already?"

I nodded my head in agreement, "Yes Sir. My party members and I have already killed Cang Gu. That's how we were able to obtain Pangu's Axe!"

"Good, good, good!"

King Rob joyfully agreed three times and said, "With this Pangu's Axe, our Tian Ling Empire will stand a better chance in defeating the Hybrid Demon Army in the north, this is very good! Theodore, I'll bestow this Pangu's Axe for you to use. Just in time too since you don't have a good weapon at the moment."

Theodore knelt with one knee on the floor as he shouted, "Many thanks to Lord Father! I will not dishonour your command!"

The Second Prince Owen then mentioned, "Lord Father, I know of a famous weaponsmith living by the Northern Seas. He has collected many rare and precious metals. With his talent, maybe he would be able to forge a real godly weapon infused with Pangu's spirit using the fragment of Pangu's Axe."

King Rob nodded his head and said, "Ok, it will be done as you said!"

Princess Pearl smiled brightly as she reminded him from the side, "Lord Father, you've forgotten to reward these adventurers who have brought the Pangu's Axe to you.....They are all waiting for you....."

King Rob laughed heartily as he stood up and looked at us, saying, "Adventurers, you are the pride of Tian Ling City. Come, you have helped this lone king to retrieve Pangu's Axe. Here is a reward deserving of your deeds!"

.....

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, you have helped King Rob in his task to retrieve and reforge the Pangu's Axe and exterminate Hybrid Demons at Pangu's Abyss. Your contributions are worth 3928 points and you have received

a SSS tier reward!

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, you have obtained 30 charm, 1 level, 40000 gold coins, and your reputation in Tian Ling City has increased. Furthermore, you've been awarded the following items: [Brilliant Fire Emperor] (Divine Tier Equipment . Superior)!

.....

" Brilliant Fire Emperor?"

I was momentarily stunned, what exactly is this?

I opened my inventory to take a look, and to my awe, it was a long sword with blazing fire and smoke around it. On the blade appeared the three words "Brilliant Fire Emperor". Tsk, is this my new sword?

Lifting it out of the sheath, the raging flames soared a few metres into the air with a "hua" sound. The grandeur of this sword was certainly not subtle. It completely won over my Zhen Yue Sword. As I looked at its stats, I understood that Divine Tier Equipment were truly not normal. The most important part was that it had a high level requirement, so its attack power was pretty high. I can finally upgrade my secondary weapon -- --

Brilliant Fire Emperor (Divine Tier Equipment . Superior)

Attack: 4120-4750

Strength: +137

Stamina: +135

Agility: +134

Magic: +130

Additional: Increases user's attack power by 50%

Additional: Increases user's flame splash damage by 40%

Additional: Increases the user's attack speed by 40%

Special: [Raging Flames], after attacking a target, there's a 50% chance of

inflicting a burn effect, causing 50% of the weapon's damage for 7 seconds.

Special: Extremely durable. Durability decreases 50% slower.

Introduction: Brilliant Fire Emperor, In the ancient times, flames scorched the earth and demons and beast laid chaos. The human world was bereaved with death and battle. The ancient gods had all died in battle. When their weapons fell upon the earth, they was smelted by the fire on the earth. Finally, after tens of thousand of years, it turned into a godly weapon. That weapon is this Brilliant Fire Emperor.

Required Level: 118

Required Charm: 250

Required profession: Swordsman

.....

After looking at the stats of the Brilliant Fire Emperor, I was elated. Not mentioning the boost in attack power, that special durability was something I liked a lot. The speed at which the weapon degraded was slowed to 50% the normal rate. Everytime I fixed my equipment, it was after it had broke before I could repair it. The Dragon Reservoir Sword's durability would never decrease so it wasn't an issue but my Zhen Yue Sword would always break first. With this Brilliant Fire Emperor, I could fight much longer than usual. This weapon was definitely to my liking!

With a "ka" sound, I switched out my Zhen Yue Sword for the Brilliant Fire Sword. My attack has risen so much without me knowing. Besides, my current two swords..... the Dragon Reservoir Sword had a magical dragon appearance to it while the Brilliant Fire Emperor had a very fiery and heaven-defying look; both looked absolutely grandeur and high tier.

.....

I looked at the Zhen Yue Sword. This was the sword that Wan Er had spent a lot of RMB to help me buy. Currently, the game's old equipment was being outshadowed by the new equipment quickly. This Zhen Yue Sword has helped me in countless fights and can be said to have reached its peak.



Beside me, the beautiful little miss smiled pleasantly, "Pig, is this the weapon you were rewarded with? How many contribution points did you have to exchange for this?"

"3928 contribution points.....Wan Er, what did you get?"

"I only had around 2400 contribution points, and so I got a pair of Saint Tier shoes. I'll probably sell it!"

"Ok. I'm swapping out the Zhen Yue Sword, what should I do with it? Should I sell it for money and take you out to eat some good food, how about that?"

Wan Er laughed as she replied, "Dummy, we need to deal with it accordingly. The level requirement for Zhen Yue Sword is only 95, it'd be a much better idea to leave it for Meng Yao!"

"Okay....."

.....

At that moment, Old K raised his axe and said, "Motherf\*cker, that Enchanted Painting is still dominating the arena. She's beaten a lot of our elites from the Second Division. How about we go and take a look!"

Li Mu replied, "Okay, Let's go to look at what kind of demon this girl is!"

# Chapter 644 - A Duel Between Experts

“How about we go and look?” I asked Wan Er.

Wan Er turned around without another word and said, “Hurry up!”

.....

A line of core [Zhan Long] players jogged to the East Gate Plaza. As expected, there were several thousand players surrounding the arena. It was a sea of people. Most of them whooped and shouted. Looks like after Enchanted Painting fought on the Hero's Stage for a day, she'd already won the support of many Tian Ling City players.

I squeezed my way into the crowd and found a good position on the border of the Hero's Stage. I stood up straight to look. Enchanted Painting was a 20 or so year old female player. She was a solid 8, but her attitude made her a 9. In regards to her maneuvers, then that was even more amazing. I could tell that her equipments were all top tier. I could see the glow of Saint Tier and Divine Tier equipments on her from head to toe. It was pretty impressive.

She held a crimson broadsword in one hand. Enchanted Painting stood on the stage with one hand on her hip and she smiled, “I've already gotten a total of 270,000 Gold on this stage, is there really no one else here who wants to fight? This is 270,000 RMB we're talking about.... You just have to pay 27,000. If you win against me, then you get all of the reward gold. Does anyone want to try?”

A knight in the middle of the crowd leapt off his horse and pulled out his sword, shouting, “Let me try!”

Everyone turned towards him. It was one of [Prague]'s team leaders. His name was “Traveler”, and he was a level 112 knight. He leapt onto the stage and landed. He stood up right in front of Enchanted Painting. Looks like he's pretty skilled. Furthermore, it was one of the experts that Six Ya brought to [Prague] so he must be pretty strong.

Enchanted Painting smiled and looked at Traveler and said, “Well well, one of [Prague]'s team leaders. Please pay 27,000 G. Afterwards, we'll fight!”

Traveler nodded. “Sha La!” a heavy pouch of money thudded onto the ground. With this, the reward pool was practically 300,000 G. So enticing!

“Come!”

A red flag suddenly dropped down. Traveler swept out his sword and smiled, “I heard that you’re Little Demon’s sister. Tell the truth. Even though I’m not familiar with the Pulse Break Style, I still liked Little Demon’s style. I hope that you don’t disappoint me!”

Enchanted Painting pointed her sword at her opponent, “Come at me!”

Mounts weren’t allowed on the stage, nor could players summon their pets, thus it became known as “Traitor of Swordplays”. Swordsmen, mages, and Assassins had the most advantage on the stage, whereas knights suffered slightly less advantage. However, seeing as Traveler had the guts to come forward, then he must have at least some confidence in winning.

Traveler dashed forward with his sword pointed at his target. Before he even got close, he dealt an [Assault]!

“Shua!”

He charged forward in a straight line. Enchanted Painting smiled and stuck her 34Cs out. Then, with full confidence, she dashed out and dodged Traveler’s attack. Then, with a sweep of her sword, “Ka Cha!” She cut right into her opponent’s shoulder. A large 4771 flew up into the air. Enchanted Painting was slightly stunned. Clearly she did not think that Traveler’s defense would be so high. Furthermore, even without a mount, Traveler appeared to have at least 40,000 health.

“Ha!”

Traveler suddenly turned around. “Peng!” He slammed his golden shield against Enchanted Painting’s shoulder. Then, he threw a [Flame Axe], creating a flame that looked like a meteor.

Sparks flew and Enchanted Painting retreated several steps. She then slammed her sword into her opponent’s sword with terrifying accuracy. Light flashed from her left arm’s wrist guard. With a low roar, she pushed away her opponent’s [Flame Axe]. Blue light exploded and a large “Successful Skill Break”

flew into the sky. Following the skill break, the target would have a moment when their movements were slower than usual. Enchanted Painting understood this and so she immediately dashed forward, threw a [Combo] in that small window. Her blade glowed red and she threw a [ Break Armor Slash]. She then followed the attack with an attack where electricity ran through her arm and shot out at her target. Two large damage numbers flew up——

“9011 ! ”

“20197 ! ”

.....

[Break Armor Slash], ignores 50% of the target’s defense. Break Armor Slash’s effect lasts for two seconds. [Lightning Cut] Increases the user’s attack power by 80% with the power of lightning. These two skills together were definitely the ultimate finishing attack.

Traveler practically didn’t have any offensive chances. After that one attack, she retreated and waited for the opponent to attack again. This woman really did have a deep understanding of the Pulse Break Style——Strike Last and Fiercely

Traveler huffed. This time he didn’t dare underestimate his opponent. He used a [Cleansing Rain] and quickly recovered his health. At the same time, the ring on his finger began to twirl, activating a special skill—— [Circulation Spell] , adding another 10,000 Health. This brat was the standard battle type player. He relied completely on his thick armor and extremely strong recovery power. That was enough to tire out most top tier players.

He dealt another attack. This time Traveler activated [Holy Provoke] against his opponent, and then tried using [Fierce Ram] to break Enchanted Painting’s attack stance. However, it was clear that he didn’t realize how big the gap between their skill in maneuvers was. When his [Fierce Ram] activated, Enchanted Painting cut right through his path. Shen then rammed her hilt onto her opponent's hand. She slashed his chest and quickly activated [Blade Rush], bringing her to his rear. As Traveler switched his perspective and turned around, Enchanted Painting had already taken the chance to snuff out the last bit of health he had.

“Thump....”

Traveler fell to his knees on the stage and lost his 27,000 Gold. His body teleported to the side of the stage with critical health. He rubbed his nose and dejectedly said, “Looks like... Fang Ge Que really has found a strong helper. D\*mn....”

.....

Enchanted Painting raised her broadsword. She shifted her weight to one side and elegantly stood on the stage with a smile, “Friends of Tian Ling City, who else would like to battle? I’m getting hungry, so after fighting for another hour, I’ll be stepping off to eat....”

This time, an entire thirty seconds passed without anyone volunteering. After all, the cost already went up to 30,000. Without complete confidence, who would spend 30,000 to get a chance to battle?

Qing Qian looked at me and smiled, “Brother Xiao Yao, are you going to duel Enchanted Painting?”

I glanced up at the stage. Enchanted Painting stared back at me. With one hand on her hilt, she dragged her broadsword over and smiled, “Isn’t this the [Zhan Long] guildmaster Xiao Yao Zi Zai? How about it, do you want to try?”

I raised my brows and smiled, “Oh? Nah, I’ve already spent the entire day killing BOSSes. It’s too tiring. Besides, I know that your Pulse Break Style will strike my weak points, so I’m not going to fight this time...”

Enchanted Painting smiled. She suddenly knelt down and said, “That doesn’t sound like Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s style. Actually.... You shouldn’t have any doubt in your heart. Q-Sword barely scratched the surface of the Pulse Break Style. Its very easy to break his. Maybe if you duel with me, you’ll learn something?”

I rubbed my nose, “Actually, I just don’t want to pay the 30,000 G, Ha ha....”

Enchanted Painting looked hapless, “Alright then. Looks like Mu Xuan’s Xiao Zai Zai won’t do me any honor. That.... Is there anyone else? If nobody else joins in, then I guess I’ll just go home and eat? Mom’s getting impatient... I didn’t think that in the largest city, Tian Ling City, with all those men, not a single one has the courage to duel....”

“F\*ck, what’d you say?!”

Genearl Li Mu leapt onto the stage. He raised his long sword with one hand and said, “I don’t know who you are, and I’ll look past the fact that you tried to duel [Zhan Long] guildmaster. But to actually insult all the male players in Tian Ling City?

At that moment, all of the male players cheered for Li Mu——

“Li Mu, fight hard! Kill that Enchanted Painting. That brat is just too f\*cking arrogant!”

“Go go, fight her!”

“Work hard, you have to fight fast!”

.....

Li Mu climbed onto the stage. Enchanted Painting smiled, “Oh... I’ve finally gotten a relatively suitable opponent. Good... this is good, now my day won’t have gone to waste....”

As she said that, Enchanted Painting pulled out a red piece of equipment from her bag and put it on her left hand. It was a copper bangle with flames etched into it. It looked like it was a special equipment. Enchanted Painting stared straight at Li Mu and smiled, “General Li Mu, the Elder of [Zhan Long]’s Valiant Bravery and ranked twentieth in the CBN Battlenet Rankings. Yup... you’re a famous person in the Chinese Servers. If I defeat you here, I should raise a few rankings on the CBN Battlenet, right?”

Li Mu chuckled and smiled, “Cut the talk, you haven’t defeated me yet!”

As he said that, Li Mu raised his long sword and charged straight at his opponent. He didn’t use any skills and just threw a cut!

“Oh?”

Enchanted Painting was slightly stunned. She retreated half a step and parried the attack with her broadsword. Afterwards she dipped slightly and threw out a kick. “Peng!” She hit Li Mu’s abs. Li Mu was very skilled at maneuvers and when he saw her move, he didn’t panic. He placed his left foot onto the ground, and then kicked out his right foot. “Peng!” Enchanted Painting retreated several

steps. In terms of strength, she was slightly weaker than Li Mu. It wasn't strange either. Li Mu's equipment was extremely strong right now. Just in terms of Divine Tier equipments, he had at least four.

“Ha....”

Enchanted Painting's laugh echoed around. She immediately charged at Li Mu with her broadsword raised. She swung it a few times and dealt three slashes. I was stunned, her speed was incredible. I didn't expect her to be so nimble when she only had one sword. Motherf\*cker, who knows how much agility and attack speed she's added with her equipment. Li Mu was in a little danger. Enchanted Painting was planning to force Li Mu into using a skill.

Li Mu wasn't biting. Without another thought, he went straight into a [Blade Rush]. The activation sequence for [Blade Rush] was too fast. Enchanted Painting didn't even get the chance to break the skill before getting hit!

“8021 ! ”

Li Mu pierced right through his opponent's body. He then spun around and raised his sword, dealing a [Covering Sword Slash] and roared, “Die!”

Enchanted Painting knew that she was screwed. She immediately activated [Dou Qi Armor]+ [Dou Qi Shield] and took Li Mu's attack. Her health dropped below 50%. At the same time, Li My pulled closer until he was right next to Enchanted Painting. Then, with a smile, he began to gather energy below his feet and activated a B Level Combo——[Absolute Authority]

# Chapter 645 Retrieving Some Face

"Keng keng keng", three continuous quick attacks were unleashed. It was a Direct Stab+Horizontal Sweep+Direct Stab, those were the first three attacks of [Absolute Authority]. Sparks flew from Enchanted Painting's armor, and a few damage numbers popped up--

"3718 ! "

"4212 ! "

"4481 ! "

Within an instant, Enchanted Painting's health plummeted and was getting dangerously close to the bottom. However, at that moment, her hand shot out like lightning as she raised her left fist. "Keng" the steel cone parried Li Mu's blade. Simultaneously, she raised her broadsword with her right hand, and forcefully knocked away Li Mu's sword. The big words "Successful skill Break" flew into the air. Just like that, Li Mu's combo was broken.

After the skill break, there was approximately 0.2 second stun period, causing Li Mu to stand there blankly. Enchanted Painting wasn't polite at all, and threw [Break Armor Slash]+[Thunderclap Slash] at once, instantly bringing Li Mu to low health.

"Sh\*t..."

Li Mu hastily downed a Level 11 health potion as he quickly retreated.

Then, Enchanted Painting smiled as energy surged below her feet. It was also a combo!

"Peng!"

The energy dispersed the surrounding dust, and a green coloured "S" flew out. Following that, four bloody words, "[Gorgeous Charm Dance]" appeared on Enchanted Painting's thigh and evaporated. This was the new effect of combos after the new update was launched. Furthermore, it was a way of telling that the skill was an S tier [Combo]. There was only one tier difference between that



and my [Strength of a Thousand Men]. Only then, did I truly feel how dangerous this woman was. Even if she only had 30% of Little Demon's understanding towards the Pulse Break Style, she was already this terrifying.

[Gorgeous Charm Dance]'s first 2 strikes were a Direct Stab+Horizontal Sweep. Dou Qi surged forth from her broadsword, once again cutting down Li Mu's health. However, Li Mu managed to take advantage of a small crack to escape from the opponent's attack trajectory.

However at that moment, something none of us would ever expect happened. Enchanted Painting suddenly bent down, exposing a pair of snow white peaks in her chest. The deep canyons were incredibly charming. Furthermore, she also let out an orchid-like breath, as well as giving a coquettish glance towards Li Mu. Immediately, Li Mu's bones went soft, and he couldn't help but walk towards Enchanted Painting. However, what arrived for him was actually two rapid slashes, as [Gorgeous Charm Dance]'s 4th and 5th strikes landed. The last strike was even completed with a [Flame Slash]. That one attack alone was enough to cut down Li Mu's remaining 12000 health, killing him!

"Swoosh!"

Li Mu collapsed on the ground and his body was sent outside the Arena, signifying his loss.

Wang Jian was stupefied, "This...This is too strong..."

One Second Hero laughed, "Li Mu, you brat, why did you get charmed by her flashing? That's just a C Cup at most, you shouldn't have been that enchanted?"

Li Mu glared at him as he replied: "F\*ck you! That combo's third strike was [Charm], did you actually think that I lost control?"

Wolf replied, "That Enchanted Painting's judgement and control is extremely precise. You can't underestimate her.....I feel like my chances of victory against her are less than 20%. I'm not going up. Wang Jian, why don't you try?"

Wang Jian shook his head, "Even the boss lost. If I went up, it would just be the same. Boss's equipment and controls are not any worse than mine. I feel that...it's still better for Brother Xiao Yao to go up. Only you have over a 60%

chance of winning!"

I clenched my teeth, and raised my hand to unsheathe the Dragon Reservoir Sword. As the guildmaster of [Zhan Long], I had to regain some face for my brothers, otherwise, [Zhan Long] would have no respect left in Tian Ling City.

But at that moment, a soft hand suddenly grabbed my wrist. Wan Er pursed up her lips and laughed, and said, "The skill that Li Xiao Yao just practiced should be left until the Hero's Wings tournament to fight against the main teams of [Hero's Mound], [Legend], and [Vanguard], and not wasted here. As for this Enchanted Painting, let me go see how strong she is!"

Dong Cheng also laughed, "Yup. If you look at [Zhan Long], Li Xiao Yao and Wan Er are the strongest. If Wan Er goes up, it'll be the same result. Furthermore...if a beautiful girl goes up to fight against another beautiful girl, then it'll be even more pleasing to the eyes!"

Li Mu nodded, "Then, please be careful, vice-guild leader. Her combo is extremely strong!"

Wan Er slightly laughed, as her face went red: "I'm a girl, so I'm immune, ok?"

Me: "..."

Li Mu: "..."

.....

Enchanted Painting stood on the Arena stage, and she laughed, "Is there really no one left that wants to challenge me?" The prize pool has already reached 330000...Hurry up, my mom is asking me to go back and eat!"

Right at that moment, Wan Er held her dagger and walked forward. She pressed her left hand on the edge of the arena and leapt onto the stage with a "Swoosh". Her body was wrapped up within her white cloak. She stood up and smiled, "Let me see how good you are!"

Enchanted Painting was stunned for a moment. She narrowed her eyes and brushed some dust off of her sword, "Alright, a super strong opponent has finally arrived...Cang Tong, Fan Shu City's number one beauty, the country's number one Assassin,CBN ranking number 6. You are the strongest opponent

that I've met."

Wan Er was silent. The blood red war flag descended as the battle was announced.

.....

"Sha sha..."

She crushed the rocks on the ground under her feet, and disappeared into the wind. She entered [Camouflage], which was a surprising move. Wan Er's combat style definitely tended to be more explosive. She wouldn't normally go invisible. Probably, only a strong opponent like this Enchanted Painting was enough to make her go invisible in a fight?

Enchanted Painting drew from her experience and quickly retreated. "Pa", she backed against the railings of the arena. Like this, she wouldn't be killed by Wan Er with a [Gouge] and [Backstab] no matter what.

After a few seconds, there still wasn't a [Gouge] at all. Contrarily, a sharp blade shot out from midair with a "Swoosh"!

"9023 ! "

It was [Flying Dagger]. Wan Er was roughly 20 yards away from her opponent. She opened her hand and activated a [Ice Pick Whirlpool]. She knew the strong points of the Pulse Break Style, so she chose to straightforwardly use long distance skills and wear down her opponent.

Enchanted Painting was so angry that she clenched her teeth. She downed a health potion and charged over with her broadsword in hand, taking the initiative to attack!

Wan Er also went up to face her, with her twin daggers raised. With three "Keng keng kengs", she resisted the opponent's storm of attacks. She raised her long legs to kick Enchanted Painting's abdomen, but who would've thought that Enchanted Painting's attack speed was even faster. She raised her knee. She blocked Wan Er's attack with a "Peng" and then she turned around and swept out her sharp blade.

"Hua!"

Wan Er raised her Iron Umbrella, blocking the attack. Wan Er slid back several steps. It seemed that in terms of strength, she was still not her opponent's match.

After one second, she suddenly put away her Iron Umbrella. Snowflakes began to flutter around her daggers as [Frost Revolution] was activated. As long as she could seal the opponent in ice once, Wan Er would have the ability to end Enchanted Painting's status as the arena champion.

She suddenly approached her opponent, and Wan Er let out a storm of attacks. [Blade of the Death God]!

[Blade of the Death God]'s first hit chose a tricky angle on her opponent's right side to attack. However, Enchanted Painting quickly glanced at the attack pattern, as if she clearly understood what was happening. She horizontally dragged her broadsword in midair, and "Keng", she blocked the central part of the dagger. She let out a quick left punch, dispersing the hit with a "Peng". The blue words "Successful Skill Break" appeared again, but at this moment, Wan Er's second strike still arrived!

"Pu!"

“10821 ! ”

Enchanted Painting was stunned. She instantly deduced the angle of Wan Er's third strike, and used her elbow to do a horizontal cut. With a "Peng", she hit Wan Er's shoulder. The sharp blade once again did a direct stab, and it was another successful skill break. This girl was really not simple, she managed to consecutively interrupt Wan Er's skill twice!

However, in the instant that the skill was successfully interrupted, Wan Er turned her body to the side to slam into Enchanted Painting. With a "Peng", she made Enchanted Painting's body turn sluggish. Her twin daggers followed the turning of her opponent's body, and with a "Ka ka", she sliced her opponent, shattering Enchanted Painting's [Dou Qi Armor] + [Dou Qi Shield].

Enchanted Painting was starting to panic. Flames suddenly rose from her body and Wan Er's next attack directly stabbed towards this flaming body.

But, after 0.1 seconds, Wan Er suddenly stopped her attacks and pulled out

her Iron Umbrella, resting it on her shoulder. In that moment, Enchanted Painting's body collapsed in the fire. It was a clone. Her real body suddenly leapt into the sky. She raised a sword with enormous strength as she slashed towards Wan Er!

"Peng!"

“7311 ! ”

Sparks splashed and Wan Er retreated.

Enchanted Painting had a bewildered expression: "You...you actually managed to predict my clone.... D\*mn!"

As she said that, Enchanted Painting's figure suddenly began sprinting over. She had locked [Assault] on the area in front of Wan Er. The skill swept out with a "Swoosh". Following that, she activate the S Level combo!

"Keng keng keng..."

Within the light of the combo, Wan Er was sent flying by the attack. She took advantage of it and activated [Hermit God's Arrival]. Her body whirled around in the air, and she waved her arm, throwing a [Flying Dagger]. This time, Enchanted Painting had 3000 health at most, leaving her defenseless against Wan Er's killing blow.

"Pu!"

“12718 ! ”

Enchanted Painting suddenly collapsed to the ground. She was finally killed. However, Wan Er was simultaneously blown away by the energy of the opponent's combo, causing her to strike the barrier of the arena stage. Flying out of the arena barrier was considered a loss, those were the rules of the arena stage!

"Ding!"

System Notification: Player Enchanted Painting was killed in battle, while in the same instant, the opponent Cang Tong was sent flying out of the arena stage. This is considered as a Draw. The two parties can continue fighting another match to determine a victor, or they can split the prize pool of the

arena stage.

.....

"Wu..."

Wan Er floated in the air as her cloak fluttered. She was somewhat speechless, "It's actually a draw...I had thought that I could win. Pig, what should I choose?"

I waved my hand: "Just split the prize money, and return a portion of the amount to Li Mu for what he lost. We should go eat."

"Ok..."

Wan Er landed back on the arena stage, and chose the option of splitting the prize money.

Enchanted Painting was somewhat unconvinced as she said, "Can we not count that, just fight with me again..."

Wan Er turned around and walked away, laughing, "Nope, my boyfriend is asking me to eat!"

Enchanted Painting "..."

.....

Wan Er gracefully leapt off the arena stage and gave Li Mu 30,000 Gold. After that, she followed me to the city pub. She laughed, "How was my performance not bad, right?"

I gripped her hand and said, "It's still passable...your movements were on point when you were faced with a stun from a successful skill break. You didn't give Enchanted Painting any chance to directly explode out with her combo. If not, you would've been instantly killed. This Enchanted Painting's true attack power is at least 40000, which is extremely terrifying. Cutting down Li Mu for her was almost as easy as cutting down melons or vegetables.

"Yup, that's right...what are we eating for dinner?"

"You'll have to ask the chefs about that. I'm truly not too familiar with them. I don't know how to speak Sichuanese and Hunanese..."

“ ..... ”

# Chapter 646 Intimate Experience

Around eight o'clock at night, all of the lights in villa were lit. Tang Qi had logged off and Qin Wen had just pulled up into the parking lot in her Z4. Just in time to eat dinner.

Wan Er walked out to welcome Qin Wen. While Dong Cheng began to talk with Tang Qi about the relationship between [Zhan Long] and [Hero's Mound].

I picked up a magazine on the table. It was the "Destiny Magazine" which was basically a report on all important events in the game. Wan Er, Qing Qian and my image were plastered across the front page. The top story for this month was an expose on [Zhan Long], and so the three of us were on the cover.

As I flipped through the report, I read about the development of [Zhan Long] as well as its history with [Legend], [Hero's Mound], Q-Sword, [House of Prestige] and [Flying Dragon]. All in all, it reported on the rise of our guild into Super Guild status. At least this magazine was pretty useful for [Zhan Long]. As for my rivals, Jian Feng Han, Soaring Dragon, and Bai Li Ruo Feng, they'll probably get so jealous they'd try to rip the magazine up.

.....

Qin Wen walked into the room and smiled, "Li Xiao Yao is here too...."

I was a little speechless, "Where else would I be..."

Qin Wen smiled, "Alright then. I heard that you guys will start fighting in the Chinese Server Tournament for the Hero's Wing's Cup tomorrow?"

"Yup, it appears to be that way. Sister Qin Wen's information really is up to date."

"There's no other way, this game is just too popular. Most of the youngsters in the office play the game. As a manager, I can't disregard the game....."

Tang Qi smiled, "Seeing as we'll start fighting in the Hero's Wing's Tournament tomorrow, how about we open up some drinks and toast to our victory?"



I smiled, "And what if we lose?"

Dong Cheng glared at me, "Brother Xiao Yao, can you not jinx us... Besides, Tang Qi, have you already picked out the team you're going with?"

Tang Qi smiled, "Yup. It's going to be Me, Q-Sword, Sword Tears, Jian Tan, and a healer."

Wan Er added, "Three swordsmen and one control type. You're going to have a lot of explosive power in that team. In a 5v5, your team shouldn't lose."

Tang Qi replied, "Actually, that's what I was thinking to. However, if we go against you, Li Xiao Yao, Dong Cheng, and Qing Qian's team, then it'd be two explosive powers against each other. I'm afraid that won't be as simple.... Besides, [Legend]'s team is also pretty terrifying. Fang Ge Que, Lu Chun Yang, Xuan Yuan Feng, Chang Sheng Jue, four legendary players all in one team. Plus, that Enchanted Painting. He he, it's worth worrying over..... Besides, I heard that you guys dueled with Enchanted Painting. Just how strong is she?"

I shook my head, "I didn't duel with her, but Wan Er did...."

Wan Er smiled, "As for Enchanted Painting.... She's around Jian Feng Han's level. At least, she isn't much weaker than him. She is a little weaker than Q-Sword. At least her strength is about the same. There's a thin line between victory and defeat with her."

"D\*mn, she's that strong?" Tang Qi was stunned.

Wan Er nodded, "What did you think? Even [Zhan Long]'s Li Mu lost to her. Even [Prague]'s Traveler was completely demolished by her."

I put down the magazine and smiled, "Yup... she uses the Pulse Break Style. Furthermore, she has [ Break Armor Slash], [Lightning Cut] and [Gorgeous Charm Dance], those extremely explosive skills. Without 40,000 health, fighting her isn't an easy task. As long as she successfully breaks one skill, then you're very likely to be taken by her combo...."

Tang Qi made a fist, "I'll remember that. Later on, I'll talk about it with Q-Sword. Otherwise, I'm afraid when we meet [Legend], we'll be beaten. That way, we won't even get the airplane tickets to the final competition. That won't be good...."

At that moment, the chefs began bringing out the dishes. Wan Er stood up to bring out two bottles of wine and smiled, "Seeing as we're having a toast, then let's drink some. Think of it as a reward for our adventure these past two days in the Pangu's Abyss. All in all, after going through the Pangu's Abyss, I'd say that the hundred players from [Zhan Long] have all gotten at least 10% stronger."

Dong Cheng and I nodded, "Yup!"

Qin Wen calmly poured out the wine and said, "Looks like you all are in high spirits. You've even made me a little happier. Here here, let me pour you a cup!"

Everyone was extremely happy and began to chat about the game as they drank and ate. We hung out all the way until ten in the evening. We finally ended the dinner and returned to our rooms.

.....

As I lay on the bed, I looked out the window at the dancing shadows. But despite that, I couldn't fall asleep. My phone suddenly rang out. I had received a message from Wan Er, "I can't sleep, come over and keep me company!"

I was a little stunned and embarrassed, "Qin Wen is still drinking tea outside. If I head over, won't it be a little bad? She'll tell your dad...."

Wan Er replied, "Nope, you have to come over...."

"Alright then!"

I got out of bed and put on some clothes. Afterwards, I quietly tiptoed out the door. In the distance, I could see Qin Wen typing out some words. It looked as though she was doing some work. She looked up at me and asked, "What's up?"

I awkwardly coughed, "Wan Er's calling me...."

"Oh? Nevermind, it's too dark over here. I'll go to Wan Er's room for some light!"

"That, alright then...."

.....

“Dong dong.....”

I knocked on the door. Wan Er opened it up, only to see Qin Wen right behind me. She couldn't help but exclaim, “Sister Qin Wen, what are you doing?”

Qin Wen raised her laptop and smiled, “Nothing, I'm just here to get some light, and see what you guys are up to... hehe, no that's not right, let me be blunt, I need to finish up some work. You guys do what you want. Pretend I'm not here.....”

Wan Er's face was red. It was probably because she had been drinking. She grabbed my hand and said, “Pig, watch some TV with me?”

“Ok....”

.....

Wan Er's room was very spacious. Qin Wen sat on the side and continued working. Wan Er and I were facing away from her, at the TV. Qin Wen was around three meters behind me. “Pa da Pa da” I could hear her typing away. “Tang's Mansions”. I sat down. I didn't pay much attention to the events in the drama, however Wan Er's tipsy expression made my heart skip a beat.

Wan Er looked at the TV and lightly leaned against my shoulder. After drinking so much, she was probably a little less restrained. She suddenly sat up and turned to look at me. She sweetly smiled and whispered, “Pig, are you nervous?”

“I'm not nervous....”

“Your hand is shaking so hard the juice is about to spill out....”

“I....”

Wan Er didn't say another word. She wasn't able to watch any more of the drama either. She just stared into space. Her expression seemed extremely loving. If there's a girl that loves you, there's no way to mistake the look in her eyes as she looks at you. I wasn't some piece of wood. Of course I knew. She leaned into my lap and suddenly squinted her eyes at me. My heart was starting to beat faster. As before, I couldn't help but give her soft lips a light kiss.

As I held her burning body in my lap, I saw her close her eyes and hug me

tighter. She started to kiss back. Softly and clumsily, her small tongue began to respond to me. At the same time, I could feel something rise in my chest. I naturally lifted my hand to Wan Er's waist. Up to then, I had never gotten this close to another girl, especially one as pretty as Wan Er. I felt as though my heart was going to leap out of my throat.

After kissing for a bit, Wan Er opened her eyes and looked at me. She suddenly smiled, "Stupid pig head...."

I replied, "Why am I stupid..."

"Why are you holding yourself back? Dummy....."

Wan Er's face was red. She lightly tugged on my hand and rested it lightly on her full white mounds. I nearly cried from how soft they were..... Is this what that feels like? So .... Moving.

Wan Er was completely sitting on my lap. This time, I kissed her first. I rested my hand on her chest, but I didn't dare move it at all. The air in the room became more heated. After kissing for five minutes, Wan Er finally let out a sigh. She grabbed my hand and whispered into my ear, "Idiot, how do you feel?"

I gave her another kiss on the lips and said, "Very delicious...."

Wan Er smiled. Her beautiful face was brimming with happiness. She hugged my neck and whispered, "Be more quiet, unless you want to be heard by sister Qin Wen...."

"Ok."

Right at that moment, the sound of Qin Wen's typing stopped. I could hear her heels step across the ground. She walked over and said, "Do you have juice in your room?"

Wan Er quickly stood up from my lap and sat beside me. She looked up at Qin Wen and said, "It's in the fridge. Didn't you see it?"

"Oh, I see it now..."

Qin Wen couldn't help but smile. Afterwards, she looked at her cousin and said, "Wan Er, your collar's loose....."

“Huh?!”

Wan Er looked down and her face grew red, “I.... when did it loosen....”

Qing Wen replied, “Are you asking me, or Li Xiao Yao?”

Wan Er said, “I’m just talking to myself. Aren’t you getting a drink?”

“Ah, oh... I suddenly don’t feel like drinking.....”

“Sister Qin Wen!”

“Ha ha.....” Qin Wen smiled and left, taking her seat again, “Our Wan Er is growing up, haha....”

Wan Er sat beside me and raised an eyebrow at me. She whispered, “Pig, was it not enough to feel the outside, you wanted to put your hand inside too?”

I glanced at my left hand and happily said, “That’s a natural reaction... ah, I can’t wash this hand for at least a week. I need to save your scent....”

“Not wash your hand?” Wan Er glared at me, “Won’t that be too dirty? Pig, you have to wash!”

“But, I can’t bear it....” I looked at her lustily.

The little miss’ face turned completely red, “Pervert! Either way, you have to wash your hands. At most, at most I’ll just let you....”

“Let me what?”

“Pa!” A pillow slammed into my face. Wan Er finally returned to normal, “Idiot, if you ask me again then I’ll beat you to death!”

Qin Wen stopped typing again and she grinned, “Such a loving couple!”

Wan Er and I were stunned. Only then did we realize just how impressive Qin Wen’s hearing was!

.....

# Chapter 647 - Absolute Tyrant Under Heaven

The next day, I went to class in the morning, and then left at exactly 11 o'clock. I returned to the residence and ate a simple meal. After that, we immediately returned to our respective rooms to go online. The Hero's Wings's preliminary round for China would start at 12 o'clock, and the preliminaries consisted of five matches that were best of one. If you won one match, you would get 1 point, so you couldn't be careless. Furthermore, you would get eliminated if you lost a single round, so you would have to exit the moment you lost a round

"Swoosh!"

As I entered the game, I appeared in the east plaza of Tian Ling City. The Hero's Wings was about to start, and even the logo for the Hero's Wings competition had appeared in the sky. This was an official competition from [Destiny] itself. One could just imagine how strictly they were observing it.

I took a look at the various items in my bag. Once I made sure that I had sufficient potions and cards, I went to go repair my equipment. In the afternoon, we were going to experience many fierce battles. There was a total of a million teams competing just in the Chinese Server alone, and to get our way into the strongest thirty two, we had fight and win fifteen battles. This was absolutely a drawn-out fight!

After a few seconds, the beautiful girls Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Qing Qian, and Darling Duck, appeared by my side. There was still ten minutes left until the competition began. The system had automatically sorted us into our five man team. Furthermore, a countdown to the competition appeared on all of our interfaces.

When there was only five minutes remaining, we were automatically teleported into a competition room--

"Swoosh!"

The five of us were sent into a sealed space, and were prohibited from

sending messages. We were even prohibited from connecting to a phone signal. A bell rang and the system told us about the specific rules of this Hero's Wings competition--

All skills, including special skills, that have a cooldown that exceeds 30 minutes are forbidden.

You are prohibited from using pets or mounts.

You are prohibited from using cards.

Players are not allowed to insult other players during the competition. Players who do so will be disqualified.

.....

"Di!"

System Notification: Please note, your skills [Thundering Heavens], [Black Tortoise Realm], [Soul Army], [Seven Star Teleportation], [Azure Dragon Crossbow], [Dragon Transformation] and [King Domain] cannot be used!

Looking at this notification, I was stunned. I looked at the few beautiful girls beside me and said, "[Thundering Heavens], [Mohist's Five Scrolls], and a few other big skills have been prohibited. What about you guys?"

Wan Er glanced at her prohibited skills, and laughed, "I'm still fine, all of my skills are just some small special skills and skills that have a short cooldown. All of the skills of the Hermit God are still relatively short.

I nodded my head, "Then that's fine!"

At this moment, the system sent another notification, Team [Xiao Yao Zi Zai], your opponents for the first round, [World Domination] have been successfully matched up with you, and the competition will officially start in one hundred and twenty seconds. May the team leader please distribute the combat list!

.....

A blank name list appeared in my game interface. There were three 1v1 matches. After thinking about it for a while, I decided that Wan Er, Dong Cheng, and I would go out to fight. Swordsmen, Assassins, and Mages were the true 1v1 jobs. As for the 2v2, I would let Wan Er and Dong Cheng go out and fight together. There was no other option for the 5v5, everyone had to go up!

After 90 seconds, the formation of the other team had already appeared on the large screen of the sealed room. It was extremely bright--

1v1: Xiao Yao Zi Zai-Level 119 Dragon Rider VS Exceptional Squid-Level 105 Swordsman

1v1: Cang Tong-Level 117 Hermit God VS Laugh Without Regrets-Level 107 Mage

1v1: Cang Yue-Level 117 Mage VS Throwing My Heart Away While Walking-Level 103 Assassin

2v2: Cang Tong-Level 117 Hermit God & Cang Yue-Level 117 Mage VS Exceptional Squid-Level 105 Swordsman & Laugh Without Regrets-Level 107 Mage

5v5: ALL VS ALL

.....

Looking at the opposing team, I slightly laughed: “Their levels aren’t considered high, we can definitely get an easy 5:0! I’m ready to go up!”

Qing Qian held her dagger as she leaned beside the small window in the competition room. The 100x100 yard battlefield had already appeared in the large screen in front. This was an old building that was surrounded by a beautiful scenery, and there was a pavilion hovering over it. The competition grounds were built using rock this time, and it probably wouldn’t be like last time’s Rise of the Heroes, where I broke the competition stage with one slash.

The system started a countdown, and when there was still 10 seconds left, I was directly teleported into the match area!

“Swoosh!”

I appeared with my twin swords. My opponent was a Swordsman called Exceptional Squid, and it seemed like his equipment wasn’t very strong. He had Emperor, Purple, and even Saint Tier equipments, and it was very messy. However, he still excitedly looked at me, and said: “It seems that I’m out of luck today. Meeting Xiao Yao Zi Zai in my first match. Ahh, whatever, just take this free lunch, I surrender!”



I laughed with a friendly tone: “Come, let’s fight to the death!”

“OK ! ”

The opponent meticulously activated his skills. [Dou Qi Armor], [Dou Qi Armor](What?), were all used to raise his stats, while I also activated my [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost Armor]. This Hero’s Wings competition didn’t allow pets or mounts, which meant that the players would just be competing with their strength and defense. However, this also made it a bit fairer.

“I’m coming!”

Exceptional Squid held his long sword and activated [Assault]. I looked at his skill clearly, and my legs slightly slid. I successfully dodged it. However, in the instant that it MISSED, Exceptional Squid turned his body and used [Blade Rush]. I estimated the distance, and quickly retreated. The Dragon Reservoir Sword trembled, and the charging period of [Wind Blade] finished. I widened the distance between us by 6 yards, and his [Blade Rush] perfectly sent him right to my blade. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and it was a [Wind Blade]!

“15272 ! ”

The Brilliant Fire Emperor swept across, and its effect activated, which added the [Raging Flame Swordplay] to my normal attacks, causing my blade to be surrounded by a raging flame!

“11227 ! ”

After two attacks, Exceptional Squid immediately collapsed on to the ground. His face was on the ground, and he had a gratified smile on his face: “Losing to the blade of such a strong opponent, I have no more regrets in my life...”

Me: “...”

The two of us were sent out of the battleground together, and the score of our two teams also appeared on the large screen.

1:0 !

I raised my hand and sheathed my twin swords, then smiled: “Ok, my job is done. Next, it’s all up to you guys!”

Wan Er nodded her head: “Yup!”

Our [Zhan Long]’s beautiful vice guild leader was teleported into the battleground. Her opponent was a Mage called Laugh Without Regrets. He was a youngster that was approximately 20+ years old. He looked at Wan Er, and immediately, he happily said, “My opponent is Tian Ling City’s number one beauty, Cang Tong, I’m truly too blessed, too blessed...”

Wan Er had a helpless expression on her face. She raised her dagger, and her figure slightly sank as she laughed, “What kind of Tian Ling City’s number one beauty am I? Don’t simply say things, let’s fight...”

Laugh Without Regrets stamped on the ground, activating [Mana Shield]. After that, he opened his left hand, and held [Indigo Sea Arrow] in one hand. The effects of [Lightning Eagle Wave] began to appear on the tip of his mage staff, as he cautiously looked at Wan Er.

This time, Wan Er didn’t go into stealth mode. Perhaps, she was thinking of leaving [Stealth] for a stronger opponent. She raised her left hand and pulled out her steel umbrella. She had a dagger in one hand, and a steel umbrella in the other, as she charged towards her opponent. With a “Peng”, the steel umbrella blocked the [Indigo Sea Arrow]. She then swung her left arm, and rammed her umbrella into Laugh Without Regrets. After that, she whirled around, and activated the first strike of [Blade of the Death God] with her right dagger. In an instant, she switched her left dagger, and broke through his defense with the remaining three strikes of [Blade of the Death God], instantly killing him. She didn’t even give the opponent the chance to use [Dimensional Leap].

.....

2:0, it went extremely smoothly!

For the third match, Dong Cheng took the field. She was facing an Assassin. Despite that, I wasn’t worried at all. Dong Cheng was exceptionally intelligent, and she was basically one of the top mages in Tian Ling City. There were only a handful that were as strong as her. She wouldn’t feel any pressure against an assassin.

Sure enough, after the opponent used [Stealth], Dong Cheng immediately activated [Lightning Eagle Wave] to sweep the whole battlefield, forcing the

opponent's figure out. When the opponent raised his hand to [Camouflage] himself, Dong Cheng's [Lullaby] had already landed, Throwing My Heart Away trembled and fell asleep. Following that, Dong Cheng opened her palm, and lightning began to spark at the center. [Thunderbolt Finger] swept out. Simultaneously, she activated the Holy Ghost skill [Flame Beast Burst Raid], causing many flame beasts to rush about in the battlefield. Without mentioning the fact that he couldn't [Camouflage] himself, even if he did manage to go invisible, he would still get forcefully killed!

3:0 !

Looking at this score, I was somewhat speechless. I smiled and talked to Wan Er, "Looking at Dong Cheng's damage, I'm starting to feel a lot more confident about the 5v5. As long as the two of us can be the tank, just one of Dong Cheng's [Flame Beast Burst Raid]s will be enough to seal the match.

Wan Er laughed and nodded, "That's right, Dong Cheng is really powerful!"

The fourth match started. We had already won with a 3:0 score. But, to increase our hidden points even further, our side requested to finish the match. Wan Er and Dong Cheng stepped onto the field, and Wan Er charged the first moment of the match. Her [Flying Dagger]+3 normal attacks instantly killed the Mage, while Dong Cheng consecutively retreated several steps, and used [Flame Beast Burst Raid]+[Pillars of Fire and Ice] to instantly kill the pursuing Swordsman. It was too simple.

4:0 !

Soon, it was already time for the 5th match. The last match was the 5v5 team fight!

"Swoosh!"

Our five people entered the field together. Darling Dark raised her magic staff, and laughed, "Say, who should I give my [Hundred Battles] BUFF to?"

I thought about it, "Before the Top 32, just give it to Dong Cheng. Wan Er and I will make the charge, while Qing Qian is responsible for protecting Dong Cheng. If someone tries chasing after Dong Cheng, stun them. Dong Cheng is responsible for using [Thunderbolt Finger]+[Flame Beast Burst Fire] to sweep

them out!”

The beautiful ladies nodded their heads together, “Yes sir!”

.....

“Keng!”

I unsheathed my Dragon Reservoir Sword and my Brilliant Fire Emperor. I locked on to Laugh Without Regrets, and smiled, “Guess how I’m going to attack?”

“You’re going to start with an area attack!” The corner of Wan Er’s rose into a wry smile, as she said, “If nothing goes wrong, you’ll activate [Sword Tempest], then after that, you’ll use the special skill [Halberd Flame] to charge in and kill them while burning them. Am I right, pig?”

I couldn’t help but laugh, “It’s still our Cang Tong who understands me the most...”

“Idiot! Just go kill them quickly!”

“Yup!”

I raised my sword and activated [Assault]. Suddenly, my body accelerated forward, and with a “Swoosh”, I charged into the group of opponents, stunning Laugh Without Regrets. I then activated [Halberd Flame], which would deal a normal attack’s amount of damage every second. At the same time, I horizontally held my twin swords, activating [Sword Tempest], instantly killing the opponent’s Assassin and Healer.

“F\*ck!”

Exceptional Squid was at low health as he charged towards Dong Cheng. He shouted, “We can’t let Cang Yue use magic, or else we’ll definitely lose...”

After a [Blade Rush] caused Dong Cheng’s [Thunderbolt Finger] to MISS, the team leader, Exceptional Squid tried to kill our number one Mage in a frenzy. He never would’ve thought that Qing Qian would directly charge towards him with her daggers in hand, and use [Gouge] to stun him, then use [Twin Blade Harmony] to kill him!

Wan Er also pursued and killed the opposing Mage, while Dong Cheng’s

[Flame Beast Burst Raid] killed off the last Archer. Within 3 minutes, [Zhan Long]'s main team had rapidly KOed this team called "World Domination".

# Chapter 648 Martyr For the Ages

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, your team [Xiao Yao Zi Zai] has successfully advanced to the next round!

.....

... ..

After that, it was the boring waiting time. Every match had a limit of 2 minutes, so we still had to wait 7 minutes for the entire competition to finish. Before a victor emerged from the other teams, it seemed like we would be unable to pair with any other suitable opponent.

In those seven minutes of time, Qing Qian and Dong Cheng started to play five-in a row. Darling Duck was posting on her Weibo\*, while Wan Er and I were comparing notes in the sealed competition room. Wan Er attacked, and I was defending. After that, I would try to use the Pulse Break Style to interrupt Wan Er's skills. However, Wan Er didn't just let me do it anymore. She changed her angles and speeds every time she attacked, so that it would unceasingly increase the difficulty of my skill breaks however, I gradually learned more, and my success rate had already increased to about 30%. This made the little miss exceptionally stunned, because my speed of improvement was simply too fast.

TL Note: The Chinese Twitter

Quickly, the second round of the competition started. The opponent that we were paired up with once again appeared on the big screen, This time, it was actually a familiar face. Furthermore, it was the core members of [Hero's Mound Second Division]. Finally, someone we can beat up!

1v1: Xiao Yao Zi Zai-Level 119 Dragon Rider VS Ji Yuan-Level 113 Assassin

1v1: Cang Tong-Level 117 Hermit God VS Ai Ye-Level 114 Swordsman

1v1: Cang Yue-Level 117 Mage VS Starfall-Level 114 Mage

2v2: Cang Tong-Level 117 Hermit God & Xiao Yao Zi Zai-Level 119 Dragon

## Rider VS Ji Yuan-Level 113 Assassin & Ai Ye-Level 114 Swordsman

5V5:ALL VS ALL

.....

"Fine..."

I cupped my fist and laughed: "Wan Er, at that time, Ai Ye and Ji Yuan both spoke badly and insulted you and Dong Cheng. Now, the chance has finally arrived. Viciously cut them down 5:0, and let them return to Q-Sword with this 5:0!

Wan Er giggled: "Yup yup, go for it, you're the first person up!"

"Yup..."

.....

"Swoosh!"

I was teleported into the battlefield, and I imposingly stood there. Ji Yuan carried a smiling expression as he looked at me.

I said: "Do you think that your smiling face is very relaxed?"

"Yes, what about it?"

"It's actually pretty vulgar..."

"F\*ck you..."

The time for talk was over, start the fight!

Ji Yuan and I both took the initiative to attack, and we stared at each other for almost 10 seconds. I waved my hand and laughed: "You are the b\*tch below Q-Sword, and you're the vice guild leader of the second guild. How about this? I'll let you hit me for 10 seconds, and I'll promise not to hit you back. How about it?"

"So arrogant?"

Ji Yuan held his dagger, and an angry light flickered in his eyes: "You're courting death!"

The opponent had already charged over, and his dagger had the light of

[Gouge]. Meanwhile, my [Wall of Dou Qi]+[Frost Armor] had already activated. I slid my feet, dodging the [Gouge]. After that, I waved my swords around to block, and with three consecutive "keng keng kengs", I made Ji Yuan's daggers completely unable to approach me. Finally, under a moment of rage, Ji Yuan raised both his arms. [Twin Blade Harmony]!

I could clearly see it. I used my legs to help me evade it. The angle was just right. The Brilliant Fire Emperor directly hit the middle part of his dagger, and the Dragon Reservoir Sword smashed his shoulder, using it as a fulcrum. With the combination of these attacks, it was definitely a successful skill Break. I could even successfully interrupt Wan Er's [Twin Blade Harmony], let alone this Ji Yuan's [Twin Blade Harmony], which had no tricks to it at all.

However, when we were just about to touch, I suddenly remembered something, and hastily staggered. The [Wall of Dou Qi] on my shoulder withstood his [Twin Blade Harmony] with a "Peng", as I made a decision in my mind. I couldn't reveal the results of my Pulse Break Style before meeting Q-Sword. The chances of me having a revenge match with him in the Hero's Wings was very high, and I had to avenge my humiliation in the Magic Dragon's Nest. Or else, it wouldn't be just me, but the entire [Zhan Long] guild, who wouldn't be able to raise our heads in front of [Hero's Mound].

The Brilliant Fire Emperor was suffused with a raging flame, and my wrist rapidly flipped over three times, using three different angles to block Ji Yuan's three attacks. At the end of the 10 seconds, he hadn't even depleted 5000 points of my health. Over 90% of his attacks were blocked, and only those quick attacks managed to hit me.

Immediately, Ji Yuan looked like he was holding back a red face: "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you really have guts!"

Me: "He, thanks for the compliment...it's my turn now!"

When I raised my sword, I dealt a heavy attack, causing Ji Yuan's body to lose his balance with a "peng". My attack was simple and effective, and [Seven Star Fragment Slash] enveloped him. With a raise of my right hand, [Great Realm of Desolation] landed!

“14222 ! ”



“15827 ! ”

Ji Yuan softly collapsed. 1:0. Beating him was simply too easy. My basic defense had already reached 10170. Therefore, even if I didn't have my Flying Scythe War Horse, I could instantly subdue over 99% of Assassins. If they weren't able to ignore over 50% of defensive stats, who would dare hit this metal board? The job suppression would make their cheeks filled with tears.

.....

I flew out of the battlefield, and the second match was the showdown between Wan Er and Ai Ye.

"Swoosh swoosh!"

Wan Er and Ai Ye were both teleported into the battlefield together. Ai Ye was wearing a valiant armor, and held a long sword. He had a trace of indignance/dissatisfaction on his face, as he looked at Wan Er and said: "Vice guild leader Cang Tong, I would never have thought that we would meet again in this situation."

Wan Er silently stood in the wind, as her black hair lightly rose. She slightly smiled: "I'm already no longer [Hero's Mound]'s vice guild leader. You don't have to call me that."

Ai Ye coldly spoke: "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, [Zhan Long], are they really that good? The fact that they could make you so hell-bent to stay at [Zhan Long], just what charm does this guild have, that can make you abandon [Hero's Mound] and a righteous guild leader like Q-Sword? Could it be that Q-Sword didn't treat you well? On the contrary, I feel that Q-Sword was totally devoted to you."

Wan Er had a faintly displeased tone, as she indifferently said: "I joined [Zhan Long], and stay by Xiao Yao Zi Zai's side, because I love him. Is this reason sufficient enough? As for Q-Sword, the things that he concealed from me, everything that he did against [Zhan Long] in Ba Huang City, is already enough to make me leave [Hero's Mound]. Let me take a few steps back. If you were a girl, and someone treated you nicely, you would have to be with him. Isn't your moral character too low in that case?"

Ai Ye was unable to respond. He raised his long sword and said: "I know that I

cannot beat you, but I will still go all out. Let me tell you that, the people from [Hero's Mound] will never surrender!"

Wan Er slightly laughed: "Then I'll make you a martyr for the ages...."

Ai Ye: "..."

In the instant that the competition started, Wan Er directly rushed out to attack, without even waiting for Ai Ye to attack. She directly used [Absolute Step] to appear in front of him in a flash, and none of the three hits of [Blade of the Death God] missed. After Ai Ye downed a health potion, Wan Er took out the steel umbrella behind her and took the opportunity to hit Ai Ye's stomach. Following that, she used a [Flying Dagger]+[Ice Pick Whirlpool], instantly depleting her energy. However, she managed to instantly kill this guild leader of [Hero's Mound Second Division], winning in a neat and tidy fashion.

2:0 !

With a "Swoosh", Wan Er was teleported to my side. She had an unhappy expression at the corner of her mouth: "This Ai Ye really talks a lot..."

I patted her shoulder and laughed: "No matter, we'll just go dominate them again during the 2v2, then dominate them again during the 5v5. In total, you can kill him 3 times. That should make you happy..."

Sure enough, this future girlfriend of mine was very amused, as she happily laughed, "Hmm that really does sound like a good plan!"

"Yup..."

It was time for the third match. Dong Cheng VS Starfall. It was a match between two Mages, and naturally, there would be some skills needed for this fight. For example, Dong Cheng used [Dimensional Leap] to dodge her opponent's [Indigo Sea Arrow], then used [Lullaby] to put her opponent to sleep. She then used [Flame Beast Burst Raid] to break his defense, then used [Thunderbolt Finger] to kill her opponent. Her entire set of movements completely suppressed Starfall. You could tell the difference between the two Mages with one glance.

It was 3:0 now. For the 4th match, Wan Er and I would be facing Ji Yuan & Ai Ye.

Standing within the battlefield, I lightly waved my blade and said: "Which way of killing is more fun?"

Wan Er stood on her tip toes and lightly kissed my cheek. She laughed: "Beloved, just stand here and don't move. I can do it by myself..."

I was stunned: "Can you do it?"

"What can I not do? Even if I lose, you at least can 1v2 them. Besides, we've already won, losing one match won't affect anything."

"Fine..."

.....

In the next moment, the beautiful little miss really went to go 1v2. Her absolutely beautiful figure flew out, and her white cloak flew up. She dodged Ai Ye's [Flame Blade] with a flash, and lightly waved her dagger. [Gouge] stunned Ji Yuan, and after that, she slid her feet and merged her twin daggers. Her movements were exceptionally gorgeous, as she directly used [Twin Blade Harmony]+2 normal attacks to kill Ji Yuan. After that, she used [Frost Revolution], directly sealing Ai Ye in ice. She recovered almost 20% of her energy during the lull in battle, then let out another round of attacks, causing Ai Ye to also collapse. Sure enough, she easily 1v2'ed tem and won!

It was 4:0 now. The expressions of the players from [Hero's Mound Second Division] were ashen.

It was time for the final 5v5. There were also no accidents during this match. I used [Assault]+[Sword Tempest]+[Halberd Flame] to tear apart the formation of the opposing side, and Dong Cheng's Holy Ghost level skill [Flame Beast Burst Raid] made our opponents hurt so much that they wished to die. What's more, Wan Er and Qing Qian, our two Assassins practically didn't take any heavy damage while KOing their opponents.

It was 5:0, which was the same as what I predicted. Sweeping our opponents away with the biggest possible score, and giving the division guild of [Hero's Mound] a big slap in the face. This was something that we were most willing to do. In any case, Q-Sword's enmity towards [Zhan Long] was already clear. Tian Ling City only has one spot for a leading guild. If it contains [Hero's Mound],

then it can't contain [Zhan Long]. Sooner or later, we would have a fight.

.....

The competition was still ongoing, and we were unable to chat in the guild channel. However, we could check the points of other teams. Wan Er and I were sitting together, quietly looking through them. In [Zhan Long]'s main guild, Li Mu's team, Song Han's team, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands's team, and Li Meng Yao's team all had advanced already. The thing that I especially didn't expect was the fact that Meng Yao could win both her battles. He he, the IQ of this younger sister of mine seemed to really be fairly above mine.

There would be some audience lotteries and game announcements between each round of the competition. And so, the tempo of this event was also slower. But, when it was 3:40 in the afternoon, we had already finished fighting our 12th round. After 3 more rounds, we could enter the Top 32 in the Chinese Area, and then go to the game conference in Shanghai to participate in the offline competition one day later.

It was the 13th round now. When the battle pairings appeared on the large screen, Wan Er and I were both stunned. Enemies truly are on a narrow road, making us expectedly meet [Emperor's Blood]'s main team here--

Zai-Level 119 Dragon Rider VS Dragon Emperor-Level 115 Knight

1v1: Cang Tong-Level 117 Hermit God VS Moonlight Sonata-Level 114 Mage

1v1: Cang Yue-Level 117 Mage VS Blue Dragon Emperor-Level 114 Swordsman

2v2: Cang Tong-Level 117 Hermit God & Xiao Yao Zi Zai-Level 119 Dragon Rider VS Dragon Emperor-Level 115 Knight & Moonlight Sonata-Level 114 Mage

5V5:ALL VS ALL

.....

# Chapter 649 - Simple Violence

"Oh, it's another fight between old enemies..."

Dong Cheng leaned against the small window, as she lightly laughed, "The people from [Emperor's Blood] definitely think of us as unpleasant to the eyes. Last time in Pangu's Abyss, they got ash on their noses after bumping into us, and they definitely have a lot of pent up anger. Now that they meet us in the thirteenth round, how do you think they're feeling?"

I slowly unsheathed my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and confidently smiled, "No matter how they are feeling, I'll still turn it all to despair. Prepare to destroy them. We'll stick to the old rules, try to 5:0 them cleanly. The level that [Emperor's Blood] is at won't be enough to give us a proper fight."

Wan Er laughed as she nodded her head, "Yup, let's do this!"

"Swoosh!"

In the next moment, I was teleported to the battlefield. Dragon Emperor stood in front of me with his long sword in hand. He stared into my eyes and coldly laughed: "Guild leader Xiao Yao Zi Zai, I didn't think that we'd actually meet so fast. I still remember how mighty you were in Pangu's Abyss!"

I propped my Dragon Reservoir Sword on the ground, and faintly smiled, "That was nothing much. Every guild will have a team activity. We just took the first initiative to enter Pangu's Abyss. Plus, we also cleaned out all the monsters and BOSSes there. All of the spoils of war in Pangu's Abyss are considered to be [Zhan Long]'s, as per the public rules of the game. Even if [Emperor's Blood] wanted to get a share of the rewards, it should have at least waited for [Zhan Long] to leave first. Am I right?"

Dragon Emperor had an angry expression, and he pointed his blade at me as he said, "Whatever you're saying is reasonable. This father of yours can't refute anything that you've said, but you should remember that [Emperor's Blood] will not just let this go. Just wait, this father will make [Zhan Long] regret provoking [Emperor's Blood] sooner or later, and let you know that some guilds cannot be

provoked!"

I raised my hand and unsheathed my Brilliant Fire Emperor, as I coldly said, "During my lifetime, the thing that I hate the most is people threatening me. If you want [Emperor's Blood] to continue existing in Tian Ling City, then you'd better not keep provoking me. You should know that Tian Ling City is only so big, and if our [Zhan Long] wanted to clean up your [Emperor's Blood]'s 20000 people-filled mob, it actually isn't that hard."

"You!"

Dragon Emperor was extremely angry, but he was unable to respond, and could only wait silently for the countdown to end..

"3 ! "

"2 ! "

"1 ! "

It was a battle filled with gunpowder. Dragon Emperor was holding his longsword as he charged forward. His blade was filled with a golden light, and the Heavenly Tier [Skyshaker Stab] activated.

I raised my Brilliant Fire Emperor horizontally, and I simply used a defensive stance to eat his round of attacks. My arm shook many times. This [Skyshaker Stab] was indeed quite fierce. Even if I successfully defended against his attack, I still lost 4000+ health. After all, Dragon Emperor was the guild leader of a big guild, and his equipment wouldn't be bad. However, if he only was at this level, then he had basically lost this match already.

"Come at me!"

Dragon Emperor cackled loudly, and the ring on his right hand suddenly spun around. A rock wall armor appeared around him. It was a special skill. He sinisterly laughed: "Isn't your attack power very high? Come at me!"

"Come at me!"

I faintly laughed, and charged up with insane speed. I vertically held my twin swords, and my body slightly sank. I used my shoulder to heavily slam on Dragon Emperor's rock wall armor, and with a "Peng", I used my absolute

strength to send him flying. At the same time, I used a single hand to lock onto his position, and [Binding Chains] broke out of the earth with a "Swoosh", directly Binding Dragon Emperor there, lasting for 10.4 seconds. After that, my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Brilliant Fire Emperor quickly danced about, and the extremely strong burst capabilities of the twin sword style was showed off. Instantly, 7 slashes smashed apart his [Wall of Dou Qi]. My blade trembled, and a golden light shone in all directions. The Heavenly Tier [Combo]+[Wind Blade] landed, cutting apart his shield, Even though Dragon Emperor had at least 35000+ health, he was still instantly slashed apart.

"Pa ta..."

He softly collapsed on to the ground, and Dragon Emperor looked at me with an expression full of rage. I just indifferently looked at him, and said: "With this kind of defense, who can you stop?"

1:0 !

I didn't disappoint my mission, and obtained 1 point.

When I teleported out of the field, Wan Er was already waiting for her match. She laughed, "Don't worry, I'll definitely get this point!"

"Yup..."

I nodded my head, and my gaze followed the little miss as she entered the battlefield. Her opponent was also a pretty girl, Moonlight Sonata. In Jiu Li City's rankings, she was ranked 17, and was one of a handful of the strongest reputable mages. However, the difference between her and Fang Ge Que, Dong Cheng, and Simple was very big.

Moonlight Sonata raised her staff as she indifferently looked at Wan Er, not saying anything. Wan Er leaned against the railing and played with the dagger in her hand. She was also not saying anything.

In the instant that the countdown ended, Wan Er who was playing with her dagger suddenly disappeared. Moonlight Sonata didn't defend and retreat, but instead charged forward with her magic staff in hand. She waved her magic staff, and [Revealing Light] exploded in the sky. Half the battlefield was enveloped by it. This skill could break through and uncover the locations of

stealthed players. At the same time, Moonlight Sonata let out a delicate shout, and [Lightning Eagle Wave] activated, and devastated the areas that weren't covered by the [Revealing Light]. This was actually a smart move. It was clear the mage that knew how to control the stealth of Assassins through AoE attacks. She was taking the offensive

"Swoosh!"

The invisible Wan Er also went on the offense by leaving her stealth mode. She then activated [Absolute Step] to charge towards Moonlight Sonata like lightning. The light of [Blade of the Death God] appeared on her twin daggers, and she thrust out after raising her hand!

“MISS ! ”

Moonlight Sonata used a [Dimensional Leap], causing Wan Er's attack to whiff in the air. Without hesitation, she slid forward and waved her arm. With a "Pa", [Flying Dagger] landed on the opponent's [Mana Shield], instantly decreasing its durability by 61%. Following that, she opened her hand, and activated [Ice Pick Whirlpool]. Now the opponent's [Mana Shield] only had 7% durability left.

Wan Er continued pursuing her, and began accelerating. At the same time, she raised the steel umbrella in her hand, and blocked Moonlight Sonata's magic attacks with a "peng". Simultaneously, she moved in an arc-like motion to charge towards her opponent. Her movement speed was too fast, forcing Moonlight Sonata to use her second and third [Dimensional Leap]. Within a short time, she couldn't teleport anymore. The tempo of the entire match was within Wan Er's control.

Moonlight Sonata's beautiful face had an undescribably unhappy expression. Meeting the fabled Cang Tong in this tournament was naturally very difficult for her. She had an almost perfect magic defense. Furthermore, the [Mana Shield] of the intelligent Moonlight Sonata only had a little bit left. Furthermore, all 3 of her [Dimensional Leap]'s were forced out. Encountering this kind of scary assassin, Moonlight Sonata practically felt like she was punched in the chest. Yup, especially since she was a 32A, making it hurt more since she didn't have a cushion.

Wan Er didn't waste any more time, and a green light appeared on her twin



daggers. Suddenly, Moonlight Sonata was pierced twice. It was the fifth advancement skill of Assassins--Divine Legion Strike, which condensed the strength of the Divine Army to deal two penetrating damages to a target that was in a straight line within a 10 yard range!

“7981 ! ”

“13117 ! ”

Within an instant, Moonlight Sonata had already collapsed on to the ground. Wan Er's attack power was too high, and she couldn't handle it at all.

2:0 !

The third match: Dong Cheng VS Blue Dragon Emperor.

This match was simply violent. Dong Cheng was very skilled at kiting, and after she used her third [Dimensional Leap], she used magic to randomly blow apart her opponent. From the start till the end, she had never let Blue Dragon Emperor touch her.

3:0 !

It was the 4th match. The 2V2 event was here. This time, Wan Er and I were facing our enemies side-by-side. This was also the publicly recognised strongest 2V2 combination of our [Zhan Long]. A team composed of two players that were in the top 20 of the CBN rankings was very rare to see in the Chinese servers.

"Swoosh swoosh!"

4 people were teleported into the battlefield together. Wan Er slightly laughed into the team chat and said, "Beloved, let's fight as a duo?"

I nodded my head and laughed, "Yup, how should I coordinate with you?"

Wan Er: "Your new necklace, the Purgatory War God's Savage Blade, has a special skill called [Hand of Purgatory], right? Use it. Attack Dragon Emperor first, then turn around and use [Hand of Purgatory] to grab that Mage. I'll break her shield and kill her. Then we can go fight Dragon Emperor together.

I said, "Be careful of the Mage's [Lullaby]. If it puts one of us to sleep, then it'll turn into a 2V1 scenario.

Wan Er lightly laughed, "Don't worry. If it puts you to sleep, I'll use [Awakening Spell] to dispel it. If it puts me to sleep, then you can use [Hand of Purgatory] to grab her and forcefully kill her. After that, you can use your scabbard to attack and wake me up. Either way, we'll still win."

"Alright..."

.....

... ..

In the next moment, I had already charged out, and directly went to Dragon Emperor. A terrifying light appeared on my blade, while Wan Er had already activated [Absolute Step] to also charge towards Dragon Emperor. In any case, Dragon Emperor was also a guild leader of a big guild, and he could maintain an extremely calm judgement, "Sonata, be careful of their feints. Be sure to maintain your distance!"

Moonlight Sonata nodded her head and retreated. Her [Lightning Eagle Wave] was already prepared to drop on Wan Er and me.

The moment I saw that there was something not right with their formation, I raised my hand and used [Defeat the Dragon]!

"Swoosh!"

Moonlight Sonata was instantly grabbed to my side. However, this girl reacted extremely quickly, and her figure had instantly flickered out when she approached me. However, I wasn't slow either. The necklace on my neck flashed and I activated [Hand of Purgatory]!

"Roar!"

Following the roaring of the gods and devils, a pair of blood-coloured hands broke the earth and rose grabbing Moonlight Sonata, controlling all of her movements. She couldn't even use [Dimensional Leap]. She hastily raised her hand, throwing a [Lullaby] at me!

"Hum..."

My head went completely blank, and I was put to sleep. After 0.5 seconds, [Awakening Spell] descended and I was awakened from a distance by Wan Er.

She raised her twin daggers as she charged towards the Mage. Her [Blade of the Death God]+[Twin Blade Harmony] directly broke through her [Mana Shield], killing Moonlight Sonata. After that, she sent a long distance [Flying Dagger] at Dragon Emperor to assist me.

After that, the match was truly just destruction from our side. I used [Blade Rush]+[Blade Spin]. I shot out to the side and dodged Dragon Emperor's four attacks. Afterwards, I moved in to fight and then retreated, preventing his attacks from hitting me at all. Wan Er's dagger stunned him, and I activated [Great Realm of Desolation]. Just like this, we totally decimated this guild leader of [Emperor's Blood].

4:0 !

Fifth Match: the 5v5 event. Five players from both sides all entered the field.

Qing Qian held her dagger and faintly laughed: "If you have special skills, just use them. We'll get our Rage back to 100 points when we enter a new match anyway. There's no need to worry."

I held my Dragon Reservoir Sword and confidently said: "Then let's use even more savage strategy!"

"What kind of savage method?" Wan Er laughed while asking.

I made a fist and said: "After the system countdown finishes, let's all charge up together to kill them!"

"Oh?"

Right at that moment, the system started the countdown--

"3 ! "

"2 ! "

"1 ! "

In the instant that the countdown finished, I pushed off the ground, and suddenly heavily stepped forward while letting out a low roar. Immediately, frosty air surged forth, with me as the centre. It was the new move that Frost imparted to me--[Ice Domain]!

The freezing effect of [Ice Domain] was very big, and 3 of the opposing 5 people were instantly frozen in ice. It lasted for 3 seconds, which wasn't considered long, but that was enough!

# Chapter 650 Dawn of Puragtory

"Haha, you really are violent!"

Qing Qian raised the Blade of Hell in her hand, and a flame encircled around the little beauty. In the next moment, the figure of a firefox pounced towards the opposing five people. It was the effect from [Grip of the Firefox]. Also, because she activated it using a Divine Tier Dagger, the Blade of Hell, her killing power was even higher. In an instant, the health of the opposing team directly dropped.

Dong Cheng was somewhat speechless, as she extended out a finger. She activated [Thunderbolt Finger] into the crowd of enemies. She then swept out her staff and laughed, "Let's end it now!"

"Grrr..."

Beast roars came in waves and many flame beasts charged out of purgatory, wreaking havoc amongst her targets. You could just imagine how terrifying the Holy Ghost Level 1 [Flame Beast Burst Raid] was, especially with Dong Cheng's magic attack. In the end, as Wan Er stood there, all that was left were five corpses. She was somewhat speechless as she pouted her small mouth: "Don't play around like this, they'll delete their accounts..."

Darling Duck couldn't help but laugh: "Exactly!"

It was 5:0, we completely defeated the enemy!

.....

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, your team [Xiao Yao Zi Zai] has successfully advanced to the next round!

.....

Within the sealed competition room, our team sat in a circle as we waited to be paired with the next opponent.

Dong Cheng happily said, "If we win another two matches, we can enter the

top 32, and can go to the offline competition. Are you excited?"

I crossed my arms over my chest and said, "It's not that exciting, is it? I entered the top 4 in the Rise of the Heroes tournament, this is nothing much..."

Dong Cheng pouted her small mouth, "I hate you..."

Not long after, the large screen flashed, and our next matchup was shown. Our opponents were none other than the second team of [Legend]. Fang Ge Que was not in this team——

1v1: Xiao Yao Zi Zai-Level 119 Dragon Rider VS Dawn of Purgatory-Level 114 Archer

1v1: Cang Tong-Level 117 Hermit God VS Drunken Moment-Level 115 Knight(could be Intoxicated Fleeting Time but imma use horoscope)

1v1: Yue Qing Qian-Level 115 Assassin VS Misty Rain -Level 114 Assassin

2v2: Cang Tong-Level 117 Hermit God & Xiao Yao Zi Zai-Level 119 Dragon Rider VS Dawn of Purgatory-Level 114 Archer & Drunken Moment -Level 115 Knight

5V5:ALL VS ALL

.....

... ..

Looking at the big screen, I said, "This is [Legend]'s second team?Could it be that they are at the level of Li Mu and the others?"

Wan Er nodded, "Yup!"

Qing Qian was investigating while speaking, "Drunken, CBN Rankings Rank 51. Purgatory Light is ranked 47. Misty Rain is ranked 117. Brother Xiao Yao, this team...seems to be quite strong, especially that Dawn of Purgatory! Supposedly, he's already [Legend]'s number one Archer, and is regarded highly by Fang Ge Que!"

"Yup, I know..." As I said that, I gripped the handle of the Dragon Reservoir Sword. A smile appeared on my face as I said: "Even if it's like this, we still have to try and get a 5:0 score to KO this team. After all, our group's CBN Battlenet

Rankings are higher than theirs! We (something like 'we indeed have/ but we have') have 4 people that are in the top 20 of the CBN Battlenet Rankings!"

Qing Qian slightly laughed, "Alright. Good luck, Brother Xiao Yao! Go fight for a good start, and defeat that Dawn of Purgatory!"

"Yup..."

After a few seconds, I was teleported into the battlefield!

"Swoosh!"

I arrived in a battlefield which had many green hills surrounding it. Dawn of Purgatory was already standing in front of me with his longbow in hand. He laughed, "I didn't think that we would unexpectedly meet such a strong enemy during the 14th round. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, it's been a long time since we last met. When you used the Magic Dragon Huo Li to kill 5000 of our elites in the Glacial River Valley, I hadn't joined [Legend]. I extremely admire an expert like you."

The corner of my mouth twitched, "Thank you! Please fight with all your strength!"

Dawn of Purgatory raised his hand and pulled out an arrow as he laughed: "Okay!"

"3 ! "

"2 ! "

"1 ! "

Battle start.

In the instant that the countdown finished, Dawn of Purgatory didn't have the slightest hesitation at all as he raised his hand to lock on to me. Following that, the light of the wind elements explosively increased on his bow, and 7 consecutive arrows flew towards me. They were Homing Arrows. This was a skill that could automatically pursue the target. This was also the first time that I had seen a skill like this in the game. Sure enough, he deserved to be called the number one Archer of [Legend].

Facing the pursuit of the 7 arrows, I held my twin swords as I weaved around

and evaded them. At the same time, I quickly activated skills that would increase my movement speed, and used my maximum speed to charge towards Dawn of Purgatory. My back slightly trembled. The first Homing Arrow had already hit me.

“4221 ! ”

The damage was still considered as not bad, but if 7 consecutive arrows hit me, it would still be extremely difficult for me to take.

I looked at the angle of the arrows and suddenly halted my footsteps. My Yuan Rong Combat Boots slid on the stone with a "sha sha sha", and the Dragon Reservoir Sword in my right hand flashed. The sharp point of [Seven Star Fragment Slash] explosively increased and directly slashed over.

Who would've thought that Purgatory Light would still have a skill to respond to it. He extended his five fingers out, and my body immediately sank, as if my weight had increased tenfold. This kind of feeling was somewhat similar to the Gravity Magic of the Elf Queen Lanais. Only, Purgatory Light's skill was able to be chained. After the gravity locked on to me, his body immediately shot backwards, and pulled his hand back to use [Scattered Shot]!

"Woosh!"

I was vigilant from the bottom of my heart. I couldn't get hit by this attack. If I did, my boats could get sunken. The [Scattered Shot] would stun me. This, added on to the combined attack of the 6 Homing Arrows behind me, and a round of [Rising Dragon Shot]+[Shot of the Archery God] from him, would practically kill me.

Once I thought about this, I took a deep breath, and used a [Blade Rush] before the [Scattered Shot] reached its target!

“MISS ! ”

I successfully MISSED it, and raised my hand to use [Binding Chains]!

Dawn of Purgatory's reaction was exceptionally quick, and his leather boots stamped on the ground and sliding across the ground to MISS it. At the same time, he didn't forget to pull his bowstring back and use a normal attack on me. With a "pa pa pa", he depleted my health. At the same time, 3 Homing Arrows



from behind also caught up to me. Under the consecutive arrows, my health was already at only 60%. I hastily used [Cleansing Rain]+Level 11 Potion. This was the first time in the Hero's Wings that I drank a potion.

Looking at Dawn of Purgatory's elegant kiting and combat skills, I clenched my teeth. Motherfxcker, I won't use [Ice Domain], I must use close combat to chase after him and kill him!

I raised my hand, and directly threw the Brilliant Fire Emperor at him. [Blade Spin] locked on to him and attacked him. The MISS rate of using it like this was especially high, but I just wanted to distract him.

"Ah?"

Dawn of Purgatory retreated and dodged the first Spin attack. He had a shocked expression on his face, but he still maintained a 30 yard distance between us. I slightly smiled. Changing a combat tactic to kill him is also fine, I won't chase him anymore!

A burst of energy surged below my feet, and [Strength of a Thousand Men] was charged up. I extended my left hand outwards, and used my Divine Dragon Slaying Arms!

"Swoosh!"

In the next moment, Dawn of Purgatory was directly grabbed and brought in front of me. [Strength of a Thousand Men] exploded out when there was practically no distance between us, but this brat's reaction speed was simply too quick! In the instant that he was caught, he activated the effect of [Crystallize], which gave him 1 second of invulnerability!

I continuously MISSED a few times, and only the last hit struck him!

"14228 ! "

He still didn't die. I caught the Brilliant Fire Emperor that was returning. Raging flames suddenly rose around my body, and I instantly activated a [Sword Tempest]!

"12119 ! "

He finally stopped moving this time. Dawn of Purgatory had a helpless

expression as he collapsed to the ground. Even if his kiting skills were so good that he could already make the alchemy pot turn green, he still couldn't escape from the pursuit of my [Defeat the Dragon] special skill. This was the advantage of the players of the Drunken Sword Style. They would always have a tactic that you wouldn't think of.

1:0 !

I didn't disgrace my mission and obtained the first point, and was teleported out of the field.

In the second match, Wan Er would be facing a Knight, Drunken Moment. Supposedly, this guy was the number one Knight in [Legend] beside Xuan Yuan Feng. His equipment also seemed like it wasn't that bad.

Furthermore, Assassins would be at a disadvantage while fighting against Knights, especially Tanky Knights. Many Assassins would be unable to move these knights, and would be poked to death with a few spear strikes. This situation occurred everywhere, and Assassins would always move around Knight if they met in a wild PK between enemy guilds.

Drunken Moment stood in the battlefield with a long spear held in his right hand, and a green-rock-coloured heavy shield in his left hand. He laughed as he looked at Wan Er, and he said: "Beauty Cang Tong, how rare, we actually get the chance to meet each other in battle..."

The corner of Wan Er's mouth raised, and she exposed a smile. However, she didn't say anything and only assumed a combat stance. Her body slowly disappeared into the wind. Facing such a tyrannical Knight, Wan Er already planned to use stealth to deal a sneak attack. If not, her win might not be so stable.

"Heng heng..."

Drunken Moment stood in his original place with his heavy shield held and didn't move from his spot, and stood like a mountain after the countdown ended. [Dou Qi Armor] and other skills were all activated, and after that, he used a pair of clear eyes to carefully look at his surroundings. When the wind blew, or the leaves floated around, he would prick his ears up to catch every single detail, trying to find Wan Er's specific location. Unfortunately, Wan Er

was the nation's number one Assassin, so how would her stealth be so easy to discover. (wording)

"Swoosh!"

A bloody light suddenly rose, and a sneak attack from the back directly stunned Drunken Moment. Following that, it was the three consecutive hits of [Blade of the Death God]!

"7842 ! "

"10291 ! "

"13227 ! "

After the three hits, Drunken Moment still had almost 30% of health left. His health wasn't for show!

"Ha!"

After he woke up from the stun, Drunken Moment immediately turned around to use a [Valiant Strike]. With a "peng", he stunned Wan Er. Following that was a set of attack moves, which was [Flame Blade]+[Skyshaker Stab]!

"6252 ! "

"5527 ! "

It was extremely unfortunate that Wan Er's defense wouldn't lose to a top tier warrior, while Drunken Moment was too focused on health and defense, it also meant that his attack power would at most be comparable to One Second Hero's level.

Wan Er hastily retreated and waited for the recovery of her energy. If not, she wouldn't be able to launch another set of skills. Intoxicated Horoscope was just standing on his original location. After downing a health potion and activating [Cleansing Wind], he let out a low roar, and the figure of a soaring dragon appeared around him. The players outside the arena could already see the notification. It was the skill [Dragon Blood], which raised his health limit by 50%. Because of this, this guy at least had nearly 70000 health. Furthermore, after another angry roar, he activated another skill. Divine Rock Armor, which raised his defense by 150%!

Qing Qian was slightly stunned, "Damn, he's rock solid. Can Sister Cang Tong be able to break past his defense?"

I confidently said, "Don't worry, if Wan Er can't move something at this level, then she wouldn't be one of the top players in the nation."

Sure enough, after approximately 5 seconds later, Wan Er's energy was already full. She went into stealth once again, and continued dealing sneak attacks. Drunken Moment was a Knight, and could only wave his spear around to aimlessly attack. However, he was unable to force Wan Er to appear, and after a few seconds, a bloody light swept across him, and he was stunned again.

# Chapter 651 [Ice Domain]'s Weakness

This time, Wan Er's attacks were complicated and numerous. Taking advantage of the stun, she rapidly thrust her two daggers forward like lightning. A purple light shined over its blade. She dealt five consecutive hits that did no damage. This was the fifth advancement skill of Assassins--[Defense Breaker]. Every attack would let the user ignore 10% of the target's defense, to a maximum of five times. This also meant that the present Drunken Moment's defense was only 50% of what it was before Wan Er's eyes.

Following that, the ornament on Wan Er's neck faintly glowed. Its special skill, [Struggle of Life and Death], activated. That would raise her attack power and attack speed by 50%. In the next second, Drunken Moment woke up, and what was waiting for him was Wan Er's quick [Blade of the Death God]+[Chain Attack]+ 3 normal attacks, dealing a total of 13 attacks!

"Sha sha..."

She finished using an entire set of skills. The little miss didn't bother to wait and see if she killed her opponent. She immediately retreated, and raised her hand to use a [Flying Dagger]!

"Ah!"

Drunken Moment slowly fell to his knees as his health bar emptied. Even if he had [Dragon Blood]+[Divine Rock Armor], he was still killed. Shock and confusion clouded his eyes. Just like that, he had given us a point

2:0 !

Our score was stable now!

For the third match, Qing Qian went into battle. Her opponent was also an assassin, Misty Rain , who was Level 114.

In a showdown between two assassin, everything depended on the who could discover the other person's position first. Although Qing Qian was young, her game experience was considerably abundant, especially in regards to her experience in fights between assassins. After almost twenty seconds, she went

on the offensive and stabbed the opponent, forcing him out of stealth mode. Following that, she clung to him, not giving him a chance to disappear again. Finally, she used [Defense Breaker]+[Chain Attack] to directly instakill the opponent.

The fourth round was a 2v2 fight. It was Wan Er and I VS Drunken Moment+Dawn of Purgatory. This match was even more simple. I charged forward, while Wan Er sneak attacked. We first killed Drunken Moment, then used the [Dragon's Whistle of Thunder and Lightning] BUFF to raise the attack of both of us. After we killed Drunken Moment, the tank, it wasn't difficult to win the match.

The final round was a 5v5, and the five people from both teams were teleported into the battlefield together.

Qing Qian blinked and asked,, "Brother Xiao Yao, what's our battle plan?"

I coolly said, "Just do what we did before. I'll use [Ice Domain] to freeze them, then charge into their group and use [Halberd Flame] and [Sword Tempest]. Wan Er will cooperate with Dong Cheng and kill off Dawn of Purgatory first. His long distance killing capabilities are too strong. Darling Duck, prioritize protecting yourself!"

The four beautiful ladies nodded their heads together. As soon as the countdown ended, I immediately charged out. As I dashed forward, I activated [Ice Domain]!

"Peng!"

A frosty energy engulfed the entire battlefield. However, I would never have thought that the opposing Healer would give herself an [Anti-Magic Shield], and cause the freezing effect to MISS. After that, she raised her magic staff and instantly fired off a [Purification], enacting a scene that I would never have thought of to occur. The group purify actually nullified my freezing effect, and the [Ice Domain] tactic was broken. This was a bad sign. Other people would now know how to counter my group freezing tactic after watching the recording of this battle.

Nevermind, I'll discuss it after this battle!

I threw a heavy strike onto the Drunken Moment's shield. The slice activated [Halberd Flame]. Following that, I activated [Sword Tempest]. However, Dawn of Purgatory dodged Qing Qian's [Grip of the Firefox] as did Misty Rain. This was all a consequence of [Ice Domain] being purified.

Luckily, everything was still fine. Dong Cheng and Wan Er's skill at pursuit and kill were still impressive. Dawn of Purgatory was instantly killed by [Blade of the Death God]+[Flame Beast Burst Raid]. While Misty Rain and Drunken Moment attempted to forcefully kill me. However, I crossed my swords in front of my chest and knelt down on one leg, assuming a defensive stance. My body was pushed back by the attacks, but my health still remained above 70%. Once Wan Er returned after killing Dawn of Purgatory, she and I dealt a two pronged counter attack, flipping the odds against Drunken Moment and Misty Rain. Easily allowing us to kill the mage and the healer. Our five man team KOed our opponents without a single loss.

It was another 5:0. The momentum of our [Zhan Long]'s main team was simply too strong. We practically defeated all of our opponents by sweeping them away!

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, the [Xiao Yao Zi Zai] team that you are in has successfully advanced into the 15th round of the competition! As long as you can obtain victory in this last match, your team will obtain the qualifications to participate in the next finals of the Chinese Servers!

.....

"Hee hee..."

Qing Qian leaned against the window, as she said, "It seems like our spot is quite stable. As long as we don't meet Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword or Yan Zhao Warrior's teams, our chances of getting into the finals are basically set!"

I leaned against the wall next to Qing Qian's leg and looked at the empty battlefield. I laughed, "Even if we meet Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword or Uncle Yan Zhao's teams, what about it? As long as we are careful in our fights against them, we can still step upon their corpses to reach the champion seat!"

Wan Er giggled, "Oh? You've only gleaned some superficial knowledge of the Pulse Break Style, and you have the guts to be so arrogant? Pig, tell me, who gave you the courage to say that you can beat Fang Ge Que's team?"

I thought about it for a moment, "You have to think like this. If we meet Fang Ge Que's team, we just have to arrange our formation logically. We can let Dong Cheng fight against Fang Ge Que, since throwing away one point doesn't matter, while you and I can fight against Lu Chun Yang and Enchanting Charm. That way our chances of victory will be much higher, and we'll get two points. As for the 2v2, I can go aggro them while you ambush them from behind. The chances of killing Fang Ge Que won't be small in that situation either. After killing Fang Ge Que, Enchanting Charm shouldn't be too much of a threat alone. Even if we lose the 2v2, we still have the 5v5..."

Dong Cheng glared at me with her beautiful eyes, "Li Xiao Yao, you big bastard! Why do I have to go up against Fang Ge Que? Am I the abandoned horse in Tian Ji's race?"

TL Note: Tian Ji is in a horse race. He lets one of his horses lose to win the other two races.

I rubbed my nose and laughed, "It's not like that, you're thinking too much..."

Wan Er smiled, "You can say it like that, but there are too many variables that can change when the actual battle comes. Fang Ge Que's magic control and killing ability is simply too strong, and we don't have the assurance that we'll win against him. Besides, if you meet Fang Ge Que, while Dong Cheng meets Enchanting Charm, then we'll basically have lost, isn't that right?"

I leaned my forehead against my hand and smied, "Then we'll just have to pray that Q-Sword beats Fang Ge Que's team during the semifinals. After that we'll just beat Q-Sword's team in the finals..."

Wan Er stuck out her plump chest, and joked, "Humph, you got scared fast..."

Darling Duck was stunned as she said, "So many of our main players are scared, why do I feel that our prospects in team Xiao Yao Zi Zai aren't looking good..."

Qing Qian sighed, "Brother Xiao Yao has no integrity..."



.....

At that moment, subtitles suddenly started flashing across the big screen. Quickly, the matchup for the next round appeared. It was another extremely strong team, [House of Prestige]'s second team. However, after looking at them, it seemed like they weren't as strong as [Legend]'s second team--

1v1: Xiao Yao Zi Zai-Level 119 Dragon Rider VS Rejecterr-Level 114 Mage

1v1: Cang Tong-Level 117 Hermit God VS Quicksand Finger-Level 113 Swordsman

1v1: Cang Yue-Level 117 Mage VS Conqueror -Level 114 Swordsman

2v2: Cang Yue-Level 117 Hermit God & Cang Yue-Level 117 Mage VS Quicksand Finger-Level 113 Swordsman & Conqueror-Level 114 Swordsman

5V5:ALL VS ALL

.....

"Haha..."

I looked up at the big screen and laughed, "Two Swordsmen, a typical explosive power driven battle tactic. They don't even have one person that can resist attacks, and...they're actually sending out a mage as the first person. Are they that confident in the solo capabilities of their mage?"

Qing Qian laughed, "Perhaps, they were also observing the team compositions of the 64 strongest teams. After that, they felt that they had a chance of meeting us. Plus, after they saw our team, they felt that Brother Xiao Yao was still a noob, so they sent out a Mage to control you...Brother Xiao Yao, you must know that the kiting capabilities of the three consecutive teleportations of [Dimensional Leap] is quite strong. Of course, against a player like you that has [Defeat the Dragon], this might not be true..."

Wan Er pursed her red lips and said, "Yup, Pig shouldn't have much of a problem beating this Mage."

I confidently laughed, "This is too simple. I'll just use long distance attacks to force out his three [Dimensional Leap]s, then use [Defeat the Dragon] to grab him over, and then slaughter him..."

Darling Duck was speechless, "A team like ours that's so violent, indeed...I would sincerely not wish to meet it. It would simply be a nightmarish fight.."

Dong Cheng patted Darling Duck's shoulder, and smiled majestically, "Darling, don't worry, your sisters will take care of you!"

Darling Duck: "..."

.....

Very soon, I entered the battlefield!

"Swoosh!"

I was teleported into the battlefield, where a mage stood before me with the insignia of [House of Prestige] on his shoulder. It was Rejecter. This person's ID was somewhat familiar. I seemed to have met him during the fierce battle at the Green Qilin Valley. However...my Dragon Reservoir Sword had killed countless enemies then. Even if I had killed him, I most likely would've already forgotten about him. I only remembered who won the fight. Who would remember insignificant IDs?

Rejecter's gaze trembled as he looked at me. Even his hands trembled as he gripped his staff. He smiled, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, [Zhan Long]'s guild leader, ahhhh..."

I didn't say anything, and lightly propped my blade on the ground, waiting for the system countdown.

"3 ! "

"2 ! "

"1 ! "

With a wave of my Dragon Reservoir Sword, I charged through the midway point of the battlefield, and quickly activated skills. At the same time, the Brilliant Fire Emperor was automatically unsheathed, and spun at Refuser under the use of [Blade Spin].

"Pu!"

The first spin penetrated him, lowering the toughness of his [Mana Shield] by

43%. At the same time, my right hand spread out. [Binding Chains]!

"Ah?"

"Ah?!"

Rejecter was stunned, and helplessly used his [Dimensional Leap] to try and dodge it. However, when he appeared in the next position, I arrived there once again. I pushed my left hand forward, activating [Great Realm of Desolation]!

He used his second [Dimensional Leap]. The Brilliant Fire Emperor still carried the energy of [Blade Spin] as it followed him like a shadow. I chuckled, and slid forward, pivoting my body in the right direction. At the same time, my body slightly trembled with excitement, and gathered energy into my arm. I threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] with my Dragon Reservoir Sword to intercept him.

“MISS ! ”

The third [Dimensional Leap] was used!

When he had finished using all three of his [Dimensional Leap]s, I decisively opened my hand, activating the special skill of my Divine Dragon Slaying Arms!

"Swoosh!"

Rejecter was pulled directly to me. At the same time, a golden light explosively flowed out into my surroundings. This was the activation effect of a Heavenly Tier skill. A Level 11 [Combo] landed on him. The first four hits broke his shield, and the last two attacks took out a greater part of his health. With a "Pa", I caught the returning Brilliant Fire Emperor, and slashed out, cutting down the fellow who was howling before me.

1:0 !

Sure enough, this was much simpler than beating [Legend]'s second team.

.....

# Chapter 652 Training the Soldiers for Battle

The second match started. Wan Er went out to fight, and her opponent was a Level 113 Swordsman, Quicksand Finger.

Quicksand Finger was a roughly 20 year old youth, and he carried a broadsword on his back. He lazily swung his arms, letting his crimson cloak flutter in the wind. He looked at Wan Er, and a gaze of admiration unconsciously appeared in his eyes. He smiled, "I really didn't think that I would meet the beauty Cang Tong and end my journey in the top sixty four..."

Wan Er lightly laughed, "You won't necessarily end your journey here. However, I will definitely use all my strength."

"Yup, I'll fight with all my power too!"

At that moment, there was suddenly an extra camera symbol on the game interface. Everyone suddenly got a notification--

"Ding!"

System Notification: Please note, the team fight that you are in has been chosen to be broadcasted by the China Virtual Gaming Competition Channel. The commentator for this live broadcast is ZGTV-Fei Er!

Our luck was truly good. They actually chose the fight that our team was in. Unfortunately for me, they started filming after my match was over, decreasing my exposure....

.....

The second the countdown finished, Wan Er held her twin daggers and charged over. The dagger flashed, it was [Gouge].

Quicksand Finger was even more decisive, and knew that assassin's were extremely skilled at dodging. He didn't even bother using [Flame Blade]. He charged forward and activated an AOE attack, [Break Sword].

However, at this moment, Wan Er's movements were even more astonishing. Her daggers actually flashed, causing the energy of [Gouge] to disperse. She

then dashed two meters away where she found the most suitable angle. Then, she lightly smacked her dagger against the center of her opponent's blade. She raised her combat boots and kicked Quicksand Finger's right ankle, causing him to lose his balance. Her right dagger was like lightning as it once again smashed against his blade. "Peng", a blue light surged forth, causing four huge blue words to fly up into the air--

"Successful Skill Break!"

Motherf\*cker, who would've thought that Wan Er would suddenly use the Pulse Break Style!

Quicksand Finger was also startled. Furthermore, his body went sluggish as a side effect from the successful skill break. Only then did Wan Er's [Gouge] come. She followed the attack with [Blade of the Death God] and [Divine Legion Piercing], killing Quicksand Finger in one set of skills.

2:0, it was another astonishing victory!

Originally, the Pulse Break Style had already left the spotlight. But after the fight in the Magic Dragon's Nest, the skills of the Pulse Break Style appeared in the hands of peak players like Q-Sword, Enchanting Picture, and Cang Tong, people have been wondering, is the past overlord of close combat players, the Pulse Break Style truly making a comeback?

.....

Third match, Dong Cheng VS Conqueror. Conqueror was a team leader from [House of Prestige]. In fact, all of the five people in our enemy team were team leaders from [House of Prestige]. This also signified that we would disqualify half of the team leaders from [House of Prestige] once we won this match. If Bai Li Ruofeng heard about this, he would definitely vomit blood.

There was no suspense to the battle at all. Dong Cheng relied on [Thunderbolt Finger] to lock on and attack the enemies, controlling their movements. [Thunderbolt Finger] was a hard skill, which would directly lock on to the target. In addition, it also prevented the target from dodging. Unless you used the Pulse Break Style at a close distance to interrupt it, it would definitely hit the enemy. Naturally, if the enemy had a piece of equipment like the Magic Spite Armor that would let you dodge effects of magic, then that would be a different

story.

Dong Cheng merely used 2 [Dimensional Leap]s before Conqueror had already collapsed on the floor and died.

3:0, we had already won!

The fourth match. This time, the two friends Wan Er and Dong Cheng fought side by side. One of them would control the battle, while the other used long distance attacks, dominating the field against the two swordsmen.

There wasn't any suspense in the fifth match either. I didn't use [Ice Domain] anymore. This move had already been broken through. It was best that I preserve its cooldown and wait until the opponent was unprepared to use it. Everything went just as I had planned. After Wan Er and I destroyed the enemy formation, I used [Defeat the Dragon] to instakill the enemy Healer. It was only then that I used [Ice Domain]. All four people were frozen for 3 seconds, giving Dong Cheng and Qing Qian to kill them all at once.

It was a 5:0 sweep. Like this, we made it through the preliminaries!

.....

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, the [Xiao Yao Zi Zai] team that you are in has successfully obtained the qualifications to participate in the next round of finals for the Chinese Servers! Once again, congratulations to your team! Please arrive in the Shanghai Game Convention Centre before 9 am on the 17th to check in!

.....

"It's finished?"

Qing Qian squinted with her pair of beautiful eyes and smiled: "I haven't fought enough yet!!"

"Ah?!"

I couldn't help but laugh, "No problem, there's time for you to fight during the next finals tournament!"

At this time, the system gave us a prompt, and we left the competition room. We were teleported to the east plaza of Tian Ling City. There were willow leaves swaying below the city walls, under which many player stalls were set up. Tian Ling City was just like normal, and we had successfully obtained the ticket to the offline tournament. To be fair, there weren't that many teams that could stop our team, and the chances of us meeting them wasn't high.

Not long after, the sound of a bell resounded in the sky above Tian Ling City. All of the top 32 teams had already appeared--

"Ding!"

System Announcement: Congratulations to everyone! The final 32 teams in the Chinese area of the Hero's Wings tournament have been chosen! They are [Team Xiao Yao Zi Zai], [Team Fang Ge Que], [Team Q-Sword], [Team Li Mu], [Team Yan Zhao Warrior], and 27 other teams! The details can be found on the official website. All of the tournament tickets for the players will be purchased from the officials of the Hero's Wings. Please arrive in Shanghai in two days to prepare for the offline tournament!

.....

The guild chat had an unusual excitement to it--

Li Mu, "F\*ck, Even I thought that we'd be knocked out! We actually advanced into the next round! Hahaha, our luck is too good!"

Wolf laughed, "My team also got into the Top 32! It seems like even Meng Yao's team advanced into the Top 32 as well. Our luck is truly not bad..."

I was stunned, "Meng Yao, you're entering the finals tournament too?"

Meng Yao giggled, "Yup, I stuck with some strong people managed to enter the finals competition. Brother, do you know...Yue Yao Yan, Star Blade, and Death God Elegy are too strong, I relied on them the whole way to enter the offline competition..."

I replied, "Alright..."

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, "I'm not happy!"

I was stunned, "What happened, Tang Xue?"

Li Mu coughed: "Thousand Suns' team met Q-Sword's team when she was in the Top 128, and was knocked out. You know that Q-Sword's team has players like Q-Sword, Seventh Tang, and Sword Tears. Naturally, Thousand Sun's team was suppressed by them..."

I chuckled, "It's fine, don't be sad. Winning and losing are normal in wars. Just fight your way back into next year's Hero's Wings!"

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, "Yup, looks like that's my only option. There's still a bright side to this. While you guys are off in the finals competition, I can go grind levels and clear maps. In any case, I can't let my level drop too much..."

"Yup..."

.....

... ..

After eating dinner, I logged back onto the game.

I took a trip to the Dragon's Den, and checked the situation there. After a few more days, we should be able to become a Level 7 Territory. That was good. Soon we'll hit Level 8. At that point, we could start doing a large scale recruitment of NPC troops. After entering [Destiny] for a few months, I already thoroughly understood the factors that influence the game. If I wanted to create clouds and rains with the flip of my hands in this virtual world, I would need two teams. One would be a player army that would win in every battle, and the other would be an NPC army that would be impregnable. For the army of players, we already had the 30000+ members of [Zhan Long]. As for the NPC army, then we would have to see how many strong troops that Chi Yu Han was able to recruit and train. However, with Chi Yu Han's Saint Level strength, it shouldn't be much of a problem.

"Di!"

A message came from Wan Er: "Beloved, there's going to be a guild activity tonight...."

"Ah? What activity?" I asked with a smile.



Wan Er opened her messenger, "That...Team Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Team Li Mu, Team Song Han, and Team Li Meng Yao. A total of four teams from [Zhan Long] have entered the Top 32. Therefore, Li Mu and Wolf suggested that we go to the city hall tonight, and train these people in techniques needed to fight other classes. With such a short time left, killing monsters to grind levels is of no use anymore. Making them familiar with the characteristics of the top players from each class would be more effective. Therefore, you have to come...The training will last from 7 to 12. Tomorrow, people who live far away will have to start making their way to Shanghai. We should head over earlier, and get familiar with the competition venue, so we don't get stage fright when the time comes."

I nodded my head and said, "Yup, no problem. I'm already in the city hall of Dragon's Den. You guys should just come over now, I'll give the privilege of entering the city hall to these 20 people."

"Good, I'm coming right away!"

.....

Not long after, the players of [Zhan Long] walked in, one by one. Li Mu, Song Han, Bai Qi and the others walked into the hall together, and not long after that, Wan Er, Qing Qian, Dong Cheng, Matcha, and the others all arrived.

All twenty people were all present. Li Mu held his sword and asked, "How are we practicing?"

I waved my hand, "The great hall should be big enough for everyone. Just choose your own spaces and pick a partner. If you don't have confidence in fighting someone, then choose that someone as your training partner."

Li Mu raised his hand and pointed at me. He stared at me and said, "I don't have any confidence against you at all, so it'll be you!"

"I'll go..." I speechlessly laughed, "If you're trying to get bullied, then I'll fulfill your wish..."

Everyone laughed loudly.

.....

I chose a small area in the corner, and Li Mu started the duel.

"Ha, this brother is coming at you!"

Holding his blade, Li Mu charged straight at me. As the No.1 member of the [Valiant Bravery] camp, as well as a top 20 player in the CBN Battlenet Rankings, Li Mu's combat skill was unquestionable. I also paid attention to his moves, and raised my twin swords to meet him. I used four consecutive slashes at four different angles, without activating any skills. Li Mu's gaze swept across my slashes, and horizontally crossed his longsword with lightning-like speed. "Keng keng", he blocked two of the hits. He then made a defensive motion by holding his sword horizontally to withstand the last two hits!

"4882 ! "

"5211 ! "

After the parry succeeded, this guy quickly used [Blade Rush] to pierce through my body. Flames rose behind me. Motherfxcker, this was [Covering Sword Slash]!

I changed my field of vision and spun around to get a good look at his motions. I could clearly see the beginning motions of his skill. My Brilliant Fire Emperor slammed against his blade, while my Dragon Reservoir Sword struck its target. With a "pa", I suddenly smashed my sword hilt into the center of Li Mu's blade. After that, I leapt up, and used my combat boots to slam against the centre joint of his shoulder. A blue light surged forth, the skill interrupt had succeeded.

Without waiting for Li Mu to react, I used a Level 11 [Combo]. Furthermore, I also used an extra Level 12 [Wind Blade], causing both skills to land!

With a whirl, [Ice Domain] broke through the ground, freezing Li Mu. After that, the seven consecutive slashes from the twin sword style whizzed across his body!

"Plop..."

Li Mu was pulled by the system and collapsed to the ground on his knees. He helplessly held his forehead and laughed, "D\*mn, I really can't beat you..."

## Chapter 653 - Star Scar

It was the early morning of the next day. I woke up early, and accompanied Dong Cheng and Wan Er to submit an absence slip. The reason was very simple. We were participating in the Chinese offline tournament for the Hero's Wings competition. Fortunately, the teacher seemed to be especially reasonable, and he also seemed to know about the Hero's Wings. Before we left, he even cheered us on.

That morning, Wan Er continued to train with me in the game. Skill interruption wasn't some kind of miracle skill, and instead relied on continuous practice and familiar control of the game. Only like this could I unceasingly increase the success rate of my Skill Breaks. On the other hand, Wan Er's strength in the game could already be counted as the peak of the national level. With this kind of opponent as a training partner, I could get double the results with half the effort put in.

After eating lunch, we set out. Wolf, Old K, Matcha and the others took the studio car and followed behind us to Shanghai.

At two in the afternoon we reached the Shanghai Gaming Convention Centre. The A4 slowly drove around the centre plaza. Wan Er and I couldn't help but stare at the sculpture in the centre plaza. It was a tall and straight female Archer, who had a pair of sharp ears. She was holding her longbow, and her cloak was flying in the air.

"That is..." Dong Cheng was stunned.

I laughed, "Lanais."

Wan Er nodded her head, "Yup, it's the Elf Queen Lanais. It seems like [Destiny]'s part in the Gaming Convention Centre is quite important, since it actually made its own game the main theme of this center.

Tang Qi replied, "That's a given. [Destiny]'s part in the entire gaming world now is truly too big. For every ten gamers, there's six that play [Destiny]. It's only natural that there are gaming convention centres that are inclined towards

[Destiny]."

I put on the breaks and slowly came to a stop in the roundabout in front of the main doors. Immediately, a few workers came up to us with a face full of smiles. They asked us a few questions, and took the car away as they invited us into the big hall to register.

When we just entered the big hall, we saw Li Mu, Wang Jian, Bai Qi, and Lian Po. Furthermore, there was also a beautiful girl that was wearing a rice-coloured sweater. Li Mu laughed as he said, "You guys are too slow, we arrived this morning!"

I glanced at the four people, and laughed: "It seems like you're all rather pleased with yourselves. You don't look half bad at all..."

Wang Jian smiled, "Brother Xiao Yao, the [Valiant Bravery] camp is now past its beginning stages. Every month, we're getting at least 4m RMB a month. Now we don't have to just eat pickled radishes and rice for our meals. And so naturally, our complexions aren't bad anymore. Also, it seems that Bai Qi's been in love these past few days. It's a girl from one of the divisions, and she's even in school..."

Bai Qi rubbed his nose and embarrassedly laughed, "Bastard, Wang Jian! You said that you're not going to sell me out, but you sell me out the moment that you see the guild leader! What a brother!"

I couldn't help but laugh: "That's a good thing, but don't be too much of an animal, don't try anything on a school girl!"

Dong Cheng, who was at the side, said, "Eh...someone here seems to have already picked up a school girl, and she's even the school flower. He actually has to nerve to call someone an animal. Wan Er, am I right?"

Wan Er face went red, "I don't know!"

I asked Wang Jian, "Wang Jian, when are you and Li Mu going to get a girlfriend? I'm still waiting to drink your wedding wine! You're not young anymore, it's time now!"

Wang Jian gloomily laughed, "For me...I'm not very nervous about it. I haven't met anyone that I've truly liked yet, and I don't want to waste other people's

time. It's better to have nothing than have something bad, let's just wait and see...As for Brother Li Mu, he can't find one, hahaha...."

Li Mu's eyes went round, "Who said that? Last time, there was a 19 year old girl that said that she liked me! I feel like I'm very safe. Right, it was a sister from the 7th division guild of [Emerald Porcelain]..."

Bai Qi was startled, "Are you talking that blind girl who relies on an emulator to play the game?"

Old K laughed: "She's blind, no wonder...perhaps, other people will mistakenly see this brat Li Mu, but this girl hasn't seen him at all!"

Li Mu flew into the rage. He was practically ready to fight Old K a few rounds. But because there were many players and staff around, he had to temporarily endure it for [Zhan Long]'s reputation.

.....

Groups of people talked and laughed as they went to register and claimed their room cards. Two people were allocated to one room. I shared a room with Wolf, while Wan Er and Dong Cheng shared another. Matcha and Qing Qian shared another room. The living conditions of the convention centre weren't any worse than a five star hotel's. There was no doubt about that. Furthermore, we didn't have any competition-related issues that we had to care about, so everyone was more relaxed. Since we had to fight for the 3 precious spots for the national team tomorrow, we went to relax today. That way, we'd fight at our top condition tomorrow.

After entering the room, I tested the cables and internet connection in the room. There weren't any problems. After that, Wan Er, Qing Qian, Dong Cheng, Li Mu, and others came over to chitchat in our room.

Bai Qi, "I just saw Fang Ge Que and Enchanted Painting!"

Wang Jian said, "Yup, Enchanted Painting is actually a beauty. Furthermore, they got a complete victory during the preliminaries, without tasting any defeats at all...according to the statistics, she went out a total of 39 times during the preliminaries, and she successfully interrupted 74 skills, making the opponent's skills all die before they were even activated. I hope that our small

team doesn't meet Fang Ge Que's team in the early rounds, or else we'll truly be in danger.

I slightly laughed, "You'd better pray during the lot drawing tomorrow. Tonight, it seems like we have a banquet. What do you guys have planned after that? Are you going online to train battle techniques, or what?"

Li Mu said, "Wang Jian just said that he wanted to go to the KTV tonight to release some pent up moodiness. Do you guys want to go together? It's also nice if we have some fun together..."

Immediately, the two beautiful ladies Darling Duck and Thousand League Springs nodded their heads, "Good, we were thinking the same! If we stayed in the hotel the whole time, it'd be too boring."

I looked at Wan Er, and she laughed, "Whatever's fine. This time, [Zhan Long] brought twenty people here in total. It'd be nice if we all gathered together. It's a good chance to bond with the core members of [Zhan Long] too..."

"Yup, then let's go together!"

"Yup..."

.....

Not long after, Li Meng Yao finally arrived. She flew over from Xiamen and looked a little travel weary. Despite that she seemed incredibly excited. This girl probably didn't feel any shame at all, even if she relied on other people to get to the Top 32.

It was time for the dinner banquet. After a few dull speeches from the leaders from the convention centre that were responsible for the Chinese Virtual Gaming Competitions, we started eating. The people from [Zhan Long] were separated into two tables that were adjacent to each other. Out of the 32 teams, we took up 4 spaces. There truly was safety in numbers, and there were no other guilds here that had more people than us participating in this offline tournament. Jian Feng Han, Simple, and [Flying Dragon] shared a table, and they both looked at each other with hatred in their eyes. Just watching them was interesting.

After quickly finishing our meal, the group of people from [Zhan Long] left the

competition venue, and went to play around in a street near the convention centre. This was basically a paradise for youngsters. We arranged Li Meng Yao, Matcha, Fox, Dong Cheng, Darling Duck, Yue Yao Yan, and some other people to meet us on the 3rd floor of the KTV for some karaoke. Tang Qi was acting as the bodyguard in the KTV. With a Royal Air peak expert like him protecting them, there definitely wouldn't be any problems. On the other hand, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Wolf, and I went to the 2nd floor to play some table tennis.

I played with Wang Jian, and played for nine points. Wang Jian was pretty skilled. As for me...yup, my playing style completely relied on luck to get the ball in. After a few rounds, I lost so badly that my face turned green. However, I still aimed and used my strength to try and hit the ball in. No matter what, practitioners trained the heart. If something as little as a loss messed up their tactics, then they would lose in both technique and tactic.

"Pa!"

I hit my racket, and the ball flew up. With a "pata", it fell to the ground.

Wang Jian tried his best to hold back a laugh: "Brother Xiao Yao, nice hit!"

I rubbed my nose: "It was a mistake, a mistake..."

Right at that moment, a voice rang out from behind us, "Oh, this little handsome guy doesn't seem too skilled. Do you want me to teach you how to play table tennis?"

I spun around to look. A beauty in a short black skirt was standing behind me. I wasn't even sure when she arrived. She held a paddle in one hand and smiled to me, "You don't hold the paddle like that. Also, your aiming is quite bad. You'll hit the ball out if you use that much strength."

I slightly laughed: "Eh...I can't do anything about it. I'm a newbie, and this brother of mine is an expert!"

"Oh, an expert?" The black-shirt wearing beauty looked towards Wang Jian, and laughed, "He doesn't look like one..."

Wang Jian had the competitive spirit of youth, and he indignantly said: "Beauty, do you wanna play a match?"

The beauty laughed, "Sure, that was exactly what I had in mind. That...this handsome fellow in the black shirt, count the points, and see how I get revenge for you, hee hee..."

I nodded my head, and placed the ball down. After that, I lazily leaned the racket onto a side of the ball table.

The girl was clearly an expert at playing table tennis. She looked extremely experienced as she served. "Pa pa pa", she hit the balls extremely quick, and rapidly won all of the points. It was a clean set, 11-0!

Immediately, Wang Jian's face started to turn green, "Fxck, what kind of tempo is this?"

"You wanna go again?" The skirt had a taunting look in her eyes as she laughed.

Wang Jian replied: "Come!"

The second round started. And the beauty served the ball. She twisted around, making her skirt rise up. I could almost see her \*\*\*\*. The match was still a clean defeat. The experience and luck of this girl was somewhat terrifying.

(im starting to think this isnt table tennis)

Wang Jian's expression got more and more unsightly: "This is the level of the Nine Balls Heavenly Empress..."

I was at the side, texting Wan Er. After that, I looked up and laughed: "What's that...you two continue comparing notes here, I'm going out for a bit!"

As I said that, I rushed towards the beauty and said, "Beauty, viciously thrash him. No need to leave me any face."

The beauty laughed: "Sure!"

"Brother Xiao Yao, you're leaving?" Wang Jian had a look of shock as he looked at me, and he chased after me.

I stared at him, and lowered my voice: "What are you chasing me for? Can't you see that this girl has a bit of feelings towards you? Furthermore, she doesn't look bad, you can't say that you completely dislike her!"



Wang Jian was somewhat embarrassed as he said: "Well, I do like her... it's just that...."

"Be a man!"

I turned around and walked towards the beauty. After that, I typed out "My brother rather likes you, can you leave your number?" on my phone. Who would've thought that the girl would smile at me, then take my handphone and write the words "My game ID is 'Star Scar', let General Wang Jian add me later when he's online. Guild leader Zi Zai, are you reassured now as a big brother?"

I was stunned, and laughed. I patted Wang Jian's shoulder, "You guys have fun playing, Wan Er's calling me!"

# Chapter 654 - Miss, Please have more modesty

While I made my way back, the noise of quarrelling in the distance reached my ears. Several piles of broken beer bottles littered the corridor along with a few dumbfounded servers. Even as I weaved through the crowd, I unexpectedly recognize one of the parties involved. Turns out to be none other than Swift Thunder from [House of Prestige]. Seems like this clown is hanging out here too, but it looks like it's about to turn into a brawl.

"You've got some balls!"

Swift Thunder was viciously glaring at the one in front of him, his right hand tightly gripping a bottle of beer. The target of his stare was a young man in a black jacket who, going by face shape, seemed to be Fierce Tiger from [Flying Dragon]. Also, the middle-aged man next to him could not be mistaken for anyone other than Soaring Dragon. That knife scar on his face was just too obvious.

Soaring Dragon countered with his own gaze as he held [Fierce Tiger] back by the shoulder: "Swift Thunder, let us talk this out. Whichever way you look at it, [House of Prestige] is in the top 10 of the popular guilds rankings. Don't you at all feel embarrassed about starting fights for every little thing? And I want to know, how did our [Fierce Tiger] even piss you off?"

Swift Thunder's scowl became furious: "Oh you'll have to question your favorite flunkey about that. [Fierce Tiger], if you're a man then you better give me a straight up answer. Did you or did you not grope Wang Yao at the washrooms?"

"Wang Yao?" Soaring Dragon was taken aback: "Who is that?"

Swift Thunder growled: "Cut the act. Our guild only sent 5 people to this competition. And our only healer is a beauty whose ID is "Yao Yao". You think I'll believe that [Flying Dragons] did not investigate and analyze our setup? FUCK! Taking advantage of Yao Yao being drunk to grope her all over... Fierce

Tiger how are you gonna answer to this?”

Soaring Dragon became flabbergasted and furiously turned around: “You little punk! Did you seriously pull this crap?”

A rather drunk Fierce Tiger raised his beer, cheerily replied: “Boss..... How would I have known? That chick was already horny as hell. She’s the one that came onto me first, y’know? Why shouldn’t I taste the ‘meat’ that delivered itself to me?”

Unease briefly flashed across Soaring Dragon’s face before he turned back towards Swift Thunder: “We’re gonna have to talk this out carefully. Whether or not it was my bro who forced himself on her, or if it was mutual. That’s the most important thing. We’ll clear that up before pointing fingers.”

Swift Thunder finally lost his cool and flung his beer at them, roaring: “Go clear up your mother! Lemme tell ya, Wang Yao is MY woman! You motherfuckers mess with her, then I’m gonna lop off the hand that did it!

Whoosh!

The half-finished beer reached them extremely quickly, and Soaring Dragon was unable to dodge in time. It was at that moment that another young man who looked to be around 25 stepped out in front of him. A single palm struck down in a pressing motion... “Bang! ” and shattered the bottle. At the same time, the invisible force churning within his palm forced all the broken glass and liquor straight down onto the floor.

Another expert of the Royal Air stage! I narrowed my eyes for a better look. That young man... was none other than the trump card that carried [Flying Dragons] into the Qualifiers—— Drunken Spear!

“Calm down. Let us be civilized.”

Drunken Spear wore a lazy grin on his face as he looked at Swift Thunder. “Using force is my specialty~ Swift Thunder, you should already know what kind of a woman that Yao Yao is. Well, I knew about it. Heck, everyone else knows about her promiscuity too. She must’ve caused you no end of trouble back in Xiamen right? Well, she definitely hasn’t changed here in Shanghai. Sure, our vice-chief might have some faults, but he’s a man afterall and not Zhan Huo. I

personally think you should focus more on reining in your own woman first.”

Even though he could see that a way out had been opened for him, Swift Thunder stubbornly persisted: “Oh, so [Flying Dragons] is gonna rely on outnumbering me here huh?”

At that very moment, several more people came out of private room nearby. Two males and one female all around the age of 20. One of them turned out to be Bai Li Ruo Feng who currently had a deep frown on his face: “Swift, let it go. Just come back already or are you not done being gossip fuel?”

A door to a private room on the other side opened at this time. An alluring woman in a black one piece leaned against the door frame with a light smirk: “Yoooo, is [House of Prestige] causing a big mess right after reaching the Exhibition Center? And here I thought we all came here to sing our hearts out but some people just want to bring down the image of Chinese eSports huh.”

Swift Thunder became riled up again: “ Enchanted Painting, this is none of your business?”

Enchanted Painting’s smirk became even more pronounced: “Indeed it’s none of my business, but I just feel embarrassed for my fellow competitors.”

Fang Ge Que’s voice could be heard from inside the room: “Little Canvas come back and close the door. Don’t butt in on other’s affairs.”

.....

I’m left at a loss. Who would’ve ever thought that [Legend], [House of Prestige], [Zhan Long], and [Flying Dragon] would all come to have fun in the same place. I could even hear Matcha’s voice singing [Our Love] from our room on the other end. Does she not know it’s about to get busy out here?

Continuing on my way, I cautiously stuck to the wall behind Swift Thunder who had got his hands on another beer, and I carefully let my presence be known: “Excuse me please, I need to go through.....”

Swift Thunder’s rage had just reached a new peak and he turned around savagely, roaring: “AND WHO THE HELL ARE YOU!? Shit.....Xiao Yao Zi Zai.....Li Xiao Yao, what are you planning showing up at a time like this?”

I was speechless, almost spooked, in fact: “I.....what did I even do.....”

Drunken Spear immediately cracked up: “Li Xiao Yao, you just ate the bullet, the mighty Lord Swift Thunder is being pretty trigger happy right now!”

Enchanted Painting was giggling on the side: “Li Xiao Yao, I heard you can fight pretty well. Teach him a lesson! One that he won’t forget anytime soon!”

Fang Ge Que’s voice came from the room again: “Little Canvas come sing. Don’t bring trouble upon yourself. Why are you being such a bad girl.....”

“Kaaaaaaaay.....” Enchanted Painting voiced her compliance but her body never moved as she delightedly watch the drama unfold.

.....

From Bai Li Ruo Feng’s side, that Yao Yao woman came out as well. Seems she did drink a bit too much. Her appearance was definitely not bad but her expression right now was completely that of debauchery, her drunk eyes blurrily narrowed “What’s... going on?”

Suddenly, she looked towards me, eyes wide open: “Whoa..... isn’t this [Zhan Long]’s Guild Master Xiao Yao Zi Zai? He really is good looking.... Just like the commercials.... hic ”

Even while drunkenly babbling, she was stumbling her way towards me. Those mesmerizing hips, those 36E’s, that long wavy hair with highlights..... No mistake, she is definitely worth the bragging rights but is her gaming skill really all that great or did she get on the main team through the use of other skills?

Yao Yao finally finished stumbling her way towards me, her arm reached out ready to wrap around my neck. I nimbly took a half-step backwards and at the same time rotated the Qi in my arm to push her away with a stream of invisible force. Giving her a light smile: “Miss [Yao Yao], please have some modesty.”

Swift Thunder ran up, and grabbed Yao Yao in one swift motion: “You’re drunk, hurry up and go sleep a bit!”

Bai Li Ruo Feng had an abashed countenance: “Guildmaster Xiao Yao, the people of [Flying Dragons], Enchanted Painting, my apologies for showing you all such an embarrassing side. Let us put an end to this little accident right

here.....”

Following that, Bai Li Ruo Feng spitefully glared at Fierce Tiger: “However, you dared to touch my bro’s woman. I won’t forget that. Better hope our guilds can clash during this competition, otherwise, I definitely won’t let this matter drop after we return to Tian Ling City!”

Fierce Tiger growled back: “Come at me! Think I’m scared?”

Soaring Dragon rolls his eyes: “Still yapping? Go back to drinking!”

Soaring Dragon dragged Fierce Tiger back into the room. Drunken Spear continued to lean back against the wall and started laughing instead: “That was a beautiful use of “Spatial Deflection” from Guildmaster Xiao Yao. Truly. You do live up to your reputation!”

I grinned back: “So when do you plan to change guilds?”

“Ugh... currently no plans on doing that. Boss is treating me pretty well, even said he’s going to set me up with a pretty cousin of his.....”

“That’s some ambition you got.....”

“Ha Ha, I can say the same about you. For the sake of Cang Tong’s affections, wouldn’t you willingly give up [Zhan Long] as well?”

“Never. [Zhan Long] belongs to all my comrades, not just me.

“Alright..... So that Yao Yao just now, wasn’t she quite a tasty looking piece?”

My face went slack: “Ooh not bad..... got a big rack.....”

Drunken Spear turned to leave, laughing: “Yea, I think so too. But I feel you should think even harder on how to face your Cang Tong after saying those words.....”

Bewildered for a second, I turned around only to find Wan Er standing behind me. Steaming. And a pair of lovely eyes spitting fury: “Li Xiao Yao. Do you dare repeat the things you just said one more time?”

I can only curse Drunken Spear, that cunning punk, mentally and take Wan Er’s hand in mine, giving her a smile: “Honey, you look gorgeous tonight!”

“Don’t even think about changing the subject!”

“Look! The Sun is so round tonight!”

“Don’t even dream about it!”

“Just earlier, I set Wang Jian up with a babe with a bombastic body in the billiards room!”

“Eh! Really? Did you take pictures? Show me quickly! I wanna see just what kind of girl can satisfy Wang Jian that picky bastard.”

“.....”

.....

Upon reentering the room with Wan Er hand in hand, I found Meng Yao and Matcha doing a love duet, Tang Qi and Thousand League Spring playing dice and Dong Cheng laying on the side with her phone.

“What’s going on outside?” Dong Cheng asked.

I sat down and emptied a pitcher before giving her the rundown: Swift Thunder’s girl made a move on Fierce Tiger and got groped. Swift Thunder wouldn’t let that go. But Drunken Spear wouldn’t let him settle it. Then Enchanted Painting kept fueling them on. Then it actually just ended without having to call in the cops. A real let down really.....”

Dong Cheng grabbed a beer, her face flushed in a pink glow, giggling: “Whatever, it’s not like a little touching would knock her up..... Swift Thunder is just too petty.....”

Nearby, Fox became speechless: “Then lemme cop a feel and see how you handle it?”

Dong Cheng pursed her lips and suddenly sat up straight. She pulled her mini-skirt back just a little bit more and suddenly, I got an eyeful of smooth pale skin. Then she smoothly continued on to grab my left hand and placed it right on top of those thighs, simpering: “Awww, I just got felt up but it’s not like I’m gonna go hysterical.....”

Quicker than lightning, I pulled my hand back, face pale: “Quit fooling around Dong Cheng! You want me to die!?”

“Useless!”

“.....”

Wan Er just quietly snuggled up to me. On such a rare occasion without Qin Wen or the bodyguards assigned by her father around, she can finally stop holding back today.

.....

We stayed out until past 11pm before calling it a night and returning to our own rooms. Tomorrow morning at 9: The competition begins!



# Chapter 655 - The Tyrannial 10:0

It was the afternoon of the next day. I was already woken up by Wan Er at 7 in the morning. After that, I was dragged along by her to go tour around the surrounding areas near the convention centre. We didn't eat at the dining hall, but the on small streets outside. We tasted the distinctive local flavours here, which was the Pancakes+Hu La Tang. This was truly a nondescript combination. However, the face of the little miss was full of sweat as she ate, and her expression which was brimming with youth was extremely enjoyable to look at.

When we finally returned, it was already 8:30. Everyone had a backpack along with them, which had their own game helmets inside, as they walked into the central building. Before entering, we were already shocked by the sea of people. The uncountable numbers of viewers were currently queueing up to get into the competition venue, while Wan Er and I relied on our participant passes to enter via the participant entrance. From the distance, there were already people that had recognised us, and were pointing at us as if they were looking at aliens--

"Look, isn't that [Zhan Long]'s beauty Cang Tong? How pretty..."

"Her figure is so nice...I can still see her S line even though she's wearing a coat..."

"Isn't that Xiao Yao Zi Zai beside her? That's [Zhan Long]'s guild leader!"

"It is! D\*mn, the goddess already has a boyfriend..."

.....

Wan Er and I hastily entered the central building. After that, we quickly registered and entered the waiting area for the participants, to wait for the competition to begin. Li Meng Yao, Dong Cheng, and the others were already waiting there. Li Meng Yao giggled: "I couldn't find brother in the morning, I even thought that he had been abducted and sold... Dong Cheng told me that it was sister-in-law who had taken him away..."

Wan Er's face instantly turned red: "What sister in law?"

Li Meng Yao pursed her red lips: "Isn't my brother's girlfriend my sister in law!"

Wan Er lowered her head. Her face was already extremely red: "Why do I feel so strange..."

I calmly replied: "It's fine, the competition is about to start already. I wonder which match will be chosen as the opening match?"

"It should be Fang Ge Que's match?"

Dong Cheng replied: "After all, Fang Ge Que is the crowd favourite to win the tournament. Furthermore, Fang Ge Que was the champion of last time's Rise of the Heroes tournament, and [Legend] is the nation's publicly recognised number one guild. Therefore, using Fang Ge Que to start the tournament is natural."

"Yea..."

Wan Er looked up at the large screen, then said: "Let's just see how our luck is. I hope that we won't get too bad of a draw for the first round. Pig, as a team leader, you have to have luckier hands. I would rather not meet Fang Ge Que's team, nor do I want a civil war to happen too!"

"I know..."

At this moment, a familiar figure appeared on the stage. It was ZGTV's Fei Er. Holding the microphone, she appeared wearing professional clothes. She smiled as she asked the team leaders of the Top 32 teams to come up onto the stage and draw lots. I was unwilling to pass on my responsibilities, and stood up. Along with Mu Xuan, Ye Lai, Q-Sword, and the others, I walked up on to stage. All thirty two people drew their lots. Ultimately, our first opponent was the first team of Fan Shu City's [Fantasy Kingdom]. This was simple, beating them wouldn't take much.

Sure enough, Fei Er quickly confirmed that the first match, as the opening match, would be Fang Ge Que's team VS Han Bei Song's team.

Looking at the matchup on the large screen, Han Bei Song wiped away his tears and said: "Fxck , this pair of hands can't love anymore..."

Ye Lai and I were patting his left and right shoulders as we said: "Have a good journey..."

.....

Sure enough, [Legend]'s team was too strong. For the first match, Fang Ge Que started off by beating Sheltering Guest 2:0. Following that, Lu Chun Yang defeated Thundercloud 2:0. For the third match, Enchanted Painting defeated Han Bei Song 2:0, and the fourth 2v2 match was also a 2:0. For the final match, [Legend] relied on Fang Ge Que's astonishing magic attack to directly instakill 3 people in a row. In the end, it was still a 2:0. This also signified that the score for the whole match was 10:0, and they had 5:0'ed [Blood Contract]'s main team. Even though it was just the opening match, [Legend] still went at full power, leaving no mercy at all.

Han Bei Song held his game helmet, and he rubbed his nose as he walked out. He said: "D\*mmit, I suddenly feel like I've lost a lot of face. Don't know if there's a tea egg in today's lunch box..."

Who's Blue lightly laughed: "Accept your fate. Who made us meet [Legend]'s main team? I expected this ending a long time ago..."

.....

Following that, the second match was between [Zhan Long]'s main team and [Fantasy Kingdom]'s main team. There was no suspense at all to this. Wan Er went out for the first match, for an Assassin VS Assassin matchup. She cleaned up Sole Heir with a 2:0 win. After that, I went up for the second match and cleaned up Night Approaching Wind. For the third match, Dong Cheng suppressed and took down an opposing Berserker with a 2:0 win. The remaining two rounds were also 2:0, and we also swept our opponents away with a 10:0 win. This fact proved that, even though two teams both entered into the Top 32, there could also be a wide gap between our strengths.

Match after match of decisive battles were methodically carried out. Q-Sword's team overcame their opponents with a 4:1 score; Jian Feng Han's team swept their opponents with a 5:0 win; Yan Zhao Warrior's team got a big victory with a 4:1 score. As for [Zhan Long]'s teams, team Li Mu got a big victory with a 4:1 score; Team Wolf got a risky win with a 3:2 score. Meng Yao was on the

same team. They had lost Star Blade's 1v1 and the 2v2 match. The opponent's Mage was very strong, nearly killing Star Blade instantly. They won as they managed to win a point in one of the separate rounds.

However, it wasn't bad overall. [Zhan Long]'s four teams all miraculously entered the Top 16, although Wolf and Li Meng Yao's team barely stumbled into the Top 16.

Not long after, the matchup for the Top 16 finally appeared on the large screen. We were separated into four zones--

Zone A: Team Q-Sword VS Team Blade Hero -- Team Judgement VS Team Li Meng Yao

Zone B: Team Li Mu VS Team Fang Ge Que -- Team Flying Dragon VS Team House of Prestige

Zone C: Team Jian Feng Han VS Team Emerald Porcelain -- Enemies at the Gate VS Team Mu Xuan

Zone D: Team Wolf VS Team Yan Zhao Warrior --Team Moonlit Lake VS Team Xiao Yao Zi Zai

.....

Looking at the match ups, Wan Er unenthusiastically laughed: "They're all strong collisions. There aren't even weak teams left anymore. Fighting against any team would be just as tough. However, it seems like we won't meet [Legend] and [Hero's Mound]'s main teams until the finals."

Li Mu's face turned ashen: "Why do we have to meet Fang Ge Que's team during the Top 16? Is this destiny's choice?"

Ye Lai said: "I'm meeting Li Xiao Yao's sister's team in the first round. Does that mean that I can't be too heavy-handed during the start?"

I laughed: "No matter. If someone wants to represent the Chinese area to fight in the global Hero's Wings finals, and if someone wants to bring the Hero's Wings trophy back home, then it doesn't matter...regardless of what kind of opponent you face, you have to use your whole strength in the fight."

"Ok..."

.....

I quietly watched the fights. For the first round, Q-Sword led the outstanding heroes of [Hero's Mound] to fight against the main team of [Dao Jian Xuan]. When Q-Sword and Tang Qi went up the stage, the entire hall immediately erupted into an ovation. Furthermore, it was full of the screeches of countless young girls. Q-Sword was acclaimed as the Chinese area's most perfect man. His body was sturdy, and his looks were handsome. His combat techniques were also exceptionally heroic and effective, and so naturally, he was popular among the members of the audience.

There wasn't much suspense to the matchup. It was a 10:1 sweep. Only Jian Han threw away one point, and the overall score was 5:0, as they sent the main team of Jiu Li City's [Dao Jian Xuan] packing home.

Facing this kind of score, practically no one felt surprise. [Hero's Mound]'s strength was clearly exhibited in this match. Q-Sword had secured the most points, while Tang Qi had many control skills, allowing him to advance and retreat. Jian Han and Sword Tears were both well-known figures in Q-Sword's family, and their individual combat skill wouldn't be too inferior.

For the second match, it was Team Li Meng Yao VS Team Ye Lai. This match had some qualities which made it worth it to watch.(idk how to TL this part) The two teams confirmed their team lists and their team orders, and their battle formations appeared on teh big screen--

1v1: Xi Yao Ge Jin-Level 101 Knight VS Jin Ke-Level 115 Assassin

1v1: Yue Yao Yan-Level 115 Knight VS Ye Lao-Level 117 Flame Barbarian

1v1: Cang Lei-Level 114 Berserker VS Babel Buddha-Level 114 Wind Swordsman

2v2: Cang Lei-Level 114 Berserker & Death God's Elegy-Level 114 Knight VS Ye Lai-Level 117 Flame Barbarian & Babel Buddha-Level 114 Wind Swordsman

5V5:ALL VS ALL

.....

For the first match, it was Li Meng Yao VS Jin Ke. Jin Ke was also an

experienced player. He appeared in the battlefield with a suit of elite leather armor. Li Meng Yao held her Heavy Shield and Zhen Yue Sword as she stood in front of Jin Ke. A pair of beautiful eyes cautiously looked around at everything surrounding her, and she entered a defensive state after Jin Ke entered stealth mode.

"Sha sha..."

On the large screen, the wind blew and leaves floated on the battlefield. The shape of a falling leaf danced about in midair with a "shua shua". Suddenly, Jin Ke's body appeared, and he accelerated as he charged towards Li Meng Yao. A light flashed as he activated [Gouge] with his dagger, attempting to stun her. Li Meng Yao used [Heavenly Shield Wall] and stood there without moving. Jin Ke took advantage of this and skillfully slid behind Li Meng Yao. He used [Backstab]+[Twin Blade Harmony]+[Chain Attack] to use up all of his energy, then leaped backwards. A fluorescent light spread out as he entered stealth mode, waiting for his energy to recover.

"Ah..."

In the instant that she broke free of the stun, Li Meng Yao charged over. My younger sister was exceptionally intelligent, and she fiercely smashed her heavy shield onto the body of Jin Ke who was in the middle of entering stealth mode. The Zhen Yue Sword danced about, and [Skyshaker Stab]+[Icy Spear] consecutively landed!

"6237 ! "

"7111 ! "

Since her level was too low, there was a limit to her damage. Even if her full frontal attack succeeded, she still couldn't instakill her opponent.

Jin Ke clenched his teeth, and struck with his dagger again, successfully landing the second [Gouge]. He wasn't anxious to attack, and instead waited for almost 1 second for his energy to recover. The twin daggers suddenly exploded out, continuously landing 5 hits of [Defense Removal] to lower Li Meng Yao's defense by 50%. Following that was a [God Army Penetration]+[Twin Blade Harmony] combination attack!

“13131 ! ”

“14227 ! ”

His blows were too painful, and Li Meng Yao's health had dropped dangerously low. Her [Dou Qi Armor] had already been broken. However, she was suddenly enlightened by an idea, and used a Level 11 Potion and [Cleansing Wind] together as she withstood another attack. She managed to survive!

She swept out her Zhen Yue Sword, throwing three continuous normal attacks +[Icy Spear]+Normal Attack instantly dropping Jing Ke's health. He had underestimated Li Meng Yao too much. He hastily drank a health potion while retreating. However, Li Meng Yao took advantage of that and used a [Valiant Strike] to follow up. After another normal attack, [Skyshaker Stab]'s cooldown was ready. She hit her opponent as his health was plummeting, and killed him in one final strike!

1:0 !

It was hard to believe that my newbie sister could actually get a precious point from the number one Assassin from [Judgement].

# Chapter 656 - Slaying Xiang Yan

“Fuck.....this is embarrassing.....”

Having been sent back to the ringside, Jing Ke could only shrug helplessly: “I actually got done in by Li Xiao Yao’s baby sister.....”

Ye Lai, lifted up his battleaxe, and chuckled: “Definitely a shameful display, do better next round!”

“Mmm!”

Round 2. This time Jing Ke was much more conservative. Cautiously relying on stun+strike combos as well as parrying Meng Yao’s onslaughts, he managed to preserve his own HP and drained hers dry by the end of their third collision; taking back 1 point.

Round 3. Jing Ke’s luck ran out. Right at the start of the match, he took on the full effects of a critical hit by Meng Yao. Left with just 50% of his HP, he stubbornly refused to pop a potion’s CD and instead, relied on HP Drain over another endurance contest.

And then right when [Jing Ke] was about to make his third attempt at a combo, the ring on Meng Yao’s right hand suddenly start turning and a green glow enshrouded Jing Ke. The effect was displayed on the bottom of the wide-screen broadcast: Rage Skill [Recovery Ban] - For 7 seconds, no methods of recovery can be used! The CD that he had been so unwilling to waste was suddenly wasted and a brutal follow-up combo from Meng Yao subsequently took him down.

2:1 !

Unbelievable. Meng Yao had actually managed to win a point for the team.

Wolf, especially was just a step from tearing up from laughter. Slapping Old K’s back; he yelled, “How’s that huh, Old K? Did I not tell you that ring is good stuff? You even dared to claim it’s just a ‘Gold tier ring’ with ‘no redeeming value’! You got anything to say now? What, you thought Meng Yao’s skill level is like yours? That ring could only show it’s true worth in the hands of someone



like her.....”

Old K sheepishly grinned: “Ah, Meng Yao’s true skill is indeed an eye opener. She was actually able to take down Jing Ke.....”

.....

Soon it was the second match, [Ye Lai] VS [Yue Yao Yan].

As someone personally recruited by Wan Er, Yue Yao Yan was definitely a capable fighter and commander. But unfortunately, she was still far from Ye Lai’s level. What’s worse, she was a Knight so there wasn’t any advantage against Ye Lai who was also a heavy armored class. He trounced her soundly with a 2:0.

1:1 tie!

Third match, Cang Lei VS Babel Buddha

Beyond everyone’s expectations, Dong Cheng Lei, normally considered a 3rd rate player, just barely lost in a 1:2 to his opponent. At the same time, everyone could see just how frightening Babel Buddha’s agility is. A Wind Swordsman’s attack and movement speed is on a level that completely eclipsed Cang Lei’s.

2:1 Meng Yao’s team was now teetering on the edge.

Fourth Match. The deciding round. The moment Babel Buddha entered the ring, he switched his gear and turned from an agile swordsman to a tank build. It even had a 30% damage reflection bonus with it. Cang Lei might as well have committed self-mutilation as he hacked away at him. Through the use of the hidden class skill [Wind Pulse], Babel Buddha restrained both his opponents in place for Ye Lai to deal damage to them. This vanguard & striker tactic completely suppressed the Cang Lei and Death God’s Elegy duo’s teamwork.

3:1, Team Meng Yao was now out automatically. The fifth match was no different on top of that. A complete pulverization..... 4:1. And that’s how this little sister of mine ended her exploits in this Wings of Heroes Cup. But still, to enter the top 16 in her very first tournament, that’s quite some luck there.

.....

Meng Yao, Yue Yao Yan, Ah Lei and the rest left the stage, helmets in hand

and a smile on their faces, and exchanged greeting with their opponents. Hmm, not bad. That kind of open-mindedness is what's important.

Not long after, Fei Er ascended the stage once more. Notifying everyone that Group B's matches will start immediately.

Team [Fang Ge Que] VS Team [Li Mu]..... a confrontation between [Zhan Long] and [Legend]. Not long after, both team's setup appeared on the broadcast——

1V1: Enchanted Painting LV-116 Swordsman VS General Wang Jian LV-115 Swordsman

1V1: Fang Ge Que LV-121 Archmage VS General Bai Qi LV-114 Berserker

1V1: Xuan Yuan Feng LV-116 Knight VS General Li Mu LV-115 Swordsman

2V2: Enchanted Painting LV-116 Swordsman VS General Wang Jian LV-115 Swordsman

Fang Ge Que LV-121 Archmage General Li Mu LV-115 Swordsman

5V5:ALL VS ALL

.....

Even before he went on stage, Li Mu gave off the feeling as if he was about to walk to his doom. I could only give him a pat on the shoulder: "No need to cry. You won't lose anything when you already have nothing to begin with. Just go give them a run for their money. If you somehow win, we'll treat you to a meal, and if you lose, no one would blame you."

Li Mu nodded: "Thanks for the 'encouragement'....."

Wang Jian laughed: "The first match is against Enchanted Painting, hehe, I've always wanted to try my hand against that chick. The legendary [Pulse Break Style]....."

Bai Qi: "You've dueled with Boss quite a bit already so you should have an idea on how to counter it. Just make sure you don't get 2:0."

"Relax!"

.....

Soon, both sides confirmed their entries into the ring. After a short sponsored

commercial, the camera quickly switched to Enchanted Painting's figure. A short and slender figure, clad entirely in black heavy armour, she stood in the ring. A faintly glowing longsword in hand and her face of mirth looked towards Wang Jian.

“Within [Zhan Long]'s heavy armour class players, you're in the top 5 right?

Wang Jian paused for a bit, then smiled: “Maybe not. [Zhan Long]'s heavy armour class is full of ‘hidden dragons & crouching tigers’. With my skill level, I just barely count as cannon fodder.....”

Enchanted Painting couldn't hold back a giggle: “Suit yourself. Whatever, I planned on taking down all of [Zhan Long]'s heavy armoured experts one by one anyway!”

“Then bring it!”

.....

Wang Jian's steadfast figure shook, [Glacial Armor]+[Dou Qi Armor]+[Dou Qi Protection] the three defensive abilities stacked up. The former 2 of which can greatly boost his base defense while the latter can greatly reduce the damage received. As such, it will be impossible for an opponent to take him down in a short period of time. A chilling light flashed and this punk was already rushing towards this deadly foe. Without any hesitation, he raised his arm for a [Flying Sword]!

Whoosh!

[Flying Sword] was similar to my own [Blade Spin] except that it can only be operated once. However, the offensive power of that one time is much stronger than each of mine individually. It is something that must be dodged whenever possible.

Enchanted Painting's coordination was undoubtedly top tier at the least. A ranged physical attack with such a small AOE coverage could never hit someone like her. With a small twist of her boots, her body flickered for a split second, and she completely avoided the attack.

ShhhhhhShhhhhhhhhShhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh

The sound of cutting wind approached. Wang Jian, under the effects of [Haste], arrived! In a flash, he initiated a normal sweeping attack. By not using a skill, it seemed he also understood that his opponent's high record of successful skill breaks was not to be underestimated. Therefore, before the time was right, he must not use any offensive abilities.

Clang!

Sparks flew. Enchanted Painting successfully parried his strike and immediately closed in on him in one go. A tender shoulder dipped down and heavily rammed into his chest followed by the appearance of a golden light flashing all around her. It's the indication of a Heaven-rank skill being used! A level 11 [Combo] surged forth. Having hidden her swordhand with her cloak beforehand, she was able to land almost all 6 consecutive hits on [Wang Jian] uninterrupted.

Wang Jian managed to bring up his left arm just in time to block the very last hit. Then followed up with a [Skyshaker Slash] in retaliation. Right after that, his body blurred! [Blade Rush]!

Kaching!

Shrouded in light shaped like a sword, his figure penetrated straight through Enchanted Painting's body. Immediately, Wang Jian turned around and in an impressive display of speed, consecutively activated [Halberd Whirlwind] + [Sword Break].

But who would've guessed that Enchanted Painting was even faster. Blocking the tip of [Sword Break]'s attack with her left gauntlet, her right leg raised up and firmly stomped against Wang Jian's thigh. Her swordhand moved at the same time for a coordinated strike...

CLANG — a set of impressive blue words "Successful Skill Break!" shot up! At the same time, [Wang Jian] was left in a state of stun animation. A chain of [Break Armor Slash] + [Thunderclap Slash] closely followed.

THUD .....

Stuck in the stun animation, Wang Jian had no way to restore any HP before perishing.

Round 2 followed almost instantly.

Wang Jian did not let the outcome of the first round get to him. Unhesitatingly taking the initiative once more, he acknowledged that once Enchanted Painting took the offensive, he'll have no chances at all. As if replaying the first round, he once more got position on her with a [Blade Rush] followed by a [Halberd Whirlwind]. Raging wind surrounded his sword as it trembled slightly, like it's about to burst.

Nothing escaped Enchanted Painting's eyes though. Rapidly closing again, her sword moved to interrupt Wang Jian's attack and her right leg struck out at the same time. Only by ruining his balance, would the Skill Break have the highest chance of success.

But, right when the Skill Break was about to succeed, Wang Jian suddenly made his move. [Halberd Whirlwind] prematurely ended, and it was replaced with a surge of pressure coming from his feet. At this very moment, against an Enchanted Painting who has lost her balance during the unsuccessful attempt, he activated a custom combo. A giant crimson "A" followed by the bloody words [Slaying Xiang Yan] flew up.

MOTHERF\*\*\*\*\*! That punk has actually already managed to create his own rank A combo! He must've kept it under wraps all this time in order to show it off here in the spotlights!

A straight jab pierced through Enchanted Painting's chestplate. Then a low sweep to trip her was followed with a high kick to send her flying. After that was another sweeping slash finally being chained into a heavy smash to strike her down to the ground. Enchanted Painting's HP basically bottomed out in midair. And even before she came in contact with the ground, [Halberd Whirlwind] was triggered once more. This time, even if she was Little Demon herself, she still wouldn't be able to make a comeback from this. She hit the ground, accompanied by a brief whimper, and was dead.

1:1! The scores were equal! Everyone was dumbfounded. We'd always known that Wang Jian was a strong fighter but no one knew exactly to what extent. Until now. Against an SSS tier player like Enchanted Painting, he was able to match her blow for blow!

Round 3. This time, the results reversed once more and Enchanted Painting got to show off. Following a successful [Skill Break], her “S” class custom combo [Charm Dance] sent Wang Jian straight into critical health. Finishing up with a [Flying Sword], he immediately bit the dust.

1:2! Wang Jian ultimately lost the match. However, his performance was remarkable and had allowed for me and Wan Er to confirm one thing. In the coming days, no matter if it was the guild wars or nation wars, Wang Jian’s battle and tactical prowess had proven that he can be a dependable commander in his own right. Within our [Zhan Long], only such people were truly worthy of the title “General”.

.....

Second Match. General Bai Qi VS Fang Ge Que

This match did not go against expectations. In fact, Fang Ge Que took Bai Qi down continuously without even needing to use that many skills, in a 2:0 taking the match easily. Fang Ge Que was a clever person. Especially when it came to important events such as this Wings of Heroes Cup. He is dead-set on victory and would not carelessly reveal his true abilities to anyone. And definitely not when there was an audience full of rivals at hand.

Third Match. General Li Mu VS Xuan Yuan Feng

.....

Swoosh!

Clad in a set of exquisite plate armor, and a heavy shield in hand, Xuan Yuan Feng appeared in the ring. Although he was lacking the supplemental boost from a mount, his vigor still could not be concealed. [Legend]’s #1 Knight. Considered best in the nation when it came to balancing between offensive power, defensive power and high health. Even when facing a player of Li Mu’s caliber, he did not hold back on mocking him a bit: “Li Mu...oh Li Mu..... you actually did not make it to [Zhan Long]’s main team? What a shame.... Without the backup from Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Cang Tong, you have no chance of winning against us [Legend].”

Li Mu tightly gripped his sword and flashed back a grin: “You can forget about

it if you think you can sow discord in [Zhan Long]. I, Li Mu, know my place. I also know that we, of the [Valiant Bravery] camp, cannot defeat [Legend]. But you know what? I know that I can clobber you and that's good enough for me!"

# Chapter 657 - Team Li Mu's Defeat

“Ah, is that so?”

Xuan Yuan Feng had a look of complete confidence. He stood up straight with his long spear in hand. He glanced at Li Mu with contempt and then suddenly raised his arm. Energy broke through the ground and began to twist around his body, forming into the shape of a dragon and slowly seeped into him. The big screen also showed the name and effect of the skill. [Dragon Armor], Holy Ghost Level 1, Greatly increases defense and stamina.

Following that, Xuan Yuan Feng’s [Dou Qi Armor] also successfully activated. This was just a sign that he and Li Mu were going to have a long battle of attrition.

“Shua!”

Nobody would have thought that Xuan Yuan Feng, as a knight, would activate the first attack. He locked [Assault] right onto Li Mu. He swept out his spear and smiled, “Let me see just how strong the number of player of [Zhan Long]’s Valiant Bravery Camp is!”

Li Mu saw the attack coming. He slid forward, and dodged the [Assault]. He spun around and dealt a [Flying Sword]+[Sword Break]. “Keng Keng!” streaks of sparks flashed across Xuan Yuan’s heavy armor. Even though Li Mu’s attack power was high, it still didn’t deal much damage against this b\*st\*rd with [Dragon Armor]——

“4123 ! ”

“5228 ! ”

.....

Xuan Yuan smiled and dealt a fierce counterattack with a sweep of his iron spear. He activated [Skyshaker Stab]+[Flame Axe]. Li Mu countered with a [Dou Qi Armor], dodging 50% of the damage. Besides, since Xuan Yuan Feng had focused so much on defense, his attack could not be too high. The result didn’t appear to be too painful either——



“3912 ! ”

“4421 ! ”

Xuan Yuan Feng didn't seem to panic at all. After all, his health was higher than Li Mu's. Furthermore, the recovery capabilities of a knight was already in itself superior to other classes. And so, he continuously pierced his spear forward, steadily cutting down Li Mu's health with normal attacks.

Li Mu didn't try to retreat from the attacks at all. Besides, his damage was higher. Furthermore, he was watching Xuan Yuan's health. He was waiting. Waiting for the perfect opportunity to kill his opponent in one attack.

“You, it's over!”

When Li Mu only had 25% health left, Xuan Yuan let out a roar and rammed his spear forward. “Peng!” he pushed Li Mu back. At the same time, his spear pierced into the stage and he roared, “[Earth Dragon Charge]!”

The earth around us trembled as snakes of earth dragons broke through the cliffs. This was a twenty yard area attack. When the light of the earth dragons swallowed up Li Mu's body, Xuan Yuan charged over with his spear in hand. He had calculated it all out. The second Li Mu got a chance to gulp down a potion, he would take the chance to kill him off.

“Hong hong...”

Dragon roars rang through the air and the light of the earth dragons spread out throughout the map. Nobody could see Li Mu's figure. Right at that moment, we suddenly heard a “Peng!”. It sounded like a rock breaking. Following that, Li Mu's sword suddenly flew out. He had used [Assault], charging right into Xuan Yuan Feng who didn't have any defenses up. Xuan Yuan Feng was stunned for a whole second. Furthermore, all of the earth dragons charging at Li Mu hadn't died yet. Dragon power radiated off of his armor. It was the effect from the Dragon Tortoise Armor. The durability had greatly decreased. At a time like this it finally made its mark.

Within moments, Li Mu had already dealt [Covering Sword Slash]+[Level 11 Combo]+[Absolute Authority] onto Xuan Yuan Feng. Sparks flew off his armor. In the end, even if Xuan Yuan Feng were to have the highest defense in the

Chinese Server, he had still lost 40% of his health to Li Mu. He howled and fell to his knees, losing a point.

.....

“Huff....”

Li Mu took a deep breath as he stood at the center of the second stage. The second battle ended the exact same way. There was a limit to Xuan Yuan Feng's attack power and he didn't have the support of any high level combos. In the end, he couldn't kill Li Mu, instead, his health had been dragged to critical by Li Mu using a Level 11 Potion+[Flying Sword] and he was finally killed by a combo!

2:0 !

In the end, Team Li Mu countered their loss with a point.

However, the fourth round was a 2v2 duel. They were against Enchanted Painting+Fang Ge Que. Despite that, Li Mu and Wang Jian didn't appear to be too depressed about their fate. They knew that their opponent's team was stronger in both technique and power.

“Well, let's do our best!”

Li Mu softly punched Wang Jian's shoulder and smiled, “I heard that you got the girl you were playing ball with last night? He he, she's got a nice figure, and a pretty face. Li Mu Jr. seemed to like her a lot too....”

Wang Jian helplessly glared at him, “Aren't you paying attention to the wrong thing? Me and her... We didn't do anything. She didn't even give me her QQ or her phone number. I don't even know how to contact her....”

“F\*ck!” Li Mu widened his eyes, “So you're saying... the pretty girl you almost had ran away? D\*mn, what do you expect me to say. I bet you fell for her this time too. You just don't have the guts to fight for her!”

Wang Jian rubbed his nose and embarrassingly smiled, “That... before she left, she said that if I wanted to contact her, I had to ask Brother Xiao Yao. Apparently Brother Xiao Yao knows how to contact her. I felt a little awkward so I haven't asked brother Xiao Yao yet....”

Li Mu smiled, “Then why don't you ask now. After all, the stage is being filmed

live so everyone's heard our conversation...."

"F\*ck...."

Right at that moment, Fang Ge Que raised his staff as he stood in the arena. He chuckled, "Friends of [Zhan Long], there's only 10 seconds until we begin. Let's not chat anymore. You can chat after the battle...."

"Alright!" Wang Jian and Li Mu raised their blades for battle. It was clear that against this SSS tier opponent, they had no fear.

.....

It wasn't until after the battle did I realize that wasn't what happened. It was the complete opposite. Li Mu and Wang Jan were planning on killing Fang Ge Que in one attack first. They couldn't let a cannon deal damage to them from behind. Otherwise, there'd be no way for them to defend. The only problem was, Enchanted Painting, that brat, had too high of an attack power. Within moments, she broke Wang Jian's [Halberd Whirlwind]. Afterwards, she took advantage of their sluggish movement and partnered with Fang Ge Que to deal an S tier [Charm Dance] + [Fire and Ice Storm] to instantly kill Wang Jian. Afterwards, she turned around and charged at Li Mu. She dealt a [Break Armor Slash]+[Thunder Slash], dealing critical damage. In that one attack, she cut off 50% of Li Mu's health. Fang Ge Que activated [Blazewind Lock]+[Ice Rock Blast], killing Li Mu.

In the second round, Li Mu and Wang Jian changed tactics. This time, Wang Jian went to lure the enemy, activating a [Halberd Whirlwind] to trick Enchanted Painting. The two of them nearly activated their combos at the exact same time. [Slaying Xiang Yan] + [Absolute Authority]!

"Wu!"

Enchanted Painting had a cautious expression and she raised her sword across her chest in a defensive position. She took the two [Zhan Long] general's combined attack. Wang Jian roared and activated the special skill from his Chi You General Chestplate—— [Combat of Chi You]. His blade radiated with a picture of the Chi You's God. The skill increased his attack power and defense!

"21287 ! "

Enchanted Painting wailed and knelt to the ground. However, in this process, Li Mu and Wang Jian's health had both been dropped to around 40%. The two charged at Fang Ge Que from the left and right side. However, he had a chillingly calm expression. He raised his staff and dealt a [Spiral Ice Dance] at Wang Jian. Wang Jian quickly dodged. However, in that one moment, he was put to sleep by Fang Ge Que. At that point, Fang Ge Que only had to deal with Li Mu. Fang Ge Que's wrist twitched and he activated [ Lightning Eagle Wave]+[Ice Rock Blast], killing Li Mu. Then, while Wang Jian was in his sleeping state, Fang Ge Que raised his arm and let out an [Indigo Sea Arrow]. "Whoosh!" a large damage popped up——

"14831 ! "

Spells this powerful was like a real life nightmare. Wang Jian howled and fell to his knees. Even after Enchanted Painting had been killed, Fang Ge Que could still execute a perfect mage maneuver to kill two great generals, even with his weak constitution.

1:3, in reality, Valiant Bravery had already lost. They were stopped even before entering the top 16 in the Hero's Wings Cup. In reality though, there wasn't much to regret. Their opponent's were just too strong.

The last was a 5v5. It was only giving points to the [Legend] team. They were beaten again with a 0:2 score. Enchanted Painting, Xuan Yuan Feng, and Lu Chun Yang, the three heavy armor players charged at the front while Fang Ge Que dealt damage from the back. There wasn't anyone to control Fang Ge Que, so it wasn't strange that they had lost.

.....

Seeing the large 1:4 score on the big screen, I grunted "Both their battle tactics and their team build was too good. D\*mn, so unfortunate! There wasn't anyone to counter Fang Ge Que...."

Qing Qian said, "Brother Xiao Yao, if we end up fighting Fang Ge Que, how do you think we should fight the 2v2 and 5v5?"

I shook my head and said, "I'm not sure exactly how we'll fight. However, I do know that we can't allow Fang Ge Que pressure our attacks with his damage. If we allow that, any team would be put in a nightmare situation. Let's keep

watching. We'll start off by analyzing other opponents. Even if we do end up going against Fang Ge Que, it won't be until the finals."

"Ok!"

.....

The second round of competitions for the B group began. It was [Flying Dragon Team] vs [House of Prestige Team]. If I wasn't wrong, last night at the KTV, [Flying Dragon]'s Fierce Tiger had taken the girl of [House of Prestige]'s Swift Thunder... Yup, I could already smell the tension in the air.

As both opponents stood on the stage, Fei Er was holding the microphone, standing between them. She asked the two sides if there was anything they wanted to say to the audience.

Swift Thunder smiled, "Can I say something to my opponent?"

Fei Er nodded with a smile, "Of course!"

Swift Thunder took the microphone and glared at Fierce Tiger, threatening, "Players of [Flying Dragon], if you have the balls then let Fierce Tiger be the first to battle. I will be the first in [House of Prestige] to battle. I want to resolve a problem between us, in game."

Fierce Tiger wasn't some coward and so he raised his eyebrows and shouted, "Ha, if you want a fight, I'll give you a fight! Don't think that just because you're the vice guildmaster of [House of Prestige], I would be afraid of you. Or are you just unaware of how unskilled you are? Hmh, did you think that with all those girls in [House of Prestige] guarding you, it would increase your combat power? Stop joking around. I will beat you up so much that even your mother won't recognize you."

Swift Thunder coldly smiled, "That would be best...."

As for the grudges between the two team members, the two team leaders, Bai Li Ruo Feng and Soaring Dragon were helpless. They could only let them do as they wish. The MC Fei Er maintained a cool expression and sweetly smiled, "Looks like there's some story behind this. However, ladies and gentlemen, let's not gossip and see just who will go on to the final rounds of the Hero's Cup!"

Soaring Dragon and Bai Li Ruo Feng began setting up the teams. As expected, when it came out, Fierce Tiger and Swift Thunder were the first to battle!

## Chapter 658 Turn into a Kiss\*ss

In the arena, Fierce Tiger raised his flaming axe. He stared at Swift Thunder. Swift Thunder had practically the same equipment and weapon. Swift Thunder stared right back without moving a hair.

“She’s flirty, did you know that?” Fierce Tiger smiled.

Swift Thunder’s glare was filled with killing intent, “Enough!”

Looks like, Swift Thunder hadn’t completely lost all reason. At least he knew that the world’s players were watching the stage right now. There were probably at least a hundred thousand watching right now. It would’ve been too embarrassing if he were to bring out his dirty laundry now.

The seconds counted down, all the way until the end. The second the match began, Swift Thunder charged out. He couldn’t wait any longer to kill his enemy.

Fierce Tiger roared, activating [Dou Qi Armor]. He then twitched his finger. At that moment, flames burst around his battle axe. The second Swift Thunder got close, he threw three cuts. It was a special skill effect!

“Sha sha....”

Swift Thunder made a side step and beautifully pivoted to the side, dodging the enemy’s attack in one step. He coldly smiled, “I’ve long heard that Fierce Tiger uses the Drunken Sword style. As expected, you have impressive special skills. Unfortunately... they’re all being wasted on this b\*st\*rd. What a waste!”

As he said that, Swift Thunder activated [Will of the Berserker], greatly increasing his critical attack. He suddenly rammed into Fierce Tiger and then activated [Flame Axe]+[Axe Whirlwind], plummeting Fierce Tiger’s health to critical. As his opponent was fleeing, he took the chance to activate [Battle Axe Throw]!

“Peng!”

Fierce Tiger’s body was practically ripped apart. In that one round he lost a point, 0:1.

For the second round, Swift Thunder took the offensive again. This time, he relied on his technique, parrying two of Fierce Tiger's normal attacks. Right before Fierce Tiger could activate his special skills, he relied on his explosive damage to throw Fierce Tiger back into critical health. He didn't let up at all and kicked Fierce Tiger's abdomen. Right afterwards, he dealt a normal attack, cutting right into Fierce Tiger's neck. He then smiled coldly, "The most important part of being human is knowing oneself. Did you think that as the vice guildmaster of [Flying Dragon], you could act however you like in front of the vice guildmaster of [House of Prestige]? Go take a look at yourself in your own piss. Don't go around making enemies with so little skill!"

Fierce Tiger howled and retreated from the arena. With a 2:0 score, he was killed and teleported outside the border of the arena. Frustrated, all he could do was clench his teeth. He just wasn't as skilled as his enemy. In terms of battle power and skill, Swift Thunder was much stronger than him.

In the second round, Snow Wolf Spirit represented [House of Prestige] and went to battle while [Flying Dragon] sent out Drunken Spear. There wasn't much to say about this battle. Little Flower cleanly finished off Snow Wolf with a 2:0. As the joker of [Flying Dragon], it was a must that he earn back some points for [Flying Dragon].

The third match, Soaring Dragon vs Bai Li Ruo Feng. There wasn't much suspense here either. Bai Li Ruo Feng was ranked fourth in the CBN Battlenet Rankings and was known as the number one archer in the Chinese Servers. With a 2:0 score, he slaughtered Soaring Dragon. In reality, Flying Dragon's spells couldn't beat Bai Li Ruo Feng at all. His footwork and dodging skills were just too great. His ability to shoot while moving was enough to make Soaring Dragon lose all hope in fighting.

The fourth match, 2v2. Drunken Spear and Flying Dragon both went to battle. For this battle Bai Li Ruo Feng made a team with Swift Thunder. Bai Li Ruo Feng would've acted as the ranged control to counter Soaring Dragon. In addition, Drunken Spear knew that their chances for victory weren't too great. And so, in both matches, he raised his spear and killed off Swift Thunder first before having his health whittled away by Bai Li Ruo Feng. This was enough to avenge Fierce Tiger, his vice guildmaster. It was another 2:0. [House of Prestige] won



with a 3:1.

The last battle was the team battle. [House of Prestige] relied on their strong teamwork to obtain victory. The healer, Yao Yao also participated in the match. It was the girl from last night! The healer robe made her look even more alluring. The breeze would sometimes flutter her robes, revealing the pale white thighs underneath. However, this time, before Fierce Tiger could touch anything, he was killed by Swift Thunder. Afterwards, Drunken Spear cut down another three players from the other team. In the end, however, he was killed by Bai Li Ruo Feng's combo. The result was 2:0 again. [Flying Dragon] team had been defeated by [House of Prestige] in a 1:4 match.

.....

“Wow, too bad for Drunken Spear....”

Li Mu was looking at the screen as he shook his head, “Such a strong player. He's probably one of the top players in the Chinese Server, right? Of the all the knights in the country, Drunken Spear is definitely among the top three. Unfortunately, he's in an insignificant guild like Flying Dragon. Guildmaster, haven't you thought of a way to bring him over? [Zhan Long] really needs someone as talented as him. If we get a few more experts like Drunken Spear, then why would we worry about [Legend] and [Hero's Mound]? Besides, Drunken Spear has pretty good character too and he appears to be on good terms with you. He's always speaking up for you on the forums....:

Wang Jian added, “That's right Brother Xiao Yao. Think about it, if the [Zhan Long] camp got Drunken Spear, hehe, then just how strong would we become?!”

I helplessly smiled and shook my head, “You don't know how stubborn Drunken Spear is. He's got patriotism and loyalty straight to his bones. Now that he's joined [Flying Dragon] he won't easily betray that guild. He's like a faithful official who won't recognize any other master. For a man like that, no matter what I do to convince him, he won't change guilds. If I tried decimating [Flying Dragon], I'm sure Drunken Spear would just leave the game before choosing another guild. What would be the point of that...”

Wolf smiled, “We can plan it out... get someone else to kill off [Flying Dragon]

and then have Drunken Spear join [Zhan Long]. That would be good....”

I leaned against a pillar and said, “Nevermind. No one mention Wolf’s suggestion again. I don’t want to turn into the type of person I hate the most.”

Wolf nodded, “Yes sir.”

Li Mu agreed, “That’s true... however, the reality is, society is one big pot. There’ll always be moments where we’re forced to do things we don’t want, or say things we don’t mean. In the end, we’ll all become the person that we hate.”

Wang Jian waved his hand, “Then I’ll just hate on rich people...”

Li Mu, “You f\*cker, you messed up the somber mood of my words of wisdom. Can’t you be a good bro....”

.....

The next round quickly passed by. Jian Feng Han went up against the [Emerald Porcelain] team. This was Ba Huang City’s number one guild against Fan Shu City’s number two guild.

In the first round, Jian Feng Han killed Death’s Contract, winning with a score of 2:0. This duel between guildmasters proved that in the end, Jian Feng Han was truly one of the top players in the game. Even though Death’s Contract was completely covered in Divine Tier equipments, he still was killed by Jian Feng Han’s battle technique. Furthermore, in an age where Q-Sword began the Pulse Break Style trend, Jian Feng Han persisted with his own battle style, without changing anything.

For the second round, Fallen Wolf lost to [Emerald Porcelain]’s swordsman, Forgotten Desolation, with a score of 1:2. There was no other way. Berserkers always attacked in one wave. If they don’t finish off their opponent in that one wave, they would be killed in turn. That’s because they don’t quite have a lot of defense on their own. On the other hand, Swordsmen had explosive skills like Combos, [Flying Sword], and [Sword Break]. Breaking through the weak defenses of Berserkers was as easy as cutting through vegetables.

In the third match, Simple defeated an assassin from [Emerald Porcelain] with a 2:0. There wasn’t any suspense since Simple was renowned as Ba Huang City’s

number one mage. The only person who could shake her spot was Dong Cheng. Unfortunately, Dong Cheng didn't seem to have any interest in being number one. She'd much rather follow Wan Er and I in our adventures in the game world.

After that, there were two matches back to back. As before, Jian Feng Han's team won. All in all, they won 4:1 against [Emerald Porcelain]. The overall impression that [Emerald Porcelain] gave was that they weren't too strong. Maybe it was because they didn't have much explosive power. Even their guildmaster was a monk. As for the rest, there was no need to address them. However, the most terrifying aspect of a guild like this was their ability to draw battles out. Later on, whether it was in a guild battle or a country battle, [Emerald Porcelain]'s true strength will slowly reveal itself.

.....

The next round quickly began. It was [Enemies at the Gate] vs [Team Mu Xuan]. After the players were teleported onto the stage, I saw that the Queen Mu Xuan was wearing a tight dress. She brought a sack with her onto the stage. Her flirtatious posture stupefied Misty Cloud, Reborn Sword and the others. Furthermore, the four members that Mu Xuan brought with her were all beautiful girls. In reality, having the [Appearance Alliance] attend this tournament was very pleasing.

Misty Cloud glanced at Mu Xuan and smiled, "What team formation are you planning?"

Mu Xuan smiled, "Well well, is Guildmaster Misty Cloud trying to grab me? Not a chance! In that case, I won't say when I'm fighting. Don't worry, when I fight I will take a point!"

Misty Cloud rubbed his nose, "Alright then...."

Very soon, the team formations appeared. Mu Xuan had chosen to be the second to go to battle, while Misty Cloud chose to be third. He hadn't gotten the chance.

First match, Vice Guildmaster Natural Beauty represented [Appearance Alliance] and went to battle. She claimed victory against Reborn Sword with a 2:1 score.

Second Match, Mu Xuan represented [Appearance Alliance] in the battle and defeated Fighting in Blood with a 2:0 score.

Third Match, Vice guildmaster Wild Swan had been KOed by Misty Cloud with a score of 2:0. [Enemies at the Gate] countered with a point.

The fourth battle was 2v2. Misty Cloud relied on his special skills and defeated his enemy 2:1. Now both sides were tied with a 2:2.

The last battle was a team one. Mu Xuan began to reveal her top tier strength. She continuously used [Dimensional Leap] to deal damage from different positions. She managed to dodge Misty Cloud's pursuit. Furthermore, she supported the rest of her team, finally finishing [Enemies at the Gate] with a 2:0. In the end, [Appearance Alliance] entered the top eight with 3:2!

.....

“Alright, our turn...”

Wolf stood up from his seat beside me. He lifted his helmet and smiled, “Even though the enemy is strong, we cannot give up. Defeat [Prague]! Let's follow Brother Xiao Yao into the Top Eight!”

I nodded, “Yup, good luck!”

On the other side, Yan Zhao Warrior brought Six Ya, Twilight Bamboo, Traveler and Tornado out to battle. After both sides set up their teams, a list of names popped up onto the big screen——

1v1: Strawberry Matcha Lv114 Phantom Knight VS Yan Zhao Warrior LV 117 Swordsman

1v1: Wolf Totem LV 114 Assassin VS Yayayayayaya LV 115 Flame Swordsman

1v1: Ran Min LV 114 Berserker VS Traveler LV 115 Knight

2v2: Strawberry Matcha LV 114 Phantom Knight and Dancing Forest LV 115 Archer VS Yayayayayaya LV 115 Flame Swordsman and Yan Zhao Warrior LV 117 Swordsman

5v5: ALL vs ALL

.....

# Chapter 659 - Fighting Gong Zi Ying

Finally, the Zhan Long Office's main team had met its match, [Prague]'s team. There wasn't much more to say, and this situation did not bode well for them. All they could do was fight their hardest.

In the first round, Matcha was put against Yan Zhao Warrior. He was a level higher than her and he had quite a few pieces of better equipment. Yan Zhao Warrior had at least three pieces of Divine Tier equipment. Furthermore, his skills were a level stronger than Matcha's and they were all explosive attacks.

"Shua shua!"

The two players were teleported into the arena. Yan Zhao Warrior politely smiled, "To meet [Zhan Long]'s top sixteen players in battle, makes it well worth the fight. There's no other way, let us all fight our best!

Matcha didn't respond and just lightly nodded her head.

As the countdown finished, Matcha raised her long sword and dashed out. Yan Zhao Warrior on the other hand dealt a [Flying Sword]. His blade broke through the sky and pierced right through Matcha's chest, letting out a great damage number——

"8421 ! "

As expected, Yan Zhao Warrior's attack power was extremely high. It was enough to break straight through Matcha's defense. Furthermore, he used [Flying Sword] to whittle away her health. That was probably a move that Yan Zhao Warrior had been planning to use a long time before the battle actually started.

Matcha raised the shield in her hand as she accelerated forward. She was already activating [Assault].

"Sha sha..."

As expected, Yan Zhao Warrior dodged the skill by shifting his position. He struck Matcha with a sword that was imbued with energy. Matcha quickly

turned around and waved her shield. “Keng!” The shield rammed into the sword’s blade. Afterwards, she stepped forward and threw a kick into Yan Zhao Warrior’s right side.

“Ha!”

Yan Zhao Warrior was very clever and had already saw through Matcha’s moves. He suddenly charged forward. “Peng!” He rammed into Matcha’s shield, and interrupted Matcha’s own moves. The reason why it was broken was because she was too slow in the execution. The three moves had to be completed within 0.5 seconds, while Matcha’s maneuvers were at best second tier, taking her a whole second to complete. It was only natural that it’d be broken.

燕赵无双手臂扬起，掌间氤氲着血色，“啪”一声轻轻拍在了抹茶的肩膀上，技能发动成功，鲜红锁链，禁锢对手5秒！

Yan Zhao Warrior raised his arm. A crimson colored energy began gathering at the center of his palm. “Pa!” He lightly tapped Matcha’s shoulder, activating a skill. [Crimson Chains]! They bound her for five seconds!

Then, this [Prague] guildmaster dipped forward and activated [Blade Rush] piercing his sword through Matcha. He spun around and activated [Combo]+[Combo]. Under the barrage of attacks, even if Matcha were to activate her [Phantom Holy Shield] she would still fall and die.

There wasn’t much suspense in the second round. The gap between battle tactics and maneuvers was just too big. Although Matcha understood all the theories by heart, she couldn’t apply them well in reality. Especially against someone like Yan Zhao Warrior who was ranked 20th in the CBN Battlenet rankings. Practically all of her Pulse Break maneuvers had been broken. Once they were broken, she was forced into a position that could only result in defeat.

0:2, Matcha couldn’t change the path of fate and ended up losing a point to Yan Zhao Warrior.

For the Second Match, it was Song Han vs Yayayayaya. This Six Ya was a special talent that Yan Zhao Warrior had spent a lot of effort to pull to his side. Naturally, she wasn’t some noob. She gripped her long sword and stood up

straight on her side of the arena. She smiled at Wolf and said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s brother, are you going to be spanked by Xiao Yao Zi Zai if you lose? That sounds scary....”

Wolf raised his dagger, “Stop acting cute and focus on the battle....”

And so, Six Ya got serious. She raised her arm creating a fire wall around her. [Wall of Dragon’s Breath], an S tier Defense skill. Afterwards, she smiled, “Come, youngster!”

Wolf went into [Stealth] mode. After successfully activating a [Backstab], Six Ya still had 70% of her health left. The defense effect of the [Wall of Dragon’s Breath] was just too OP. It was even stronger when she paired it with [Dou Qi Armor]. The second Wolf disappeared, Six Ya swung her blade, letting out a slash of Sword Qi. It slashed forward, forcing Wolf out of his [Stealth]. She then activated [Assault], stunning him. Energy burst from her and her S tier combo [Rapid Slash] activated. [Rapid Slash] was a skill that combined five quick slashes. “Ka ka ka!” the five cuts were thrown out and Wolf died under her attacks. Who knew that Six Ya would have such terrifyingly clear judgement. She was pretty much a nightmare to any jobs with low defense.

Wolf lost two matches in a row. Six Ya had the advantage in both class and skills. Even if she just stood there and let Wolf deal attacks, he still wouldn’t be able to break through her defense. On the other hand, Six Ya’s counter attacks were even more critical. Just one round of skills was enough to take away all 20,000 of Wolf’s health.

Over all, they had already lost 0:2 to [Prague]. Wolf’s little team was in a precarious position!

.....

“Shua shua!”

The third match was Ran Min vs Traveler. This was a match of explosive power versus recovery power. Old K was a berserker that put all of his stat points into explosive power while Traveler was a knight with lots of health.

The match began with a series of ferocious pounding. Old K activated [Battle Axe Throw], [Flame Axe], [Burning the Enemy’s Boats], and [Wind Slash], quickly

cutting down his opponent's health. Traveler continuously moved across the arena and activated [Cleansing Rain] and [Circulation] to recover health. He was waiting for Old K's health to drop to critical. He waited all the way until Old K only had 20% health. By then, he laughed, "Ha, you're finished! Time for 3:0!"

He threw a [Skyshaker Pierce] + [Flame Axe]. Unfortunately for him, Old K didn't die. Instead, he activated [Oppose the Heavens], increasing his attack power exponentially. He let out a hearty laugh and swept past traveler with a [Whirlwind Slash]. He then suddenly jumped up and swung his battle axe. "Kenv!" He smashed Traveler's shield and cut through his shoulder. Like that, he killed Traveler in one slash.

2:0, he won both rounds. Traveler couldn't break through Old K's [Oppose the Heavens], resulting in his death.

1:2, Wolf's team managed to clench their teeth and make a comeback!

.....

In the fourth round, the two girls in the team went out to battle. Dancing Forest and Matcha went against Yan Zhao Warrior and Yayayayaya. Matcha was in charge of tactics. She raised her shield and stood in the arena, protecting Dancing Forest. I couldn't hear what they were saying in the team chat. However, I could see that Matcha was using [Assault] and [Heroic Ram], and [Divine Provocation] to control Yan Zhao Warrior. Furthermore, she used [Phantom Ray Slash] to support Dancing Forest in fighting Six Ya. In addition, right as Six Ya's combo burst out, she quickly went into defense by gulping down potions and activated [Cleansing Rain] to take the attacks.

In the next moment, Dancing Forest activated [Meteor Shot], piercing through both players. Six Ya fell to her knees from that attack while Yan Zhao Warrior still had half of his health. Matcha was also reduced to critical health. She raised her blade to hold Yan Zhao Warrior off as he tried to pursue Dancing Forest. However, he was kited and ended up chasing after Matcha. Matcha dodged the attack, kiting him as well. And so Yan Zhao Warrior could only smile ruefully and fall to his knees.

1:0, they managed to take a point.

In the second round, Yan Zhao Warrior patiently bided his time while he and



Six Ya discussed a plan. The Uncle and the girl's team work finally resulted with an overpowering show of attacks. He used [Blade Rush] and [Assault] to dodge Matcha's control. Afterwards, he activated two combos at the same time, killing Dancing Forest in an instant. Afterwards, it was easy for the two high level swordsmen to finish off a heavy armor knight.

Like that, they came back twice, resulting in a 1:2 score. Wolf's team lost another round in the 2v2 event. The total score turned into 1:3, resulting in their defeat. However, they did pretty well in the fifth team battle. They lost 1:2. At least they hadn't lost too badly.

.....

Wolf, Matcha, Yan Zhao Warrior, and Six Ya all walked out of the arena. Since the two guilds remained allies, there wasn't too much enmity between the two parties. Winning and losing wasn't a big deal. What was more important were the values of friends.

"Don't feel too down!" I patted Wolf's shoulder.

Wolf nodded, "Yup, I know...."

Wan Er picked up her sack and smiled, "Let's go. It's the last battle for the top sixteen. Its our turn!"

Dong Cheng squinted her beautiful eyes, "Our opponents are the players from [Moonlit Lake]. It shouldn't be too hard. No need to be so nervous."

Li Mu laughed, "Look at Li Xiao Yao picking his nose. Does he look nervous at all?!"

I was stunned, "F\*ck, when was I picking my nose... it was clearly Bai Qi.... he even flicked it onto Yan Zhao Warrior's table...."

Yan Zhao glared at the table, "Hey staff, can I switch tables....."

.....

Our five member team entered the arena. Fei Er recognized Wan Er and I. She gleefully waved to us. Afterwards, she asked that we set up our teams. We kept our original formations. I was the first to battle while Wan Er and Dong Cheng followed after me. As for the duo battle, it was Wan ER and I. This way, our

chances of winning were slightly better. [Moonlit Lake] sent out three girls and two young men for their team. One of the girls was the guildmaster Gong Zi Ying. She was a solid eight. She raised her bag, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s team... looks like we’ll only make the top sixteen. Oh well, the rewards won’t be too bad....”

Wan Er and I nodded with a smile. After a few seconds, the two team formations appeared on the big screen——

1v1: Xiao Yao Zi Zai LV 119 Dragon Rider VS Gong Zi Ying LV 115 Swordsman

1v1: Cang Tong LV 117 Hermit God VS Mu Xue LV 115 Mage

1v1: Cang Yue LV 117 Mage VS Xing Ran LV 114 Assassin

2v2 Cang Tong Lv 117 Hermit God & Xiao Yao Zi Zai LV 119 Dragon Rider vs Gong Zi Ying LV 115 Swordsman & Mu Xue LV 115 Mage

5v5: ALL vs ALL

.....

The game’s transfer was very smooth. As soon as we entered the competition room, we were automatically teleported to the arena. Our five man team appeared in an area where we could watch the tournament on the side. After a few seconds, I was teleported into the arena. My opponent also appeared. It was Gong Zi Ying, the guildmaster of [Moonlit Lake]. She was a Level 115 Knight. From the looks of her equipment, she had 1-2 pieces of Divine Tier Equipment. It looked like she also had Saint tier equipments. They were pretty good. However compared to me, her equipments were still a lower tier.

I waited for the countdown to finish to begin the battle!

There wasn’t anyone who didn’t want to win, and that theory applied to Gong Zi Ying as well. Even though she knew that there was a gap between the level of our skills, she still charged at me with all her power. She activated [Blade Rush]+Combo as soon as she got close to me. I parried her attacks with my [Wall of Dou Qi] and then activated [Great Realm of Desolation]+[Seven Star Fragment Slash]. After cutting her health down in half, I quickly grabbed her with [Hand of Purgatory] and killed her with a combo!

2:0 , I easily got a point. The gap between the two of us was just too great. I

was ranked twelfth in the CBN Battlenet Rankings, while Gong Zi Ying was only two hundredth. In reality, the reason this girl's guild was able to rise up in the rankings in Jiu Li City was because of her dream. It wasn't solely because of her strength. Also, even though she was only 200th in the CBN Battlenet Rankings, she was still pretty strong in a small city.

# Chapter 660 - Four out of Eight

The second match was Wan Er vs Mu Xue, [Moonlit Lake]'s number one mage.

The battle was even more simple. Afterall, mages were already at a disadvantage against assassins. An assassin's, [Backstab] and [Flying Dagger] was already enough to break through their [Mana Shield]. Furthermore, skills like [Twin Blade Harmony] could completely ignore the shield and kill the player. Even if the mage's [Mana Shield] didn't break, they would still die. To top it off, Wan Er was a top tier assassin. She only needed to successfully stun the player once, and she'd be able to pretty much kill her opponent in that small amount of time.

2:0, Mu Xue was instantly killed twice after being stunned. Wan Er had used a combo of [Blade of the Death God]+[Twin Blade Harmony]+[Flying Dagger]. In that moment, Wan Er had unleashed the full might of her 100 stat point strength, successfully killing her enemy twice and getting another point for [Zhan Long].

All in all, we quickly got a total score of 2:0. We were now at the third match of the round, Dong Cheng vs Xing Ran.

Xing Ran was [Moonlit Lake]'s chief assassin. Level 114, and eighteen years of age, it looked like she had pretty good equipment. The dagger she held in her hand glowed with a light green light. It was most likely a Saint tier Equipment, it should have a pretty good attack.

Dong Cheng quietly stood there with her staff in hand. She glanced at Xing Ran and smiled, "Pity, no goods...."

Xing Ran blushed and glared at Dong Cheng's 34C and said, "I will defeat you!"

"Come at me!"

Dong Cheng chuckled at her own provocation. Her dainty posture was enough to make all the males present skip a beat.

.....

In the end, Dong Cheng moved before Xing Ran even went into [Stealth]. She activated [Revealing Light], [Eagle Lightning Wave]+[Magma Lance], wreaking havoc in the arena. She had completely covered every inch of the arena, forcing Xing Ran out. Following that, she immediately threw a [Thunderbolt Finger]. Xing Ran grit her teeth and charged forward with [Absolute Step]. Then, with a flash of her dagger, she cut into Dong Cheng's neck. Unfortunately, Dong Cheng's health only dropped to critical. Dong Cheng quickly used a [Dimensional Leap], while she left a Holy Ghost skill in her wake——[Fire Beat Burst Raid]. Flame Beasts pounced onto the arena and Xing Ran's body trembled. And that was the end of it. As an assassin, Xing Ran couldn't take so many attacks at once.

Like that, Dong Cheng won two battles in a row, earning [Zhan Long] another point and locking our victory.

In the fourth round, Wan Er and I went to battle side by side. We finished off the opponent with pure explosive power, getting another 2:0.

The final round was a team battle. [Ice Domain]+[Fire Beast Burstraid] had already turned into the best combo. As before, we swept through [Moonlit Lake]'s main team and won with a 3:0 score. This proved that a team could still enter the top sixteen with a 10:0 score. [Zhan Long]'s team was just too savage.

.....

Once the battles were over, we walked out of the competition room. I looked up at the big screen. Right on time, the top eight matches appeared. The tournament was advancing forward on a tight schedule——

Area A: Team Q-Sword VS Team [Judgement]

Area B: Team Fang Ge Que VS Team [House of Prestige]

Area C: Team Jian Feng Han Vs Team Mu Xuan

Area D: Team Yan Zhao Warrior vs Team Xiao Yao Zi Zai

.....

The quarterfinals. This time we were really going up against the strongest

teams. Not one of the teams in the top 8 were going to be weak. Practically every match was going to be a focal point in the Chinese Servers. The first match was between [Hero's Mound] and [Judgement] the two big guilds. Ye Lai stood up and lead his team of brothers onto the stage. He smiled, "Let's go, teach a good lesson to those b\*st\*rds of [Hero's Mound]!"

Not far away, I could see Q-Sword pick up his bag and say to Tang Qi, "Tang Qi, I will be able to get at least one point in the first three battles. Afterwards, in the 2v2 and the 5v5, I'll be relying on your Hexagram Skill and your [Perspective] for control. As long as you cast it at the right time, then I'll be able to obtain a win against [Judgement]!"

Tang Qi nodded, "Don't worry Boss!"

.....

Not long after, the two team formations appeared on the big screen——

1v1: Q-Sword, LV 117 Blacksmith Swordsman VS Jing Ke LV 116 Assassin

1v1: The Seventh Tang LV 116 Feng Shui Master VS Ye Lai LV 117 Flame Berserker

1v1: Sword Tears LV 115 Swordsman vs Babel Buddha LV 114 Wind Swordsman

2v2: Q-Sword LV 117 Blacksmith Swordsman & The Seventh Tang LV 116 Feng Shui Master VS Ye Lai LV 117 Flame Berserker & Babel Buddha LV 114 Wind Swordsman

5v5: ALL VS ALL

.....

Looking at the big screen, I crossed my arms over my chest and leaned against the LED ad that flashed on the wall and said, "This team formation isn't very advantageous for [Judgement]. Tang Qi has too many control skills. I'm afraid Ye Lai won't be able to hold him off. If that's what happens, then they'll be in trouble."

Wan Er replied, "Yea. Actually, overall, [Judgement]'s strength is still slightly lacking. The only stable point is the solo round with Ye Lai."

“That’s right....”

Not long after, the two went into battle.

In the first round, Q-Sword vs Jin Ke. There wasn’t much to expect from that. He had cleanly won 2:0. Furthermore, Jin Ke’s finishing skill had been successfully broken by Q-Sword two times in a row. That move had shocked the entire stadium. There were even quite a few female players that screamed. After all, Q-Sword was known as the perfect handsome man in the Chinese Server. He had quite a few female fans.

The second match was a highlight. Ye Lai VS Tang Qi. One was a Flame Berserker, while the other was a Feng Shui Master. They were both hidden classes. Ye Lai was more focused on explosive power while Tang Qi was an expert in control.

In the end, Tang Qi continuously used [Hexagram] and [Perspective] to control. He also continuously activated [Combo]s and [Curses] to decrease Ye Lai’s health. Pity for him, Ye Lai

S tier equipment was just too good. As a Berserker, he had at least 8000 base defense and 30,000 health. No matter what Tang Qi tried, he couldn’t budge him. On the other hand, Ye Lai’s [Battle Axe Throw]+[Consequence of Pride]+[Holy Flame Cut] practically instantly killed Tang Qi.

This continued for two rounds. Tang Qi could only bring Ye Lei down to 20% health before getting instantly killed. The reality was the Feng Shui Master class had already reached maturity. Its attack power was a little low and could only act as a support class for team members with higher attacks.

1:1, the two sides were even!

For the third match, Q-Sword’s little sister, Sword Tears, went against Babel Buddha

This time, Babel Buddha, the Wind Swordsman, started off by displaying explosive amounts of power. He utilized his [Wind Shield] and dodged attacks while activating [Wind Pulse] to stun her. He then used [Blade Rush]+[Sword Break]+[Combo] to deal a finishing blow. Against the second strongest swordsman in [Hero’s Mound], Sword Tears, however, he didn’t seem to have

even a sliver of fear and actually won both rounds. Now the overall score was 2:1, and [Judgement] was in the lead.

.....

“D\*mn....” Tang Qi rubbed his nose and said, “So sorry, after I lost that point, we had actually lost our advantage. Sigh....”

Q-Sword smiled and comforted him, “No matter. We still have a chance. Besides, you were up against Ye Lai! Who’s Ye Lai? He’s a man that can make the entire Jiu Li City shake with a stomp of his foot. He’s fierce and courageous. In the game [Conquer], Ye Lai had charged into the enemy servers’ dens by himself multiple times during the country wars. Even the foreigners are cautious around this man. All in all, losing to Ye Lai isn’t something to be embarrassed about... however, now we must take the 2v2 and the 5v5 and prove that [Hero’s Mound] is stronger!”

Tang Qi nodded, “Yes sir!”

Very soon, the 2v2 began. Both sides countered each of the skills. Ye Lai had instantly broken Babel Buddha’s [Wind Shield] and carried out a barrage of furious attacks. Q-Sword didn’t sit around. He raised his sword and charged at Ye Lai. Tang Qi then used [Perspective]. “Pa!” he stunned Ye Lai. Afterwards, he immediately retreated and activated [Pentashield] and took an attack from Babel Buddha. He then used another [Perspective] and arrived right in front of Ye Lai in seconds and dealt a [Combo] at point blank range.

Ye Lai roared and activated [Divine Weapon Breaker]+[Consequence of Pride]+[Holy Flame Cut], killing Tang Qi right before he died. Q-Sword maintained his 40% health. He immediately turned around and rammed his sword into his opponent. He then threw a kick and successfully broke the skill. Babel Buddha’s [Wind Pulse] was actually broken. In that second, Q-Sword continuously dealt attacks and drained health from his enemy. At the same time, he gulped down a potion and whittled away Babel Buddha’s health!

The fight continued like this for the second round as well and the two teams were tied at 2:2. This round was too intense!

.....



The last round was a team battle. Tang Qi acted as the controller in this match as well. He used [Hexagram] to stun Ye Lai, while Sword Tears and Sword Tan locked their [Assault] skills onto Ye Lai, controlling Ye Lai's attacks. Q-Sword then killed off Jing Ke and Babel Buddha at once. By the time Ye Lai had escaped their control, he found out that only his healer and himself were left. Against four people, there was no chance of winning. He raced against time and killed off Tang Qi before his [Hexagram] cool down was finished. He then killed off Jian Tan before being killed by Q-Sword.

The second round was the same. [Hero's Mound] relied completely on Q-Sword and Tang Qi to lock a 3:2 victory. All of the victories were close wins.

Like this, [Judgement] was pulled back to the top eight in the Chinese Server in the Hero's Wing's Cup. This year, they don't have the opportunity to join in the Global Tournament. Luckily, Ye Lai is a rather optimistic person. He had already planned to drink the night away with Babel Buddha and the other team members. They had actually gotten a pretty good score, they had lost to [Hero's Mound] 2:3 rather than 0:5.

.....

The four out of eight round's second match was starting. It was Team Fang Ge Que vs Team [House of Prestige].

Even though [House of Prestige] was strong, it was not on par with [Legend]. In other words, the team that Fang Ge Que lead right now had no shortcomings. They swept through their opponents with a 5:0. Fang ge Que, and Enchanted Painting dominated the 2v2 and the 5v5 with 2:0 scores in both categories. Only Lu Chun Yang had a score of 2:1 in his solo. In other words, of the entire [House of Prestige] team, only Swift Thunder managed to get a small point off of Lu Chun Yang. The rest were instantly killed. Bai Li Ruo Feng was unfortunately matched against Fang Ge Que, resulting in a 0:2 loss in that category as well. The gap between the server's number one archer and the server's number one mage was pretty big. After all, in the hearts of most players, Bai Li Ruo Feng was a man, but Fang Ge Que was a god!

.....

After two of the four top teams were decided, the next area's competition

began.

Team Jian Feng Han vs Team Mu Xuan.

Both teams had their shortcomings. Now everything depended on how the matches were made——

1v1: Wild Beauty LV 115 Knight vs Simple LV 117 Mage

1v1: Wild Swan LV 114 Knight VS Jian Feng Han LV 117 Swordsman

Lvl: Mu Xuan LV 117 MAge VS Fallen Wolf LV 115 Berserker

2v2: Mu Xuan LV 117 Mage and Wild Beauty LV 115 Knight VS Simple LV 117 Mage & Jian Feng Han LV 117 Swordsman

5V5:ALL VS ALL

.....

In the end, Wild Beauty, and Wild Swan the two knights both gave Jian Feng Han and Simple a point. Mu Xuan got a point in the third round. In the 2v2, they lost once again to their opponent. Jian Feng Han and his sister's teamwork was absolutely seamless. In addition, everyone knew Jian Feng Han's strength. Wild Beauty was clearly not on his level.

In the end, Mu Xuan had lost 1:4. Her team was still not on par with Jian Feng Han's. There wasn't any other way. She needed another master level player. Mu Xuan on her own was not enough to carry the team the entire way. Besides, the opponent had Simple in the mix as well. In terms of mage strength, Simple does not lose to Mu Xuan.

.....

After the two teams walked out, Qing Qian already lifted her bag and smiled, "Brother Xiao Yao, it's our turn. Time to go against Uncle Yan Zhao's team!"

# Chapter 661 - Spring of Spirit Ruins

Not far in the distance, Yayayaya threw a fierce glance at us. Clearly she wanted to declare battle with our main [Zhan Long] team. Six Ya had recently entered [Prague], so she probably wanted to make some contributions to her guild. There wasn't much left to do to prove her strength other than beating up [Zhan Long]

I stood up and picked up my bag. I brought Wan Er, Qing Qian, Dong Cheng, and Darling Duck onto the stage. This was the most critical battle. If we defeated [Prague] we'll have the chance to enter the top four. Otherwises, we'll be stopped here in the top eight.

On the stage, I stood before the gaming set ups. I was facing away from Yan Zhao Warrior. The two teams were lined up. After pondering for a second, I decided to send Wan Er as the first to battle, while I go after her. Dong Cheng would take the rear. As for the duo, Wan Er and I would fight side by side. Once I was done setting up the formation, I retreated a step. Yan Zhao warrior had also set up his team formation. The two team formations popped up onto the screen——

1v1: Cang Tong LV 117 Hermit God VS Yayayayaya LV 115 Flame Swordsman

1v1: Xiao Yao Zi Zai LV 119 Dragon Rider VS Yan Zhao Warrior LV 117 Swordsman

1v1: Cang Yue LV 117 Mage VS Traveler LV 116 Knight

2v2: Xiao Yao Zi Zai LV 119 Dragon Rider & Cang Tong LV 117 Hermit God VS Yayayayaya LV 115 Flame Swordsman & Yan Zhao Warrior LV 117 Swordsman

5V5:ALL VS ALL

.....

After we entered into the competition room, we logged onto the game!

“Shua!”

Our virtual players appeared within the arena. The system had teleported us

directly into the arena. Yan Zhao Warrior brought Six Ya and the others into the arena as well and stood in front of us. As we waited for the countdown for the first match to finish, Wan Er raised her dagger. She quietly looked at Six Ya and said, “This Flame Swordsman won’t be that easy to deal with....”

I nodded, “Yup. Furthermore, assassins are at a bit of a disadvantage against heavy armor players. But it’s fine. You have [Heavenly Armor], so your defense shouldn’t be too much lower than Six Ya’s right?”

Wan Er shook her head, “Not necessarily. [Heavenly Armor] does increase my health by 100%, but not anymore after that. On the other hand, Six Ya has [Wall of Dragon’s Breath] and [Dou Qi Armor], so in terms of defense, I definitely do not have the upper hand. All we can do is wait and see if there’s any other advantages I have over her. How much health does she have?”

Qing Qian blinked a few times and said, “According to someone close to her, Yaya without a mount has around 32,000 health. Sister Wan Er, keep track of your own health, otherwise you might get killed by her counterattack.”

Wan Er pursed her lips and smiled, “Don’t worry, I have faith in this match!”

“Yes!”

Very soon, the two parties entered into the arena. The system already began the countdown.

Yaya raised her sword and smiled as she looked at Wan Er, “Cang Tong, you’re a legendary person... I never thought that I would come to this point and actually fight against an expert ranked in the top ten of the CBN BattleNet Rankings! On top of that, I will do all I can to defeat you!”

Wan Er grinned, “Then come at me! I’m waiting for you!”

At that moment, the countdown finished and the battle began!

In that first moment, Wan Er’s body suddenly disappeared into the air. However, this arena limited an assassin’s [Stealth] quite a lot. There was gravel scattered all over the ground and there were torches and trees all around. Leaves lightly fell all around the scenery. As long as an assassin touched one of those leaves, that would immediately notify Ya ya of their presence.

As expected, Ya ya didn't make any moves at all. She quietly stood there as she glanced at the surroundings. She tightened her grip on her sword, causing flames to engulf the blade. She had already prepared all of her skills, all she was waiting for was Wan Er to show herself.

“Sha sha....”

One of the pebbles on the ground suddenly made a sound. “Pa!” a pebble flew up. Ya Ya didn't hesitate for a second and immediately used [Haste]. She raised her sword and charged over. The sunlight flashed across the blade and she activated a skill—— [Sword Break]!

“Hong!”

The gravel on the ground flew into the air, but the attack didn't cut into Wan Er. Ya Ya was shocked and spun around. But it was all too late. A crimson light flashed and [Gouge] successfully hit. She was stunned for 1.2 seconds!

The pebble that flew up was something that Wan Er had left behind before she leapt up. In other words, it was a trap that she had purposely left for Ya Ya. Otherwise, she wouldn't have fallen for it so easily.

She waved her daggers and immediately activated a slew of skills, [Backstab]+[Chain Attack]+[Twin Blade Harmony]. A chain of damage numbers flew up and Ya Ya's health dropped to under 40%. There weren't a lot of players now who could take a whole round of attacks from Wan Er.

After this round of skills, it had already used up Wan Er's points. Afterwards, she would have to battle for at least seven seconds in order to recover a hundred strength points. Otherwise, there was no way she could use any other assassin skills.

Ya Ya's blade twitched and was covered in flames. She had already activated [Flame Combo]. This was her time to shine.

However, who would have thought that Wan Er slid right past Ya Ya. She then spun the ring on her right finger, activating a special skill—— Ruins of Spirit Fragments. At that moment, a green light fell upon the two girls. The skill took up 60 points of Rage, instantly recovering a hundred points of strength. The dagger in her hand slightly shuddered and she used [Gouge] again, stunning

Yaya. Afterwards, she followed the attack with [Blade of the Death God]+[Flying Dagger].

“Wu wu...”

Ya Ya cried out and fell to her knees. Before she could even attack, she had already lost a point to our beautiful little miss’ two rounds of attacks!

.....

“D\*mn....” Qing Qian’s eyes widened, “Sister Cang Tong’s attack speed is incredible.... So OP.....”

Dong Cheng grinned, “Wan Er’s extremely fast at killing people. Even me, the daughter of [Destiny] Mage’s can barely conceive of that power.....”

Darling Duck raised her staff, “Oh shut up. Isn’t [Destiny]’s son a swordsman? Area attacks, defense, speed decrease, speed increase and combos, aren’t those all combos for swordsmen?”

At that moment, the three girls looked over at me. I awkwardly smiled, “What are you looking at me for? That’s what [Destiny] set up. It has nothing to do with me....”

.....

At that moment, the second round began, and it went just as the last one had.

Wan Er was just too good at tricking people while she was in [Sealth]. On the big screen, once she went into [Stealth], she lightly flicked her left hand, making a leaf in the distance move. She was using [Domain Control]. “Shua shua shua!” Several leaves suddenly moved on her own. This time, Ya Ya saw it and smiled, Cang Tong, this time I’ve got you!”

She swept out her sword, only to get another MISS. As before, she didn’t get Wan Er’s position.

Ya Ya furrowed her brows. She knew that she had fallen for another trap. She quickly turned around and threw a cut!

“Keng!”

The sword rang against Wan Er's dagger. However, Wan Er was even faster at attacking. As she was right before her enemy, she immediately switched her attack into a [Gouge]. Lady luck wasn't on Wan Er's side this time, and a big MISS popped up. The [Gouge] had not succeeded. Of course, between players who were of the same level and stats, the chances of success for a [Gouge] was over 90%. Wan Er's luck this time around was just too bad.

Ya ya's best opportunity was right before her, how could she miss it?

The blade began to glow and she threw another cut. She was too close however. The two girls were so close that they nearly touched each other. Wan Er wouldn't be able to dodge even if she wanted. All she could do was pull out the Iron Umbrella behind her and parry the attack!

"Peng!"

"7443 ! "

That wasn't all. Ya Ya leapt up and rammed her shoulder into Wan Er. "Pa!" Wan Er was pushed back. This was the first move to [Flame Combo]. Once she pushed Wan Er back, she took the chance to deal three furious [Flame Cut]s. One after another, sparks flew off of the Iron Umbrella, bringing out large damage numbers——

"5228 ! "

"6422 ! "

"7011 ! "

.....

Wan Er's [Shield of the Mundane World] couldn't hold against the attacks. She quickly drank a Level 11 potion, recovering 10,000 health. Afterwards, right at that moment, Ya ya suddenly rammed into her. "Peng!" the 32Cs wrapped in armor smacked against Wan Er's 34Ds. She began gathering energy at her feet, activating another A tier [Combo]—— [Rapid Slash]!

After five slashes, Wan Er's health couldn't last. "Wu!" She fell to her knees, losing a point.

.....

“Shua!”

The beautiful little miss was teleported to our side. As she waited for the next match to start, she pouted her lip and stamped her foot as she angrily ranted, “I lost a point! I lost a point!”

I was speechless, “I saw it. Calm down, you were just unlucky....”

Qing Qian smiled, “Yup, you really were unlucky. Ya ya took the chance and killed you with two rounds of attacks. Sister, you saw it Ya Ya had practically used up the cooldown’s of all of her skills in order to kill you. Next time, you just need to block it once or twice. Or, if your ambush succeeds, then you’ll win.”

“Ok.” Wan Er nodded.

.....

The third round was the deciding round.

This time, Wan Er didn’t even go into [Stealth] to begin with. She just raised her two daggers. Ice energy began to gather around the blades. She then activated [Absolute Step] and [God’s Dance] to increase her movement speed. [God’s Dance] had the ability to completely dodge physical attacks. Without another word, she charged right at her opponent before disappearing into the air.

Ya Ya was also particularly cautious. She gripped her sword with both hands and activated [Wall of Dragon’s Breath] and [Dou Qi Armor]. Afterwards she also charged forward. The moment that the two passed each other, Wan Er suddenly leapt backwards. She opened her hand and activated the AOE skill [Ice Pick Whirlwind], slowing Ya ya down.

“Oh no....”

Ice began collecting around her feet. Ya ya knew that she was in a bad situation. She glanced around and saw that Wan Er had suddenly disappeared into the wind. In the next second, A stun appeared above Ya Ya’s head. Wan Er had executed a whole set of skills within 0.5 seconds. Afterwards, with her [Absolute Ste], she slid forward. The [Gouge] effect had not even disappeared yet. Once her strength had recovered, she used another [Gouge] and then [Blade of the Death God]+[Flying Dagger], killing Ya ya in a barrage of attacks.



This time she had won with all of her health intact.

2:1, [Zhan Long] had taken the first point!

Even though we were in the game, we could still hear the thunderous applause. The fights between these two girls was addicting. They were just too explosive. Basically, if anyone made a single mistake, they would be killed off in battle. The explosive power lead to such a bloody battle. On top of that, the two girls had pretty good looks. Everything about that match was beautiful!

.....

For the second match, it was my turn to fight. My opponent was [Prague]'s guildmaster Yan Zhao Warrior. This time was a fight between guildmasters!

# Chapter 662 - A Tactic for Defeat

There was still 20 seconds until the battle began. Right as I was about to confirm the teleport, Wan Er suddenly grabbed my hand and said, "Pig, wait a moment first!"

"What is it?" I asked.

"Know yourself, know thy enemy, idiot..." Wan Er smiled, "I just received some first hand information. Apparently Yan Zhao Warrior has been collecting special equipment. On top of that, they're all small skills that take less than 70 points of rage. He can use all of them in this Hero's Wings Cup. Of them, there's a [Shield Break Skill] that decreases the target's defense by 70% and lasts for two seconds. There's another called [Absorb Strike] that increases the user's attack power by 10%. And he has a 100% [Drain] effect. So, you have to be careful as you fight to the death. Just one round of skills from him is already terrifying."

"Ok, I understand...."

I nodded and confirmed the teleport. I suddenly appeared in the arena. Yan Zhao Warrior stood in front of me. He raised his broadsword and smiled, "Xiao Yao, it's been a while. You've only been in Tian Ling City for one week and you've already created a ruckus. You really are.... A workaholic?"

I laughed, "It's ok. Doesn't this tournament have a rule to not chit chat before the match? We'll talk afterwards!"

"Alright!"

.....

Once the countdown finished, the match began!

We were both swordsmen and so, Yan Zhao Warrior used [Haste] and charged at me with his sword raised. He probably knew all of my skills as well because after three spins, my [Blade Spin] was dodged as he ran in an S shape. I decided to not use [Binding Chains] and keep their cooldowns. I'll give him a surprise later.

“Coming at you!”

Yan Zhao Warrior roared and raised his blade. He threw a [Sword Break] right at me. The [Sword Break] skill’s activation period was rather long. Just looking at his stance made my heart itch. Based on my reaction speed and judgement, I had at least 70% chance of getting a successful Skill Break. However, I hadn’t completely mastered the intricacies of the Pulse Break Technique. And so instead, I made a pivot and spun around, dodging the attack. I then threw an attack from the side and activated a level 11 [Combo], slicing into Yan Zhao Warrior’s shoulder.

“Oh?”

Yan Zhao Warrior was slightly shocked. He didn’t think that I would be able to move so quickly. He opened one hand and activated an effect type skill, [Frozen Steps]. It decreases the target’s movement speed by 50% for three seconds. Heavy ice was already forming around my feet. This must be a binding type skill. There was practically no way I could rely on my movements to dodge the attacks. Motherf\*cker, this skill is too annoying.

I knew that Yan Zhao Warrior wasn’t going to let these three seconds pass up. And so, I raised my two swords. Even though my movement speed had decreased, my attack speed was still normal. I’ll just have to take it head on!

Just as I thought, Yan Zhao charged at me. He leapt up and threw a normal cut!

I raised my Brilliant Fire Emperor. “Keng!” I parried the attack. However, once Yan Zhao Warrior landed on the ground again, he activated another A tier [Combo], [Peerless Strike]. A force pushed me over, making me lose my balance. [Peerless Strike] was a three hit combo that simultaneously landed on my chest armor. Sparks flew out —

“3332 ! ”

“4412 ! ”

“4715 ! ”

Luckily, I had [Wall of Dou Qi] and [Frost Armor], so I wasn’t afraid of Yan Zhao Warrior’s attack. However, one of the strikes from his [Combo] was a kick.

“Peng!” I had completely lost my balance. Right at that moment, Yan Zhao actually stopped the last strike and rammed his elbow into my shoulder, activating a [Break Shield] skill. After that, he struck with a level 11 [Combo]+[Holy Flame Cut]!

This was the attack I was waiting for. I watched as Yan Zhao Warrior’s [Combo] fell and couldn’t help but smile. Once Yan Zhao Warrior saw my expression, he hesitated, “Oh no....”

I swept out my Brilliant Fire Emperor, throwing out a special attack, [Grip of Purgatory]. It was my new binding skill. A pair of bloody hands burst from the ground and grabbed Yan Zhao Warrior’s legs, making him unable to activate the jump back. At the same time, I dipped forward and activated [Blade Rush]+[Strength of a Thousand Men]+Level 11 Combo. My twin swords rapidly threw out seven cuts at once. Yan Zhao Warrior spun around and threw an attack, [Absorb Strike]!

“9120 ! ”

“+9120 ! ”

Unfortunately, even if he drained ten thousand of my health, he couldn’t block the burn effect from the [Halberd Flame]. Every second, he took the same amount of damage as a normal attack. Once I had the upper hand, I didn’t let up against him. Helplessly, he was burned to death by my halberd flame. As expected, there was still a difference between the tier of special skills.

1:0 !

Even though it was slightly dangerous, I still won. My equipment was stronger than Yan Zhao’s by at least 20%. That was the focal point of this victory. Otherwise, if I were to get hit by his speed decrease and defense decrease, plus a round of attacks, I might not have made it through the match.

In the second match, I had the advantage again. At first, Yan Zhao Warrior relied on the small skills and small special skills forcing me into a standstill. But, once I activated my [Halberd Flame], he couldn’t take it anymore. All he could do was glare at me and say, “This [Halberd Flame] is too unfair...”

I smiled, “It’s just a Saint Tier equipment. How about it, do Saint Tier

Equipments have a future?”

“Yes....”

Yan Zhao had done his best, and died with a smile on his face.

2:0 !

I got another precious point for [Zhan Long]. If we continue on like this, then we'll have a multi point lead. At that point, Dong Cheng's round would be easy to deal with.

“Shua!”

I was teleported out of the arena. Wan Er smiled, “You b\*st\*rd, you really do have a pretty good success rate!”

Qing Qian smiled, “But of course. Brother Xiao Yao is a man who's trying to become the MVP of players. From the beginning of the race to now, Brother Xiao Yao hasn't lost once has he?”

I nodded, “Yup, sounds about right.”

Dong Cheng said, “Actually, the MVP is either going to Li Xiao Yao, Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword, or Jian Feng Han. In other words, as long as Brother Xiao Yao beats Fang Ge Que, then he'll definitely get the MVP for the Chinese Server.”

I glanced at her and said, “It's your turn. Your opponent is a knight, be careful....”

“Don't worry!”

.....

“Shua shua!”

Two figures appeared in the arena. Dong Cheng was standing, facing Traveler. Gunpowder was in the air.

Then, right as the battle was about to begin, “Ka Cha!” Traveler's red armor suddenly switched to a light green heavy armor. Even the spear that he held in his hand had been switched to a deep green long sword!

“F\*ck!”

Wan Er narrowed her eyes, “Switching gear right before battle? All of that equipment must be magic resistance type equipment. That... Isn’t he going to [Reflect] our Dong Cheng to death at this rate?”

Qing Qian was stunned, “Then what do we do?”

I said, “There’s no use panicking. Let’s see what Dong Cheng does!”

In the arena, Dong Cheng didn’t appear to panic at all. She quietly stood there with her staff in hand. This Blizzard spell decreased the opponent’s movement speed. As Traveler charged forward, she activated her first [Dimensional Leap]. She then activated [Thunderbolt Finger]. “Pa Ts!”, a [Magma Lance] activated right behind it!

“5728 ! ”

“4781 ! ”

Just as we had figured, he was completely outfitted with equipment that decreased or resisted magic attack completely. It even had a 10% or so [Reflect] effect.

Dong Cheng still did not panic. She continued her retreat. Since Traveler switched all of his equipment, he had completely given up on increasing his attack and health. However, he utilized his special skill [Circulation] to increase his recovery rate by 25%. Furthermore, he already had quite a bit of base health in the first place. And so, he picked up his spear and started slicing at Dong Cheng. The long sword even had a Frost type movement speed decrease effect. He clung to her, forcing Dong cheng to use another [Dimensional Leap] to pull away.

And like this, magic clouded the arena. Finally, when Traveler’s health had almost been completely whittled away, Dong Cheng gulped down a potion to recover all her health. Her [Mana Shield] still had 87% durability. She stood in place and killed her opponent with a [Flame Beast Burstfire].

The reality was, against a person with incredible magic attack power, even if you had a high magic defense, there was no use. You still wouldn’t escape the fate of defeat.

This continued on in the second round as well. Dong Cheng had KOed Traveler

with a 2:0 score.

3:0, [Zhan Long] had entered the top four!

However, to fulfill the wishes of the players who purchased tickets, we went for another point and fought in the remaining two matches. We swept through the 2v2 and defeated [Prague]'s team in the final

team battle. The final score was a 10:1 resulting in our victory.

.....

When we walked out of the competition room, the names and pairings for the top four was released on the big screen——

Team Q-Sword VS Team Fang Ge Que

Team Jian Feng Han VS Team Xiao Yao Zi Zai

The final Chinese Server final victor will arise from these four teams. Furthermore, the top three will obtain the qualifications for entering into the International Final Hero's Wings Cup. That was just too precious of an opportunity. At the same time, there was an enormous reward that came with it. Whether or not one can bring back the Hero's Cup was no longer important. As long as one could participate in the International Finals was enough proof of strength.

Feir Er walked onto the stage to make the announcement. The time for the lunch banquet had arrived. Afterwards, the four most exciting rounds of the tournament will be left until after two o'clock. That gave the four teams the chance to get some rest. After all, everyone was tired.

.....

After the meeting was adjourned, a large group of people picked up their bags and walked back towards their rooms through the hallway of participants.

Li Mu rubbed his nose and said, "Looks like for teams like ours who have been eliminated we'll just freeload off of the plane ticket back and our stay at this five star hotel. Just thinking about it makes my heart sore....."

Wolf said, "Exactly. However, Wang Jian that b\*st\*rd isn't the same. I heard that he even managed to get a girlfriend...."

Wang Jian hung his head, “Not yet....”

Right at that moment, in the distant dining hall, a girl dressed in a red jacket stood up. She had an incredibly fierce look as she whistled to us. She raised her arm and smiled, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, General Wang Jian!”

I looked over. It was the beautiful girl in the short skirt from last night’s ping pong game. She was the Star Scar from the game.

Wan Er was stunned, “Pig, how does that girl know you?”

I scratched the back of my head, “I’m already in the top four. How many people are out there who don’t recognize Xiao Yao Zi Zai... Besides, Wan Er, there’s no reason to be jealous, she’s someone Wang Jian is crushing on....”

“Oh, I get it....” She giggled, “Wang Jian, you have good taste....”

Wang Jian was even more ashamed.



# Chapter 663 - A Fight of a Million Dollars

That noon, a banquet was held in the great hall. Nearly 200 people were in attending. It was because the tournament this evening was going to be pretty late, so the event planners even set up some shows. One of the shows was a cosplay event. A couple of muscular men with their faces brightly painted walked onto the stage with large battle axes. These were Destiny's Barbarian Berserkers. Afterwards, a few female assassins wearing short fur skirts came onto the stage with daggers in their hands. Everyone carried an umbrella on their back. Their ears were pointy and their eyes were a beautiful deep purple. They were dressed up as moon elf assassins. Not after long, I could hear the sound of a horse whinny. Wang Jian was so shocked that he dropped his chopsticks on the table. Three battle horses adorned in armor slowly walked into the hall. They were probably horses brought over from a horse show. Furthermore, each one had a knight carrying a spear on their backs. There were even soldiers standing in front of the horses with large shields.

“D\*mn.....”

I rubbed my nose and picked up the chopsticks that were dropped. I then wiped them clean on Dong Cheng's sleeve and said, “Aren't they afraid that these horses will poop on the stage...”

Dong Cheng grinned, “That won't be a problem, we have little wolf here....”

Little Wolf was stunned, “Eh... what does a battle horse pooping have to do with me....”

Dong Cheng sweetly smiled, “Monday morning is full of fog, Zhan Long's Little Wolf likes to eat sh\*t.”

Little Wolf was speechless.

.....

Very soon, the cosplay event ended. Fei Er wiped her mouth and walked onto the stage. She picked up the microphone and smiled, “Alright, now that we've livened things up, I invite Q-Sword, the representative of the players to make a

speech before the final round.”

Q-Sword stood up. He was dressed in a clean suit. He gave off a stern demeanor. He lightly smiled and said, “I’ll have to pass on the speech, you said that I just had to say a few words!”

Fei Er smiled back, “Participants of this tournament, no matter what the results of this afternoon’s battles, let us not judge a hero by their victory or loss. Either way, the four strongest teams in the Chinese Servers of the Hero’s Wings Tournament have been determined, Team Fang

Ge Que, Team Q-Sword, Team Xiao Yao Zi Zai, and Team Jian Feng Han. Q-Sword, as one of the players of the four top teams, you have brought honor and fame to [Hero’s Mound]. Do you not have something to say to everyone?”

Q-Sword smiled and said, “I want to thank my team, The Seventh Tang, Sword Tears, Jian Tan and the rest. I also want to thank my opponents. Strong rivals are one of the most precious treasures in a man’s life. Now that [Hero’s Mound]’s main team entered into the top four, I will fight with all my power to enter the top three and obtain the qualifications for entering the International Cup. At that point, I will do everything to bring back the 2017 Cup to our mother country!”

Fei Er nodded with a smile, “Well put. Then.. Q-Sword, who do you think your strongest rival is?”

Q-Sword looked down from the stage and said, “My strongest rival is naturally Fang Ge Que, aka “Magic God”. If my memory serves me correctly, the number of victories I’ve won against him do not go over 40%. However, the rival I want to battle the most is not Fang Ge Que.”

Fei Er was stunned, “Oh? Is there another story to this? Hurry up and tell everyone. Who is the person you want to fight with the most?”

Q-Sword grunted and looked at [Zhan Long]’s first table, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, the guildmaster of [Zhan Long].”

“So it’s the guildmaster of [Zhan Long]....”

Fei Er didn’t seem to notice anything was out of place and smiled, “How about you talk about it with everyone? Why do you want to fight against Xiao Yao Zi

Zai? If I'm correct, not long ago, you recently dueled

Q-Sword glanced at me from a distance, his eyes filled with provocation and said, "The reason is simple. Xiao Yao Zi Zai has spent this last half year rising up as one of the top tier experts. Furthermore, he's led his [Zhan Long] against our [Hero's Mound] several times. More importantly, Cang Tong and Cang Yue were originally [Hero's Mound]'s vice guildmasters. Unfortunately, for the sake of Xiao Yao Zi Zai, they have left [Hero's Mound]. I do not know for what reason they have left me, but I want to prove to them through a true contest of swords that who is the strongest close combat player in the Chinese Server."

Fei Er smiled and added a little oil to the fire, "If it's like that, then in Q-Sword's eyes, the only worthy close combat enemy is Xiao Yao Zi Zai? Are you saying that you don't see either Jian Feng Han, Ye Lai, Yan Zhao Warrior, or Enchanted Painting as your rivals?"

Q-Sword chuckled, "MC, is there any need to push me into this heap? I never said that I don't consider them as rivals. I just meant that the person I want to win against the most is Xiao Yao Zi Zai."

Fei Er nodded and said, "Alright then. Well, you now have the perfect opportunity... not long ago, I received some news from the hosts. This afternoon at two o'clock, when the top four duel it out, Q-Sword, you may give an invitation to a friendly duel to any of the players. Victory or defeat will all be determined in one round. Are you willing to accept?"

Q-Sword was startled, "Really?"

"Of course, I wouldn't trick you!"

"Ok..." Q-Sword gripped the microphone and stared right at me, "Li Xiao Yao, do you accept this friendly duel?"

I stood up and said, "A friendly duel, that doesn't sound interesting at all!"

Wan Er looked up at me and smiled, "Pig, what are you trying to do?"

Fei Er was stunned as well, "Then what do you want?"

I took out a gold card and flashed it in my hand, "How about everyone here stay witness. During this friendly duel, Q-Sword and I will both take out 1 million

RMB. The victor gets the loser's 1 million. How does that sound? Otherwise, this friendly duel would not have any weight."

Ye Lai smacked the table and smiled, "D\*mn, you little b\*st\*rd. I really f\*cking admire your daring character!"

Jian Feng Han smiled back, "Let us wait and see then!"

Fang Ge Que quietly sat there and didn't look up at the stage. All i could see was the hint of a smile on his lips.

.....

"Brother?"

Sword Tears stood up, "Are you really going to accept a duel like that?"

Q-sword naturally did not admit to his doubts. After all, his eyes were filled with confidence. He smiled back, "Alright, I will accept your challenge. So what for a million. I just ask that everyone here bear witness to this bet. Don't let him try and run away from this bet when he loses!"

I nodded with a smile, "That's exactly what I wanted!"

.....

And so, the duel was set with a million RMB on the line. It no longer seemed as simple as a friendly duel.

Meng Yao looked at me with worry in her eyes, "Brother, are you really that confident? That... that's Q-Sword, who's just mastered the Pulse Break Style. Are you sure that you can beat him?"

I picked out a piece of meat for Wan Er and put it in her bowl as I said, "Its no problem. A bet is a bet!"

Wolf face palmed, "D\*mn, a bet is a bet? That's a million RMB you're talking about. Just as I thought, we really can't compete against the tall, rich and handsome."

Old K said, "It's fine. Little Li has earned quite a bit from the Dragon's Den. the number of players that use the teleportation there have just broken 100,000. He has enough money...."

I glared at him, “You think that I’ve been pocketing the money? I had earned all one million RMB from selling my potions. This is my blood and sweat. Just ask Fox!”

Fox hadn’t gotten the chance to enter the top 32 and was just here to freeload some food and watch some entertainment. He put down his chopsticks and calmly said, “I control all the books for [Zhan Long]’s Dragon’s Den and National Beauty. Furthermore, I’ve been watching all activity very closely. Little Li hasn’t pocketed any of the money. That, I can prove. Old K if you dare doubt Little Li about this again, be careful of Little Wolf and Matcha beating you up.....”

Old K rubbed his nose and said, “I was just saying. If you guys get more nervous then I’ll beat you guys up!”

Matcha smiled, “You can talk if you can beat up boss!”

Old K was speechless.

.....

That afternoon at 1:30, the resting period was over. All of the players slowly entered into the arena and prepared to watch the final battle between the top four. This was also the chance to fight for a position in the top three and qualify for the international tournament. However, before this was a friendly duel.

Fei Er stood on the stage in her short skirt. After announcing the friendly duel between Q-Sword and Xiao Yao Zi Zai, a loud cheer erupted among the crowd. It seemed like everyone was looking forward to this match. After all, Q-Sword and I were both considered famous people among the Chinese players. On top of that, [Hero’s Mound] and [Zhan Long] have continuously been rivals. In a situation with so much tension in the air, it was no wonder everyone was waiting to see some excitement. More importantly, Q-Sword and I had a million RMB riding on this duel. This was something almost everyone knew about.

The big screen revealed our names and the match details. This raised the level of excitement in the room even more——

Q-Sword LV 117 Blacksmith Swordsman VS Xiao Yao Zi Zai LV 119 Dragon Rider

.....

“Goodluck!”

Wan Er tugged on my hand and gave me a soft cheer.

I smiled to her and nodded. I picked up my bag and stepped onto the stage. Q-Sword was right beside me with his bag as well. We didn’t exchange any words. After all, this was someone who was destined to be my opponent, there were no words necessary.

“Shua!”

We entered the game interface and were teleported into a separate dimension. The Hero’s Cup organizational committee had control over the software of the game, allowing them to set up separate dimensions for activities such as these.

We were teleported into a field. I stood on the stage facing Q-Sword. He was dressed in shiny and elaborate armor. He carried a mighty longsword in his hand. It was the Demon Harvest Weapon, the Nation Suppressing Sword. Probably, the most important reason why Q-Sword dared to provoke me was because of the Nation Suppressing sword in his hand? Whatever. Even though my Dragon Reservoir Sword didn’t have an overlay of the Kill for Blood BUFF, it still did not lose to the Nation Suppressing Sword. I’ll just use this live duel to avenge the humiliation I suffered from the Dragon’s Nest!

The two of us remained silent as the system continued its countdown——

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

.....

The moment the countdown finished, I charged out. My two sword dropped and dragged across the ground as I charged straight at Q-Sword. The moment I got close, I suddenly swept out my Brilliant Flame Emperor and dealt a normal attack!

“Keng!”

Q-Sword had successfully blocked it with his Nation Suppressing Sword. I then raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword with my right hand and dealt a cut!

Q-Sword immediately retracted into a defensive position. He then used his hilt to ram against my Dragon Reservoir Sword. At the same time, he slid his battle boot forward and threw a fierce kick at my leg. “Peng!” I activated [Wall of Dou Qi] and put my left leg into a defensive position while I kicked my right foot out!

“Peng!”

The impact of the blows resounded through the arena. Q-Sword lost his balance and he suddenly dipped forward. He then moved his leg. His left hand shot out like lightning and pressed against my shoulder. This North Pole Young Master had really good reflexes. This kind of reaction time wasn’t something that normal players could achieve.

## Chapter 664 - Revenge

I suddenly shrugged my shoulders and ran in a zigzag, dodging Q-Sword's heavy strike. It was like a real duel. I spun around, raising a knee and landed a heavy kick on to Q-Sword's back. At the same time he also turned his head around and his sword clashed against my brilliant fire emperor. Both of us didn't take much damage as we passed by each other and increased the distance between us.

“Hu hu.....”

It took a little concentration to calm my breaths. I looked at Q-Sword. we were both trying to feel out each other's battle style. I didn't use any of my skills. After all who knows how much Q-Sword has improved since last time. If I used a skill and was interrupted like last time I would immediately be at a disadvantage.

I slightly raised my hand and my Brilliant Fire Emperor flew into the air. It flipped in the air and turned into a whirlwind. The effect from blade spin rushed at Q sword. The long-distance type physical attack could not be interrupted successfully. The crucial point to my victory was to whittle down his health and to kill him in the end in one go. After all, it'll be heartbreaking to lose a million RMB.

Q-Sword pushed off the ground and continuously shifted his position using an s-shape to dodge the attack from the blade spin.

S shaped movement, one of the most basic types of movement. Everyone knew that it was the best type of movement for dodging any straight line attacks. After all an s-shaped movement was very difficult for a straight line long ranged attack to follow.

“Shua!”

I grabbed my sword from the air and suddenly appeared in Q-Swords path. Flames fell down the Brilliant Fire Emperor. “Keng” the attack was blocked however my Dragon Reservoir sword was already in position for another attack.



Dou Qi began to gather around me. even though the two attacks were just normal attacks they still had a burn effect. Within moments I activated a 7 strike combo!

Q-Sword raised his sword with one hand and was only able to block the first 5 attacks. as for the last two he could only take them head-on in a defensive stance. At that moment two damage numbers flew up

“4112 ! ”

“3918 ! ”

My attack power was just too high so there was no way that he could completely defend against it. Q-Sword has lost around 25% of his health. Looks like, in a situation without a mount, he still had around 30,000 health. It wouldn't be that easy to kill him.

His eyes had a chilling calm to them. Q-Sword suddenly retreated several steps. He maintained the natural qualities of a top-tier expert by staying back. He suddenly raised his long sword. Flames begin to rise around the blade and he plunged his blade into the ground. A pack of enormous flame wolves suddenly appeared behind him. This was his S tier skill, [Destruction Wolf Formation].

I stomped against the ground.”Peng” A wave of frost energy suddenly poured forward, [Ice Domain]

“MISS ! ”

Unfortunately, I didn't seal Q-Sword in ice.

Taking on the attacks from the skill I continued charging forward like crazy. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. Right afterwards, I swung my two swords and activated [Sword Tempest]. The two of us had already begun an explosive match of AOE attacks.

After [Sword Tempest] was complete, I managed to pull closer to Q-Sword. The Brilliant Fire Emperor shot out. Q-Sword could only use his Nation Suppressing Sword to block. At the same time, an image of a fierce tiger appeared above the Nation Suppressing Sword. It was first moves of Q-Sword's [Fierce Tiger Burst]. He roared, and activated the skill. However, at the same

time, a crimson light flashed above his left arm. It was the effects from [Afterglow Slash]!

These past few days I'd been pouring over all of the recordings of Q-Sword's battles. His average targeting time was 0.5 seconds. The attack had a 1.5 second stun effect on its targets. This was Q-Sword's battle style. He would trick his opponent's by starting off with [Fierce Tiger Burst] while the real critical attack was the [Afterglow Slash] that followed it!

I didn't hesitate at all and took the attack head on!

My Dragon Reservoir Sword danced out with frost energy radiating from the blade. Right as the [Fierce Tiger Burst] struck my chest, my [Fierce Ice Blade] pierced through Q-Sword's chest. Two damage numbers flew up instantly——

“10022 ! ”

“12117 ! ”

.....

Fierce Ice Blade decreases the target's movement speed by 50%. This also meant that his [Afterglow Slash]'s targeting period was now 0.75 seconds long. The most optimal period of time for breaking the skill was 0.52 seconds or so. Furthermore, Q-Sword had just stepped into a stance. It was the standard horse stance\*. His center of gravity was focused on his lower body while his strength came from his right arm.

In that split second I made my decision. I sprinted forward and in that 0.52 second time period, my Brilliant Flame Emperor rammed into the tip of his Nation Suppressing Sword, decreasing the force behind the [Afterglow Slash] by at least 40%. At the same time, I raised my right leg. “Pa!” I dug it into Q-Sword's left ankle. The second he lost balance, I cut through and sliced into his right arm!

“Peng!”

A blue light flashed around us and three big words flew up——

“Successful Skill Break!”

.....

“What? How is that possible!!?”

Q-Sword’s expression turned ugly. His body had now entered into a short stun period from the successful skill break. I took the chance to pull close and deal two [Blade Rush]es into Q-Sword’s body and finally dealt a level 11 combo!

At the same time, Q-Sword awoke from his stun state. He quickly dashed to the right, dodging the [Combo]. At the same time, he swept out his sword. “Keng!” He had slammed it right into the center of my sword during the final attack of the [Combo]. At the same time, he dipped forward and rammed into my right arm!

“Peng!”

“Successful Skill Break!”

What stunned me was that even with a skill like [Combo] that had such a fast rhythm, Q-Sword was actually able to break through it. This type of reaction time and judgement was something only a master player would have

Taking advantage of my sluggish movements, Q-Sword threw a [Hawk Slash]. Light began to rise from his feet and he used a [Combo]——[Six Directional Thunder]

.....

Heavy hits smacked into my body and my health plummeted. I quickly activated my [Halberd Flame] special skill during my sluggish movement. I was putting it all on the line now. For a short time, I couldn’t activate [Hand of Purgatory]. Q-Sword’s attacks were so fierce that it would be impossible to lock on any sort of special attack. However, I could clearly see all of Q-Sword’s attack patterns. [Six Directional Thunder]’s first five attacks took a total of 0.7 seconds, while the last 0.7 seconds was the targeting time for the sixth attack [Flame Axe]. That was the most powerful attack in the [Combo].

I glance at my health. There was only 11,000. There was no time for a [Cleansing Rain].

Without any hesitation, I dashed forward. Before Q-Sword activated [Flame Axe] I had been waiting for the opportunity. I swept out my Brilliant Flame Emperor. “Keng!” it rammed into the Nation Suppressing Sword. At the same

time, the hilt then rammed into the center of Q-Sword's arm. I was using both swords. With incredible speed and precision, I struck out both swords and knocked them into Q-Sword's right arm.

"Peng!"

A blue light burst forward and three big blue words appeared——

"Successful Skill Break!"

.....

This entire duel had three Successful Skill Break's. While Q-Sword was in his sluggish state, I opened my hand and activated [Hand of Purgatory]!

"Pu!"

A bloody arm broke through the ground and grabbed Q-Sword's leg. I didn't give him the chance to use his [Hundred Smelted Sword]'s attack and quickly locked [Great Realm of Desolation] on him!

"13421 ! "

Like this, even if Q-Sword were to gulp down a Level 11 Potion, he would only have 5000 health recovered. [Great Realm of Desolation] decreased all healing effects by 50%. This unique effect was very demonic.

I sprinted forward and pierced forward with my Dragon Reservoir Sword!

"Ka Cha!"

"8912 ! "

.....

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations Player Xiao Yao Zi Zai on obtaining a win!

.....

I won! I was immediately teleported out of the stage. I could hear the thunderous applause from outside. Everyone had truly broadened their horizons after witnessing that match. This was a fight between two close combat players using the Pulse Break Style. Furthermore, the success rate was a

shocking 100% on skill break attempts. One could just imagine the excitement of watching us duking it out.

I raised my helmet and walked out of the competition area. Q-Sword walked out at the same time. The MC Fei Er told me to wait as she smiled, “Let me first congratulate you, Xiao Yao Zi Zai on winning a million RMB! Then... Q-Sword, now that you have unexpectedly lost, I ask, is there anything you want to say to your fans out there?”

Q-Sword embarrassingly smiled, “Losing and winning is a common thing. There isn’t much else to say. However, I did not expect that Xiao Yao Zi Zai would actually be able to learn so much about the Pulse Break Method in such a short time. Looks like... the Pulse Break Method will very soon become a trend among close combat players.”

Fei Er nodded, “Xiao Yao Zi zai, do you have anything to add?”

I picked up my bag and said, “I’m thinking, how should I spend this one million....”

The audience all heartily laughed.

.....

After getting off the stage, I opened up my phone and saw that I had received a million in my bank from Q-Sword. As expected, these North Pole practitioners really aren’t lacking in money!

Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Li mu and Wolf all ran up to congratulate me. I had also expressed that I would treat everyone after we had finished the matches today.

Not long after, Fei Er announced that the main tournament was about to begin. Q-Sword and Fang Ge Que both stepped onto the stage. Once they had confirmed their team formations, they entered into the arena. I still felt that [Hero’s Mound] still had a chance for victory in this match——

1v1: Enchanted Painting LV 116 Swordsman VS Q-Sword LV 117 Blacksmith

1v1: Fang Ge Que LV 121 Spirit Master VS Sword Tears LV 115 Swordsman

1v1: Xuan Yuan Feng LV 116 Knight VS The Seventh Tang LV 116 Feng Shui Master

2v2: Enchanted Painting LV 116 Swordsman & Fang ge Que LV 121 Spiritmaster VS Q-Sword LV 117 Blacksmith & the Seventh Tang LV 116 Feng Shui Master

5V5:ALL VS ALL

.....

The weakest Sword Tears had been matched up against the strongest, Fang Ge Que. Tang Qi should be relatively confident in his match against Xuan Yuan Feng. The final deciding factor would be the 2v2 and the team battle.

“Guess, who do you think will win?” Wolf asked.

Ye Lai joined in and said, “I bet a hundred bucks that Team Q-Sword will win. He’ll escape from the danger and win big.”

Mu Xuan then said, “I actually think, [Legend]’s team will win.”

“Why’s that?” I asked.

Mu Xuan smoothed out the furs on her chest and said, “That’s because, as long as Fang Ge Que is going out to battle, he’ll always be able to win a point. Fang Ge Que goes out three times, that’s three points. Its very simple actually...”

“D\*mn....”

“Let’s go!”

“.....”

.....

At that moment, the duel was about to begin. The first match was Q-Sword VS Enchanted Painting. Q-Sword was a master level player and he had just recently learned the intricacies of the Pulse Break Style. Enchanted Painting on the other hand was the sister of the founder of the Pulse Break Style. So naturally it was going to be an incredible battle!

In the first round, Q-Sword’s [Fierce Tiger Burst] had been successfully interrupted. However, the [Afterglow Slash] had blocked Enchanted Painting’s attack. He quickly gulped down a potion to recover. The second time, he used a

[Flame Axe] to rick Enchanted Painting into using a skill break. At the last second, he switched tactics and made Enchanted Painting's attempt to break his skill fail. As a result, she was stunned by Q-Sword's [Afterglow Slash] and killed after a round of attacks.

In the second round, Enchanted Painting revealed her strength and successfully broke his skills three times in a row. Q-Sword tasted defeat and lost a point.

In the third round, Q-Sword didn't use any skills and relied solely on his prowess in strength. He forced Enchanted Painting to use her attacks, resulting in Enchanted Painting's [Thunderclap Slash] to be broken. Afterwards, he hacked her down in moments.

.....

2:1, this was proof that experience was still more fierce. Q-Sword's control over the entire match was not something that a little girl like Enchanted Painting could fight against. Besides, this battle also allowed the Battle Reflux Style players to see hope in a match between Battle Reflux and Pulse Break Style.

# Chapter 665 - Semifinals

1:0: Team [Q-Sword] had the lead.

Match 2: Fang Ge Que VS Sword Tears . Just as expected, Sword Tears, even with her conventional [Battle Reflux Style] relying on a 20+% HP drain effect, could not even scratch Fang Ge Que's [Black Tortoise Shield]. On the other hand, Fang Ge Que, with his godlike ability to control distance, effortlessly caught her with a [Spiral Ice Dance] and proceeded to dispatch her with several follow-up skills. Sword Tear lost twice consecutively and the match.

1:1 [Legend] had begun their comeback.

Match 3: Xuan Yuan Feng VS The Seventh Tang

Xuan Yuan Feng was a meat-shield type player while Tang Qi is a CC. As a result, we were treated to a banal kite show. Tang Qi relied on [Perception] and [Hexagram] to wear down his opponent as usual. Xuan Yuan Feng maintained his hp through [Cleansing Wind] and potions while chasing down his target with his lance. They used up the entire 2 minutes allotted per round before the system determined Tang Qi as the victor based on damage done.

Round 2 pretty much went the same way. Xuan Yuan Feng's usage of skills like [Heroic Ram] to close in were splendidly dodged by Tang Qi. After a successful stun by [Hexagram], Tang Qi's iron fan immediately proceed to lay the smackdown on him followed by a [Bloom Again]; taking out about 30% of his hp but still unable to kill him in the end.

Eventually, the system declared Xuan Yuan Feng as the loser and Tang Qi got his hard-earned win.

2:1! [Hero's Mound] took another point and the lead once again. Time for the fourth match; 2V2! Fang Ge Que & Enchanted Painting against Q-Sword & Lord Tang Qi!

Whoosh!Whoosh!

The four figures appeared onstage. After a bit of whispering to finalize their strategy, Tang Qi immediately moves back a good distance, setting Q-Sword



right between him and their opponents. His iron fan began to radiate flames. Q-Sword, however, stood his ground. His Nation Suppressing Sword in hand, and Fang Ge Que in his sight.

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

The moment the round started, Q-Sword immediately rushed out. Enchanted Painting lightly snort at his impulsiveness and raised her broadsword, ready to meet him. Q-Sword charged towards her, sword held loosely by his side and letting off flames. Then just when the distance between them closed to mere 3 meters, he suddenly upped his speed. Q-Sword attempted to flank her with a S-step. Enchanted Painting's lips rose in derision. In one smooth movement, she carried out a Z-Step and cut Q-Sword off right in his path. She was now certain that his strategy is to kill off Fang Ge Que first. Well, [Hero's Mound] would have no chances at all anyway if they don't.

ShaSha .....

Q-Sword suddenly activated another skill. The surrounding rubble was pulverized by a burst of scarlet light as his speed increased tremendously. With a swing of his arm, he sent Enchanted Painting staggering back and made a beeline straight for Fang Ge Que. At the same time, Tang Qi used [Perspective] and appeared within 20 meters of him. Three copper coins flew out - [Hexagram]!

“Not good!”

Fang Ge Que quickly moves back, immediately using a [Dimension Leap]. However, it seems he's underestimating Tang Qi quite a bit. The moment he leapt, Tang Qi activates [Perspective] again, instantly cutting the distance between the two of them down from 40 some meters down to less than 10. Even worse, what shrunk was not just the distance between them but the amount of surface area as well. That means Fang Ge Que is now once again within Q-Sword's range as well. This is the true essence of the strategy the two of them came up with to prey on Fang Ge Que.

Q-Sword's figure trembled for an instant and instantly appeared in front of Fang Ge Que with a [Blade Rush]. His sword was vibrant and covered with a dazzling light, a [Fierce Tiger Burst] savagely aimed at Fang Ge Que's torso.

Fang Ge Que is frighteningly calm. After confirming the distance between them in a split second, he fires off a [Ice Rock Blast]+[Blazewind Lock] at Q-Sword and promptly used his second [Dimension Leap]. Taking the full brunt of both skills, Q-Sword hurriedly chugged a HP potion. Immediately after, accompanied by a piercing cry, the avatar of a bird of prey manifested around him as he made an aerial lunge at Fang Ge Que.

Clang! Clang!

[Hawk's Assault]+[Afterglow Slash] hits home almost simultaneously. Furthermore, the 1.5 second stun effect of [Afterglow Slash] succeeded!

But unfortunately, Fang Ge Que managed to summon a [Black Tortoise Shield] before the attacks landed. At the same time, a whirlpool of fire and ice kicked around him. It's his custom SS ability, [Fire and Ice Storm]! If Q-Sword still wants to go after him, then he better be ready for a baptizing from this ridiculously overpowered skill.

"Tang Qi!"

Q-Sword had become desperate. In order to win, he must defeat Fang Ge Que! In spite of his HP dropping dangerously quickly, he did not let up a single bit as he bashed away at Fang Ge Que's shield.

Bang!

His sword pierced the arena ground. [Destruction Wolf Formation]! Q-Sword's expression was rather unsightly by now. Raising his arm once more, [Hundred Smelted Swords]!

Clang! Clang! Clang!

One after another, a hundred swords appeared in mid-air and fired away all around Fang Ge Que. The durability of the [Black Tortoise Shield] hits bottom almost instantly but still not fast enough. However, just as Fang Ge Que was about to recover, Tang Qi caught up to them. [Hexagram]!

Kaching!

The instant he woke up, Fang Ge Que found himself stunned once more. His [Black Tortoise Shield] also shattered at the same time!

Shiiiiiiing!

Several stars appeared on the Nation Suppressing Sword as it brutally fell on Fang Ge Que. Unsurprisingly, a level 11 [Combo] instakilled the helpless and shieldless mage. But before they could even rejoice, Enchanted Painting's voiced resound from behind them.

"Hm? Aren't you boys forgetting about lil ol' me?"

Her powerful onslaught reached them before Q-Sword could even turn around. A [Break Armor Slash]+[Thunderclap Strike] dispatched him in an instant. Then by exploiting the rotational momentum, she immediately turned and stuns a baffled Tang Qi with a violent [Assault]. Tang Qi had been completely focused on chasing down Fang Ge Que. To the point that his mind had filtered out the existence known as Enchanted Painting. She followed up with her unique S-rank combo [Ruinous Temptation], leaving him with just a sliver of HP remaining.

"SHIT!"

Tang Qi quickly used [Perspective]. The distance between them immediately widened to about 20 meters but Enchanted Painting only sneered in return. Raising her arm, her sword shoots out - [Flying Sword]!

Zing!

Ruthlessly denying him even the time to use a potion, the sword penetrated through his body for a successful long range kill.

1:0! Even without Fang Ge Que, the two of them are no threat before Enchanted Painting. In order to chase him down, the duo basically burned through all of their important skills' cooldowns. And after being baptized by a rotation of spells in exchange, they had to pop their potions as well. In a situation where both skills and potions were on cooldown, the almost crippled duo were just sitting ducks for her who was still in excellent condition

.....

Still, Q-Sword and Tang Qi's cooperative strategy has left the viewers delighted. The general gamer populace rarely ever get to see the godlike Fang Ge Que get wasted like this. Outside of major competitions like this [Hero's Wings Cup], where all the best players congregated to duke it out, scenarios where Fang Ge Que loses almost never happen. Furthermore, when the top tier experts compete, their extraordinary ability to predict and calculate the battle flow are a sight for sore eyes. This type of combat was simply just too uncommon.

2V2 Round 2! The Q-Sword pair changed their strategy once more. Tang Qi used [Hexagram] to force Fang Ge Que into retreating to a distance before quickly using [Perspective] and [Bloom Again] to aid Q-Sword against Enchanted Painting. They managed to take her down but only while under Fang Ge Que's unceasing attacks. The instant she died, Q-Sword found himself locked down by a [Spiral Ice Dance] and subsequently, a rotation of spells takes him out. Fang Ge Que immediately used 2 [Dimension Leap] in succession to evade Tang Qi. After 12 seconds for his cooldowns, he effortlessly dispatched Tang Qi. Even though Tang Qi was an acknowledged 'dark horse' with a degree of reputation in the last hottest VMMO 'Conquest', pitting him against Fang Ge Que certainly put all that in suspensions.

2:2, Team [Legend] evened it out once more. The last match will determine who will advance.

Final match: 5V5. Team [Hero's Mound], through a brilliant display of Q-Sword's skill, snatched one round but ultimately lost to Team [Legend] in a 1:2 reversal. With a 2:3 result, [Legend] moves on to the finals. [Hero's Mound]'s run ends here with this unfortunately matchup.

.....

"It's finally over....."

Mu Xuan took a drink from her coffee, and turned with a grim look towards the screen: "[Legend]'s lineup is just ridiculous. For [Hero's Mound] to push them this far is already incredible enough..... Any other team would probably just get 5:0'd....."

I stood up: “Well, there’s still us.....”

“Mm-hmm” Wan Er and Qing Qian also stood up, backpacks in hand.

Soon, Q-Sword and Fang Ge Que and the rest came out of their booths. And the [Zhan Long] and [Vanguard] teams took their place onstage. I consulted with Wan Er a bit over our lineup. A few minutes later, both team’ formations are displayed on the wide-screen broadcast.

1V1: Cang Yue LV-117 Mage VS Jian Feng Han LV-117 Swordsman

1V1: Cang Tong LV-117 Ascended Hermit VS Simple is Best LV-117 Mage

1V1: Xiao Yao Zi Zai LV-119 Dragon City Knight VS Fallen Wolf LV-115 Berserker

2V2: Cang Tong LV-117 Ascended Hermit VS Simple is Best LV-117 Mage

Xiao Yao Zi Zai LV-119 Dragon City Knight Jian Feng Han LV-117 Swordsman

5V5: ALL VS ALL

.....

Seeing the matchup, I felt a disappointed glumness: “I...missed Jian Feng Han... Wonder if Dong Cheng can handle him...?”

Dong Cheng slightly smiled: “Don’t worry, I’ll give it my all!”

“Mm-hmm”

We headed into the booth and before long, all of us appeared in the arena grounds.

Whoosh!

At the stageside, we could see Dong Cheng and Jian Feng Han already facing off against each other, waiting on the countdown.

3!

2!

1!

Right at the start, Jian Feng Han rushed straight ahead. The Wings of Freedom suddenly spread out behind him as he leapt at Dong Cheng. This is what worried

me most. The current him could simply ignore the limits that the game placed on melee class positioning mechanics. As Dong Cheng watched his incoming aerial attack, a brief killing intent glimmered in her eyes. Raising her arm, she simultaneously cast [Thunderbolt Finger]+[Pillars of Fire and Ice]!

Bang!Bang!

Met with an attack while airborne, Jian Feng Han immediately starts falling and switches to use [Through the Cloud Slash] for a ranged assault!

Whoosh!

Dong Cheng dodged with her first [Dimension Leap] and, her staff in action, greeted him with a [Magma Lance]. Jian Feng Han's hp was being consumed at a rather quick pace.

Just as his hp dropped to to about 25%, the bottom of her staff slammed the ground. Large scale spell - [Flame Beast Burstraid]!

While she's working on setting him as the target, Jian Feng Han does a sudden [Assault] towards her. When the distance shortened to around 7 meters, he let out a deep howl that immediately expands outward like a shockwave.

[Force of the Primordial Spirit]! SS-rank skill - Impacts and stuns targets within 10 meters.

It's already bad enough that Dong Cheng got stunned but her opponent is Jian Feng Han, known for his vicious techniques. [Corrupt Wolf Edge]+[Combo]+S - rank combo! A string of skills dispatched our best mage in an instant.

# Chapter 666 - Simple's Taunt

“Ah Ah Ah.....”

After Dong Cheng was defeated, she was teleported out of the arena. She was so furious she stomped her foot.

Wan Er looked at Jian Feng Han as he stood on the stage and said, “Clearly, our intelligence reports aren’t precise enough. Jian Feng Han actually has a skill as powerful as this [Force of the Primordial Spirit]. It instantly breaks the shield and stuns. That’s the greatest reason for Dong Cheng’s defeat.”

“How does she break it?” Qing Qian asked.

I picked up my Dragon Reservoir looked p at the stage and said, “Jian Feng Han will definitely rely on the [Force of the Primordial Spirit] in order to catch up with Dong Cheng in terms of explosive power. And so, that skill is the key. There’s a hand movement before the skill activates. Slivers of red energy would gather around Jian Feng Han. On top of that, it's targeting period is at least 0.5 seconds. Jian Feng Han will move as quickly as he can to conceal this 0.5 second time period. But no matter what he tries, it is still there. Furthermore, the attack appears to be a surge type and so it takes a moment to respond. Next time, Dong Cheng, don’t panic. When he uses [Force of the Primordial Spirit], you should use [Lullaby]. Activating [Force off the Primordial Spirit] will keep Jian Feng Han occupied for the moment, so he wouldn’t be able to dodge your [Lullaby].”

Dong Cheng nodded, “Ok!”

The second round was about to begin. This time, Dong Cheng started off by kiting Jian Feng Han like before. She continuously pulled away from him and then used small skills to attack, slowly whittling away Jian Feng Han’s health. Jian Feng Han on the other and used [Freedom’s Wings] to chase after her and then [Corrupt Wolf Edge]+[Through the Cloud Slash] to force Dong Cheng into retreat. A red energy suddenly began to envelop around him.

“Now!” I gripped my fist.

Dong Cheng raised her staff as soft music began to arise around the arena. In the end, [Lullaby] fell, successfully trapping Jian Feng Han. At the same time however, Dong Cheng was also stunned by [Primordial Spirit]. Luckily it wasn't urgent. [Primordial Spirit] only lasted 2 seconds, while [Lullaby] lasted for seven!

“This time it's my turn.....”

Dong Cheng smiled and waved her staff, activating [Flame Beast Burst Raid]. At the same time she was already activating [Thunderbolt Finger]+[Indigo Sea Arrow]. Three damage numbers flew up from Jian Feng Han's head——

“11211 ! ”

“13212 ! ”

“11783 ! ”

.....

Moments later, Jian Feng Han knelt to the ground. He originally didn't have full health before taking that round of hits, he never would've been able to stand against this explosive round from Dong Cheng

1:1 the first round was a tie!

In the deciding round, Dong Cheng and Jian Feng Han were both teleported into the arena. This time, Dong Cheng was very careful as she shot her attacks. She also made sure to keep [Lullaby]'s cooldown. She knew that this skill was the key to controlling Jian Feng Han for a moment. That would be the moment for victory.

This time it seemed to play out just as before, but there was one unexpected move. This time, as Jian Feng Han activated [Primordial Spirit], he suddenly spun the ring on his finger, activating a special skill. A green shield formed around his body and a battle notification appeared, “Player Jian Feng Han has activated the special skill [Shield of the Magic Bunny]. It gives a 100% success rate in dodging all magic effects. Uses up 30 points of rage!

Within that moment, Dong Cheng's [Lullaby] failed. At the same time, she was trapped by the [Force of the Primordial Spirit] and everything went wrong. Jian



Feng Han charged forward and threw a round of attacks, killing our beautiful mage. 1:2, Dong Cheng had lost this first point in this round.

Now the entire round was 0:1, a big disadvantage for [Zhan Long].

.....

Dong Cheng was teleported out of the arena. She stood in front of Wan Er and I and pouted her lip as she looked down and mumbled, "I'm sorry... I couldn't beat Jian Feng Han. His special skill was just too lowly...."

I smiled to her, "That's fine. It's normal that you can't beat Jian Feng Han. After all, he is ranked fifth on the CBN Battlenet Rankings, and you.... Are you even 18th?"

Dong Cheng helplessly bit her lip, "Are you abandoning me now..."

Wan Er picked up her dagger and stuck her full chest out as she confidently smiled, "Don't worry Dong Cheng, I will get your point back! Don't feel bad!"

Qing Qian blinked a few times, "Sister Cang Tong, your opponent is Simple. Don't be careless..."

Wan Er smiled, "Don't worry, I will get this point!"

"Ok!"

.....

"Shua shua...."

After two rays of white light fell, two beautiful figures appeared on the stage. Wan Er stood facing Simple. One was the vice-guildmaster of [Zhan Long] while the other was the vice-guildmaster of [Hero's Mound]. It was an inevitable battle. So long as we were in the Chinese Server battles, they would eventually meet. There was only one champion spot and it can't hold more than one king level guild. This was a fight to be number one.

Wan Er's beautiful eyes turned to her opponent. Her cape fluttered in the wind and she suddenly dipped down. She disappeared into the autumn wind. Simple squinted her eyes, "Huh?"

She raised her staff and roared. Lightning eagles struck the ground from her

head, creating small tornados. At that moment, all of the leaves in the air began to dance. This was the wisdom of a top tier mage. She did not release the skill yet, but rather used the wind to figure out her enemy's location.

“Hu hu....”

The leaves danced in the air. Right at that moment, a “Pa!” sounded throughout the arena. A beautiful figure sprinted through as the leaves outlined by the shield around it. The shape was charging straight towards Simple. Wan Er had already activated [Absolute Step].

With a light wave of her hand, a shapeless energy created an enormous net over the sky. The leaves in the air were suspended and even Simple's body was suppressed for a short moment. This was Wan Er's [Domain Control] skill. She swept out her dagger. “Pa!” Her [Gouge] passed through Simple's [Mana Shield] creating a stun effect. Both of her daggers then swept out, decreasing Simple's [Mana Shield] to 10% durability in seconds. However, by then, Simple already reacted. She used an [Eject] and leaped 20 yards away. Furthermore, her [Magma Lance]+[Lightning Eagle Formation] had descended!

“Peng Peng....”

“9771 ! ”

“8729 ! ”

Wan Er quickly switched to a defensive potion using her Iron Umbrella and didn't suffer the most damage from the magic attack. Her health still slid to half. Without hesitation, she activated [Arrival of the Hermit God]. “Shua!” She rushed towards her opponent. Halfway there, she activated [Flying Dagger]. The second Simple raised her staff again, Wan Er's dagger suddenly clashed against the gemstone on the staff. She then swung her iron umbrella. “Peng!” a blue light flashed and three big words fly up——

“Successful Skill Break!”

Simple's movements turned sluggish for a short period and she couldn't activate any of her skills. Wan Er instantly threw a [Blade of the Death God]+[Twin Blade Harmony], killing Simple!

1:0, She cleanly obtained a small point.

.....

Very soon, the second round began.

Qing Qian looked up at the stage and smiled, "Looks like Sister Cang Tong is well on the way to winning this round with a 2:0!"

I furrowed my brows and shook my head, "Not necessarily. It's obvious that Simple didn't use all her strength in the last power. She's probably saving it for later."

"Oh? If she saves it for any longer, she probably won't even get the chance to show it off."

On the stage, the battle continued. Wan Er quickly caught up and broke Simple's Mana Shield, making her even more furious. Furthermore, she didn't dare use any of her [Dimensional Leaps]. The three [Dimensional Leaps] were basically the lifelines of mages. After they were gone, a high level player like Wan Er was bound to kill her.

"Sha sha...."

Wan Er's leather shoes brushed against the ground. Wan Er carefully watched her opponent, looking for any mistakes. Once she takes advantage of it, she'd kill her opponent in one wave of attacks. She suddenly noticed that Simple stood there and suddenly raised her staff. Frost energy suddenly began to rise around her as she shouted, "Come out!"

"Grrrr....."

A blizzard of snowflakes swarmed around her and an enormous animal suddenly appeared before Simple. It was a leather armor bear. It was a summoned beast with unknown battle potential. It wasn't a pet so it was something that could be used for victory.

"Peng!" the bear left a deep indent in the ground as it stomped. Lightning ran along its fur as it threw an attack. Wan Er took the electrical shock. Closely after, the bear swung its sharp claws, dealing a [Taunt] at her. In the end, Wan Er's beautiful eyes suddenly turned clouded as she walked towards the bear.

Simple took the chance and raised her left hand. A fire ball began to form and

she shot it seven times in a row right at Wan Er. Within a second, the beautiful little miss wailed and knelt to the ground.

1:1, a tie.

Qing Qian furrowed her brow, “Eh.... the situation doesn’t look so good now. We won’t end up losing another point to them will we?”

I looked at Wan Er as she was teleported out of the arena and said, “an SSS tier skill, [Bear Summon]. This is the finishing attack that Simple has been hiding. There’s also the S tier attack [Fire Ball Combo]. It deals a chain of seven fire ball attacks at the target. After you were hit by [Taunt] and lost the ability to control movements, she would use that skill to kill you.”

Wan Er grit her teeth, “Then how should I break it?”

I smiled, “If I remember correctly, you have a [Mirror Lake] skill in your wrist guard.... It instantly purifies all BUFF effects on you. You should be able to [Purify] the taunt. Then, while Simple is careless, activate [Shield of the Mortal World] to dodge her fireball attack. Once you do that, you can go for the win through an explosive barrage of attacks. However you have to keep an eye on your strength points. After you use [Mirror Lake], then you won’t be able to use [Ruins of Spirit Fragments] to recover all of your strength points.”

Wan Er nodded with a smile, “Yup, I got it. I have to break Simple’s [Mana Shield] and kill her with only 70 points of strength. I know how to fight now... thank you pig. So you really were smart after all!”

I rubbed my nose, “Is that a compliment?”

“Of course!”

“Then, thank you....”

.....

In this deciding round, Wan Er stepped onto the stage. Simple’s battle tactics were the same as before. She whittled away Wan Er’s health by dragging the distance. However, once Wan Er activated [Absolute Step] and [Blade of the Death God], she stopped trying to kite. That would result in her own death.

And so, the second that Wan Er activated [Absolute step], Simple used [Bear

Summon]. With a roar, the bear descended upon the arena. Simple was five meters away from Wan Er when she activated her [Fireball Combo]. Wan Er's beautiful eyes turned clouded once again as she walked towards the bear. But after walking two steps, a white light suddenly fell and the [Purification] was a success!

“Shua!”

She dashed forward and stunned Simple, interrupting the [Fireball Combo]. Wan Er then slid behind Simple and dealt a chain of attacks. Simple's health plummeted and she was soon at the bottom. She quickly used [Eject] but was locked on by Wan Er's [Flying Dagger]+[Ice Pick Whirlpool] and killed from a distance!

2:1, the beautiful little miss brought a point back for [Zhan Long]!

.....

The most frightening aspect of Jian Feng Han was the fact that he had such a strong sister that supported him so loyally.

# Chapter 667 - The Final Three

“Alright, we’re at 2:1 now....”

I raised my hand and pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and smiled, “I’m confident about my point....”

Not far away, Fallen Wolf raised his battle axe with killing intent in his eyes, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, don’t be so arrogant!”

Simple frustratedly looked at him and said, “Alright now. Let’s be real here. Xiao Yao Zi Zai used to be a healer, and has an advantage in the Battle Reflux Style. Now he’s learned the essence of the Pulse Break Style. So... it is easy for him....”

Fallen Wolf rubbed his nose, “Guildmaster Jun, don’t put us down too much, I should just prepare as I usually do....”

“Alright then, I’ll be waiting on your performance....”

.....

In the next moment, the two of us were teleported to the stage. I looked at Fallen Wolf from afar. One after another, I activated my buffs. [Turmoil Sword], [Dragon’s Whistle of Thunder and Lightning], [Wall of Dou Qi], and [Frost Armor]. My attack and defense power quickly rose. Fallen Wolf roared and activated [Rage] and [Enrage] buffs.

“Coming!”

Fallen Wolf charged towards his opponent. He clenched his teeth and shot a [Battle Axe Throw]!

I raised my Brilliant Flame Emperor and blocked the attack. I took 3000 damage, which barely even scratched my health. I raised my Dragon Reservoir and hacked at Fallen Wolf. In the end, something I had never expected occurred. Fallen Wolf roared and wind started to rise up around him. Energy suddenly exploded around him and my attack reflected back onto me. A tornado swirled around. This skill was too familiar to me——[Whirlwind Slash]!

I quickly raised both swords and landed on my feet. “Keng keng keng!” I defended against the three attacks from the skill. This was probably Fallen Wolf’s finishing attack? After all, against a normal expert, these three axes would scare them to death....

I dashed forward and Fallen Wolf raised his battle axe to parry the attack. I dealt a heavy strike with my Brilliant Flame Emperor. “Keng!” I pushed away Fallen Wolf’s battle axe. A level 11 [Combo]’s light started to glow on my Dragon Reservoir Sword. Six damage numbers suddenly flew up. I then threw another [Wind Blade]. “Ka Cha!” my Dragon Reservoir Sword basically cut Fallen Wolf’s body apart. Hot blood splattered against the ground and with a grunt Fallen Wolf fell to the ground and died.

1:0, As easy as I thought!

In the second round, everything went as I expected. Fallen Wolf basically couldn’t block any of my fierce attacks. I rapidly threw two cuts. Within one minute, I won the battle. The overall score was now 2:1. After Dong Cheng had lost her point, Wan Er and I both won a point to make up for it. The round now entered the 2v2 stage. In this round, Wan Er and I were going to fight side by side. The opponent was Jian Feng Han and Simple.

.....

Standing on the stage, I raised my bloody Dragon Reservoir Sword. I lightly swung it, letting the blood splatter onto the rock. I smiled at Simple and Jian Feng Han. He clenched his teeth as he looked at me. To be honest, Jian Feng Han truly despises me. From the beginning, we’ve been enemies all the way up until now. Jian Feng Han’s position as an honored guildmaster in the Chinese Servers was brought down by me. Even now, he felt that he couldn’t push me down, nor can he stop the rise of [Zhan Long]. This would naturally cause him to be furious.

Simple raised her magic staff and quietly looked at Wan Er. She suddenly said, “This round, if our [Vanguard] loses, I ask, of this entire Chinese Server, besides Fang Ge Que, who’s power rivals that of [Zhan Long]?”

I was stunned, “What are you saying? [Zhan Long] is in no way that strong yet.”

Jian Feng Han raised his long sword and smiled, “I will personally witness just how strong [Zhan Long]’s guildmaster and vice guildmaster are!”

.....

Wan Er slowly pulled out her two daggers and softly said in the team chat, “Dear, Jian Feng Han has [Force of the Primordial Spirit] while Simple has her [Taunt]. How should we deal with these two skills?”

I took a deep breath and said, “I’ll use [Halberd Flame] and charge at the front. [Force of the Primordial Spirit] is a stun type skill. You can use [Awaken] to help me get rid of it. As for Simple’s [Taut] you can [Purify] it. Once I get close to them, I’ll seal them in ice with [Ice Domain]. The closer I am, the higher the chance that the seal will succeed. Once the seal succeeds, the rest we’ll act based on the opportunity!”

“Ok!”

As I said that, I activated all of my BUFFs. I then charged out and activated [Halberd Flame]. Flames wrapped around me while Simple activated a [Dimensional Leap] to dodge my [Assault]. Jian Feng Han picked up his sword and charged forward. [Gale] increased his movement speed such that it was even higher than mine. “Sha sha” his feet slid against the ground. Once he found the perfect position he threw a [Through the Cloud Slash] that passed between Wan Er and I.

I used a [Blade Rush] to dodge the attack while Wan Er defended with her Iron Umbrella. She then activated [Absolute Step] to charge forward. She sped towards Simple. Right at that moment, Jian Feng Han activated his [Force of the Primordial Spirit]. His target was actually Wan Er as though he had already guessed that Wan Er would use [Awakening] to unseal me.

“Oh no, what do we do?” Wan Er said into the team chat while she was stunned.

“Kill!”

With that one word, I charged forward. I swept out my sword and stomped against the ground. “Peng!” [Ice Domain] exploded. As expected, I had sealed the two. Simple immediately summoned her bear and used [Taunt] against Wan



Er. It was like this that they were planning on killing this super assassin.

.....

The flames on my body from the [Halberd Flame] continued to burn. I continuously attacked Jian Feng Han and Simple's [Mana Shield] at the same time, I used [Hand of Purgatory] and locked it onto Simple's feet. The bind successfully activated. I then used a [Binding Chains], and controlled the movements of the two people. Wan Er couldn't help but smile and say, "Victory is ours!"

I charged at Jian Feng Han, taking the attacks from the bear and the lightning strikes. I then threw an entire round of skills at him. Jian Feng Han couldn't strike back under the [Binding Chains]. All he could do was raise his blade and defense. In the end, he had lost all of his health from my barrage of attacks. With a grunt, he fell to his knees. Behind me, Wan Er also managed to break Simple's shield and kill her while she was bound by [Hands of Purgatory]. In one minute, we had won the match!

Outside the arena, Qing Qian twisted her dagger and smiled, "They actually were planning on controlling Sister Cang Tong, but not Brother Xiao Yao. Isn't that just trying to die? Brother Xiao Yao's control and explosive power is just as strong...."

As we continued on to the next round, this time Jian Feng Han tried to control my movements while Simple dealt with Wan Er. They held a tight grip on both of us and within two seconds, they threw a rain of attacks upon us. One round of [Combo]s and spells had killed our beautiful little miss. However, the second that they had instantly killed Wan Er, I had managed to break Simple's [Mana Shield] and kill Simple. The entire stage had turned into a 1v1 of me against Jian Feng Han. Furthermore, I had the advantage, since Jian Feng Han's [Combo] was on cool down, while I still had them available.

"Hmph!"

With a cold glare, Jian Feng Han picked up his long sword and charged at me. He had activated [Sword Break]!

I stepped forward. This was a skill I could deal with!

Keng!”

I rammed my Brilliant Flame Emperor against the tip of his sword. I then side stepped and cut both of my swords towards the fulcrum of Jian Feng Han’s pivot. Right at that moment, Jian Feng Han revealed a smile. He suddenly spun around and completely canceled his [Sword Break]. This meant that my Pulse Break Style move would fall into thin air, naturally causing me to fall out of rhythm. How could Jian Feng Han miss an opportunity like that? His blade shot out like lightning, dealing a level 11 [Combo]+[Corrupt Wolf Edge] right onto my chest plate.

I immediately activated [Halberd Flame] to parry the attack. My sword burned each time I dealt an attack as I countered all of his strikes. Jian Feng Han, this battle flow master’s health was pushed down by me. I could see the hatred in his eyes as he regretted not being able to use his [Force of the Primordial Spirit]. He quickly retreated but was locked down by my [Binding Chains]. He raised his left hand and chased after me with a [Blade Spin].

Jian Feng Han’s maneuvers were indeed very strong. I swung my two swords, blocking three of the [Blade Spin]’s attacks. The skill had sucked away too much of his focus and I dashed behind him, launching an ambush that resulted in his death.

2:0, [Zhan Long] had obtained victory with a 3:1 and was entering the next round!

.....

I could hear the thunderous applause from outside. It was enough to tell that [Zhan Long]’s fans were not in the minority.

The last round was a 5v5. Jian Feng Han and Simple seemed to have already reached a silent agreement. They sparsely defended themselves and gave the 5v5 point to us.

4:1, [Zhan Long] against [Vanguard] and we had gained victory!

To be honest, the main reason was because [Vanguard] had a soft spot. If Fallen Wolf was someone else, for example an expert like Drunken Spear, we may not have won. As for Jian Feng Han and Simple, they were truly top tier

players. There was no doubt about that.

.....

When we walked out of the arena, Fei Er smiled and said into the microphone, “Congratulations, Team Xiao Yao Zi Zai. You, like Team Fang Ge Que, have obtained the rights to enter the finals in the Chinese Server Hero’s Wing’s Cup. Actually, at the same time, you’ve also obtained the precious rights to participate in the International Cup. Next will be the battle for third, since there are three spots for the International Cup!”

I took Wan Er, Dong Cheng and the other girls off the stage. There was another thunderous applause as we left.

The final team listings for the bronze medal showed up on the screen. Team Q-Sword vs Jian Feng Han. This was a duel between two masters——

1v1: Q-Sword LV 117 Blacksmith Swordsman VS Simple LV 117 Mage

1v1: The Seventh Tang LV 116 Feng Shui Master VS Jian Feng Han LV 117 Swordsman

1v1: Sword Tears LV 115 Swordsman VS Fallen Wolf LV 115 Berserker

2v2: Q-Sword LV 117 Blacksmith Swordsman & The Seventh Tang LV 116 Feng Shui Master VS Simple LV 117 Mage & Jian Feng Han LV 117 Swordsman

5V5:ALL VS ALL

.....

This time I was an observer, so I was much more relaxed.

In the first battle, Q-Sword won against Simple with a 2:1, but it took quite a lot of effort. There was no other choice. Simple had recently fought against quite a few swordsmen and knights, and her control over them was just too strong. With just a single [Blizzard] she could decrease their movement speed by 30%. It was like he was being hypnotized. Chasing after her was just too difficult. Q-Sword gulped down another potion and used a special skill to recover his health. Only then could he regain control of the battle rhythm. Otherwise, it would’ve resulted in a 0:2.

In the second battle, Tang Qi lost to Jian Feng Han in a 0:2 battle. His attacks

lacked in strength and so naturally he wasn't Jian Feng Han's rival.

In the third round, the weak spot appeared. Sword Tears won against Fallen wolf in a 2:0 battle.

2v2, Team Q-Sword relied on his savage stun to kill Simple. They won, 2:1.

5v5, Jian Feng Han's team revealed their true strength and won a point with a 2:1. However by then, it was all too late. They had already lost 2:3 against Team Q-Sword.

.....

The big screen revealed the line of words: Congratulations, team Q-Sword for winning third place!

The final three teams from the Chinese Server was now finalized. There was one from each city, Jiu Li, Ba Huang , and Fan Shu, reflecting the state of the China Server's layout.

# Chapter 668 - Another Tactical Battle

“Sha sha…….”

Jian Feng Han and Simple quietly sat in the participant's' corner as they waited for others to leave the arena. Jian Feng Han lightly placed his bag at his side while he faced the big screen. His eyes were slightly red, seemingly about to break down into tears.

Despite having participated in the Hero's Wings Cup many times, Jian Feng Han had unfortunately let a great opportunity slip this time, just missing the last three places to participate. As a player and as a virtual reality tournament contestant, I could just imagine his pain. Simple was whispering to her brother at her side as if she was consoling him but it was to no avail. This pain can only be settled by oneself.

.....

On the stage, Fei Er held the microphone as she joyfully announced, “Next up is the final moment everyone has been waiting for. Team Xiao Yao Zi Zai versus Team Fang Ge Que! Who exactly will be crowned the first in China? Who exactly will be the winner of the Hero's Wings Cup held in China? We'll just have to see these 5 matches. Can we please invite the two teams up on stage to prepare as we keep our eyes peeled to witness who exactly will be the Chinese Server champion of the Hero's Wings Cup 2017!”

I lifted my bag and I said, “It's the last match, let's go. Our opponent is Fang Ge Que yet again…….”

Wan Er followed closely behind me as she laughed, “How do you think we should arrange our line-up in order to have the highest chance of winning?”

I muttered to myself uncertainly, “I'm not sure……. However, whoever meets Fang Ge Que will highly likely lose. At the very least, we stand a chance against Lu Chun Yang and Enchanted Painting. If we are able to win our 2v2, then we pretty much can win the entire tournament.”

“En. You can do it!”

.....

Walking up to the stage, I chose 3 teammates for the 1v1 fights: Wan Er, Dong Cheng and I. I then mixed up the order and randomly assigned our fights. Fang Ge Que was also arranging the order of the fights as he sat on his wheelchair. It wasn't long before the big screen had some flickering as both team's lineups were freshly announced -----

1v1: Xiao Yao Zi Zai LV 119 Dragon Knight VS Enchanting Painting LV-116 Swordsman

1v1: Cang Yue LV-117 Mage VS Fang Ge Que LV-121 Spiritmaster

1v1: Cang Tong LV-117 Hermit God VS Lu Chun Yang LV-116 Swordsman

2v2: Cang Tong LV117 Hermit God & Xiao Yao Zi Zai LV-119 Dragon Knight VS Enchanted Painting LV-116 Swordsman & Fang Ge Que LV-121 Spiritmaster

5V5:ALL VS ALL

.....

Looking up to get a look at the big screen, I raised my eyebrows and chuckled, "Seems like..... Our draw doesn't seem to be too poor....."

Qing Qian then commented, "We'll just have to see the outcome of the 2v2 match. The first 3 matches are all 50-50....."

"En! Let's go, we can win this!"

As a group of people entered the tournament room, the game data similarly read the players and updated the data online.

"Shua!"

Once we were teleported into the arena, the system prompted: Congratulations, you have entered the Hero's Wings Cup Chinese Server Finals. Wishing your team all the best in obtaining the championship!

A row of 5 people were delivered to the edge of the arena. Fang Ge Que, Enchanted Painting, Lu Chun Yang, Xuan Yuan Feng and another could be seen in the distance, on the other side of the tournament arena. All of them were currently whispering among themselves, discussing their strategies.

The first match, it was my fight against Enchanted Painting. After a bright flash, both of us were sent into the arena.

Enchanted Painting carried a long sword which was suffused with bright lights emanating from the many gems on the handle. She look at me and laughed, “I heard that three months ago, your CBN Battlemaster Ranking in China was below the 300th place but who would have thought that in this short period of not up to six months, your ranking would have risen to the top 20 in China. This is truly frightening. Also..... You have actually learnt the Pulse Break Style which was the sole creation of my sister. Could I ask who exactly taught you this?”

I unhurriedly unsheathed my Dragon Reservoir Sword as I smiled, “The internet is filled with various types of teachings. Isn’t it easy to learn a simple Pulse Break Style?”

“What do you think?”

Enchanted Painting pursed her red lips as she said, “The various teachings of Pulse Break Style on the internet are nowhere close to the true essence of the school. They don’t even offer a success rate of 5%. Q-Sword’s Pulse Break Style learned his moves from a retired expert Pulse Break Style user called ‘Ghost’. ‘Ghost’ is second only to my sister in the usage of Pulse Break Style and was once my sister’s best friend. Yet you, where exactly did you steal these teachings of Pulse Break Style?”

I narrowed my eyes as I asked, “Where’s your sister, Little Demon? Why isn’t she appearing even though [Legend] is under so much pressure? With the relationship of Little Demon and Fang Ge Que? Surely she wouldn’t ignore your plight?”

Enchanted Painting raised the corners of her lips as she chuckled, “My sister is tired of all the fighting happening in this game due to various disputes. She has already flown over to Australia and settled down there. I haven’t even seen her in over a year and don’t you dare tell me that she was the one who taught you! I’ve just spoken to her yesterday on Q!”

I was left speechless. “Then why don’t you just take it as though as I learnt it from the teachings online!”

Enchanted Painting gracefully raised her eyebrow as she responded, “Well, okay then. Why don’t you let me inspect exactly how strong your heretical style then even Q-Sword is no match for!”

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

After all the chatter, the countdown ended and it was time to fight!

In the span of a few seconds, I applied all my buffs unto myself and raised the Brilliant Fire Emperor horizontally in front of my chest while I let my Dragon Reservoir Sword fly. Immediately, I rushed straight towards Enchanted Painting and activated a [Great Realm of Desolation] from afar. Unsurprisingly, it was easily dodged by Enchanted Painting. Without giving me a second of respite, she rushed directly towards me as her left hand in a glove curled up towards my chest while her other hand which was holding onto the longsword stored up power.

The Brilliant Fire Emperor moved downwards slightly as a loud “Keng” sound was heard, causing not only her left hand to vibrate rigorously but me too. Enchanted Painting retracted her arm which was left shaking from the impact caused by my power. Her eyes showed a hint of astonishment. She clearly did not expect for my strength to be even higher than Q-Sword’s. Raging flames slowly appeared on the longsword she held on her right hand as she rapidly used a [Flaming Axe] in my direction.

I could see it very clearly and I didn’t dare to receive it directly. I slid towards the side a little as the fiery axe flew past my right side, causing the [Flaming Axe] to miss. I hastily swung Dragon Reservoir Sword at Enchanted Painting’s back, inflicting two wounds.

“Keng Keng…….”

Enchanted Painting turned around swiftly as her eyes held a look of provocation, “What? Why don’t you continue attacking?”

As she said so, six golden hexagrams appeared on the blade of her sword once again as a golden hue enveloped her entire body suddenly. This was the



prelude to an 11 hit combo! She's baiting me to break her combo. She must be very confident that she is able to disrupt my attacking momentum. En, I certainly can't be too careless. This match of mine is way too important to the team.

My body trembled a little as raging flames emerged and surrounded my body, blazing bright and fiercely. I did not plan to use the Pulse Break Style to fight but instead activated my [Halberd Flame]. Since she was Little Demon's younger sister, then I shan't act like a fool and display my measly skills in front of an expert. I shall just use my unique fighting method and beat her!

"9718 ! "

"9927 ! "

[Halberd Flame]'s burn effect was rather painful as Enchanted Painting hurriedly retreat upon one glance at it. Helplessly, I quickened my pace as I rushed forward. Every second, an attack would be launched in her direction, causing her health to be slowly whittled down. After a few seconds, Enchanted Painting was forced to down a health potion while I did not need to use any skills nor did I allow her to use any skills. It was just my Twin Sword Style reducing her health slowly.

At this point of time, Enchanted Painting's cheeks were red with anger and helplessness. Suddenly, it was one armor piercing attack from her that landed on my Hidden Dragon Armor causing a fiery spark to burst out. My defense was greatly reduced while my health dropped below the halfway point from her attacks. Immediately, Enchanted Painting's sword had a glow of thunder around it. It was the effect from the ability [Thunder Clap]!

I looked at it carefully, analysed its cooldown and immediately leaped in to attack. I raised my Brilliant Fire Emperor rose to parry her sword while the ... "Bang", I landed a hit on the shoulder of Enchanted Painting. As her upper body was trying to regain her balance after that hit, I used my Yuan Rong Combat Boots to give her a kick towards her shin. Instantly, she lost balance totally.

"Shua....."

Strong winds gathered around my dual blades as my [Wind Blade] has just been used towards the shoulder of Enchanted Painting. This was merely my first

attack!

“Successful Skill Break!”

However, in the process of breaking through, wind surged beneath the feet of Enchanted Painting as she made use of the consecutive hits of the combo to land 2 hits on my chestplate with unimaginable speed. Not planning to allow for any delays, she followed up immediately with a [Gorgeous Charm Dance].

Her body drooped a little as she caused the outline of some little white rabbits to appear in front. The [Gorgeous Charm Dance] was truly used appropriately.

However, her health was close to the bottom. I smiled as both of my swords stabbed across into the bosom of Enchanted Picture, surrendering both of my swords to cause utter devastation. Instantly, her health was depleted.

1:0 Seeing I got the first point, Enchanted Painting seemed so angry with the result that she was stomping her feet by the side of the arena. Fang Ge Que merely carried his staff and said to Enchanted Painting something without any form of laughter. This immediately calmed her down.

The second round started very quickly. Enchanted Painting lifted her sword as she stood in front of me. She did not say a single thing but her eyes seem to be radiating more fire than before. She seemed to be unconvinced by her previous loss to me.

I too didn't wrangle over much as I just lifted my dual swords and rushed forward. I raised the Dragon Reservoir Sword above my head and the hue effect from the [Seven Star Fragment Slash] skill appeared. This skill had a long cast time and was easy to stop but that did not seem to matter.

As expected, Enchanted Picture wouldn't have given up such an opportunity. She leapt up and threw a [Provocation Slash]. Her body rammed into my pelvis. At the same time, she swept out her swords. Even though the angle wasn't the same, it still created an interruption effect. Besides that, this was the most frightening part of this girl. The entire chain of moves was extremely smooth and accurate.

“Successful Skill Break!”

In that moment I went into a sluggish state..... Enchanted Painting hurriedly lifted her sword to kill me with [Gorgeous Charm Dance] about to activate.

She dealt a [Combo] right onto my shoulder armor. Afterwards, right as I turned around and my left arm swung from out of my cloak, I had already began to accumulate frost power within my palm. Enchanted Painting shouted, “Oh no!”

“Peng!”

[Ice Domain]! Receiving the skill effect from an extremely close distance, Enchanted Painting’s legs were both frozen. She had been too focussed on breaking my [Seven Star Fragment Slash] but she forgot that I was only attacking with a single sword. My left hand was already prepared to activate [Ice Domain].

Singlehandedly. I cast [Hand of Purgatory] to grab onto Enchanted Painting’s legs, immobilizing her. I then activated [Halberd Flame] and rushed towards her. Sharp rays of light rose around my legs as I activated my combo, [Strength of a Thousand Men] on her. The whole combo was able to send Enchanted Picture out.

2:0 !

Not failing my mission, I had succeeded in clinching the first point

.....

“Slash!”

After being sent out of the arena, Wan Er giggled as her beautiful cheeks seemed to colour with praise for me, “Not too bad. Beating Enchanted Painting didn’t seem to be too hard.....”

Qing Qian said, “Brother Xiao Yao is so smart! He did not even engage her with Pulse Break Style but instead used Drunken Sword Style to target her weak points! Hei Hei.....”

I looked towards Dong Cheng by my side and said, “It’s yours now, girl!”

Dong Cheng lifted her staff as her face was filled with helplessness. “Oh well, my opponent is Fang Ge Que.. Time for Dong Cheng to deliver her life.....”

# Chapter 669 - Brutal Battle

Dong Cheng VS Fang Ge Que, we could already imagine how the round was going to end. At least for now, there wasn't a single mage in the Chinese Server that could get a victory against Fang Ge Que. Even if Dong Cheng was [Zhan Long]'s number one mage, the end result would still be the same.

After two rounds, Fang Ge Que won against Dong Cheng 2:0. His thought process was just too foolproof. There wasn't a single moment that Dong Cheng had the opportunity to counter. He had complete control over the length of his skills and the flow of the battle. He forced Dong Cheng to use all three of her [Dimensional Leaps], practically finishing the battle right there.

“Ahh....”

Once Dong Cheng was teleported out of the battlegrounds, she was so angry that she stomped her foot with a frustrated look. Of course, meeting a high level expert like Fang Ge Que was unfair. There wasn't even a single chance to counterattack!

1:1, we were now tied. The tournament had come to the third round. This time, it was Wan Er VS Lu Chun Yang. This round was in [Zhan Long]'s favor. After all, Wan Er's ranking in the CBN Battlenet Rankings was much higher than Lu Chun Yang's.

“Shua shua...”

Two bright flashes lit up the arena. Wan Er and Lu Chun Yang were both teleported into the arena. Lu Chun Yang was a rather modest man. I had met him a few times in reality. He was Fang Ge Que's old friend. Furthermore, there's rumors that he's an admirer of swordplay in real life. Most importantly, even though he's been controlling his breath in the tournament area, I could still feel the power within his body. He was a beginning trainee in the Royal Air level. Tang Qi and Q-Sword could probably tell the same, just nobody said it aloud.

.....

Lu Chun Yang raised his long sword and looked at Wan Er with a smile, “Beautiful Cang Tong, nice to meet you!”

Wan Er sweetly smiled, “Thank you Uncle Lu for your minute....”

Lu Chun Yang’s face turned green, “F\*ck....”

The battle began. Lu Chun Yang really did have good swordplay. His moves were both precise and fast. A few times, he had even forced Wan Er into a corner. However, Wan Er’s game expertise was still higher. Furthermore, she had the advantage of her mind reading. Multiple times she successfully gained the upper hand and stunned Lu Chun Yang. Over time, she finally decreased Lu Chun Yang’s health. Afterwards, she used a [Flying Dagger]+[Ice Pick Whirlpool] and successfully killed him.

She won two rounds in a row. As expected, with a beautiful 2:0 finish, she gained victory against this sword master.

I continued to watch from the sidelines. Even though Wan Er had beaten Lu Chun Yang, Fang Ge Que remained calm. He seemed to have a little smile on his lips. He quietly watched the battle. The Chinese Server’s strongest player was just too terrifying. In terms of strategy and battle power, Fang Ge Que was already at the top of the Royal Air Tier. Unfortunately, his legs were paralyzed. Plus, I couldn’t feel any unnatural power in him. He was just a regular person. Or rather, a frail normal person.

.....

2:1, due to the hard work of the beautiful little miss, [Zhan Long] was now leading, 2:1.

It was time for the fourth round. 2v2. Wan Er and I went out to battle against Fang Ge Que and Enchanted Painting.

In the team chat, Wan Er pondered for a moment before saying, “Pig, we’re facing a very annoying problem... how about we kill Fang Ge Que and take Enchanted Painting’s attacks? It won’t be that easy to kill us. If we don’t kill him, then Fang Ge Que can deal enough damage in ten seconds to kill the both of us....”

I nodded, “Let’s use the [Ice Domain] then, try to catch them off guard. We’ll

freeze Enchanted Painting and then work together to kill Fang Ge Que. Then we'll work hard and kill off Enchanted Painting....”

“Ok, we'll do that then....”

.....

Within the battle arena, the autumn breeze blew up the leaves. Wan Er disappeared from my side as she entered [Stealth]. One after another, I used my BUFFs. I then charged forward with my long sword. This wasn't the time for fear. Otherwise, all would be over once Fang Ge Que released his power.

Fang Ge Que quietly stood there. He waved his staff, and activated [Ice Rock Blast] under my feet, sending me tumbling. As I activated [Assault] to charge into him, I was met by a [Fire and Ice Storm]. At that moment, my health plummeted twice——

“9772 ! ”

“10710 ! ”

This hurts too a lot. Furthermore, this was a small skill!

I activated another special skill——[Halberd Flame]. The first [Halberd Flame] attack was a surge that rammed against Fang Ge Que's [Black Tortoise Shield]. I then transitioned right into a [Sword Tempest]. After two attacks, his [Black Tortoise Shield] dropped to 47%. Looks like i need to activate 4-5 skills in order to break his shield. At that moment, Fang ge Que used a [Dimensional Leap] and [Spiral Ice Dance]. Ice spontaneously formed under my feet.

Coming!

I quickly dipped down and used a [Blade Rush] to break from the [Spiral Ice Dance]'s bonds. At the same time, I felt a [Combo] hit my back from Enchanted Painting. I gulped down a health potion and activated [Cleansing Rain] and [Heal] to recover my health. However, under the flames of [Halberd Flame], Enchanted Painting was probably not comfortable either.

“Shua!”

A crimson light flashed and Wan Er's ambush had finally begun. But nobody could imagine that Fang Ge Que's reaction was so quick. He practically finished

the move in seconds, causing Wan Er's [Gouge] from the back turned into a fully frontal attack. In the end, he managed to dodge the attack. However, Wan Er decided to change the direction of her attack and cut the [Black Tortoise Shield], trying to break it!

I raised my long sword and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] at Fang Ge Que. Kill!

Afterwards, right as my blade was coming down upon him, I felt several blows against my back, distracting me. Motherf\*cker, I took the effect from Enchanted Painting's [Gorgeous Charm Dance]. My whole body changed direction and walked towards her. I gave up pursuing Fang Ge Que. As I thought, leaving this girl alone wasn't going to make this any easier.

The fifth attack of [Gorgeous Charm Dance] was [Flame Axe]. Before Enchanted Painting could activate her [Flame Axe], I used a [Ram] to interrupt her [Flame Axe] effect. Afterwards, Enchanted Painting cast a stunned glance as she charged at Fang Ge Que. I then threw a [Blade Spin] at him. "Peng peng peng" it struck his [Black Tortoise Shield].

Right at that moment, frost power began to gather around my body and I cast [Ice Domain]!

"Shua!"

The force of the skill swept through the arena, locking Fang Ge Que in ice.

"D\*mm\*t!" Enchanted Painting shouted.

There was no way Wan Er would miss out on a chance like this. She raised both her daggers and dealt a [Blade of the Death God], killing Fang Ge Que. I then turned around and cut Enchanted Painting's health down to critical. Then, with a [Sword Tempest], I killed her!

1:0!

Nobody would have ever imagined that we would be the ones to get the first point. As long as we won again, then we would be the champions of the Chinese Server!

.....

Outside the arena, we could hear the thunderous applause. Even if this was in the game, I could still hear Li Mu and Old K shouting, “Go Li Xiao Yao! Kill Fang Ge Que! You are [Zhan Long]’s champion!”

The second round quickly began.

This time, we stuck to the same battle plan. Wan Er and I released a barrage of attacks. The battle proceeded just as it had the last round. However, it was clear that this round, Fang Ge Que was not going to let us easily win again.

Right as my [Seven Star Fragment Slash] was about to wreak havoc, Enchanted Painting used [Gorgeous Charm Dance] once again.

“Shua!”

My mind went completely blank. I could hear Wan Er saying in the team chat, “Pig, be careful, Fang Ge Que’s going to control you...”

But it was too late. Even if Wan Er could use [Mind Read] to figure out the enemies tactics, Fang Ge Que had already cast [Lullaby] from afar. Enchanted Painting then canceled the following two attacks, letting me slip into sleep. Furthermore, I couldn’t dodge while I was under the [Charm] effect. With that, I was bound by the [Lullaby] for seven seconds.

Wan Er quickly charged over, using [Flying Dagger] to awaken me. Unfortunately, Enchanted Painting charged ahead and “Peng!” pushed Wan Er back, “Don’t even think about it!”

Fang Ge Que released his spells and they were all kill shots aimed at one target. At that moment, the beautiful little miss fell to her knees while I remained in my drowsy state.

Fang Ge Que didn’t give me any chance to retaliate either. He bound me with [Spiral Ice Dance] and dealt finishing blows on me one after another I couldn’t hold against the attacks and knelt to the ground.

1:1, we were now tied. It was time for the third round. Each battle was a match point. As long as we could win one more battle, we would be champions. Then again, it seemed as though everything was within Fang Ge Que’s control.

.....



In the third round, Wan Er and I both charged forward to battle, preventing any one of us from getting hit by [Lullaby] afterwards, we focused everything on forcing Fang Ge Que to use his three [Dimensional Leaps]. The poor little miss had to use her iron umbrella and block Enchanted Paintings attacks while she pursued Fang Ge Que with her dagger.

Right as Wan Er and I broke his [Black Tortoise Shield], we only needed two attacks to kill Fang Ge Que!

But right at that moment, he raised a hand and a red energy activated. My [Wall of Dou Qi] spontaneously disappeared and a Battle Notification appeared: Please Note, the player Fang Ge Que used the spell [Pilfer], moving your [Wall of Dou Qi] to himself.

.....

In the end, the round of attacks from Wan Er and I was not enough to kill Fang Ge Que. Rather, we ended up taking more damage instead. Fang Ge Que plunged his staff into the ground and roared, “[God of Fire Formation]!”

In seconds, everything within a 50 yard radius was ravaged with fire. Wan Er and my health plummeted. This was a SSS tier skill and the burn was extremely painful!

I clenched my death and charged forward using [Haste]. I swung both swords, and dealt three normal attacks and killed Fang Ge Que while Wan Er died amidst the fire. I then turned around. Enchanted Painting still had 70% health. With a [Break Armor Slash]+[Thunderclap], she cut my health down to critical. Then, with a normal attack, we lost.

2:2, the round was a tie. Next, the last team battle would determine the victor!

.....

“Shua!”

I was teleported out of the arena. Wan Er and I were both frustrated. Qing Qian smiled and consoled us, “It’s ok, we still have a chance. Let’s kill them in the 5v5! That way, the championship is ours!”

I nodded, “Yes, let’s do this!”

“Ok!”

In the next moment, the five of us were teleported into the arena. Our opponents also appeared in front of us.

Chang Sheng Jue, Level 116 Healer. He was [Legend]’s number one healer. With a single wave of his staff, he gave himself a [Anti-Magic Shield]. It was simple, that b\*st\*rd wanted to use that spell to break my [Ice Domain].

## Chapter 670 - 1v4

“After they have dispersed their formation, Li Xiao Yao will then attract the attention of both Enchanted Painting and Fang Ge Que. Qing Qian and I will rush forward to kill Chang Sheng Jue. Then, Li Xiao Yao will use [Ice Domain] and Dong Cheng will make Enchanted Painting fall asleep. After that, nobody touch her. Qing Qian, you stay at Enchanted Painting’s side. Stun anyone who tries to get close to her. We’ll focus our fire on Fang Ge Que. Pig, use your [Hands of Purgatory] to bind Enchanted Painting. We’ll bind her to death. After that, we’ll kill them off one by one. That should work....”

After Wan Er calmly organized the tactics, she warned, “Be careful. We need to watch out for Fang Ge Que’s [Lullaby] as well. Furthermore, his [God of Fire Formation] is just too strong. Darling Duck, save your [Anti-Magic Shield] as long as you can. Once Enchanted Painting activates her [Gorgeous Charm Dance], give them the [Anti-Magic Shield]. As long as they aren’t charmed then it’ll be fine. As long as we do this right, we’ll win!”

Qing Qian and I nodded, “Yup, I know....”

.....

Once we set our battle plan, we activated our BUFFs during the countdown. Qing Qian and wWan Er had already disappeared into the wind. Our team’s advantage was in those two top assassins. They were extremely effective against weak classes. However, the fact that I was the only one to take damage was a disadvantage. This meant that I would be under a lot of pressure.

“Shua...”

My battle boots touched the ground. I was the first to charge out of the area. I swung my sword and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash], dealing a ranged attack. Even though Enchanted Painting didn’t have a chance to attack me.

Fang Ge Que also waved his staff. [Flame Storm]+[Ice Rock Blast] exploded and my health plummeted. However, this time I had a healer on my side. Darling Duck used two [Heal]s to bring my health back. Lu Chun Yang and

Enchanted Painting raised their swords and charged at Dong Cheng Yue. Their aim was to decrease our ranged attack and heals. Xuan Yuan Feng then picked up his spear and charged at me. Their tactics weren't bad. They were gonna use an iron board to control my damage. Afterwards, they would kill us one by one.

Right as Xuan Yuan Feng pulled close to me, I suddenly activated [Haste], increasing my movement exponentially. My feet slid and I made a perfect Z shape, passing by Xuan Yuan Feng. I had both swords in hand and dashed right at Enchanted Painting. I had to trap this girl, otherwise, Dong Cheng and Darling Duck would be in danger.

Fang Ge Que saw that I wouldn't use [Ice Domain], after all there weren't any good ways to do this. Magic exploded at Darling Duck's position. He had noticed that if Darling Duck didn't die, there was no way to kill me.

"Enchanted Painting, be careful. Xiao Yao's target is you!" Fang Ge Que shouted.

Enchanted Painting gave up pursuing the others and turned around to dash at me. Her blade sunk as she activated [Blade Rush], piercing through my body. At the same time, Dong Cheng's [Thunderbolt Finger]+[Magma Lance] descended upon us. I immediately activated [Halberd Flame]. I swung both swords. And held off Enchanted Painting, Xuan Yuan Feng, and Lu Chun Yang's attack. I used a [Sword Tempest] to counter.

"No, don't get caught in the AOE attack!" Fang Ge Que was starting to lose his cool.

The second I was hit by [Charm], Enchanted Painting and Lu Chun Yang's health had hit the bottom. I quickly gulped down a potion. However, there appeared to be two forces in the distant ruins. A fox shaped paw suddenly flew forward. On top of that, Wan Er used [Ice Pick Whirlpool]. Another two [Flying Dagger]s jumped out, dealing an attack from 30 yards away. At that moment, Enchanted Painting and Lu Chun Yang suddenly fell to their death. They had died too quickly. This was also the reason why Enchanted Painting finished her Combo so soon. If she didn't use it soon, then she might not even have the chance to activate it. A team battle was the time for using your finishing skills. You don't even need to think about it!

With my last bit of health, I dealt a [Strength of a Thousand Men]. I had hacked Xuan Yuan Feng's health down to critical. Before dying, I threw a [Great Realm of Desolation] onto Xuan Yuan Feng, decreasing the effect of his [Cleansing Wind] to 50% of its effectiveness. Dong Cheng then used another [Pillars of Ice and Fire] to kill him.

I felt a shiver run through my body and I died. It was Fang Ge Que's skill——[God of Fire Formation]. Even Dong Cheng and Darling Duck were wrapped into it. With one attack, he managed to kill two thin skins.

Wan Er's dagger flashed in the ruins. She had successfully activated [Gauge] and stunned him. She released a series of attacks at once to whittle down Fang Ge Que's health while Qing Qian continued to stun Fang Ge Que. She skillfully maneuvered herself and threw another [Gouge] whenever the effects began to wear off. The two girls were practically in complete control. The second that his [Black Tortoise Shield] broke, the two girls switched to dealing combos one after another, instantly killing him.

Dong Cheng supported them with magic coverage. After a few turns, Chang Sheng Jue also fell to his knees.

1:0 !

Who would have thought that [Zhan Long] would actually get the first win in this team battle!

.....

Standing on the stage, I said in the team chat——

I furrowed my brows and said, "I keep feeling like they didn't fight at their full power... In other words, we managed to mess up Fang Ge Que's rhythm. We can't be too arrogant this next round. We have to fight at full power to get this round!"

Qing Qian nodded, "Understood. We can do this team!"

Wan Er didn't say anything. She tightly gripped her dagger. She and Dong Cheng were both very nervous. After all, this was our one chance to have the honor of standing at the very summit of players in the Chinese Servers. Besides, our enemy this time was a team that has been called "Godly". Thankfully, Little

Demon wasn't here. Otherwise, Little Demon would replace Lu Chun Yang and fight. If that were the case, we would've lost 3:1 already.

In the second round, both sides faced each other in the battle arena.

"Peng!"

Xuan Yuan Feng rammed his shield into the ground before Fang Ge Que. It was as though a War God was guarding in front of his guildmaster. Enchanted Painting and Lu Chun Yang stood on either side of him. It was clear what they were planning. They were taking a defensive stance. Were they waiting for us to attack?

Wan Er's beautiful eyes stared at our opponents and she said, "Not good. Are they planning on using Xuan Yuan Feng's armor and health for a battle of attrition?"

"A battle of attrition?"

I smiled back. "Alright then. My [Blade Spin] has been thirsty for blood...."

Dong Cheng said, "How should we fight then?"

"Let's stick with what we did before. We'll kill Chang Sheng Jue first and then kill Fang Ge Que. First however, we have to break through the frontline that Xuan Yuan Feng and the others. Pig, you charge first. Qing Qian and I will provide support from the sides!"

"Ok!"

.....

I raised my swords and charged forward. I threw a [Blade Spin] to ambush the opponent's formation. Besides, these five aren't newbies. Lu Chun Yang and Enchanted Painting both shifted to dodge the [Blade Spin]. Fang Ge Que didn't move an inch. He could tell that the [Blade Spin]'s trajectory slightly missed him.....

The moment we arrived before them, Xuan Yuan Feng suddenly opened up his [Dragon Armor]. After that, he pierced his long sword into the ground. At that moment, Wan Er shouted, "Not good!"

[Earth Dragon Surge]

This S tier skill engulfed all three of us. Furthermore, it created a throwback effect. When I finally fell back on the ground, Fang Ge Que activated his [Fire and Ice Storm]. Furthermore, he had already prepared his [God of Fire Formation]!

“Ah...”

Qing Qian’s health emptied. Even after drinking a potion, she died.

Wan Er clenched her teeth and dashed forward with [Blade of the Death God]. She spun around and broke through Enchanted Painting’s [Charm Dance]. The [Blade of the Death God] struck Fang Ge Que’s [Black Tortoise Shield]. At that same time, [Ice Pick Whirlpool]+[Flying Dagger] activated at the same time. I then threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]+[Sword Tempest] while Dong Cheng used her [Flame Beast Burstraid]+[Magma Lance]. Without Qing Qian’s [Grip of the Firefox], however, we couldn’t instantly kill Lu Chun Yang and Enchanted Painting. I quickly activated [Ice Domain]!

“Peng!”

Chang Sheng Jue dodged the attack with a [Anti-Magic Shield]. He had covered everyone in his group. The worst part was, the heal staff in his hand suddenly began to turn. A special skill was activating. A large green character flew up——[Aid Domain]. Fang Ge Que, Lu chun Yang, and Enchanted Painting’s critical health all recovered to 50%!

It’s over...

As I predicted, Enchanted Painting used a [Combo] to kill Wan Er while Fang Ge Que used his [Lightning Eagle Wave] to quickly kill me. The three heavy armor players killed Dong Cheng and we were defeated.

1:1 !

Yet another match point. This fight for the championship was just too intense.

.....

“Shua shua....”

For the last time, we appeared in the tournament room for this Hero’s Wing’s 2017 Cup. This was the last battle. This was the round that would determine

who was the final champion of the Chinese Servers!

Wan Er raised her dagger and said, “Not good. Xuan Yuan Feng, after buffing himself with [Dragon Armor] and [Body of war God], his defense is too high. He won’t budge a single inch. We have to find a new way to cut in. Dong Cheng, this time I’ll activate [Absolute Step] and [God’s Dance] and charge beside Pig. We’ll handle the three heavy armor players. Qing Qian, you use [Absolute Step] and kill Fang Ge Que. Use the element of surprise to stun Fang Ge Que. After that, everyone will focus on killing him. At least, we cannot let him use [God of Fire Formation]. Otherwise all will be too late....”

Dong Cheng nodded, “Ok!”

“3 ! ”

“2 ! ”

“1 ! ”

The battle began!

We split into three groups and spread out. I charged and rammed against Xuan Yuan Feng’s shield. I drove forward with all my strength, forcing him back a few steps. At the same time, I pierced my sword forward. “Keng!” I parried Enchanted Painting’s attack. This girl’s attack power was just too strong. She sprinted forward and rammed her leg against my wrist, canceling my attack and forcing me back. She didn’t let me anywhere near Fang Ge Que. However that was enough. I had already lured the two away.

Qing Qian suddenly appeared among the crowd. She opened a palm, targeting her [Grip of the Firefox] on Fang Ge Que. However it missed. Fang Ge Que had used a [Dimensional Leap] in another direction. But right at that moment, he accidentally took Dong Cheng’s [Lullaby]!

Fang Ge Que was 20 yards out. Besides Chang Sheng Jue, nobody could reach him and so they couldn’t wake him.

Wan Er quickly blocked Lu Chun Yang’s attack. She flew forward and threw a [Gouge], stunning Chang Sheng Jue. Afterwards she yelled, “[Hands of Purgatory]!”



I opened my hand from a distance and successfully bound him!

Wan Er and Qing Qian both charged towards Fang Ge Que. They had to kill him as soon as possible.

Who knew that the moment Fang Ge Que awoke, he dealt a spell, escaping the [Hands of Purgatory]. He waved his hand at me. Blood red hands appeared below me, locking me to the ground.

He then activated another [Dimensional Leap]. Fang Ge Que left a [Fire and Ice Storm] to deal with the two assassin girls. Lu Chun Yang and Enchanted Painting on the other hand charged at them while they still had the advantage, giving up on me.

“We were tricked...” Qing Qian said in the team chat.

Wan Er opened her iron umbrella to block Fang Ge Que’s attack and said, “Even if we die we have to take Fang Ge Que with us. Kill!”

Dong Cheng also threw all of her spells forward. [Magma Lance], [Thunderbolt Finger] and [Flame Beast Burstraid] were all cast. Fang e Que actually managed to remain calm and throw a [Lullaby] into the fray, causing Dong Cheng to fall asleep. Afterwards, he cast a [God of Fire Formation]. In the end, the second Wan Er’s [Blade of the Death God] exploded forth, the two girls died.

We lost three people all at once. Fang Ge Que used his life to take the lives of two of our girls. Furthermore, he used a [Hands of Purgatory] to bind me and make Dong Cheng fall asleep.

Enchanted Painting and Lu Chun Yang both charged at Dong Cheng. They didn’t wake her through hits. Rather, they waitd a few seconds. Afterwards they used [Break Armor Slash]+[Thunderclap Slash] and [Sword Break]+ Level 1 Combo, instantly killing our Dong Cheng. They didn’t even giver her a chance to counter. Xuan Yuan Feng then used a [Ram], stunning our Darling Duck. That plus two normal attacks from Enchanted Painting, even our healer was done for.

It was 1v4 now in the arena.

The [Hands of Purgatory] under my feet slowly disappeared and I could finally open my eyes. Frustration filled my heart. How was I supposed to fight?

# Chapter 671 - A Step Away

“Sha Sha.....”

In the split second when Lu Chun Yang killed off Dong Cheng, I rapidly approached him. My Dragon Reservoir Sword began to glow with a [Wind Blade] and I slashed down at him. Lu Chun Yang reacted quickly and parried the attack with his sword, stopping the attack above his shoulder. At the same time, he slid back half a step, steadying his heart as his sword slowly whirled in front of him, ready to fend off any incoming attacks. This man is truly a deep and hidden expert in swordplay. Compared to Yan Zhao Warrior and Li Mu, those other professionals in the gaming industry, this sword nerd was truly much more knowledgeable about fencing in real life.

Without a second thought, I went on the offensive. I threw my Brilliant Fire Emperor up and caught it, stabbing it forward and piercing through Lu Chun yang’s defense. Simultaneously, I slashed his shoulder with my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I rushed forward threw a kick, crashing my leg guards against his chest plate with a “Bang”. Having received attacks continuously with no chance to fight back, Lu Chun Yang was furious. He roared and activated [Blade Rush]. Immediately after, the edge of his sword vibrated and the image of [Skysaker Slash] appeared.

“You must be looking to die!”

Particles of Dou Qi shined bright as they gathered around my body. Behind me was Enchanted Painting as she tried to release a chain of basic attacks to me. Even though they were painful, Lu Chun Yang was the immediate danger. He raised his long sword, I charged towards him with both my swords raised. “Klang Klang Klang!” Loud vibrations could be heard as I landed three continuous attacks onto his arm. I then lifted my battle boot and with one kick, “Bang!”, the three big words “Successful Skill Break!” appeared. At this moment, even if it were Chang Sheng Jue’s healed the crap out of him, Lu Chun Yang would still .

“Pu Chi.....”

I held the Dragon Reservoir Sword as I released a deep slash onto Lu Chun

Yang's body, and directly penetrated his body and instantly killed him.

However, the violent attacks from Enchanting Painting were still coming towards me. Her blade had a blood-red hue to it. That was the prelude to the [Armor Break Slash] Skill! Once I was hit by the [Armor Break Slash], my defense would steeply decrease and I would definitely be unable to stop attacks from her and Xuan Yuan Feng. I clenched my teeth and braced myself as I slashed out horizontally with my Brilliant Fire Emperor. "Pa!" There was a loud sound as it clashed with her sword, closing towards my body. I used my Dragon Reservoir Sword and heavily landed a hit on her wrist. This was yet another move from the Pulse Break Style.

Enchanting Painting's lip twitched upwards as though she had already predicted that I would have such a reaction. I could only see a slip of her leg and she had suddenly changed directions, causing my third attack to miss. In that split second, I immediately cancelled my third attack as I raised both swords horizontally to block Enchanting Painting's [Skysaker Slash]. My health dropped another chunk as I had less than fifteen thousand health left.

Just behind me, a strong wind blew towards me as Xuan Yuan Feng's [Heroic Ram] came my way!

Enchanting Painting leapt upwards, using the height advantage to increase her own power, as she fought against me, lifting her sword with both hands she pressed downwards with unimaginable force.

"Klang!"

With my Brilliant Fire Emperor resisting her long sword, the immense strength left me with no way to retaliate. Slowly, my body was being forced downwards and with a "Pa" sound, my leg guards broke the limestone boards beneath my feet. I saw an opening and dove forward into a roll. At that moment, not only did I cause Xuan Yuan Feng to miss his [Heroic Ram] but I also caused him to ram directly into Enchanting Picture. At that time, Enchanting Painting's face turned green, "Ah! F\*ck, Xuan Yuan Feng you big idiot!"

Xuan Yuan Feng could only stare on blankly. By then, I had already gotten up and raised my right leg. I kicked the back of Enchanting Painting's legs causing her to lose balance. I then used [Cleansing Rain] to heal myself a bit. With this, I

had regained a bit of my health.... I then swung both of my swords as I slashed thrice onto Enchanting Painting's shoulder.

"7281 ! "

"7413 ! "

"7172 ! "

.....

Enchanted Painting was already at critical health. She shouted, "Chang Sheng Jue, [Aid Domain]!"

The healer behind her activated his large scale skill and he activated a [Grip of Compassion] for a good measure. At that moment, two large heal numbers flew up above Enchanted Painting's head——

" +17311 ! "

" +13218 ! "

.....

Motherf\*cker, this is going to be a hard battle....

Xuan Yuan Feng used a [Ram]. His spear began to flash with the effect of [Skysaker Stab] and it pierced through my chest armor. Enchanted Painting's long sword continuously pierced critical points with terrifying accuracy. With both people attacking, my health quickly dropped to ten thousand.

I glanced at my rage. After receiving a barrage of attacks, I recovered 30 points of health. That was enough for a small special skill.

"Keng" My Brilliant Fire Emperor parried a normal attack. I then slashed my Dragon Reservoir Sword and dealt three cuts. Enchanted Painting's pretty face was covered with surprise. She never would have thought that my normal attack would have such explosive power. She quickly began gathering the energy of [Thunderclap Slash].

Right as the [Thunderclap Slash] fell upon my head, I raised my left arm and targeted a stone pillar on the other side. "Pa!" my Dragon's Hook pierced through the pillar and dragged me forward. Like that, I dodged Enchanted

Painting's slash.

Without any hesitation, I dodged the next attack and raised my arm. I then activated my special skill——[Defeat the Dragon]!

“Shua!”

Enchanted Painting was suddenly dragged over to me. I swung both swords and threw another three cuts. I had instantly killed her. However, Enchanted Painting didn't just sit and wait to die. Her blade began to glow and she threw a slash into my chest plate!

“11287 ! ”

“Wu....” Enchanted Painting fell. Her beautiful eyes were filled with doubt and disbelief. She seemed to notice as well that there was a small chance that I would win in this 4v1. However, she still managed to cut down my health. Now, I was down to a pitiful 4000.

.....

In the distance, Xuan Yuan Feng activated [Haste], increasing his movement speed. He charged forward with the fully healed Chang Sheng Jue.

I glanced at my cooldown situation. [Strength of a Thousand Men],[Combo], and [Great Realm of Desolation] were both finished with their cooldowns. With a round of these skills, I'll see if I can drain any more health back. Otherwise, I'll truly not have any chance left!

I raised my sword and charged forward. The second Xuan Yuan Feng threw out his [Halberd Flame]. I leapt up. My Brilliant Fire Emperor gripped his halberd. I threw a kick at his arm. I then raised both swords and threw a downwards cut!

“Successful Skill Break!”

.....

“Huh?” Xuan Yuan Feng was stunned and retreated continuously. He entered a sluggish state for a short moment. It was short because it was less than a second and was practically impossible to react quickly enough

In that moment, my body started to glow red. It was the effect of a Heavenly

Tier skill, level 11 [Combo]. This was a Level 11 [Great Realm of Desolation] that fell upon Xuan Yuan Feng's enormous shield. At the same time, I threw two normal attacks. "Keng Keng!" I rammed his shield away, exposing Xuan Yuan Feng's chestplate. Power began to rise below my feet. An S rank Combo was activated [Strength of a Thousand Men]!

As the attack swept out, an extremely strong force exploded out. I also managed to drain back quite a bit of health. However, every time I attacked, Xuan Yuan Feng's armor would reflect a fraction of the damage back to me. Making it so that the health that I was draining back wasn't enough to cover the damage that was being reflected. At least 40% of the close combat attacks were being reflected. Who knew when this piece of trash switched his equipment!

The moment I killed Xuan Yuan Feng, I used a [Cleansing Rain]. After receiving all of that [Reflect] damage, I had less than 2000 health. Motherf\*cker, who would've thought that the last scene of this Chinese Server Hero's Wing's Cup would be that of a porcupine....

"Wu...."

Xuan Yuan Feng slowly fell to his knees as he flashed a dying smile, "You've still lost...."

"Huh?"

I looked up and saw Chang Sheng Jue charging over with his staff. He's just a healer. How could I lose in a 1v1? Even if my health was kind of low...

I raised both swords and dealt two attacks onto Chang Sheng Jue!

"Keng keng...."

"13127 ! "

" +2625 ! "

"11378 ! "

" +2275 ! "

.....

I drained 7000 health back. I have a chance!

I raised my boot and threw a kick onto Chang Sheng Jue's staff. It was so strong that it threw him backwards!

"Peng!"

Chang Sheng Jue was nearly at critical health. He slid back ten meters. All of my skills were in a six second cool down and my rage was at 4 points. I could only deal normal attacks now.

It was right at that moment that Chang Sheng Jue slowly stood up. He suddenly raised his staff. The tip of the staff began to heat up with a fiery glow. It was really a fire skill. It was a spell that Healers could learn at Level 100. The worst part was that once Chang Sheng Jue released this [Fire of Earth] skill, he actually had several needles appear in his hand!

My heart sunk. I could tell that the situation was falling out of my favor....

"Shua!"

The silver needles were seeped with poison to add on the [Fire of Earth]. These two skills fell upon me. They were both targeted skills. No matter how good I was at maneuvering, I couldn't dodge them.

"3217 ! "

"3728 ! "

.....

I still had 100+ health. Alright!

I raised my long sword. Right as my [Blade Spin] left my hand, I noticed that the face of my reflection was purple. I was poisoned?

The [Poisoned Needles]!

"1500 ! "

"1500 ! "

I had taken two hits from the poison effect. My entire body went soft and I fell over...

.....

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations Team Fang Ge Que for becoming the champion of the Hero’s Wing’s Cup. Also, congratulations to Team Xiao Yao Zi Zai for winning second place!

.....

“Shua!”

I was teleported out of the arena and then teleported out of the interface for the Hero’s Wing’s Cup. I appeared in the Tian Ling City. Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Qing Qian and Darling Duck appeared by my side. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword. It was still covered in blood. The blood of Enchanted Painting, Lu Chun Yang, and Xuan Yuan Feng.

“F\*ck, so it’s just going to end like that?” Dong Cheng bit her lip, “This is so frustrating. We paid too great of a price for killing Fang Ge Que....”

Qing Qian narrowed her eyes, “Brother Xiao Yao managed to kill three of [Legend]’s main forces. Even though he missed by just a little at the end, I still think that it was enough to make Fang Ge Que become more cautious of us. There’s only a step now between [Zhan Long] and the championship. We will definitely become winners in the coming years!”

I nodded, “There’s no need to be impatient. We still have a chance to fight in the Global Cup!”

“Yes!”

.....

When I logged off, I put my gaming helmet into my bag. Our team picked up our belongings and walked out of the area. We were welcomed by a thunderous applause. Outside the arena, several zealous fans screamed Fang Ge Que’s ID. Of course, quite a few were also shouting my ID. Our performance at this year’s Hero’s Cup Tournament had gained us quite a few fans.... Ah that’s right, our dream wasn’t to rule the world.... Well there’s no matter. Fighting for the weak, that’s something you can only claim when you are strong enough.



# Chapter 672 - Hatred of Marriage

Amidst the ovation, Fei Er stood up and smiled as she announced, “Congratulations Fang Ge Que, well fought Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Good job to everyone who participated in this 2017 Hero’s Wings Cup! The champions of the Chinese Server have been chosen. Following this will be the Rewards event....However, there isn’t a physical reward for the First, Second and Third place winners. Your rewards will be given after the competition!”

I was slightly speechless. I brought the girls along with me and walked off the stage.

Li Mu, Wang Jian and Wolf all ran over to congratulate us. Meng Yao smiled, “Brother, you’re so strong! You came in second!”

I smiled, “Am I?”

“Yup!”

“Then Meng Yao, you have to work hard too! Fight for a better future for [Zhan Long]!”

“Yes!”

.....

At that moment, the screen listed out the rewards for the top three teams. In the Championship team, everyone got Level+5, Charm+50. In Second Place, everyone got Level+4, Charm+35, and in Third, everyone got Level+3, Charm+25. All in all, even though there wasn’t a material reward, the level and the charm reward was well worth it.

All top 32 teams had a chance to enter a lotto for their rewards. Meng Yao, Wolf, and Old K all walked onto the stage to draw for their rewards. The lowest reward was a Saint Tier equipment. When it reached the top eight, Ye Lai, Yan Zhao Warrior and Mu Xuan were actually able to draw Divine Tier equipment. As fourth place, Jian Feng Han drew a Divine Tier Armor. It raised his defense quite a bit too. To top it off, he had a defense special skill that increased his vitality. It was a good piece of equipment.

Li Mu leaned against his chair as he squinted at the people on the stage and said, “Just now I secretly asked Fei Er and she said that the International Championship will be held a month from now. In other words, there’s still another month left for you and Miss Lin and the others to level up and obtain better equipment. Guildmaster, what do you plan on doing this month?”

I couldn’t help but smile, “What else? I’ll go along with whatever the game develops... Let’s start off with strengthening the Dragon’s Den first. We need to effectively utilize this player city to strengthen [Zhan Long]. However, there’s one thing I’m worried about....”

Wang Jian smiled, “Brother Xiao Yao, what are you worried about?”

I replied, “This time, [Zhan Long]’s main team ranked second in the Chinese Server Championships. This will probably shake the trees a bit. There isn’t a single virtuous soul in [House of Prestige] and [Flying Dragon]. In the next thirty days, they won’t let [Zhan Long] remain peaceful. And so, for the next month, [Zhan Long] will have to keep a low profile.”

Li Mu smiled, “Then what if we can’t help it?”

I looked at him and smiled, “Then we’ll have a high profile. Even if we were to pierce a hole in the sky, it is just a hole.”

“Haha!”

.....

Dancing Forest walked over, “Boss, you got second place. When you’re in the International Cup, you have to fight even harder! Also, you are treating us to dinner tonight, right?”

Dong Cheng saved me and said, “Nah, isn’t the Hero’s Wing’s Cup holding a banquet for everyone tonight?”

Dancing Forest smiled and shook her head, “Let’s not. Everyone’s saying they want a big dinner celebration, besides.... We’ll be eating with Soaring Dragon, Fierce Tiger and Jian Feng Han at the banquet. Wouldn’t that be awkward?”

Jian Feng Han scoffed at us from a distance.

I shook my head, “That’s true. Nevermind then, I’ll treat everyone. Either way,

I haven't spent any of the million that I won from Q-Sword."

Q-Sword's mouth twitched when he heard me.

Wan Er said, "Alright alright. Be quiet and listen to Fei Er..... The final event is starting..."

And so, the final event began. Leaders and players walked onto the stage to give speeches. The mature Yan Zhao stood up as well to give a speech. Naturally, there was no way to compare the speeches made by a middle aged uncle and us youngsters. His speech was well structured and it was well received by the sponsors. At the end of the final event, it was around five o'clock in the evening. Everyone began preparing for the final banquet. I went and gave a heads up to the event organizers and took the players of [Zhan Long] out to dinner.

.....

The Hero's Wings Cup. This was the highest honor in the gaming world. It was also the most desired honor for any player that had dreams of becoming a champion. Before today, even though I was confident in my skills, I was still restless. I was afraid that under unfortunate circumstances I would let this opportunity slip away. But now I could finally put those to rest. In a tournament filled with experts, we allowed [Zhan Long]'s flag to fly in the sky with pride. We had not wasted this honor.

And so, after the fierce battle, everyone needed a good chance to relax. Our dinner lasted four hours into the night. We drank, ate meat and chatted about everything, from small jokes to plans for the future. I could see the subtle relationships between our members. Old K didn't leave Dancing Forest's side. Even though he seemed to be obnoxiously loud, he was secretly helping Dancing Forest drink. He would even bring her favorite dishes to her side. Everything pointed to the fact that our Old K was starting to grow affections for her.

"Cough cough....."

Wolf picked up his chopsticks and said, "I want some Hot and Sour Fish.... Old K can you spin it over to me...."

Old K glared at him, “Can’t you see that Dancing Forest is eating it right now? Will it kill you to have a bite less?”

Wolf smiled, “I will die if I have a bite less, you want to fight me!”

Wang Jian chuckled, “Little Dance, have you ever had a man outside of your father treat you so well in your life? If I were you, I’d marry him...”

Dancing Forest was quiet for a few seconds and said, “Wang Jian, looks like your hatred for marriage hasn’t died yet. How about you marry him instead....”

Qing Qian piped up, “That’s right, you two together....”

Old K was stunned, “Melon, don’t you join in on this....”

Wei Liang added, “Sister, what do you think Old K’s chances with Little Dance are?”

Qing Qian replied, “Less than 10%?”

Dancing Forest grinned and looked at Old K, “Actually.... Old K is honest and considerate. On top of that, he’s completely healthy and doesn’t have any defects. He would have been fine, but I....”

I nearly spat out my beer and said, “You’re saying that he’s honest and considerate? Last time when we were singing at the KTV, he even took their napkins and brought a small bottle to take soap back. He didn’t even forget the toothpicks and brought them all back. If it wasn’t for Wolf and I, he would’ve taken the girl at the front desk too....”

Old K’s face nearly turned green, “Looks like I can’t have brothers like you ever again...”

Wan Er tried hard not to laugh. She gently knocked against my shoulder and said, “Idiot, don’t roast him now, tell me all the details later!”

I jokingly nodded.

Everyone had drank a little too much. Li Mu’s face was starting to turn flush. He raised a cup of vodka and said, “Alright, after knowing everyone for so long, it’s only natural that our affections grow. If you can be together, then be together. If you aren’t suited for each other, then just say it outright. Today is a good day. Now that [Zhan Long]’s main team has entered the top three. Who

else wants to confess, confess? After today, people will act as though nothing had ever happened.”

After saying that, Li Mu’s face turned a deeper shade of red and he turned to Dancing Forest, “Actually, I like you too...”

Dancing Forest was speechless.....”

Star Blade said, “Actually... I kind of like Meng Yao...”

Meng Yao was stunned. She sat there, unsure of what to do. Wan Er smiled “Then you’ve got to ask what they think....”

Star Blade nodded. He stared right at Meng Yao and said, “Meng Yao, I like you. I know that you are guildmaster’s sister, but I still like you. That won’t change anything about my feelings for you!”

Meng Yao grabbed a cup of vodka and gulped it down. Her face was starting to turn a little flush as well, “Thank you for your feelings, but I’m not looking to date anyone anytime soon. Thank you!”

Star Blade nodded with a smile, “Ok, there’s no need to be polite. I don’t want anything from you. I just want to tell you that I like you. It doesn’t even matter if it amounts to nothing in the end. All that counts is that I have liked you and I was able to let you know. I don’t want to leave any regrets.”

Wolf looked at me, “Brother Xiao Yao, you aren’t going to say anything?”

I raised a cup and said, “Star Blade, you’re right. Men shouldn’t be cowardly, nor should we feel shamed. Even if we’re ridiculed or others look down at us, at least we can say that we were brave.”

“Yup, guildmaster, cheers!”

.....

Fox smiled and let out a chuckle, “And here I thought something was wrong. That little Li is such a prideful kid. I thought you might say something like what Guan Yu Said, ‘You think my daughter will like you?’”

TL Note: Guan Yu is a famous general from the Three Kingdoms

“That’s not possible. I’m not Guan Yu and Star Blade isn’t Sun Chuan...”

“That is true, that is true.”

.....

Our festivities went on until eleven at night. All of us staggered back to the hotel together.

I was still relatively sober. I sent Wan Er and Dong Cheng back to their rooms. I didn't go back to my room until I finished ensuring everyone's safety, especially for the girls. At the same time, I remained vigilant. It seemed that as a bodyguard, this type of caution had already seeped into my bones.

Right as I turned around the corner, I suddenly felt a presence change. Huh, is someone planning an attack!?

I quickly hid my presence and dashed over. When I walked through the hall, I suddenly found Jian Feng Han and Fallen Wolf standing across from each other. It looks like those two were originally reading, but were interrupted by something. In front of Jian Feng Han, it was none other than [Legend]'s Xuan Yuan Feng. Jian Feng Han coldly smiled, “Xuan Yuan Feng, what are you doing? Who did you say was the miserable fourth place?”

Xuan Yuan Feng waved his hand casually and said, “That's right. That's exactly what I said. Fourth Place. You don't even have the right to participate in the Global Tournament. Was I wrong? Jian Feng Han, you've always acted arrogant in Ba Huang City. You nearly declared yourself as king. Guess you never thought that your true worth would be revealed in the Hero's Wing's Cup?”

Fury boiled in Jian feng Han's stomach. All of a sudden, he roared, “Xuan Yuan Feng, what the f\*ck are you talking about? Are you trying to provoke me?”

Xuan Yuan Feng crossed his arms and smiled, “So what if I am?”

Behind Xuan Yuan Feng, Fang Ge Que turned himself around in his wheelchair and softly said, “That's enough. Xuan Yuan Feng, don't go around stirring up trouble. Jian Feng Han is already not feeling well. As a player, you should know the feeling of defeat. Don't go picking at other's wounds.”

Xuan Yuan Feng said, “I just can't stand seeing his attitude. He thinks that just because his maneuvers are good that he doesn't have to respect anyone else!”

Jian Feng Han exploded in anger. He reached out and grabbed a newspaper rack and threw it at Xuan Yuan Feng.

Xuan Yuan Feng had a strong body and so he raised his arm to block the incoming projectile. “Peng!” He had actually been pushed all the way against the wall by this newspaper rack. Not once did he think that Jian Feng Han would be so strong in real life. The force behind that small newspaper rack was enough to deal serious injury to a person.

“F\*ck, you actually dare raise your hand against me?”

Xuan Yuan Feng stood up and roared.

“Shua!”

Jian Feng Han swiftly picked up the wooden coffee table and threw it at his opponent. He shouted, “F\*ck off!”

.....

Fang Ge Que was right behind Xuan Yuan Feng. He was paralyzed and couldn't easily move. Jian Feng Han was blinded by his fury and didn't stop to think about how he may hurt Fang Ge Que.

Fear struck my heart and I dashed forward. I swept out my right hand to help Fang Ge Que block!

“Peng!”

The coffee table was smashed to bits. I quietly stood among the flying wooden splinters and calmly looked at Jian Feng Han, “Your training, was it all for the sake of bullying others?”

Xuan Yuan Feng was stunned. Only then did he realize that Jian Feng Han's strength wasn't something that he could deal with. Fang Ge Que slowly rolled his wheelchair towards me and said, “Li Xiao Yao, thank you....”

Jian Feng Han looked down at his hands. It looked as though he was feeling some regret.

I quietly said, “Nevermind. It was just a small thing.”

“Yes.” Jian Feng Han nodded. He then looked at Fang Ge Que and said, “I

apologize. I was too rash just now.”

Fang Ge Que warmly smiled, “It’s no problem. Xuan Yuan Feng, let’s return.”

“Alright.”

Fang Ge Que turned around and smiled to me again. It was only then that I slowly relaxed my arm. That coffee table was really d\*mn hard. My arm was actually hurting a little.

.....

I returned to my room and went to sleep. Tomorrow, I was going back to Hang Zhou.

The following morning, I saw Li Mu, Wang Jian, Meng Yao and the others off at the bus stop headed for the airport before turning the car around to return to Hangzhou with Wan Er, Dong Cheng and Tang Qi. The Hero’s Wings Cup has finally come to an end for the Chinese region. While our results are definitely quite acceptable, we’re still going to have to double our efforts over this coming month. In just 30 more days, the true finale Hero’s Wings Worlds will take place. And by then, we won’t be fighting just for the sake of [Zhan Long] but the entirety of China.

.....

We arrived at Hangzhou around 11 o’clock and had lunch around 12 before going online in the afternoon.

Whoosh!

I spawned inside Tian Ling City. I glanced at my stats window to confirm my level; Lv 123. The sixth class advancement isn’t until level 150 so there’s still a ways to go huh. Oh well, no hurries, I’ll go at my own pace. After getting my equipment repaired, I decided to stock up on some tier 10 herbs over at the Eastern City Gates. I figure it’s time to level my skills a bit.

Not long after, a chime sounded in the game; ah, it’s from my private cell phone. The ingame HUD displayed the caller ID—— Shen Bing.

For Shen Bing to call... something must’ve happened at the Base! Promptly answering, Shen Bing’s cheery voice was transmitted over——



“HIIII!!! Congratulations, Special Ops Squad Leader Li, for achieving second place in the [ Heroes’ Wings Cup] with your harem. Don’t forget to treat us comrades to a meal too, alright?”

I couldn’t hold back a chuckle, “Shen Bing-jie, please don’t tease me!”

Shen Bing laughed, “What? When did I ever tease you! Oh right, you do know that a lot of our Special Ops members also play [Destiny] too right? There’s a rumor that it helps with bringing out our brains’ untapped potential. So anyway, everyone only has admiration for you now. You see how I’m doing in [Thousand Burial]? Not worth mentioning whatsoever. We barely even reached the top 256 before getting kicked out! Pisses me off so much..... Wei Fan and You Yi... these 2 nimrods practically made every category in the 13 levels of stupidity.....”

I politely coughed twice, “Shen Bing-jie, let’s not be too vulgar..... This is still an official call alright? Did we get a new order from above? I don’t think you’d call me for no reason.”

Shen Bin’s voice turned serious, “Mmmhm. Be here within an hour. And bring ‘that’ with you. There’s a big mission for us.”

“Got it!”

.....

After ending the call, I sent Wan Er a message: “Wan Er, I need to return to Base for a bit. There’s work to do.”

She immediately replied, “Be extra careful and come back soon! No matter what, your safety comes first, Piggy.....”

“Yea I know, don’t worry. Don’t forget, my martial arts are the best in the world!”

“.....”

.....

When I logged off, I took the password secured trunk out from under my bed. After unlocking it, I quickly equipped myself with two combat knives and a M9 pistol as well as several spare magazines; grabbing Xiao Hei last. I felt a wave of

nostalgia wash over me as I gripped the familiar hilt. It is said that a subtle synergy exists between a sword and its wielder, which seemed to be true. This feeling has been intensifying over time as my cultivation continuously became more and more refined. Just like Gramps said before, with the progression of my cultivation, the sword will integrate with me more and more until it becomes an extension of my body; able to unleash even greater lethality than ever before with the most casual of swings.

I went downstairs after wrapping Xiao Hei in a black cloth. Hopping into the A4, I sped out of the Liú Huá University premises accompanied by the sound of a roaring V6 engine. Gotta admit, it's become so much more convenient now that I have my own car.

Ten minutes later, I arrived at the Base. The trooper on lookout recognized my car and saluted me with a smile, "Squad Leader, you're here!"

"Yea."

I stopped in the parking lot and walked towards the debriefing room, Xiao Hei in hand. Located underneath a water tower surrounded by a vegetation landscape, the conference building exterior is normally overgrown with plants and grape ivy. Since winter was almost here, the ivy had already withered. Despite that, it was still an otherworldly sight.

Creak.....

The door opened and Shen Bing, in a trim police uniform, greeted me with a smile, "Hurry it up! Everyone's been waiting for you!"

"Okay!"

I quickened my pace and followed Shen Bing down the long corridor leading to the building's depths. The debriefing room is located on Basement Level 3. Inside the well illuminated room sat approximately 37 heavily armed Special Ops members. After we suffered those losses from the previous couple missions, we received quite a bit of reinforcements. Some were even pulled over here straight from the Special Forces.

Captain Wang, who was working next to the projector, raised up his head upon my entry, "You're here? Take a seat."

I went and sat at the very front.

“We received intel just now. This evening at 18:00, Wei Fan’s henchman, You Yi, will be representing him at drug trade taking place on a boat under Bridge #16 over at Yanjiang Avenue. Our intel gauges that it will be a large scale exchange with an estimated value of around \$100 million RMB.” Captain Wang gives a short rundown of tonight’s mission.

I couldn’t stop myself from frowning, “Blood Scythe is extending its hand into the drug trade now?”

“It has been all along.”

Captain Wang continued, “Basically all the drugs in the illegal nightspots of north Hangzhou are supplied by Blood Scythe. Wei Fan is not the type to be satisfied with just the earnings from bars and night clubs.”

Someone near me interjected, “Captain, isn’t this a job for the Drug Enforcement Agency (DEA)?”

“Officially, yes... it is.” Captain Wang admitted, “But with circumstances as is, the involvement of Blood Scythe and the one identified as ‘You Yi’ means that the Artificials will definitely show up as well. By themselves, the DEA will just be sitting ducks for the slaughter. Therefore we’ll be cooperating with them this time. Also, the Nanjing Military will be sending some people over too so this operation will be a coordinated effort by three different units.”

“Nanjing Military?” Doubts rose up within in me.

“Yes. It shouldn’t be a problem. They should be here any time now.”

The corner of the Captain’s lips faintly curled up.

.....

Not even 10 minutes later, we heard a ruckus in the corridor. Subsequently, another band of heavily armed personnel entered the room. Out of the approximately 20 men, one who looked to be the leader walked forward and saluted the Captain, “Nanjing Special Ops 3rd Unit Squad Leader Qian Ling and his men reporting for duty, Sir. We are 20 men total. All equipped with assault weaponry and nano-ammunitions.

Captain Wang acknowledged their presence, “Good. You all are finally here. We’re doing the strategic planning right now.”

While speaking, he pointed at the projector display behind him. “The skies should be dark by 6pm. Bridge #16 is poorly illuminated so visibility will be an issue. According to the intel, the exchange will take place onboard an old cargo ship. We’ll be splitting up into 3 groups. The DEA group will be responsible for clearing out pedestrians and unrelated personnel from the area. Nanjing Ops group will prepare an ambush onshore and block off all escape routes. And the Hangzhou Ops group will board the ship and suppress their firepower asap. Complete your mission”

I immediately asserted my support, “Yes, Sir!”

However, a faint smirk appeared on Qian Ling’s face. He crushed a cigarette butt with his foot and voiced his disapproval, “Captain, I believe you’re making a mistake here.....”

A bit puzzled, Captain Wang inquired, “Where did we go wrong?”

“The 20 of us here are elites that were handpicked by General Sun Xiang. We are here... to be the vanguard for this operation. Not to admire the scenery on the sidelines!” Qian Ling declared.

Then turning towards me, with a look of casual contempt, he continued, “I’ve heard of the ‘Monster of Hangzhou’ Li Xiao Yao; You’re rumoured to be an incredible fighter and the most capable subordinate. But I insist that we be assigned the task of vanguard for this operation.”

The Captain lets out a sigh, “Squad Leader Qian. You should already know that Artificials are not your average criminals...”

“Of course I know!”

Qian Ling interrupted and raised an arm. A stream of qi is coiling around his fist, as he impertinently smiled, “Why else do you think we are here?”

What a surprise! This Qian Ling is, at the very least, a middle stage Qi Controller. Really now, China really is full of hidden dragons and crouching tigers. Just in this bustling city alone, who knows how many unknown practitioners there were mingling within the normal population!

Captain Wang turned towards me, "Squad Leader Li, what's your opinion on this?"

I couldn't help but frown once more, "Since Squad Leader Qian insists on it, let his group take vanguard position."

"Then it's settled."

Currently, next to me is my Assistant Squad Leader, Xing Lie; hailed as the top Expert marksman in Hangzhou. And right now, he is pouting, "Tsk. You sure talk the talk. But in the end, isn't it just a grab for more credit?"

I immediately warned him in a strict tone, "Xing Lie. Quiet."

"Yes, Chief....."

The Captain's eyes swept across the room, "Since no one else has any suggestions, everyone start preparing right now. We'll move out at 15:00 to set up ahead of time. Immediately after we spring the ambush, there will be a communications jam imposed on the surrounding 5 kilometers. We'll also run systemic electric pulse scans to detect any explosive devices they may have. Understood?"

"YES, SIR!"

.....

I swapped on an entire set Spec Ops equipment; badge glistening in a cold light on my chest. With a "Shiiiiing", Xiao Hie slid into the sheath on my back. Next was to check the condition of my ammo and melee arms. At this moment, Shen Bing casually strolled over; a cryptic smile plastered over her face. Her stare is as if her eyes are trying to bore a hole through me, "I won't be joining you guys on this operation since I'll only be a burden. So you better pay extra attention to your safety, you little punk! You must come hopping back in the same condition as when you left, alright?"

I flashed her a fearless grin, "Don't need to worry about me. There's still a [Zhan Long] waiting back home for me to lead round....."

"Haha, you're such an adorable troublemaker....."

"....."

.....

Out in the parking lot were 5 vehicles waiting for us. Among them, 3 were shabby plain vans that looked like they're from a scrapyard. Truth was, they were normal vans disguised as such in order to enable us to 'stealth' our way through the city. Next was a cargo truck; an SF Express model. The exterior was also worn down to an exaggerated degree. The last one was a brand new Cadillac.

Captain Wang got in the driver's seat of the Cadillac then turned to me, "Li Xiao Yao. You guys take the SF Express truck. I too, wish you all luck on this mission.

Now's my turn to pout, "What's with the difference in treatment....."

"Haha, stop trying to be glib. Hurry up and go!"

"Yes, Sir!"

.....

Onboard the broken down truck, a total of 25 men from the Hangzhou Special Ops were gathered here. These men were going to be under my direct command during this operation.

Ten of them were solemnly sat in the back, gripping the riot shields in their hands.

Taking a closer look at these shields, I rapped my knuckle against one, "Can these shields... actually defend against the Artificials' claws?"

Xing Lie laughs, "These shields are reinforced by rare and extremely tough metal alloys. There should be no problems holding off Class C Artificials. But Class B's are untested territory for now."

I couldn't dispute that, "Class B's are far stronger than C's. To an almost scary degree, in fact. No matter what, everyone stay on your toes!"

"Understood! But chief, since we're the rearguard team this time, we might not get a chance to make an appearance. I heard rumors that Qian Ling is pretty powerful..."

Biting down on my lips, I looked towards everyone, "Well no matter, pay

attention to your surroundings.”

“YES, CHIEF!”

# Chapter 674 - Mission Failed

The vehicle weaved in and out of the city at a speed neither too fast nor too slow. After we traversed for close to 3 hours, this worn-out truck finally arrived at the #16 bridge over at Yanjiang Avenue just slightly before 6.00pm. This bridge looked to be on the verge of ruins. Out of the many lights on the bridge, only a few were still light albeit rather dimly. Below the bridge was a stretch of gloomy darkness. In the far distance, the river distinctly reflected the rays of the setting sun, it was as though the river had turned into liquid gold

.....

The headlights of the car had already been dark for some time when Captain Wang's voice was heard from the walkie-talkie. "Li Xiao Yao, bring your men and lay an ambush in the underbrush beside the river. You must be absolutely quiet so as not to attract the attention of the men on the bridge. The moment squad 1 fails, you immediately rush in to attack."

"Understood!"

With a wave of a hand, I said to my squad members behind me, "Follow me and do not make a sound."

After which, I slowly pushed opened the trunk of the car and crawled onto the ground with barely any sound at all. Behind me, Xing Lie brought the rest of the police members out of the vehicle, and we walked together slowly as a group to the dried ferns next to the river as we prepared an ambush. Similarly too, it was at this moment that 4 Honda CR-Vs slowly came to a stop at the far end beside the river. Shortly after, over 20 men could be seen exiting the vehicles. Amongst them, two could be seen carrying a password secured case. They did not seem to carry anything that gave off light as they were walking with rather heavy steps.

.....

Xing Lie squinted his eyes as he said, "Boss, Captain Wang mentioned that this exchange was worth at least \$100 million RMB but looking at the current



situation, those two cases don't seem large enough to fit \$100 million RMB?"

"Maybe they're using gold bars, diamonds and the like to do the transaction?"  
I responded.

"En, that could be possible....."

"Ka Cha!" The sound of someone loading a bullet could be heard from beside me as one of the SWAT members prepared his gun, and aimed it at the men in the distance who were waiting to board the ship. I silently warned him, "Don't be reckless! Our mission is to provide support and not to be the vanguard! If anyone were to act on their own accord, I won't let that person off!"

That brat just laughed sneakily as he replied, "Captain Li, just relax. I understand what to do!"

.....

I crawled stealthily in the underbrush as I lifted my binoculars to get a better look of the situation. Under the dim light, I could see a very familiar-looking man wearing a jacket amongst the group of more than 20 men. En, his cheekbones were rather high, short-haired, a face filled with cruelty, that's You Yi. That was truly the only vice-guildmaster of [Thousand Burial] and in reality, one of the most important members of Blood Scythe. Seems like Wei Fan placed a lot of importance on this transaction, otherwise, he would not send You Yi to personally take part.

"Sha Sha....."

You Yi looked around as he stepped on some frail grass patches with his leather shoes before he coldly said, "Has everything been checked? This transaction involves a lot of money, don't mess this up. I've also heard that there has been some movement from the Hangzhou Police Force and they've been following us closely. Boss has also said, if this particular transaction were to meet any issues, he'll take us in for questioning. If it comes to that, don't even talk about covering for you, I probably will not be able to save myself."

A youth with yellow hair snickered, "Brother You should relax. We've been watching the perimeter for a good few days, no one else is here. Even now, we have brothers on the watch ....."

“That better be the case. Why hasn’t that Malaysian gay dude arrived yet?”

“Hasn’t he already arrived?”

The yellow-haired youth then stretched out his hand and pointed into the distance. Sure enough, a yacht could be seen gently approaching in the darkness. None of its lights were on and under the night sky, it looked just like a white leaf floating on the surface of the river. Even after passing beside a rather rundown ship by the river, the ship still hadn’t turned any lights on.

You Yi narrowed his eyes as he said, “Check with our brothers who are patrolling the area again. If there aren’t any issues, we can then proceed with the transaction. Prepare the car so that we can retreat any time. I’m having a rather uneasy feeling about this.”

“Brother You, you’re being too oversensitive! Just relax!”

The yellow-haired youth whipped out his handphone and started to call a few numbers to confirm. One of the men who received the call was standing just right in front of the ferns where we lay ambush. He had jeans on and was currently by the river relieving himself. As soon as the call came, he hurriedly took his handphone out and chuckled, “Brother Sen, there is no movement here. Relax, I’ve been standing here for the whole afternoon and I have not even seen as much as a shadow.”

I took in a deep breath as I lowered my voice to speak into the walkie-talkie. “See that? Little Lie, I want you to equip your silencer onto your gun and take this guy out when Qian Ling’s team starts intercepting.”

Xing Lie nodded his head as he replied, “Understood! But Boss, this brat is only just a lackey on sentry duty. Is there really a need to take him out?”

I clenched my teeth as I said, “ Don’t harbor any feelings of pity for the members in Blood Scythe. In Blood Scythe, there is no one we should spare. I don’t want you guys to meet any accidents as we have lost far too many men already.”

“En, I understand!”

.....

Captain Wang's voice sounded over the walkie talkie, "Squad Leader Qian of Squad 1, prepare to move out! Squad Leader Li of Squad 2, stay in cover as you wait for an opportunity to strike. Squad 3, prepare Armor-Piercing Shells and aim them at the engine of the yacht. Wait for my orders before striking. I want this to succeed in one try and not give them any time or strength to retreat. The moment our operation starts, three Changehe Z-18 helicopters will reach our position in 5 minutes to provide lighting as well as reinforcements."

As Xing Lie heard this, his face turned blank. "We are even using military helicopters for this? Aren't we overestimating the strength of the scum from Blood Scythe?"<sup>3</sup>

I explained, "Blood Scythe has already caused so much disruption and trouble in Hangzhou and her surroundings. We should have made a move much earlier. All of you better be fully alert, we are not fighting against humans."

Behind me, a few members who had just joined the squad looked at each other in dismay, as they seemed to have issues trying to digest what I had just said. However, they should have known about the existence of Artificials before they entered our squad. It was just simply that they had not witnessed the capabilities of the Artificials.

.....

As I saw You Yi board the boat with roughly 20 men, I retrieved a MP5 submachine gun from behind my back. I held my breath as I looked at the commotion that happened in the distance. Winter was coming and with it came strong and extremely cold winds.

"They've moved....." Xing Lie said through his teeth as he gazed into the distance.

True enough, a group of men geared in black could be seen following the reeds by the river as they charged towards the cargo ship. Amongst the group, Qian Ling could be seen leading the team in the front with a submachine gun raised in his hands. With this, I ordered, " Little Lie, attack!"

Xing Lie immediately pulled the trigger. With a soft "pu" sound, the youth on sentry duty in front of us slowly collapsed onto the floor with a gunshot through his heart. Blood poured slowly out of the hole.

Xing Lie chuckled softly, seemingly satisfied with his own performance. “Boss, in 200 metres, my one shot penetrated his heart. This kid ain’t too bad eh?”

I did not respond to his comment, and still focussed my attention on that youth.

“Sha sha.....”

He squirmed a bit on the floor before he suddenly got onto his feet. His chest was covered with fish scales while his face turned sinister. It was as though he was possessed by a savage and wild animal, and continuously let loose deep howls with both hands on the floor. The injury on his chest did not seem to bother him as his eyes glimmered with the look of savage fury. He then let out a low growl before he charged towards me with his legs and hands propelling him forward.

“WHAT?!” Xing Lie shouted aloud, obviously stunned.

I extended my hand to cover the muzzle of his gun as I shouted, “Let me settle this!”

Equipping a silencer on my M9 handgun, I lifted my hand and fired a shot.

“Pu!”

After a soft gunshot, that youth’s head was penetrated by the bullet, and created a clean hole at the back of the brain with nothing but fresh blood pouring out. To be honest, I’m not very fond of all this blood-filled violence and killing but I really hate it when innocent people get hurt by these Artificials.

.....

Upon observing this scene, Xing Lie could only stare on in shock. “Wh...Why? I clearly fired a shot through his heart, yet I still can’t kill him?”

“Aim at the head to destroy his brain!” I instructed heavily.

“Understood!”

.....

In the distance, a sudden roar could be heard with the wind.

“Shit! Be careful Brother You! We have been exposed!”

Afterwhich, gunshots rang out continuously. The bridge erupted into huge flames. That must have been caused by the Armor-Piercing Shells fired by the huge machine-gun we had. Instantly, the yacht docked by the river had holes in her hull and the engine exploded into flames. They no longer had a path of retreat. Captain Wang truly planned this operation well, and eliminated all the problems together in one fell swoop.

Xing Lie looked on with enjoyment as he saw that the ship had caught fire. He laughed aloud, "Squad Leader Qian has already brought his men from the Nanjing Ops Group into battle!"

On the other hand, there was not a single trace of excitement on my face. I gripped my handgun tighter as I said, "Come, follow closely behind me. Be mindful of your surroundings. I want the scouts to scan our surroundings with infrared rays."

A group of 25 men positioned in an arc rapidly approached the damaged boat. We, on the other hand, did not dare to make any movement as we did not want to disrupt Squad Leader Qian's attack strategy. Furthermore, sounds from the helicopters could be heard in the distance. The 3 Changzhe Z-18 helicopters had already arrived in the vicinity and were using their large flood lights to shine at men in the boat, and locked onto the positions of You Yi and ten other men who were probably those "Malaysian Gay Dudes" mentioned earlier by You Yi.

.....

He raised his head to take a look at the lights in the sky, You Yi lifted his hand and covered his face with a mask just as his expression was about to turn sinister. He snatched away a submachine gun from one of his subordinates as he showered the sky with bullets in a sweeping motion. He raged aloud, "Bloody Hell! Stupid Police! Do you think your this trick will make this old one submit? Damn dogs, your father will kill you!"

The heavy machine gun mounted on the helicopter slowly lowered down and locked onto You Yi. Immediately, bullets started to rain down!

"Peng Peng....."

This time, the commotion caused was huge. Large Armor-Piercing Shells directly pierced through You Yi's abdomen. Yet, this didn't seem to be fatal to

You Yi but instead, made him even angrier. Suddenly, he bent down and started to crawl on the floor and cracking sounds seemed to come from his body. His entire body shape also started to deform and change. Not only did fish scales appear from all over his body, there were even blood-red cones that appeared as thick as a thumb topped by a frighteningly sharp tip. Rather than a bloody cone, it would be better to say that it seemed more like the horn of a unicorn or a dragon. Nonetheless, it made You Yi seem even more bizarre.

“Peng!”

Squad Leader Qian lifted his hand and fired a single nanobullet. However, the bullet just seemed to knock against You Yi’s face, and didn’t leave any form of damage.

Xing Lie looked on from afar and his face was once again filled with shock. “Those nanobullets were not even able to penetrate? How thick is the skin on his face exactly?”

I gritted my teeth as I warned, “Prepare to receive the enemy. Qian Ling’s operation has failed!”

“WHAT!? Boss.....”

.....

Just when Xing Lie was lost for words, You Yi leaped forward at the speed of lightning, his talons left a deep wound on the abdomen of one of the Special Forces soldiers. That soldier groaned excruciatingly as he fell down onto the floor. What was even scarier was the fact that all of the men by You Yi’s side were all Artificials. One by one, all of them started to transform into beasts with fish scales all over their body that were definitely no weaker than blades.

Qian Ling whipped out his handgun and immediately starting firing rounds towards You Yi in the distance. As he fired, he softly ordered, “ Don’t panic! Save for this leader who is a B Class Artificial, the rest are merely C Class. C Class Artificials are not able to block our nanometer bullets. Kill all of them, don’t leave a single one alive! Capture their f\*\*\*ing leader alive!”

The corner of You Yi’s lip twitched upwards as he chuckled, “Capture me alive?”

Afterwhich, You Yi leaped off the side railing of the yacht as he rushed fiercely towards Squad Leader Qian with his talons raised.

.....

Squad Leader Qian was slightly startled but he slid his feet forwards and gathered his Qi into a cyclone around him. He let go of his handgun and resorted to using his fists. Large amounts of Qi Energy circled around his fist as he suddenly met You Yi's talon with his fist.

“Bang!”

Under that one attack, Squad Leader Qian's arm sunk as he took several steps back. The strength of these Artificials was truly too strong. Furthermore, they were the B Class Artificials that we had never seen before.

You Yi laughed sinisterly as he attacked once again at the speed of lightning. Squad Leader Qian hastily brandished his right arm out to block but he never imagined that You Yi would clamp down onto his right arm with both of his talons. He lifted his leg and kicked at Squad Leader Qian's abdomen as he jeered loudly, “Qi Practitioner eh? You're still gonna die!”

“Pu pu.....”

Fresh blood burst forth as Squad Leader Qian let out a wretched howl that seemed to even affect a person's inner soul. His entire right arm was in You Yi's possession now.

## Chapter 675 - Scapegoat

Even after he lost an arm and collapsed on the ground, Tian Ling did not lose the daring courage of a cultivator. When he saw You Yi charge forward once again, Tian Ling did not have his subordinates block this fatal blow. Instead, he lifted his leather shoes and kicked out ferociously.

Peng!

You Yi really was just too powerful. He had thrown Tian Ling's entire body off the side of the ship. Under the illumination of the lamps, Tian Ling only had enough time to see me bring along the members of the Hangzhou group/team. His eyes filled with pain, and he cried out in a loud voice, "Li Xiao Yao! Save my team!"

I gripped the gun in my right hand, while I raised my left hand to draw out Xiao Hei. With one leap, I jumped onto the deck of the ship. I called out in a loud voice, "Defend yourselves with the riot shields. Aim before you shoot. Outside of their leader, kill all of the other artificials! Leave no one alive!"

As I spoke, I raised the gun in my hand and blew apart an artificial's head. However, another artificial charged out from behind it towards my position at a swift pace.

I gathered strength in my right leg, and a cyclone formed around my leather shoe. I raised my leg and kicked out violently.

Bang!

Blood exploded forth. With one kick, the level C artificial was knocked flying. I could hear all of its bones break in its neck. It was accompanied with a miserable howl. Even though his neck was broken, he didn't die. It's broken and miserable figure struggled to crawl at us. Its eyes were filled with blood and brimmed with killing intent.

Thump .....

Xing Lie finished it off with a single shot. Grinding his teeth, he said, "What kind of monster is this? It doesn't even die after all this ..."



This wasn't the time to chit chat however as another group of Artificial Humans charged at us. I hurriedly waved my head and called out, "Have the members of the Nanjing team withdraw. Use the riot shields to protect yourselves!"

Just as I finished speaking, several more artificials had charged at us. Their claws raked against the riot shields, raising sparks. Sure enough, only a mark was left behind and the claws did not pierce the shield. In comparison, the suppressing firepower of our side's team members was extremely fierce. The fire of the submachine guns riddled the artificials full of holes. Taking advantage of the inability of the artificials to hit back, a shot to the head was sufficient enough to dispatch them.

.....

"Die!"

You Yi's voice rang through the sounds of battle. At a distance of roughly ten meters from me, he abruptly stretched out his arm. With a "bang," the arm not only penetrated through a riot shield, but it also penetrated through the chest of one of the team members that was holding it. We had lost yet another member.

You Yi slowly pulled back his arm. Opening his mouth, his sharp teeth left one feeling exceptionally strange. Moreover, he also extended a bifurcated tongue that was at least twenty centimeters in length. Licking the blood on his arm, he laughed mischievously and said, "The flavor is pretty good ... Brothers! Kill! Kill all of these people ..."

As he spoke, You Yi raised his arms horizontally. Bang, bang, bang. He smashed a row of riot shields to pieces.

Each and every Blood Scythe Gang member charged towards us, practically like wild animals, pouncing and biting. They seemed to welcome the bullets as they opened their ferocious mouths to gnaw and devour the arms, neck, shoulder, and other parts of the members of the guard team. Moreover, the force of their bites were like that of a huge swamp crocodile. Our casualties continued to grow.

Kacha!

Xiao Hei once again chopped off the head of an artificial. I turned my body and charged at You Yi. I could not allow him to continue to wreak havoc. While my sword shot out, I shouted out in a low voice, “You Yi!”

You Yi also looked towards me. It was probably because he found it amusing, he laughed malevolently and said, “Li Xiaoyao ... Xiao Yao Zi Zai ... you pathetic smelly cop. You’ve made me to lose this shipment. B\*st\*rd, I will not let you off.”

He unexpectedly switched an offensive and charged towards me. He reached out with his hands and seized a riot shield from one of the guard team members, flourishing it to smash it towards me. He laughed heartily and said, “Go die, go die!”

I hardened my heart with determination and made no attempt to evade, and concentrated the strength of my two arms into Xiao Hei. I stood, I abruptly sent Xiao Hei sweeping forth from behind me. Since You Yi wished to use a riot shield to kill me, then I will just have to chop apart the riot shield along with him!

Bang!

Under the crackling and jumping light of the blaze, Xiao Hei’s sharp blade chopped straight through the riot shield, and struck a glancing blow at You Yi’s right wrist. With a “kacha” sound, a wound was inflicted upon the azure scales, and even shattered several bunches. You Yi was in so much pain that he howled in anguish, and pulled his army back and fell back. His neck had been hit twice in succession, “bang bang,” by Xing Lie’s precise shooting and yet he paid it of no mind. He swung his arms and snatched another riot shield, and once again used it to severely smash towards me. At the same time, he raised his left hand. The pitch-black muzzle of his gun was already aimed at me. The corners of his mouth perked up, he shouted, “Why don’t you try and see how these bullets taste?”

I was slightly stumped for words. I quickly rose my arm and “bang,” the riot shield shattered under the immense pressure from both sides. Even though You Yi’s strength was stronger than that of an ordinary person, it wasn’t stronger than mine. At the moment that the riot shield was broken, I easily grabbed a

section and used it to directly block in the direction of You Yi's gun. With a "bang," a feeling of numbness was transmitted from my arms.

You Yi's desire to kill me was too strong. He continuously fired in bursts, emptying all the bullets in the magazine before he stopped. I seized the opportunity to grab a half piece of the broken shield and swept it in the direction of You Yi's head.

Bang!

The smash caused his face to change shape, and caused blood to spurt out. I smacked him twice more until I had smashed the shield, manufactured from special materials, into pulp. To the side, all of the members of the guard team were all stupefied, as if they already were incapable of comprehending this kind of battle. In their eyes, the riot shields were unyielding and indestructible, but it was like a toy in front of You Yi and myself.

I gripped Xiao Hei with both of my hands. There was still some of You Yi's blood on the blade. My sword's craftsmanship was extremely good, ensuring that its sharpness would not be blunted by blood. All it would do was slide off the blade.

Once I revealed Xiao Hei, You Yi clearly became fearful of the sword. Gritting his teeth and seeing that the surrounding members of the Blood Scythe Gang were being reduced, he made up his mind. With a cold laugh, he shouted, "Motherf\*cker I will kill you one day! Wait and see!"

When he finished speaking, You Yi flipped over the edge of the boat. He shot off the ship like an arrow and with a "plop," he entered the water.

I immediately shouted into a walkie and called out, "Chopper, scan for that person's position! Illuminate the waters!"

I abruptly bit down on Xiao Hei's sharp blade in my mouth, while I pulled off my jacket and headset. I moved quickly and jumped off the boat. The river water was chilling to the bone and the shock from the cold was almost too much to bear. As my body submerged into the river, I opened my eyes with difficulty. The surrounding waters were brightly illuminated by the spotlight of three helicopters. I spun around. Behind me, I could see You Yi with a malevolent expression charge towards me, his scale covered body like a vicious

beast that spent its entire life underwater.

Storing up the strength of both my arms, I suddenly swept out my sword.

Bang!

The sharp sword met You Yi's claws, which caused the waters to turn red with blood. You Yi was injured. Handled with the strength of my top tier Royal Air level Qi, Xiao Hei's sharpness absolutely could not be compared to an average bladed weapon. No matter how powerful You Yi was, he was incapable of preventing himself from being injured. However, the strength of the vibrations from the sword also forced blood from my chest to raise up to my mouth. The power of a level B artificial was truly terrifying!

In the water, You Yi was extremely nimble. Seeing that his blow wasn't successful, he immediately turned around and swam into a region I couldn't see through. I could only remain suspended in the water, and held my breath and waited You Yi to appear once again.

On the surface of the river, outside of the spotlights of the helicopters, I could also see other lights. Xing Lie and others were using the flashlights on their guns to help illuminate the river. Evidently, the battle above had already ended. This You Yi was now the only fish that slipped through the net.

Suddenly, I could hear something bubbling up from below me. I hastily moved my body. Sure enough, You Yi appeared once again. This time, his claws had been clenched into a fist. With a loud rumble, he threw a punch towards me.

Bang!

A fist slammed onto my arm. You Yi seized the opportunity to open his bestial mouth and bite towards my neck. Under the illumination of the light, the sharp teeth and bifurcated tongue were strange beyond belief.

I snickered from the bottom of my heart. Xiao Hei sliced into his chest. We exchanged blows. With a "bang," bubbles burst forth from his mouth. The twenty-centimeter-long tongue fluttered in the water. It was indeed, quite funny. Even though You Yi's body had been strengthened by drugs, his fighting techniques were practically nil. He probably had no experience other than leading a bunch of hooligans to smash venues. In a real fight, he was still quite

lacking.

.....

In the water, I exerted force to shake my head. You Yi had also become dizzy by my attack, seemingly also aware that he was not my opponent. He immediately twisted his body and as fast as electricity, charged off into distant waters, while I was too disinclined to chase after him. I could not hope to catch up to him. He was like a fish living in the depths of the ocean. My swimming speed could not compare.

I suddenly burst out onto the surface. On the top was a floated rope. I grabbed it and pulled myself back onto the boat. After shaking off water on my body, I accepted a headset. Looking at the moving waves atop the river, I spoke in a low voice, "Choppers, lock onto his position! Concentrate strafing fire using high-caliber armor piercing bullets! We have to drag him out, no matter what!"

In the sky above the river, the three Z-18 helicopters had practically already begun to concentrate strafing fire on the river. The machine gun fire caused mini cyclones and heatwaves to appear on the river. However, they still couldn't find You Yi's body.

After a few minutes, the surface of the water became calm again. The helicopters transmitted, "Confirming that the target has disappeared. He has dived down too deep, causing the bullets to lose their piercing ability and accuracy."

I gritted my teeth, "Fuck, that bastard has escaped once again!?"

Wang Xin's sound transmitted over, "Li Xiao Yao, do not blame yourself nor be impulsive. The operation is done. We have already intercepted their contents of the transaction. The mission was a success."

I nodded my head and didn't say anything further. Even under the conditions of having lost an arm, Tian Ling still insisted upon standing on the scene, in command. However, his complexion wasn't too good, his entire face pale. Looking at me, he lightly said, "Thank you."

I only smiled and didn't say anything.

Turning around, I saw that the dozen or so Malaysian gang members on the

deck had all been arrested. Their yacht was filled to the brim with all kinds of narcotics. The members of the drug enforcement team were in the middle of inspecting. I turned to consider the chest brought by the artificials and asked, “Xiao Lie, why don’t you go and see what they brought to exchange?”

Xing Lie walked forward and opened the chest with a “kacha” sound. The chest had its own light. Unexpectedly, it contained ten blue colored bottles of drugs. There were a total of twenty bottles in the two chests. Xing Lie raised one of the bottles and surprised, looked at me and asked, “Boss, this is?”

My heart sank once again. I could already guess its contents. These drugs should be able to transform an ordinary person into a wild animal. The reason You Yi was so “ferocious” was because of these drugs. For them to already have begun to deal these drugs, did they really wish for the world to fall into chaos?

.....

At this moment, Wang Xin led people onto the boat. Looking at me, he asked, “How are the casualties?”

I nodded my head and replied, “Two dead, seven wounded, all of them severe.”

Wang Xin furrowed his brow, “Okay. You’re okay, right?”

I shook my head and smiled, my brows smoothed. “I’m okay. However, can team leader Wang issue me with the command to hunt and arrest a fugitive?”

“What are you doing?”

“I will proceed to the Blue Water Street, and immediately hunt and arrest You Yi!”

“What?” Wang Xin was stunned, “Have you gone crazy?”

I laughed and replied, “I really have become crazy. You Yi is already injured. Even if he masked his face, we can identify him from the recordings. As long as we verify his injuries, we can no longer ignore the Blood Scythe gang. It’s enough if you give me the authority.”

After muttering to himself for a long time, Wang Xin said, “Go then. However, do not raise too big of a ruckus. Blue Water Street is a downtown district and

isn't someplace abandoned like this No. 16 Big Bridge district. There won't be any problems no matter how big of a mess we create here. However, if we cause such a big ruckus at Blue Water Street, the media will torment us to death. When the top brass sets down blame, I will definitely have you, joker, be the scapegoat without any second thoughts.

The corners of my mouth twitched, "Damn!"

# Chapter 676 - Precious Blood Markings

It was nine at night, three hours after the mission had begun.

Blue Water Street was starting to get more crowded now that the night life was awakening. Both sides of the street were filled with bars, KTVs and tea cafes. Furthermore, in front of every bar and KTV was a row of erotic women who wore tight fitting clothes and short skirts.

Sirens blared and, five police cars stopped at the end of Blue Water Street.

Clothed in a new police uniform, I stepped out of the car. My badge reflected the blinking sirens. After looking down at my badge, I looked around and nodded, "Come out!"

Behind me, a group of cops all got out of the car. These were all members of the small Guardian team. In times like this, we held special positions. Some tasks were not executable by the normal police.

.....

Once all fifteen members got out of the car, almost all of the girls on the side of the road were frightened and backed away. Most people hadn't seen such a big mobilization of police forces. Quite a few whispered curses, "F\*ck, why are there so many porkers? Didn't that mole Ah Ji say that he'd watch out for us and we could do our business in peace?"

Xing Lie dropped his hands to his side and smiled to me, "Boss, where are we heading?"

I smiled back, "The 1912 Bar."

"Oh?"

"It's under You Yi's name. It's also one of Blood Scythe's businesses. Wei Fan handed it off to You Yi."

Xing Lie rubbed his nose and smiled, "To be honest, and Boss don't you call me a bumpkin, I've never been to a bar my entire life, much less such a high end one like that."



I chuckled, "It's ok, it'll be enough for me to go by myself."

"Boss, why is it called the 1912 Bar?"

"Probably because it's romantic?"

"Is 1912 a very romantic number?"

"Yup. The titanic sank in 1912. Stop the chatter, let's begin the mission!"

"Yes!"

.....

Everyone marched up to the door of the 1912 Bar. A large screen flashed the numbers 1912 above the front gate. There were two bodyguards at the front for security. When they saw us coming, they exclaimed, "You guys?"

I flashed my police badge and explained briefly, "Take me to your leader, You Yi. Street name You Yi, legal name Zhao Ran."

The bodyguard hesitated, "Our boss isn't here..."

Xing Lie furiously walked up and said, "Cut the b\*ll and give him a call!"

"Yes, Yes ok...."

The bodyguard pulled out his phone and made the call. After half a minute, his eyes lit up and he said, "The boss is on the second floor. Please follow me."

Xing Lie looked at me with some doubt. He seemed to be a bit cautious about the affair. We all knew just how terrifying You Yi could be. Plus he definitely had some Artificials on hand. If he had an ambush planned, then our entire team would fall prey to his attack.

Without hesitation, I smiled, "Alright!"

I would rather fight You Yi on the second floor until both sides took damage than allow more innocent bystanders to die. There were just too many people out and about tonight. After all, this was where most young people gathered. It just wasn't appropriate to use force in this situation. Besides, You Yi wouldn't be able to explain it if so many of us police forces went in and didn't return. Even if Blood Scythe was reckless, they didn't have the courage to make an enemy out of the Chinese Government.

.....

We followed the bodyguards in and left five people outside to stand guard. I took the other ten into the bar and went upstairs.

The second floor was a brightly lit hall. It did not look like a suitable place for an ambush.

You Yi stood at the center of the hall, dressed in a suit with a cup of red wine in his hand. He smiled as he turned around, "I never expected that the guildmaster of [Zhan Long], Xiao Yao zi Zai, was actually a policeman. Ha ha, life really is like a game of chess. This is just too amusing. So, what does Guildmaster Zi Zai want with me?"

Xing Lie roared, "You Yi, stop trying to pretend. How could you not know yet? We've received orders to take you back for questioning. How about you come with us!"

You Yi spread his arms out with a smile, "I'm a respectable businessman. I really can't stand the crude way you barbarians do business. If you want to take me in, you gotta bring proof. If you have proof that I've committed a crime, then I'll give myself up. Of course, these days I've been with quite a few women. You have to understand, the women in these bars, each and every one of them is lonely beyond belief. In one week I'd get eleven of them. But what of it? You can't try and take me in because of that right? After all, I was just trying to help them get rid of their loneliness. Well good deeds don't necessarily leave a good name. You guys really ought to hand me some kind of reward though. After all, shouldn't the police do things as the government dictates?"

Xing Lie was pissed off, "I'll show you what a f\*cking reward is!"

I reached out to hold back Xing Lie and smiled, "You Yi, you want proof? How about you roll up your right sleeve and show us your wrist to prove your innocence."

In the battle before, You Yi's wrist had been injured by my Xiao Hei. The cut went all the way to his ligaments. That was enough proof of his crime.

You Yi laughed and handed his wine cup to a beautiful girl. He then pulled up his sleeve and showed his wrist to us. He smiled, "Here, I'll let you see all you

want, how is that? My wrist is very clean. Ha ha, that must get the girls really going huh. Of course, you stinky police would never understand. After all, you're training day to night and catching people left and right. You're probably so tan you look like an African man. No wonder you don't have a girlfriend!"

Xing Lie roared, "Shut the f\*ck up or I'll put you down for insulting the police."

You Yi laughed, "Then I shall apologize. I'm sorry, I accidentally let slip the truth..."

Xing Lie grit his teeth and whispered to me, "Boss, why isn't there a cut on his wrist? There isn't even a single marking. I can't believe that. Unless.. Does You Yi have some body double?"

I shook my head, "No, this is You Yi. However,... Level B Artificials have extremely fast recovery speeds. In just these short two hours, he's already completely recovered from his injury. We... we should have finished up our mission an hour ago and came here to get proof!"

"Then what do we do now?"

I reached out and grabbed the hilt of my sword. Once I did that, all of the members of the Guardian team unsheathed their weapons.

You Yi was startled, I could see the shock flash in his eyes. However, he kept his expression calm and collected as he smiled, "What, you want to use force now? Alright then, I'll follow you to the police station. However, if you can't find anything, then I will definitely register a complaint. Lawyers in Hong Kong are pretty terrifying. Don't forget, we're living in a lawful society now. You better not try anything. Otherwise, I won't let you off."

I quietly walked forward and raised my arm. "Peng!" I grabbed You Yi's neck and pressed him against the white pillar. At that moment, the pillar was crushed by the force of the blow. The beautiful girl behind You Yi was so frightened that her entire face turned pale and she screamed. The wine cup in her hands fell to the ground and shattered.

As I looked into You Yi's eyes, I roared, "Just you wait. Just you wait.... No matter what you do, the heavens are watching. You killed two of my men. One day I will settle that score with you. Did you think that you could weasel your

way out of the law? Do you think that money is enough to settle everything? You'll see. I'll let you know the true meaning of karma is a b\*tch!"

You Yi spat out through his grit teeth, "Li Xiao Yao, you dare try me? I'm telling you right now, this hall has a number of cameras set up. If you dare touch me, then I'll immediately use it as proof against you!"

I pulled by my hand and chuckled, "You want to charge me? Then charge me. If I can't even go against a small charge like that, then there's no need for me to stay in the Hang Zhou Police."

"You son of a b\*tch!"

You Yi seemed to realize that my position was much different than that of a normal policeman. A small fight like this was not enough to deal with me.

.....

When I turned around, I suddenly felt a chill in my heart. A great presence appeared at the staircase. Following that, an old man wearing a Qi Pao\* walked over. His footsteps were very light. If it wasn't Ou Yang Chuan, who else could it be?

TL Note: Traditional Chinese Clothes

Ou Yang Chuan was carrying two iron balls connected by a chain when he walked up. He smiled to me, "Li XiaoYao, it's been a while. You've been looking more and more impressive these days!"

As he said that, his palms began to burn red. In the blink of an eye, he burned the two iron balls until they were bright red. Metal droplets formed from the molten iron. All of the police men around me were stupefied.

Without another word, I pulled out my blade and smiled, "Ou Yang chuan!"

"Die!"

The second Ou Yang Chuan laid eyes on me he charged. I suddenly tightened my grip on You Yi's neck. He shouted "Mr.Ou Yang chuan! This is Li Xia Yao, my friend, there's no need to fight him. Everything is fine."

"Hrmph!"

Ou Yang Chuan swept his sleeve out and left. You Yi seemed to understand his predicament as well. If Ou Yang Chuan were to fight with me here then the situation would fall out of his favor. Even Blood Scythe wouldn't be able to help him get out of it.

.....

We quickly walked out of the hall and out of the bar.

Xing Lie unhappily said, “Boss, is this the end? Are we just going to... return without a result?”

“Who said so?”

I raised my arm. The edge of my sleeve was stained with You Yi's blood. My attack this time was extremely savage, and forced him to spit some blood out. In other words, this was his blood. When I made sure it was there I lowered my voice “Hurry, use something to catch the blood!”

“Yes sir”

Xing Lie quickly pulled out an evidence bag and carefully put the blood away even though it was only a little, it was enough.

I tightened my fist and said, “Let's go back to HQ and take this blood to forensics. That way we can check his DNA. That should be enough to prove his guilt!”

Xing Lie smiled, “Boss. Good job. And here I thought you had been scared sh\*t!\*ss by that legendary Ou Yang Chuan...”

I replied, “You think I wasn't?”

“Haha....”

.....

When we returned to HQ, we immediately handed the evidence to forensics. Chen Bing didn't relax until she saw me back safely. I also called Wan Er to let her know I was fine.

“Wan Er, I'm fine now. The mission is finished!”

Wan Er voice slight trembled, “Pig, there's a lot of helicopters around Hang

Zhou Bridge #16. Some people on the web even posted pictures of a gun fight. You weren't, you weren't completing your mission there were you?"

"Eh... around there...."

"That means you already know what's going on in Hang Zhou. Hurry back, I miss you!"

"Yes!"

# Chapter 677 - A Night in Her Embrace

When I returned to school after finishing writing the report, it was already late at night, 11PM. Sitting inside the A4, even if I turned on the heat, I still felt so cold that I was shivering. I was wearing the same leisure garb as when I left, but I had become soaking wet after jumping into the river to battle You Yi. After returning to base, there wasn't time for me to change to the extent that up to now, I could still feel the cold wet clothes stuck to my skin. This kind of feeling was extremely uncomfortable. Moreover, after receiving the shock from You Yi's strange strength, my blood vessels had been somewhat roiled over. My head felt like there was a ball of fire burning. All the indicators were telling me that I had caught a fever.

To me, falling ill, was a remote phrase.

"Screech ..."

The brakes sounded, I parked the car in the spot in front of the villa. My entire brain was a mess, leaning my head down on the steering wheel. After a few seconds, the car door was pulled open. Her entire face filled with alarm, Wan er looked at me. "You ... what happened to you?"

"It's nothing ..."

I looked up and smiled, "Wan er, its so late, why haven't you gone to bed yet?"

Wan Er furrowed her brow and replied, "I have been worried about you. What about you, you've only just returned too. Come in, it's too cold outside."

"Okay."

When I got out of the car, everything went hazy and I staggered a little. Even I was frightened. My body was at the peak of Royal Air! I did not expect myself to become this weak and frail. It seems that I had definitely suffered an injury to my vital energy during my battle with You Yi. Although I had not sustained any physical injuries, I had been continuously shaken several times by a strength that weighed more than a ton. After all, my body was made of flesh and blood,

and I was already at my limit.

I suddenly remembered the circumstances where You Yi had clutched the riot shields to fiercely smash at me, turning the firm and hard riot shields into mush, the force of that impact was basically tantamount to a truck smashing at 100 kph. Pulling up my sleeves, I took a look. My arms were both covered with bruises. I hadn't felt anything during the fight, but now I began to feel a lingering fear. A level B artificial was fierce to such an extent. How strong would a level A artificial be? Would I be able to resist?

“Ah?”

Wan'er looked at my appearance, her beautiful eyes filled with distress, “Idiot, how did you manage to get yourself like this?”

As she spoke, she helped me over into the living room and very carefully helped me sit down in the sofa. Afterwards, she rolled up my sleeves. She saw the bruises slowly turn black, only distressing her further, “Who are those people? Was it Ouyang Chuan?”

I shook my head and replied, “It's nothing. Wan'er, there's no need to be worried about this. The less you know, the better. Can you get some food? The mission this afternoon was carried out too hurriedly, I haven't eaten dinner yet ...”

Wan'er wiped clean my collar before standing. She then spontaneously bent down and opened her arms to embrace me. In a soft voice, she said, “The cook has already gone to bed. I'll go heat some bone broth and a couple of dishes for you to eat. Why are you so damp, did you fall into river? Go take a hot bath, or else you'll get sick. When you finish eating, I'll prepare some ginger broth for you to drink.”

I looked at her, suddenly feeling blessed. No matter what dangers I faced outside, there was an enviable girlfriend here to take care of me.

For one's life to be like this, it was enough.

.....

I entered the bathroom, and took a shower before getting into the bath. Lying down in the hot water, I slowly began to move my qi. On the surface, my qi



flowed very slowly. Once the qi passed into my arms, there was hint of obstruction. There were some blockages in my channel passages. You Yi's several strikes had really caused me to suffer internal injuries. This was extremely frightening. No wonder Tian Ling had lost an arm to You Yi. Compared to Tian Ling, I could already be considered to be fortunate. However, it was also Tian Ling underestimating the enemy, hastily spreading out and pushing up the battle line. Moreover, he did not use firepower to suppress You Yi and his accomplices. Otherwise, how could he have lost an arm? If it weren't for the Hangzhou Guardian Squad's timely rescue, then it's likely that Tian Ling would have lost more than an arm and maybe even his life.

After bathing for a full forty minutes, I was finally able to unclog the blocked channels in my arms. However, I still felt quite cold to the point that I was shivering. I couldn't help but mock myself and laugh. I had once believed that when I reached the peak of Royal Air, my body would become as hard as steel. I did not expect that these beasts with drug enhanced bodies would put me in such a sorry state.

When I had put on a set of dry and clean clothes and left the bathroom, the fragrant scent of food called me to the living room. Holding a large bowl with two hands, Wan'er laughed and called out, "Come eat your midnight snack, pig head ..."

I smiled slightly and sat down. There were two plates of stir-fry, a bowl of overflowing fragrant bone broth. Wan'er, the bossy young lady who had received a years of doting from everyone, had already begun to master how to take care of others.

Picking up a bowl of rice, I ate with relish. Wan'er held up her chin with her hands and sat beside me, watching me eat with a smile. She said, "The ginger broth is being prepared. Enjoy your meal, there's no need to rush."

"Okay."

My appetite was enormous and I ate no less than three bowls of rice before feeling satisfied. Every single item of clothing on Wan'er's body was high quality women's clothes from famous brands, and yet she still compliantly went off to pour a bowl of ginger broth for me. She was really treating me like a patient

who couldn't take care of themselves. As she blew on the ginger broth, Wan'er laughed and said, "It's a bit hot, drink slowly ..."

I laughed secretly in my heart. I might as well consider myself a patient. Taking the proffered bowl, I slowly drank it sip by sip until it was all gone. Afterwards, I said, "All right."

"Do you feel unwell anywhere?"

"My head is a bit dizzy and my body is a bit cold. I should be fine after sleeping ..."

"Okay."

Wan'er rose to her feet, supporting me at the arm, she guided me back to the bedroom. My head was really becoming increasingly heavy, as if there were burning coals releasing heat in my head. In comparison, my body felt freezing cold. I was really getting sick. After taking medication, I laid down on bed. Wan'er was clearly uneasy with my current condition. Sitting on the side of the bed, she said, "Are you sure you're fine?"

I wrapped myself in the blankets. Smiling, I replied, "It's nothing. I'll be fine after wrapping myself in blankets and sleeping. Wan'er should also go sleep. It's getting late ..."

"Okay."

A bit worried, she continued glancing back at me before reluctantly turning and leaving.

.....

Muddled, I fell asleep. However, my mind did not stop thinking about the moment when You Yi's body had changed – the azure scales, the protrusions from his hard skin like the horns of a dragon. In his ear, echoed the screams of despair issued by the members of the guardian squad when they were killed, their blood sprinkling all over the rusty deck of the boat, the riot shields smashed to pieces, and the bullets of the heavy covering fire ricocheting off the scales of the monsters. Afterwards, he caught sight of Ouyang Chuan's entire body standing in the dense raging flames. He seemed like a curse that continued to spiral around me.

In my daze, I couldn't tell how much time had passed. Suddenly, I could feel a soft and hot body enter my embrace. I tightly embraced her as if grasping onto my last hope. My entire body was ice-cold and yet she did not turn her back on me, holding me tightly to her, two flower buds pressed against my body. Her hot breath joined with mine and kiss me. It was like a dream and yet was also so real.

Outside the window, a light winter rain began to fall. The rain pitter pattered and fell on the leaves of the holly tree outside the window. In the long cold night, the distant lights flickered amidst curtained rainfall.

.....

When I woke from the dream, it was already morning. The sunshine penetrated through the curtains and cast themselves into the room. I pensively moved my arm slightly, discovering that my strength had basically already been completely recovered. The heavy burning of my head had already disappeared. Okay, of course an illness would go away so easily for me...

But just at this moment, I suddenly felt that there was something weighing down my right arm. When I turned to look, I was immediately petrified. I didn't know when Wan'er had come to sleep in my embrace. Moreover, she only wore a set of white pajamas. Half of her soft body laid against my bosom. Her undergarments had slid more than halfway down her shoulder. Her full and perky twin mounds were separated by a thin layer and pressed against my chest.

In a moment, my breathing became agitated, feeling as if I was about to die. I did not dare to move my arm.

So my dreamland last night was not a dream, but reality!

Thinking of this, my head grew hot. Did something happen between us?

Just at this moment, she seemed to have sensed that I had awoken. Wan'er gave a pampered moan and used her left arm to forcefully embrace me, her beautiful face pressing up against my neck. She suddenly opened her eyes. Raising her head, she caught sight of me gazing at her. Immediately the face of the beautiful miss high and mighty immediately blushed deep red. "I ... I ... you ..."

With great effort, I calmed down, replying, "Cough, cough ... It was you who took the initiative to sleep in my bed. I didn't furtively carry you over. If your dad looks into this later on, you have to help me explain, beloved ..."

The corner of Wan'er rose in a smile, "Pig head, I didn't say that I wanted you to take responsibility. Moreover ... nothing happened between us ..."

"Is that right?"

I extended my hands and wrapped them around her waist. Using my hands, I could feel that her undergarments on the lower body were still there. Somewhat disappointed, I said, "It really seems like nothing happened ..."

Wan'er glared at me with her pair of beautiful eyes, "It seems like you want something to have happened? I was worried that you would get sick and that you wouldn't be able to take care of yourself during the night, thus I ..."

I smiled slightly, "Why are you explaining so much ... since we have yet to get out of bed, how about you give me a kiss ..."

Wan'er was as slippery as a mermaid, and she slid out from under the blankets. With one hand, she grabbed a woman's coat and wrapped it around her body. With a laugh, she stated, "In your dreams! I'm going back ..."

"Why are you in such a rush?"

She opened the door and glanced out carefully, "Otherwise, I'll be discovered by my cousin and Dongcheng. I'm going ... I'll wait for you to eat breakfast together. Hurry up and get out of bed!"

"Okay, fine."

.....

After I got out of bed, putting on clothes, and finished washing my face and rinsing my mouth, I looked at the time and it was already past 9AM. I was going to miss the morning's classes. It seemed like Wan'er and Dongcheng didn't have any intention of going to class either. Reportedly, the teacher was going to go over important points. It was soon going to be time for the final exams. When I expressed my concerns, Wan'er indicated that there was someone in the administration and they did not have to worry about taking the final exam.

However, I still felt that I should consider how to pass the difficult problem of these exams. Wan Er's father had said that if I skipped several classes before winter vacation, he would not let me off easily.

During breakfast, a group of people were gathered around the dining table. Tang Qi was also there.

"Lately, nothing has happened in the game, right?" I asked.

Dongcheng replied, "Actually, something has happened ... just late last night ..."

"Oh, what is it?"

Dongcheng Yue smiled, "Actually it isn't anything major. It's just that Thousand Burial is not necessarily behaving ordinarily. They must be planning something big. They claim to have invested 5000W into Destiny. They aren't looking to make back this money, instead they wish to make Thousand Burial to become the biggest guild in Tian Ling City."

# Chapter 678 - Greedy Wolf Brigade

“[Thousand Burial] wants to be a top tier guild?”

I could not help but laugh aloud at the thought. “Is this some kind of a joke? Are they going to rely on the skills of Not Ordinary and You Yi to push the level of their guild to the top tier? Isn’t that just a load of bull?”

Dong Cheng responded, “It’s hard to say though. Money can make even the Devil dance.”

I shook my head in disagreement. “I still don’t think they will make it.”

Wan Er looked at me and laughed. “Do you think that everyone is like you? You, who owns the shop called “National Beauty” and Dragon City, two easy sources of money? On the other hand, I think if [Thousand Burial] were to invest 50 million RMB into their guild, they could achieve a lot. After all, amongst the top 1000 members in the CBN Battlemaster Ranking Chart, a lot of them are lacking money. To them, an annual salary of 100,000 RMB might not be so appealing but what about twice or thrice that amount? What if it became 10 times that amount? Who among them would not be moved by such wealth? As long as he manages to hire enough top players, [Thousand Burial]’s fighting strength could turn out to be rather impressive.”

Dong Cheng Yue nodded as she chuckled. “Yep. What’s even more annoying is..... last night, Not Ordinary, You Yi, White Ink and members of the main force of [Thousand Burial] cleared a map called “Devouring Garden” just northwest of Tian Ling City. They also received a special tool called [Greedy Wolf Talisman]!”

[Greedy Wolf Talisman]?” Tang Qi and I surprisingly asked in sync, “What does it do?”

Dong Cheng explained, “[Greedy Wolf Talisman] is an unlimited usage special tool item that, with the City Lord’s permission, allows a player to register as a “Greedy Wolf Raider”. There will be a 1000 gold fee but not only will that player gain the [Greedy Wolf Raider] title, they will also enjoy a permanent 3% drop rate boost for killing monsters, 10% for killing players, extra 20% movement

speed as well as the right to directly take 10% of the money that the players they killed are carrying. In short, the [Greedy Wolf Brigade] is the personification of a pack of ravenous wolves. Gluttonous but powerful in large numbers. The only con is that they too, will suffer an extra 10% drop rate when killed. So when someone runs into a Greedy Wolf Raider, one side must die.....”

Wan Er and I were both startled. Last night, Wan Er had slept next to me and so she didn’t pay much attention to the game. Clearly it was her first time hearing about this [Greedy Wolf Talisman]

I asked, “Who has the Greedy Wolf Talisman?”

“Naturally, it’s in Not Ordinary’s hands....”

Dong Cheng smiled, “I’ve heard that since last night, [Thousand Burial] has already converted 1200+ people into Greedy Wolf Raiders. The effect is an add-on that lasts forever. It really is good stuff....”

Tang Qi added, “If only we could just get him to drop that Greedy Wolf Talisman!”

Dong Cheng glanced at him, her smile filled with contempt, “Did you think that Not Ordinary would be that stupid? Once he needs to leave the city, he’ll definitely put the talisman inside his personal storage. He won’t use it unless he is in the city where it’s safe. As long as he’s cautious, nobody would be able to get that talisman.”

Wan Er’s eyes were gleeful as she said, “I think I know what Not Ordinary wants...”

Tang Qi asked, “What?”

Wan Er said, “He wants to use that 20% attack speed and movement speed increase and create a regiment of 100-1000 players that can hunt down any stray players from rival guilds; just like a pack of wolves. Even a savage tiger would be worn down if they keep rotating out people against it. Just like that, they can easily obtain gold and equipments. Once they’ve slowly built up their strength, [Thousand Burial] will legitly turn into a guild of wolves.”

I nodded in agreement, “That’s the basic idea. Send out warnings for people to not go leveling on their own, in case they get targeted by the Greedy Wolf

Brigade.”

“En.” Wan Er looked at me, “It’s about time you log on and supervise the situation. You are, after all, the real guildmaster of [Zhan Long].”

“Ok, got it. I’ll get online in a moment!”

.....

After breakfast, I logged on.

Once I logged on, I first looked at the forums for Tian Ling City. As expected, there was a hot post pinned to the top. It was [Thousand Burial]’s recruitment post——

[Talent Recruit (Owner: Not Ordinary): [Thousand Burial Guild], We are allocating 50 Million RMB to recruitment, Recruiting all experts within the top ten thousand on the CBN Battlenet Rankings!

Details: Now that Tian Ling City has been opened, Ba Huang City, Jiu Li City, and Fan Shu City have been merged together. All Heroes are now fighting for power. However, one cannot dominate the world by oneself. Therefore, [Thousand Burial] guild will begin to strengthen itself. We’re using 50 Million RMB as our budget for development. We are recruiting brothers from across the country. As long as you are strong enough, no matter what your dreams are, you can join our ranks. An annual salary of a hundred thousand or two hundred thousand is not a dream. Please find any recruiter player for [Thousand Burial] at any of the four great gates of Tian Ling City. Do you want to become one of the most respected Greedy Wolf Brigade? Do you want to become brothers with wolf and tiger masters? Join us and your dream will not be far away!

.....

I can already affirm that this post was not written by Not Ordinary. Those weren’t words that he could make up. As an underground boss, he reeks of vile thoughts. There was no way he could write such elegant words. He had most likely hired someone to write it for him. But that was of no consequence. That wouldn’t affect how [Thousand Burial] recruited people. As long as they brought money out, then there was no way that they couldn’t recruit people.



After that was a chain of replies. There were some that hated it, and there were some that praised it. But as long as there was money, it meant that there was good faith, and that wasn't a wrong sentence——

[First Reply] Player Who will Dance For Me: Hmph hmph, 50 Million... Who know how much annual salary someone like me who is ranked a hundred thousand in the CBN Battlenet. Or maybe monthly?

[Second Reply] Player Empty City Silence: Please forgive me but I can't help but laugh. A third rate like [Thousand Burial] wants to become boss of Tian Ling City? Dream on!

[Third Reply] Player Bright Moon of a Thousand Leagues: Signing Up, CBN Battlenet Ranked 17238. Let's discuss the price, if its right then I'll join!

[Fourth Reply] Player My Sword is My Name: Signing Up, CBN Battlenet Ranked 29181!

[Fifth Reply] Player Yue Qing Qian, Wa, 50 Million! Too bad I don't want to sign up.

[Sixth Reply] Player Goodbye Tears: Let's just watch on the sidelines then sister!

.....

I closed the forums and went online!

“Shua!”

I appeared in Tian Ling City. I fixed up my equipment and filled my potion supply. I was ready to head out at any moment, but I still couldn't decide on where to go. I ended up heading to Dragon's Den first. It was time to see how the city had developed.

I was teleported into the great half of the Dragon's Den. But right as I walked in, I was stunned by my surroundings. The Dragon's Den had already leveled up to a Level 7 City. All of the buildings had a layer of silver light coming off of it. It was as though all of the buildings had been plated with silver. Furthermore, the distant wall that had been constructed with rock was now made of ferrous materials. Its defense was on a whole new level.

The city's production power had also risen quite a bit since I had been gone

——

Food: 1920/Hour

Wood: 15500/Hour

Stones: 17200/Hour

.....

When I checked the city reserves, I saw that it had already reached 700 thousand Gold. The revenue had all come from the players consuming things in the city. Furthermore, the amount of food, wood and stones had already surpassed 100,000. Seeing all of this progress made me feel extremely satisfied and proud. The Dragon's Den's production capability had truly reached a terrifying point. After that, I checked out the different types of soldiers in the city. A Level 7 City can recruit the Level Seven Heavy Flame Archers in the Shooting Range. For a heavily fortified city like Dragon's Den, those were the top pick. Plus, it didn't look like they needed much resources to be recruited

——

Heavy Flame Archers, City Stats x95%, Recruitment Requirements: Goldx700, Foodx750, Woodx800, Stonesx840

.....

Determined, I put in a number. I recruited 200 Heavy Flame Archers to increase our defense. That was ok, after all it only cost 10 hours of the city's production. Plus, Chi Yu Qing can create all kinds of resource quests. It might not even need 10 hours of production power. The biggest expense was the gold. But it was all for the sake of the city's safety. Only if we can hold the fort can we get more gold. Spending this much was worth it.

“Ding!”

System notification: Please note, your city [Dragon's Den] is now starting to recruit Heavy Flame Archers. At the moment, the progress is at 0/200!

.....

I jumped onto my Flying Scythe Horse and arrived in the city. In the distance, I

looked towards the shooting range. Within a minute, an NPC soldier clothed in red armor walked towards the shooting range. He carried a longbow in his hand. Flames rose from the string. He knelt down on the ground for me even when he was so far away and he shouted, “City Master!”

This was a soldier that had 95% of my stats. Just looking at it made me like it... Here was an archer whose real strength was over 40,000. How much sorrow would one shot from this archer create? Unfortunately, it didn’t have my skills. Otherwise, if I had 200 Heavy Flame Archers, I would be able to overthrow Tian Ling City. Of course, now was not the time to activate these precious soldiers. Each and every one of them cost money. I must save them for the proper moment.

I walked around the city a little more and increased the level of some of the resource buildings. In a few more days, I’ll be able to level up the city to Level 8. Time was passing really fast and the city was developing rapidly. With the Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing siblings guarding the Dragon’s Den, it’ll definitely become the first Level 10 City in the Tian Ling Empire. Once we hit Level 10, then we’ll be able to recruit all the Cliff Dragon Cavalry we want. At that point, our first goal would be to get 10,000 Cliff Dragon Cavalrymen. Then, no matter if its a guild battle or a nation battle, these Cliff Dragon Cavalrymen that have 120% of my stats will be enough to make all of my rivals unable to sleep!

“Di!”

I had received a message from Qing Qian, “Brother Xiao Yao, I just received some news. The player Minimalist has joined [Thousand Burial]. He’s a Level 115 Swordsman and is ranked 741 in the CBN Battlenet Rankings!”

I was stunned, “There’s really someone who is willingly joining [Thousand Burial]? Not to mention he’s so far forward in the CBN Battlenet Rankings.”

Qing Qian replied, “Yup. We have to be careful. This person was recruited by You Yi into [Thousand Burial].”

I smiled, “Qing Qian don’t worry. He’s just a man who's in the top 700. He’s not worth worrying over. [Zhan Long] has seventeen people in the top one hundred. Don’t be scared of them!”

“Yes yes!”

I received news all the way up until noon. Just in one morning, there were over 50 players that were in the top 10,000 in the CBN Battlenet Rankings that had joined [Thousand Burial]. RMB really has too great of an incentive. Especially when there's such a big pie like 50 million. This card was played too beautifully.

.....

For lunch, Dong Cheng, Wan Er, Tang Qi and I ate at our home. As we were eating, Wan Er's phone continuously rang from text messages. She glanced at it and raised her eyebrows.

"What's wrong Wan Er?" I asked with concern.

Wan Er showed me her phone. It was a message from Dancing Forest——

"Vice Guildmaster, At 11:14, a ten man team from our Division Three guild was completely decimated by the Greedy Wolf Brigade. They dropped quite a few equipments and gold."

"Vice Guildmaster, three minutes ago, on the southern side of the Tian Ling City map, a forty man team was ambushed and completely killed. It was a team from our main guild and it was [Thousand Burial] again. You Yi had personally lead the team. There was a total of 200 Greedy Wolf Raiders."

"Vice Guildmaster, at 11:47, two of our teams had been ambushed within Ba Huang City limits. We had lost around 70+ people."

.....

I calmly got up, then slam my palm onto the table top, "Looks like Wei Fan and You Yi is planning to put us under the knife as well!"

# Chapter 680 - Rebound

Wan Er nodded, "Just ten-odd minutes ago, after we logged out, You Yi opened a new forum thread specially to provoke [Zhan Long]. Well, it's pretty much an outright challenge....."

Dong Cheng blinked a few times and paused before speaking, "Then what should we do?"

"Retaliate! I refuse to believe the people from [Thousand Burial] can have invisible cloaks. Since they wanna play this game with us, [Zhan Long] will see it through to the end. THEN we'll see who's scared of who!" I made my decision without a single shred of hesitation.

However, Wan'er is still a bit uncertain, "One of the extra stats that the [Greedy Wolf Brigade] get is a [Movement Speed +20%]..... [Thousand Burial] has a large number of heavy melee players and almost all of them got a mount already. With that 20% boost added onto their riding speed, normal players simply can't keep up with them. I'm afraid that even I will have to use [Vanishing Step] to do so....."

"Not so. I have my [Flying Scythe War Horse] and Matcha has her [Thousand Leagues Moonbeam]. Li Mu, Wang Jian and the others' mounts aren't bad either. If everyone switches on a pair of boots that adds movement speed, it'll probably work out. We'll know for sure after we go online. Wan Er, you and Dong Cheng will be responsible for gathering intel on the [Greedy Wolf Brigade] and their locations. We'll kill as many as we can find." I tried to put her at ease with a comforting grin.

And then Tang Qi butted in, "What about me?"

"You're not even in [Zhan Long]!" I snapped back.

"Doesn't mean I can't help a friend or my goddess....." That foolish grin on his face...

Dong Cheng gave him a sharp glance, "And who is this goddess you speak of?"

"That would be mon mademoiselle!"

“The man I like is Li Xiao Yao so no game!”

“I’m fine with that. To truly love someone..... is to always be ready to become that person’s rebound.....” It was a new low for Tang Qi.

I facepalmed, “What are you even talking about.....? Whatever, let’s get online and hunt down those greedy wolves already. Can’t let them suppress any more of our momentum here in Tian Ling City.”

“En, let’s go!” Wan Er finally nodded.

.....

We each returned to our respective rooms and logged into the game. Our enemy this time was not a formidable foe like [Heroes Mound] or [Legend] but nevertheless, was still a tricky opponent. The specialised stats granted to the [Greedy Wolf Brigade] made it difficult to get a hold of them. And on top of that, Wei Fan had recently recruited a large number of CBN rankers. No doubt, their overall battle strength had been increased a lot. Can’t really blame our branch guilds and individual teams for not being able to handle them.

Whoooooosh!

Once online, I immediately teleported back to Tian Ling City; then called out my [Flying Scythe War Horse] and [Ancient Heavenly Tiger]. After that, I decided to take a look at the forums. At the very top was obviously You Yi’s thread. The contents were basically calling out [Zhan Long] for being too self-absorbed; its members for being arrogant and reckless all over the Tian Ling City area. And how we have pked numerous innocent [Thousand Burial] members out in the wild on many occasions. And as such, how [Thousand Burial] will now begin its retribution against this problematic adversary.

Towards these accusations, I made no rebuttals. [Thousand Burial]’s status with [Zhan Long] had always been “At War”; to meet in the wilderness was to kill on sight. This was generally agreed on by everyone. Looking it from this angle, it was also within reason for [Thousand Burial]’s [Greedy Wolf Brigade] to roam around killing lone [Zhan Long] players. Well in that case, nothing else needs to be said. You kill my people, I kill yours; we’ll kill our hearts out! My [Dragon Reservoir Sword] had been impatient to taste blood anyway.

In the guild channel, I heard Li Mu's voice, "The Boss is on!"

"Damn that cheap provocation from [Thousand Burial]! We really can't hold back anymore! Boss, how do you think should we get even with them?"

I deliberated for a moment, then spoke, "First, form several parties of only our core battle force. Everyone else must group up in full 500 man parties before heading out to level. That way, even if you get ambushed by their 'Greedy Wolf Raiders', you can at least put up a fight. Now, I want every member from both the main and branch guilds that has a mount with at least 150% movement speed and boots that add at least 30% more to gather up over at Tian Ling City East Plaza!"

"En!" The first to respond was Matcha.

"Then what about us Assassins?" Wolf inquired.

"Assassins will be following Wan Er. In ranks of at least 200 people, leave the city while invisible. Be actively on the lookout for traces of the [Greedy Wolf Brigade]'s movements. The Greedy Wolf Raiders might have a higher drop rate when killing us, but the reverse is also true! When you attack, spread out for wider coverage and aim for a one wave rush. Well, that's the plan. Everyone split up when you're ready. We'll make this fast. Don't let these guys impede our grinding any longer."

"YES!" A synchronized response resound from everyone.

.....

Armed and ready, I began my wait at the East Plaza. Before long, Li Mu, Matcha, Wang Jian, Old K, Cang Lei, One Second Hero, Yue Yao Yan, Tang Xin et al., began to show up one by one. In less than 10 minutes, approximately 300+ heavy melee players had gathered together. Every single one of them was part of our overall core battle force. Each and every one of them were seasoned veterans polished by countless conflicts; their combat ability was undisputed.

"How are we grouping the teams?" This came from Li Mu.

After I pondered for a bit, I laid out my plan, "We'll split into three 100-man teams. You, me and Match will each lead one. The rest of the guild will assist in the search for the [Greedy Wolf Brigade]. Once we've located any, the nearest

team should immediately rush them. But watch your mounts' stamina. Make sure to leave some for chasing down their remnants."

"Sounds good!" Li Mu's grin couldn't possibly stretch any wider.

"Don't worry about that, Boss!" Matcha gives her horse's mane a rub down to pacify its excitement.

.....

We began splitting the people up. I pulled Old K, Cang Lei, Yue Yao Yan and a couple others into my group. Wang Jian and Bai Qi, naturally, joined Li Mu. One Second Hero and Tang Xin followed Matcha as she disappeared outside the city. The combat strength of each individual team was all up there. Even if faced with the enemy's main force, they'd still be able to put up a hard fight. Also, we're a purely high mobility unit. Wan Er, Dong Cheng, and Dancing Forest were leading groups of ranged class players that spread out all over the map; we can link up at any time.

This was a rare guild-wide event for [Zhan Long] so instead of anxiety, most people were feeling rather excited. Of course, there were also those whose friends were victims of the [Greedy Wolf Brigade] so their insides were already raging with the flames of vengeance as they made their preparations. As their guild leader, naturally, I should take action to appease them. Otherwise, the bottled up rage might even lead to a mutiny one day.

As I pulled back on my reins, I checked with my group; the slowest among us can only go at 325% of base movement speed. As such, I've set that as our standard speed. It should be enough to move at a bit over 3x the normal speed. To most people, it would already be like a gust of wind had just blew past. The noise of hundreds of mounts echoed throughout the plaza. Already, numerous other players were viewing this spectacle and discussed among themselves——

"HOLY \*\*\*\*! Isn't that Xiao Yao Zi Zai? What's he doing with so many elite cavalry!?"

"Who the hell knows....."

"Did you two not check the forums? Several thousands of [Thousand Burial]'s Greedy Wolf Raiders have been hunting down [Zhan Long]'s leveling parties all



over the place. This is obviously their counterattack. Haha, with Xiao Yao Zi Zai and General Li Mu personally leading, [Thousand Burial] is in for the time of their lives.....”

“Motherf\*ck\*ng crazy! So there’s gonna be a map wide guild war!? Just yesterday, it was Q-sword destroying Ye Lai in an arena match and today it’s this. Goddamn, this city never gets boring!”

.....

Out in the wild, my lovable [Ancient Heavenly Tiger] marched alongside me, and periodically growled at any unseen threats as I rode at the very front. Occasionally, we would run into groups of random players but we left them alone. They weren’t our targets. After a while, we entered a patch of forest and around this time, people began to report their locations. Soon Qing Qian sent me a pm, “Xiao Yao-gege, about 700 meters straight south of your location is a group of 110 Greedy Wolf Raiders. They haven’t been alerted to your presence yet!”

“Got it!”

I pulled out my sword and held it up, “Alright men, follow me! Don’t worry about your mount’s stamina. Full on [Sprint]. They’re only 700 meters away!”

One after another, the people behind me pulled out their weapons as well. Only Yue Yao Yan, cautious by nature, asks me, “Chief, do you think this might be an ambush?”

“Not a problem. Even if it’s an ambush, we can still kill our way out! Besides, I doubt [Heroes Mound], [Vanguard] or [House of Prestige] will outright pick a fight with us right now. With our mobility, at this point, there shouldn’t be anything capable of holding us down other than a shieldwall of at least 10 times our numbers. It doesn’t like there’s such a combat force over there.” I calmly dismissed her worries.

Her apprehensiveness turned into a wry grin, “Okay then, let’s do this!”

.....

It was a moonlit night. Under the night moon, amidst a galloping dust cloud, numerous glints of cold light glimmered like shiny stars that glowed in a fog.

After we passed through this patch of forest and more, just as Qing Qian reported, less than 200 meters in front of us was a band of [Thousand Burial]'s mounted heavy cavalry. Every one of their names were blood red. Next to their IDs was an icon of a wolf's head; the telltale sign of the [Greedy Wolf Brigade]. This group did not appear to have a commander though. Their level range isn't that high either, just around 105-110. But it was enough for bullying weaker players.

At this moment, one of their riders suddenly turned around. Upon seeing what was behind them, he was stupefied, "SHIT, it's [Zhan Long]'s elites! I think I saw Xiao Yao Zi Zai's ID for a second there; no mistakes, that is a CBN Top 100 emblem!"

"Fuck what do we do!?"

"RUN! What the hell else can we do? You wanna fight Xiao Yao Zi Zai!?" A Berserker from the sides berates him. "We have a bonus 20% movement speed so move your asses already. We'll live as long they can't catch up to us!"

"...Right! Let's run for it!"

.....

While these guys were still deliberating what to do, I had already given my order.

"KILL!"

A whole bunch of us immediately blitzed over like thunder; our speed accelerating all of a sudden. All of us were the elites among elites. Even if the opponent had that boost from being a Greedy Wolf Raider, we'll still win in speed. Old K, flailed his battle axe, and was right on my tail as I charged into their rear. The brilliance of golden stars flashed for a second as I directly dispatched one of their low defense Berserkers with a [Combo].

Even as I pull my hand back, I set down a [Black Tortoise Realm] and instantly caught dozens in its Slow debuff aoe. Old K, Yue Yao Yan and the others immediately swept right through them.

Quite a few of us had used [Charge] as soon as they were within 40 meters. Even if the target could dodge the initial hit, the gap in distance had effectively

been nullified; and left them open to even more attacks.

So I didn't hold back either. Triggering the Rage skill [Halberd Flame], I charged right into their midst; twin swords dancing. Dispatching people left and right, it is as if I had become invincible. At my side this whole time, the [Ancient Heavenly Tiger] also lets out an imposing roar and ran ahead with a [Burstfire Raid]. After that is a [Fierce Roar]; the shock wave slammed into the crowd. Then, it raised a single paw, a golden brand instantly butchered another heavy shield warrior, taking out over 20k HP in one go. [Ancient Fire Branding]. Impressive.

My [Flying Scythe War Horse] was actually faster than I thought. In almost no time, I had already penetrated right through them and passed the ones running at the very front. Then seeing as how they could no longer get away, the one who lead the escape brought up his lance; and furiously screamed, "Comrades! Since we can't get away... let's risk it! It's not like we're outnumbered! What's there to be scared of!?"

.....

Before he even finished speaking, my sword had already sent out a [Sword Tempest] and Old K followed up with a [Whirlwind Slash] helped clear out a path in the crowd. Dozens were felled in the blink of an eye; as if indirectly informing him that numbers don't mean anything here.

# Chapter 680 - Firewolf Valley

“RETREAT! RETREAT! We can’t win this!”

No one knew who started to shout that first, but it finally caused the remainder that had long since lost any and all morale to finally give up. The last 20 or so of them began to scatter in all directions.

Yao Yan immediately turned around and rode up beside me, “Chief, should we give chase?”

I tightened the grip on my sword, it’s [Kill for Blood] stack has already reached 21.

“Pursue for another 60 seconds. After that, immediately gather back here; we will be looking for new targets.”

“Understood!”

Everyone present wasted no time to charge off. At this point, their targets weren’t any different from melons or vegetables. Easy choppings. My [Blade Spin], especially, displayed its might on this occasion. I unceasingly weaved left and right among the escapees and dropped the low HP players, one after another. They had an additional penalty of 20% drop rate upon death for being red name so equipments and items littered the ground. This should work as a start for getting our compensation.

Shoop!

I just randomly picked something up and it turned out to be a Saint tier chestplate. I looked around and it seemed like just about everyone else also discovered this unexpected payoff. I raised up the chestplate in my hand to catch their attention.

“We’ll be putting all these equipment drops into the guild warehouse. They will be used as reparations for our comrades that were ambushed and lost experience and equips. What do you all think?”

“That’s fine. Those of us here shouldn’t be lacking in gear anyway!” Old K

gave me a big stupid grin.

Ah, that's true. Of all the people I assembled here, even the worst equipped were already covered in Saint tier equipment from head to toe. As elites from [Zhan Long], there really shouldn't be anything they lacked or wanted that could be found on the bodies of people from [Thousand Burial]. In that case, to use these gears to make up for losses suffered by our members was the most efficient method. Not only do we not really lose out on anything, but it would serve to solidify the unity among the guild members; that's even better!

Everyone gathered together again after a bit. Out of this 100-man team, not a single one was missing. Our surprise attack this time was just too abrupt. These Greed Wolf Raiders couldn't even manage the slightest bit of resistance. Of course that had a little something to do with me, Old K and Yao Yan charging at the very front. Against most players near level, even if they wanted to kill us, they couldn't do it fast enough. Then after they were bulldozed by a couple of our AOE's, they couldn't even muster up the spirit to fire back an attack.

We continued to move along the forest, camouflaged by the vegetation. You Yi was somewhere out here in the wild but we didn't know where. Without a specific location, our target right now was just the [Greed Wolf Brigade]. However, as none of us had any ideas as to their movements, we were no more than a group of rangers on the patrol. We were restricted to wander all over the map, and mainly rushed to help when our people suffered an attack.

.....

At this time, Li Mu's voice pops up in the guild channel, "Not good.....Just south of the city, Matcha's group is under siege by 300+ [Thousand Burial] members personally led by Not Ordinary himself.....Whoever's closest... Go help!!!"

".....Don't need reinforcements.....We can handle this ourselves!" Matcha cut him off, evidently out of breath.

"Eh?"

Li Mu went dumb. Looks like he didn't believe Matcha.

"You sure you don't need help??"

“En!”

“Uncle Li Mu, you can rest easy. There’s an elevated area in this forest. Matcha-jiejie had 30 of us hold off [Thousand Burial] while the other 70 used that high ground to charge their formation. Not Ordinary mainly brought archers and mages with him; even if he’s got 300 people, they’re not our match!” Tang Xin also jumped in.

Wolf’s wry laugh made its way into the chat, “Looks like we really can’t underestimate Matcha-jie’s strategic and commanding abilities.”

One Second Hero guffawed and his voice held a hint of pride, “Forget underestimating... we’ve been left completely humbled! MAN that was a fun fight! You guys better not slack off!”

“Any combat going on anywhere else? Let me know, as we’re about to fall asleep here.” I finally joined in.

“Since you asked nicely, just over at the foot of the North-South Mountain divide east of Tian Ling City is a place known as “Firewolf Valley”. Death God’s Elegy has been leading a group of 500 from our third branch guild and leveling around its outskirts. But it seems You Yi is on his way there with a group of 5000+ people. Everyone of them has the stigma of the [Greed Wolf Brigade]. The newly recruited CBN ranker “Leisure” seems to be with them too so this should be the core force of [Thousand Burial]. Should we form up, Chief?” Dancing Forest brought grim news with her.

That startled me, “For the sake of just killing 500 people from our third branch, they’re actually using 10x the numbers? Just how much manpower does [Thousand Burial] have right now to afford such a move?

“[Thousand Burial]’s main guild recently ranked up into a level 5 guild, and is maxed out at the limit of 10,000 members. Add on the 6 or 7 other branch guilds, their total numbers should just come up short of 30,000. Originally, their total was just 10,000. But within the last 24 hours, the RMB boosted that up to almost 30,000. There’s no end to Not Ordinary’s ambitions. To lynch the 500 of our people at [Firewolf Valley] is probably his way of sending us a warning. No matter what, we shouldn’t let him do as he wants.....” Dancing Forest gave me a short rundown.

I concurred, “Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Little Dance. You three start to gather up our main guild’s members. Form a group 5000 strong and come to [Firewolf Valley]. I’m gonna head over there with my group first and do whatever we can. Li Mu, you and Matcha don’t need to come. Continue to hunt them down all across the map. Don’t give them any time to rest!”

Wan Er had a sweet smile on, “En! Right away!”

.....

Pulling hard on the reins, I quickly gave new orders, “Everyone change directions! Make for [Firewolf Valley]!”

Yao Yan, Cang Lei and Old K had heard the situation on the guild channel too, so they didn’t need any explanations.

“Got it!”

Old K and Cang Lei may be fearless warriors but all they care about is the heat of the fight. Even after they got orders, they only knew how to forge on straight ahead. However, Yao Yan retained a crafty side to her under that surface of valour. After she paused a bit to think, she turned towards me.

“Chief, do you really think You Yi would lead 5000 men there simply to hunt down Death God’s Elegy and 500 people? I think there’s something more to this.....”

“Then what do you think is their true aim?” It’s gratifying to have someone smart in the group.

The emblem of the [Zhan Long Guard Corps] Guild Leader flashed above her shoulder as she continued.

“This whole time, the [Greed Wolf Brigade] has been roaming all across the map killing our people and claiming they’re bringing retribution on us; that seems to be all bark and no bite. None of their parties have consisted of more than 100-300 men. They should have already known that just this much cannot even cause us any lingering damage. Yet all of a sudden, they decided to gather up a whole 5000 people to kill Death God’s Elegy and his 500 men. It shouldn’t be something as simple as that. Am I right?”

I agreed with her, “Truth is, I’ve also felt there’s more to this than a simple lynching. They’ve definitely got another goal in mind, except I just can’t figure out what You Yi’s thinking... Oh right! Is anyone familiar with this [Firewolf Valley] map?

Her expression turned into one of helplessness, “None. [Firewolf Valley] was originally a small gap deep in-between the North-South Mountain range and the [Evil Dragon’s Nest]. And since the level of the mobs there was not low, its priority wasn’t that high on the list of maps to explore first. Even now, no one from [Zhan Long] has been there; not even the ones who specialize in pioneering new maps.....”

“Whatever, let’s go and see first. No matter what, we can’t just abandon Elegy’s group!”

“En. But we’re just 100 people. Against a whole 5000, we’re just a drop in the bucket.....”

“Well, we’ll do what we can and let fate do the rest.”

“Kay!”

.....

The sound of hoofs echoed all over. In almost no time, we approached the [Evil Dragon’s Nest]. After checking the ingame map, I decided to avoid the front entrance. That area is no good; too wide open. If You Yi had even a shred of intelligence in him, then he would definitely post lookouts around there. So we chose to climb the mountain adjacent to the nest and went around instead. Under the cover of the foliage, they might not be able to spot our modest 100-man group.

On this rugged mountainside road, my [Flying Scythe War Horse]’s speed experienced a sharp decline. Flames spurted from its nostrils and was accompanied by a deep panting; to gallop over the loose rocks required all its power. On the other hand, Old K and Cang Lei’s war horses belonged to the mountainous type and were able to maintain their high speed. Ah, the advantages of different mount breeds....

Before long, our group completely bypassed the [Evil Dragon’s Nest]. Just a bit



further ahead, the shape of a mountain chasm started to become clear. While I encouraged my mount to go faster, I began to pay attention to my surroundings. Bodies of firewolves decorated the area. Level 125 Thunderous Beasts. The level of this area is pretty high. No surprise, players level 110 and under wouldn't even think about coming here. The risks were too high.

"These corpses still haven't been despawned yet..."

Yao Yan also noticed it.

"It shouldn't be more than 30 minutes since these were killed... Ah, Chief! We've got coordinates. Straight East and 25 degree South; Elegy's group is about 2000 meters from us. But they've been completely encircled already. What do we do?"

'We'll see when we get there!'

"En!"

.....

We moved forward another 500 meters before I signaled a stop.

"Everyone wait here! I'm gonna go scout ahead."

Luckily, the mountain was covered in dense vegetation. We managed to make it this far unseen. Since we hadn't detected any assassins along the way, they should still be in the dark concerning our presence.

My [Flying Scythe War Horse] gave a low neigh, then charged right into the foliage. Along with it, I automatically entered a [Camouflage] state as the passive skill activated. I forged ahead another 400 meters and suddenly came upon an open clearing. The stray boulders that littered this area were streaked with blood and bodies of players adorned the ground. So they have already initiated combat.....

In the distance, the special effects of various skills lit up the night sky. I could see You Yi lead about 3000 people as he forced the several hundred remaining members of [Zhan Long]'s third branch guild into a corner. He ordered the archers, mages and musketeers to bombard them from a distance.

You Yi raised his sword, a sneer plastered all over his face, "Do not engage up

close. Bombard them with long range attacks. Let see how long they can last. These mother-effers. If they dare to revive, kill them again!”

Right in front of this bunch of Greed Wolf Raiders was a disjointed and shabbily formed shieldwall. The head of the third branch guild, Death God’s Elegy, stood at the very front and center. His mount was probably killed already so now he’s maintaining a defensive posture while on foot. His face was blackened with ash; probably from being burnt by fire spells. His sword and armor were drenched in blood as well. Only a sparse few heavy melee players still stood beside him. Out of his 500-man party, it didn’t look like even 200 had survived.

.....

I ground my teeth fiercely to hold back my rage but an odd feeling also surfaced at the same time. They had clearly mobilized 5000 people yet there’s only 3000 or so on scene. Even if you add up all the bodies, the numbers still don’t match. What happened to the other 2000?

“Chief, should we act now?” Yao Yan asked me over party chat.

“Move out!”

“Understood!”

# Chapter 681 - Fiery Greedwolf

Before long, Yao Yan lead the 100-man team through the foliage as well. From this distance, we could see You Yi's men suppressing our comrades with their firepower. That flimsy shieldwall looked as if it would crumble any second now.

"So how are we gonna do this?"

Old K hoisted up his battle axe and licked his lips. He truly was a bloodthirsty warmonger. Even when he saw how outnumbered we were, the first thing that crossed his mind was not if we can put up a fight, but how we were gonna fight.

"Let's just go up and chop them; then call it a day!" Cang Lei proposed.

This left me speechless. This moronic brother duo! It's a good thing there was Yao Yan nearby. If these reckless punks were left to take command during a charge, we might as well call it GG already.

Yao Yan gave me a look, "Chief, your orders?"

I returned a nod to her then gave my instructions in the party chat, "Everyone follow me and charge; if you get stunned by archers, don't panic. If you're still alive after you recover, then catch up. We're aiming for their mage formation. There's still at least 30 healers with Death God's Elegy. Once we get over there, 30 of us will get a [Hundred Battles] buff; those people will lead the second charge to break everyone out. If we get stuck back there, it will only end in total annihilation."

"Understood!" Yao Yan chuckled.

After all was said and done, I wasted no time to make my move. After I called out the [Dou Qi Wall] and [Frost's Armor], with a low howl, I activated the [Dragon's Whistle of Thunder & Lightning] to apply its buff effect onto the people within ten meters of me. Then, with the Ancient Heavenly Tiger by my side, I charged out at top speed and left behind an afterimage of a red blur. By the time their mages discovered me, it was too late. I triggered my [Halberd Flame] and I plunged right into their midst. A quick chain of indiscriminate attack skills promptly cuts down 5 of them. Then with the twin swords, I opened

a path forward and tanked barrage after barrage of attacks. The ones from the archers were still okay, but the mages' hurt like hell.

ROAAAAAAAAAAAAAR!

The Ancient Heavenly Tiger also savagely charged in with me. The image of its giant version was superimposed over it. With all four of its paws ablaze, it ran wild among the crowd. And since [Flame Armor] was on, they couldn't even break its defense; but the shock wave from a timely [Fierce Roar] pounded into the surrounding players.

After I'd tanked for most of the initial burst, Yao Yan, Cang Lei and Old K led the rest of us over in a frenzied charge. Our hundred people swept right through like a violent gust.

As he watched from a safe distance, You Yi was already grinding his teeth in fury, "Don't panic! There's isn't even a hundred of them! Archers, [Stun Shot]! Mages, [Lullaby]! Kill their advance!"

Finally, a group of 'Greedy Wolf Raiders' returned to their senses. Then nonstop [Lullaby] spells made their way towards us. A dozen or so of us immediately stopped dead in our tracks; only a couple managed to be awakened right away by a hit from a nearby companion. Despite their new orders, the [Thousand Burial] members were simply too untrained; and in their rush, wasted too many [Lullaby]s on the same targets. But even so, we were dealt a severe blow.

.....

By the time I broke through their encirclement, only 50 or so were still behind me. The rest were either killed off or were being chain stunned/forced to sleep-way back there.

"Chief!"

Death God's Elegy was astonished, "Why are you guys here? What....."

I hurriedly cut him off, "Quickly have the healers buff us with [Hundred Battles]; we're breaking you all out! Don't try to engage or we're all finished!"

"Got it! You guys, quick....."

Streams of light began to shine over us. Yao Yan, Old K and Cang Lei all got the buff, which boosted their attack power by 25%. Scary. Furthermore, 32 of us got an [Anti-Magic Shield] as well. Since all of us were of the heavy armor class, this is just perfect!

I turned around, and found You Yi furiously mouthing off, “Shieldwall! Lock Xiao Yao Zi Zai in there as well! You motherf\*cking c\*nt! You’re too f\*cking full of yourself! You think you can deal with 3000 of us with just 100!?”

Riders from [Thousand Burial] formed up a line and slammed their tower shields into the ground, and effectively cut us off from our companions that had been CC’d during the break in.

.....

“What do we do? Their shieldwall formation is actually pretty solid. We’ve experienced it first hand.....” Death God’s Elegy whispered to me as he re-summoned his horse and got on. “If we’re to break through with brute force, we’ll definitely have to pay a deadly price.....”

I flashed him back a grin, “It’ll be fine, just charge in after me. We’ll break through to the west!”

“Got it!”

With the plan set, I raised up my hand. Rage Skill: [King’s Domain] activate!

A pillar of light burst into the sky. My rage bar was emptied in an instant. A holy shroud enveloped the area within 500 meters of me and all friendlies received a buff. For 2 minutes, they would all enjoy a 100% boost to attack and defense as well a heal over time of 10% their maximum HP for every second. It was only in situations like these, that this Rage Skill could be perfectly utilized.

“KILL!”

Even as the tip of my sword pointed forward, we had all already started to charged out. Mid-charge, I abruptly sheathed my [Brilliant Flame Emperor]. Instead, my now empty left hand swung back, and hid the currents of electricity that swam up and down my arm. At the same time in the sky, dark clouds began to converge over this area; occasionally they discharged small streaks of lightning.

You Yi noticed something wrong and looked up. Immediately, his pupils contracted, “F\*CK! It’s Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s [Thundering Heavens]! Everyone dodge.....!”

Too late! [Thundering Heavens] began to strike down right onto [Thousand Burial]’s shieldwall. There was at least a couple hundred people within its encompassing area. Numerous lightning bolts which brought hail and blades of wind with them, ripped right through the bodies. It pretty much one-shotted everyone it struck other than some Knights that stacked up HP. But even so, that once imposing shieldwall formation had become an open ground. The ones that were just barely hanging on were promptly finished off by the charge of Yao Yan and company. As for me, the [Kill for Blood] on my [Dragon Reservoir Sword] instantly hit 150%.

The [Flying Scythe War Horse] gave a resounding neigh as it carried me to the very front right into the enemy ranks. Like an unstoppable lightning bolt, I cleared out a path with my dual swords in hand once more. Even You Yi could only run for cover while he directed people to come and try to fill in the gaps. But how could anyone even stand against us during these two minutes? The remaining 200+ of us effortlessly slaughtered our way through.

You Yi wouldn’t give up though, and practically howled, “Everyone, mount up and chase them! They’ve got mages and healers with them; their speed is handicapped!”

Behind You Yi, there was still at least 2500+ people from [Thousand Burial]. No matter what, we were still at a complete disadvantage. Death God’s Elegy grimly gripped his sword’s hilt and looked towards me. Seems he’s also grasped that we probably might not make it today. Rage was already simmering out of his eyes.

“Guildmaster, you guys go ahead first! Let me take the rear. It’s about time I settle this with You Yi!”

I cut him off with a swing of my sword arm.

“Rejected. None of us will be left behind today. We’ll just set up formation here and face them head on. Wan Er and Dong Cheng should be here soon with our true main force. There’ll be nothing to worry about.”

Yao Yan also gestured with her shield, “That’s right! We’ll just duke it out right here!”

Maybe he had heard us and felt endangered, but at this moment, You Yi’s embittered voice could be heard giving another order.

“Boys, get ready for action!”

.....

I also raised up my own sword to draw everyone’s attention, “Gather up! With me as the center, we’ll make a last stand here!”

At this time, Yao Yan suddenly whispered to me, “Actually..... I just got new intel. Bai Mo Yan is approaching the [Magic Dragon’s Nest] with 4000 more [Thousand Burial] members..... I think we should actually just escape for now. I’ve met many of the experts from her previous guild. If these two groups join up, we’re as good as done for.”

“No. We’ll hold our position here until our reinforcements arrive. If we can’t even fight off [Thousand Burial] today, then we can forget about holding our chins up in Tian Ling City ever again.” I firmly rejected her suggestion of retreat.

Cang Lei piped up, “Yea, that’s right! Let’s do it here. Let see who f\*cks who over!”

Yao Yan exposed a helpless expression, “Fine. Then this lady will gladly accompany everyone along to hell and back.....”

.....

On the opposing side, an Archer checked with You Yi, “Vice-Guildmaster, should we wait for Bai Mo Yan’s unit to get here before we attack? I mean, it is Xiao Yao Zi Zai over there. And Hero Ran Min, Cang Lei, Yue Yao Yan and Death God’s Elegy.....”

You Yi coldly sneered, “What’s there to still be afraid of? Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s large scale AOE and Rage skills are on cooldown. All that’s left is a fangless tiger. The current him is simply a higher than average level player that we can just crush with our greater numbers. Archers make sure to keep your targets on him. He’s definitely not gonna get out of this one!”

My heart faltered for a bit. It's just as You Yi said. If hundreds of people in their 5th advancement class were focused on firing at me, I was gonna end up in crumbs even if I was made of metal.

But still, no matter what, this could only strengthen my resolve. For the sake of the comrades beside and behind me.

.....

The enemy began their advance on us. I started off with 'greeting' a dozen or so of them with my ranged skills before the focused fire left me near death, and I had no choice but to quickly withdraw back for some healing.

Nearby, Yao Yan with just 17% HP looked to me once more, "Guildmaster, we really should..... just retreat. They have too much firepower..... We'll really end up completely annihilated——"

"Yao Yan, haven't you felt something's off? This situation... it feels like You Yi is more focused on ridding this map of our presence rather than their revenge. Like... he's trying to protect something.....?"

"...That....." Alarm appeared on her face.

She recalled for a couple seconds, then looked up, "That seems to be true..... but what could he be hiding?"

I lightly smirked, "That's still a mystery for now... but, all we need is to have someone sneak in and find out."

"En. But who?"

".....She's already on the move."

"Eh?"

.....

ShaaaaaaShaaaaaa.....

Not far from us, a patch of tall withered grass trembled a bit as a slender figure dashed past like a blur and disappeared into thin air. Daggers readied in hand, Qing Qian neatly circumvented the conflict area and made her way behind You Yi's rear and further into the map.



Her unanticipated early arrival had given me new hope. Wan Er and Dong Cheng shouldn't be too far behind with our reinforcements. At the very least, they shouldn't be any slower than Bai Mo Yan's group.

.....

We endured for another 10 minutes. Then behind us, at the valley's entrance, a large number of people began to show up. It was Bai Mo Yan and [Thousand Burial]'s people!

"They're here!" Yao Yan became frantic.

"Yea, and so is Wan Er!" I couldn't help but feel relieved.

As expected, Bai Mo Yan did not immediately rush our undefended rear. She braced herself on the slope and began giving orders.

"Change positions, all heavy melee withdraw to the rear line and ready the defense. Cang Tong and Cang Yue are here with their people!"

.....

Plop!

I received a PM from Qing Qian, "Xiao Yao-gege, I've discovered why they're so stubborn about not letting us into [Firewolf Valley]!"

"Good. Why?"

"In a low area near the center of the valley, is the top of a waterfall. And below that waterfall, is a spawn point for the [Fiery Greedwolves]. However, within every group of 100 wolf mobs here is a level 1 tameable wolf. Once tamed, they can become mounts. What grade and stats they have are currently still unknown. But one thing is for sure; they're quality mounts."

'...Is that so? Now I get it.....'

# Chapter 682 - Secret Troops

“Wew..... [Zhan Long]’s reinforcements have arrived.....”

You Yi looked into the distance as he scowled and furrowed his brows. “The Greed Wolf Brigade may be strong but they might not necessarily win against the members of [Zhan Long] who have the advantage in numbers. What to do.....”

An archer who was just beside You Yi said, “ Vice-guild master, guild master Not Ordinary has asked us to retreat into the deepest parts of Firewolf Valley and guard the entrance by the waterfall. He said that as long as we can hold it for 2 hours, all will be settled.”

“Ok!”

I don’t know what You Yi told Shen Bing but it was not long before she dissolved her defense and led over 4000 members of the main force of [Thousand Burial] directly towards Firewolf Valley. A huge group of players brushed past us like a strong tide and in comparison, the hundreds of men I brought were mere stones in the wave. Even though we would not be swept away by the wave, we too were unable to stop them from leaving.

.....

After a few minutes, the silhouettes of Wan Er and Dong Cheng also appeared at Firewolf Valley. Behind them, there were 5000 elite players of [Zhan Long] with the [Zhan Long] emblem shining bright on their shoulders. Furthermore, the players possessed equipment that were all top tiered. With a trembling ray of light on their blades, their killing intent could be felt in the air under the moonlight.

“What’s the plan now?” Wan Er asked as she walked forward, lifting her dagger.

Looking at the depths of Firewolf Valley, I said, “ In there, there is a new type of Grade 1 mount, the [Fiery Greedwolf]. [Thousand Burial] is obstructing us, [Zhan Long] and our divisions, from entering the valley probably because they

wish to monopolise this mount. If I'm not mistaken, there should be a large number of Knights from [Thousand Burial] trying to tame the mounts there. Firewolf Valley is not all that large, they should be able to clear the whole area very quickly."

"[Fiery Greedwolf]?"

Unease rippled through Wan Er's eyes as her gaze landed on a mountainous forest with a waterfall. She explained, "I have actually heard that these mounts are spiritual grade and have a level requirement of 105, increasing attack speed by 40% and movement speed by 180%. When they kill their opponent, they will acquire 2% of the experience from the loser's current experience bar. They will also increase the opponents and their own drop rate by 10%. This is a detailed description of their attributes.

I was slightly stunned. "To think it increases drop rate..... And even an attack speed bonus of 40%. It also steals experience, f\*\*\* ..... This mount truly lives up to its name as a greedy wolf, so ravenous. Does it rely on plundering to survive and protect itself? A movement boost of 180%, that's closely similar to my Flying Scythe Warhorse. What a good mount....."

Old K lifted his battleax as he walked forward, saying "If we were to let these brats to possess a huge number of Blazing Greedy Wolf, with the bonus attributes from Greedy Wolf Brigade, this [Thousand Burial] might just turn out to be a major sore in Tian Ling City. That insane speed coupled with the ability to plunder, when hundreds of knights on their Blazing Greedy Wolf attack, that is simply a nightmare.

Dong Cheng agreed. "That's right. If we let this situation continue, [Thousand Burial] will truly have the power to rival us, [Zhan Long], in Tian Ling City!"

Wolf walked out of the void with his dagger lifted. "Brother Xiao Yao, it would not be wise to delay this any further. We should act now. We can't let such good resources in Firewolf Valley be monopolised by [Thousand Burial]."

I nodded my head, replying while I unsheathed my Dragon Reservoir Sword. "Let's attack then. Kill off all of the Greedy Wolf Raiders! Since You Yi has provoked [Zhan Long], let us give them the taste of being extinguished!"

Wan Er giggled as she nodded. "En, let's attack!"

.....

A group of knight class players started to get onto their mounts, seemingly a lament for the dead. Yue Yao Yan and the members from her guild too mounted their mounts as they closely followed behind me. I reined in my horse's head and just charged forward without a word. With me, I have over 5000 men, all of which were the elite members handpicked from not only the main guild but also from the guild divisions, none of which were afraid of picking a fight with [Thousand Burial]. It was a great opportunity that currently that there are thousands of Greedy Wolf Raiders from [Thousand Burial] hiding in the depths of Firewolf Valley. This way, we are able to deal with all of them in one fell swoop and show our dominance. Else, they might think that us members of [Zhan Long] were easy prey.

As we madly charged into the depths of the valley, any Firewolf we saw on the way were all killed. However, these wolves did not allow for players to mount them. It did not matter if they were killed. After a few minutes, loud sounds of rushing water could be heard in the distance. In front of us was a massive waterfall cutting the valley right down the middle with roughly 10 metres in height but not a single guard was to be seen at the top.

Standing at the edge of the waterfall, water rushed past the four hooves of my warhorse. As I looked downwards, I saw that the waterfall crashed down into a lake below which didn't seem to be very deep. However, roughly 50 yards away from the shore of the lake, players from [Thousand Burial] could be seen tightly packed together, most of which were archers, musketeers, mages and other long-distance attackers. You Yi and Bai Mo Yan could also be seen in the mix. You Yi truly was smart, making use of the terrain to defend. If members from [Zhan Long] were to jump down to engage them, we would definitely be extinguished. Firstly, our players would be drenched, causing many of our knight class players to suffer a decrease in movement. In water, formations were simply useless. The moment we go down, we are just going to expose ourselves to their full firepower.

"Sh\*t. This is truly despicable....."Yue Yao Yan bit onto her silver tooth as she commented. "They are truly waiting idly for opportunities. They plan to wait for us to jump down and eliminate us.....Wan Er, what should we do?"

Wan Er giggled as she replied. “This is simple.....”

She turned around to face the rest of the members as she started to explain, “We have a height advantage of 10 metres at the top of this waterfall. This should increase our firing range by 30%. Dong Cheng, Xiao Wu, Tang Xue, organise our long-ranged classes and gather at the edge of the waterfall. After we concentrate our firepower towards the enemies, Pig will bring his men down to clear the rest !”

As she said so, the beautiful vice-guild master twitched the edge of her lip upwards and laughed. “If You Yi and Not Ordinary thought that 50 million RMB could allow their guild to have a huge increase in power, now we shall teach them that a super guild cannot be developed using money, at least not only with money!”

“Yeah!”

Wan Er was truly a wise general. As she was a Hermit God Class, her fighting abilities were very strong but I always looked highly upon her ability to command troops. It can be said that with Wan Er, Matcha and Li Mu, [Zhan Long] will never be at a disadvantage in any kind of fight.

A large group of archers, mages and musketeers gathered together at the edge of the waterfall while Dong Cheng had dense smoke rising from the flames gathered within her palm. As she did so, she laughed and instructed, “Ok. There’s nothing that needs to be said. Prepare to fire! 3, 2, 1, fire!”

The firepower came from above covering the sky like a net. Fox carried a fiery red firearm as he skillfully reloaded the gun, snickering, “Musketeers, use [Refined Ammunition] to strengthen your attacks. Just use [Incendiary Ammunition] to fire!”

With this, his firearm trembled a little bit before a loud, ear-splitting “Bang” gunshot could be heard. It was the fifth job advancement skill--- [Flame Bullet]. Instantly, a ball of fire could be seen shot out from the muzzle of the gun, exploding in the midst of the group that You Yi and Bai Mo Yan were in. It caused severe damage within 10 metres of the explosion. Furthermore, it was the [Refined Ammunition] skill attack afterwards that gave an increase of 50% in attack power. A whole sea of red could be seen as everyone received damage

numbers over ten thousand. The relentless burning of the ground caused by the [Flame Bullet] resulted in continuous burn damage inflicted onto the affected. The ground had simply turned into a red sea of fire due to all the bullets fired by the musketeers together with Fox. This truly allowed one to see the prowess of musketeers in a battle, this is no longer at the level of an archer.

You Yi was left at half health as he gritted his teeth and protected Bai Mo Yan while they retreated. Destruction caused by the [Flame Bullet] could be seen all over the ground as the blazing flames were combusting with a “pi pa pi pa” sound, continuously burning through the health of the Greedy Wolf Raiders. It wasn’t long before the players started to break down from the attack.

“Retreat 20 metres!” You Yi ordered in a loud voice”

.....

I urged my mount and raised my blade as I stood at the edge of the waterfall. I laughed in joy, “Close-combat classes, follow my lead as we take this opportunity to attack and break the Greedy Wolf Brigade’s formations!”

With that said, my Flying Scythe War Horse whinnied loudly as it charged downwards into the waterfall. I felt a slight tug on my arm as Wan Er tightened her grip onto it while she followed behind me.

“Bang!”

The water in the lake below splashed out everywhere as the four hooves of my Flying Scythe Warhorse landed continued to gallop in the water. Old K, Yue Yao Yan and other members of the guild also followed along to attack while the enemy was still suffering from the firepower of Dong Cheng, Dancing Forest, Glass Fox and the other long-ranged classes. In one swift move, I charged down the waterfall and lead the pack in the very front. Wan Er however, relaxed her grip on me and fell onto the ground, erasing her traces as she landed. Afterwhich, she charged forward by my side.

With my Dragon Reservoir Sword raised up, I launched a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] off from a distance. Its blazing energy landed on a large group, removing a substantial chunk of their health. Ten Greedy Wolf Raiders tried to counterattack but they were stopped by Wan Er’s [Ice Pick Whirlpool]. Amidst the grass, I could see Qing Qian’s shadow. She reached out and a [Grip of the

Firefox] appeared in a group, killing many in its wake. I took advantage of this opportunity and used a [Sword Tempest] while summoning my Ancient Tiger God to use a [Burstfire Raid]. Instantly, we had gained the upper hand as we dealt a huge blow to the members of [Thousand Burial].

However, what was happening behind me was more important. Old K, Yue Yao Yan and the others part of the close-combat classes charged over. Despite the wide variety of mounts all over the place, their destructive strength was still displayed to the fullest. In the one exchange of blows, we were able to break through [Thousand Burial]'s formations. Dong Cheng had also lead the long-ranged specialists to follow up with the attack. It was clear which of the two sides had the superiority in strength.

Most of the members here were mostly elites from [Zhan Long]'s main guild whereas [Thousand Burial] was not even amongst the top twenty of China's guilds. Just what makes them think that they would be able to contend with the elites from [Zhan Long]? There was still a wide gap between the standards of the two guilds.

.....

"This isn't good....."Shen Bing lifted her bow and as she fired off a [Shot of the Archery God]. She pursed her lips and asked, "We simply cannot fend against them. This brat, didn't you say you had a killing move? Why don't I see you performing any move right now?"

You Yi's lip twitched upward as he replied. "There's no issue. I've got a plan."

"Plan my \*ss. We're about to lose!"

"Oh, it's on it's way!"

You Yi raised his blade with two hands and sent out a [Sword Break] followed by a [Skysaker Slash] to kill off an archer at half health. Then, he ordered, "Everyone, maintain formation! Our reinforcements are about to arrive. He he, soon enough we can let [Zhan Long] witness the true power of [Thousand Burial]. Your daddy's secret troops will also have finally be of use!"

Wan Er's [Blade of the Death God] had killed off a Greedy Wolf Raider in one hit. She asked in shock, "Who exactly is giving You Yi this much confidence for

him to act so arrogantly?”

I stared at the big map and said, “ Be careful, just at our northeast direction, there are some red dots clustered up together who are using the cover of the terrain to proceed over. They are approaching fast! Yue Yao Yan, bring some men and hold off their advance!”

“Understood!”

Yue Yao Yan waved her sword as she lead the [Zhan Long: Defense Army]’s knights charging over.

.....

In the next moment, a large ball of flame suddenly emerged from the reeds near the lake. It was followed closely by a second, a third and many more. To be exact, it was not a large ball of flame but rather a Greedy Wolf shrouded in blazing fire. The body of such a Greedy Wolf did not have much difference from a warhorse as the bones at the back were different from other wolves, spacious and slender, which made it possible for people to mount it. Furthermore, there would be lesser bumps when the wolf was travelling long distances.

True enough, [Thousand Burial] had finally gotten a cavalry unit with the Fiery Greed Wolf as their mounts.



# Chapter 683 - Magma Falls Mountain Range

There were around 300+ Greedy Wolf Raiders. The leader was one of [Thousand Burial]'s new recruits. It was also someone that we had heard of——

Minimalist LV 115 Gold Knight

City: Tian Ling City

Guild: [Thousand Burial]

Position: Team Leader

He was a young man around 22 years old clothed in black armor. He carried a long sword that had flames spouting from the tip and he rode on a Flame Greedwolf. The wolf growled at Yue Yao Yan..

Minimalist smiled and said, “Since I joined [Thousand Burial], my first battle would actually be against [Zhan Long]. Interesting. Brothers, charge with me. Let’s show [Zhan Long] just who is unrivaled in this world!”

One after another the Greedy Wolf Raiders raised their swords and cheered. In the next moment, they all charged forward. Yao Yan was a girl who would never give in. And so she raised her blade and roared, “Kill!”

Nearly a hundred [Zhan Long] players charged at the 300+ Greedy Wolf Raiders lead by Minimalist. Right at the moment they were about to clash, Yao Yan activated [Brave Ram], stunning one of the Greedy Wolf Raiders behind Minimalist. Afterwards, a chain of light flashed and she had cut him down. Minimalist roared and pulled out his blade from his cloak, dealing a chain of attacks.

Watching from afar, I was stunned by the performance. This Minimalist was an expert. He understood the principle of maximising strength by pulling back before striking. If he had directly slashed, then the momentum behind his attack would be far weaker.

The Level 11 [Combo]+[Skyshaker Slash] had instantly killed one of [Zhan Long]'s berserkers. Minimalist then dashed forward and brought a group of

Greedy Wolf Raiders with him to lay destruction. Their attack speed was much faster than that of the [Zhan Long] players. The players that Yao Yan had brought with her were actually met with a situation where they couldn't hold off the enemy. One after another they fell from their horses. In the blink of an eye, 23 of our hundred man army had died.

"Not good...." Dong Cheng narrowed her eyes as she watched the battle unfold, "Brother Xiao Yao, you and Wan Er go and deal with these Greed Wolf Brigade members. Leave the rest to me!"

"Ok!"

I urged my horse out and charged forward. I raised my sword while I was still a distance away. Power rushed into my arm and I locked [Great Realm of Desolation] onto a Greedy Wolf Raider. The skill exploded and I had unexpectedly dealt a Superior effect with critical damage in that one attack!

"37224 ! "

The rider fell off his mount and was instantly killed. Looks like these Greedy Wolf Raiders are just faster. Other than that, they weren't much stronger than our [Zhan Long] players.

"Kill!"

Old K, Moon Feather, Star Blade and Lin Xiao Xie all followed in my lead. Nearly 500 of [Zhan Long]'s close combat players charged forward to turn the tides of war. The enemy's formation began to fall apart. They were like a fist that had lost its strength after the initial hit at Yao Yan's team. Now that they had lost their strength and were met by [Zhan Long]'s attack, they were also losing their drive.

"Ka cha!"

My Dragon Reservoir Sword swept out, slashing into one of the Greed Wolf Raiders' waist. My Kill for Blood effect had reached 150%. Add on skills such as [Sword Tempest] and [Seven Star Fragment Slash], very soon, the 300+ Raiders of [Thousand Burial] unraveled.

"Go!"

My Flying Scythe War Horse leapt up and I raised both my swords and dealt a cut at Minimalist. I want to see just how much weight this CBN Battlenet Ranked 741 expert has!

Once Minimalist spotted my attack, he knew that he wouldn't be able to dodge it. Instead of retreating, he took it head on and parried the attack!

"Keng!"

Sparks flew, and illuminated the dark valley. Minimalist slid across the grass and was pushed back nearly 5 meters by my attack. Shock colored his face. He reached out to grab the reins of the greedwolf. He shouted, "Vice guildmaster, the situation is falling out of our favor. I think that before it gets out of control, we should leave."

You Yi grit his teeth, "Ok, retreat. Retreat 1000 yards to the Flame Wolf Valley!"

.....

The 300+ Greed Wolf Cavalry men had lost 100 men in that short five minutes. The rest retreated. They moved with extreme precision and speed. Unable to catch up, we turned our horses around and massacred the rest of the players on the ground. There was no need to take pity on them however, as they showed no mercy when they were cutting down our players.

In the blink of an eye, 3000+ [Thousand Mound] player corpses lie before us and all of [Zhan Long]'s players had been revived. We established a 5500+ man formation. All in all, it was a great victory for us.

I sheathed my Dragon Reservoir Sword and looked at the situation in the distance, "Just how deep is the Flame Wolf Valley? They're actually retreating a thousand yards into it?"

Wan Er shook her head, "I don't know. It's a map that hasn't been explored yet so we can't see its complete shape."

Old K raised his battle axe and chuckled, "Ah Lei and I think that we should take this chance to pursue. We'll kill them all and beat them up until they don't dare hit us back. We cannot let them obtain more Greed Wolf Mounts!"

I nodded, "That seems to be the right choice..."

"That...."

Wan Er bit her lip and said, "Actually, I've heard of another method. And that is to corner our enemy. No matter how big that Flame Wolf Valley is, it can't be never ending. We should've already killed seventy to eighty percent of their Flame Greedwolves. The number of mounts in that valley should only be slightly bigger than that. There's no need to kill them all, after all, the [Thousand Burial] players will naturally jump over the wall when they are cornered."

I patted my Flying Scythe Horse's mane. I couldn't feel satisfied if I didn't kill them all. However, Wan Er was the vice guildmaster and my girlfriend. I couldn't go against her opinion now. Otherwise I won't be able to ensure the loyalty of my guild. And so, I looked at Wan Er and smiled, "How about this, I'll take a group of mounted players and pursue them 400 yards in. Only 400. Then, Wan Er and Qing Qian, you guys take assassin type players to scout ahead. If there are any untamed Greed Wolves, then we'll attack. Even if we have to kill them, we cannot let [Thousand Burial] get them."

As everyone knew, in this game, as long as there were over 1000 mounts, the army would have created an incredibly strong charging force. With just 300 Greedwolf's, Minimalist was able to break through the [Zhan Long: Defense Army] that Yao Yan lead. To be honest, even if there were over a thousand Greedy Wolf Mounts, we would still be able to cut them all down. However, leaving an enemy this strong was never the best plan. Besides, You Yi and Not Ordinary now carry such a great hatred for me. The mission last time had managed to make Not Ordinary lose over a billion RMB worth of goods. It'd be strange if he didn't hate my guts.

Wan Er stared into my eyes. She seemed to understand my thoughts and grinned, "Alright then. I knew that you were a person crazy for battle. Then we'll advance 400 yards. Qing Qian and I will go ahead and scout. Let's move out!"

.....

And so, everyone excitedly and confidently marched forward. After advancing 400 yards, we saw that quite a few [Thousand Mound] players had already

crushed their City Return Scrolls. One after another, lights flashed in the valley, and illuminated the surrounding.s

Wan Er and Qing Qian entered into the depths of the valley. Not long after, Wan Er said in the team chat, “Melon and I have already reached the deepest part of the Flame Wolf Valley. There was nothing there. All of the monsters here have already been killed. Minimalist still has 2000 people with him here and they’re grinding levels. Right now... There are over a thousand Flame Greed Wolves here. If we take Minimalist’s words, he had said to put the sharp blade back in its sheath... [Thousand Burial] is patiently waiting. They are waiting for the Greed Wolf Brigade to turn into a greater scale and then use those to fight us.”

Qing Qian asked, “Brother Xiao Yao, all of the monsters here have been killed. Level 1 Mount monsters need at least 72 hours in order to spawn. We don’t need to wait here for 72 hours right?”

I shook my head with a smile, “Of course not. This Battle of Flame Wolf Valley is at its end... Not bad, we have the advantage in numbers. We’ll let those [Thousand Burial] Greed Wolf Raiders know that we aren’t to be bullied. Once we reach our goal, everyone prepare to go back to the city!”

“Yes!”

Right at that moment, the General Wang Jian warned us on the guild chat, “Brother Xiao Yao, is our main force still in the Flame Wolf Valley?”

“Yea, we are. What’s wrong?”

Wang Jian told us quickly “Then don’t hurry back. We aren’t going to be able to pass through the night quietly. Li Mu and I brought a hundred man team to duel some Greed Wolf Raiders. We accidentally entered into the Wu Mountain territory. All of the monsters there had high levels and they were all wild beast types. I suggest that you take some people over there to grind some levels. Either way, [Zhan Long] hasn’t had an activity in a long time.”

I faintly smiled, “I’m afraid that’s not all that is there.”

Wang Jian looked down with a smile, “Alright alright, I can’t hide anything from Brother Xiao Yao. We aren’t the only people in this Magma Falls Mountain

Range. [House of Prestige]’s Swift Thunder brought two thousand man teams here. He wants to seize the entire range and won’t allow us up the mountain. Of course, Chief Li Mu wouldn’t back down. He nearly got into a fight with them. The Magma Falls Mountain Range is an enormous map. But no matter where we try to go up the mountain, Swift Thunder just wouldn’t let us climb up. He even cursed at us and said that [Zhan Long] was a group of cowards that were being bullied by [Thousand Burial]. F\*ck that Swift Thunder, he’s overstepped himself. Anyways, I cannot stand by....”

Amazed, I agreed, “Alright then... then we’ll immediately shift towards the Magma Falls Mountain Range. Send your coordinates to me!”

“Yes sir!”

.....

I closed out of the messaging interface and turned around to face everyone else, “The day is still young. Let’s head to the border of Ba Huang City and Fan Shu City to the Magma Falls Mountain Range for a hunt. How does that sound?”

Yao Yan smiled, “Perfect. I still haven’t used up all of the potions in my bag and my sword still has 94% durability left!”

Wan Er nodded, “A grinding map would be the best!”

And so, I checked out the coordinates that Wang Jian sent over and then pointed my horse in that direction. I took all 5000+ players from [Zhan Long]’s main guild into the Magma Falls Mountains. I reached out and pulled the beautiful vice guildmaster onto the horse. Wan Er’s face blushed furiously as she sat in my lap, “What are you going to do if someone else sees?”

“Beat em up....” I replied simply.

However, I was thinking of something completely different. Ever since Tian Ling City had opened up, all of the data on the big maps were open to everyone, which caused the conflict over their resources to become even more inflamed. [House of Prestige] was the sixth biggest guild in the Chinese Server and they were practically second only to [Zhan Long]. And so, they naturally weren’t willing to bow before us. To top it off, Swift Thunder and I have repeatedly provoked each other. As the saying goes, when in Jiang Hu, there is no freedom.

Battles must be fought, whether we want to or not.

Everything that has happened is just as what Fang Ge Que had once told me.

# Chapter 684 Battle of Magma Falls

Cutting through the Magic Dragon's Nest, 5000+ of [Zhan Long]'s elite players climbed the volcano while it was still dormant and passed through the Zi Wu Mountains. Wan Er and I were the first to reach the peak. I looked towards the east. In the distance lay our old home, Ba Huang City. There were green forests as far as the eye could see. Immortal's Path Forest was once a most highly contested grinding map for Ba Huang City's guilds.

.....

I lead my horse down the mountain. After Tian Ling City had opened up, almost all of the maps in the game had respawned. Immortal's Path was one of them. Originally, the Immortals Path Forest only had monsters that were level 100 or so. Now, it was covered with Level 120 Thunder Tier Mobs. There were Poison Wasps, Blue Mantis and Flame Mantis, the three types of mobs. It just so happens that these three give off the most Level 1 babies. On top of that, once a player catches one of these three monsters as a pet, it was very easy to level up its stats. No matter if it was used as support for grinding or killing other players, it was a great addition. And so, even now, the Immortal's Path Forest was an unforgettable map for top tier players. Besides grinding levels, many of them go there to catch pets to earn some money. Quite a few solo players call it their own little heaven.

The Poison Wasp and Blue Mantis both had a six star increase in their strength and a superiority rating between 30% and 80%. They were normally sold at around 10G-100G with a slight deviation. However, if any players caught a pet with a superiority rating above 90%, then it would at least be priced at 800G. And so, quite a few people go there to grind levels. There was at least the chance of meeting one or two Level 1 Babies in a day. Catching one with a superiority over 90% was enough to feed a person for half a month.

My Flying Scythe War Horse snorted flames and galloped forward. My Ancient Heavenly Tiger ran by my side while Yao Yan, Old K, and Dong Cheng Lei followed behind. We grandly marched across the Immortal's Path Forest and did not bother the players that were grinding in the map. The Immortal's Path



Forest was not our target. There were already a large amount of players that had taken up territories here so there wasn't much left to conquer. Comparatively, however, most of the secrets of the Magma Falls Mountain Range map had yet to be scouted out. It was far more worth it if we were to scout out the rest of it.

.....

“Grrr....”

My Ancient Heavenly Tiger roared. We charged out of the Immortal's Path Forest. Further ahead, a mountain wrapped with flames suddenly appeared before us. That was our target——Magma Falls Mountain Range!

Magma Falls Mountain Range's map was similar to Zi Wu Mountain. They were both volcanos. There were flames all over the mountain and rivers of magma that slithered down the slopes. In addition, there were some fire type plants that grew sparsely along the center of the mountain. These allowed monsters that weren't afraid of the flames to survive. They would eat up all of their favorite plants. Our mission this time was to kill these high level flame monsters to grind levels and smelt equipment. Of course, more importantly was to help Wang Jian and Li Mu gain a foothold in this map.

We weren't here to bully others but we would never allow others to bully us!

.....

“Brother Xiao Yao!”

In the distance, Wang Jian rode on a black war horse. He was waving his blade in the air as he smiled, “We're over here”!

Li Mu was close behind him. 100 of the top level players of the [Valiant Bravery] camp were all there. No one had died. Most likely, those who had died in battle had been revived and were waiting for us to come over.

Wan Er's face turned red and she wiggled around in my lap. She then leapt off the horse and raised her dagger. Her cloak fluttered in the wind as she smiled, “Li Mu, how are the mobs here? Do they give a lot of experience?”

Li Mu nodded, “Yup, they're all Level 125 Monsters. There's one type called

the Magma Ox and it has extremely explosive charging power. There's another called the Flame Tailed Scorpion. It's another Level 125 Thunder Tier monster. Of course, there's no need to mention its experience. They're both suitable mobs for [Zhan Long]'s players. On top of that, their drop rates are pretty nice. Wang Jian and I have been grinding here for less than half an hour and we've already gotten two OP equipments. Unfortunately, we were chased out by Thunder Swift's men. D\*mm\*t, they're just relying on the fact that they have more people. They aren't respecting the hundred men that we have here."

I raised my eyebrow and said, "[House of Prestige] only has 2000 players, how could they be so arrogant?"

Li Mu wryly smiled, "Compared to our hundred man team, his 2000 man team is like an army. Plus, why wouldn't Swift Thunder be so arrogant?"

I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and looked up at the Magma Falls Mountain Range. I smiled, "Let's go, why don't we go and check out those Magma Oxen and Flame Tailed Scorpions. If we must, then we'll meet with Swift Thunder and see whether the elites of [House of Prestige] have improved at all!"

Everyone nodded. Most of the people we brought with us were knight types. There were at least 1000 players that had mounts. Furthermore, we had some monks, knights, and berserkers who still hadn't gotten their mounts yet. They were enough to make our foot soldiers able to defend our ranged players. There was no other way. The game had been open for too long and there were less and less mount type Level 1 pets. Let's not talk about getting some amazing godly horse, most people are praying just to get a mount.

.....

1000+ [Zhan Long] knights all entered into Magma Falls Mountain Range. Li Mu, Wang Jian and I were leading the party.

Boulders rolled down the mountain. One after another, hot streams of magma slowly rolled down the mountain. On top of that, some plants grew along the cliffs. Seeing them couldn't help but make people wonder, that plants could actually survive under thousand degree temperature. To top it off, it had a peach like fruit hanging off its stems. Under the firelight it looked shiny

and extremely enticing.

Li Mu smiled, “Those are Magma Fruits. They only grow under high temperatures and around magma. They’re also the Magma Ox’s favorite food.”

“Ok....”

I urged my horse forward. The Magma Fall’s Mountain wasn’t very precipitous and so the mounted players could move around without a problem. The only problem was that our movement speed decreased by 40% or so. But that was fine, we were here to kill monsters, not to run.

Moving forward, the ground began to flatten out. We had entered the first plateau of the mountain. In the distance, the magma river formed a long ribbon that cut between the mountains. Stems of Lava Fruit flourished on the ground. We could even see oxen mooing in the distance. They stood in the rivers of lava and were slowly making their way to the land. It opened its mouth and chomped onto the Magma Fruit. It pulled off both the leaves and the fruit. It happily closed its eyes as chewed in satisfaction. These were the Magma Ox, Level 125 Thunder Tier Monsters!

“Ha....” I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and said, “Nobody advance any more. I will solo it first. I want to see just how strong these monsters are on this Magma Falls Mountains to make Swift Thunder drive [Zhan Long]’s players out like this.”

“Ok.” Wang Jian smiled and nodded.

My horse lunged forward and I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I threw a [Wind Blade]. I rushed forward with my horse. That one attack’s damage was terrifying. It cut into the Magma Ox’s butt, drawing blood. “Moo mooo” it cried out. It turned around and pointed its sharp horns at me. “Pa pa” it dealt two ramming attacks.

I quickly used my Brilliant Fire Emperor to parry the attack. For someone like me, who practices the Twin Blade Swordplay Style, my left hand weapon was much more useful as a parrying and defense tool that would support my right hand’s Dragon Reservoir attack. You could say it was both attack and defense. However, once the opponent loses the strength to counterattack, then that would be the moment that I attack with both swords. [Sword Tempest]’s dense

attacks made the opponents lose their will to fight.

This Magma Ox had already lost its will to live. Practically each attack I dealt created 10,000 damage and my critical hits dealt 30,000 damage. Add on the little tiger's attacks, I had killed the monster in 12 seconds, dealing 20,000 dps.

“Moooooooo.....”

The Magma Ox fell to the ground and actually dropped 1G and 12 Silver. I reached out to pick them up. I couldn't help but sigh, “No wonder Swift Thunder has been protecting this map like it was a treasure chest. Killing one monster actually earns a dollar. D\*mn, this place is like a mine. Wouldn't I be getting a couple hundred in a day?”

Li Mu smiled, “Exactly. Why else do you think that Swift Thunder would try and seize this map? [House of Prestige] was built from scratch. Rumor has it that Bai Li Ruo Feng isn't a board member of any corporation either and so they place a lot of importance on recruiting people in the game. It's pretty similar to our [Zhan Long]. We're all guilds that rely fundamentally on the game.”

I raised my sword and said, “No need to say anymore. Let's go and continue upward. There are too few monsters here. Besides, it looks like it's already been cleaned out once.”

Li Mu nodded, “Yup that's right. Bai Li Ruo Feng and the others have already cleaned out this floor. These ox had probably just spawned. If we go 2000 yards up, then we'll reach a more fertile area of the Magma Falls Mountain. The monsters there spawn faster. That's where Bai Li Ruo Feng drove me out of.”

“Ok let's go!”

We continued pressing forward. More and more Magma Fruit were appearing in the mountains, as well as Magma Ox and Flame Tailed Scorpions. The Flame Tailed Scorpions were just a large Scorpion. It was a whole three meters long when it reached out its head and tail. On top of that, the poison needle on its tail was engulfed with flames. You could just see how strong its flame element was. However, there were just too many of us. We had to practically squeeze through. One or two Flame Tailed Scorpions did not pose any threat.

“Brother Xiao Yao, look over there!”

Qing Qian picked up her dagger and excitedly pointed at the forest like area in the distance. She smiled, “There looks like a lot of Magma Ox here! There’s at least a hundred! I’ll take some men over.....”

I couldn’t help but smile, “Go, go!”

.....

Qing Qian immediately brought over several hundred players. It’s hard to see so many monsters collected in one spot. The beautiful girl was practically drooling. Our main goal this time was to PK, but as normal players, we’re constantly finding ways to improve. Plus, this was a guild activity. Besides the team that Matcha took out to kill the Greed Wolf Brigade, the rest of the elites were all gathered here.

A group of cavalry charged down at the Magma Ox. The Knights used [Holy Provoke] to grab the mobs aggro while the archers and musketeers focused their fire onto the mob. The killing rate was extremely fast and steady. The Magma Ox would summon a Flame Shield that burned everything around a certain target and so our healers would add a [Anti-Magic Shield] around the knights. The entire process was incredibly safe.

.....

After killing the twentieth ox, suddenly, we could hear a shriek coming from the mountains, peaking my curiosity. That was the sound of an arrow. Then, in the next moment, all of the knights that Qing Qian brought with her took a hit. One of them had a chest buried with arrows. He was then instantly killed by an [Indigo Sea Arrow] and a [Flame Bullet].

“Defend, we’ve been ambushed!”

The rest of the knights raised their shields while healers gave health. Bearing the hits we built up our defense.

“Charge!”

I cracked my reins and lead Li Mu, Wang Jian and the others in a charge down the mountain side. In front of us, Swift Thunder raised his battle axe and he coldly looked at us, “Hmph, Li Xiao Yao is here too. Looks like today is destined to be a fierce battle!”

# Chapter 685 - The Shamelessness of [House of Prestige]

There was a protruding rock from the cliff that was overgrown with red plants. Swift Thunder stood under the cliff. He had 300+ [House of Prestige] players with him. They occupied a high area. It seemed like they were playing guard dog here.

.....

In the party chat, Wan Er said, “Li Xiao Yao take your main force and take them head on. Be careful, don’t be killed too quickly. I will take some men and go around back. We have to kick them off that high seat of theirs.”

I cracked my reins and nodded, “Be careful!”

As we were talking, the battle already begun. [Flame Bullets] and [Pillars of Fire and Ice] repeatedly exploded at my feet. Luckily, Darling Duck and the other healers locked their spells onto Li Mu and I. They used their [Anti-Magic Shields] on Wang Jian, Old K, and Yao Yan. The effect from the oncoming [Pillars of Fire and Ice] slowly decreased. On the other hand, the musketeers [Flame Bullet] was a physical attack, but it was unlikely that it would break our defenses. Especially after that battle with the Greedy Wolf Brigade, my Thousand Layer Cliff effect had reached Level 78, and now has the effect of increasing my defense by 78%. It was incredibly hard. If they aren’t high level physical players, there was no way that they could break my defense.

Swift Thunder and the others relied on the fact that they were four meters off the ground and so the mounts wouldn’t be able to charge at them. Li Mu and Wang Jian dashed forward. Li Mu swung his blade and shouted, “[Flying Sword] pierce through them! Use [Sword Break] from a distance to break their shields!”

A group of [Zhan Long] swordsmen players heroically bore with the shots being fired at them and sprinted towards the cliff. They then shot their long swords at the enemy. One after another, the swords pierced into the group of [House of Prestige] players. Li Mu had even thrown his [Covering Sword Slash]

out. Following that, everyone activated their [Sword Break] skills. There was a ten yard radius on the Sword Break Slash. Even though the angle wasn't right, its attack power was still very effective.

.....

Swift Thunder roared. He raised his battle axe and shouted, "Die!"

"Peng!"

The [Battle Axe Throw] landed right onto a swordsman from the [Valiant Bravery Camp], instantly killing the half health swordsman. Swift Thunder's equipment was extremely good. There was no faking his attack power. At the same time, Thousand Suns lead the [Zhan Long] ranged players closer. Five hundred players opened up fire all at once.

In order to decrease our losses, I decided to act. I raised my arm and threw a [Dragon's Hook]!

"Keng!"

My Dragon's Hook pierced through the hard rock, letting out sparks. I grabbed onto my Flying Scythe War Horse's neck and squeezed my legs against its sides. Then, with my left hand, I gave a hard tug. "Shua!" Both I and my horse rushed at the cliff. My Flying Scythe Horse truly was a godly mount. Even in the air it kicked its four hooves as if it were galloping. "Sou!" we landed on the cliff, and still maintained our stance!

Once I entered the crowd, I immediately raised both swords and activated [Halberd Flame] and [Sword Tempest] at the same time. I then followed the attack with a [Seven star Fragment Slash]. The entire rock began to shudder. In the blink of an eye I had killed thirty players. Swift Thunder's eyes turned red with rage. He swung his battle axe and urged his horse at me, "Kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Kill him!"

All of the players rushed at me. Swift Thunder was especially brutal. Under the [Will of the Berserker], his [Flame Axe]+[Battle Axe Whirlwind] were practically released at the same time. It was a sweeping attack. Without a shield, I couldn't block them, and could only take them straight on. My health emptied in that moment. There was only a little over ten thousand points left in

my health. I quickly used a [Cleansing Rain] and then gulped down a health potion. I then rammed my horse into Swift Thunder. My swords threw a flurry of attacks, and forced Swift Thunder into a defensive stance and retreat.

However, all of the other [House of Prestige] swordsmen that rode on their horses all locked their [Skysaker Slash]+[Flying Sword] onto me. Even if Darling Duck and Thousand League Spring both gave me heals, it wasn't enough to deal with my dropping health. I leapt off of my battle horse and with a rather clumsy retreat, I leapt off of the cliff and onto the ground. Even though I had been chased off of the cliff, I had already achieved my goal. With my own power, I managed to create chaos in their formation and that was enough.

.....

I heard the sounds of battle echo from behind the cliff. Following that, a lightning bolt shot through the crowd of players. It was Dong Cheng's attack. Very good. Wan Er's team had made it around the back! I leapt back onto my horse and said to Wang Jian and Li Mu, "Let's head over there and give them some reinforcements!"

"Yes sir!"

The hundred people in front of Li Mu and Wang Jian had been beaten up so badly they began to run. The tides of the battle were finally changing and we quickly sent people after them.

"Peng...."

Swift Thunder jumped off of the rock and he raised his battle axe as he shouted from his mount, "We can't hold this spot any longer. Retreat. Retreat to the right flank. The land here is best for defense and counterattack."

However, a berserker raised his whip and said, "Vice guildmaster, I'm not trying to question your authority, but there are at least 5000 people with [Zhan Long]. That's 2.5 times the size of our army. On top of that, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Cang Tong, Cang Yue, Yue Qing Qian, and the Hero Ran Min are all here. We can't beat them! It doesn't matter if the time or location is right, we'll lose either way!"

Swift Thunder raised his battle axe and suddenly spun around to cut down a



[Valiant Bravery] swordsman. He roared, “So what. Are we just going to surrender to them? I came here to scout when I was in Jiu Li City. This map is [House of Prestige]’s and no one else’s. No one gets to take it from us!”

Li Mu couldn’t help but smile and said as he fought, “Swift Thunder, if you can find your name on this mountain, then I will admit that this map belongs to [House of Prestige]. Can you?”

Swift Thunder was infuriated, “So what if my name isn’t here. Is yours?”

Li Mu growled and charged his horse at the cliff. He swung his sword and threw eight slashes at the rock, creating a big “Mu”. Afterwards he took a look at his work and smiled, “Alright, now, this map has been claimed by me and [Zhan Long]! Kill, kill all of [House of Prestige]’s players!”

“You’re going too far!”

Swift Thunder raised his battle axe and threw a [Battle Axe throw]. However, Yue Yao Yan caught the attack with her shield and didn’t lose much health. In all of Swift Thunder’s fit of fury, never once did he stop to think whether or not chasing Li Mu and Wang Jian was going too far. There’s always one person in this world that feels that everyone else owes something to them.

.....

As we pursued them, the 2000 [House of Prestige] survivors were now left with only 1000. They sustained a loss of over half of their regiment. Most of the bodies were lying on the mountain.

Swift Thunder’s battle axe was dripping with blood but it was nothing compared to mine or Li Mu’s. This time, we completely crushed their forces.

“Li Xiao Yao!”

Swift Thunder grabbed the reins of his mount. Blood was splattered across his armor. He looked at me and clenched his teeth, “Just what do you want?”

I sheathed my sword and smiled, “Not much. Doesn’t [House of Prestige] want to claim this entire map as their own? Right now, I’m just here to put in place some new rules. No matter what’s in this Magma Falls Mountain Range, [Zhan Long] will allow any guild to grind levels with them. However, we do not

welcome anyone from House of Prestige]. You can only grind levels anywhere below 400 feet above sea level. If you go any higher, then [Zhan Long] will kill you on sight. If you don't believe me, then come at us and try!"

When Swift Thunder was in Jiu Li City, he was always a man of his word. Never once had he suffered such humiliation, especially in front of his soldiers. He was shaking in fury. He raised his battle axe and suddenly said something that shocked us all, "Alright... [House of Prestige] will give up this battle over Magma Falls Mountain Range... however, you must keep your promise and allow my brothers to revive. Once they revive, we will leave!"

I wasn't worried that they would deal a counterattack so I nodded, "Sure!"

.....

All of the [House of Prestige] healers walked over. In order to show their good faith, Swift Thunder brought everyone over. Only healers had the ability to revive the people that we had killed. Before my eyes, a large group of players that had been killed were revived with 50% of their health.

Old K picked up his battle axe and wickedly smiled, "Little Li, this is a good chance. Should we go and kill them all?"

I grimaced, "Kill my \*ss.... We need to keep our word."

"All is fair in love and war! And you say that you've read so much about the ways of the military. It must have gone through one ear and out the other...."

"If you taunt me again, I'll nullify your position as a team leader. Then I want to see just what kind of a position you will rely on to pick up those girls in [Zhan Long]...."

"Long live the guildmaster!"

.....

Very soon all 2000 of [House of Prestige]'s players had been revived. Swift Thunder discontentedly left. He didn't look back until he walked very far and shouted, "Li Xiao Yao, hero's do not let their vengeance rest for a night. You must understand that!"

I furrowed my brow, "Leave before I change my mind! If you want to muster

up more people to attack us, then you better hurry up. Who knows, we might even leave soon!”

“F\*cking b\*st\*rd....”

Swift Thunder furiously left. Based on his personality, a revenge activity would probably occur within the next two hours.

.....

But there was no need to worry about that now. I turned around and took everyone to continue grinding levels. The monsters on the Magma Falls Mountain range were incredibly good. We left a thousand players to clean out all of the monsters that newly spawned while the others went to scout out the depths of the map. We pretty much killed all monsters that we saw. As we went, the Magma Ox and the Flame Tailed Scorpions couldn’t hold off our advance.

We continued grinding all the way until noon. Right as I was about to log off to eat, I suddenly heard some noise——

One Second Hero said, “F\*cking h\*ll.... [House of Prestige]’s players really are shameless!”

Li Mu said, “What’s wrong?”

One Second Hero said, “Swift Thunder just brought 5000 players to attack our 500 man team in the Maple Leaf Forest beside Tian Ling City. They are really shameless. If the beautiful Matcha hadn’t noticed it earlier, then we would’ve lost all 500 of them!”

Frustrated, I said, “Swift Thunder can’t beat our main team so now they’re going after Matcha’s? Haha, alright then. No more lunch. I’m heading straight to the city when I get off of the Magma Falls Mountain Range. I’m going to go teach those [House of Prestige] b\*st\*rds a lesson!”

Right at that moment however, Matcha said with a determined voice, “Boss, you don’t have to come. Just let everyone on the Magma Falls Mountain grind their levels. It’s so hard to find a good map. Leave the 5000 players from [House of Prestige] to me. Just give me the command of the Second, Third, and Fourth Divisions!”

Wolf said, “Matcha, there’s something I have to point out. Even though our Divisions are pretty strong, their expertise is still nothing compared to the [House of Prestige] players.”

Matcha smiled, “Sometimes, war is not fought solely based on strength alright? Boss, you just go and eat. I can deal with those [House of Prestige] b\*st\*rds.”

I nodded, “Ok!”

Li Mu was stunned, “You’re really handing it over to Matcha?”

I smiled, “I believe in Matcha’s strategic capabilities. Wan Er, Dong Cheng, lets’ log off to eat. We’re eating hot pot...”

Dong Cheng giggled, “Alright then! I’m logging off now! Then, we can battle in the afternoon!”

Wan Er agreed heartily, “Ok!”

# Chapter 686 - Iron Blade Mountain

For lunch we hurriedly ate our hot pot. We didn't even let the food properly absorb the taste of the broth. The entire time we were all worried about the game. Could Matcha really stand up to the pressure from [House of Prestige]? Swift thunder brought 5000 players with him for battle. These 5000 are all players that have experienced a hundred battles. They were quite experienced with virtual battles. On top of that, Matcha was only leading 500 players from the main guild and three divisions. That was around 6000 total. That wasn't much more than the opponent. Of course that was a completely different topic compared to actual battle power. This was going to be a difficult test for Matcha.

.....

At 1:30 in the afternoon, I logged on!

“Shua!”

As before, I appeared in the Magma Falls Mountains. I immediately opened up the guild chat. I could see that people were already sharing the situation of the battle in the guild chat. It was a battle between [House of Prestige] and [Zhan Long] to the south of Tian Ling City. It was located in a long valley that was completely covered in bramble. Matcha raised her bloody sword and commanded people to fight while they retreated. However, [House of Prestige]'s Swift Thunder only laughed savagely and pursued them. He seemed to be cursing something under his breath. However, most people were too far from the scene to hear what it was.

[Zhan Long]'s divisions took heavy losses. They couldn't hold their formation against [House of Prestige]'s attacks. However, Matcha did not give up and continued to lead the battle. Suddenly, archers and mages appeared from the brambles. One after another, poison arrows flew out and they carried poison vines. “Pu pu pu” they pierced through the [House of Prestige]'s players and, nailing the knights to death while they were in the valley. It was the Death God arrows. There weren't many, probably at most around 200. However, when

they were used together and in a location like this, it was highly effective

Swift Thunder's expression turned extremely ugly. He pulled at his horse's reins and began to charge forward like crazy. He commanded the mages to burn the [Death God Arrow]'s poison vines. As he shouted the orders, he continued to advance forward. He was probably telling all of his subordinates that they didn't need to bother with the attacks to their flank. As long as they could defeat the [Zhan Long] division armies that Matcha was leading, they would have victory.

As I expected, the [House of Prestige]'s main guild had at least 2000 knight type players. They were all players with high levels and quality equipment. Under the command of Swift Thunder, they were cutting up [Zhan Long]'s advances like they were cutting vegetables. Their team battle was one of the top while [Zhan Long]'s divisions were probably around second place. The gap in their abilities was obvious.

Despite this, Matcha's lips curled into a smile. She continued to direct the flow of battle. The knight type players stopped to battle and then retreat. They were dragging out the site of the battle. If it were to continue like this, then [House of Prestige]'s explosive power would be greatly decreased. Furthermore, they would suffer even more damage from the flank attacks.

Matcha was very smart. She had situated quite a few players on the two sides of the mountain. [Lullaby] and [Scattershots] trapped the [House of Prestige] players. They retreated as soon as they attacked, whittling down [House of Prestige]'s numbers. Within 20 seconds, they had lost over 2000 of their players.

“Pa...”

I softly pressed the exit button on the interface. There was no more need for me to worry about the battle situation there. Wolf and Fox would do everything to execute Matcha's orders. Looks like they really weren't exaggerating. In terms of military strategy, Matcha was definitely the top commander. This battle was just one piece of proof. Knowing this comforted me. In the future guild battles and nation battles, I will definitely not be the only one leading the battle. I would most likely be the commander of the entire situation, but I

would leave the details of the battles to Matcha, Wan Er, Qing Qian and Li Mu. Nevermind, actually, I don't like being the kind of commander that only strategizes in the tent. I'd must rather be a general leading the charge. Besides, in a game, those two didn't necessarily conflict with each other.

.....

I closed the guild chat and glanced at my side. Wan Er and Dong Cheng had already logged on. Li Mu, Wang Jian and the others were grinding levels in the Magma Falls Mountains. This mountain range was at least 5000 meters above sea level. It was truly astonishing. The peak of this fire mountain was actually a sea of flames. In reality, a mountain that was 5000 meters above sea level was probably an icy wasteland. For example the Himalayas. But 5000+ meters above sea level, it was pretty much locked in ice.

Li Mu cut off the head of a Flame Tailed Scorpion. He looked up at the cave of the volcano and he licked his lips. With an expression full of curiosity and adventure, He smiled at me, "The higher we go, the higher level these monsters were. Just now that Flame Tailed Scorpion was Level 127. I think that the monsters near the opening of the mountain will be around Level 129."

I smiled, "You want to head over there?"

Li Mu nodded, "The entire map is still completely black when you look at it from a map. Aren't you curious about what's behind the mountain?"

"Yup!"

I gripped my fist and said, "However, we can't just all go en masse. The monsters up there are too high level. They're close to Level 130. Any players around Level 110 would be easily killed. And so, we can only pick out the elites. Yup, pick up 1000 players from the 5000 we brought. The rest can grind levels at the central area of the mountain. There's enough monsters here for all of us."

Li Mu chuckled, "Yes sir!"

.....

Not long after, Li Mu picked out his thousand man team. I, the guildmaster, was to be on the team leader while Wan Er, Qing Qian, Wolf and Dancing Forest

were all among the core group. I lead my horse forward and we all advanced in a line. On the way, we killed quite a few Magma Ox and Flame Tailed Scorpions. The experience here was very plentiful. On top of that, they had dropped a lot of gold. Everyone spread out and advanced with every kill. Seeing gold continuously drop was a very happy feeling.

After an hour, I was the first to reach the peak of the Magma Falls Mountain Range. A thick burning fog surrounded the area. Just before my horse's hooves was a thousand league deep flaming abyss. This was a live volcano. Who knows when it will act up. If it did act up, then our entire army would pretty much be destroyed. But, our luck shouldn't be that bad.

Wan Er raised her dagger and walked over. She looked down with her beautiful eyes and said, "Wu, I can't see anything down there. Don't tell me you want to grind levels by jumping into the mouth of a volcano. Then you'll become a grilled pig...."

I wiped some of the sweat off of my forehead and said, "Can't you think of some more positive thoughts. Besides, I'm not that suicidal...."

Qing Qian lit up a light and looked towards the south of the mountain range through the smoke and said, "South of the volcano's south, there looks to be a map. But I can't really see it on the big map. Should we go and check it out?"

I narrowed my eyes as I looked into the distance. A breeze blew some of the smoke in front of me away. For a short moment I was able to see a higher set of mountains that was next to the Magma Falls Mountain Range. The only difference was, Magma Falls was completely covered with streams of lava and it looked as though the entire mountain was on fire. This other mountain however, was completely dark, as though it was made of steel. Furthermore, the mountain seemed to form a sharp peak. Rather than a tall mountain, it looked like a black mountain was covered in blades

I looked at the map and made a decision, "Ok, we'll leave the 4500 brothers to their grinding. Death God's Elegy will lead the grinding team. The thousand of us will go around the volcano's mouth and pass through the Magma Falls Mountain Range. Let's go and see what those dark mountains are?"

Li Mu nodded with a smile, "Yup, this will be interesting!"



.....

With me in the lead, we began to go around the mouth of the volcano. My warhorse walked across the burning stones. My Flying Scythe War Horse was still ok, after all, it had hooves. The other players however, which had meat paws like Tigers, Leopards or Wolves were having more trouble. Even the players were slowly beginning to lose health. As we wandered through the smoke, some of them even began to cough. On top of that, there were quite a few Level 129 Magma Oxen and Flame Tailed Scorpions for us to deal with. There was no way this environment could get any worse.

After wandering around for half an hour, we finally reached the other side. The other mountains were starting to look more clear without the smoke to cover it up. Looking down however made us extremely disappointed. There was an abyss between the Magma Falls Mountain and this black mountain. It was so deep you couldn't see the bottom. Wang Jian tossed a rock into the abyss but we didn't hear an echo of it hitting the ground.

"F\*ck, we came here for nothing...." Li Mu angrily patted his leg.

Qing Qian bit her lip, "That abyss is too deep. The Wind Elves definitely can't fly over.... What do we do?"

Wan Er's clothes fluttered from the breeze as she stood on the border of the abyss. She glanced around at the valley. Suddenly, she smiled and said, "I've got it. Everyone look over there, maybe that can be our bridge to the other mountain...."

Everyone looked to where the beautiful vice guildmaster was pointing. Suddenly, we saw enormous trees growing on the black mountain. Each one of them had thick vines. Some of the vines were several hundred meters long. These vines shook in the wind and just happened to swing across the two mountains. The other end of the vine was growing off of a tree on the cliff of the Magma Falls Mountain. This seemed to create some kind of a rope bridge made up of ten vines. It was also the bridge that Wan Er was talking about.

"Eh...."

Wolf frowned, "Isn't that bridge a little too dangerous? Who knows how much it could hold. What if we crawl halfway and it breaks. If we fall, we'll die!"

I picked up my sword and said, “Well, we’ll know when we try. Seeing as there’s no other way, we’ll just have to go down this road then.”

“Ok!”

.....

I walked over to one side of the vines. I sheathed my swords and grabbed one of the vines. It was pretty thick. It was about as thick as a large noodle bowl’s circumference. I used all my strength to give the vine a tug. All I could see was the vines shaking in the air. But, it remained as solid as it had looked before. Yup. This should be able to take the weight of ten people without a problem.

I put down the vine and said, “Alright it’s sturdy enough. Everyone crawl onto it one by one. Do not walk on it. The wind here is strong enough to blow you away.”

“Yes sir!”

Hugging the vines, I inched my way forward. Our method wasn’t exactly very attractive. We moved like inch worms across the vine. It was incredibly ugly. But, safety was much more important. I could hear the hash winds blow against my ear. It was incredibly powerful, proving my judgement to be correct.

.....

After crawling for fifteen minutes, we finally finished crawling the length of the hundred meter long bridge. Once I let go, I jumped off and lightly landed on the black mountain. I then heard a system bell by my ear——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Please Note, you’ve entered an extremely dangerous map—— [Iron Blade Mountain]!

# Chapter 687 - You're Mine!

“Keng!”

When I smashed my Yuan Rong Boot against the black rock, a spark exploded off of it. My heart jumped a little inside. This mountain isn't just hard. I had actually jumped from such a high spot and still couldn't find a soft place to land.

Behind me, Wan Er, Li Mu and Wang Jian all landed. They walked towards me.

I looked at the ground and suddenly kneeled down. I reached out to touch the “cliff”. The ground was not a cliff. Rather it was a thick layer of steel. I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and sliced at the rock. “Keng!” The tip of my sword had only left a ten centimeter deep trace on the ground. These weren't even the same kind of traces that normal rock would have left. Instead, it looked as though an iron bar had been cut. I was starting to understand the meaning behind its name.

“D\*mn....”

Wang Jian furrowed his brows, “Steel Blade Mountain, is this mountain really made out of steel?”

Wan Er nodded, “Probably. From the looks of it, this is a dead volcano, but its also an steel mine. The earth's heat melted all of the steel, and when the volcano exploded, it left behind a layer of steel, thus creating this landscape. The entire mountain is wrapped in a steel shell.”

Wang Jian was stunned, “Doesn't that mean that there isn't an inch of grass here? If there aren't any plants, then where are the animals? Where are we going to find mobs to kill....”

I was speechless, “Think carefully, what did you use to get over here?”

Wang Jian glanced at the enormous tree and wryly smiled, “Ah. That's true. But, to be able to grow out of a thick piece of steel, these trees have a really strong will to survive....”

“That's not all.....”

I jumped onto my horse and lead it to the side of the mountain, “I cannot imagine what kind of will it takes to do that. Even in an environment as harsh as this, it still doesn’t give up on its will. Look, there’s even some grass over there.....”

Wan Er quickly walked over and saw what i was looking at. There was a patch of grass that was around 10 square meters. There were some plants that looked like a brambles. When I got close, I leapt off of my horse. I pulled out my blade to shake the bramble, only to notice that none of the stem or leaves were green. Rather, there was a thin layer of bright steel on the plant.

I reached out to pull at the leaf. Then, I pulled hard. “Ka!” Pain ran through my finger. It was like pulling a steel wire. When I looked at the edge of the stem, the juice that was squeezed out wasn’t green but rather a liquid that was steel colored. I clicked my tongue. This plant is actually made out of metal!

Qing Qian walked forward and smiled, “I can’t imagine. Can animals even eat this plan? Won’t they get poisoned to death if they eat it....”

Wan Er smiled softly, “The environment in the game won’t be the same as in real life. Look over there, some of the leaves under that iron tree have been eaten. If I’m not wrong, there’s some monsters here!”

Wolf said, “Should we wait for everyone to get here?”

I shook my head, “There’s no need. We’ll go and scout out the road first!”

“OK ! ”

.....

I leapt onto my horse again and urged it forward. I then summoned my Ancient Heavenly Tiger to walk in front of us. Wan Er guarded Dancing forest and Qing Qian. Li Mu, Wang Jian and Old K had their horses follow behind us. We walked along the path and carefully made our way forward to scout the place ahead. We’ve never been to this map before, so we couldn’t be overconfident. Even though we were strong and would not likely have our entire team destroyed, losing a level was still a heartbreaking thing.

“Careful!”

Qing Qian pointed forward and said, “There are some red dots heading our way!”

Everyone stopped and held their breath. Not long after, we heard the sounds of hooves beating the ground. At the other corner of the mountain, a black beast came trotting our way. It looked like a wild horse, but with a pitch black body. On top of that, it’s hair did not shine at all. Instead, it was a thick layer of steel armor. This armor wasn’t man made however, but rather naturally grown on the horse. On top of that, this type of wild horse carried a fierce light in its eyes. It opened its mouth and released a burst of flame.

“F\*ck, what is this thing?!” Li Mu whispered.

I lead my horse forward and read out the stats in the team chat——

[Steel Blade Beast] (Titan Tier)

Level: 130

Attack: 1000-12700

Defense: 11000

Health: 260,000

Skills: [Steel Blade] [Wild Flame] [Flame Hoof Burstraid]

Introduction: Steel Blade Beast, this is a special type of beast that lives on Steel Blade Mountain. It has the appearance of a wild horse, but has a devastating strength. It lives off of the plants on Steel Blade Mountain. These plants contain steel and flame attributes, which caused the beasts to mutate, and gave them a steel body and allowed them to control fire. However, they are vicious beasts. Once they become violent, they are capable of taking lives.

“OK, the monster has appeared. Prepare to kill...”

I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword. The Steel Blade Beast walked forward with flames coming out off its nostrils. It lowered its head to chew on some of the plants growing on the mountain as though we weren’t worth its attention.

Li Mu urged his horse over. When he was 40 yards away, the Steel Blade Beast began to get violent. It looked up with a savage glare in its eyes at Li Mu.

It suddenly charged over at us with terrifying speed. “Peng!” It knocked Li Mu into a Confused state. It then roared and, activated flames around its body and on its hooves. It then threw a [Flame Hoof Burstraid]. Li Mu had 40,000 health while he was on a mount. In that second, he lost over 20,000 of his health. D\*mn, this Level 130 Titan Tier monster’s attack output really was on a different level!

I threw a [Heal] to Li Mu. I wasn’t a healer, nor did any of my equipment add any [Heal] effects, so I could only give him 1650 of his health back. It was only to help him survive.

I then commanded my Flying Scythe War Horse to charge forward. With a whinny, it sprinted out, locking [Charge] onto the beast. The attack stunned the Steel Blade Beast and I then swung both of my swords which dealt some continuous cuts. Wan Er and the rest came forward to help. After a few hits, it was killed, dropping 2 Gold and 33 Silver. This little thing was even more profitable than the Magma Ox. Everyone was so excited they couldn’t stop grinning.

“Well well, do you think it can drop equipment too?” Li Mu smiled.

I nodded, “Yup. These Steel Blade Beasts should be the main monster on this Steel Blade Mountain. Let’s wait for a bit, let the other thousand brothers catch up. After that, we’ll split up into ten hundred man teams and start clearing this Steel Blade Mountain. Besides that, tell the brothers to keep this map a secret. I don’t want to be interrupted while we’re grinding levels.”

Li Mu said, “Don’t worry about that. These 1000 are all of [Zhan Long]’s elites. That won’t be a problem.”

“Ok!”

Right at that moment, Qing Qian blinked a few times and said, “Listen, I think I hear something....”

As she said that, the mountain began to shiver.

I widened my eyes and looked around. Stunned I shouted, “F\*ck, there’s a whole flock of red dots running our way. We.... did we just poke the hornet’s nest?”

I quickly charged forward and looked down the hill. A large group of Steel Blade Beasts were charging our way. It was truly a frightening scene. There were at least 50 of them. Dealing with a rampage of more than fifty Tian Tier monsters was not going to be an easy task. On top of that, we only had 100+ people with us. Most of them were still in the middle of climbing.

“Careful, meet them with our shields!”

Once I shouted, everyone seemed to realize what was going on. Yue Yao Yan, Ling Xiao Xie and the other knights all rammed their shields into the ground and prepared to meet the Steel Blade Beasts charge. I stood in front of them and said, “In a second, I will take command. Our first priority is to kill. Kill them one by one, don’t use area attacks. Create an iron bucket formation. Make sure our formation isn’t broken!”

Everyone here was smart and reacted quickly. The heavy tier players quickly made a circle and protected the ranged players.

A few seconds later, the herd was in eyesight. I threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] from a distance to attract ten of them towards me. I then marked all of them one by one with numbers and then growled, “Start with number one and kill them off one by one. Healers, make sure you watch the health bars of all the outer formation players. Don’t let us get killed!”

Once I finished speaking, a few of the Steel Blade Beasts had charged against my blades. One after another, they rammed into me, and forced me to retreat a few steps. I then immediately pushed back. I swept out my two blades and began to use [Drain] against the mob. My Ancient Heavenly Tiger already activated its attack, while the people behind me followed en suite.

“F\*ck, their firepower’s a little too strong..”

Ling Xiao Xie shouted. He took the attack from four of the Steel Blade Beasts. The [Wild Flame] was especially hard hitting. Flames rose up around the monsters, dealing burn damage. Ling Xiao Xie took too much damage and the healers hadn’t noticed in time. With a grunt he fell to his knees. Wan Er quickly had her Purple Kirin Dragon fill in the spot.

I charged forward with all my might. Not long after, we gradually began to gain our footing. A dozen or so of the Steel Blade Beasts had died. Right at that

moment, Qing Qian hesitated. She was staring right at one of the Steel Blade Beasts and pointed it out, “Brother Xiao Yao, look....look....”

I looked at where she was pointing and a shiver went down my spine. I felt my heart start beating like crazy. The name above the Steel Blade Beast was still “Steel Blade Beast” but there was actually a 1 next to it. On top of that, it was a mount type pet!

[Steel Blade Beast] (Saint Tier Mount)

Level:1

Special: Can be Tamed

Required Level: 115

All of the Fifth Advancement Players had a skill that allowed them to tame beasts. My Flying Scythe War Horse was already good enough and so I looked to my side. Li Mu grinned widely, “Is it for me?”

“Then it’s yours. Its a Saint Tier Mount, much better than yours!”

“Alright then. Nobody hit the Level 1 Steel Blade Beast. Stop your area attacks!”

Li Mu opened his palm. A horse whip symbol floated above his palm. The first time he tried to tame it, it failed. That Level 1 Steel Blade Beast roared and bucked its hooves. It looked a little pissed off.

Li Mu bore with the attacks from two other Steel Blade Beasts. His head had nearly been turned towards the cliff by the beast attacks. But he still opened his palm and smiled, “Baby, you’re mine!”

“Shua!”

The second time he tried to tame it, he succeeded!

.....



# Chapter 687 - The Birth of the Steel Blade Mount

We heard the whinny of the battle horse. This Steel Blade Beast was finally tamed. It turned into a white light and flew into Li Mu's Pet Mount Space. With a giddy expression he shouted, "A Saint Tier Mount. Who knows what level it can reach. Ha haha, I finally can switch to a high tier mount!"

As I parried the attacks from a few Steel Blade Beasts, I said, "Cut the small talk, tell us its stats!"

Li Mu nodded. In the next moment, he began to summon it. A red magic circle lit up the ground and a Steel Blade Beast appeared. It was very handsome and had a smooth coat that was covered with a thick natural armor. Smoke trailed from its nostrils. There was already a saddle and reins hanging on its body. Li Mu leapt onto the horse and immediately listed the stats on the team chat——

[Steel Blade Beast] (Saint Tier Mount)

Strength: +155

Stamina: +150

Agility: +144

Mana: +140

Attack Power Increase: +50%

Defense Power Increase: +60%

Movement Speed Increase: +190%

Max Health Increase: +4000

Special: [Steel Blade], Greatly increases the owner's defense power

Special: [Flame], deals burn damage to targeted enemies

Mount Durability: +50%

Mount Stamina: 200

Stamina Recovery Rate: 0.5/minute

Required Level: 115

Wan Er was stunned. She gasped and said, “This... the Steel Blade Beast’s stats are much stronger than the Fiery Greed Wolves... even the movement speed is better...”

I smiled, “That’s natural. The Fiery Greed Wolves are Level 105 Emperor Ter mounts. These Steel Blade Beasts are Level 115 Saint Tier Mounts. They’re two tiers higher. But, the best part about their stats isn’t the movement speed or attack power increase, but rather the [Steel blade] and the [Flame]. It increases the user’s defense power, which would come into use, especially against a thousand man army. [Flame], wasn’t too different from my [Halberd Flame], but it lasts longer. I don’t know what its damage is like, but it shouldn’t be too bad. He he... let’s kill some more monsters then!”

Li Mu swung his blade and fought with two Steel Blade Beasts. It seems that after he got his high tier mount, everything about him seemed to have risen quite a bit.

Wolf smiled, “Brother Xiao Yao, this is a chance for [Zhan Long]!”

I nodded and sternly said, “Order everyone to shut down all information about the Blade Steel Mountain. I want this to become our ace for when [Zhan Long] battles outside of the city. All Steel Blade Beasts from this mountain must be [Zhan Long]’s. From now on, we’ll create an army with at least a thousand cavalymen. At least within the next two or three months, there won’t be a single guild in Tian Ling City that will underestimate the strength of [Zhan Long]’s cavalry!”

Once Wang Jian heard this, he also started to get giddy. Blood rushed to his face as he said, “I was thinking the same. I just don’t know what the chances of getting horse here are. Looks like, it isn’t very high. At least in this pack, there’s only one out of fifty...”

Li Mu smiled, “That’s fine. There can’t be too few. Look at how big this map is. Even though the Steel Blade Mountain is small compared to Magma Falls Mountain Range, it’s still pretty big. We’ve only looked at 1% of this map.”

I continued to kill. At the same time, I began sending out commands. I took this thousand man team and began to split it up into ten one hundred man teams and had each go up the mountain to killing monsters and looking for new targets.

“That’s right, if a player already has a mount, how do they tame the mount and put it in their bag?” I asked.

Wan Er said, “Normally, in order to get a mount you have to tame it first. Or, you get a Mount pet from a BOSS drop. But there’s another method, and that is to trade for one. In Tian Ling City, the NPCs there are trade mount crystals. These crystals allow you to get the tamed mount without binding it to yourself. Its very easy. However, those Mount Crystals are a bit expensive. They’re around 500G and up. Players can buy it too. Or you can get it as a drop from the crystal valley. But the drop rate is very low.”

I nodded, “Fox!”

Fox was in the middle of a killing spree when he turned around with a smile, “What’s up?”

I gave short order, “Find a few people you trust and go to Tian Ling City to buy some Mount Crystals. After that, tell them to send it right up to Steel Blade Mountain. Make sure you keep it a secret. As for the amount... buy 1000. Use the money right out of the Dragon’s Den treasury.”

“Ok!”

Not long after, we killed all fifty of the Steel Blade Beasts. I then took a hundred man team and continued to push forward. Wan Er, Dong Cheng and Qing Qian were all in my team. We were considered the main team. As we continued to move forward, we met more and more Steel Blade Beasts that were eating the wild plants. This just proved that my judgement was correct. Not far from us, there appeared another Level 1 Steel Blade Horse hidden in a herd of Steel Blade Beasts. I immediately lured it over and then let a Swordsman in the team successfully seal it. Just east of us, Wang Jian’s team also sealed another one. Wang Jian had already jumped onto his horse.

The appearance rate of the Steel Blade Horse was around 2%. There was one in every fifty horses. Plus, this Steel Blade Mountain was incredibly majestic and

was quite big. Based on the current rate, then it would be no problem getting 1000-2000 mounts for our [Zhan Long] cavalry. Plus these Steel Blade Horses were Level 115 Saint Tier Mounts, their battle potential was far better than the Fiery Greed Wolves. This meant that we had succeeded in creating a powerful cavalry. At least, [Thousand Mound] would not be a threat to [Zhan Long]’s power.

“Ka ka ka.....”

A dagger flashed passed, and drew blood. Once Wan Er killed a Steel Blade Beast, she smiled at me, “Yao Yan has switched over to a Steel Blade Horse to. The stats really are high... This time we did not make a mistake in coming to the Magma Falls Mountains. Even if some of our players were killed by Swift Thunder and they lost a level, this was a good exchange.”

I wiped away some of the blood traces on my sword and smiled back, “Swift Thunder probably didn’t think that there was this Steel Blade Mountain behind the Magma Falls Mountain Range. Nor did he think that the Steel Blade Mountain would actually have such a strong Mount. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have left even if he was killed. Even if he had to get all 30,000 of [House of Prestige]’s main troops, he would never have given up.”

Wan Er smiled, “If it’s like that, Matcha actually held up [House of Prestige]’s main forces for us. She was actually a huge help to us. If our plan to create a Steel Blade Cavalry succeeds, then Matcha actually gave a huge contribution. How do you plan on rewarding this legendary strategist?”

“I’ll treat her to a meal....”

“Just that? So cheap....”

I rubbed my nose and smiled, “Nevermind, I’ll just send 5 million more to [Zhan Long] Office, and let Matcha, Wolf, Old K, and Fox split it up. They started [Zhan Long] with me. To be honest, without them, [Zhan Long] would never have reached this point. And besides, after we got [Dragon’s Den], I never really gave them a reward. Wolf, Old K and Fox all came from common families and they’re all acceptable young adults and yet they don’t even have their own houses. They’ve been too invested in games. Whenever they get a little bit of money, they spend it on equipment. Even if they can be crazy about games for

a few years, they can't spend their whole lives on it. Later on, equipment will definitely devalue harshly. I need to help them think about the future. What do you think?"

Wan Er's lips twitched into a smile, "I agree. See you're starting to really look like a guildmaster. Don't mistreat the brothers that helped you along the way!"

I nodded, "Yup, exactly!"

.....

Once I had my mind set, I immediately took out the funds. I took out 2.5 million from the Dragon's Den and National Beauty. Afterwards, I sent them directly to Wolf, Matcha and the other's accounts. Each one got 1.25 Million. At that moment, all four of them had a stupefied look on their faces. Wolf pulled out a dagger and looked at me, "Brother Xiao Yao, what are you doing?"

I pmed him, "It's not just you. The three others in [Zhan Long] office also got it. This is just a reward for [Zhan Long]'s founders!"

"Yup. Thank you Brother Xiao Yao. It's so much, from now on, when we buy pancakes, we can ask for ten eggs!"

"Sigh...."

Afterwards, I pmed Matcha, Old K and Fox and told them to not to make a big deal out of it.

We continued killing monsters. At the same time, I hardened my resolve. As National Beauty and Dragon's Den develop and grow, [Zhan Long]'s funds would grow along with it. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Qing Qian, Wei Liang, and Dancing Forest were the main players who helped make it grow. Besides I've got to give them a salary too. When we've accumulated enough money, every important officer will get a real salary. On top of that, all of [Zhan Long]'s members will get some kind of reward dependent on their contributions. That way, people would be more motivated in battles. And, people won't be disheartened. Besides, we need to stick together for better or worse. I was never planning on getting rich from games anyway. I myself never cared much about money. In life, it is always best to live carefree and easy\*.

TL note: A play on his ign, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, which means to live carefree

.....

In the coming hours, we received news from Tian Ling City. Matcha had already broke down the 5000 man force and their 3000 man reinforcements. When Bai Li Ruo Feng brought 10,000 troops to “kill the bandits”, Matcha had already broken down the divisions and had everyone go to different places to grind levels. [House of Prestige]’s ten thousand troops came to an empty battlefield. Even if Bai Li Ruo Feng was pissed off, he wouldn’t go after a small team. That was something that [Thousand Burial] would do. Bai Li Ruo Feng on the other hand was a prideful person and he would not lay a hand on a weaker enemy. If he were to fight, it’d be on a big scale team battle. And so he could only resentfully return.

We received another piece of shocking news. Apparently, [Thousand Burial]’s Greedwolf Brigade had actually actively attacked [Vanguard]’s players just west of Tian Ling City. Don’t Be Foolish lead 2000 of [Vanguard]’s players to an S tier map but was ambushed by 1500 Greewolf Raiders. Not Ordinary and You Yi were personally leading the team. They lost 200+ people but managed to bathe Don’t be Foolish’s two thousand man team in blood. This was the first time they demonstrated the explosive power of the Greedwolf Brigade on a public map in Tian Ling City.!

On top of that, the most shocking part was that this battle only lasted 30 minutes. Don’t Be Foolish was leading the elites of [Vanguard]’s main guild and yet he had still been beaten to such a level!

.....

It wasn’t much of a leap to say that Jian Feng Han and Simple were probably furious. They had always been watching. Even if the Greedywolf Brigade was PKing [Zhan Long], they didn’t say anything In the end, Jian Feng Han could never dream that Not Ordinary would have the guts to act against [Vanguard]. Nor did he expect it to be such a big move!

# Chapter 689 - A Call from Mu Rong Jun

On the first page of the <Destiny>'s forum, there were already videos posted of the battle between [Thousand Burial]'s Greedy Wolf Brigade and [Vanguard]. It was a three minute abridged version that highlighted the best parts of the battle. It was a battle of ambush. Not Ordinary, You Yi and Minimalist lead 1500 Greedy Wolf Raiders in a charge into the forest. Their movement speed was shocking, They didn't give Don't be Foolish any time to react. Naturally, that also meant that Don't be Foolish couldn't create a formation for a wilderness battle. In the end, their formation was smashed apart and the Greedy Wolf Raiders rode right into their army. This was also the biggest reason why [Vanguard]'s main team had been defeated.

As I watched more closely, I noticed something else. The attack and movement speed of the Greedy Wolf Brigade was only one factor to [Vanguard]'s defeat. Of that 2000 man team, only Don't Be Foolish, North Pole, and Goodbye Tears could be considered as top tier players. There weren't any other notable CBN Battlenet ranked players in that group. On the other hand, Not Ordinary had invited quite a few high level players. Minimalist was one of them. There were also quite a few others. For example, there was a female knight called "Servant" who was ranked 421 on the CBN Battlenet rankings. She was one of the top players in all of China. Who would have thought that a guild like [Thousand Burial] would develop to this point.

.....

I closed the video and continued killing Steel Blade Beasts. At the same time, I made sure to be on the lookout for Level 1Mounts. At this moment, Li Mu coughed and said, "What do you guys think about that thing with Not Ordinary and his two thousand man team getting massacred by [Thousand Burial]?"

Dong Cheng wryly smiled, "Well all things aside, I just know that Jian Feng Han is an extremely prideful person. When he was in Ba Huang City, he acted all aloof and probably didn't even look at a small guildmaster like Not Ordinary in the eye. He probably really despises Not Ordinary now right? But that's not bad either. Now that he's taken one defeat from the Greedy Wolf Brigade,

[Vanguard] will be ready.”

I frowned, “That’s not exactly a good thing.”

Dong Cheng was stunned, Why do you say that?”

I grunted and said, “Not Ordinary is already calling the army in [Thousand Burial], “Wolf Troops”. Do you know what that means? That means.... Not Ordinary is already planning on using them to give him a chance for survival. Just like this time, when Don’t Be Foolish and his two thousand man team was eliminated, they probably dropped quite a bit of equipment. The Greedy Wolf Brigade have a +10% drop rate. That then overlays with the 20% with the Greedy Wolf Mount’s +20% drop rate. After this battle, Not Ordinary’s Greedy Wolf Troops experience and equipment will have risen to a new level. If we let him plunder a few other big scale guild’s grinding teams, then even if we make our Steel Blade Cavalry, they won’t have much of an advantage against the Greedy Wolf Brigade.”

Li mu was a prudent man. After listening to my reasoning, he nodded and said, “What guildmaster just said isn’t without reason. No matter what we do, right now events are unfolding in [Thousand Burial]’s favor and they don’t seem to be planning on fighting with [Zhan Long].

Wan Er said, “Yea. As long as [Thousand Burial] doesn’t plan on fighting [Zhan Long] then we might as well just leave them be. All in all, the situation in Tian Ling City is getting more and more complicated. Do you think that [Thousand Burial] actually has the courage to attack [Legend] and [Hero’s Mound]?”

I smiled, “What is a Wolf’s Ambitious Heart? If Not Ordinary is really planning on extending the scope of the Greedy Wolf Brigade, then I don’t think he would be afraid to act against [Legend]. However... based on Fang Ge Que, Xuan Yuan Feng and Enchanted Painting’s fighting power and intelligence, even if the Greedy Wolf Brigade became a ten thousand man army, they wouldn’t necessarily be able to win against [Legend]....”

Dong Cheng giggled, “Exactly! Right now, even [Zhan Long] is making preparations and training the Steel Blade Cavalry. [Legend] and [Hero’s Mound] are so secluded, there’s no reason they wouldn’t also prepare for battles in the future.”



I smiled, “That’s right. We have nothing to worry about right now. Our real priority now is to catch a few more Steel Blade Horses. As for the battle of Tian Ling City, we’ll leave that to Matcha. I’ll just leave the command of [Zhan Long]’s division armies to her!”

Li Mu nodded, “Yup, that’s a good idea. Let’s work hard!”

.....

All the way until eleven at night, [Zhan Long]’s thousand man team continued to battle on the Steel Blade Mountain. On top of that, we didn’t plan on letting more people come. We had to keep this place a secret. We could be sure that the thousand men that were on the mountain now weren’t going to let out the Steel Blade Mountain secret, but that was harder to say with all ten thousand players in the main guild.

“How many Steel Blade Mounts do we have now?” I asked.

Wan Er’s beautiful face had an excited expression written all over it as she said, “We’ve already broken a thousand. Besides, we just cleared out 60% of the Steel Blade Mountain’s map. If our luck continues, we might be able to create 2000 Steel Blade Mounts!”

“Good, that’s great!”

I raised my sword and jumped off of my horse. I sat on a rock to the side and said, “After killing monsters for so long, I’m getting a little tired. How about we take a little break and then pull an all nighter tonight on this Steel Blade Mountain?”

Wan Er nodded, “Of course. The best case scenario would be that we kill all of the monsters within the next 24 hours and then wait for them to respawn. However... after they’ve respawned, the chance that a Level 1 Baby would appear would decrease. This is one map. The first time that a monster is spawned contains the highest chance that a BOSS or a Level 1 Pet/Mount would appear. After its been cleared by players, the appearance rate would decrease!”

“Ok, then we’ll pull an allnighter and clear out this map!”

At that moment, Li Mu and Wang Jian walked over too and requested a break.

.....

“What’s the situation like in Tian Ling City?” Li Mu asked.

I softly smiled and said, “How else would it be? It’s complete chaos. After the two thousand man team that Don’t Be Foolish was leading was eliminated, Jian Feng Han was furious. He personally lead a three thousand man team to hunt down Not Ordinary’s Greedy Wolf Brigade. However, their movement speed is just too fast, and so they couldn’t catch up. They managed to get a few people to catch up to them, but they were all killed by the Greedy Wolf Raiders. Not Ordinary is smart, and won’t fight a formation battle against Jian Feng Han. Jian Feng Han has no other choice, and instead let Not Ordinary massacre another handful of [Vanguard]’s teams. They lost a total of 3000+ people. Looks like Not Ordinary plans on fighting against [Vanguard] until the end.”

Li Mu threw a punch at a rock and grimaced, “Even though I don’t like [Vanguard], but are we really going to let someone like Not Ordinary kill his way through Tian Ling City?”

Dong Cheng said, “That’s what it looks like for the moment. Thousand Burial has been continuously buying Pardon cards and all types of battle cards in the city. On top of that, they’ve been buying lots of equipment and selling them in a frenzy. Fortunately, Not Ordinary seems to realize that he can’t offend everyone and so he’s only focused on Jian Feng Han without letting go. Even a few of [Vanguard]’s allies like [Valley of the Gods] have been caught in the chaos...”

Wang Jian wiped away some of the monster blood from his blade as he sat down and said, “You know, now that we’re talking about it’s strange. [Thousand Burial] didn’t fight a guild like [Flying Dragon] or [Wrath of Heroes] those second rate guilds, but actually went after a top tier guild like [Vanguard]. They actually had the guts to follow through with it...”

General Bai Qi darkly smiled, “I heard, when Jian Feng Han was in Ba Huang City, he had once went to Firestone Canyon to grind levels. They were planning on clearing the area. However, [Thousand Burial]’s players were there at the same time, and so a small conflict ensued. Jian Feng Han then insulted Not Ordinary a few times. Even though they’ve known each other for a while, they

still had a falling out....”

I was stunned, “That’s right, Not Ordinary and Jian Feng Han know each other in real life. Even his business had a partnership with Jian Feng Han’s Han Yun Corporation.”

Dong Cheng said, “They’ve cancelled that a long time ago. It seems that Jian Feng Han had also realized that the “business” that Not Ordinary conducts isn’t very clean. He was probably afraid that he’d be connected with it and so he eliminated the partnership eleven months ago.”

“So it was like that, now it makes sense.”

Li Mu smiled, “However, now that Jian Feng Han has pissed off Not Ordinary, it looks like his good days are coming to an end. Who knows how he plans on dealing with [Thousand Mound].”

I nodded, “Yup, let’s just wait and see!”

.....

However, if I wasn’t wrong, Jian Feng Han’s personality was very uptight. He definitely wouldn’t be able to swallow such a bitter defeat. Besides, [Vanguard] is one of the Chinese Server’s top three guilds. There’s no reason for him to be afraid of Not Ordinary. In the next few days, there will more than likely be many great battles. He will definitely gather up his troops and meet the Greedy Wolf Brigade in battle!

Of course, Not Ordinary was now growing at a terrifying pace. Word of the battle power of the Greedy Wolf Brigade has now traveled throughout Tian Ling City as though it were legendary. Not Ordinary was not going to let go of this great opportunity. He’ll most likely win over more Top tier experts for the future when he battles [Vanguard]. [Zhan Long]’s only job was to sit back and watch.

.....

It was late at night so I took the two girls out to eat a midnight snack. Today, we were going to pull an all nighter and clear the Steel Blade Mountain. Tang Qi couldn’t keep up with our rhythm and followed Q-Sword to some other map. We didn’t ask, after all [Hero’s Mound] and [Zhan Long] were still in a bad

relationship. We weren't exactly allies, but at least we weren't at war. However, this relationship was teetering on a very thin line.

We kept fighting until the afternoon of the next day. By then we finally cleared the entire Steel Blade Mountain and we had gotten just over 2000 Steel Blade Mounts. We've now reached a formation of 2017 Steel Blade Cavalrymen, the same as this year's date. If we wanted to expand our troops more, we would have to wait a day or two for the map to respawn. But, even if it were to respawn, there won't be as many Steel Blade Mounts.

By then, I was too tired and so I logged off to sleep. Before I logged off, I told everyone to keep a low profile and quietly grind levels in the Tian Ling City maps. There was no need to participate in the [Vanguard] and [Thousand Burial] battle.

.....

Completely worn out, I laid down on my bed and released my Yi Hai. I sensed the area around us. Besides Tang Qi, there weren't any other practitioners, nor was there any killing aura. It was safe. Actually, if I could hold Wan Er in my embrace while sleeping, that would be the safest. But, I definitely couldn't suggest that to Lin Tian Nan. Otherwise, he'd probably order some people with AK47s chase me all the way to Wen San Street.

I passed out into a deep sleep. When I woke up, it was already nine o' clock the next morning. After a quick calculation, I decided that I was definitely skipping today's class. Nevermind, if I get docked points, then I get docked points. I'll just have Wan Er help me settle it.

.....

"Di!"

My phone rang. I got a message from an unfamiliar number, "Hello Li Xiao Yao, I'm Simple. When you log on, I have some business to discuss with you!"

Oh? Simple is looking for me?

What does she want to do with me?"

# Chapter 690 - Three Thousand Elite Troops

I got out of bed. Wan Er and Dong Cheng had just woken up not long ago either and we all ate breakfast together.

Wonton Noodles, that's what Dong Cheng wanted. This Little Miss Dong Cheng wasn't picky at all strangely enough. She could eat anything from street food to high class restaurants.

I sat down and pulled up my sleeves and ate a big bowl of Wonton. There was even two pieces of fried golden poached eggs. It was very fragrant I looked down and nearly cried for a few seconds from the deliciousness. Then I looked up and said, "Just now, Simple sent a message to me, saying that she wanted to discuss business when I got online. I don't know what it's about though, but it should be about [Vanguard]?"

Wan Er smiled knowingly, "Just as I predicted."

"What is it?" My curiosity was peaked.

Dong Cheng said, "Looks like this simple headed person hasn't looked at the game news since you woke up. In the 24 hours that we haven't been in the game, big news has happened in Tian Ling City."

"Oh? I smiled, "It should have something to do with [Zhan Long] right?"

"Yup, looks like you're still clear headed...." Wan Er smiled, "In less than 72 hours, [Thousand Burial] has grown incredibly strong. No one would have thought that Not Ordinary had such a great ambition. In these 72 hours, he's recruited 7000 players into his Greedy Wolf Brigade and they are all Greedy Wolf Raiders. In these three days, they continuously fought with [Vanguard], [Valley of the Gods], and [Moonlit Lake] and many other guilds. They've all been carefully stealing from others to grind levels and upgrade equipment. Today at 2 a.m. in the morning, Fallen Wolf lead a ten thousand man team to Tian Ling City's Winter Sun Plains to have a final match with [Thousand Burial] and lost. All ten thousand were killed, whereas [Thousand Burial] only lost around 50% of their Greedy Wolf Brigade."

I was so shocked by the news that I nearly dropped my chopsticks. With a trembling voice, I said, “That... that can’t be possible right? If we were talking about Don’t Be Foolish’ 2000 man team getting destroyed, that was very normal. But the ten thousand men that Fallen Wolf lead were [Vanguard]’s elites right? How... How could they not hold off 7000 Greedy Wolf Raiders? How is that possible? Just what are Jian Feng Han and Simple doing?”

Wan Er grinned, “What do you think? The Greedy Wolf Brigade’s charging power is just too strong. On top of that, they’ve increased their attack power and movement speed quite a bit. Once they charge into a formation, its completely shattered. [Vanguard]’s shield formation could only last for 20 minutes before falling apart. Besides, Jian Feng Han and Simple weren’t online at the time. Only Fallen Wolf was there to command the troops. Losing was also very natural. After all, they did manage to cut down 3500 of the Greed Wolf Raiders, so it wasn’t a complete loss...”

“That isn’t a complete loss?”

I clenched my teeth, “Just where did Not Ordinary and You Yi find so many high level mount type players? Just in terms of Greedy Wolf Raiders, they have 7000. They must have over ten thousand total mount players right? That’s truly terrifying... Besides that, the Fiery Greed Wolves are a type of mount, shouldn’t they have already finished catching all of them? How come there are so many still left...”

Wan Er calmly said, “Not Ordinary invested 500 Million RMB to get into <Destiny>, so its no wonder how he was able to find the people. A lot of players were lured into the Brigade by the thousands in annual salary. Even more were lured in by the wave that [Thousand Burial] created. [Thousand Burial] even dared to fight [Vanguard] and [Zhan Long]. That was something that attracted many of the fugitives in the game. As for the Fiery Greed Wolves, they respawn every 72 hours. On top of that, there was some problems with our intelligence. In the depths of Fire Wolf Valley, there are three other neighboring valleys. They’ve been divided into Greed Wolf Valley, Blood Wolf Valley and Famished Wolf. The three small maps all spawn Fiery Greed Wolf Mounts. So, while we were clearing the Steel Blade Mountain, Not Ordinary did not sit around. On one side he was flipping Tian Ling City on its head while he secretly cleared the

three maps. Finally after 72 hours, he got Greed Wolf Mounts for seven thousand players. On top of all that, Not Ordinary put out word that within half a month, [Thousand Burial] will have over 20,000 Greed Wolf Raiders in their cavalry....”

My mouth gaped. A sliver of killing intent entered my eyes, “That Not Ordinary really is material for big things. After holing himself up for so long in Ba Huang City, he finally began to make his move when the new city opens. On top of that... his momentum is astonishing. Even his way of thinking is astonishing. If we really let [Thousand Burial] get 20,000 Greedy Wolf Troops, then even if [Zhan Long] and [Vanguard] were to ally with each other, we wouldn’t be able to beat him....”

Dong Cheng added on the side, “Exactly... [Zhan Long] only has 2000 Steel Blade Mounts at the moment. If we were to really face the charge of 20,000 Greedy Wolf Raiders, then I’m afraid nothing will be able to help us....”

Wan Er nodded, “And so, we cannot allow [Thousand Burial] to continue down this path. We must beat them down somehow. If Simple wants to talk with you about that, then do not hesitate. Just agree. [Zhan Long] acts as a check to the different forces in Tian Ling City. Fang Ge Que and Q-Sword are biding their time right now and that’s because [Thousand Burial] hasn’t listed them as one of their targets. However, once Not Ordinary gets that twenty thousand man Greed Wolf Brigade and destroys [Vanguard], then his next target will definitely be [Zhan Long]. Pig, don’t you forget, [Thousand Burial] used to be [Mass Burial], and that’s because you lead [Zhan Long]’s elites and destroyed it....”

I wryly smiled, “I know... later when I log on I’ll contact Simple. You two focus on the two thousand Steel Blade Cavalry. As of now, only [Zhan Long]’s Steel Blade Cavalry can match their Greed Wolf Brigade.”

Wan Er smiled and nodded, “Yup, I understand!”

.....

During breakfast, I couldn’t stop thinking about the situation. Not Ordinary’s move this time was just too great. I’m afraid that none of the guildmasters of the big guilds in the city could have thought about this. And now Jian Feng Han

has taken a direct hit, the old, unbeatable [Vanguard] managed to take continuous defeat for three days in a row. Based on Simple's intelligence, she knows that they cannot take any more risks. That's probably why she came to me, most likely asking for a victorious battle?

"Shua!"

After I logged on I immediately returned to Tian Ling City. All of that killing had completely diminished my equipment's durability. I went to fix everything up. Afterwards, I bought a few ingredients to make some Level 11 pills. Once I finished everything up, Simple called just in time. I quickly answered. Her familiar voice sounded through the interface, "Hi, Xiao Yao...."

I smiled, "Yup, Simple, what is it? When you sent me that message, I hadn't gotten out of bed yet..."

Mu Rong Jun couldn't help but smile, "Well well, you really can sleep... Not Ordinary already has a ten thousand man cavalry. Does [Zhan Long] not worry about it at all? Before in Ba Huang City, the conflict between [Zhan Long] and [Thousand Burial] never really ceased...."

I confidently smiled, "What should I be afraid of? Shouldn't the one who's most afraid be [Vanguard]? If I'm not mistaken, on the Chinese Server Guild Rankings, [Vanguard] is ranked third. If you take another couple of ten thousand losses, then your precious third place might be given to someone else...."

Mu Rong Jun pondered for a few seconds on her response. She seemed to be thinking about something else. She then smiled, "Looks like Xiao Yao has already guessed what I want. Alright then, [Thousand Burial] has been chasing after [Vanguard] like a crazed dog and they just won't let go. If [Zhan Long] really wants to sit around and watch, then I have nothing to say... After all, we are guilds that have declared war."

"Well not necessarily..." I smiled as I said that. This was only meant to place a buffer that allowed the conversation to return. This was most likely the opportunity that Simple was looking for too. This time, she took the initiative to contact me, which means that [Zhan Long] has something she wants. If it wasn't the end of the line, and even if Simple were a generous person who thought of



the long plan, she probably would not have contacted [Zhan Long].

“Alright then....” She sweetly smiled, “I think you’ve already guessed what I want... Last night, [Vanguard] suffered a huge loss. This is a situation that we’ve never encountered in a wilderness battle. Not Ordinary’s strategy is to create battles from battles. He must be looking for some opportunity to whittle down the strength of the players [Vanguard] has online. The next battle will probably occur within the next 24 hours. And so, I want to ask that [Zhan Long] reinforce us and deal a painful blow to [Thousand Burial]!”

I nodded, “Then Guildmaster Simple tell me, what do you want [Zhan Long] to do?”

Simple said, “You Yi and Not Ordinary have been constantly online provoking our [Vanguard]. I haven’t seen them go to sleep once since yesterday morning at nine. They’ve been taking their Greed Wolf Brigade throughout Tian Ling City’s great map killing people and they’ve been going absolutely crazy. I plan, with [Vanguard] as the bait, to draw out the 7000 cavalry. Afterwards, if [Zhan Long] is willing coordinate, support [Vanguard]!”

As she said that, Simple seemed to be at a loss of words. I could see her speechless expression on the interface. She looked up at me and said, “I know, Ah Han was very hot blooded before and he has done a lot of harmful things to [Zhan Long]. But... this time, we really hope that you can support us and give us a chance to repair the relationship between [Vanguard] and [Zhan Long]. This is something that I’ve always wanted to do but never had the chance. Xiao Yao, you must understand my sincerity in this. From the day that you got the Tian Chen Sword, I’ve never wanted to make you my enemy.”

I nodded, “Ok, then tell me. How many of [Zhan Long]’s people do you need?”

Simple smiled, “This Greedy Wolf Brigade is just too strong. [Zhan Long]... its best if you can give us over ten thousand players. Otherwise, I’m afraid that it will be extremely hard to suppress the attack power of the Greedy Wolf Brigade. Their movement speed is incredibly fast and their attack speed is similarly shocking. If they all charge at once, with three attacking one, they can instantly kill all of our heavy armor knights. It’s just too terrifying...”

I was stunned, “If I use too many people, I’m afraid that we won’t be able to

keep it a secret. At that point, [Thousand Burial] will be able to guard against it and we'll end up not being able to lure them out..."

Simple bit her lip and said, "I thought of that too, but... but if you use less than ten thousand players, I'm afraid that we won't be able to control their Greedy Wolf Cavalry. Last night they only used 7000 of their Greedy Wolf Raiders. I'm afraid they have around 8000 now, or even ten thousand...."

As she said that, she trailed off and thought for a moment. Finally she said "But you brought up a good point. If there are too many people, then we'll reveal our tail. I'm afraid that won't be very advantageous to us either. This..."

I smiled, "Then how about this, [Zhan Long] will only use 3000 people. Two thousand mounts and one thousand ranged players."

"Three thousand?"

Simple's small mouth gaped, "Xiao Yao, are you underestimating these Greedy Wolf Raiders a little too much? Otherwise, are you underestimating [Vanguard]'s strength? Are we really as weak as you imagine us to be?"

I laughed and said, "Beautiful Jun, has [Vanguard] and [Zhan Long] not interacted enough times? Did you think that I, Li Xiao Yao, am such a hot blooded person? If I didn't have assurances, I wouldn't use only these three thousand. Besides, every time a [Zhan Long] brother loses a level, my heart pangs."

Simple smiled, "Alright, I understand now. Xiao Yao, you must have some kind of ace up your sleeve, or else you wouldn't be talking so big. Ok, I will declare war on [Thousand Burial]. I will tell you the location first thing!"

"Yup, I'll be waiting for your news!"

# Chapter 691 - "Call Me Master"

The Steel Blade Cavalry didn't meet together in the city, but rather in the surrounding forest. When I made it there, the entire forest was filled with the figures of Steel Blade Horses. These warhorses were completely black, as if they were made of steel. An aura of flames surrounded the horses' bodies. That was the effect from [Flame]. As long as you target an enemy, then anyone near the user would suffer burn damage. The burn damage itself was related to the user's attack power. Plus, I was completely confident in the attack power of these Steel Blade Cavalrymen. They were all elites picked from the [Zhan Long] and [Valiant Bravery] camps. Furthermore, they all had to be over level 115. With Li Mu, Wang Jian, Matcha and Old K to lead, there was no need to worry about their battle power.

.....

My Flying Scythe War Horse raced through the wind and quickly reached a clearing in the forest. Wan Er turned around to look at me and smiled, "I've called pretty much everyone online. There's a total of 1902 people. These players are always on at least 16 hours in a day, so they can maintain absolute battle power!"

I nodded, "Good. I don't know when we'll get our mission, so how about we grind levels for now? That's right, did we leave people on Steel Blade Mountain to guard?"

Wan Er grinned, "Yup, Fox lead some people and is standing guard there. As long as new Steel Blade Horses spawn, he will be the first to send people there to tame so don't worry about the situation on the mountain. We've done a pretty good job with keeping it a secret. A lot of people have been carrying the Steel Blade Mount crystals, but have no idea where the crystals came from. This is a guild secret!"

"That's good. How about we find a place to grind levels?"

"Alright. There's a forest nearby that spawns Poison Hornets. Why don't we take everyone there to kill hornets? Maybe we'll even get to seal some Level 1

Pets!”

“Ok!”

.....

And so, I took everyone to grind levels. A large group of people entered the forest en masse, causing quite a scare to the players that were already there. They didn't know what to say in response and so most of them left. Anyone that didn't leave just grinded levels beside us. But it was clear that they weren't on our level in terms of catching monsters.

I looked at my level. I had reached Level 125. These couple of days, I leveled up twice from killing monsters on Steel Blade Mountain. A high level mob's experience really was great.

“Line up!”

Li Mu raised his sword. Around fifty Steel Blade Cavalrymen all went into formation. Before us were a hundred hornets, Level 126 Thunder Tier monsters. Li Mu dipped his sword and shouted, “Charge!”

Hooves pounded against the ground, as they thundered forward. Fifty Steel Blade Cavalrymen swung their swords and charged forward. There was no hesitation in their actions. They cut straight forward. All of the Hornet's were immediately plummeted into critical health. They turned around and dealt another [Charge]. As the sharp blades fell, a hundred of these large Hornets turned into experience. Li Mu was training the knights in their battle tactics. The scene made me feel extremely proud. The rise of a super guild was not just the work of myself.

As we trained our troops, we also grinded levels and we didn't meet any problems throughout the time. At noon, we logged off to eat and then continued to grind levels after that.

We worked until five in the evening. Finally, I received a long awaited message. Simplied said, “Xiao Yao, the Greedy Wolf Raiders have finally taken the bait!”

“Yup? Tell me the details...”

Simple said, “Ah Han and I brought a hundred man team to the Fairy’s Path in Ba Huang City. However, [Thousand Burial] seemed to have gotten some kind of intel and so they would not take the bait. It wasn’t until I had Don’t Be Foolish bring a team of eight thousand players and go to Bowl Valley to grind levels did You Yi and Not Ordinary finally make a move. Around 8500 Greedy Wolf Troops left from Tian Ling City and are headed straight for Bowl Valley!”

I smiled, “Looks like, they think that Don’t Be Foolish isn’t very smart and will be easy to bully. That’s why they finally made a move.”

Simple smiled, “Oh stop joking around with us. Don’t Be Foolish isn’t our number one knight alright? The final battle will be in the forest just outside of Bowl Valley. How are [Zhan Long]’s 3000 players arriving? You must keep it a secret!”

“Don’t worry!”

I thought about it for a moment and finally said, “I’ll bring my people and cut through Zi Wu Mountain. We’ll be moving under the cover of the forests. If we go around and go through Butterfly Forest, we’ll hit Bowl Valley after that. You can start the battle first, and hold off those Greedy Wolf Raiders. Remember to keep me updated.”

“Yup, I understand!”

.....

I exited the interface and then looked at everyone, “Alright now, prepare to set out. Follow me!”

Wang Jian’s spirits rose, “Brother Xiao Yao. [Thousand Burial]’s Greedy Wolf Brigade finally moved?”

“Yup!”

“Yes! Its finally time for our Steel Blade Cavalry to take the stage!”

“Yup yup, let’s go!”

“Alright!”

.....

I charged on ahead while Wang Jian and Li Mu followed en suite. Of the two thousand cavalry, only Matcha was riding on a white battle horse. It was the Moonlight of a Thousand Leagues that I sent her, a Saint Tier BOSS level mount. It was much stronger than the Steel Blade Horses. It was very fitting with her beautiful face. After training with [Zhan Long] for half a year, she was no longer the noob from when we first met her. Rather, after these great battles one after another, she was starting to look more magnificent as she held her blade, and rode on the back of her horse.

Wan Er lead the mages, archers and healers to take our rear. All three thousand of us passed through Zi Wu Mountain. After an hour, we reached Butterfly Forest and then made our way to the Fairy's Path where we dashed straight for Bowl Valley.

"Di!"

I received a message from Simple: Xiao Yao, the eight thousand men that Don't Be Foolish lead is setting up formation five hundred yards into the forest. Not Ordinary's Greedy Wolf Raiders have all arrived. I've counted, there's a total of 8700+ people. Of them, the new blood, Minimalist and Call Me Master are both extremely strong. Don't Be Foolish can hold them off for half an hour at most. Ah Han and I have secretly gathered five thousand men and are charging from the east. But as before, we don't have complete confidence in this move. Have your men arrived?"

Without hesitation I replied, "We'll arrive in ten minutes. Once we get there, we'll break the Greedy Wolf Brigade's formation. You must let Don't Be Foolish get the Greedy Wolf Brigade to charge at them. Otherwise, [Zhan Long]'s attack will be pointless!"

"Understood. We'll act together!"

"Yes!"

.....

Looking at the map, I urged my battle horse forward. I was continuously limiting my speed. Otherwise, I would've gone too far ahead of the formation. I mainly had to wait for Darling Duck, Dong Cheng and the other players that didn't have a mount. Otherwise, we would've only taken thirty minutes to reach

Bowl Valley. There was no diminishing the potential of the Steel Blade Cavalry.

The two thousand Steel Blade Cavalry surged forward. It was as though we were creating an earthquake. All of the birds in the forests around us flew off in surprise. I looked at the map. We still needed another five minutes to reach our destination. And so, I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and roared, “Full speed ahead. Steel Blade Horseman, follow me first. I’m afraid [Vanguard]’s formation won’t last!”

Matcha furrowed her brows, “Boss, is it possible that this is a trap? Is [Vanguard] and [Thousand Burial] setting up a trap for us?”

I smiled, “Don’t worry. Even if they did set a trap for [Zhan Long], [Vanguard] wouldn’t sacrifice the levels of ten thousand people. That is too high of a price. Besides, with the flexibility of the Steel Blade Cavalry, even if they were to ambush us, we can just run away the minute we see it!”

Matcha smiled, “That’s true!”

.....

Not long after, I was the first to reach the Fairy’s Path Forest. A little ahead of me was an enormous forest that opened up into a clearing. In the distance, I saw Not Ordinary and You Yi leading close to 9000 Greedy Wolf Raiders about to activate a charge right at [Vanguard]’s formation. Don’t Be Foolish’ long spear was splattered with blood and there were blade marks across his shield. He sat upon a horse with a blonde mane that whinnied at the sight of the oncoming enemy. In the blink of an eye, he took another seven to eight slashes from the Greedy Wolf Raiders. Don’t Be Foolish immediately used a [Cleansing Rain] to heal himself. At the same time, he clenched his teeth, “Reinforcements are almost here. Stand up to them. Motehrf\*cker, right flank, can’t you grow some balls? Don’t retreat!”

Goodbye Tears raised his blade and shouted, “[Holy Blessing]!”

“Shua!”

A holy light broke through the clouds and scattered upon the troops, increasing all of the [Vanguard] players heal recovery by 100%. As he did that, he hacked at the shoulder of another Greedy Wolf Raider. His opponent’s blade

also took the chance to slash forward. “Keng!” the blade trembled. “Pa!” it pierced through Goodbye Tears’ forehead. At that moment, a bright light flashed. The Raider had not broken his defense! Goodbye Tears coldly laughed, “I have over f\*cking ten thousand defense. If you want to kill me, dream on!”

Right as he said that, a girl rushed out from amidst the [Thousand Burial] troops on a Fiery Greedwolf. She swung the shield in her left hand. “Peng!” She rammed into Goodbye Tears, and forced him to retreat backwards. She then threw her spear forward, and activated [Skysaker Stab].”Pu Chi” It went through Goodbye Tears’ chest armor, and dealt 6000+ damage. She then swung her spear again, dealing a second attack right afterwards. She smiled wryly, “[Vanguard]’s number one monk, is this all?”

“Call Me Master, break their defenses and kill your way in!” Minimalist shouted.

So this girl was the CBN Battlenet Rank 421 called “Call Me Master”. She glanced around and without a moment of hesitation she lead her Greed Wolf into a full speed charge. She swung her spear left and right, knocking two swordsman into the sky. You Yi then lifted his sword and urged his battle wolf over to her and laughed, “That’s right, that’s the spirit. Everyone charge! Kill this defeated general!”

Don’t Be Foolish was starting to get nervous, “Hold them off, hold them off!”

But how could they? The first line of shields had already been broken. Minimalist and You Yi threw two [Flying Sword]s into the crowd, and completely knocked out Goodbye Tears’ health. He could only retreat quickly and raise his blade shouting, “Mages, [Lightning Eagle Formation]!”

A group of [Vanguard] Mages all cast [Lightning Eagle Formation]. The Magic attack dealt additional damage to heavy armored players. No matter how courageous or savage the Greedy Wolf Raiders were, they wouldn’t be able to block the attack. In an instant, several dozen were killed. However, Minimalist, You Yi and Call Me Master had already made it ten meters into the formation. As long as they cut through the shield formation, then the 7000 players in the rear of [Vanguard]’s formation would be hacked to death.

.....



Behind him, hooves thundered over the earth and thousands of Steel Blade Horseman charged over with me out in front of them. I pointed my Dragon Reservoir Sword forward and smiled, “Charge, let’s show Not Ordinary and You Yi what a true cavalry is!”

“What?!”

You Yi suddenly turned around and saw a whole army of Steel Blade Cavalry. Surprise and terror flashed in his eyes. When did they get those mounts?”

Call me Master\* slowly drew her spear from the chest of a [Vanguard] archer. She glanced back with a smile on her lips, “Has [Zhan Long] finally appeared? Ok, I’ve wanted to meet Xiao Yao Zi Zai and General Li Mu in battle! He he, today I will beat them until they call me Master

.....”

# Chapter 692 - Courageous Victory

“Charge!”

My Dragon Reservoir Sword flashed as I sprinted forward. My little tiger pounced onto the rear of the Greedy Wolf Brigade. In the distance, I could see people turn around again. Around 200+ people turned around to attack. This was the cavalry’s main charge. There was no time to hesitate. I clenched my teeth and charged right into the crowd. Flashes of light exploded as my [Wall of Dou Qi] deflected their attacks. I then swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]+[Sword Tempest] into the crowd!

“Hong!”

“12388 ! ”

“13127 ! ”

“14392 ! ”

.....

One after another, the damage numbers exploded. Of course there was no one who could match the Dragon Reservoir Swords’ 150% [Kill for Blood] effect. My attack power had reached a terrifying point as always. Plus, I didn’t need to worry about my Rage either. I activated [Halberd Flame] and rammed into the crowd. I had entered a near invincible state. There was only one reason I was so aggressive in my approach, behind me, Li Mu, Wang Jian, One Second Hero and Old K had all rode their Steel Blade Mounts and came charging over!

“Kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

I don’t know who shouted the order from the crowd, but a dozen knights all activated [Charge] against me. The first couple of moves that started [Charge] were too noticeable. I smiled and then kicked my Flying Scythe War Horse and gave it a command. The horse and owner’s thoughts were synced as one. It kicked its iron hooves against the soft green grass in a particular pattern. It was the most basic method of dodging, but also the most effective one. Behind me, a group of MISSes popped up in my path. [Thousand Burial]’s Greedy Wolf

Raiders all missed their target.

Yet right at that moment, one of the Greedy Wolf Raiders in the distance charged right towards me. It was a young man around 25 years old that carried a long sword covered in brambles. The ID above his head named him “Yue Yao Chen”, a level 116 Knight. He swung his sword, creating frigid stormy slashes. The chaotic flurry of attacks seemed to gather around his sword and he threw the attack right at me!

“Keng!”

“9221 ! ”

I was slightly startled. This b\*st\*rd has a pretty good attack power. The skill was called [Mass Blade Break] and was an S Tier skill. As expected, [Thousand Burial] now had many crouching tigers and hidden dragons. Any one of them was more complicated than they seemed.

Once Yue Yao Cheng’s attack hit, he immediately spun his sword and threw another [Skysaker Slash]. This time, I didn’t give him the second chance to attack. I charged my Flying Scythe Horse over, ramming into him. “Peng!” I sent him and his Greedy Wolf Mount sliding backwards. I then raised both swords. “Keng Keng” two attacks at once. I had successfully broken his skill. Yue Yao Cheng entered a moment of sluggishness. Even his expression turned ugly as he shouted, “Oh no!”

My Dragon Reservoir Sword and Brilliant Fire Sword seemed to attack at the same time. “Ka Ka” I immediately pierced through Yu Yao Cheng’s chest plate, emptying his health. Right at that moment, a girl shouted, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

Before I could even look up, a beautiful figure flashed by me. “Peng!” She interrupted my [Wind Blade]. It was due to the [Courageous Ram] from a knight that interrupted my skill. The knight’s stats were probably pretty good. I didn’t say much else and instead raised my hand to deal five more attacks forward. She then raised her shield in front of her, and parried my attacks. Her health had dropped 70% or so, but she hadn’t died. Her defense and health were remarkable.

Su Yan, Level 116 Knight. [Thousand Burial] team leader ranked 1522 in the CBN Battlenet!

I felt my heart shiver. No wonder [Vanguard]'s ten thousand players had such a miserable defeat. The [Thousand Burial] of today was not the same one as half a month ago. Not Ordinary had certainly gotten his money's worth with that 50 million. In a short amount of time, he had managed to collect so many of the high players on the CBN Battlenet rankings.

Behind me, I heard Wang Jian's voice say, "Brother Xiao Yao, let me take care of this girl!"

I nodded and then raised my sword to kill Yue Yao Chen. I pulled out something that was hidden within my billowing cloak. Under the moonlight with my cloak fluttering in the wind, I opened my palm. I then looked over at Shu Yan and as she realized it she cried, "Not good..."

"Peng!"

As I kept some tricks hidden up my sleeve, [Binding Chains] was very helpful. It had completely locked Shu Yan in place. Wang Jian leapt forward on his horse, sweeping out his blade. He dealt a [Slaying Xiang Yan] combo, killing Shu Yan in one stroke. Yue Yao Chen trembled as he watched the scene unfold. He no longer wanted to face me head on and turned his horse around as he shouted, "Second [Assault], kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai!"

[Wall of Dou Qi] had the effect of flashing gold every time I was slashed at. At the same time, [Frost Armor] was also layered around me. With a double heavy defense, the Greedy Wolf Raiders only dealt around 1000-3000 damage. Even though there were a lot of attacks, there weren't many that were critical. I swung my two blades and continued attacking. I had a 20% [Drain] effect, plus my [Cleansing Rain] which I could use every seven seconds allowed and so in that moment, I recovered 12638 health. My [Cleansing Rain] increases with my base attack. This [Cleansing Rain] Heal also pretty much makes me less reliant on Healers.

"Kill! Break apart their formation!" Li Mu loudly commanded

I cut into the heart of the Greedy Wolf Brigade like a sharp sword. I was constantly taking a barrage of hits but I did not back down. I relied solely on my [Cleansing Rain] and 20% [Drain] to pull my health up. As long as the opponent's archers, mages, and musketeers don't attack me all at once, then I

was pretty much a fish in water in this close combat type battle. To kill me was too difficult a task.

On the other hand, that also represented an enormous advantage for the Greedy Wolf Brigade's battle tactics. Not Ordinary wanted to take the 20% increase in drop and the 1% increase in experience to continuously strengthen his army. But never did he expect to meet someone like me who couldn't be killed. No matter how strong these Greedy Wolf Raiders were, they did not have SSS tier players like Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han or Enchanted Painting. In the end, they still wouldn't be able to kill me. Even killing players like Li Mu and Wang Jian would be hard. Besides that, our Steel Blade Horses were on another level compared to their Fiery Greedwolves. Its own defense was one of the top in the game right now and there were two thousand of them. Face to face, the Greed Wolves didn't necessarily have any advantage.

Matcha raised her blade and dashed forward. Her mount, Moonlight of a Thousand Leagues was incredibly fast. Our beautiful elder urged her horse forward as her sword danced and cut through the crowd of people. She had attracted the attacks of a whole group of Greedy Wolf Raiders. Matcha immediately raised her shield and activated [Heavenly Shield Wall]+[Holy Phantom Shield]. Her unbreakable shield made it so the Greedy Wolf Raiders were unable to advance. After attracting so much aggro, she had also helped her fellow Steel Blade block a lot of attacks. She moved her shield and angrily raised her sword shouting, "Pierce through their formation! Use the [Flame] effect to burn them to death! The Greedy Wolf Raiders don't have [Drain], and they are purely cavalymen. They have a terrible recovery rate. The battle will be in our favor if we drag it out!"

As if to prove Matcha's words, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K and Dong Cheng all brought a group of people and pierced into the Greedy Wolf Raider's formation. As she had said, the Steel Blade Cavalymen's [Flame] effect quickly appeared and the Greedy Wolf Raiders dropped like flies. They couldn't stand up to the Steel Blade Cavalry in the long battle.

.....

"Are we losing?"

In the distance, You Yi raised his blade and clenched his teeth as he said, “Boss, let’s give up on this attack against [Vanguard]. We’ll gather up our strength and first cut down the 2000 [Zhan Long] cavalry. We cannot let them continue on like this, or else our brothers will all be killed!”

Not Ordinary nodded and raised his battle axe. He turned around and roared, “Kill them all! Clear the path back! Everyone, our target is not [Vanguard] any more!”

At that moment, all 7000 Greedy Wolf Raiders turned around on the battlefield and faced [Zhan Long] the true battle was now beginning!

A mass of Greedy Wolf Raiders that was three times greater than the size of our own army turned against us. In that short moment, Li Mu, Wang Jian and Old K were all pushed back a dozen meters. This was something we had not expected. When the Greedy Wolf Brigade had battled in Tian Ling City over and over again, the victories generated high morale among the soldiers. Maybe this time, [Zhan Long] was at a slight disadvantage against the Greedy Wolf Raiders. But, there wasn’t any other choice. We had to hit [Thousand Burial] where it hurts this time. [Zhan Long] could no longer sit by and watch!

“Steady!”

I swung my two swords and took my Ancient Heavenly Tiger along as I charged into the crowd of Greedy Wolf Raiders. I fought with all my strength to help [Zhan Long] regain its footing. At the same time, Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K all created a defensive formation in their place. For us to be on the defensive side meant that this was going to be a battle of attrition, which was to our advantage. The Steel Blade Cavalry had a much higher defense and they had the [Flame] effect. As long as the Greed Wolves didn’t break through our formation, then victory was ours.

In the distance, Minimalist, Call Me Master and the other [Thousand Burial] experts hacked their way through the Steel Blade Troops. These people all had incredibly good equipment and their attack power was above average. They switched through their skills incredibly fast, which made it possible for them to practically instant kill the Steel Blade Cavalrymen. In the blink of an eye, screams rose throughout the battlefield and lights flashed as the souls of

Greedy Wolf Raiders and Steel Blade Cavalrymen alike vanished.

I stopped in front of the formation and set up the Azure Dragon Crossbow. Afterwards I activated [Soul Army] and descended it upon the Brigade. Then with a sweep of my swords, I pushed back the Greedy Wolf Raiders in front of me. On top of that, Minimalist, You Yi, and Not Ordinary were very smart and didn't come to provoke me. Instead they roamed the battlefield and picked off the weakest Steel Blade Cavalrymen. [Zhan Long]'s players did the same, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K and Matcha were basically bathing their opponents in blood.

“hong!”

My [Seven Star Fragment Slash] cut apart the crowd, and killed a dozen at once.

What the f\*ck, how can Li Xiao Yao, that b\*st\*rd be so arrogant!” Not Ordinary was starting to look a little pissed. He roared, “Last time, he meddled in our actual business, and is he planning on ruining all of my efforts in game as well? Minimalist, Call Me Master, take a group of elite players over. You must kill Li Xiao Yao!”

Call Me Master blinked a few times and said, “Kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai... that’s going to be a bit difficult...”

Not Ordinary said, “If you don’t try, how do you know if he can be killed!”

“Yes sir!”

The two groups of people dashed at me from a distance.

Without another word, I raised my hand. Clouds gathered in the sky. Lightning flashed on my blade. Suddenly, it was as though the entire earth had been cut apart as [Thundering Heavens] exploded in the crowd!

“F\*ck,...” Call Me Master suddenly stopped cracking her whip. She raised her blood spear and said, “We’ve been f\*cked...retreat!”

But it was all too late. The hundred people that charged in with her had entered the [Thundering Heavens] range. In that moment, all of the Greedy Wolf Raiders had been burnt to crisp while not a single drop of blood stained my Dragon Reservoir Sword. With just that I could have achieved 150 layers of

[Kill for Blood]!



# Chapter 693 - Wang Ze Cheng's Rage

“Keng keng keng....”

Sparks flashed as a blade hacked against the shield. One Second Hero's shield was already covered with scratches and markings. He hid behind his shield and looked at me, “Guildmaster, are we just going to take hits and not fight back? The Greedy Wolf Raiders have been charging at our formation over and over again. If we keep this up, we'll all be killed. We've already taken quite a few losses....”

I nodded, “Just a little longer!”

Matcha glanced at me and said, “Boss, we've already lost 300 of our 1900 Steel Blade Troops. The rate is much faster than I thought....”

I said, “I understand. Just half a minute. Prepare the counterattack!”

“Yup!”

Behind me a beautiful figure appeared in the forest holding a dagger. It was Wan Er. Behind her, Dong Cheng, Qing Qian and Wolf all appeared. Finally, [Zhan Long]'s unmounted players entered the stage!

“Healers, give us frontline players the [Hundred Battles] BUFF!”

Wan Er let out a command. A thousand people swiftly came to aid [Zhan Long]'s attack. The supporting players all entered into line while the Healers cast the [Hundred Battles] BUFF. All of the Steel Blade Horseman received it. Then the [Heal] lights flashed all around. The Mages, Musketeers and Archers all stood in line. I watched as the opportunity grew ripe. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and roared, “Steel Blade Cavalry, charge!”

Everyone had been waiting for this moment. They dashed forward. We rammed against the Greedy Wolf Brigade. Now that we had the [Hundred Battles] BUFF, we were much stronger. In addition, our morale was much higher. The Greedy Wolf Brigade clearly looked like it was running out of steam.

“F\*cking h\*ll.....”

Minimalist clenched his teeth. After the Steel Blade Cavalry received its baptism, a group of Greedy Wolf Raiders who had only half of their health bars appeared in the battle field. The leader raised his blade and pointed it at Wan Er and Dong Cheng and shouted, “Kill! While they don’t have the cavalry to protect them, kill them all!”

Around a thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders charged towards the back of [Zhan Long]’s formation. When they were only halfway there however, “Pa pa pa” they all knelt to the ground. The traps set by the archers all appeared on the ground, and stunned them for three seconds. Without anyone noticing, Dancing Forest had commanded two hundred archers to set up traps. This was the true essence of strategy in guild battles!

Qing Qian gripped her dagger and glanced to the ground, “Little Dance, help me out. Let’s go kill Minimalist!”

Dancing Forest nodded in agreement

In the next moment, Minimalist had brought his Greedy Wolf over. His blade shuddered. He activated a [Skyslayer Slash]+[Blade Rush], killing a healer. But before he could kill the second, an ambush suddenly hit him. It was Dancing Forest’s [Scatter Shot]. Minimalist proved his worth as a CBN Battlenet Expert and dodged the [Scatter Shot] with a crack of his whip. But he did not expect the [Grip of the Firefox] that came flying his way!

“12110 ! ”

The [Grip of the Firefox] hit its target. Right after, Dancing Forest used a [Rising Dragon Arrow] and [Meteor Shot] to pierce through Minimalist’s body. The attack had emptied his health. The two girls managed to predict every move that he made!

“F\*ck....”

Minimalist’s heart dropped. When he turned around, he saw a pretty figure dash out from the crowd. “Ka cha!” a dagger left a thin trail of blood across his neck. Twenty thousand damage popped up. The assassin’s attack power was just too explosive. Not to mention it was an attack from Wan Er. Minimalist fell to the ground and died.

.....

Dong Cheng waved her staff and let loose a countless barrage of magic spells. Add on with Dancing Forest and Thousand Suns' firepower, and we faced the thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders without any fear. This kind of firepower coverage was something that You Yi and Not Ordinary would never have imagined. They had the same amount of Greedy Wolf Raiders, but because they didn't have full health, before they could even reach [Zhan Long]'s long distance team, they had lost over half of their team.

In the main formation, the Steel Blade Cavalry continued their charge. They had stabbed into the heart several times in a row, and cut deep into the Greedy Wolf Brigade's formation. It was right at that moment that Not Ordinary and You Yi had finally realized they had truly lost. No matter how many experts they managed to collect, and no matter how strong of a mount these Greed Wolves were, they still couldn't go against an alliance of [Zhan Long] and [Vanguard].

.....

"Just what do we do now...." Call Me Master stared blankly as she stood, and watched the scene unfold.

Yue Yao Chen raised his sword and said, "Master, what are you doing? Hurry up and go with the guildmaster. Prepare to break the siege. We'll break out through the west. At least that way we'll be able to save 4000+ of our people!"

Call Me Master hesitated, "We had close to 9000 Greedy Wolf Raiders, and now we're only left with 4000?"

Yue Yao Cheng was also startled. But he smiled and tried to comfort her, "That's ok. All of the people that died can be revived and still be a main battler. First though, we have to get out of this as soon as possible. We cannot lose too much equipment. Otherwise, we won't have the right to rise up again. Don't forget, when the Greedy Wolf Raiders die, they also have an increased drop rate of 20%. We can't take those losses!"

"Ok, let's go!"

At that moment, Not Ordinary raised his battle axe and shouted, "Everyone, follow me and break from this siege. We cannot fight any longer. [Vanguard]

was shameless and actually went to the b\*st\*rds from [Zhan Long] for help. F\*ck, this time we will accept defeat. But wait until we strike the drums of battle again. We will step on these two guilds like they are ants! Brothers. Charge with me!”

Masses of Greedy Wolf Raiders fled Not Ordinary and began to try and break through our siege. Although they called it breaking through our siege, it was more like they were trying to escape with their lives and “dignity”. Most of the players in the Greedy Wolf Brigade had just been recruited into [Thousand Burial]. In their latest battles in Tian Ling City, their victories meant great pride but their losses meant great shame. I can just imagine how low the morale must be right now. This was the greatest difference between them and [Zhan Long].

[Zhan long] is a guild that has experienced many victories and defeats together as a team. Everyone has been in the same boat since the beginning. Even if we were to suffer a few losses, that would not affect the determination of our players.

.....

Not Ordinary continued to try and break out. Suddenly, an enormous cavalry suddenly appeared. It was [Vanguard]’s elite cavalry lead by Jian Feng Han himself. Don't be Foolish, Goodbye Tears, and Fallen Wolf were among the players in tow. There were around a thousand people in the cavalry. I believe this was their main force. Even though everyone had different mounts, their battle potential must still be incredibly high.

“Ka”

Jian Feng Han cut down a Greedy Wolf Raider in critical health. He raised his bloody blade and shouted, “You want to leave? Today, not a single one of you Greedy Wolf Raiders will even think about leaving. After massacring so many of my players in Tian Ling City for so many days, you probably didn't think that there would be a day someone would come to kill you. Isn't that so? Brothers, Kill! Have no mercy, leave no soul alive!”

You Yi raised his sword, “Jian Feng Han, you're too savage!”

Jian Feng Han coldly smiled, “When you killed [Vanguard]’s ten thousand men, did you not think you were being too savage? Cut the small talk and die!”

The sounds of battle rose all around us. [Vanguard] was putting all of its forces into this counterattack. This time they used at least twenty thousand troops!

After suffering from that ten thousand man loss overnight, Jian Feng Han had long been broiling with fury. After all, it is understandable. He would never have any mercy or sympathy for [Thousand Burial]. No matter if it's guild matters or personal ones, he was not going to let Not Ordinary escape with his life.

.....

We did not miss this next stage in the battle either. There was 1300 cavalymen left in the Steel Blade Troops. We continued our pursuit and picked up a lot of the equipment that the Greedy Wolf Brigade dripped. Who could let go of such a great opportunity.

In the end, the legendary nine thousand man cavalry of Greedy Wolf Raiders was utterly defeated and ended up pitifully running away from [Zhan Long] and [Vanguard's] hunt. They ran straight towards the west side of Bowl Valley and then toward Zi Wu mountain.

.....

I charged ahead of the formation. My Flying Scythe WAR Horse was slightly faster than everyone else. I fought them until they had no way of fighting back. Not only did I collect equipment, but I also got experience from the people I killed. After this all, someone was going to sweep the battlefield and this way like a gold mine ready to be picked. Either way it was all for the sake of strengthening [Zhan Long]'s players. There was no need to bother who picked it up.

In the midst of the chaos, Call Me master and Yue Yao Chen's Greedy Wolf Raiders continued to die in battle. Jian Feng Han's rage was too great. He was several times more savage than even me.

After I chased them for another ten minutes, Xi Wu Mountain appeared in the distant horizon.

Right at that moment, I spotted movement in the forest. Right after that, a large group of players suddenly charged out of the forest. There was crowds of

knights all carrying shields in front of them. In the rear were archers, mages and musketeers. There was over ten thousand of them!

This entire group of people all had one insignia floating above their shoulder.

Right in front of the entire army was one man sitting on a battle horse. he was carrying a long spear in one hand and a shield in the other. He pointed his spear at the ground, his eyes gleamed with killing intent as he watched the fleeing Greedy Wolf Raiders. A name floated above his head

Cang Cheng LV-116 Knight

City: Tian Ling City

Guild: [Hero's Mound: Division One]

Position: Guildmaster

Who wouldve thought that Wang Ze Cheng would set up an ambush here. Are they going to save [Thousand Burial]? After all, Not Ordinary and Wang Ze Cheng have an unclear but distinct relationship.

“Oh?” You Yi raised his eyebrows, “[Hero's Mound: Division One] is here?”

“Haha....”

Not Ordinary laughed, “D\*mn, Wang Ze Cheng that cheat actually does have some integrity left in him. He’s actually brought people here to save us. Looks like there’s a lot of them too. With them, we'll be able to launch a counterattack. Brothers, hurry up and get behind [Hero's Mound] so that we can reorganize. Prepare for another battle!

But right at that moment, Wang Ze Cheng suddenly raised his arm and shouted, “Release!”

Arrows fell like rain and a hundred of the Greedy Wolf Raiders that had charged ahead towards Hero's Mound had died. Not Ordinary was stupefied. He held his battle axe stupidly for a moment. Rage suddenly clouded his eyes, “Wang Ze Cheng, what the in the mother\*cking world are you doing?”

Wang Ze Cheng kept an indifferent expression as he coldly said, “You know what you did. This time, I'm just giving you a warning. [Hero's Mound:Division One] brothers, Charge. Kill the Greedy Wolf Raiders. Don't leave a single one

alive!”

Horse hooves beat the ground as Hero's Mounds Division One troops all charged.following that, and the archers and mages all offered support. Such a complete synchronization and full on attack. This was something that the 2000ish broken Greedy Wolf Raiders would not be able to hold off.

# Chapter 694 - Training

“Pu Pu pu...”

Fiery arrows pierced through the Greedy Wolf Raiders. Then the white light from [Lightning Eagle Formation], Not Ordinary's 2000 Greedy Wolf Raiders were destroyed. On top of that, You Yi's rear had been caught up to by Jian Feng Han's party. With a [Combo]+[Corrupt Wolf Edge] he was instantly killed. Not Ordinary then picked up his battle axe and roared as he charged after Wang Ze Cheng.

Wang Ze Cheng was adorned with a gleaming suit of armor. He carried a large shield in front of his horse and used it to parry Not Ordinary's attacks. Not Ordinary hacked at his shield three or four times with his battle axe. Wang Ze Cheng shifted it for a second and threw a sudden stab that pierced right through Not Ordinary's chest. In the next moment, all of the archers behind him each shot a [Rising Dragon Shot]. Flashes of light exploded in the shape of a dragon, and turned the guildmaster of [Thousand Burial] into a porcupine. The moment Not Ordinary fell was the moment that signified the defeat of his 9000 Man Greedy Wolf Brigade.

“Pu Chi”

My Dragon Reservoir Sword smashed an attacker while my Brilliant Fire Emperor flashed and killed a knight riding on a Greedy Wolf. I suddenly cracked my whip. My Flying Scythe War Horse was but five steps away from Wang Ze Cheng. My horse raised on its hind legs, and stood majestically before One Second Hero's Division One army. Behind me was Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K and Wan Er. We had nearly clashed with his army. I'm afraid that would've resulted in yet another massacre.

[Zhan Long] and [Hero's Mound: Division One] had never gotten along, this was no secret.

I raised my sword and shouted, “Stop your advance!”

Once this sentence rang out, Old K, Li Mu and the rest didn't make a move.



I'm afraid they were already prepared to go after Wang Ze Cheng in one. Swoop. Wang Jian's blade was just a meter away from Yan Suo. That b\*st\*rd really was savage, and didn't care a single bit for women. The first thing he went after when this battle started was Wang Ze Cheng's girl.

At that moment, Jian Feng Han and Simple brought Goodbye Tears, Don't Be Foolish and the others along. When Jian Feng Han looked at the 1000 man cavalry behind me, a sliver of fear entered his eyes. It seemed that he had not even dreamed that Zhan Long would be able to create their own cavalry without anyone noticing. Simple was much more mature and smiled to me, "Thank you very much for [Zhan Long]'s assistance. Only with your help were we able to break this Greedy Wolf Brigade so smoothly."

I nodded, "This time Thousand Burial took a hit. All of them lost a level and dropped quite a bit of equipment. They've pretty much taken a permanent injury to their forces. I think that for the moment, they won't have the courage to attack Vanguard again. "

"Eh..."

Jian Feng Han's face seemed a little embarrassed, but at the same time, he didn't want to lower his pride any more. I was right, this time, it was Zhan Long who saved Vanguard. Finally, Jian Feng Han sheathed his sword and said, "I never would have thought that Thousand Burial had gotten this strong. There's little difference between their battle power and that of a first rate guild. Besides with that many Greedy Wolf Raiders, he will become a plague if we let him continue."

I smiled, "Nearly ten thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders have turned Tian Ling City on it's head. However, guilds like [Legend] and [Hero's Mound] had seen it all. Today, just who came to stop Thousand Burial in the end?"

Jian Feng Han looked at me and then bitterly smiled, "There probably is no true hierarchy. After all this is a virtual world where the strong eat the weak. There's pillaging and bullying everywhere you look."

Li Mu grunted and said, "Every single one of them stood clear from this fight because they don't want a target on their back, right? That's no problem, even if they all wouldn't dare battle the Thousand Burial Greedy Wolf Raiders, Zhan

Long will battle them. We aren't afraid of them. Zhan Long will only become more and more stronger, and more and more braver!”

Simple seemed to think of something and added with a smile, “Wes, Zhan Long is a guild that will grow much stronger. This is something we've all observed... All in all, thank you for lending your help. Even when Vanguard used twenty thousand of its troops it wouldn't have necessarily been able to beat nine thousand of their Greedy Wolf Raiders. “

After she said that, Simple glanced at the Steel Blade Cavalry behind me and send, “That's right, what level are those mounts?”

I replied, “Saint Tier Level 115”

Simple was stunned, “What, ... Zhan Long actually has 2000 heavy tier players that are around level 115? That's a terrifying level... our Vanguard probably only has around a thousand.”

Good bye Tears quipped,”1147 players vice guildmaster !”

Simple bit her lip and praised us, “Xiao Yao truly is material for a great general. You actually managed to let Zhan Long grow to such high potential in so short a time. It's truly impressive...”

Wan Er walked over and said,” In my heart, Li Xiao Yao is not only General material, but more so Commander material....”

I was speechless. Wan Er and Simple were already butting heads. When Simple said that I was General Material, it revealed her desire for me to be in Vanguard. Wan Er had completely rejected it with the commander sentence to tell Simple that Zhan Long did not listen to anyone else's commands. If there was going to be a king that rises up in the end from this virtual world, it was going to be Zhan Long.

Simple smiled and raised her staff, “Alright then, let this be the end of our battle... there's no need to guard the bodies. These Greedy Wolf Raiders run away too fast anyway. We won't be able to catch the ones that revive. Everyone head back then. Thank you Zhan Long for your assistance this time...”

I nodded. I turned around to Li Mu and the rest and said,” Healers, revive all of the Steel Blade Horseman that have died. Once they've revived, everyone go

grind levels in the Green Qilin Valley. At the same time, well go and see if there's any quests around the Dragon's Den. It's been awhile since our main forces have returned home."

Li Mu heartily laughed , "yes, understood!"

.....

Rays of light flashed in the forest as players were revived. All of the Steel Blade Horseman that had died in battle all flipped over and got up. They had all lost a level and needed a quiet place to earn it back. At the same time I glanced at the level of rankings. The entire rankings for the City had refreshed. Yan Zhao Warrior, General Li Mu, Drunken Spear and the other players that usually frequented the Ba Huang City rankings didn't make it on this. There was no other way, after all there were just too many strong players in the entire server and the rankings only listed the top ten.

Fang Ge Que LV 127 Job: Mage

Xiao Yao Zi Zai LV 125 Job: Dragon Knight

Mu Xuan LV 123 Job: Mage

Cang Tong LV 123 Job: Hermit God

Q-Sword LV 123 Job: Smith Swordsman

Simple LV 121 Job: Mage

Cang Yue LV 122 Job: Mage

Ye Lai LV 122 Job: Flame Berserker

Jian Feng Han LV 122 Job: Swordsman

Bai Li Ruo Feng LV 121 Job: Primordial Archer

And so, there were two golden rankings behind my name. One of them represented the second place ranking I had on Tian Ling City level rankings. The other was my place as twelfth on the CBN Battlement rankings. The two were very bright. However the difference between me and Fang Ge Que was just too great. He was both number one in Tian Ling City and number one on the CBN Battlenet. He was truly a legendary player!

Not long after, all three thousand of [Zhan Long]'s players entered Qilin Valley. Qilin Valley now spawned new monsters that were over level 130. As before, it was the best place for everyone to grind levels. If there weren't enough monsters to kill, then we could also go to the Ice Ridge mountains. There were some very high level monsters that spawned there. And they were all Thunder Tier and Titan Tier mobs. If we could climb high enough, there were even some Level 1, Level 2 Hybrid Demons to kill. But, their difficulty level was just too high. The equipment and levels of the players at the current stage had increased quite a bit, but even then we didn't want to face the Hybrid Demons. Their explosive power was enough to make anyone shudder.

After I sent everyone to go grind levels in Qilin Valley, I then entered the Dragon's Den. After neglecting to come for a few days, I saw that the resources were about to burst out of the storage again. Without hesitation, I leveled up the city to Level 8. I used the rest of the resources to recruit more Heavy Flame Archers to strengthen our defenses. I was secretly hoping that an enemy guild would come here and try to battle the Dragon's Den, just once. I wanted them to see the power of soldiers with 95% of the city's owner's stats.

After thinking about it for a moment, I couldn't help but shake my head and smile. Looks like it's just as Wan Er had said, my love for battle had seeped right into my bones.

I lead my horse outside of the city by myself and headed towards the north. I took my Ancient Heavenly Tiger towards the Ice Ridge Mountains. As I looked towards the east, I could make out Dragon City. I decided against going to Dragon City for the moment. I killed a few monsters and then went to train some of my skills.

When I entered Ice Ridge Mountain, Frost Poachers appeared. These were a frost type of demon beast that carried long halberds. They opened their big mouths and lunged at me. As I was on my battle horse, I dipped my body forward and gathered energy in my two swords. I focused on the essence of the Flying Sword Play and instantly activated stabs, sweeps and cuts. This sword play's essence was to continuously attack, and deal enormous damage. After the first attack was completed, the second attack was already prepared and ready to be executed. This required intense focus from the user. In reality, I

could deal around twenty five different attacks within three seconds. The old man once told me that the human limit was around eight punches every second and three sword attacks. My own abilities already allowed me to surpass the average human limit. But I was most vexed about the game. No matter how hard I tried, I couldn't make the Flying Sword Play appear. No matter how familiar I got with the moves, and no matter how fast I executed my moves, I still couldn't break the game's attack speed. That was something I couldn't change no matter what.

Based on the attack speed of my twin sword play, I could deal seven attacks in a moment. Afterwards, there was 1-2 seconds where I was in a sluggish state where I couldn't deal normal attacks. In reality, every second made a 2-3 tattack difference. This was also equal the normal attack speed of two solo hands. I just managed to compress it all into one second. But even so, I couldn't truly break through the game's limit.

But, if I could figure out [Turmoil Sword] I should be able to think of an attack skill that's considered my own, right?

.....

## Chapter 695 - New Quest

Without noticing, I had already reached the peak of the Ice Ridge Mountain as I tried the Flying Swordplay against the different mobs. Snow covered the landscape, and created a chilling environment. I was starting to feel so cold that I barely even shivered. The monsters couldn't go across the Ice Ridge Mountains, but the players could still go wherever they pleased on the range. The only problem was that it was too cold. A lot of people couldn't take this kind of extreme temperature.

.....

I stood at the peak of the mountain. To the left of me was the vast dead land of the Northern Hybrid Demon Territory. To the South on the other hand was filled with opportunity for battle in the Seven Northern Empires. I thought about it for a moment as I softly patted my Flying Scythe War Horse' mane. I tugged on the reins, and turned my horse to the north. I'll just kill some monsters along the mountain then!

I opened up my map and carefully looked at all of the information on it. Very soon, a group of small red dots appeared. The dots turned black soon. They probably weren't as simple as the average monsters.

There was a bramble brush in that direction. I lead my horse forward. Suddenly, a red light flew out from the brush!

Thankfully I was already prepared. I cracked my reins and switched directions. "Shua!" an iron spear brushed past my arm. It was the [Iron Spear Throw] skill from the Level 1 Demon Hunters! I locked onto the target and charged forward. My Flying Scythe War Horse dashed forward into the bramble like the wind. "Peng!" I stunned the Demon Hunter.

"He he....."

The Demon Hunter revealed its sharp fangs in a wicked grin. Some letters floated above its head. Level 135. Its stats were terrifyingly high as well. Motehrf\*cker, all of the Hybrid Demon's Stats have been respawned. They were

extremely terrifying compared to the players at the current stage!

I swung both of my swords and immediately threw out five cuts. The Demon Hunter swung its sharp claws, but it only dealt 2000 damage to me, nothing serious. It wasn't until seven seconds later, did it materialize another spear in its hand. The cool down for its skill was up. It growled as the spear grew red. I then urged my horse forward to avoid the attack. The battle horse completed the complicated maneuver while I swung both my swords. Right as the Demon Hunter threw his [Spear Throw], I suddenly spun around and ran towards the opposite direction, and successfully dodging the second attack. I then had my little tiger attack together. In a short twenty seconds, this Demon Hunter fell with a scream. The dps was pretty good. I had just finished killing people so my Dragon Reservoir Sword's [Kill for Blood] effect was still there.

I looked at the ground and there was a total of four gold piece. The drops from these Hybrid Demons were even better than the Steel Blade Beasts on Steel Blade Mountain. On top of that, the experience was very generous. After all, it was a Level 130 monster.

I happily picked up the gold and continued forward. I looked for Demon Hunters in the forest at the foot of the mountain and killed them off one by one. Furthermore, I got used to dodging the Demon Hunters' [Spear Throw]. This was a skill that all top level players had to learn. At any time, they must make preparations for being ambushed. Only then would they be able to minimize the damage they take from an attack. It's just as it was in the team battle, when the enemy charged, there was always the chance that a [Scatter Shot] or a [Lullaby] was aimed at you. You must have the ability to seek out a chance for survival in all the chaos. What was the best way for you to take the least damage while dealing the most damage to the opponent.

However, even though my maneuvers were improving by leaps and bounds, I wasn't considered a master yet. I still took a hit from the [Spear Throw]s from time to time, and lost 6000 health in one attack. It still hurt quite a bit.

.....

As I was killing them, I was thinking about things. With the appearance of mounts, all of the knight tier players finally began to take on a main role in the

game's battles. The appearance of the Greedy Wolf Raiders really made players understand one point: Even [Thousand Burial] managed to rise to new heights with the might of thousands of mounts behind it, if they were paired with a guild like [Hero's Mound] or [Legend], then their might would be unimaginable.

There were three main battle sects for knights, the Battle Reflux Style, the Pulse Break Style and the Drunken Sword Style. I understood the basic essence of all three. Furthermore, I could recognize them whenever I was in a solo or team battle. The Pulse Break and the Thorn Style usually showed up in solo battles or battles on a small scale. However, in the greater scale wars, then the truly great styles were the Battle Reflux and the Drunken Sword styles. For example, when I used my [Halberd Flame] and charged forward as I used [Drain] to recover my health. My endurance was extremely high, which allowed me to tank all the damage for so long without falling.

On the other hand, the Pulse Break Style created very little difference in a battle. The situation on a battlefield was constantly changing. Everywhere there was [Stun]s, [Blind]s, and [Sleep] effects flying around. Nobody would give you the chance to interrupt a skill anyway. Maybe you could successfully interrupt one person's skill, but you might be pressed to the ground by a group of entirely different people. The only way to survive was to kill everyone on the battle \field and find a place for oneself. You must be able to control the tempo of the team. That was the true potential of control type players.

Jian Feng Han, Li Mu and Wang Jian were all determined to continue down the path for the Battle Reflux Style, probably for the same reason. Jian Feng Han wasn't an idiot. Based on his natural talent and ability, he definitely could learn the Pulse Break Style. But, he still didn't. Instead, he's been thinking of how to maximize the advantages of the Battle Reflux Style. On this point, he deserved more respect than Q-Sword. Of course, Q-Sword sought multiple different styles and he trained in a variety of different battle styles. This was his strongest advantage.

.....

As I was thinking about it, something suddenly wavered in the brambles, and caught my eye. I stared right at it. A group of red dots appeared on the map. In the next moment, "Shua shua shua!" five Iron Spear's flew at me from different



directions. My mind went completely blank. What the f\*ck, they actually spawned five Demon Hunters for me?!

I pulled at my reins, and forced my Flying Scythe Horse to stop. After that I made a quick change in direction. “Sou!” a spear flew past me. I dodged one of the Iron Spears. But I was still hit by another one. I couldn’t just stand around and take these hits. And so, I swung my sword and began my counter attack. My little tiger also pounced forward beside me, activating [Fierce Roar] to attract aggro.

I locked my attacks onto one of the Demon Hunters, but I ended up getting hit by [Spear Throw]s from the other Demon Hunters. Fighting like this was extremely tiring, but dodging was too difficult. Was I going to continuously be hit like this? My only choice was to rely on [Cleansing Rain] and [Heal] to slowly keep my health up.

As the battle became more intense, I suddenly heard a dragon’s roar in the sky!

“Roar!”

I looked up, what was that?!

All I could see was a crimson dragon’s flame descend upon us. “Peng!” the four Demon Hunters that I didn’t kill all fell to the ground, burnt to crisps. I was stunned. Who had the guts and skill to kill that many Hybrid Demons in one hit?!

I looked up, only to see the dragon disappear. A beautiful woman appeared in the air. She looked very majestic with some hints of wilderness in her eyes. It was the Red Dragon Queen Zi Shu.

“Oh, it’s Zi Shu?” I smiled. I immediately picked up my sword and walked forward to greet her.

Queen Zi Shu smiled, “Master, it;s been a long time!”

My contract with her was only for a few days, but it seems that Zi Shu still hadn’t changed her greeting. She was actually calling me Master even without our contract. Seeing her, I said “One doesn’t visit a temple for no reason, you must be here for something right?”

Zi Shu grinned, “Master truly is clever... I’ve been sensing a strong power while I was in Dragon City and so I came here. I never would have thought that you were here too. But I do have something for you. Lady Frost is looking for you.”

“Oh? Why?”

“She didn’t say. She just told me to bring you back to Dragon City.”

“Ok, let’s go then!”

Zi Shu dove down and grabbed my arm in one swoop. She smiled, “You walk too slowly, I’ll fly you over!”

.....

Helpless, I put the little tiger and the Flying Scythe War Horse back into the pet space. The wind whistled past my ear as we flew straight towards Dragon City.

After a few minutes, we reached the sky above Dragon City. As we descended, we entered right to the center of the city.

On the way, there were several Dragon City soldiers training in the small military grounds of Dragon City. These days, Frost has recruited quite a few elite warriors across the continent to boost Dragon City’s battle power. On top of that, she seemed to be teaching the warriors the ancient techniques that were buried in the tomes of Dragon City. In order to hold off the Hybrid Demons, Frost has been exerting every bit of effort.

Zi Shu seemed to guess what I was worried about. She smiled, “Master, right now, Dragon City already has over ten thousand citizens. Of them, 5000 are Dragon City warriors. Laborers, chefs and shippers constitute the other 5000. Even if the Hybrid Demons were to attack again, at least we have some kind of force to defend.

I nodded, “Where is Frost?”

“She’s in the Commander’s Hall.”

“Ok.”

After Dragon City was rebuilt, the old King’s Hall that Luo Lin had once ruled

from was also rebuilt. Now it was named the Commander's Hall. The great doors were heavily guarded. When the enormous doors were pushed open, there appeared two large sand tables placed in the great hall. Small flags representing the Hybrid Demon forces were scattered around the tables. There was another enormous desk next to it that was covered with flags that represented the three kingdoms, Tian Ling City, Ba Huang City and Dragon City. Frost was sitting at that desk, pouring over a lambskin map.

“Lady Frost, master is here!” Zi Shu announced.

Frost looked up. The moment she saw me, a light flashed in her eyes. Her beautiful face seemed to have thinned quite a bit. She smiled, “Li Xiao Yao, you’re finally here....”

I smiled, “What’s wrong... you miss me?”

Frost blushed but she couldn’t resist saying, “There are some things that we can only talk about in private. Let’s talk business then....”

“Ok.”

Frost left the desk and leaned against the edge of the sand table, “Three days ago, a wave weak of Hybrid Demons launched a series of attacks against Dragon City. They were pushed back by me. However, they ambushed us in the middle of the night again. That time, Sword Spirit Dragon Riders appeared. One type was a flight type. They could reach an altitude of 500 meters. They threw large boulders, and smashed quite a few of the machines we had on the border of the wall. They were five hundred meters in the air, so none of our archers could reach them. This was something that made Zi Shu and I feel very helpless. Zi Shu is after all by herself.. I can’t allow her to go against so many Sword Spirit Dragon Riders on her own.”

Zi Shu grunted, “Lady, it really isn’t anything big. Those insects can’t kill me!”

“Even so....”

Frost looked at me and said, “Li Xiao Yao, do you know what I want to say?”

I nodded with a smile, “Dragon City right now needs true Dragon Riders to hold off those flying type Hybrid Demons like the Sword Spirit Dragon Riders!”

Frost smiled, "Yup, I was thinking the same. And so.. I want you to go with me. We'll go complete a not so honorable task. We must keep it a secret...."

I glared at her and unhappily said, "Do you want me to follow you to the Wild Dragon Territory to steal some Dragon Eggs?"

Frost pouted her lip, "Wu, I really can't keep anything from you...."

# Chapter 696 - Entering the Dragon Territory Again

“The Wild Dragon Territory....” I grunted, “Alright then....”

Frost leaned against the sand box and slowly said, “Actually, I was originally going to take Queen Zi Shu with me however this time, we must act in complete secrecy. But, as long as Queen Zi Shu enters the Wild Dragon Territory, an effect will spread out throughout the map, and create a large fuss. On top of that, we must leave someone back here to guard the city. Anyways, the Wild Dragon Territory is Igoras’ territory. Before Dragon City can train any new Dragon Riders, I don’t want to anger Igoras. Otherwise, the consequences will be unthinkable.”

As she said that, Frost looked at me and smiled, “And so, this time we’re disguising ourselves when we enter the Wild Dragon Territory. Once we steal the Dragon Eggs we’ll immediately fly back to Dragon City. We’ll complete this task without anyone knowing. You want to come with me?”

“Ding!”

System Notification: Do you accept this SSS tier Main Quest [Enormous Dragon Blood Inheritance]?

.....

I accepted the quest on the spot and immediately obtained the quest. The quest details were very simple. I was to follow Frost into the Wild Dragon Territory. No matter what tactics I had to use, I needed to steal a certain number of Dragon Eggs in order to complete the task.

Once I accepted the quest, Frost immediately pulled out her Severing Beauty Sword and smiled, “Then let us prepare to set out. Zi Shu, prepare our battle horses!”

Queen Zi Shu nodded, “Yes my lady... that’s right, are you sure you don’t want to bring Odelia?”

Frost bit her lip, “Nevermind. Odelia has already left Dragon City over a month ago. She has her own business. Besides, Odelia cannot be restrained, nor do I want Dragon City to become one of her restraints.”

“Alright my lady.”

.....

After we left the Commander’s Hall, snow had begun to fall outside. One of the soldiers pulled over a white battle horse and grunted, “Lady Frost, this Thousand League Snow is a legendary horse. Angela had sent it to us not long ago. You will definitely meet many obstacles on this journey to the Wild Dragon Territory. This horse can travel a thousand leagues in a day. It will be a great help to you!”

Frost nodded and lead the battle horse over. She reached out and gently patted the horse’s mane. At that moment, the originally violent horse had calmed down. Looks like Frost really lives up to her position as a Superior God. Even a horse can feel the might of her power.

As she flipped onto the horse Frost smiled at me, “Can we set out now?”

I opened my hand and activated a summoning circle, and called out my Flying Scythe War Horse. I leapt onto the horse and said, “Let’s go!”

Queen Zi Shu smiled, “Bon Voyage. I will lead the Dragon Warriors ten miles out to welcome you back. I hope that you don’t bring Igoras, Lei Ding and Lanais those evil demons back!”

Frost smiled and turned her horse around. The Thousand League Snow whinnied as it charged off the wall. I followed right behind her. The battle horses were very intelligent, especially the high tier ones. As it fell through the air, it quickly found a place to land. It bounded down the mountain as snow covered the sky. This had given us the best natural cover. In the thick snow, nobody would notice that people had set out from Dragon City into the Hybrid Demon Territory.

.....

I gripped my reins with one hand while I carried my Dragon Reservoir Sword in the other. I carefully followed behind Frost. I had also summoned my Ancient

Heavenly Tiger out to follow alongside us. She held the reins with both her hands, and let the snow fall directly onto her shoulders. She shivered slightly and pulled the cape closer. She pulled up the hood and covered her pretty face with the hood. She then turned around to look at me and smiled, "Once, when I was still an adventurer, I had to once travel through a blizzard for seven days and seven nights...."

I replied, "At that time, Luo Lin had yet to betray the human race and his own values...."

Frost looked up at the sky and let out a sigh, "That's right. When we were both young, we were both looking for something like justice. But our strength and ambition lead us on different paths."

I asked, "Do you hate Luo Lin?"

Frost hesitated for a moment. She seemed at a loss. She then muttered, "Hate? Maybe... but I don't hate that he killed me. I just hate the fact that he had gone against his original promise and betrayed the humans. For that reason, I want to kill him. When the time is right, I won't hesitate!"

I pulled my Rulers Mantle closer together and covered my head. I smiled, "The Revered One's Plains are all under Luo Lin's control right now. We cannot become their enemy right now. As long as we keep our actions low key, we will be fine."

As I said that, I looked up at the sky and said "This blizzard is really strong. We should hurry up and leave this place. Otherwise even if we don't get frozen to death then at least we'll die of hunger."

Frost nodded, "Ok."

After staying in the game for a long time, the most I would feel was tired but Frost that NPC could feel cold and hunger. But... she was a Superior God, she should be able to take hunger, right?

.....

After a while, the two of us passed through the Graveyard of Heroes. The heavy blizzard soon lightened to a thin snow fall. By the time we reached the Revered One's Plains, the snow had stopped. The Revered One's Plains were

covered in autumn colors. It was a lively area with animals eating the grass around it. Every now and then we would see a tiger nearby that was hunting the livestock.

“Ji ji....”

In the sky, we suddenly heard a shriek. Frost was stunned and she softly said, “Put on your hood, hurry, it's the Sword Spirit Dragon riders!”

Those were Level 7 Hybrid Demons!

I didn't look up, but I could see their shadows fly across the ground. There was a total of five of them. They spiraled above Frost and I for about five minutes before flying away. They must think that the two of us were only passing through. It was said that the Revered One's Plains were open to humans, elves and barbarians alike. And so, it has attracted many thieves and poachers from the mainland. It was very common to see people who were dressed like Frost and I. These Sword Spirit Riders must've been looking for troops on a greater scale that were going to invade the Hybrid Demons Territory.

In the distance, a lone city stood in the center of the field. It was the empire that Luo Lin had set up here. It was a city that congregated anything that had fallen to the darkness, humans, barbarians, and elves alike. Luo Lin was the king of it all here. In the distance, we could see him training his troops on the open field. This sight made Frost furrow her elegant brow, “that's Dragon city's arrow formation... D\*mm\*t, is Luo Lin training them that so that they can use it against the humans?”

I clenched my teeth and lead my horse to Frost's side. I put a hand in her shoulder and said “Don't think too much about it. Later when we walk into the city, don't say anything. I will bribe those officials.”

“Ok!”

.....

When we arrived at the gate, there were at least a thousand people defending the city walls. These soldiers were all originally from Ba Huang City's Imperial Guard, and Purple Star Armies. Afterwards, they were brought to the



Hybrid Demon Territory by Luo Lin where they had been cooked in the Dead Soul Medicine. They were no longer humans any more. Their eyes had turned black and their skin had dried up. Even their faces had changed their shapes. They were more closer to ghouls than humans. The only thing that hadn't changed was their greed and desire. Of them, there was one that looked like an official who lead his horse over here. He looked down on us and shouted, "Those two, what are you here for?"

I slowly lead my horse forward. Without taking my hood off, I softly said, "We're poachers that are planning on killing some young dragons for gold. I hope that my lord will allow us to pass through. This is just a small gift to show you my sincerity!"

As I said that, I took out 2000G from my pocket and tossed it to him.

"Pa!"

The official grabbed the pouch and weighed it for a moment. He smiled widely, "The hunters nowadays are getting more and more obedient. He he, brothers, tonight let's go to the bar for some fun. Whenever I think of the lady of the bar, Branda's plump buttocks, I get ecstatic!"

Everyone smiled, "My lord is great! We'll follow my lord to hell and back!"

.....

"Scum...."

Frost was so angry she was trembling and she softly cursed at them.

I reached out and tugged on Thousand League Snow's reigns and took Frost into the city. I was afraid that she'd be so angry she'd just massacred everyone there. If that happened, then there was no telling how we'd get out of the mess.

We carefully made our way through the Revered One's city. Frost continued to endure her anger. Seeing this let me release a sigh of relief. After this, we'd enter the most dangerous area. There were no rules in the Wild Dragon Territory. Those evil dragons will kill or eat humans on sight. We were not going to be able to buy our way out of that.

I looked up at the sky, it was completely blue with a few white clouds and not a single Sword Spirit Rider in sight. I lowered my voice, “Looks like we’ll reach the Wild Dragon Territory in twenty minutes. Frost, how were you planning on stealing the eggs and how many?”

Frost smiled and said, “I was planning... well I first needed to figure out where the Dragon Eggs were hidden. After that, I was going to tip toe into there. As for how many, I want to create a branch of Dragon Riders that are extremely powerful. I would need at least ten or more dragons for that. Of course, the more the better. On top of that... the fire, green and ice dragons are the strongest mounts. The wind dragons are too thin and their scales aren’t durable enough. It’ll be easy for spells and arrows to pierce through their bodies. Plus, their battle power just isn’t strong enough...”

“Gu dong....”

I gulped, “Then how are we supposed to figure out where they hid their eggs? Has Zi Shu told you before?”

“She doesn’t know either. But I have a way to ask.”

“Ask... you want to ask them?”

A little doubt crept into my heart, “How were you planning on asking?”

Frost smiled, “I was going to grab one of the dragons and ask them politely of course....”

“How are you going to grab one?”

“That’s simple, you’ll go out to lure them and I’ll capture it...”

I nearly doubled over. I was starting to think that I took the short end of the stick. But, this was an SSS tier quest. Of course it wouldn’t be impossible to say that it wouldn’t be dangerous. Nevermind then. If I got deceived then I got deceived!

Right at that moment, Frost suddenly reached out and held my shoulder, “Careful, don’t say a word. We’ve already entered the Wild Dragon Territory. Their territory has expanded quite a bit... look here, the wild dragon scouts... later, you’ll go and lure one over here. I want to ask them and get some

answers.”

“.....”

I looked up. There was an enormous beast perched on a cliff. All of the scales covering its body were a deep crimson. This was a mature red dragon. Frost really overestimates me. Isn't she afraid that it'll bite me into two halves!

# Chapter 697 - The Red Elder Dragon

“How is it? Are you certain that you can handle this?”

Frost looked over at the surrounding terrain and said, “In a moment, I will lay ambush in that small ravine over there, you will then draw the red dragon over. Remember, do not over-aggravate the dragon or else he might just release a deafening roar that will call over the other humongous dragons from the other tribes.”

I started to feel weak as I asked, “What if he eats me in one bite? What happens then?”

Frost laughed out loud as she patted her full and buxom chest and answered, “Relax, I will be here to protect you!”

I couldn't help but laugh at the situation for Frost was just too cute. Ever since she resurrected, Frost has been very reticent and quiet but when she goes out together with me on a mission, I can once again see her honest smile. Whatever, for Mother Earth's harvest and for the smiles of my beautiful teacher, even if I were to turn into dragon dung, it will all be worth it. It's not like I will not revive after my death.

.....

Frost turned her body as she rode her mount towards the valley and hid in a cluster of trees, so concealed that she couldn't even be seen by me.

I lightly tapped the neck of my Flying Scythe War Horse, and urged it to slowly approach that fully-grown red dragon. I didn't have to go too close before I could read the stats of the humongous dragon. Red Dragon Lian Feng, a level 135 Demon Harvest tier BOSS!

Shit!

I was frightened stiff. After the new Hero's Wings update was released, the grade of the monsters in the Hybrid Demons territories seemed to have upgraded too. To think that a group of gatekeeping monsters are now Demon Harvest Tier BOSSES. Does that mean that silver spear and the other sovereign

tier BOSSES are all at the tier of Epic God?

It was only now that I finally realised why the quest to steal this dragon's egg was of the SSS tier. Solely this level 135 Red Dragon Lian Feng would already be enough for me to deal with. I can't aggravate it, I can't let it eat me alive.....

"Bang!"

Unsheathing both my Dragon Reservoir Sword and my Brilliant Fire Emperor, I slowly inched towards Red Dragon Lian Feng. Despite being 30 metres away, it was still sleeping. I walked another 10 metres and yet, it was still sleeping. However, I was getting more frantic as I was able to see the breath of the sleeping Red Dragon Lian Feng. With one puff of his breath, the surrounding grass was all roasted to the point that it all dried up and turned yellow. I definitely do not want to be turned into roast chicken.

With this thought, I pointed my sword at the BOSS and shouted in a deep voice, "EVIL CREATURE, COME TO QUICKLY RECEIVE YOUR DEATH!"

The Red Dragon Lian Feng seemed to have finally felt something as it opened its left eye, its pupil was as red as a blazing fire. It glanced at me and then closed it, and continued to go back to sleep.

Is this motherf\*\*\*\*\* belittling me?! F\*\*\* it!

I felt as though I had already been defeated. Lian Feng wasn't paying any attention to me because he felt that I didn't pose any threat to him. That was the only reason he was still sleeping.

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and ran straight towards his head. I raised the sword and threw a [Wind Blade] right at his head and roared, "Die!"

"Keng!"

"5162 ! "

I actually heard a metallic clang when my strike hit. Even with my 150% BUFF from the [Kill For Blood] I still couldn't break through his defense! I shuddered to think about how high this Red Dragon's defense was.

After he took a hit, the Red Dragon finally opened its eyes. It lazily glanced at me and suddenly swept an enormous claw at me. He opened up his four

individual razor sharp talons with one curved downward as it stared right at me. It had such a mirthful and aloof look in its eyes. I suddenly understood what it was thinking. It was like a tiger playing with a mouse.

“Shua!”

That curved finger suddenly shot out. “Peng!” the blow landed across my Flying Scythe War Horse’s abdomen. Both I and the horse flew into the air. I felt an intense pain shoot through my body as I landed in the grass a hundred meters away. Besides the damage dealt to my body, the worst was the damage I took to my ego. This was not something I could forgive!

I flipped up. That flick took 27000+. After two [Cleansing Rain]s I was back to full health. I picked up my Dragon Reservoir Sword and lunged forward. I was going to wake him up this time!

My Flying Scythe War Horse whinnied as I raised my long sword. I locked [Great Realm of Desolation] onto the dragon and then threw my Brilliant Fire Emperor, and activated [Blade Spin]. “Pa Pa PA!” It spun around the dragon’s head as I threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

“Hong!”

Dust scattered into the air as damage numbers popped up one after another. This time I had gone all out. Lian Feng had already given up on his nap and began to place more importance in this ant. He lifted himself up and roared. His two enormous wings unfurled and he launched right into the air and swooped right at me. He dealt a [Dragon’s Breath] right smack on top of me!

“31278 ! ”

The attack was so painful I nearly went crazy. My full health was 50,000 how was I supposed to endure this kind of torture? My Flying Scythe War Horse screeched. I sent out my Ancient Heavenly Tiger to help cover for me as I ran. With a growl, I activated [Haste] and [Dragon Transformation] and put my Flying Scythe War Horse back into the pet space. I kicked off the ground and soared into the sky.

As I gulped down a Level 11 Potion, I turned around to look at Lian Feng. I could see his savage face as he raced towards me. His second [Dragon’s Breath]

was coming!

“Shua!”

I sped forward. That [Dragon’s Breath] was coming right at me! I could dodge it!

But before I could celebrate, I suddenly took a hit on my back!

“Peng!”

“24512 ! ”

[Dragon Transformation] increased my defense naturally, but I still couldn’t defend against Lian Feng’s attack. I nearly spat out blood from the hit. I lost control of my flight and barreled forward, and crashing through numerous rocks that were piled up. I suddenly passed through a bramble forest. That Demon Harvest Tier BOSS’s one attack was just too savage!

“Pu....”

I was just about to hit critical health when I rolled into the bramble forest. Scratches covered my face and hands and my body hurt everywhere.

In the bushes, I heard Frost’s warm voice, “Yup, your job is finished. Leave the rest to me. Also, you did beautifully...”

.....

“Ant, die!”

In the sky, the Red Dragon Lian Feng dove downward and raised his claws to go in for the kill. I could already see the flames burning on the tips. This was definitely going to be a powerful hit.

But right as Lian Feng was about to strike, “Hong!” an astonishing power struck out from the forest. Countless snowflakes gathered together into a whirlwind, and froze everything around us. Frost had activated her godly power, and froze Lian Feng in the sky. The frost was like chains, which bound this beast so tightly together that he couldn’t even move.

The forest had been cut to pieces by the frost, and revealed the bare red cliff on the forest floor. Frost quietly stood there in her white cloak, and smiled at

the Red Dragon in the sky.

Lian Feng stood in the air, his eyes filled with rage, "You... Aren't you the Frost from Dragon City? It must be you. Only you can accumulate such terrifying Ice Power. D\*mm\*t.... When Lord Igoras had cut you to a million shreds, they should have never let a demon like you live again!"

Frost didn't seem angry at all. She only smiled and opened her palm. The icy energy began to dance. A force suddenly fell down. "Peng!" Lian Feng's body plummeted to the ground. Frost walked forward and bit her finger. Blood dripped into the wind as she roared, "[Blood of the God - Seal]!"

At that moment, an enormous crimson net fell from the sky, which bound the Red Dragon Lian Feng to the ground. Even when he tried struggling, he couldn't move an inch.

Frost walked over and smiled, "No need to struggle. You've been sealed by me. Even if you were a god, you wouldn't be able to get out. Besides, you aren't anyone important. Tell me, just who are you?"

Lian Feng's eyes were filled with shock, "You.... what a strong power, you're really a god?"

Frost smiled wryly. She opened her left hand and golden runes flew from her palm. She said, "A god's blood is filled with power. Only people with god status or a god's body can control it. Do you have any other questions?"

Lian Feng closed his eyes. It seems he's already given up, "Nevemrind, I can't beat you...."

"So let me ask again. Who are you? What's your responsibility in the Wild Dragon Territory?" Frost quietly asked with a calm and stern voice.

"Me?"

Lian Feng seemed to laugh at himself as he said, "My name is Lian Feng, in the Wild Dragon Territory, I am one of the four elders, the Red Dragon Lian Feng. This answer, is that satisfiable?"

Frost smiled, "Good!"

As she said that, she shot an apologetic look to me and pouted her lip, "Li Xiao



Yao, I'm sorry. I didn't realize this dragon was actually one of the elders of the dragon tribe. His power had far surpassed my estimate. Otherwise, I wouldn't have let you take that risk...."

I rubbed one of the scratches on my face and wiped away the wetness in my eyes and said, "It's fine, it doesn't hurt!"

Frost grinned and then looked back at Lian Feng, "Now, let me ask you. How is the Wild Dragon Tribe reproducing?"

Lian Feng said, "Consensually. However, all of our dragon eggs are being kept in one place to be incubated. Every hundred years, we incubate once. This way, we have enough spiritual power to raise the young dragons. After Odelia stole the Dragon God Essence, the Wild Dragon Tribe's dragon power has been steadily been getting weaker and weaker. I'm afraid we'll only be able to incubate once every 500 years now."

Frost narrowed her eyes, "Those dragon eggs, where are you hiding them?"

Lian Feng's enormous head trembled for a moment. He suddenly stared right at Frost and asked, "You... what do you want?"

Frost softly smiled and patted Lian Feng's head, "Nothing much. I just want to borrow a few. When I go back to Dragon City, I'm just going to help out the humans a little...."

Lian Feng revealed an extremely pained expression, "You.... D\*mm\*t, as a god, just for the sake of trying something new, you are actually willing to use our Dragon Eggs to make omelettes... You humans are the most greedy most terrifying species...."

Frost's face hardened, "Idiot, who told you we were making omelettes...."

Lian Feng was stunned, "Then what do you want with Dragon eggs? Unless you have a warm place and dragon power, you cannot incubate them."

Frost seemed proud of herself as she said, "Dragon City has an enormous heat source below the city. As for dragon power, we have the Red Dragon Queen Zhi Shu. We can even speed up the growth of these young dragons."

"What?!" Lian Feng was stunned, "That can't be? Nobody can speed up the

growth of a young dragon. Otherwise, the dragon tribe would've already dominated the north..”

Without any change in her expression, Frost said, “The Dragon God Essence that Odelia sold has already been bought by me for 50,000 Gold. Besides, our Red Dragon Queen Zi Shu has the ability to raise dragons. Raising a pack of grown dragons in a short time will not be a problem. Do you have any other questions? Now it’s my turn. Where are those Dragon Eggs hidden? If you try to drag this out any longer, I’ll kill you with a single slash and then find some other dragon!”

# Chapter 698 - King Level Robber

As she said that, Frost grinned, “Or, I kill you in one slash, take your dragon crystal and sell it for a good price. Those noblemen and generals of Tian Ling City will definitely be very happy to have a gift to give to their beloved mistresses, right?”

The Red Dragon Lian Feng shuddered. A sliver of fear flashed through his eyes, “You.. you monster. You aren’t any Superior God, you’re the reincarnation of a demon....”

Frost smiled, “Cut the small talk. Tell me now. Otherwise I’ll really kill you. My time is short and I ain’t wasting it on you.”

Lian Feng snorted out a flame. He finally looked up at the sky in desperation and said, “Nevermind, I’ll just think of it as a trial for the Wild Dragon Tribe. If Igoras looks for someone to blame, I will take all responsibility. If you really want to take some Dragon Eggs, you must treat them well. No matter what, they are all the grandchildren of the dragons.”

Frost nodded, “Don’t worry about that. I am the master of Dragon City. I will not cruelly massacre the dragons. I just want to use them as a way to strengthen Dragon City.”

Lian Feng continued, “In the heart of the Wild Dragon Territory, there’s a Buried Dragon Abyss. The Buried Dragon Abyss was originally used for burying some Dragon Essence, however as the years passed, the earth’s heat grew stronger and stronger, so the Buried Dragon Abyss turned into a place for the Dragon Tribe to keep their eggs. However... there’s a total of eleven dragons that guard the Buried Dragon Abyss. Even you may not be able to enter it Frost. Allow me to persuade you, give up. If you even try to attack the Wild Dragon Territory, the Sword Spirit Dragon Riders will be the first to get here. Within twenty minutes, Lord Igoras will lead an army of elite soldiers against you. At that moment, even if you are a Superior God, you will die!”

Frost smiled, “Ok, that much is enough. As for how I will defend against Igoras’ attack, that’s my business, you don’t need to worry about it. Alright then

Lian Feng, right now you can sleep for a bit. Thank you for your assistance.”

“What?”

Lian Feng widened his eyes, as though he was about to say something more. However, Frost had already waved her hand first. Her palm glowed purple. “PA!” she smiled, as she slapped his head after she wrote a symbol on his forehead. As one of the four elders of the Wild Dragon Tribe, the Red Dragon Elder actually cried out and fainted. He didn’t make another sound.

Frost looked up at me and said, “Hurry, we don’t have much time. Lian Feng will wake up in two hours. This is very precious time. We must immediately set out and find the Buried Dragon Abyss at the heart of the Wild Dragon Territory!”

“Yes!”

Once I recovered all of my health, I leapt onto my horse. Frost mounted her Thousand League Snow horse as well. The two of us galloped through the forest. Now, all we wanted was to pray that not many dragons saw us. Otherwise, the more complicated this got, the less we would be able to control the situation.

Soon after, the map around us became to turn more and more red. I picked up my Dragon Reservoir Sword and cautiously looked around the area. Suddenly, we heard a dragon’s screech from the sky. Frost quickly grabbed my shoulder. The two of us ducked and hid in the grass, afraid to even let out a single breath. A fire dragon flew right above our heads. Only after it passed did we let out a sigh of relief.

“Looks like, the Wild Dragon Tribe has increased its defenses.....”

Frost looked at the sky and murmured, “Let’s go. We have to work faster!”

“Yes!”

As we continued forward, we dodged another dragon scout. Finally in the distance, I could see the heart of the valley. This was very near the place that I had saved the Queen Zi Shu. Just a kilometer to the East of the Great Hall was a deep abyss. I could see some smoke rising up from the center. The name was notated clearly on the map as well, it was Buried Dragon Abyss!

“We’re here! That’s Buried Dragon Abyss!” I pointed towards the distance. I furrowed my brow as I took a closer look and said, “But there’s a lot of dragons guarding it. What do we do?”

There were five fire dragons napping around the Buried Dragon Abyss. On top of that, there were three ice dragons spiraling above it in the sky. In the distance, I could see two silver dragons perched on the slope in a deep sleep. In a dragon’s life, over 70% of it was spent sleeping. Looks like that rumor appeared to be true.

Frost looked at the Buried Dragon Abyss and said, “Two silver dragons are pretty strong... let’s deal with those two first. After that are the five fire dragons.... The ice dragons in the sky will definitely use Frost Breath to attack. I can use Frost Domain to defend, so it shouldn’t be a problem. However, there’s supposed to be eleven dragons guarding the Buried Dragon Abyss, where’s the last one?”

As she said that, she turned to look at me with a smile, “Later when you enter the Buried Dragon Abyss you’ve got to be careful. Once you’ve stolen enough eggs, you can come out....”

I pointed to myself in shock, “Me? You want me to steal the dragon eggs?”

Frost nodded, “Yup, you’re too weak so you won’t get noticed by the dragons, nor will you be able to take all of their attacks. You might even be able to walk right out of here after you’ve taken the eggs. But, if you don’t want to, then you can deal with the ten dragons and I’ll go steal them....”

I thought about it for a moment and finally made a fist, “Alright then, I’ll go steal the eggs. You need to be careful...”

Frost looked at me for a long moment and finally said, “You be careful too. Whether or not Dragon City will be able to rise up will all be dependent on you. The future is in your hands... I’ll go seal those two silver dragons. Don’t move yet. Wait until I’ve awoken those five dragons before you go into the abyss. Remember to be careful and be fast. Once you get ten of those eggs, immediately leave!”

“Got it!”

“Let’s begin our mission!”

As she said that, she mounted her Thousand League Snow. The beautiful knight suddenly disappeared into the wind. Frost’s full speed was incredible. Even I could barely keep track of her movements with my eyes. In the next moment, the two silver dragons that were sleeping suddenly yelped. One of them had been knocked out by Frost’s fists, while the other lunged forward and slashed at Frost’s [Godly Feather Shield]. Dragons were known to be the species of animal closest to the gods. In addition, the silver dragons were known to be of the highest blood type amongst dragons. Even Frost wouldn’t have necessarily escaped that strike unscathed. She yelped as she was forced to retreat a couple of steps. But power gathered around her fist once again and she threw another punch into the dragon’s head!

“Peng!”

She hit just the right spot, and knocked out the second silver dragon. However, the sound of their clash was too loud and it looked like the five napping fire dragons had also woken up. One of them looked up and roared, “D\*mm\*t, someone has trespassed into the Wild Dragon territory. Two of our Silver Dragons have been knocked out. Just who is that woman? Is that Odealia?”

Another dragon exclaimed, “No, that’s someone who’s a hundred times stronger than Odelia.... What a strong godly power, that’s Dragon City’s Frost. It must be her. Only the twelve Superior Gods would be able to handle suchs strong Frost Energy. D\*mm\*t, kill her. Let’s do it before the Superior God in her wakes up!

As he said that, the five fire dragons all roared at the sky. They opened their enormous wings and flew straight at Frost. Frost then raised a single hand, and unsheathed Severing Beauty. Light reflected off the blade as she charged at the dragons. At the same time, I heard her voice beside my ear, “Now, go!”

“Go!”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and slapped it against my Flying Scythe War Horse’s behind. The horse leapt up in pain and charged forward. I cut through the forest at an incredibly fast pace. Within half a second, we raced to

the border of the Buried Dragon Abyss. I was starting to feel a little regret, but I continued charging and “Shua!” dove headfirst into the abyss. The Buried Dragon Abyss had a radius of at least 200 meters. At most we could charge 100 meters across at the rate we were going. I looked down and saw that the abyss was filled with magma. Was this where they incubated the dragons?

I clenched my teeth and continued forward. This was where the advantages of a high tier mount really showed through. Even in midair, the horse’s legs kicked against the air, boosting it another dozen meters. I looked forward. It didn’t look too far. I raised my arm and activated my Dragon’s Hook!

“Peng!”

The Dragon’s Hook buried itself into the cliff and I quickly dragged us forward. I put my horse back into the pet space as the momentum of our charge was too great. I had rammed face first into the steaming cliff. As I looked around, the pain from my journey was starting to fade as I saw holes one after another dug into the side of the cliff and filled with large pearly Dragon Eggs that had a godly aura. Even though the Wild Dragons are now following Igoras and the Hybrid Demons, there was no faking the fact that they carried the blood of ancient dragons.

I pulled out my Brilliant Fire Emperor and stabbed it into the cliff as I scaled the wall. I reached out and gathered one red dragon egg into my arms. I glanced at the stats, it was a fire dragon——

[Fire Dragon Egg] : Contains the dragon egg of a high level fire dragon. Special Item, players cannot use.

D\*mmn, so players can’t use it... but then again it makes sense. If players could use these dragon eggs however they wanted to, then wouldn’t the world just go into chaos? Thinking about it, [Thousand Burial] could use their ten thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders to draw the dragons’ attention while they had people come in and steal the eggs. They could use any underhanded tactics they could think of to create a branch of dragon riding players.

I put the egg into my bag. It had taken up five of my spaces. I was a little startled. I had a total of 100 spaces, so what was I to do...

I pulled out my potions and hardened my heart as I tossed them out. I

continued scaling across the cliff. Not long after, I received an Ice Dragon Egg. I could feel the excitement rushing to my head. When I looked up, a flash of light suddenly caught my eye. There was a shining dragon egg that was around 30 meters away from me. I could even see the infant dragon through the shell.

I immediately activated my Dragon's Hook, bringing me to this dragon egg. I put it into my bag. It was a crystal dragon egg. Crystal Dragon's were extremely high level dragons!

I happily continued my search. Very soon, I had pretty much thrown away all of my potions. I had obtained a total of 15 dragon eggs: 1 Crystal Egg, Two Silver eggs, Four Fire Eggs, Two Ice Eggs, Three Dark Eggs, and Three Red Eggs. I didn't even bother with any of those wind or earth dragon eggs because they were too low level. I only went for the holy tier dragons so that it wouldn't be hard for Dragon City to tame them.

Yup, might as well throw out the rest and go for 20 eggs so that this trip won't be a waste!

I continued my search. When I looked up, I was nearly scared to death. Right above me, an incredibly terrifying face was staring right at me. It was a gold dragon. It opened its jaws and swooped straight at me, as though to eat me!



# Chapter 699 - Proof of Marriage

In a rush, I could only block with my Flame Emperor!

“Peng!”

The blade had practically shattered from the enormous force behind the attack. I was thrown into the air and was sent speeding towards the other side. After that attack my health had dropped to 33%. If I took another Dragon Breath, I was doomed!

I looked up and locked my [Assault] at a cliff above me. The force from the skill threw me upward. Behind me, a large MISS popped up. I couldn't help but feel a little proud, I actually managed to escape!

Then, the golden dragon behind me screeched. It dug its sharp claws into the cliff. Like an enormous gold bug, it charged after me and raised its claws!

“+12638 ! ”

I quickly gave myself some health and then activated [Dragon's Hook]. I rushed forward 50 yards. I crossed my Dragon Reservoir Sword and Brilliant Flame Emperor, “Ka ka ka” I climbed as fast as I could, running for my life.

Clearly, this golden dragon was not going to show me any mercy. It's enormous wings unfolded as it flew up. It then spat a [Dragon's Breath] right at me!

Just as it looked like I had no path left, I quickly used a [Blade Rush]!

“Shua!”

I surged another five yards forward. It wasn't a lot of distance, but it was enough to dodge the second Dragon's Breath. This time, I also managed to turn around and glance at the words above its head. As I expected, it was a Demon Harvest BOSS. It was one of the four elders of the Dragon Tribe. No wonder its attacks were so powerful. Every single attack it dealt was enough to smash my [Wall of Dou Qi]!

“Peng!”

Afterwards, I heard a muffled sound behind me. I felt as though my back had been split open. This cruel gold dragon had pierced claw into my body, and nailed me into the stone. At that moment, my health plummeted. Even if I drank a health potion, it wouldn't be enough to stop the decline. As a last resort, I activated [King Domain], and strengthened my stamina and durability. Despite that, I was still dying!

My face burned against the hot stone. Dragon's Hook still had three seconds before its cool down was over. I locked the skill above me and finally dragged myself out of the golden dragon's painful grasp. When I tried to summon my Ancient Heavenly Tiger, it failed. The map didn't allow, summons. It's really trying to screw me over!

I was only twenty meters away from the exit. I did all I could to climb up. Behind me, I could feel the heat from a Dragon's Breath coming straight at me!

I quickly used a [Cleansing Rain]. But I could not hold up against a Dragon's Breath with only 20,000 health.

In this moment of life and death, I quickly summoned a God Army Card and activated [Seven Star Teleportation] on the rock. Once I got to a position, I was immediately teleported upward. I grabbed the border of the cliff and "Shua!" leapt out of the abyss. I quickly summoned my Flying Scythe War Horse and galloped away. Behind me, the Golden Dragon roared and chased after us.

"Shua!"

A beautiful figure fell from the sky. "Peng!" She had fallen right in front of me and rolled along the ground. It was Frost! Her shoulder armor had been scorched black and she had an enormous scratch on her face. Even she had suffered injuries. A group of dragons just had too much explosive power!

She looked up at me with a cheerful look, "You got it?"

"Yup!"

Frost smiled and then stood up. She charged right towards me. She then pointed at the sky. Her Severing Beauty Sword flew into the sky right at the Golden Dragon while she went and leapt onto my Flying Scythe War Horse. She wrapped her left arm around my waist and said, "The three great elders of the

Wild Dragon Tribe are all here. I took some poison from the Wind Dragon, so I can't use all of my strength. Let's hurry up and escape. The faster the better!"

"Got it!"

I practically pushed my horse to full speed and charged straight towards Dragon City. Frost tightly grabbed me from behind as she used her Severing Beauty Sword to attack the dragons in the sky. Her Severing Beauty was incredibly sharp. Even the Golden Dragon Elder would take some hits and golden blood continuously flowed from its injuries. At the same time, I could tell all of those Dragon Tribe members had all been stunned or had taken a heavy injury, but none had died. Looks like Frost wasn't trying to kill them. Otherwise Frost wouldn't have been injured so easily.

After running for thirty minutes, the number of dragons behind us was finally decreasing. Most of them had been scared off by the sheer might of Frost's [Razor Rotation] and didn't dare come any closer. Besides, they had only lost a few dragon eggs. Even the dragon's valued their lives more.

If a Ba Huang City adventurer came to steal dragon eggs, these Dragons would definitely fly into a rage. They wouldn't give up even if they had to chase us to hell and back. But this time they knew that it was Frost who took the Dragon Eggs, so they wouldn't pursue us until the ends of the world. Losing to a Superior God, wasn't completely embarrassing.

Very soon, I had used up all 200 stamina of my Flying Scythe War Horse. I could already see the revered One's empire in the distance. As I continued forward without stopping, Frost smiled, "So how was it? What kind of Dragon Eggs did you steal..."

I pulled out one of the eggs from my bag. It was a crimson dragon egg. Frost held my waist with one hand and held the dragon egg with the other. Her pretty face became even more radiant, "Wow, it's a Fire Dragon Egg.... Fire Dragons are considered one of the highest tier dragons. This Fire Dragon Egg will bring new opportunities for Dragon City!"

I nodded with a smile, "we have a total of four of them!"

Frost grew even happier, "Good... great.... My face did not get scratched by a Purple Gem Dragon for nothing..."

I looked at her, “You...”

Frost bit her lip and turned away, “Don’t look!”

“Why?”

“Because....” She bit her lip, “Because I look too ugly right now. I don’t want you to see....”

I didn’t say anything else. I picked up another dragon egg, it was the Crystal Dragon Egg. At that moment, Frost’s focus had been sucked back to the eggs. She gaped at it, “Heavens, it’s a Crystal Dragon Egg. This is the strongest type of dragon among the gem dragons. Of the entire dragon species, there aren’t many dragons that have as pure a blood as the Crystal Dragons....”

I smiled, “Do you like it? Can you have Zi Shu hatch this egg and make it your mount?”

Frost shook her head “No need, I can fly on my own. I don’t need a dragon as a mount. If you give it to me, it’ll be a waste. Crystal Dragons have a warm personality. I’ll give it to Qing Luo. She know one of the squad leaders in Dragon City. A Crystal Dragon as her mount matches both her personality and her position.”

I said, “Yup, whatever you say! That’s right, did you lose your Thousand League Snow?”

“Yup. So all that’s left is your horse...”

“That’s fine. We’re covered in blood right now. We have to find a way to get into the Revered One’s Empire without being suspected. The Revered One’s City has several Sword Spirit Riders. I don’t want to alert them.”

“Ok, let’s go!”

Around ten minutes later, we entered the borders of the Revered One’s Plains. I took out the permit we obtained from the guard that allowed us into the city. The problem was, Frost and I were both covered from head to toe in dragon blood as well as our own blood. Even our cloaks had been ripped apart. Especially me. The injuries on my face from the gold dragon had not been recovered yet. Nearly half of my face was covered with blood and scratches. I

looked like the miserable result of a terrible beating.

Once we arrived at the Southern Gate of the Revered One's Plains, we would be safe after we got through those large iron gates.

But right then, a new group of NPCs were now guarding the doors. One of them had a big beard and carried a large battle axe. Above his head floated the name "Gate Patrol Road Wolf". This Wolf carried his battle axe on his shoulder and he had a wild expression on his face. He had spotted us from a distance and with a smile he shouted, "Hmph, those two. Halt!"

I reigned in my horse and passed him the permit, "This is the permit we received when we came in. Please my lord, please let us through!"

The road Wolf glanced at Frost and I, noting the state we were in and said, "You're covered in blood Tell me, did you commit any crimes in the Revered One's borders? If you did, then I'll have to take you to the Revered One King Luo Lin and throw you in jail!"

I shook my head, "Not at all. My Lord, please look closer. We only went to the Wild Dragon Territory and killed some low level dragons. But we never would have imagined that those evil dragons would be so strong, which resulted in our miserable state. So...."

The NPCs broke into laughter. The Road Wolf looked down at us and said, "You want to go and kill a dragon? What a joke! Even we wouldn't dare touch those dragons, much less trash like you humans. Go on, get lost back to your Tian Ling City and wash up your necks. You're going to want to wait and see King Luo Lin invade Tian Ling City with his armies!"

I resentfully nodded and urged my horse forward. But right then, a breeze blew by, and brushed Frost's hood off her head. Her beautiful face was revealed for all to see.

"Wait!"

The Road Wolf squinted his eyes and stared at Frost's face, "Where'd you get this wench? Is she with you? A man and a woman sitting on the same horse. Why do I have a feeling that you have a complicated relationship? Youngster, you want to make a deal with me? Is this wench a servant that you stole from

outside?”

I trembled with anger, “My lord, what are you saying? She’s.... She’s my.....”

Frost reached for the Severing Beauty hidden within her cloak as she smiled to the Road Wolf, “My lord, please understand, I’m his wife. There is just the two of us in this group.”

“Is that so?”

The Road Wolf seemed to doubt her words, “You’re covered in blood, were you forced? If you were, tell me! I will bring you justice. Beauty, you really don’t have to worry!”

“We really are...”

“What proof do you have?” The Road Wolf smiled. He licked his lips with his long tongue.

Frost stiffened, but she continued to hide her killing intent. She suddenly reached for my neck and kissed my face, “Mmm...”

I was stunned.

The Road Wolf was speechless at this point.

Beside him, one of the soldiers lowered his voice and said, “Gate Control Lieutenant, Lord Luo Lin has a command, we cannot give trouble to the adventurers that are passing through. We... let’s not stick our nose in their business. Otherwise, the b\*st\*rds from Fierce Tiger Camp will tell on us to King Luo Lin. we’ll be fired at that point...”

The Road Wolf furrowed his brows and waved us in, “Hurry up!”

I galloped through the gate.

Frost sat quietly, and held my waist and didn’t say a word. I don’t know if she was thinking of Luo Lin.

# Chapter 700 - Invincible Body

My Flying Scythe War Horse flew forward. This time, we didn't meet any big problems. All of the Demon Hunters we met on the way had been killed by my Ancient Heavenly Tiger. When Frost and I arrived at the city, there were several soldiers sweeping the snow off the walls. Of the twelve months in a year, it snowed in Dragon City ten months. At the same time, the accumulated snow did not melt at a very fast pace, so it had to be swept away every day. Otherwise, the snow would be as high as three whole people. There would be no way for people to walk or defend the city.

“PA!”

I landed on the city walls. Frost also followed beside me. Lieutenant Qing Luo smiled and walked over to us saying, “My Lord, did you and Frost successfully complete your mission?”

Even though Qing Luo's position was above mine in Dragon City, but due to her nostalgia of our time spent rebuilding the city, she still addressed me as her superior and hasn't changed since.

I nodded to her with a smile, “Yup, we didn't disappoint our mission!”

Zi Shu walked over with a smile, “Congratulations master, congratulations Lady Frost.... What dragon eggs did you bring back? Please don't be a bunch of wind dragon eggs... although they're good at flying but their defense is too crappy. They're pretty much like the Sword Spirit Mounts. If we're invaded, they're pretty much finished. “

Frost smiled, “Li Xiao Yao, how about you bring out the dragon eggs you got for Queen Zi Shu to see?”

“Ok. How about we go to the hall first?”

“Alright!”

Frost, Zi Shu, Qing Luo and I brought ten of Dragon city's more higher ranked soldiers to the Great hall. There was a fur blanket draped across Frost's work table. I carefully placed the dragon eggs on the blanket one by one. There was a

total of 15 eggs, one Crystal Dragon, Two Silver Dragon, Four Fire Dragon, Two Ice Dragon, Three Black Dragons and Three Red Dragons.

Qing Luo was stupefied at the sight, “Amazing....”

Zi Shu was also stunned, “These should be the most high tier dragon eggs of the dragon tribe.... Who.... who picked them out?”

Frost smiled at me, “My job was to provide cover, Li Xiao Yao was the one who went into the abyss to steal them.”

Zi Shu smiled, “You truly are worthy of being my master.... The Five Color Dragons, and the Gem Dragons are considered saints among the dragons. Master, it was an incredible feat for all of the eggs you’ve stolen to be the Saints of the Dragon Tribe. Good fortune is upon Dragon City. This time, we will truly rise up. If we can get fifteen strong soldiers to become the riders of these Saint Dragons, then these fifteen Dragon Riders will become Dragon City’s Ace and secret weapon!”

I said, “Zi Shu, do you really have a way to hatch these dragons?”

Zi Shu reached a finger out and waved it.

“You can’t?” I was stunned.

Zi Shu smiled, “No, I just need one day to hatch these eggs!”

“One day?” I was stupefied.

Zi Shu smiled, “That’s right master. The Dragon God Essence was left behind by Odelia. In addition, 7000 years ago, I had already become a Holy Dragon, not to mention a female one. This is an advantage that not even Igoras has. That’s why, Ignaus had never been able to control the strength of the Dragon God Essence. However, I can. Not only can I speed up the incubation process with the Dragon God Essence, I can even speed up their growth. As long as they are given enough nutrients, these young dragons will develop within a month into grown ups!”

I was stunned.

Frost patted my shoulder and smiled, “Alright now. You’ve helped me steal so many dragon eggs, I still haven’t given you your reward... Here, this is your



reward!”

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, you have completed the SSS tier Main Quest [Enormous Dragon Blood Inheritance], Your Reward: Level+1, Charm+35, Gold+20000, and your reputation in Tian Ling City has risen. Your military ranking in Dragon City has also increased and you’ve received the reward: [Invincible Body] (Holy Ghost Second tier)!

“Shua!”

A golden light flashed and I had leveled up to 126. On top of that, it looks like I’ve obtained a book?!

I opened up my bag and saw a light orange colored book lying there. I took it out to look. I was practically beside myself with joy. This was a skill that I could only dream about——

[Invincible Body] (Holy Ghost Second Tier) : The Undefeatable Spirit awakens, giving the user the body of a demon or a god. For 25 seconds, the user enters an Invincible state. In order to learn this, the user must be Level 120. Learning consumes 30 points. Cooldown: 120 minutes!

Unrivaled! This truly was an unrivaled skill!

Before, unrivaled skills were normally special skills that came with equipment. Very rarely were there unrivaled skills that came by itself. On top of that, this one actually lasted for 25 seconds. Compared to the ones that only lasted seven to twelve seconds, this was practically against all logic. No wonder it was a Holy Ghost Second Tier skill. It really was incredibly strong!

I raised my hand and the skill disappeared. It took 30 charm to successfully learn this skill. The skill immediately appeared on the interface as a golden body. Unfortunately it had a 120 minute CD, if it was 60 minutes, then I’d be able to use this unrivaled skill during the Hero’s Wings Cup. Then I’d truly be unrivaled....

I happily stood there, and glanced through my stats. At the moment, I had great defense, attack, and unrivaled type skills. PKing in the wilderness was not going to be a problem, even if I met an expert like Fang Ge Que. I had 25

seconds of unrivaled power. In that time I could force him to use all three of his [Dimensional Leap]s. After that, I can kill him however I wanted to. Only, from now on, all of the future battles were unlikely to be solo, but rather team battles. One unrivaled skill was not enough to twist a battle situation into our favor. Yup, I just need to fight on!

Queen Zi Shu suddenly added, “Lady Frost, I will begin incubating these eggs this afternoon. However... please prepare some necessary materials for me. Otherwise, the spirit power of the Dragon God Essence will go to waste.”

Frost nodded, “Queen Zi Shu, please tell, what do you need?”

Zi Shu said, “After the young dragons hatch, they must eat some meat to replenish their energy. None of these dragons eat vegetables. I need large quantities of food like Pork, Beef or Lamb.”

“Around how much do you need?” Frost asked

Zi Shu thought about it for a bit and said, “A hundred thousand animals....”

Frost was stunned, “What?! A hundred thousand? That many....”

“Yes.”

Zi Shu Said, “Grown up dragons have enormous bodies. They need at least eat at least 20-40 times their weight in order to grow up in thirty days. We have to prepare everything. I don’t want them to die of hunger once they hatch....”

Frost seemed a little troubled, “A hundred thousand beasts, that’s a little too much. I don’t dare boast that I can accomplish that feat. Besides, Dragon City doesn’t have a lot of gold. If we were to buy....”

On the side, Lieutenant Qing Luo replied, “Lady Frost, you don’t have to worry about that. Her Highness Princess Angela had said before that if Dragon City had any needs, Ba Huang City will use all of its resources to help us. Ba Huang City has ranches all along the Qian Qing Plains and the Xing Yun Peak. As long as Princess Angela gives a command, then we’ll be able to get at least 50,000 beasts within ten days. If we use some more of our gold, then we can buy some from Tian Ling City, Fan Shu City and Jiu Li City. We should be able to get enough within thirty days.”

Frost nodded, "Alright then. Take a message from me to Ba Huang City and help me thank Princess Angela!"

"Yes my Lady!"

I wandered around Dragon City for a bit. There didn't appear to be any big tasks left for me to do. I glanced at the time. It was starting to get late in the evening in the real world. It was almost time to eat dinner. I hadn't eaten anything for lunch, so my stomach was starting to growl.

Right at that moment, I received a message from Dong Cheng, "Handsome, time for dinner!"

"Yup."

"We're going out...."

"Huh? Going out? Who's paying?"

"My old man is. He said something about how he hadn't seen me in a while and how he wants to invite you and Wan Er to dinner. We're going to my house. You wouldn't mind my ... humble abode, right?"

I thought for a moment, "Nevermind, stop joking with me.... Let's all go together. There must be a lot of good food right?"

"Of course"!

Once I thought of good food, I didn't have the heart to continue grinding levels. I went back to the city to replenish my bag and fix up my equipment. After that, I agreed to meet Wan Er and Dong Chen so I logged off.

After I took off my gaming helmet, I quickly went to wash my face. Afterwards, I walked out the door. Wan Er and Dong Cheng were both wearing fresh outfits and were talking outside the door. When I walked over, I saw that Tang Qi had also put on a suit and was walking out from the end of the hall. He was Dong Cheng's body guard, so naturally he was going as well.

This time, Dong Cheng was driving. We sped out of Liu Hua University. After thirty minutes, we reached the suburbs. We drove into this neighborhood of mountain villas. I sighed in my mind. Miss Dong Cheng was a rich girl. The Dong Cheng Family was in quite a few industries. From real estate to loaning money,

they practically did it all. And so, Dong Cheng Feng was considered a pretty important person in Hang Zhou. On top of that, Dong Cheng was the apple of his eye. You can't normally tell, but he was a very easy going man, and very amicable.

Dong Chong slowly parked the car in front of one of the villas. A figure walked out from the house. It was Dong Cheng Feng. Under the light, I could see that his hair was already starting to grow white, but despite this he remained fairly youthful. He smiled, "Yue Er, you're finally willing to come home. You've brought Li Xiao Yao and Lin Wan Er with you as well. Ha Ha, home's going to be very rowdy today...."

We exchanged some greetings and all walked into Dong Cheng's house. It truly was very luxurious. All of the decor looked westernized. It was both elegant and lavish. As I glanced around, I saw that Dong Cheng Lei was walking towards us. He grinned, "Brother Xiao Yao, you're finally here! Ah Yue said that you were coming today but I didn't believe her at first!"

I smiled, "Yup, I'm here to try out the life of a tycoon..."

Dong Cheng Yue grinned, "Brother Xiao Yao, now you're just asking for it!"

Dong Cheng Feng laughed, "Li Xiao Yao is truly humorous. Come sit. I'll go and see when dinner will be prepared. We must treat you well today!"

# Chapter 701 - Like A Fierce Flame

Not long after, a table of fragrant dishes was set out in front of us. It was just as Dong Cheng Lei had said, all of the different dishes and styles of Chinese cuisine had been represented. The lives of rich people really couldn't be understood by us plebians.

"Brother Xiao Yao, sit here!"

Dong Cheng Lei was very warm and helped pull out my chair. I smiled with a nod, "Thank you Ah Lei!"

Dong Cheng Feng sat down as well and opened up a few bottles of red wine, "Ever since Yue Er began to attend Liu Hua University, she hasn't even had the time to come back. Tell me, how long has it been since you last came home?"

"It's just been a few months...." Dong Cheng grinned to her dad. Her spoiled expression made even Dong Cheng Feng unable to add anything else.

Dong Cheng Le said, "Dad, Ah Yue has been doing quite well in school. I've been over there to take a look, the environment is very nice. Besides, she has Brother Xiao Yao and Wan Er to keep her company. She definitely won't get bored. That's nothing like when she's at home. She spends all day in her room and only plays games. She even said herself that she can't live a life like a canned fish. Isn't she much more happier now?"

Dong Cheng grinned, "Bro is still the one that understands me best!"

Tang Qi stood up and went to help pour the red wine in Dong Cheng Feng's hands. Dong Cheng Fen then said, "My assistant is also a pretty young man. He's been paying attention to the situation in your game recently. He even said that our Dong Cheng Yue earned a very high rank in a competition, isn't that right?"

Dong Cheng blushed and smiled, "Not exactly. I just held onto Brother Xiao Yao and Wan Er... Otherwise, based on my power, I might not even make it into the top sixteen."

Tang Qi interrupted, "Little Miss, you're being too modest!"

Dong Cheng Feng wryly smiled, “It really is great to be young. You better enjoy this time! That’s right Yue Er, I almost forgot to tell you. Recently, the company has signed a big contract and sold the land close to Wan Da just south of the city to another company. We’ve even created a partnership in operations.”

“Oh? The land south of the city...” Dong Cheng blinked a few times and said, “That spot is practically like gold. It wouldn’t be possible without at least two hundred million right?”

Dong cheng Feng smiled and nodded, “Exactly, we sold it for four hudnred million.”

“Which company?”

“Booster Pharmaceuticals Corporation. They want to begin operations in the city and have even set up plans to build a large scale shopping center on the land. They’re planning on developing the Xi Hu Region into a central business district.”

“Booster?” I furrowed my brows, “Uncles, did Wang Ze Cheng sign that contract with you?”

Dong Cheng Feng was stunned, “What? Li Xiao Yao, you also know Mr. Wang from Booster?”

I smiled, “Yea, we’ve known eachother for a while. He’s been attending Liu Hua University as well.”

Dong Cheng Yue then asked, “Dad, do you know much about this Wang Ze Cheng?”

“A little. He is a very formidable young man. What’s wrong?”

“Be more careful around him. Wang Ze Cheng isn’t a good person!”

“This....”

Dong Cheng Feng was starting to feel some doubts. I put down my cup and said, “There shouldn’t be any problems. After all, it’s just for business.”

Dong Cheng Yue nodded, “That’s true.”

Dong Cheng Feng was completely muddled. He had no idea what we were talking about. He turned around to make a call. Who knows what he was telling his assistant. After that, he continued to eat dinner with us.

.....

After we finished dinner, it was already eight in the evening. We even stayed at Dong Cheng's house for a while longer to continue chatting. It was ten o'clock by the time we returned to the school.

When we arrived at our apartment, I took a quick shower first. Right as I finished, my phone rang. It was a call from Shen Bing. When I picked up, Shen Bing's charming voice sounded through the phone, "Little Li, what are you doing?"

"Just showered. Shen Bing, do you need something?"

"Yup. If you take a picture of you in the shower I'll tell you."

"Then I'm hanging up."

"Alright alright, I'll say..."

"Tell me...."

"There's good news and bad news. Which do you want to hear first?"

"Good news then!"

"Ok!" Shen Bing got serious and said, "Last time, we managed to obtain the chemical compounds of the drug that Wei Fan uses. We've already been able to determine some of the chemicals that were used. After a series of analyses, we found that this drug can greatly change any mutations or breakages in a human's DNA. That is why the Artificial Humans had such strong bodies."

I furrowed my brows and said, "What's the bad news?"

Shen Bing replied, "The bad news is about that the blood sample that you risked your life to get when you were at the Blue Water Street, however.... When Forensics looked into the sample you provided, they did not discover any traces of the drug. However, it looked like You Yi's DNA was practically perfect. In all of history up to now, there's less than a handful of people that have DNA as perfect as his. However, that doesn't mean that he is an Artificial Human. We

couldn't find any mutations on the DNA itself, so.... Based on this, there's no way we can pin any charges against You Yi. And so naturally, we cannot lock him up without a reason"

I mumbled, "So it was like that...."

Shen Bing said, "However, that isn't necessarily a bad thing. Let's just leave You Yi to his own antics for now. His good days are about to end. Lately, a new military base is being built in the Ning Bo Province. That way, they can help reinforce us at any time and provide support. Upper management has already decided that we must eliminate the Artificial Humans on Blue Water Street."

After carefully thinking about it I said, "Ok, how about we keep watch on him... During this time, Not Ordinary and You Yi have been getting into a lot of business in the game."

Shen Bing smiled, "But of course. After the police had intercepted a large shipment, at least for this month, they won't be able to do anything else. Besides, Not Ordinary has a critical weak point. He is crazy about games. That's why he's invested so much into <Destiny>. Maybe, we can use this point to bring Not Ordinary down in one stroke. Isn't that right?"

"Yup, I hope so!"

"That's right, there's something else."

"What is that?"

"Idiot, didn't you promise your most prized subordinate into the [Zhan Long] main guild? How'd you forget so soon. That youngster has been annoying me this entire time, pestering me to remind you to invite him as your friend. His ID is "Like a Fierce Flame". He's a Level 116 Musketeer with very strong skills. I heard that while he was in Jiu Li City, the [House of Prestige] people even tried to recruit him. That kid has been grinding levels like crazy right after work. Besides you and I, he has the highest level among the others at HQ. He's been called an otaku because of it...."

I couldn't help but smile, "Alright. I had actually forgotten about it. Later when I log on, I'll send an invite."

"Ok!"



.....

I rubbed the towel over my head to dry my hair and put on a clean set of clothes. Time to log on!

“Shua!”

I appeared in Tian Ling City. I immediately glanced through my friend requests. I had set it so that I wouldn't get notifications for any new invites and so I had to go through 4000+ of them. As I looked through, I finally saw the name “Like a Fire”. He was already a Level 117 Musketeer. The picture really did look like Xing Lie. He had a crew cut and his eyes had a deep but limpid expression in them. He was the Guardian team's number one shooter. His accuracy with long range sniping was even higher than my own. Choosing to be a musketeer in the game was very suitable.

Once I accepted the invite, Lie Xing was added to my friend list in the next moment. He was actually online. He quickly sent a message to me: “Head, is that you?”

I replied, “Yup, it's me, I'll invite you into [Zhan Long]'s main guild!”

“Alright!”

.....

In the next moment, the main guild already sent a notification: The Player “Like a Fierce Flame LV 117” has joined your guild. He has been promoted to “Flag Bearer” by the player Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

Li Mu was stunned, “D\*m, who just joined our guild? He was immediately promoted to become one of the twenty seven Flag Bearers. He must have a background. Tell me, who is Like a Fierce Flame? What's his relationship with the guildmaster?”

Now that Like a Fierce Flame was one of the officers of the guild, he had the permission to send messages to everyone through the guild chat. He smiled, “He's my company boss....”

I coughed and said, “Like a Fierce Flame's real name is “Xing Lie”. He's one of my co workers. He's a great shot, so his ranged support should be good. Little

Lie, tell them, what are your stats and skills like?”

Xing Lie replied, “My long distance attack power is 7203-9145, Defense, 6800, Health is a little over 24000 and my critical rate is 27.4%. As for my skills, besides [Magma Bullet] and [Flame Bullet], my luck was pretty good and I managed to learn an SS tier [Armor Piercing Bullet] skill. Once it hits the target, it ignores 70% of its defense. Furthermore, for seven seconds, all of my attacks ignore 70% of their defense.”

“Gu Dong....”

General Bai Qi gulped and exclaimed, “D\*mn.. so OP... I never imagined that Tian Ling City would have a musketeer like that. He has a 9000+ base attack. Doesn’t that mean that with all of his equipment he has over 30,000 attack?”

Xing Lie smiled, “Yup, I just hit 34,000....”

Wang Jian suddenly appeared and shouted, “34,000 attack? Plus seven seconds where you ignore 70% of the target’s defense? This Like a Fierce Flame really is a great shooter!”

Xing Lie smiled, “That’s right Wang Jian. I’ve long heard stories about you as well.... Actually, my strongest ranged kill attack isn’t that one. It’s my own custom S ranked skill, [Bullet Rise]. It increases the range of my attacks by 30%. In other words, while normal musketeers have a range of 40 yards, I can hit my target from 52 yards away!”

Wang Jian was stunned, “I finally understand why Brother Xiao Yao would promote you to be a flag bearer. You truly are very strong. You’re stronger than our current number one musketeer by quite a few factors...”

Wolf grinned, “What a bitter former Number one Musketeer, ha ha ha ha....”

I asked, “While I was offline, was there any movement from the [Thousand Burial] Greedy Wolf Brigade?”

Matcha said, “Reporting to Boss, there hasn’t been. After the defeat that the Greedy Wolf Raiders suffered at Bowl Valley, they’ve been silent and haven’t made any big moves. At least there hasn’t been any large scale movements with the entire army. Not Ordinary split the troops into five hundred and thousand man teams that have each entered Jiu Li City, Ba Huang City and Fan Shu City to

grind levels. There have been a lot of PKs on small guilds, but those can't be helped. [Zhan Long] doesn't have the strength to bother with every little thing."

I took a deep breath, "Looks like Not Ordinary still hasn't given up. He still wants to raise his Greedy Wolf Raiders and strengthen them into a branch of Wolf Troops.

Wang Jian softly chuckled, "Brother Xiao Yao, don't worry too much. The players that we left to guard Steel Blade Mountain have continued to train the Steel Blade Riders. I don't dare to speak too highly, but within the week, we'll have at least 4000 in our cavalry. Even if we go up against a ten thousand man team of Greedy Wolf Raiders, we won't be at a disadvantage."

I nodded, "Good, everyone work hard on grinding levels!"

"Yes sir!"

# Chapter 702 - Fishing

In the blink of an eye, seven days passed. It was already the tenth day since the Hero's Wings Chinese Server Competition had finished. In these ten days, quite a few things had happened. After [Zhan Long] and [Vanguard] had allied with each other against [Thousand Burial], Not Ordinary did not let his Greedy Wolf Brigade laze around. He actually managed to grow his army to 15,000 Raiders. This was an alarming number in Tian Ling City. And so, now that Not Ordinary had such a large mobile heavy army, he began more decisively battling with others. First, he attacked a five thousand man team from [Wrath of Heroes]. That was a battle of complete annihilation. [Wrath of Heroes] practically had no way of counter attacking before they were wiped out.

After another two days, the fifteen thousand man Greedy Wolf Brigade took the stage again and ambushed [Flying Dragon]'s main army in PanGu's abyss. Soaring Dragon couldn't stand such petty actions and he immediately assembled his army. In the end, he used 27,000 of [Flying Dragon]'s players, but was still defeated in one fell swoop by the Greedy Wolf Brigade. Everyone in [Flying Dragon] had died, while the Greedy Wolf Raiders only lost 7000 of their players. They had defeated Flying Dragon in a 1:3 ratio. Drunken Spear had killed a whole three hundred Greedy Wolf Raiders, but he was still overrun by their sheer numbers.

Three days later, Not Ordinary's great ambitions had not been satisfied yet. He brazenly made a move on [Judgement], one of the ten great guilds of Tian Ling City. He ambushed an expedition force created by Ye Lai. There was a total of 18,000 players in it. Even Ye Lai's handpicked [Judgement] Cavalry of 4000 players were in it. In the end, they still couldn't hold against the 15,000 Greedy Wolf Raiders. Finally, even Ye Lai had died in battle. However, Not Ordinary did not gain much either. After killing all 18,000 of his opponent, he had lost 12,000 of his Greedy Wolf Raiders. However, the final sweep of the field was left in the hands of [Thousand Burial], bringing the Greedy Wolf Raiders' equipment to a new level.

A day ago, the fifteen thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders went out once more,

this time and attacked one of [House of PRestige]’s teams. In a short two hours, he had wiped out the nine thousand man team lead by Swift Thunder and Bai Li Ruo Hai, while he had lost less than 3000 Raiders. This only boosted his reputation even higher. He was probably already starting to notice that these fifteen thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders was the ace in his deck. He was already starting to raise his own flag in Tian Ling City. If he could in the game, I believe that Not Ordinary would already start claiming himself to be a king....

However, Not Ordinary hasn’t truly allowed his victories to rush to his head. After all this time, he has not dealt a hand on [Legend], [Hero’s Mound], or [Zhan Long]. He’s been waiting for an opportunity. Waiting for himself to become strong enough. Then he will launch a victorious strike. Based on Not Ordinary’s arrogance, there’s no chance he wouldn’t try to challenge the three great guilds. The only problem is that he didn’t feel the opportunity has matured yet. Once it arrives, he will step over the corpses of the three great guilds and climb to the golden seat as number one guild in Tian Ling City.

.....

Afternoon, Inside a cafe in Liu Hua University.

I leaned into my chair and relished the feeling of the sun’s rays hitting my skin. I held a coffee cup in one hand as I felt the heat from it spread into my hands. I was enjoying this rare relaxing moment in the afternoon.

Wan Er sat beside me wearing a cute coffee colored sweater with large rabbit ears. This was an outfit that <Destiny> specially designed for the famous players on the CBN Battlenet Rankings. I had a green praying mantis sweater, but I had never worn it. I couldn’t take the damage it would cause. Wan Er smiled as she looked at me, “Pig, when do you think Fang Ge Que will make a move against [Thousand Burial]?”

“Oh....”

Wan Er seemed a little angry, “Idiot, I’m asking you. What does an Oh mean....”

I said, “Alright then, I don’t know when Fang Ge Que is going to act. He might not even act at all. Fang Ge Que is known as the number one man in the Chinese Server. He probably won’t bicker with a group of crazy dogs like the

Greedy Wolf Brigade....”

Dong Cheng sat across from us and contently looked at the people outside the glass as she smiled, “I actually think... that whoever can deal a death blow to those Greedy Wolf Raiders will end up being known as Tian Ling City’s hero. Think about it, the Greedy Wolf Raiders have already reached a membership of 16,000 and they’re still flourishing without an end. Of all the guilds in Tian Ling City, who hasn’t been hit by the Greedy Wolf Raiders? None, right? There’s long been quite a few who have voicing their discontent, they just don’t dare to act on it. After all, who can rival these 16,000 Greedy Wolf Raiders?”

I nodded, “That’s true. Just the other day, [Flying Dragon] and [Wrath of Heroes] allied with each other and set up an ambush at Qing Canyon. In the end, they waited for half a day and the Greedy Wolf Brigade never arrived. On the other hand, once they had sent everyone home, they took an ambush. The scene was too terrible. They had lost a whole 20,000 players... It’s to the point where none of the middle tier players dare to ally with each other anymore.”

Wan Er bit her lip, “That Not Ordinary right now is truly like a tyrant...”

“Yup....”

Wan Er looked over to me and smiled, “Pig, then how about we do it?”

I knew what she was thinking and I quickly shook my head, “Don’t. I don’t want to take the initiative against the Greedy Wolf Raiders. I’m not tired of life just yet....”

Wan Er’s beautiful eyes seemed a little frustrated, “You’re too cowardly. Wu, why should I want a boyfriend like you? Dong Cheng tell me!”

Dong Cheng giggled, “Then don’t have him!”

I smiled as I explained, “The flexibility of the Greedy Wolf Raiders is too high. Plus, it looks like Not Ordinary and You Yi’s intel is very good. We won’t have much of an advantage if we took the initiative. Even if we managed to smash the Greedy Wolf Raiders, we’ll have lost most of our players as well. Besides, I’m not afraid of him.... You haven’t seen how I’ve had Li Mu, Matcha and Qing Qian lead their troops to grind levels in the Green Qilin Valley and near the Sword Saint Forest? We haven’t gone to any of Tian Ling City’s maps

anymore....”

“Why’s that?” Dong Cheng asked.

Wan Er’s eyes lit up, “That... Pig, are you trying to lure [Thousand Burial] out to attack?”

I smiled, “Smart, that’s exactly it. I’ll have them come to Green Qilin Valley instead. That’s [Zhan Long] territory. Besides, it’s also neighboring the Dragon’s Den. Don’t you know? The Dragon’s Den has already leveled up to a Level 8 City. Just yesterday, I’ve allocated all of the resources to the new Deep Freeze Heavy Cavalry. Right now, you guys use your phones to look up the stats. Use your position as a vice guildmaster to look at the stats of the military might of Dragon’s Den and you’ll understand....”

“Huh?!”

Wan Er quickly flipped open her phone. Not long after, Dong Cheng also joined in to look. The two girls were both filled with shock, “D\*mn... you already have a thousand of the Deep Freeze Heavy Cavalry?”

Full of confidence, I smiled, “Yup. A thousand Level 8 Deep Freeze heavy Cavalry. These have 100% of my stats. On top of that, they move incredibly fast. Their flexibility isn’t just a level above the Greedy Wolf Raiders. These Deep Freeze Cavalry are guarding the Dragon’s Den. They can move anywhere within the limits of the area around the Dragon’s Den. If Not Ordinary truly dared to bring his Greedy Wolf Raiders to attack Greey Qilin Valley, then I’ll kill every single one that comes our way!”

Wan Er excitedly smiled, “Yup, now I feel much better....”

Dong Cheng wryly smiled, “Aren’t you fishing now!”

.....

That afternoon, I logged on!

I appeared in the Dragon’s Den. I summoned my Flying Scythe War Horse and charged out of the Great Hall. I could see laborers all around me moving the stones. They seemed to be strengthening the city. Chi Yu Qing was the one commanding them. On the other hand, within the Equestrian Range in the city,

countless Deep Freeze Cavalry were training. The sounds of a man's shouts and the horse's whinnied response was muddled into one loud arena.

In the distance I could also see a group of Heavy Flame Archers training on the archery grounds. There was a total of 1200 Heavy Flame Archers, a thousand Deep Freeze Heavy Cavalry. That's just the NPC army that'll be the main battling power at the moment. They are also the guarantee for the safety of the Dragon's Den. Besides that, these 2200 NPC are my own aces. If I didn't have these, then I might actually be worried about the sixteen thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders that he has. After all, the team battle power of this group of the Greedy Wolf Raiders has been proven. Even Ye Lai had suffered a defeat to his hands. [Zhan Long] wouldn't necessarily be able to rival that.

Once I thought of the eighteen thousand that had been annihilated on that road, I felt guilt plague my heart. They were too far from Tian Ling City. By the time I lead my four thousand Steel Blade Cavalry, the Greedy Wolf Raiders had already escaped. All I could see was the shadow of Ye Lai reviving.

Not Ordinary and You Yi weren't idiots. Especially You Yi. That man was uncannily cunning. Somehow he managed to make all ten thousand of the Greedy Wolf Raiders disappear without a trace, and put [Judgement] in a helpless state!

.....

In the guild chat, Li Mu's voice transferred out, "Guildmaster, are you still there?"

"Yea, what's up?"

"Go look on the forums. The thing with [Thousand Burial] has already gotten too chaotic...."

"....."

When I opened up the forums for Tian Ling City I could already see that everyone had been talking about the news. The reality of the Greedy Wolf Raiders killing people day and night in Tian Ling City, must people could only rant and argue about it on the forums because there was nothing they could do about it——



[Tian Ling City] Dragon Blade: The Greedy Wolf Raiders are killing people every day. Is nobody going to do something about it? [Legend], [Hero's Mound], [Judgement], and [Zhan Long], what are they doing?

[Tian Ling City] Little Twin Stars: [Flying Dragon], [Wrath of Heroes], and [House of Prestige] those guilds are all trash. They had actually been completely annihilated by the Greedy Wolf Raiders without a single bit of resistance. Such an embarrassment!

[Tian Ling City] Wang Xiao Ji Cold Tea: In the entire Tian Ling City, there's at least several million players, and yet we can't control a single Greedy Wolf Brigade? Is there no one left alive in Tian Ling City? Wait until we fight the country wars, we might as well just surrender ourselves to the Americans!

[Tian Ling City] The Furious Little Lin: All the trash top ten guilds of Tian Ling City are all useless. I can't believe none of them can rival [Thousand Burial]. Is there nobody that is willing to fight against [Thousand Burial]!

.....

I closed the forum. It was already clear. The Greedy Wolf Raiders have already walked over all of Tian Ling City. They've already provoked everyone there was to be provoked, and yet no one was willing to stand out to battle these 16,000 Greedy Wolf Raiders. Everyone was trying to protect themselves.

I went into the guild chat and said, "I saw it...."

Li Mu asked, "What do you think?"

I clenched my teeth, "Nothing at all. I'm waiting!"

Li Mu was speechless.

Right at that moment, Qing Qian had sent a message: Brother Xiao Yao, in the Earth Dragon's Canyon, at least ten thousand Raiders have appeared. The assassins that were training there saw it. The intel is definitely correct!"

"The Earth Dragon's Canyon?"

I opened up my map and glanced at it, "That's not too far. The Earth Dragon Canyon is 30 minutes away from Green Qilin Valley. It's only ten minutes away for the Greedy Wolf Raiders."

“Yup!” Qing Qian said, “Looks like, Not Ordinary is already planning on making a move against [Zhan Long]. He knows that all of our forces are in Green Qilin Valley and so his target should be [Zhan Long]!”

I smiled and raised a fist, “Melon, send out these commands. All of [Zhan Long]’s players online, gather at Qilin Valley. Let’s prepare for a 1v1 battle against [Thousand Burial]!”

“Yes sir!”

# Chapter 703 - A Group of Maniacs

“Neigh Neigh...”

A cold wind brushed past me. It was the middle of autumn in the game. Leaves dyed the valley a fiery red. All of the brambles that covered the ground were also withering. Deep in the Green Qilin Valley, a large group of [Zhan Long] players were grinding levels. After half a year of growth, [Zhan Long] now had over 50,000 players registered to the guild. At any given time, we had around 30,000 players online. This was what a true robust platoon looked like!

My horse's hooves brushed across the grassy fields with a “Sha sha!”. I slowly rode forward with my Dragon Reservoir Sword in hand. Wan Er and Dong Cheng followed behind me. By the time we reached the Green Qilin Abyss, Li Mu and Wang Jian had brought a team of players to clear out the newly spawned monsters. When he saw us coming over, Li Mu urged his horse towards us. He smiled, “We've been waiting for too long. We've finally lured Not Ordinary to make his move!”

I nodded, “Yup. But we still need to make some preparations. These 16,000 Greedy Wolf Raiders will not be easy to deal with. Even if [Zhan Long] has a high chance of victory, I want to minimize the casualties as much as possible. [Hero's Mound] and [Legend] aren't willing to act. They probably don't want to sacrifice the levels and experience of their players.

Li Mu laughed and confidently said, “Don't worry, our Steel Blade Cavalry already has over 4400 players. I can at least ensure that we'll have 4400 during the day. Not Ordinary's choice to attack [Zhan Long] is sealing his death warrant!”

Wang Jian furrowed his brows, “Brother Xiao Yao, are we going to stay within the valley or are we going to lure the Brigade into the valley? If we decide to fight this within the abyss, then the topography will be disadvantageous for the cavalry to fight. I'm afraid that the Greedy Wolf Raiders won't readily enter the Valley.”

I looked at Li Mu and smiled, “Do you want to test out the battle power of the

Steel Blade Cavalry?”

Li Mu grunted, “Of course I want to. I understand now. Where are we setting up the formation?”

I waved my hand, and summoned the map for Green Qilin Valley. I pointed to the right side of the map and said, “Just east of the Green Qilin Valley is a plain that doesn’t have a name. Its about half the size of the Sword Saint Forest. That’s more than enough for the final battle of our Steel Blade Horseman and the Greedy wolf Raiders. Right now, you need to take your troops and build your formation there!”

Li Mu made a fist, “Understood. I’m off! Wang Jian, follow me!”

Very soon, Li Mu and Wang Jian all gathered the Steel Blade Horsemen. Matcha, One Second Hero, and Old K were all among them. As before, I stood in the valley and carefully watched the situation for any changes.

Qing Qian and Wei Liang both walked up to me. Qing Qian fluttered her lashes and smiled, “Brother Xiao Yao!”

“Qing Qian, Wei Liang!”

Qing Qian said, “I can already confirm, there’s a total of 15,000 Raiders heading straight here from the Earth Dragon’s Valley. Their target is definitely [Zhan Long]. They have an extremely high fraction of players online, over 90%!”

I nodded, “Ok....”

Wan Er looked over to the south of the valley. Her eyes were filled with worry, “Not Ordinary and You Yi aren’t idiots. Will they take the bait?”

I replied, “And so we have to prepare a piece of bait for them... Right now I can’t decide just who should be the bait...”

Not far from us, Death God’s Elegy raised his spear and urged his horse towards us. He said, “How about you let our Division Three go?”

I looked at him, “The Third Division has already suffered enough losses.”

Death God’s Elegy’s eyes were filled with determination, “No. It is because of the enmity between You Yi, Minimalist and I that makes us the best choice. We’ll pretend that we’re a team that’s grinding levels. Once we get ambushed,

we'll retreat to the Nameless Plains. Otherwise, I'm afraid the 15,000 Raiders won't take the bait."

"Death God, do you know that if you bring your thousand players there, its possible that less than a hundred will return?"

"I understand". Death God's Elegy slowly nodded his head, "And so, I will do my best to pick out mounted players. Their mounts won't be too fast, but they won't die immediately. We'll do everything we can to bring the Greedy Wolf Raiders to the southern part of the Sword Saint Forest..."

I set my heart on the decision and said, "Alright then, I'll leave this mission to you. Make sure to update me whenever the situation changes. Be careful, this is the most important performance of this battle!"

"Yes sir!" Death God's Elegy laughed.

I looked over at Qing Qian and Wan Er, "Besides the Steel Blade Horsemen, you two vice guildmasters lead the rest of the main forces to grind levels in the Sword Saint Forest.... Once the situation explodes, immediately head to the south to provide support!"

Wan Er smiled, "Yup, we'll do our best to keep our movements a secret!"

I smiled, "Zhan Long has nearly 30,000 players. It will be impossible to keep the cat in the bag. I just hope that Not Ordinary and You Yi will be careless. They'll think that they can deal with our Steel Blade Horsemen in one quick move. Spread out some healers, mages, and archers to grind levels around the plains. When the countdown hits 0, they must be able to give support as quickly as possible so that they aren't fighting on their own!"

Qing Qian nodded, "Got it, I'll take that job!"

I nodded. Qing Qian was [Zhan Long]'s gem. From the time I had founded the guild, Qing Qian's skill at commanding a troop is one of the most critical components of [Zhan Long]'s success. Especially her ability to execute such intricate maneuvers. In the entire guild, only Qing Qian and Wan Er were capable of this. However, Wan Er was already in charge of too many things. And so, I left the job to Qing Qian and Wei Liang.

I flipped onto my horse and raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword, "Alright then.

I'll lead the Steel Blade Cavalry to prepare for battle. We'll keep a constant flow of information. This time, we'll make it so that none of the Raiders return. We'll guard their bodies, we'll guard them for ten hours to serve our justice!"

Wan Er smiled, "Yup, good luck. I'll send people to cut their retreat!"

"Alright!"

.....

I turned around and charged forward. Li Mu and Wang Jian had already gathered their Steel Blade Horsemen. Four thousand horsemen stood in magnificent rows within the valley. They gave off an imposing aura. [Zhan Long]'s crimson insignias had practically melded together. It truly was an impressive battle scene.

"Let's set out to hunt monsters!" I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and dashed ahead. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Matcha and Yue Yao Yan all grinned and followed along.

From a distance, I could see that Death God's Elegy and the players from Division Three had already set off in to the distance. Wan Er, Dong Cheng and Dancing Forest were leading the rest of the main guild players into the Sword Saint Forest. This way, even if the enemy had spied on [Zhan Long], they wouldn't be able to tell that the players Wan Er was leading were there for the sake of supporting the Steel Blade Cavalry. When the time comes, they'll cut through the Sword Saint Forest and straight to the plains. By then, the situation will be completely under our control.

An autumn gust arose, and shook the leaves on the plain. I could smell the fresh scent of grass in the air. In the distance, the fruits that hung on the trees of the Sword Saint Forest were already ripening. I could even detect a slight scent of apples in the air. Four thousand Steel Blade Horsemen had split up into several hundred men teams. They were killing monsters on the plains. I on the other hand had to maintain the flow of information while I was killing.

In the guild chat, there was a total of eight people talking. Death God's Elegy appeared in the list of players in the chat. I had been keeping tabs on their situation the entire time.

.....

Spread out and prepare to grind levels. The Level 127 Thunder Tier wild boars here must be very fat!” Death God’s Elegy shouted orders as he raised his spear. He whooped. Maybe even he was hiding the true motive for leading this thousand man team out from his subordinates and so many of the people thought that they were actually grinding levels. One after another they spread out into the forests killing monsters. Death God’s Elegy looked to be a bit unsettled. He immediately then added, “Don’t go out too far. Send out some assassins to scout the area first. If you see any movement, immediately collect your team and prepare for battle!”

In the end, not long after that, they suddenly heard the sound of a dragon’s screech pierce through the forest. An arrow shot straight through the sky. It was the light from the [Rising Dragon Arrow]. It was a message. There wasn’t a single archer stupid enough to send a [Rising Dragon Arrow] into the sky on accident.

“Careful, there are people here. Assemble!” Death God’s Elegy knew he was facing a great enemy.

All of the players quickly gathered together. But before they had completely congregated, the trees in the distance began to sway. One after another, fierce Flame Greedy Wolves lunged out from behind the trees. More and more crashed through the forest. Minimalist, You Yi and Yue Yao Chen were all among them. It was the Greedy Wolf Raiders main force! Minimalist raised his long sword, his eyes filled with killing intent as he ordered, “Who cares if its a trap or not. We are the Wolf Troops, we’re the only ones that eat others, no one dares to take a bite out of us! Kill! Right and left flanks, envelope them. Don’t let a single one of [Zhan Long]’s players escape!”

.....

“Guidmaster, what do we do?” One of the [Zhan Long] archers was terrified, “By the looks of it, ten thousand of the Raiders have all appeared. They’ve taken the guts of a lion to actually dare and raise a hand against [Zhan Long]!”

Death God’s Elegy wryly smiled. He swung his spear and shouted, “Take a stand, we’re duking it out against them!”

“Yes sir!”

A group of cavalry players all charged out. What I had not expected was that Death God’s Elegy that youngster was out of his mind. He used a thousand man team and charged at the fifteen thousand man cavalry!

“Peng peng peng....”

The sound of clashes between the two cavalries echoed through the forest. The Greedy wolf Raiders’ attack power was formidable and their attacks shockingly accurate and flexible. One after another, [Flying Sword]s flashed through the sky, and cut apart [Zhan Long: Division Three]’s formation. In this one clash, we had lost over thirty percent of our men in that team. Death God’s Elegy still didn’t retreat. He brought his cavalry and charged once again. He swung his spear and continuously killed the Greedy Wolf Raiders in front of him.

The entire scene seemed to be dyed red in that one moment, it was too savage!

“Wu...” Wan Er clenched her teeth, “Death God, have you gone mad?”

Death God’s Elegy bitterly smiled as he killed, “If I don’t let them taste a little bit of sweetness, how could they obediently follow me and get near the Sword Saint Forest? Don’t worry guildmaster, seeing as I’ve taken this quest, then I will not let you down. It doesn’t matter if there isn’t a single man or horse left, I must send these fifteen thousand Raiders to their executor’s blade!”

.....

Not long after, all thousand players were practically killed. Even the sounds of battle were starting to dim. The Greedy Wolf Raiders were incredibly fast. It was pretty much a massacre!

“F\*ck....” Li Mu gripped his fist, “Death God that kid.... Isn’t he just about to be completely swallowed whole? It’s only been five minutes, why hasn’t there been any movement...”

The situation was too chaotic. I couldn’t even see any of [Zhan Long]’s players. Everywhere I looked were [Thousand Burial]’s flags.

My heart was truly turning sour. In that one instant, all thousand players from



[Zhan Long: Division Three] were gone!

After ten minutes, I suddenly saw the Raiders' formation shift. Right after that, a group of people charged out from the center. It was Death God's Elegy with around fifty cavalry as he miraculously charged out of the encirclement. His long sword and armor were both practically drenched in fresh blood and his Steel Blade Horse looked as though it had waded through a crimson sea. He ran straight for the Sword Saint Forest. This time, nobody suspected him of baiting them, but rather that he was running for his life.

.....

“That lucky b\*st\*rd....”

Wang Jian gaped as he watched the scene unfold, “The people in [Zhan Long: Division Three] really are a group of madmen....”

# Chapter 704 - The Wolf Brigade's Violent Battle

“Keng!”

My Dragon Reservoir Sword slid out of its sheathe as I raised my blade up high. I stood before the Steel Blade Cavalry and shouted, “Prepare to charge! A test to see the true battle potential of the Steel Blade Cavalry has finally arrived!”

Li Mu roared, “Charge! Its time we rescue the brothers from Division Three!”

Four thousand horsemen. All of the battle horses in the front row stamped their hooves against the ground in impatience. They kicked off and charged straight into the plains. Li Mu, Wang Jian and I were amongst them. In the distance, we could already see the fiery red plains. There were countless Greedy Wolf Cavalry in the distance. There was no other choice for the Steel Blade Cavalry. It was time to face our enemy, no matter if they were four times our size!

.....

The key to cavalry battles was movement. Continuous charges to create as much damage as possible. This was a principle that Li Mu and Wang Jian had ingrained into the four thousand Steel Blade Horsemen. Naturally, it was something everyone understood. I also had a lot of trust in everyone’s battle power. There was nothing much left to say but to charge!

As we pulled closer, I could finally clearly see all of the bloody marks on Death God’s Elegy’s face. When he saw us, he whooped, “The main guild’s Steel Blade Cavalry is here to help us. Brothers, prepare to turn around for another fight!”

“D\*mnn that b\*st\*rd....” I was speechless.

Death God’s Elegy truly was a madman. He cracked his whip and turned his horse’ head. Then, he took the forty horsemen he brought charging out and flipped around to become a sharp knife aimed at the Greedy Wolf Troops.

Lunatic, he really was a lunatic. This was a group of lunatics that won't rest until they die!

“Accelerate!”

I couldn't bear to see Death God Elegy and the rest die for nothing and so I immediately charged faster, entering into the Charge state. I dashed full speed ahead. My Flying Scythe War Horse was extremely fast, and I quickly managed to catch up with Death God's Elegy. Since I had the role as the vanguard of the charge, I took the most damage!

“Peng!”

My [Wall of Dou Qi] activated and I summoned my Ancient Heavenly Tiger. Man and Tiger charged into the fray. I swung my sword, and threw [Seven Star Fragment Slash]+[Sword Tempest] into the crowd. My Ancient Heavenly Tiger then used [Fierce Roar]+[Burstfire Raid]. In a split second, these Greedy Wolf Raiders were all plunged into critical health. Furthermore, my little tiger's [Burstfire Raid] created flaming trails. These Raiders charged right through the flames at me, and took burn damage. To add on to that effect I had activated [Halberd Flame], I had created a blazing hell. In that instant I had killed over forty Raiders!

Death God's Elegy raised his spear, and used a [Cleansing Wind] to recover some health. He then threw a [Skysaker Stab], and pierced through the chest of one of the Raiders as he roared, “Die!”

[Flame Axe] activated, which instantly killed him. This all attack points knight had a terrifying attack power!

Behind me, Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K had all charged into the crowd of Greedy Wolf Raiders. Old K immediately used a [Whirlwind Slash] to brush past everyone into the center. Wang Jian and Li Mu on the other hand used their [Blade rush] to cut in. With their teamwork, they killed a dozen people all at once. Behind them, Steel Blade Horsemen were continuously charging forward and threw [Flying Sword] and [Sword Break] skills. The only thing that did not change was that nobody halted for a single moment. They only continued to charge forward.

On the battlefield, the Steel Blade Horsemen and the Greedy Wolf Raiders

had already pierced into each other's formation. The sounds of battle rang through the earth and the dust flew up in the sky. The dust was so thick that you could barely see in front of you. All that was left was a cloudy air as we were cast into the midst of battle. I continued to swing my sharp blade. I hacked down and parried the attacks of the other players. At this point nobody cared about who was fighting who. All that was left was a single thought. Kill!

.....

Blood dyed the grass of the plains a deep crimson. I lost count of the number of people my Flying Scythe War Horse had rammed into the air. Both of my swords were drenched in blood. All of the Steel Blade Horsemen had activated their [Flame] skills and charged as they burned the enemies around them. This only increased their effectiveness by 50%. As for our numbers, we were at least not at a disadvantage to our opponents.

After fifteen minutes, both sides had cut through each other's formations and both were starting to congregate together once again.

"Huff huff..." Li Mu drew a hoarse breath and shouted, "Soldiers, send someone to confirm our losses!"

I said, "No need to confirm. We've lost 800 players while the Greedy Wolf Raiders have lost 2100. Its in the system tools."

'D\*mn!"

Li Mu clenched his teeth, "We lost so many people in a single charge. If we charge another two times, then we'll have to give up all four thousand of our Steel Blade Horsemen. How can we continue this battle..."

Wang Jian added, "That's right. There's just too many of their Greedy Wolf Raiders. Their formation is at least 3-4 times bigger than ours. We're going to have to take more damage. Quite a few brothers have already died because we don't have support."

I wiped away some of the blood on my face and smiled, "Prepare to charge. Qing Qian is already bringing 3000 people to come heal us. Wan Er is also bringing players from the main guilds to cut off their rear from Sword Saint Forest!"

“Alright then, Kill them all!”

.....

In the second charge, we saw Not Ordinary, You Yi and Minimalist in the opponent's front row. They had all clenched their teeth and looked as though they wanted nothing more than to swallow the Steel Blade Cavalry whole. In this single charge, they had lost over 2000 of their Greedy Wolf Raiders. They must have never suffered a loss as great as that throughout the entire week. Most male players have the personality of a wolf. On the other hand, Call me Master, and Su Yan were very calm. They picked up their swords and spears and quietly watched the movement of the battlefield.

“Master!”

Call me Master said, “we've been stuck here for too long. It's been 30 minutes, enough time for [Zhan Long]'s reinforcements to come. Their fort is only 2000 yards away from here. Getting here won't take long. We cannot drag this battle out or else the advantage of the Greedy Wolves won't be fully utilized.”

Not Ordinary wiped some blood off of his battle axe and didn't appear worried, “Master, don't worry. While Zhan Long has their reinforcements so do we. The Greedy Wolf Brigade cannot lose this battle. As long as we can win against [Zhan Long], we'll become the number one guild in Ba Huang City. Who would dare to challenge that? Even if we lose, at least we'll have fought a bloody battle with Zhan Long. There are no regrets! We'll be much stronger than the guilds like [Flying Dragon], [Wrath of Heroes] and [Valley of the Gods].”

Call me Master bit her lip, “Ok, alright then....”

Su Yan raised his long sword and said, “Prepare for the second round of charges. We have to avoid Xiao Yao Zi Zai, General Wang Jian, and General Li Mu's direct charge. These three are [Zhan Long]'s Death Gods!”

On the side, a Level 116 berserker “Sick for You” raised his battle axe and smiled, “What is there to be afraid of? Later, F\*ck can charge with me. Everyone else, provide some support. Let's do all we can to kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai and strike at [Zhan Long]'s morale!”

There was another Level 116 Berserker whose name was “F\*ck your Mother” that leaned his axe against his shoulder. He smiled, “Just what I wanted.

Call me Master was speechless, “Yue Yao Chen, go help them. Don’t lose too many people!”

Yue Yao Chen nodded, “Understood!”

.....

Everyone spurred on their battle horses. The hooves pounded against the plains as the second charge began!

I relied on the natural advantages of my Flying Scythe War Horse and charged on forward. Right in front of me was “Sick for You” and “F\*ck”. They turned their horses and charged straight towards me. Even an idiot could tell that I was that group’s target. They wanted to kill me!

I glanced around and shouted in the team chat, “Matcha, help me out!”

Matcha followed up behind me and smiled, “Alright boss!”

“Shua!”

I locked onto an empty area and used [Charge]. I suddenly sped forward like a flash of light. “Sick for You” stiffened and quickly used a [Battle Axe Throw]!

“Peng!”

“5027 ! ”

It broke my defense! No wonder he was a team leader level player. His attack power is pretty good!

My [Charge] cut across to “Sick for You”. Without giving him time to react, I sliced my Dragon Reservoir Sword forward. “Keng!” I pushed him back. I then opened a hand and locked [Binding Chains] onto him. On the other hand, “F\*ck” picked up his battle axe and rushed over at me. He was using a [Burning the Enemy’s Boats]. In the midst of the dust, the sight of his glowing axe truly raised goosebumps.

Right at that moment, a beautiful figure flashed by. The Moonlight of a Thousand Leagues Horse’s white coat suddenly rammed against “F\*ck” as he

was executing the [Burning the Boats] skill. Matcha then swung her sword and threw a [Phantom Ray Slash]+[Skyshaker Pierce]. Although “F\*ck” hadn’t died, Matcha smiled and raised her shield. “Peng” she smashed his face in. A few of his teeth had even flown into the air. “F\*ck” flipped off his horse and was battered to death by Matcha’s shield.

The moment “F\*ck” fell off his horse, I charged at “Sick for You”. I plunged my blade right into his chest. I felt a shiver run through my body. Yue Yao Chen had arrived. She was activating [Glacial Blizzard] on her blade. “Peng!” It smashed into my shoulder!

“10221 ! ”

That attack power was a little too OP!

I raised my sword and killed “Sick for You” in one stroke. I then immediately turned around and opened my left palm. My [Dragon’s Hook] shot out. “Pu Chi1” It pierced through Yue Yao Chen as we passed by each other. I then dragged her towards me. “Shua!” Yue Yao Chen flew off of his Greedy Wolf and was dragged over by me. I reached out and grabbed his chestplate, and pulled him onto the Flying Scythe Horse.

Yue Yao Chen swung his blade to deal an ambush but I parried the blow. Rage colored his face, “If you want to kill me then kill me. Nobody in [Thousand Burial] will become a captive....”

I flung him into the air thinking that was too much effort. I shouted, “Kill him with shots!”

Old K, Dong Cheng and a group of berserkers all activated [Battle Axe Throw] at him. “Peng peng peng!” the attacks struck. Blood spurted forward. Before Yue Yao Chen had even hit the ground, he had died. MotherF\*cker, these [Zhan Long] berserkers have a pretty good reaction. Their skills were all spot on and on time!

.....

I gulped down a Level 11 potion and continued to fend off the various charges from other players. I used my King Ring for its 20% [Drain] while I hacked away at other players to gain more health. I proudly stood tall and did not fall in the

face of this army. This was the greatest advantage to Battle Reflux style. In a large scale battle like this, the Battle Reflux Style truly dominated all other styles!

Screams rose up all around me. Some were from the Greedy Wolf Raiders, some were from the Steel Blade Horsemen. After this fierce second charge, I looked behind me. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K all looked as though they had been dragged through a river of blood.

On this plain, there were equipments and potions everywhere but nobody was sweeping the area. Before this battle had been decided, nobody was going to sweep the battlefield. Otherwise, that would mean death. The losses suffered from trying to gain spoils of war from the enemy while they could still kill you was just too great.



# Chapter 705 - Strike of the Deep Freeze Cavalry

The cries of battle horses echoed throughout the field. After the second charge, everyone lined up neatly in the forest. A group of Steel Blade Horsemen dashed out and fixed their positions, reorganizing the formation. This was a very quick process. The Greedy Wolf Raiders were also already preparing for a third charge.

“Pa pa....”

I let my Dragon Reservoir Sword drop. This Demon Harvest Tier blade did not absorb blood. All of the blood of my prey had slid off the tip, and dripped onto the grass beside my horse’s hoof. Beside me were the bodies of the Greedy Wolf Raiders and the equipments that they dropped. When Greedy Wolf Raiders killed people, they got a higher drop rate, but you could also tell that they dropped quite a bit as well when they died.

.....

“Shua shua shua....”

Rays of light fell from the sky. The healers that Qing Qian had arranged to grind in the area were beginning to appear. They healed up the Steel Blade Horsemen while casting [Hundred Battles] Buffs. This way, the Steel Blade Horsemen’s defense and attack advantage was even greater.

“Ha, ha....” Li Mu huffed. He laid his blade across his horse’s back and said, “D\*mn, we lost another 700 Steel Blade Horsemen. We only have 2500 left of our 4000 Cavalry!”

I nodded and said, “Defend in our original position. Don’t break out of formation. Wan Er’s group is almost here. Later on, we’ll just continue to push forward and resurrect the brothers that died. Once we establish 4000 Steel Blade Horsemen, the Greedy Wolf Raiders won’t even have the chance to cry!”

Li Mu chuckled, “Yup. The Greedy Wolf Raiders have already lost close to

5000 players. Not Ordinary's expression is turning uglier and uglier!"

Wang Jian asked, "Then what do we do now?"

Matcha said, "Follow Boss's orders and wait for them to attack!"

.....

Qing Qian raised her dagger and slowly walked out from the trees. Her clever eyes seemed to brighten up, "Brother Xiao Yao, we've received new intel. Bai Mo Yan is leading 12,000 [Thousand Burial] players that have appeared around Bowl Valley. They'll be here soon, tops 15 minutes."

"Gu Dong...."

Old K swallowed and said, "Is [Thousand Burial] trying to battle to the death with us?"

Yao Yan picked up her dagger and smiled, "Isn't that perfect? All day, Tian Ling City has been flipped on its head from these Greedy Wolf Raiders eliminating all these guilds. [Zhan Long] might as well take this chance to give them a good beating, let them know just how little they are worth. This time, as long as [Zhan Long] wins, the Greedy Wolf Raiders won't ever dare to touch us again."

I nodded, "Yup, let's keep working hard!"

As I finished talking, I opened up the interface for managing the city and began moving some of the troops. I ordered Chi Yu Han and Chi Yu Qing to move a thousand Deep Freeze Cavalry and one thousand two hundred Heavy Flame Archers out of the city towards the Sword Saint Forest. This was the perfect time to display the strength of the NPC army of the Dragon's Den!

.....

A few minutes later, Wan Er and Dong Cheng lead ten thousand of [Zhan Long]'s main players and appeared behind us in the Sword Saint Forest. Li Mu furrowed his brows and said, "We should have more people than that right?"

I replied, "The rest went to cut off the Greedy Wolf Raiders retreat. We're going to surround them in a pincer attack. This time, we're not letting a single one out!"

“Yes sir!”

Qing Qian said, “Brother Xiao Yao, the Greedy Wolf Raiders are preparing to battle again!”

I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and rose it above my head, and shouted, “Steel Blade Cavalry, defend!”

Two thousand five hundred of the Steel Blade Horsemen all raised their blades and shields and began to form a defensive formation. We were all riding on battle horses, and covered the group of people that Wan Er and Dong Cheng had lead. The Greedy Wolf Raiders were at least 400 yards away from us. On the map in front, I could see masses of red dots. In addition, Not Ordinary and You Yi should know that they have to put all of their stakes in this battle. Otherwise, the Greedy Wolf Raiders would be completely defeated in today’s battle!

.....

“Keng!”

You Yi pulled out a flaming sword and shouted, “Greedy Wolf Raiders, prepare to attack. Li Xiao Yao. He arrogantly thinks that he can act however he wants with a guild and a city behind his back. Today, us fifteen thousand Raiders will teach Li Xiao Yao and Zhan Long a lesson. One city isn’t enough to save you from your fate. Brothers, listen up, Sister Mo Mo is leading our main force here to reinforce us. Let’s charge at them before they get here! Hear my command, attack!”

Minimalist and Call Me Master all raised their swords and began the third charge.

[Zhan Long]’s Steel Blade Cavalry picked up their shields, welcoming the charge this time. The Steel Blade Horsemen each had incredibly high defenses. We were not at a disadvantage in this kind of defensive position.

In the distance, the Greedy Wolf Raiders were charging right at us. Ten thousand horsemen were all coming at us in a single wave. The sight of them was extremely terrifying. Before we clashed, they had already pulled out their swords and activated [Flying Sword] and [Sword Break] which rammed against

the Steel Blade Frontlines. However, we had countless healers behind us. The entire formation lit up with healing spells. While the Greedy Wolf Raiders had their high attack power, to kill someone while they were being spam healed was a pipe dream. Besides, overall, the [Zhan Long] equipment and skill level was much higher than the [Thousand Burial] players!

In the end, under the barrage of the Greedy Wolf Raiders, the Steel Blade Horsemen didn't fall. I heard Dong Cheng's voice in a shout, "Let's give them a taste of our [Lightning Eagle Formation]!"

In the next moment, a lightning net fell upon the Greedy Wolf Raiders in waves. Dong Cheng and Thousand Suns all activated their attack. The Raiders were specialized in attack power and attack speed, but not magic resistance. In the end, a huge crowd had been killed in the barrage.

Among the crowd of people, I heard Dancing Forest's voice rise up as well, "Little Lie, focus your firepower on Minimalist and kill him!"

"Shua!"

Dancing Forest's cold arrow sliced through the air beside Li Mu's shoulder and "PA!" thudded into Minimalist's chest. [Scatter Shot] had activated. Right at that moment Xing Lie shot multiple [Break Armor Bullet]s into Minimalist's armor followed with a [Magma Shot]+[Flame Bullet]. Large damage numbers flew up. An attack that ignored 70% of the target's defense was not a joke. Three attacks in a row while he was stunned was enough to instantly kill him.

.....

You Yi's face turned green, "G\*dd\*mm\*t m\*therf\*ck\*r, he killed Minimalist.... Which musketeer was that? Charge over and kill him!"

Call Me Master pierced her spear through a Steel Blade Cavalry and shouted back, "It's the musketeer called Like a Fierce Flame, however he's at least 50 yards away from Minimalist. His shot was very far.... I'm afraid that by the time we reach him, we'll be killed ourselves!"

You Yi was pissed off but he had no way to solve his predicament.

Rather, now that Xing Lie, Dancing Forest and Dong Cheng all worked together, one after another the CBN Battlenet experts that were invited into

the guild had all been killed. These were originally the core strength of the Greedy Wolf Raiders, and they were also the pillar of support for many of the players in the Brigade. Along with their deaths, the morale of the Brigade also dropped bit by bit. In the end, before they could even break the Steel Blade Horsemen's formation, their own formation was starting to break. Quite a few were giving up on the battle.

.....

Not Ordinary's expression got darker, "Retreat. We'll go and meet Mo Yan's team and then battle them!"

You Yi raised his long sword, "Retreat!"

Then, in the forest behind the Brigade, countless [Zhan Long] players appeared. Wolf had his dagger in hand and lead more than ten thousand of [Zhan Long]'s team members to block their retreat. He smiled, "Seeing as you dared to come, then don't even think about leaving.... Otherwise, wouldn't that make [Zhan Long] seem too uncourteous? Brothers, Kill. Don't leave a single one!"

Behind Wolf, there was a group of cavalry riding players. Even though they weren't riding on Steel Blade Mounts, their battle power was also impressive. Besides, there were less than seven thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders left and they were losing their fighting spirit, making it easier to fight.

When You Yi glanced over, his temper grew even worse, "Is [Zhan Long] planning on killing us all here? Dream on!"

Not Ordinary raised his battle axe and shouted, "Everyone turn to the Southwest and charge! Use your [Charge] state. These people won't be able to block our speed and attack advantage!"

.....

The sounds of fighting rose up. As they were being pursued by the Steel Blade Horsemen, the Greedy Wolves charged at the Wolf's team. Another large troop of [Thousand Burial] players appeared in that direction. Shen Bing had brought reinforcements.

Light reflected from the blades throughout the field. After that slaughter, the

people that Wolf had brought really couldn't hold off the charge from the Greedy Wolf Raiders. Very soon, Not Ordinary's seven thousand Raiders had joined up with Shen Bing's twelve thousand players. They reorganized themselves, forming a twenty thousand man army. Not Ordinary's face had brightened up as he swung his battle axe and laughed, "Counter attack!"

Li Mu frowned, "I think that the tides about to change again!"

I lowered my voice, "Don't panic. Revive all of the Steel Blade Cavalry and prepare our defense!"

"We're defending again?"

"Yup, we're waiting for the chance to attack!"

"Ok!"

Even though Li Mu wasn't sure what tricks I had up my sleeve, he had confidence in my ability to command. He immediately organized everyone in the plains in a defensive formation. I could see in the distance that some of the Greedy Wolf Raiders had been revived. Close to eight thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders charged at [Zhan Long]'s formation again. On top of that, they now had the [Hundred Battles] BUFF and [Heals] as well as support firepower.

The Flame Greedy Wolves raised their paws in the air and roared, excitedly bounding towards the battle.

Right at that moment, I shifted my thoughts, "Chi You Han, attack!"

.....

"Hong!"

The forest in the distance suddenly began to sway. An army of Deep Freeze Cavalry suddenly charged out into the field. Each and every one of them swung their halberds while the battle horses galloped forward. Chi Yu Han rode in the very front on a black battle horse. This was a general with a hundred points in military power. His attack power shouldn't be too bad. In addition, these Deep Freeze Cavalry all have 100% of my stats. One can just imagine how destructive their charging power is!

"Ah, is that the NPC army?!" Qing Qian widened her eyes and smiled, "Ohhh,

this time we're definitely going to win. Brother Xiao Yao actually has this card still!"

Li Mu grinned, "No wonder you wanted us to defend. So you had these Deep Freeze Cavalry charge at them first...."

.....

The Greedy Wolves were not quite as conversational and carefree as us. Not Ordinary's frown deepened, "What's up with those NPC Horsemen? This..."

You Yi clenched his teeth, "It's the army from the Dragon's Den. Li Xiao Yao already has his own NPC army. Motherf\*cker! Don't be afraid. They have a thousand at most. We'll just kill them. Once an NPC soldier dies, it won't revive!"

# Chapter 706 - The Evolution of [Turmoil Sword]

Chi Yu Han gripped his Heaven's Spite Sword and galloped forward. A group of Greedy Wolf Raiders swung their swords to parry the attacks but never did they imagine that this BOSS level NPC who had recovered most of his Holy Domain strength would roar, "Get the f\*ck out of my way!"

"Shua!"

A wave of sword energy flew past twenty Greedy Wolf Raiders who spontaneously had their health dropped to critical. Behind Chi Yu Han, Chi Yu Qing cracked her whip. With a sharp crack, she killed them off one by one. Behind her, an army of Deep Freeze Cavalry also charged in from behind. "Peng peng peng" they rammed the Greedy Wolf Raiders back. With a thrust of their spears, blood spurted forward.

The Deep Freeze Cavalries' attacks massacred the Greedy Wolf Raiders. Every one of the Deep Freeze Cavalry had the exact same stats as I so it wasn't strange that they didn't get much pressure the Greedy Wolf Raiders.

"Don't panic. These are just NPCs. Focus your firepower and kill them all!"

Call Me Master picked up her long sword and charged over. With a [Courageous Ram], she knocked over one of the Deep Freeze Cavalry. You Yi and Not Ordinary both jumped to action. Added on with a rain of arrows, at that moment, the Deep Freeze Horseman grunted and fell off his horse. The NPC people also have health and can be killed.

.....

"Hua!"

I suddenly raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and growled, "Charge. Support the charge from the Deep Freeze Cavalry and don't let them die for nothing!"

Four thousand Steel Blade Cavalry started their assault from behind. At that moment, the Greedy Wolf Raiders took another huge loss. The rate at which



they were losing players was shocking. You Yi and Not Ordinary took his players left and right, but could not lose our pursuit. Shen Bing also brought a group of assassins and mages for their retreat. However, once they got close to the forest, they were shot back by a barrage of Heavy Flame Archers. Chi Yu Qing picked up her whip and arrived in the forest and lead a thousand two hundred Heavy Flame Archers!

“F\*ck, we’re f\*cked....”

Five hundred [Thousand Burial] players had practically been instantly killed by the Heavy Flame Archers. Maybe the appearance of the Deep Freeze Cavalry dealt a blow to Not Ordinary, but the Heavy Flame Archers had put Not Ordinary into complete despair. This will very soon become their grave!

“Charge at those Heavy Flame Archers!” Not Ordinary was making his last struggles, “These NPC troops are recruited using resources and money, they aren’t endless. Charge at them and kill them all. Let Li Xiao Yao take the cost!”

Wolf immediately turned around and softly said, “Take two thousand men and protect the Heavy Flame Archers!”

Yue Yao Yan immediately led a group of Steel Blade Horsemen over to protect the Heavy Flame Archers, and demolished Not Ordinary’s plan. Li Mu, Wan Er and I, on the other hand, lead the Steel Blade Horsemen forward in a charge, and surrounded the Greedy Wolf Raiders on all three sides, which helped the Deep Freeze Cavalry’s charge, as they dyed this Sword Saint Forest red. After killing for three whole hours finally, not a single person from the thirty thousand players from [Thousand Burial] had survived. Everyone’s corpses were strewn across the grounds of the forest while [Zhan Long] had lost around ten thousand players. Three for one, this was a worthwhile transaction.

.....

A chilling breeze brushed past my face. I sat on my horse in the midst of a sea of bodies and commanded people to sweep the battlefield. Right now, [Zhan Long] was the owner of this battlefield and so it was our right to clean up the field. Everything the Greedy Wolf Raiders had dropped was here. They had probably dropped quite a few of the things they got when they ambushed [Judgement] and [Flying Dragon]. Just in time to help strengthen [Zhan Long] a

bit.

“Guildmaster, what do we do now? Death God’s Elegy raised his sword and charged over. As he asked that, I could tell he really had a lot of guts. From the beginning he’s been fighting all the way until now. He’s probably killed well over fifty people. On top of that, he didn’t seem to be afraid of death at all. Even when his team had been defeated, he continued to fight. He really was quite the character.

I looked at the entire battle field and said, “Let everyone grind levels here and don’t go too far. We’ll guard their bodies for now, guard them for ten hours. We’ll let the people of [Zhan Long] have at least ten hours of peace and quiet!”

Death God’s Elegy laughed “Ok, I understand. [Zhan Long: Division Three]’s three thousand players will guard their corpses!”

I was speechless.

.....

At that moment, “Di!” I received a message. It had come from the guildmaster of [Judgement], “Ha ha, congratulations brothers. Xiao Yao, you really are incredibly OP. You actually managed to completely annihilate the Greedy Wolf Raiders from [Thousand Burial]!”

I smiled back, “It’s just luck. I owe my victory to the NPC soldiers of the Dragon’s Den.”

“Don’t be too humble. And thank you. I’ll consider this battle as revenge for [Judgement]!”

“Yup, no problem. We’re all friends.”

“Alright then, you continue working. We’ll take everyone searching through the new maps later.”

“Yes!”

It was very clear. Once Ye Lai had seen the power of the Steel Blade Horsemen and the Greedy Wolf Raiders, there was no way this battle berserker could stay put. He must be putting all of his efforts into searching for mount maps. Throughout this half a month, the Greedy Wolf Raiders haven’t been

doing anything else but teach the guilds of Tian Ling City a lesson, just how important a large scale cavalry really is.

Soon after, I received another message. It was from the beautiful vice guildmaster of [Vanguard] Simple , “Xiao Yao, thank you. You have finally taken revenge for that time that [Vanguard] was bullied by the Greedy Wolf Raiders!”

I smiled, “No problem, just doing my duty. Besides, this time the Raiders wanted to annihilate [Zhan Long]. They were courting death on their own. If I didn’t satisfy them, then it would really be a disappointment.”

Simple said, “Yup, good luck. I won’t bother you any longer.”

“Alright!”

.....

I opened up the Tian Ling City forums, only to see that the battle between the Steel Blade Horsemen and the Greedy wolf Raiders had already been uploaded onto the site. The title was , “Everyone’s Satisfaction! [Zhan Long] went all out and annihilated sixteen thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders!” It was incredible how hot the post was. All of the players of Tian Ling City had been suffering under the oppression of the Greedy wolf raiders for too long. This battle helped them all let out a sigh of relief. You can tell just from the forums how happy [Zhan Long]’s battle made everyone——

[First Reply] Player War Hawk: Motherf\*cking h\*ll, the Greedy Wolf Raiders have finally suffered for their crimes!

[Second Reply] Player A Glass of Regret: First reply, then watch!

[Third Reply] Player Blade Temper: D\*mn, [Zhan Long] really has the guts. Beautifully done!

[Fourth Reply] Player Three Thousand Layer Armor: Beautiful. Looks like these Greedy wolf Players won’t dare to say anything like battle for the sake of battle. Nor would they say anything like number one army of Tian Ling City ever again!

[Fifth Reply] Player Rain Smile: I truly applaud [Zhan Long]. Even when [Legend] and [Hero’s Mound] protected themselves and didn’t dare to provoke [Thousand Burial], [Zhan Long] stood out!

[Sixth Reply] Player Little Scholar: That's a little exaggerated, [Legend] wasn't trying to protect itself, we just didn't want to enter into a pointless battle.

[Seventh Reply] Player Goodbye Tears: I think that Rain Smile was right on point. You guys just didn't have the guts to battle it out with the Greedy wolf Raiders!

[Eighth Reply] Player Little Scholar: Who said so? Goodbye Tears, just you wait, I will lead a team of [Legend]'s divisions to attack those Greedy Wolf Raiders just for you!

[Ninth Reply] Player Yan Zhao Warrior: I'll be waiting!

.....

I closed the forums and continued to patrol the battlefields. Even though [Zhan Long] had lost quite a bit in this battle, our reputation and critique had risen quite a bit. You can't tell at this point, but these would eventually become the building blocks of [Zhan Long]'s development. Those upholding justice will find help all around, the ancients weren't lying....

Upon examination, after this battle, there weren't any losses to the Heavy Flame Archers. However, the Deep Freeze Cavalry had lost 71 people. I immediately recruited another thousand people and then continued to level up the buildings. Once I had leveled all of them to Level 9, I will be able to level up the city. Once the Dragon's Den levels up to a Lvl 9 city, then we'd be able to recruit Flame Eagle Archers to the Eagle's Nest. This type of flexible air force had imaginable advantages. Maybe the Heavy Flame Archers were suitable for city defense, but the Flame Eagle Archers were truly a worthy attack type soldier!

Pleased, I leveled up the Eagle's Nest to a Level 9. Afterwards, I began to level up the entire city.

.....

In less than three hours, the [Thousand Burial] players couldn't stand to be held down in the end. The first wave of players had already begun to revive. However, with half health and half magic, they couldn't parry the charges of the Steel Blade Cavalry. Li Mu lead 3000+ of the Steel Blade Cavalry and cut them

down in three to five hits. That just told the rest of the [Thousand Burial] players to obediently stay put and don't think too much.

I urged my horse to stand beside Not Ordinary and You Yi's corpses. As I was on a battle horse, I continuously hacked at the air. They couldn't understand what I was doing at all while they were in their spirit forms, but I knew what was going on. I don't know how long it would take to completely understand the flying swordplay. After I experienced so much if I could actually understand it, the it would be groundbreaking!

"Keng"!

"Keng!"

"Keng!"

One after another, I threw out the swords. I swung my sword as sweat rolled down my face. Finally, "Ding!" I heard a familiar sound. I felt happiness rush through my heart. Did I get it? I looked at the news. It wasn't [Flying Swordplay], but it wasn't anything normal either. It was actually the evolution of [Turmoil Sword]——

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, your custom skill [Turmoil Sword], due to familiarity with the skill, has evolved to a Holy Ghost second tier skill!

.....

I opened up my skill page once again. [Turmoil Sword] now had a golden glow behind it. The skill flashed with a glimmering light. Afterwards, I looked at the details of the skill and was beside myself with excitement. This Holy Ghost Tier Two skill wasn't just an S tier skill——

[Turmoil Sword] (Holy Ghost Tier Two): Once you pull out your sword, your attack power increases by 70% and your attack speed increases by 35%. This does not consume any energy. This skill has no level.

.....

I was ecstatic. So my pulling out my sword time and time again had not gone to waste, I had actually evolved my skill. This Holy Ghost Second Tier [Turmoil

Sword] actually increases my attack power by 70% and my attack speed by 35% after I pull out my sword. Isn't this exactly where my advantage lies?

I happily continued to practice the maneuvers. Not long after Not Ordinary, You Yi and the rest tried to counterattack once more, but Wan Er, Qing Qian and Wolf who were hidden in [Stealth] mode not far behind me had killed them all. Not Ordinary was underestimating my intelligence too much. There were high level officers all over this place. How could we not guard it. We had only hidden the guards better.

.....

After killing Not Ordinary again, Qing Qian picked up her dagger and said, "Brother Xiao Yao, shall we go grind levels?"

"Do you have a place in mind?" I asked.

"Yup, Broken Blade Canyon!"

## Chapter 707 - Earth Bane Ox

“Broken Blade Canyon?”

“Yup. It’s a canyon that’s just north of Tian Ling City, next to the War God River....” Qing Qian wryly smiled, “But, we have to pass through the Fierce Wind Forest. The level of the monsters in the Fierce Wind Forest are just too high and there’s too many of them, so to these days, there haven’t been many players from Tian Ling City that have been there. However, a few days ago, Wei Liang went to check it out by herself. This Broken Blade Canyon’s mines are extremely fertile. Even [Legend] and [Hero’s Mound] players haven’t found this place. Why don’t we try and sweep the map first?”

I thought about it for a moment, “Yup, how many people do you think is suitable for this?”

“Five is enough. If we bring too many people then it’d be easy to catch unwanted attention.”

“Alright!”

.....

After discussing it for a moment, Wan Er and Dong Cheng decided to go with us. Afterwards, we called on Darling Duck. The team was made pretty logically. After we finished eating, we set out.

It was seven at night, at the Northern Gate of Tian Ling City.

I lead the Flying Scythe War Horse along with my Ancient Heavenly Tiger to the gate. Soon after, Dong Cheng held her staff with Wan Er smiling beside her. Qing Qian and Darling Duck followed right behind them. All of them entered behind me. It's time to set out!

I urged my battle horse and slowly walked out. At the same time, I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword. I wanted to take advantage of the 150% increase in attack power that my [Kill for Blood] gave. Going to Broken Blade Canyon wouldn’t be a bad idea. However, based on Wan Er’s words, once there's a team battle, my Dragon Reservoir Sword’s [Kill For Blood] at 150 makes it pretty

much like squishing bugs. Actually, when you kill people in a game, you still feel a little bit of guilt. After all, it deals a blow to their pride and their self respect. However, the Greedy Wolf Players have been killing people everywhere in Tian Ling City. [Thousand Burial]'s reputation has already dropped down the toilet after they killed so many players in Tian Ling City. Killing these type of players was like robbing the rich and giving to the poor. There's no reason to feel the same guilt as killing normal people.

“Sha sha....”

Hooves stepped across the grass. We all entered the Fierce Wind Forest. This forest was just north of Tian Ling City and had quite a bit of resources in the map and it had a vast area of land. The forest produced large amounts of herbs, mines, food, and monsters. The monsters themselves were between the levels of 100-120. This was the primary map that players over level a hundred mostly frequented and so there were quite a few of players that were there. Actually some of them were even whistling at the girls in our team. However, once they saw the death glares from Wan Er and Qing Qian, these people immediately turned obedient. After all, everyone knew these two famous girls. They were the two vice guildmasters of [Zhan Long]. Nobody dared to provoke them.

From the forest, there were several wild bears roaming the thorny forests. I sent out my Ancient Heavenly Tiger while Wan Er sent out her Purple Kirin Dragon. The two of them went ahead of us and attacked the monsters, and protected our advance.

Before we got far, we heard the sounds of battle reach our ears. Qing Qian squinted, “Someone's PKing in the wild?”

I quickly lead my horse forward and charged into the brush. I suddenly saw a group of people that were fighting each other. One group was from the [Wrath of Heroes], while the other was from Fan Shu City's [Knights Templar]. The two guilds didn't have a very good relationship with [Zhan Long], and it was just a conflict between two ten man teams. I didn't think much of it and smiled back to Wan Er, “Its nothing. Just a small thing. Let's continue forward.”

As the scorching sun burned in the sky. Wan Er opened up her iron umbrella and smiled, “Yup!”



Dong Cheng opened up her wings and flew high into the sky. As she carried her staff, she looked at the people PKing in the distance and smiled, “When they come out they don’t focus on grinding but instead on PKing? They’re destined to be low level their entire lives.”

In the distance, a few of the players that were hacking away embarrassingly hid their faces and turned around to kill bears.

.....

We continued forward. After half an hour, we opened up the map and looked in that direction, “We should be heading in the Northwest direction. This way, we can enter the Broken Blade Canyon!”

Qing Qian shook her head, “No. Brother Xiao Yao, we should go in the North East direction and pass through the Broken Bones Shrubbery Forest. That way, we can enter the Broken Blade Canyon.”

“Why?” I was stunned.

Qing Qian smiled, “Because Wei Liang has shown me the Broken Blade Canyon map. This is a long canyon that goes towards the North East. On both sides are a ten thousand league tall walls while there are spiny thorns throughout the top. There’s practically no way to pass through from the sides. On one head of the Broken Blade Canyon is the Broken Bone Shrubbery Forest, while on the other head is the War God’s River. We don’t have a boat and so we can only go through the other entrance.”

I smiled, “Alright then, Qing Qian you lead the way.”

“Yup yup!”

Qing Qian picked up her dagger and walked in front. I followed close behind. Dong Cheng and Darling Duck walked in the middle while Wan Er took the rear. All of us spent twenty minutes passing through the Broken Bone Shrubbery Forest. At first it looked like we needed an hour in order to get to the Broken Blade Canyon. On top of that, the number of monsters that we met on the way there was numerous. No wonder there weren’t any players that were willing to enter this map.

The Broken Bone Shrubbery Forest was a cursed map. Maybe this was at first

a battle field. The entire area was filled with the ghostly cries of spirits while bones were scattered across the ground. It was because of this that this map was known as the Broken Bone Shrubbery Forest. As we went forward, a small wild boar that looked like a tank appeared before us. It was a level 130 Titan Tier monster, the Stone Skin Boar. It had bone needles poking from its back. Its four stubby legs looked incredibly strong and it had two long fierce tusks protruding from its mouth. This boar looked at us with a very fierce expression.

“Hu hu....”

It slowly swung its tail and suddenly charged out. Qing Qian went forward in a clash. She cleverly maneuvered in a confusing pattern and struck her dagger into the Stone Skin Boar, and stunned it however, the attack only dealt 4000+ damage. This Stone Skin Boar’s defense was incredibly high. In addition, when it charged, and dug its fierce fangs into Qing Qian’s thigh. The beautiful little miss immediately retreated and dropped 3000 health.

I urged my horse to charge forward. The golden light of a [Combo] began to gather. In moments, I hacked the boar a dozen different times. It quickly turned around dealt a [Fang Assault]. I immediately lost a thousand health. My defense was clearly much stronger than Qing Qian’s. I swung my sword a few times and helped kill the boar with Qing Qian’s attacks.

“Roar.....”

The Stone Skin Boar died in seconds and a round helmet rolled to the ground. Qing Qian picked it up to look and smiled, “This helmet increases defense by 22% and it’s an Emperor Tier equipment....”

I nodded with a smile, “The stats aren’t bad, why don’t you take it!”

“Ok!”

Wan Er leaned her umbrella against her soft shoulder and walked over, “If we have time, it wouldn’t be bad killing these monsters. Just now, the experience from the Stone Skin Boar was pretty good...”

Qing Qian grinned, “Sister Cang Tong, don’t panic. The Broken Blade Canyon’s monsters have even higher experience. Wei Liang can’t grind levels on her own in the Broken Blade Canyon. You can just imagine.”

“Yup, then let’s hurry. To Broken Blade Canyon!”

“Alright!”

.....

We continued forward and after killing another dozen Stone Skin Boar we had already entered the center of the Broken Bones Shrubbery Forest. We began to see more of the oxen as we passed through the shrubbery. Each of them had a thick green pelt covering their bodies. Furthermore, you can tell that it was extremely thick. There was a condensed barrier above it that looked very similar to a [Dragon Armor].

Earth Bane Ox, a Level 132 Titan Tier monster. It was extremely strong and had very thick skin and used a lot of flame type attacks.

“Kill!”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and charged over. This Earth Bane Ox wasn’t something easy to deal with. It mooed and dipped and charged at me with its horns pointed at me. The only problem is that it couldn’t beat much of my defense. Instead after a few cuts from my Brilliant Flame Emperor and the Dragon Reservoir Sword, I cut down half of its health. Finally, with a growl it fell over.

Wan Er picked up her dagger covered with the Ox’s blood and looked up at me, “Pig, have you noticed it yet?”

“Have you noticed something yet?”

“The Ox’s skin is really thick. Every time we hit it, it even reflects some damage back. Just now, when I threw three attacks with my [Blade of the Death God], I had lost a whole 1500 health from it....”

“Yup, I noticed. But it shouldn’t be a problem, after all I brought Darling Duck.”

“Ok, alright then....”

.....

As we continued forward, I hadn’t walked more than ten meters before a large group of players had charged out of the forest. Everybody had the same

symbol on their shoulders. It was players from [Legend]!

“Moo moo....”

The cries of the cows echoed throughout the field. One of the knights rode on a Earth Bane Ox and charged over. It's movement speed wasn't much lower than the Steel Blade Horses. On top of that, it looked like it had very thick skin. It's Defense and Health might even be a little stronger than the Steel Blade Horses. The person on top of the Earth Bane Ox was none other than the vice guildmaster of [Legend]——Lu Chun Yang!

Lu Chun Yang picked up his long sword and smiled as he walked over, “What a coincidence. And here I thought that our [Legend] was the only guild to find out about the Broken Bone Shrubbery Forrest. I never thought that the [Zhan Long] players would come as well. Aren't you guys guarding the Greedy Wolf Raiders in the Green Qilin Valley?”

I replied, “You don't need to have everyone there while you're guarding bodies. And so, the core players of [Zhan Long] came out to look for a new map. Rather, I was the one who couldn't imagine that [Legend] had already found this map. Besides....”

I looked at Lu Chun Yang's mount and smiled, “Besides, I never would have thought that these Earth Bane Oxes could actually become mounts. What's their tier?”

Lu Chun Yang didn't try to hide and smiled, “Level 115 Saint Tier Mount. It increases health by 70,000, and it increases attack power and defense 25% less than the [Zhan Long]'s Steel Blade Cavalry, but it has a [Reflect] ability. It deals around 5% damage to the enemy. It's pretty good. It should be about the same tier as the Steel Blade Horsemen.”

I licked my lips, “It can actually reflect damage. This mount should go towards Thorny Battle Style or Battle Reflux Style players. [Legend] has really good luck....”

Lu Chun Yang laughed and patted the neck of the Earth Bane Ox, “How about we not become [House of Prestige] and fight forever for a Earth Bane Oxe? Guildmaster Xiao Yao, I applaud the fact that you and [Zhan Long] dare to provoke the Greedy Wolf Raiders. Even [Legend] needs to spend half a month

here in order to try a stunt like that. We need to get as many Oxen as we can.”

I nodded, “Yup, I was just passing by. The Broken Bones Shrubbery Forest isn’t our target.”

“Alright!”

Lu Chun Yang smiled, “Brothers, watch our friends of [Zhan Long] out!”

# Chapter 708 - Broken Blade Canyon

The so called “See our guests out” was watching as we left the Broken Bone Shrubbery Forest. They didn’t let us get any Level 1 Earth Bane Ox mounts. Of course, as the vice guildmaster of a big guild, Lu Chun Yang was not wrong in doing this. Rather, it’s what he should be doing. Besides, Lu Chun Yang had kept his word. It really makes one envy Fang Ge Que for having a vice guildmaster like that. When I thought of that, I looked over at Wan Er and Qing Qian. Yup, [Zhan Long]’s vice guildmasters are also just as clever and magnanimous. On top of that all, they are much easier on the eyes than Lu Chun Yang.

.....

Before we walked too far out of the in the distance, I saw Enchanted Painting lead her hundred man team into the shrubbery to kill a group of Earth Bane Oxen. They seemed shocked when they saw us. Enchanted Painting picked up her sword and smiled, “Hey, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Cang Tong~”

Dong Cheng was a little speechless, “Why did she only say hi to Xiao Yao and Wan Er....”

Qing Qian grinned, “Because, during the Hero’s Wing’s Tournament, you and I were both ignored...”

“Wu wu....”

.....

Finally, after we passed through the Broken Bones Shrubbery Forest, the entrance to a large canyon appeared before us. In a burst of excitement, I galloped forward. The entrance to Broken Blade Canyon was right before me.

“Neigh....”

My Flying Scythe War Horse charged into the Broken Blade Canyon, only to notice that the canyon was at least a hundred meters wide. There was even a hollowed out area in the walls. This map truly gave a disorienting sensation. It was just as Qing Qian had said. Both sides were thousands of leagues of precipices. If we hadn’t come in through the shrubbery, I’m afraid there wasn’t

any other way of entering this strategic canyon.

“Ding!”

System Notification: You have entered the dangerous map [Broken Blade Canyon]!

.....

Besides the danger notification, there was no other details or introductions of the map. So inconsiderate! I sighed internally. As I slowly walked forward, Wan Er, Qing Qian and Dong Cheng all caught up to me. The five of us quickly entered into the Broken Blade Map. As we entered the depths, I could already see some humans with blood red eyes standing there. You might not even consider them humans. They wore thick animal pelt clothes and looked to be extremely burly. On top of that, their hands and feet were extremely large. They looked like a beast. They were also wearing a light armor over the pelts. They didn't even have weapons. But their eyes were completely blood red.

This person evilly grinned, “Oh, how many years has it been. Finally, some fresh meat has offered itself up to be eaten...”

Ice Demon Man, Level 135, Level 3 Hybrid Demon!

I couldn't help but feel a little astonished when I saw the monster's level “This.... Aren't all of the Hybrid Demons in the Hybrid Demon Territory up north? Why are there hybrid demons in the Broken Blade Canyon too?”

Wan Er quickly pulled out her dagger, “No idea... maybe the Hybrid Demons have already gone over the Ice Ridge Mountains. They might have even made it into the Southern Regions of the Continent. Prepare to kill. No wonder Wei Liang can't kill monsters here. Level 3 Hybrid Demons, they aren't going to be easy to kill!”

“Yup!”

I charged forward and threw a [Wind Blade] at the Ice Demon!

“Peng!”

“12127 ! ”

He didn't dodge at all and took my hit head on. It suddenly grabbed the blade

of my Dragon Reservoir Sword and raised its right arm. Ice energy began to gather around its fist. “Hong!” It threw a punch straight into my Flying Scythe Horse. I shuddered and lost 6000 health. Motherf\*cker, it’s worthy of being a Level 3 Hybrid Demon. So savage!

I flicked my wrist, using my blade to shatter the ice energy from the Ice Demon Man I was gathering power in my fist. I suddenly stabbed forward with a [Fierce Ice Blade] and slashed with my Brilliant Flame Sword. I swung both swords with a barrage of attacks, but the Ice Demon Man didn’t retreat a single step. It just stood there, holding my war horse back while fighting against me. Each of its punches had an ice effect. I was still ok, but Wan Er and Qing Qian were both receiving over ten thousand damage. It was especially critical against them.

Wan Er and Qing Qian were both top assassins in Tian Ling City. Plus the two girls had very good team work. They switched between [Gouge] and attacks to interrupt the Ice Demon Man’s attack rhythm. They also made sure that we could deal with this Ice Demon without too much pressure!

“Pu!”

I plunged my blade into the Ice Demon Man, killing it!

“Arghhh...”

With a scream, it slowly fell to the ground. On top of that, it even dropped a long sword with ice revolving around it. I picked it up to look. The attack power wasn’t too bad——

[Frost Bite Sword] (Valkyrie Tier - Superior)

Attack: 2950-3400

Strength: +80

Stamina: +77

Agility: +75

Additional: Increases the user’s attack power by 21%

Additional: Increases the user’s attack output by 10%



Special: [Ice Concentrate] When attacking a target, there's a 30% chance of sealing the target in ice, decreasing the target's speed. Lasts for 3 seconds.

Special: [Ice Shield], Creates an ice shield, and takes 10,000 points of health. Consumes 75 points of rage

Required Level: 115

.....

I gripped this Ice Concentrate Sword and sighed, "The Hybrid Demon monsters are starting to drop Valkyrie Tier weapons now. Looks like the Saint Tier weapons will soon become a common item...."

Wan Er said, "The stats on this [Frost Bite Sword] are pretty good. It has a speed decrease effect as well as its own defense skill. On top of that, it has an attack power over 3400. It's already a top tier weapon. Keep it. It can strengthen the battle potential of our Steel Blade Horsemen."

I nodded and put the Frost Bite Sword into my bag.

We continued advancing forward into the Broken Blade Canyon, only to see that the Ice Demon Men had basically set up fort here in the canyon. There were more and more Ice Demon Men, forcing us to lure them over one by one. With the battle power of our little team, killing three Ice Demon Men at once was already our limit. Any more and we wouldn't be able to hold them off with our health limits.

However, there was one thing that made me particularly excited. When I killed the fifth Ice Demon Man, it dropped the second [Frost Bite Sword]. These Ice Demons seem to uniquely drop this weapon. This made the dream of equipping the Steel Blade Horsemen with this weapon more likely.

.....

After a dozen minutes, three of the Ice Demons charged at us. They swung their ice covered fists. Each one had a lot of health, making it impossible to kill them quickly. We could only slowly kill them off one by one.

As we were fighting, one of the Ice Demon Men suddenly roared, "There's a crisis, we must return!"

As it said that, the Ice Demon Men stopped fighting completely and took the other two sprinting into the canyon walls. In the blink of an eye, they disappeared.

“Oh, what’s going on?” I was stunned.

Wan Er’s beautiful eyes glanced around. She suddenly seemed to have thought of something and immediately grabbed my horse’s reigns, “Idiot, hurry up. Follow them!”

I could tell something was up and grabbed Darling Duck onto my horse and shouted, “Follow me! You guys activate all of your speed skills!”

I charged at the southern wall with my Flying Scythe War Horse. Wan Er and Qing Qian both used [Absolute Step] to follow behind me while Dong Cheng flapped her wings.

“Peng!”

I rumbled into one of the sunk in areas of the stone. When I looked up, just west of the Broken Blade Canyon, I felt a strong breeze. At the same time, a stone skin boar happily walked into the canyon. It stepped in as though it were lost.

“Well well, that stone skin boar is pretty cute...” Dong Cheng giggled.

I furrowed my brows, “Wait...”

.....

“Hu hu.....”

A biting gust blew past, as though bringing the cold air from the underworld. Suddenly, something dashed through the Broken Blade Canyon, and froze the little boar in its place. “Ji ji!” it cried out. Ice began to form around its body. It was even growing icicles off of its fierce fangs. Another gale blew past and “Pa Cha!” the little boar’s body was crushed to pieces by blades of wind and then carried out on that same gust out of the Broken Blade Canyon. The little boar was actually smashed and then scattered into the wind!

It was only then that I realized the meaning behind Broken Blade Canyon.

“That....” Wan Er gaped, “That little boar’s fangs were even sturdier than Li

Xiao Yao's sword right? It... it was actually crushed in a split second...."

Qing Qian clenched her teeth, "Under the conditions of extreme cold, even gold will lose its durability and collapse with a blow."

The wind continued to rage on outside. I gripped the reins of my horse and protected the four girls in the hollow from the outside. At the same time, I could see several pieces of sharp rock fling in the wind. It was as though a cosmic storm had descended. The Broken Blade Canyon's flat surface was the masterpiece of this storm. Thankfully the Ice Demon Men had warned us. Otherwise, I'm afraid we'll turn out exactly like that little boar.

"This map, isn't cute at all...." Darling Duck stuttered.

I nodded, "We'll have to be more careful as we continue. We're gonna have to estimate the time before the next gale comes after us...."

When the gale finally subsided, Wan Er looked at the time and said, "It lasted for ten minutes!"

"Ok!" Pay attention to the movements of the Ice Demons. Who knows when the next wind will come at us. Whenever the time hits the hour, we all must be more careful and pay attention to every move of the Ice Demon Men in the distance. Those Ice Demon Men have been living in the Broken Blade Canyon for a long time now. They must know when this mortal wind arrives.

"嗯。"

"Yes."

.....

We continued grinding levels. Even though this map was very dangerous, the Ice Concentrate Sword that it dropped was well worth the risk. Besides, I could already see sheets of steel deposits along the Broken Blade Canyon's stone walls. There were several Level 11 and 12 steel deposits. These were all materials for creating weapons and fixing armor, another future trend in the game.

Soon after, the Ice Demon Men in the distance began to flock towards the caves on the two sides of the canyon, and hide. We did the same in turn,

dodging another catastrophe. This time, we bound an Ice Demon Man in its spot. It had frozen on the spot and was then cut into a million pieces.

Wan Er glanced into the distance and then muttered, “Thirty seven minutes and twelve seconds. That’s the interval between the gusts. Let’s wait another hour just to make sure the pattern holds.

I smiled and nodded, “OK!”

## Chapter 709 - War God River

Thirty seven minutes later, we confirmed our suspicions. The time period between each killer wind was forty seven minutes and twelve seconds. The phenomena wasn't even a second off. This knowledge made our level grinding much more safe. Preparing ourselves half a minute early was enough time to dodge.

In the blink of an eye, four hours had passed and it was already ten at night. My experience had already risen up to 44%. The Ice Demon Men in this Broken Blade Canyon were much more fruitful than normal. Not only did they give quite a bit of experience, they had dropped two hundred Frost Swords. The Frost Swords were Valkyrie Tier weapons, one tier higher than the Emperor tier and one tier lower than the Saint Tier weapons. At the current stage in the game, it's no longer a godly weapon, but the stats were pretty good. If we set up a stall in Tian Ling City, each sword would sell at around 1000 RMB or so. Two hundred would obviously generate quite a bit of profit. But, I wasn't planning on selling these. If I equipped the Steel Blade Riders with these, then the power of their [Charge] and their stamina would be even more terrifying.

.....

I opened up my friend list and found Li Mu and sent him a message, "What's the situation like in Sword Saint Forest?"

Li Mu quickly replied, "Not Ordinary and You Yi have probably already logged off. They've already given up on reviving. Either way, we've killed everyone who tried to revive. Most of the Greedy Wolf Raiders have logged off. They probably won't revive until tomorrow. If we continue guarding, then it'd be a waste. How about we just finish early. There's still three hours until we've guarded the bodies for ten hours."

I shook my head, "We'll continue it until the end. Seeing as we announced that we would guard them for ten hours, then we won't change it. Leave a group of people behind to guard the bodies while the rest can grind levels. Li Mu, pick twenty people with the highest level of mining skills to come over to

the Broken Blade Canyon. There's large deposits of Level 11 and level 12 iron materials. Its enough for twenty people to completely fill their bags."

Li Mu was stunned, "Really? There's even level twelve materials?! D\*mn, what kind of place is Broken Blade Canyon?"

I immediately gave him my location and how to get there. On top of that, I stressed, "Periodically, there's a deadly gale that blows throughout the Broken Blade Canyon. It kills both players and NPCs. When you arrive, confirm with Qing Qian. The gale lasts ten minutes and passes by every forty seven minutes and twelve seconds. When you bring people, make sure you don't coincide with it."

Li Mu was stunned, "Yup, I understand. Don't worry. This thirty seven minute and twelve second secret, can I reveal it?"

"What do you think?"

"How about we don't. How about we keep this map secret to ourselves."

"Ok, you decide."

"Alright. I'll bring people over in an hour. This time, the weapons and equipment that [Zhan Long] creates will be a level better than everyone else!"

"Yup, let's work hard then!"

.....

Li Mu then went on to pick out miners. The rest of us continued to grind levels in the Broken Blade Canyon. Thankfully, the canyon itself wasn't very long. Within five hours, we managed to finish it. Li Mu and the rest had also arrived at the Broken Blade Canyon. After personally seeing the gust of wind kill an armored ox, they were all dumbstruck with terror. After Qing Qian had instructed them on the time for the next gale, we immediately left the canyon.

The path out of the Canyon left towards the west. By the time we passed through the map, we found a level road before us. The road was less than a kilometer. Both sides were covered with shrubbery. From the shape of it, it looked like the gale came from the sky. Otherwise, the plants here would not escape such a calamity. In the distance, we could see War God River.

The water babbled as it quickly flowed down the river. It looked like a long blue belt that crossed the map and spread out into the distance. It went around Tian Ling City and continued south towards Ba Huang City and all the way to Heaven's Question Peak. Heaven's Question Peak was a snowy mountain. When the snow and ice melted, it rolled down the mountain, and formed the War God River and ran through the Tian Ling City territory and finally flowed into the Sea of No Return. From the details on the map, it appears that countless battles have occurred on this river.

Several hundred years ago, a calamity came from the Sea of No Return. The tribe of Sea Demons had launched an invasion with over 400,000 troops into Tian Ling City. A famous general of Tian Ling City known as Lu Xing lead a hundred thousand in a long war that lasted seven years. Finally, he used oil on a pontoon bridge to annihilate the Sea Demon's army in a sea of flames. In that one move, he had inflicted serious damages to the Sea Demon Tribe. It is because of this battle that Lu Xing's name was passed down through Tian Ling City history and was hailed as a War God. This originally was known as Green River and was thus named the War God River.

As I looked at it from a distance, the War God River appeared majestically on the map. It was far wider than the Yangtze River and the the river itself was boundless. The waves surged like a roaring sea, with a volume that was a thousand times greater than the Yangtze River's. This was a long blue ribbon the stretched over several kilometers. Wan Er pointed, "Is that the legendary Bridge of Fate?"

I nodded, "That's right, it must be...."

Qing Qian smiled, "Are we going to cross the War God River and check out the other side?"

I sheathed my blades and grabbed the reigns of my battle horse, "I've never been on the western side of the War God River. That's also Tian Ling City's territory, but it's a bit far from the center, so not many players have been there. However, once the country wars begin, it's hard to say. The War God River's western shore are less than an hour away from Moon City, which is the city for Britain and France's servers. From the history of the game, these two cities don't have much conflict with the Chinese Servers. The sooner we check out

their maps, the easier it is to plan ahead and prepare for a rainy day.”

Darling Duck picked up her staff and grinned, “Guildmaster, do you think that there may be a war in the future. What kind of role should [Zhan Long] play in the Chinese Server?”

I stiffened and rubbed my nose, “I really haven’t thought about that. But... [Zhan Long] has always aspired to be a true hero, and that isn’t something I’m just saying. Once a true Country War occurs, then we won’t stop fighting until the last soldier has fallen to protect the land of the Chinese Servers.”

Dong Cheng giggled, “Such a spineless kid, all you think about is protecting your nation’s territory. Have you not thought about invading the lands of other countries and becoming a world dominator?”

I took a deep breath and smiled, “Dominate the world? To be honest, that would be too hard... this is such a great map. Tian Ling City is already making my head hurt, much less the six other great cities. If I had to take them over one by one, I think all of the hairs on my head will grow white....”

Wan Er smiled, “Pig, then why are you playing this game?”

I thought about it for a second and smiled, “It’s fun. I have many happy experiences in the game. Plus, I can spend time with you and protect you. That’s all....”

Qing Qian covered her smile, “If it's like that, then Brother Xiao Yao really is spineless...”

I shook my reins and said, “Let’s go already and pass through the War God River. I want to see what the map on the other shore is like. This Broken Blade Canyon is too savage. We actually met Level 3 Hybrid Demons along the way. No player has ever walked across this Bridge of Fate. We’re basically pioneering these maps. Not bad, we’ll be the first people to take a bite out of this crab!”

“Aye aye!”

.....

The five people walked forward. Not long after, we arrived on the eastern shore of the bridge.



There was actually a camp on the shore. A tattered old Tian Ling City flag softly fluttered in the wind. The drill grounds were in ruins and broken weapons were scattered across the ground. Looks like it hadn't been used in a long time. A few soldiers were sitting on the fence beside the camp. They were happily tanning in the sun. Some of them were even falling asleep and taking a nap.

Qing Qian bit her lip, "If Moon City really does plan on attacking us, then this defense camp of the Bridge of Fate really won't be able to stand against it...."

Disappointed, I replied, "That's right!"

Once we reached the Bridge of Fate, we saw a team of soldiers guarding the entrance. They seemed a bit more spirited. However, their breastplates and leather armor still looked very shabby. One of the soldiers pointed at us and roared, "Who are you?"

I showed my Tian Ling City badge and said, "We are adventurers from Tian Ling City that want to explore the western shore of The Bridge of Fate."

The team leader narrowed his eyes and said, "The Western Shore? Do you guys know that the Western Shore is a battlefield from a hundred years ago. Only true soldiers can go there. That place is filled with danger. With your team? I'm afraid you're just sending food to the beasts."

I smiled, "That's fine. We understand our limits. However, sir, why is it that while you guys are guarding this bridge, you don't seem very energetic and your unfocused. If your prince Theodore finds out, who knows what he'll do."

Once I said that, the soldier immediately got nervous and adjusted his armor, "We've been guarding this Bridge of Fate for the past eleven years and have lived a peaceful life. That's the only reason we've been able to be like this. Besides, the cart that replenishes our resources only comes once a year. The soldiers are practically farmers for half the year and are building families. There's nothing I can do either. I can't just watch them die of hunger right? The Bridge of Fate hasn't been used in over a hundred years. I think.... The empire has probably already forgotten about the Bridge of Fate and us...."

I felt a little sympathetic to them and patted his shoulder, "Not at all. The Tian Ling Empire won't forget about you...."

“Thank you for your comfort. Either way, you should be more careful on the western shore. That area is filled with danger.”

“Yes, I understand. Thank you!”

“Alright then. You can go through!”

.....

Once we obtained permission to pass, I lead my horse onto the bridge. This bridge was completely made from wood, but they hadn't rotted even after being soaked in water for a hundred years. The wood was connected with chains that looked as though they had not been repaired in a long time. Despite that, they hadn't corroded yet. It's probably only repaired every ten years. If they leave it alone for too long, then it would fall apart. The nobles of Tian Ling City have already forgotten this secluded piece of land and even forgotten the fierce battles that had once occurred on its waters.

# Chapter 710 - Enemy from Afar

“Du du du....”

Horse hooves softly stepped across the pontoon bridge. I was very careful, afraid that the Flying Scythe War Horse would suddenly step onto a decayed plank. Wan Er walked beside me, and held her Iron Umbrella with one hand. She happily glanced at the landscape around us. She didn't seem afraid at all, on the flip side she seemed very content.

Thinking about it, it makes sense. Even though Wan Er is practically a little princess by Lin Tian Nan's side, she was also like a small caged bird. Every time she went out she was followed by a group of bodyguards. She didn't even get the chance to be completely relaxed when she went out for vacation. Although we were in a game, it was still like vacationing with friends, so she must be feeling very ecstatic.

Dong Cheng flapped her wings and fluttered in the sky like a beautiful fairy. Qing Qian was gripping her dagger, and carefully watched everything around us. Darling Duck was much calmer and followed me with her staff. It seems that when she's with the four of us she needn't worry about danger.

.....

Duckweed clung to the sides of the bridge and along the surface of the river. In the distance I could see the river's water continuously rush against the bridge's banks, and made this bridge sway even more. It was like we were standing on a boat. Sometimes the bridge swayed so hard that I wanted to throw up.

Thankfully the bridge wasn't long and very soon we passed through it. The guard camp on the western banks wasn't much better off than the one on the eastern banks. The soldiers all looked unspirited. However, the moment that we reached the bank, an old soldier around fifty years old suddenly stood up with a smile, “The adventurers of Tian Ling City have finally stepped onto this territory!”

I was slightly speechless. But the old soldier had already walked up to us. He grabbed the reigns of my Flying Scythe War Horse and excitedly said, “Young warrior, you have finally arrived!”

I stared at his face. The words “Tian Ling City Xia Yu Army’s Forty Seventh Unit Leader Luo Si” appeared above his head. So the army here were all from the Xia Lu Army. The Xia Lu Army was Tian Ling City’s second strongest army, second only to the Flame Dragon Army. The Xia Lu Army is commanded by the second prince Owen. This Luo Si was just a small lieutenant. There were five people in a squad, ten people total in the company. This was the most basic structure for an army. I want to see just how this small lieutenant plans on preventing our course.

“Sir, what’s wrong?” Even though he was just a lieutenant, his military rank in Tian Ling City was higher than my own, so I still needed to address him with a term of respect.

Luo Si excitedly explained, “Young adventurer, it’s wonderful that you were able to arrive. I have something I need your help with!”

“Oh? What is it?” Wan Er asked with a smile.

Luo Si replied, “2.5 kilometers northwest of the Bridge of Fate is the Spirits of No Return Valley. There once was a fierce battle that occurred at that location. The War God Lu Xing lead an army of 4000 soldiers there to obstruct the barbarian armies from invading the south. They fought a harsh battle for three days and three nights. Finally, all four thousand soldiers died in battle. The bones of these brave soldiers were never able to find peace in this Spirits of No Return Valley. One of these remains belongs to my ancestor. And so, I ask that you go to the Spirits of No Return Valley and find the remains of my grandfather and pay respects to his courageous spirit for me. I hope that he can return to the reincarnation cycle as soon as he can, rather than suffer in the spirit world.”

As he said that, Luo Si’s face fell, “I was originally going to go on my own, however this Spirit of No Return Valley has been taken by a group of fearsome Evil Spirits. A year ago, I took ten soldiers there and lost three in the process. We didn’t even manage to get into the valley. I.... I am at fault and ashamed to face my soldiers. However...”

Lu Si knelt towards the northwest with tears welling up in his eyes, “Those brave soldiers fought to protect their country and yet there isn’t a way to put their bodies to rest. Is this fair to them? The nobles of Tian Ling City only know how to outwit each other. They have never thought about the lives of their soldiers. We have dignity too. Two hundred years ago, they continuously infringed upon the Barbarian Tribes territory, but didn’t have the “time” to banish them from the Spirit of No Return Valley and go return the remains of those heroes? No, they just think that I, Lou Si am only a small lieutenant. Yet Generals are also people. They are also made of blood and meat. The dead ought to receive the respect that they deserve!”

Luo Si was very passionate. The soldier behind him quickly cautioned him, “Uncle Luo Si, quiet down. What if Captain Xiao Ji hears of this? Not only you, but the other nine of us will lose our heads!”

I quickly jumped off of my horse and helped Luo Si up and said, “Alright, I’ll help you. What do you want me to do?”

Luo Si broke into a grin and wiped away the tears on his cheek, “This will be a very dangerous path. Are you really willing to put your life on the line and fight for these brave souls?”

I nodded, “Yup, I am willing to bring the honor and respect that these brave souls deserve!”

Luo Si became even more excited, “Alright... you.... You must be careful when you enter the Spirits of No Return Valley. The monsters there are extremely strong. Even the Sky Knights of Tian Ling City have difficulty winning against them. You must remember, when you enter the valley, you have to kill all of the monsters there, and then light a fire on all of the corpses of the human soldiers. Once their remains have been purified by a flame, a shower of rain will allow their spirits to return to the ground where they will truly be allowed to continue their path!”

I nodded, “Yes!”

“Ding!”

System Notification: You have received the SSS tier Quest [Spirits of No Return Valley]!

Quest Details: Enter the Spirits of No Return Valley and kill all of the evil spirits. Furthermore, light a fire on the remains of the heroes and allow their spirits to return to their homes and take them away from the suffering of a wandering spirit. However, you must be careful. The evil spirits are extremely strong. You must be careful, or else your little team will be annihilated. When you have finished the quest, turn it into lieutenant Luo Si. You will receive a very generous reward.

.....

OK, we got the quest. Even though it wasn't a main story quest, it was still an SSS Tier. It was better than having nothing. If we didn't have a quest, then we wouldn't level up quite as fast while killing monsters. We wouldn't even necessarily level up once in a day. At that rate, just when would we reach Level 150's Sixth Advancement!

Set off!

We left the Bridge of Fate and walked 2.5 kilometers towards the north west part of the map. Forests and shrubbery surrounded the path that we walked along. As we continued forward, an entrance to a valley appeared before us. Before we even entered it, we noticed a vulgar figure hiding amongst the bushes. It was a Gravedigger Demon, a Level 2 Hybrid Demon. No wonder that Lieutenant Luo Si the NPC soldier was no match. Hybrid Demons were already extremely strong. They weren't something that a normal soldier could deal with!

"Charge!"

I charged straight at it and plunged both of my swords into the Gravedigger Demon. This thing immediately looked up and swung its sharp blade hands into my Hidden Dragon Armor. Unfortunately for it, my armor had already added 117% [Thousand Layer Cliff] effect. This hit only dealt 3000+ damage to me. With a few more attacks from me, I had already [Drain]ed it all back. Soloing a Level 2 Hybrid Demon was as easy as cutting down a small cabbage.

Dong Cheng waved her staff, and activated [Magma Lance]. The Gravedigger Demon wailed and fell to the ground, and dropped a pair of Emperor Tier leather wrist guards. There wasn't much use for it so I threw it into my bag.

Later, I'll sell it in National Beauty.

We killed another group of Gravedigger Demons before we finally entered the Spirits of No Return Valley. As soon as we stepped in, the wails and screams of lost spirits filled our ears. There were countless soldier spirits that couldn't leave and had gathered in this one map. At the same time, countless Gravedigger Demons, Hellhounds and other Hybrid Demons appeared in the valley. One after another we killed them all, without any worries at all.

.....

We dripped the oil onto a pile of bones and then backed away from it. The materials were part of the quest items that Luo Si had given to us. After I finished that up, I looked at Dong Cheng and said, "Light it up."

Dong Cheng obediently opened her palm and used a Level 1 Skill, [Magic Flame]. "Hua La!" the remains lit on fire and was turned into a pile of ashes in the blink of an eye.

As we continued forward, we looked for the next target. We roamed the valley looking for monsters to kill. We didn't let a single one go. Thankfully, the valley wasn't very big. We could kill all of the monsters here within three hours.

In the blink of an eye, close to two hours had passed. The monsters in the valley had basically all been cleared out.

Brother Xiao Yao, there's a Gravedigger Demon over there. Hurry up and kill it!" Qing Qian yelled over to me from a distance.

I charged over, but when I was halfway there, a silver armored figure caught my eye. A little general riding on a white battle horse charged and stabbed the Gravedigger Demon. After several charges and stabs, the Gravedigger Demon's head was filled with holes. It huffed as it stood there and said, "D\*mn\*d b\*st\*rd...."

"Huh?" Wan Er was stunned, "There's someone else who also took this quest?"

I nodded. This youngster in the silver armor was an NPC. Above its head floated the words, "Tian Ling City Xia Yu Armry Forty Seventh Halberd Wielder Luo Heng". It seems that his rank was slightly higher than the Uncle Luo Si the

Lieutenant.

As I walked over, the little general glanced at me and immediately saluted me, “Sir adventurer, I am the halberd wielding guard of the Bridge of Fate. Lieutenant Luo Si is my father. I heard that you have taken up this quest. However, I was afraid that something would happen to you and so I came here to help. However, it looks that you have not let my father down!”

I smiled, “Yes, thank you for your help. We can finish this quest.”

Luo Heng replied, “Yes. Allow me to help you kill a few evil spirits!”

“Alright!”

.....

Luo Heng patted his horse and continued forward. We continued to finish the last bit of our quest.

After twenty minutes, we reached the end of the valley. We left a trail of smoky remains in our wake. I raised my bloody Dragon Reservoir Sword and happily stood at the end of the valley I was filled with pride, and saw how far we had come as players!

Right at that moment, Wan Er suddenly charged at me and pulled the reigns of my horse into a hidden forest, “There are people here!”

.....

I pressed my body along my horse’s back and looked up. As she had said, a group of five people had entered the valley. They had come from the west. Furthermore, the knight player that stood at the head of the team hung a bloody human head from his horse. As I looked closer, it was the head of Luo Si’s son! He... he was killed?

Suddenly, I felt a fiery anger boil in my stomach!

“F\*ck!” I cursed.

Qing Qian softly said, “Brother Xiao Yao, be careful. Those aren’t Chinese players....”

When I looked over, I realized she was right. The British flag that floated



beside the first player's head confirmed that— —

Smile LV 123 Heavenly Spirit Knight

City: Moon City

Guild: Thunder Gods

Position: Guildmaster

.....

I nearly broke a tooth from how hard I was clenching my teeth. I gripped the hilt of my Dragon Reservoir Sword, “The British, they’ve already entered our territory!”

# Chapter 711 - A Champion from Another Country

“Sha sha...”

The leaves that were scattered along the ground of the shrubbery shifted. I had already picked up my Dragon Reservoir Sword and came out from the brush on my Flying Scythe War Horse along with my little tiger. This was probably the first time a Chinese Player has met with a player from Great Britain. The moment that I walked out, the guildmaster of [Lightning Gods] smiled to me and couldn't help but raise an eyebrow, “So there's actually someone here lying in ambush for us?”

The system tools automatically translated his words. I smiled coldly back, “Nobody would sit here just to ambush you guys. However, if I'm remembering this correctly, this Spirits of No Return Valley should be Tian Ling City's territory, isn't that correct?”

Smile broke into a carefree grin and spread his arms, “Oh, I was just here to grind levels with my friends and accidentally walked onto a Chinese Server map....”

I chuckled, “There's a vast desert between Tian Ling City and Moon City. Are you saying that you accidentally spent five hours traveling through a desert before arriving on the Chinese Server maps? And on top of that, you accidentally killed a Chinese Server NPC?”

Smile replied, “It was just a mistaken kill. Otherwise, he would've attacked us first.”

“Is that so?” My expression was frozen in a cold smile, “Then should I accidentally kill you guys?”

Smile's expression immediately grew cautious as he said, “You're called Xiao Yao Zi Zai? You seem to be someone who's near the top in the Chinese Server webs. I believe you were twelfth place. And here I thought you were one of the top three from the way you speak!”

Beside smile was a Level 120 Berserker named “Slaughterer”. He had long golden hair and a strong burly figure. He shouted, “Smile, why are you wasting your breath on him. He’s just number twelfth on the web. Just what makes him think he can rival us. Don’t forget, you are number one on the UK Servers. Let’s kill him and continue scouting maps!”

Smile slowly shook his head and gripped the hilt of his spear, “Wait one moment. This man has some partners. Why don’t you all come out. If we’re going to fight, then let’s fight honorably!”

I waved my hand and said, “Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Qing Qian, come out for battle!”

Very soon, Wan Er, Dong Cheng and the other girls walked out of the forest. Smile stiffened, as though he had been shocked by the beautiful faces of these girls. However, he recovered just as quickly. The three male players, the berserker, “Slaughter”, the archer, “Apollo” and the mage, “Summer”, all gaped at Wan Er and Dong Cheng for ten straight seconds.

On the other hand, the female healer “Moonlit Bank” raised her elegant brow and said to their group, “Smile, be careful. This Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Cang Tong, and Cang Yue group had placed second in the Chinese Server’s Wings of Heroes tournament. They aren’t as weak as you may think. They nearly flipped the board on Fang Ge Que’s team!”

Smile shuddered and he frowned, “What? This kid was able to beat Fang Ge Que? That doesn’t seem right....”

I pulled out my Brilliant Flame Emperor and coldly replied, “You’ll know once you try battling me!”

.....

In the team chat, Wan Er said, “Pig, how do you think we should fight?”

I lowered my voice, “Their firepower is dependent on the berserker and the mage. I’ll ambush the mage and then kill the berserker. After that, we kill the healer. We’ll save Smile and Apollo for last!”

Qing Qian blinked a few times, “Be careful. Smile is the EBN Battlenet’s number one player. Even Fang Ge Que is wary of him. Brother Xiao Yao, don’t

underestimate your opponent!”

“Ok!”

I stared ahead, “Dong Cheng, I will charge at the mage “Summer” first. “Summer” only has two choices, that is to either take damage from Wan Er and I, where his shield will break and he’ll die, or be forced to leave the battlefield. You take the chance to put Apollo to sleep. Qing Qian will go into [Stealth], but don’t initiate an attack. After a while, Summer will definitely put one of us to [Sleep]. At that moment, use your [Awaken Spell] and then begin to attack.”

Dong Cheng and Qing Qian both nodded, “Yup, understood!”

.....

After we discussed our strategy, Smile also looked up at us. It seems that they have also finished their preparations.

Both of our teams used our [Pardon Cards], which indicated the beginning of this battle!

“Kill!”

I raised my blade and charged forward. At the same time, I commanded my tiger to pounce from my right flank with [Burstfire Raid]. Above me, Wan Er’s Purple Kirin Dragon roared and charged right at the enemy, and dealt two heavy attacks!

Smile, on the other hand, was terrifyingly calm.

“Charge!”

With a simple phrase, a flaming butterfly appeared above Smile’s shoulder. It cried out and fluttered its fiery wings. In a split second, an enormous fiery ditch appeared in my path. This was Smile’s pet, “Inferno Butterfly’s skill [Flame Broil]!

I raised my blade and threw a heavy [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

Smile turned his horse around and raised his shield, and rammed it right into my [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

“Peng!”

Sparks sprayed from the momentum of the force and my [Seven Star Fragment Slash] was actually broken by his [Brave Ram]. The durability of that shield had even made me shocked. I'm afraid there isn't anybody in the Chinese Servers that can rival his defense. Even Xuan Yuan Feng that well rounded knight is much weaker than Smile!

Holding my Dragon Reservoir Sword in my right hand, I suddenly felt a numb feeling race up from my wrist. This was the rebound pain inflicted from hitting a strong defense. Behind the shield, Smile chuckled. His spear suddenly pierced forward, using the typical European battle style.

I smiled back. "Keng!" My Brilliant Flame Emperor parried the spear while my Dragon Reservoir Sword dealt another heavy blow with a "Keng!" Smile's shield carrying hand slightly trembled from the blow. I then dealt another three attacks with my Brilliant Flame Emperor+Dragon Reservoir Sword, and constantly changed the angle of attack. That explosive chain of attacks had knocked Smile's shield away, and revealed his astonished expression. Clearly he had never imagined that my attack power would be that fast and that heavy!

"Hua!"

My Dragon Reservoir Sword flashed in the light and fell right upon Smile's shoulder. I then threw a [Wind Blade] with my Brilliant Flame Emperor that landed on his breastplate. I followed the attacks with a [Blade Rush]. Three damage numbers flew up above Smile's head——

"6412 ! "

"9031 ! "

"8577 ! "

.....

This defense was truly terrifying. He must have a defense power over 12,000 or else my attacks wouldn't have been so light!

After the [Blade Rush], I arrived right before Smile. My Flying Scythe War Horse neighed and charged forward. My target was the mage, not Smile!

I raised my left arm and didn't even look back. I could already estimate

Smile's position. I opened my palm, [Binding Chains]!

“Sha....”

I heard a loud sound behind me as a MISS flew up from behind. Smile had relied solely on his maneuvers to dodge that [Binding Chains] as he roared, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, don't you dare ignore me!”

The Inferno Butterfly flapped its wings with all its might. However, the little tiger and the Purple Kirin Dragon were locking their attacks onto Smile. I sent another command, and switched their targets to the Flame Butterfly!

I suddenly pulled on reigns, and turned my Flying Scythe Horse. The light from a flaming vine flashed beside me. As I had thought, it was the Flame Butterfly's binding skill——[Flame Seal]. While I had successfully dodged the [Flame Seal], the price for it was to take a [Scatter Shot] from the opponent's archer “Apollo”. “Peng!” The arrow buried into my chest, successfully stunning me!

Behind me, a light flashed and Smile raised his spear. He dealt three stabs into my back——[Starlit Slash]!

“7321 ! ”

“8012 ! ”

“7633 ! ”

.....

This round of damage... this b\*st\*rds attack power and defense power isn't completely under my own!

Apollo roared and pulled his long bow. I could see starlight shining on the string. The attack suddenly fell right on my chest, dealing a large damage number——11282

This trash's attack really hurts. Right after that [Star Arrow] attack, the introduction stated that it increased attack damage by 50%. This [Lightning Gods] guild's main power truly is above average.

“Huh?”

Smile suddenly turned around. While he was mounted on his horse, he raised

his shield. Behind him, Wan Er had activated [Absolute Step] and was charging straight at him. Any icy light flashed on her dagger and she instantly dealt three attacks from the [Blade of the Death God] into Smile's Shield. It looks like Smile had a little less than 70000 total health and he was already starting to weaken from all of these chain attacks. After three attacks from Wan Er, he was forced to retreat several steps. He quickly shouted, "Summer, kill this assassin! Her attack power is too strong!"

Summer waved his staff and the prelude effects of [Magma Lance] appeared on the ground. At the same time, he quickly stepped forward, and looked for a good angle. He stopped around a meter away from the area. Flames suddenly rose around him and a gale rose up. "YA!" He roared as he crossed his arms in front of him. The image of an enormous dragon appeared on his body and the words "Holy Ghost Tier 1" appeared——[Dragon Flame Break]!

"Oh no!"

My heart sunk. I had already noticed the situation was bad from Summer's positioning. The [Dragon Flame Break] was a type of dragon flame attack in a straight line. Wan Er, Dong Cheng and I were all within its angle!

There was already no time to dodge it. Once I had awakened, I immediately lunged right at Summer. At the same time, I took hits from the [Dragon Flame], losing 13000 health. I quickly used a Level 11 Potion + [Cleansing Rain] to recover my health. At the same time, Wan Er suddenly appeared right behind me with her Iron Umbrella in front. She had forced her way into the [Dragon Flame]'s attack as she slid backward. Smile had already picked up his spear and was charging at her!

"Despicable!"

After Dong Cheng used a [Lightning Eagle Wave] she immediately opened both of her hands, dealing a [Thunderbolt Finger]+[Magma Lance] at Smile. His health had dropped drastically. He quickly retreated, only to get hit by Qing Qian's [Grip of the Firefox] . Right at that moment, the opponent's berserker had also broken into Wan Er's defense. He roared and a crimson light appeared on the blade of his axe. He had activated [Berserker God] and was charging at Dong Cheng!

[Berserker God] was a common skill. It gave seven seconds of immunity to all effects. The user wouldn't be put to sleep, stunned, or slowed down. This was one of the most outstanding skills for a berserker!

.....

Wan Er had picked up her burning hot iron umbrella and stood up with a dagger raised at the berserker. She then shouted, "Dear, [Ice Domain]!"



# Chapter 712 - Honor for the Country

I clenched my teeth. I wasn't about to lose my objective, I hadn't even killed the healer yet. I figured that my chances of success weren't very high however and the situation was already too dangerous. The enemy's archer and berserker had already locked their targets onto Dong Cheng. If Dong Cheng died, then our attack power would drastically decrease.

As I was running forward, a wave of ice surged forth before the Flying Scythe War Horse.

The moment that [Ice Domain] activated, The enemy clergy "Moonlit Bank" cleverly cast a [Anti-Magic Shell] to protect herself. She had completely dodged the ice seal effect of [Ice Domain]. At the same time, she used a group [Purification]. What a smart English girl. She was actually able to find the loophole in my skill at such a critical moment. The ice seal effect of Smile and Apollo had been purified.

I felt a shock run through my heart. Did they guess it, or.... Or did they already know the weakness of my skill?

.....

The most damaging part of this all was that the enemy's mage was also very smart. The moment he was defrosted, he shot a [Fierce Ice Arrow] into my chest. He was actually going to kite me at a time like this. At the same time, he lazily threw a [Eagle Lightning Formation] into Dong Cheng's [Mana Shield]. With a dazzling light, he gave Dong Cheng a [Lullaby], and interrupted her [Lightning Eagle Formation].

"Good chance!" Smile shouted, "Slaughterer, kill her!"

Crimson light began to glow on the berserker's axe, it was the [Blood Axe] skill. The skill increased the attack speed and attack power of the user by 30%. He dashed forward and threw [Burn the Boats]+[Skyshaker Slash] against Dong Cheng's [Mana Shield]. Then, with the archers [Rising Dragon Shot]+[God of Archer], instantly dropping Dong Cheng's health to critical.

“Oh no!”

Wan Er darted behind the berserker and threw a stab. At the same time she shouted, “Dong Cheng, be careful!”

Dong Cheng waved her staff. She was awoken from the [Lullaby] right as she was about to face death. That Slaughterer had aimed his battle axe right at her face. With this attack, Dong Cheng would most likely be instantly killed. Her total health was around 20,000 and that berserker’s attack power was not to be underestimated.

This was the most critical moment. Dong Cheng’s reaction had surprised everyone. She activated [Dimensional Leap], jumping towards us. Besides dodging the berserker’s attack, she waved her hand and threw a [Thunderbolt Finger]. Lightning flashed, surrounding Apollo and Smile’s bodies. She turned around and fired a [Ice Arrow] at the mage, instantly decreasing the mage’s speed.

.....

“Die!”

Slaughterer turned his horse at Dong Cheng and then charged forward while Smile cornered her with a [Heroic Ram]!

Wan Er waved her hand, halting her initial moves for [Ice Pick Whirlwind] and softly said to Qing Qan in the team chat, “Li Xiao Yao, kill that berserker!”

I raised my right hand and threw a Seven Star Fragment Slash at Summer. At the same time, I threw my Brilliant Flame Emperor into the air. “Pu Chi Pu Chi!” my [Blade Spin] pieced through the berserker’s body twice, killing him at once!

“Peng!”

Before Dong Cheng had the chance to use her second [Dimensional Leap], she was stunned by Smile. He threw a stab with his spear and starlight flashed. Our number one mage also fell to the ground.

But my opportunity had finally arrived. I turned my Flying Scythe War Horse at Summer and dealt two cuts with my swords crossed. That mage’s [Mana Shield]’s durability dropped to 10%.

Summer quickly used his second [Dimensional Leap]. I raised my hand and used [Defeat the Dragon], and instantly grabbed Summer to my side. I could even see the shock and terror in his blue eyes as he used his third [Dimensional Leap]!

“Shua!”

My [Dragon’s Hook] plunged through Summer’s back. Once I activated it, he was pulled back to my side. This time, he can’t run. “Ding!” a golden hexagram appeared on the tip of my blade and I let a chain of attacks explode. Summer fell to his knees.

.....

Behind me, Smile was like a loose wild horse now that he didn’t have the pressure of a mage’s firepower concentrated on him. He activated a [Blazing Shield] skill. The shield was only broken after Wan Er and Qing Qian had used up a whole chain of attacks. After all of their energy had been used, assassin’s had a clear drop in the damage of their attacks.

“Peng!”

Smile rammed his heavy shield while he was on his battle horse. Wan Er picked up her iron umbrella to parry the blow and was knocked backwards. She immediately raised her dagger and charged at Smile. However, not far from them, Qing Qian was stunned by Apollo’s [Scatter Shot]. Smile urged his horse forward as his spear glowed with the light from [Starlight Slash]. Our loli vice guildmaster fell and died.

I quickly charged at Apollo and said, “Darling Duck, don’t heal us anymore. Revive Dong Cheng!”

“Apollo, move towards me!” Smile shouted. He raised his hand and starlight began to rise from the ground. At that moment, he activated a Holy Ghost Second Tier Skill——[Eternal Star City]!

Starlight covered everything within a 30 yard radius. It was as though Wan Er, Darling Duck and I had been trapped in quicksand, completely slowing down our movements.

I hardened my heart and raised my blade. Golden light soared into the sky.

Thankfully, I hadn't used my [Halberd Flame] skill yet and so I still had enough Rage points. I activated my special skill——[King Domain]!

All of the stats for Wan Er and I had exponentially increased. I raised my palm and activated [Thundering Heavens] to cover the area! Right now, all I hoped for was Smile and Apollo to come after me. After all, my Holy Ghost Second Tier, [Invincibility] gives me 25 seconds of impenetrability. Once they try to kill me, then they're loss is guaranteed!

.....

Unfortunately, Smile wasn't an idea. He turned his horse around and charged at Wan Er as he swung his spear, "Moonlit, don't hesitate any longer. Revive Summer. We'll only gain victory if we have his magic firepower!"

Moonlit Bank quietly stood there, stunned and abashed, "Smile, I can't...."

"Why can't you?!" Smile was starting to panic.

Moonlit Bank answered, "System Notification, Summer has been sealed by the [Grip of the Sealed God]. For 59 minutes, he cannot be revived...."

"What!?"

In that moment, Smile had completely panicked. He threw three attacks straight Wan Er, only to be parried while Apollo took attacks from my little tiger and I!

"Shua!"

Dong Cheng was revived. She jumped to her feet and threw a [Thunderbolt Finger]+[Magma Lance] onto Smile. She then smiled, "Our corpse plan worked!"

It's true, if I killed Slaughterer, then Summer would die without a question. He wouldn't even get the chance to revive!

I opened my hand and locked my [Great Realm of Desolation] onto Smile!

Smile instinctively knew that a skill had been locked onto him. But, under the attacks from Wan Er, he had no way to dodge. With a wail, he lost ten thousand health to the [Great Realm of Desolation]. At the same time, Dong Cheng's [Lightning Eagle Formation] also fell. After that round of attacks, he was reduced to critical health. I then threw another [Blade Spin]. The man known as

number one on the EBN Battlenet Rankings had fallen.

Apollo's situation was no better. Just as he was about to leave, he was trapped when Dong Cheng used a [Dimensional Leap] and bound him with a [Ice Arrow]. Now, he couldn't leave even if he wanted to. Now that Dong Cheng recreated her [Mana Shield], there was no way Apollo could fight against her. Finally, he was killed by Wan Er's [Flying Dagger]. In the end, the healer girl, Moonlit Bank, trembled as she stood in the corner. Her stark blue eyes were filled with fear as she looked at us, "Alright, alright, we've lost... come and kill me then!"

I put my blade back in its sheathe and said, "We never kill people who don't have the power to fight back. Go back to your city!"

Moonlit Bank was stunned, "You.... you won't kill me?"

I replied, "If you go back, I won't kill you. Otherwise, don't blame me for not showing you mercy!"

"Alright then!"

Moonlit Bank pulled out a City Return Scroll and returned back to the Moon City. I didn't relax until I saw her leave. Smile, Slaughterer and Summer had all been killed by me, so they wouldn't revive for a bit. Even if Apollo revived, it wasn't enough to make me worried.

.....

"Shua!"

Qing Qian was also revived. She cried, "Annoying. It took me soo much time to get to Level 121, and now I'm back to Level 120....."

Dong Cheng patted her shoulder and comforted, "That's nothing, I was originally Number seven in Tian Ling City in terms of level. Now that I lost one, I dropped all the way to 37th place...."

Wan Er was speechless.

I couldn't help but smile, "don't be too sad. Thankfully, it was our team that ran into Smile's team. If it was some other team from the Chinese Servers, then I don't know how many people would end up giving up their lives just to deal

with Smile.”

“That’s true....”

Wan Er looked at the corpses on the ground. A lightbulb seemed to brighten as she said, “The borders aren’t so distinct now. Moon City’s first group of people have arrived on Tian Ling City’s territory. I’m afraid that we won’t have many peaceful days ahead of us. In the future, we’ll have to deal with not only the Greedy Wolf Brigade from [Thousand Burial], but also the enormous danger posed by the players of Moon City.”

Dong Cheng smiled, “The soldiers will come and defend the territory. Dong Cheng, don’t look too much into it!”

Qing Qian lightly smiled, “Sister Dong Cheng isn’t a vice guildmaster, and so of course you aren’t busy. The work of deploying those troops is normally left to Sister Cang Tong’s responsibility. I know just how tired she must be....”

I sympathetically looked at Wan Er, “You’ve worked hard love.”

Wan Er smiled, “There’s no other way, after all, I have such a bossy boyfriend. What can I say, the tasks you have in real life already take a lot of focus. If I don’t help you with some of the work, then how can I say I’m your girlfriend....”

I replied, “Alright then. Let’s hurry up and kill the rest of the Hybrid Demons and then turn in the quest. We shouldn’t get more involved with Smile and the rest of the people, there’s just no point.”

“Yes!”

.....

I continued in the quest and killed the rest of the mobs in the Spirits of No Return Valley. Afterwards, we burned the rest of the hero remains. Right at that moment, the system sent out a notification: Please note, this map will close in thirty minutes and then respawn. Players, please make your way out of this map, or else you will be sent directly back to your home city!

OK we did it!

I took the four girls out of the Spirits of No Return Valley and arrived at the Bridge of Fate. That Lieutenant Luo Si was still guarding the camp. When he saw

me bringing the news, he broke into a wide grin. However, he still had not received the news that his son had been killed by Smile and the rest. He grinned towards me, "I never would have thought that you guys would really have the bravery and strength to take on those fearful evil spirits. I am very thankful of you! That's right, my son, the halberd wielder Luo Heng went to help you. Did you guys see him?"

I nodded, "We saw him, however.... However General Luo Heng had sacrificed himself in a battle against the Hybrid Demons. He was very brave...."

"Huh?!"

Luo Si suddenly backed away until he crashed into the railing. It was like he aged another ten years. A tinge of pride colored his mournful face, "Heng Er had died for the empire, that is his honor.... I will always take pride in him!"

I looked at him, feeling frustration rise up in my heart. He died already, what use does he have with honor?

We got our quest rewards and our experience went up. Besides that, we also got ten points in chrm. However, there was still a bitter taste in our hearts. The number of events that had occurred were too much.

# Chapter 713 - General Appointment Stage

I stood on the western bank of the Bridge of Fate. After I pondered for a long moment, I flipped onto my horse and said, "Wan Er, Li Mu and the rest are grinding levels and mining in the Broken Blade Canyon. Let's head over and give them the 200 Frost Sword's. Then, let's find a place that's good for grind levels. It's getting late. If we grind any more, we'll play throughout the night. Either way, there isn't a pressing need right now to rush levels."

Wan Er nodded, "Ok, whatever you say!"

All of us crossed the Bridge of Fate. Before we had even reached the shore, we saw Wang Jian and a group of people on the eastern bank. There were around fifty people with him, all of them Steel Blade Horsemen. Wang Jian stood in the front with a confused expression, "Brother Xiao Yao, are you alright?"

"I'm fine, what's up?" I was stunned.

Wang Jian replied, "We just got intel from the British Servers Forums. They said that their EBN Battlenet Number one player, Smile, had been killed in battle while he was on the Chinese Server, Tian Ling City's territory. If you log onto the British battle forums, you can see a recording of the battle. I watched it, only to find out that their opponent was you guys."

I held a fist and replied, "Yup. The Moonlight City players have already stepped into Tian Ling City Territory, but there shouldn't be too many of them. They have to pass through a few hours of desert. It's difficult to replenish anything there, whereas the Tian Ling City players can gather tens of thousands of players against them. On top of that, the country battles haven't begun, so there's no way to activate the function that allows them to take over a city. There's no point in focusing so much on the small PKs that occur between us."

Li Mu interjected, "Then should we continue guarding the Broken Blade Canyon?"

Without hesitation, I replied, "The bitter cold Gale in the Broken Blade



Canyon has too much killing potential. There's no need to take more losses. We just need to send a team or two of people to mine these areas. Li Mu, the Bridge of Fate behind me is probably the only path to the other side. From now on, arrange some of [Zhan Long]'s players to grind here. The Bridge of Fate will now become [Zhan Long]'s training grounds in Tian Ling City. There must be at least a one thousand man team here every day. Furthermore, they must all be elites."

Li Mu was slightly puzzled and asked, Xiao Yao, do you want to guard this Bridge of Fate?"

"Yes."

Li Mu took a deep breath, "This isn't a minor thing at all. There should be no way that [Zhan Long], a guild, can manage to go against the entire Moon City. Besides, we've got problems at home too. [Thousand Burial] is still recruiting players to join the Greedy Wolf Raiders. Apparently they're close to 20,000 Greedy Wolf Raiders. No matter how hard we try, we just can't pull this thorn out, can we. There's no way we can focus all of our efforts on the aggressions from Moon City."

I smiled, "No matter, we'll just keep on gathering mounts from Steel Blade Mountain. As long as we have over 8000 Steel Blade Mounts, then we'll be able to destroy them in battle. Besides, as long as [Zhan Long] can hold against them, no matter how many Greedy Wolf Raiders they have, No Ordinary won't try anything major for the next half a month."

Matcha lead her Moonlight of a Thousand Leagues over and smiled, "Boss is right, [Zhan Long] is already one of the top super guilds. In the eyes of others, we of [Zhan Long] are like a super war ship in this game. We must maintain our temperament even when we're faced with an avalanche. Boss has the perfect attitude for that."

I smiled to her and said, "That's exactly what I was thinking Matcha, but... either way, when the Greedy Wolf Raiders come at us, it's you guys who willlead our brothers into battle. I will just sit back and enjoy. No need to worry too much..."

Matcha frowned, "You really can't praise a person too much....."

Li Mu replied, "Alright. I'll organize a team of players to grind levels at the Bridge of Fate. Just leave this western gate to Tian Ling City to us!"

"Ok!"

.....

I looked at the time. It was already late at night. I told Wan Er and Dong Cheng that'd we'd log off and go eat some hot pot in the villa. Once we were finished, we would go and get a good night's rest.

But, right as I logged off. "Ding!" I received a message. It had come from the vice guildmaster of [Vanguard], "Xiao Yao, are you there? I have a very important piece of information."

I replied, "What is it, Beautiful Jun?"

Simple sent a smiley face, "Well well, you player. As the guildmaster of [Zhan Long] you actually dare tease the vice guildmaster of another guild? If the beautiful Cang Tong had seen this, I wouldn't be surprised if your entire face is green with bruises after she's done with you!"

I smiled and replied, "What is it?"

Mu Jun sweetly replied, "It's like this. The CBN committee has decided to create a competition in the Chinese Server and use that to fight off the threats from Moon City, Swirling Abyss City, and Flaming Cloud City. Besides, we also know that [Zhan Long]'s main force has already fought against Smile, Apollo and the rest from Moon City. If it wasn't for you, Cang Tong, and Cang Yue, and a few other teams from China, do you think that the server would have a chance to win?"

I honestly replied, "There's a chance, but it isn't very high...."

Simple smiled softly, "Exactly. And so, the CBN committee has suggested we create a treaty and use that to gather together all of the guilds in China to create a Guardian Alliance. [Vanguard], [House of Prestige], [Judgement], [Legend] and [Hero's Mound] have all agreed to participate. [Zhan Long] is one of the strongest new guilds in the Chinese Server, but you're also one of the newer major players. And so, they wanted me to contact you since they couldn't. After all, you had rejected all of their friend requests."

“Eh, alright then....”

I then added, “If I join this alliance, I won’t have to pay any fee will I?”

Simple grinned, “What are you talking about. This is a spontaneous alliance, there’s no need to pay any dues. If you agree, then tomorrow morning at ten, bring your two vice guildmasters to the map that’s five kilometers south of Nine Cloud City. There’s a Tian Ling City General’s Stage there. We’ll begin our talks there. All guild master level players of the top thirty guilds in the Chinese Server will be participating.”

I pursed my lips, “Then can I bring three thousand Steel Blade Horsemen along for protection? I’m afraid Not Ordinary will lead his twenty thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders and bathe the stage in blood. At that point, catastrophe will befall all of the guildmasters of the great guilds....”

Simple smiled, “Can’t you be more serious? Alright now. Not Ordinary and You Yi will also be attending. But don’t worry about it. Besides, Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword, and Mu Xuan will be there. Not Ordinary isn’t so cocky that he’d make the world his enemy with just twenty thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders, right? I heard, [Legend] is already secretly creating a ten thousand man cavalry with Level 115 Saint tier mounts. Just based on that, Not Ordinary wouldn’t dare make a move.”

I replied, “Are you talking about the Earth’s Bane Oxen?”

Simple was slightly surprised, “Well now. You even know the details of this? As expected, [Zhan Long] has been keeping some spies in [Legend]. He he, that’s normal~”

I was a little speechless and hurriedly replied, “Not at all. I really haven’t sent out any spies. It’s just that while I was scouting out new maps, I accidentally found the Earth’s Bane Oxen. [Legend]’s Enchanted Painting and Lu Chun Yang had already brought people there to grind levels and so I guessed that it was the Earth’s Bane Oxen.”

Simple clenched her teeth, “Do you think you can tell me which map that was?”

I shook my head,” No, I must keep it a secret. I can’t tell you where the Earth’s

Bane Oxen are from, but I can tell you that the map is south of the Shen Ding Battlefield and east of the Fierce Wind Forest.”

Simple smiled, “Alright then. You really are a young man of your word....”

I laughed, “Listen to yourself, of course I have to be.”

“Alright then. Tomorrow morning at ten. Don’t miss it.”

“Yes!”

.....

I logged off to eat. We called over Qin Wen, who was about to sleep. We ate the hot pot to our heart’s content. However, I received grievous news at the same time.

“There’s a final tomorrow morning on Ancient Chinese Literature.” Wan Er calmly reminded.

I shuddered. The chopsticks in my hand nearly slipped out.

Wan Er grinned, “Looks like someone who hasn’t been listening in class is starting to panic?”

Dong Cheng, “Will that someone fail the course....”

I replied, “How about we don’t sleep tonight and help me learn the material....”

Wan Er raised her eyebrows, “Will you have time? Idiot....”

I made a fist, “If there isn’t enough time, then you’ll just have to kill me. I heard that retaking a class means that he has to pay for it. That person apparently is an incredibly inflexible man. He won’t even take bribes. He’s so poor that can’t afford rent and he is still single. If he has to pay, then that’ll be equivalent to killing him!”

Wan Er smiled, “Pig, I can help you pass...”

I was beside myself, “Really? You can help me pass? I will repay with my body....”

Qin Wen calmly said, “First of all, you’re gonna have to get permission from your father in law... and from what I see, uncle won’t be very satisfied with this

marriage....”

Wan Er scooped up a fish ball and gave it to me with a smile, “Don’t worry about it. I’ve already talked it over with sister Lan from the R&D Department. She’s going to send me a new undetectable communications device. Either way, you’ll definitely pass!”

“Oh? Alright then....”

Qin Wen looked a little disappointed, “You’re actually getting Lan to help. Wan Er, if your dad finds out, he’ll definitely fly into a rage.”

Wan Er smiled, “Dad has a great temper!”

Qin Wen was speechless.

I then replied, “We have a test tomorrow afternoon, but we have to log on tomorrow morning. There’s going to be a meeting. Its for creating some kind of alliance for the future country battles. All of the guildmasters of the top thirty guilds in Tian Ling City will be there. Wan Er, you and Qing Qian both have to go. Later, I’ll send a message to Qing Qian. Once we finish in the morning, then we’ll talk about the test in the afternoon.

“Ok got it!”

.....

We didn’t talk for the rest of the night.

I got up early in the morning the next day and logged on. I went to manage the resources in the Dragon’s Den and the send orders to Chi Yu Han to speed up the harvesting on the borders. Very soon, the city was going to meet the requirements of a Level 9 guild. Best case scenario, we’ll be able to reach Level 10 City before the country wars start. That way, I’ll have one more card up my sleeve.

At ten o’clock in the morning, I rode on my horse with Wan Er and Qing Qian by my side. The three of us passed through the Broken Bones Shrubbery and continued East. Not long after, we saw the flag of Tian Ling City waving in the wind in the midst of an abandoned field. We could already see some garrisoned troops from Tian Ling City. They had set up a tall stage in this wilderness. On it

were carved the large letters ——General Appointment!

General Appointment Stage, we've arrived!

This was the place where the Tian Ling City Emperor paid his respects. Right now, all of the top guildmasters had arrived here. This place, it probably has a similar meaning as that to it?

# Chapter 714 - The Crown Prince's Rule

There were several people standing on the General Appointment Stage. Ye Lai carried his axe over his shoulder and sat on the top level of the stage. He looked over at me and laughed, "Xiao Yao, you're here?"

I nodded and slid down my horse. After I put it away, I brought Wan Er and Qing Qian along with me and sat beside Ye Lai. Not far from us, Simple smiled to me and gave me a wave. Not Ordinary and You Yi disdainfully glared at me. It was no wonder. After all, their 16,000 Greedy Wolf Raiders had been killed by [Zhan Long] just South of the Sword Saint Forest. That was truly a deep seated vengeance. The only problem was that he was asking for it.

Fang Ge Que held a fan with frosty power in his hand. He elegantly folded it and stood on the stage. His robes fluttered in the wind around him. He held a regal and indifferent posture, as though he were an otherworldly expert. Enchanted Painting and Lu Chun Yang sat beside him, and waited for the meeting to begin.

Q-Sword, Sword Tears and Jian Tan sat at a corner of the stage, just across from Fang Ge Que. Neither party exchanged words.

Bai Li Ruo Feng and Dragon Emperor, the guildmasters of rival guilds still held a grudge against me. They coldly glanced at me and didn't say much. On the other hand, Yan Zhao Warrior brought Ya Ya and Windy Walker over with a smile, "Li Xiao Yao, I just watched the video of you PKing Smile's team this morning. You've truly outdone yourself, even killing Smile. You did incredibly well!"

I smiled, "That was luck. If we fought again, I'm afraid the ending would not be the same."

Yan Zhao smiled understandingly and said, "Actually, you just aren't willing to look down upon the dignity of experts, isn't that right? If you had started off with activating your 25 seconds of [Invincibility], and then used [Thundering Heavens], I'm afraid Smile, Apollo and Summer would have all kneeled!"

I was stunned, “Uncle, how do you know I have 25 seconds of [Invincibility]?”

Yan Zhao smiled, “I found out through research....”

Looks like the intel of each guild is incredibly accurate. I’ve only used my [Invincibility] skill twice, and neither of those times were very intense battles. Despite that, they’ve already figured it out.

Soon after, the clock hit ten. Over a hundred people had gathered at this stage. All of the guild master level players had all arrived.

Wang Ze Cheng rode into the area carrying his shield and stepped onto the stage and furrowed his brow, “What’s wrong? Isn’t it already time? Why haven’t we started yet?”

Fang Ge Que calmly replied, “We’re waiting for someone important.”

I was puzzled, “Who?”

Fang Ge Que smiled, “Li Xiao Yao, you were born in China, you should know that there’s a lot of rules here right? If the leader hasn’t arrived yet, how can we begin?”

I grinned, “So it was like that.. But who are we waiting for?”

“You’ll find out soon.”

Another twenty minutes passed. Ye Lai suddenly raised his battle axe and roared, “D\*mm\*t, I’m going to go grind levels. What f\*cking leader is this. I won’t take this kind of treatment while I’m playing a game!”

Misty Clouds also picked up his sword, “That’s right. I’m leaving!”

Right as the two had stepped off of the stage, a group of people suddenly appeared. The person leading them rode on a chestnut horse. He carried a long sword and looked to be around twenty years old. He was a Level 117 Swordsman, ID “Rumor”. He was the guildmaster of “Run like Fire”. I quickly went to look up the ranking of the guild. It was ranked 1237 in the Chinese Servers. What was going on? For an average guild like that, it shouldn’t have the right to join right?”

Fang Ge Que raised his eyebrow, “He’s arrived!”



This Rumor held his sword in hand and walked up onto the General Appointing Stage. He walked right up to the highest point and smiled, “My name is Liu Chan, ID, Rumor. Apologies for making all of the heroes of Tian Ling City wait. Ha ha I truly am sorry. Dad’s meeting went overtime.”

Ye Lai angrily retorted, “Just who the f\*ck are you?”

Rumor stiffened and said, “That... Guildmaster Yan Zhao, help introduce me...”

Yan Zhao coughed and didn’t say anything.

Of the players that Rumor brought along with him, a Level 70 knight walked over. He looked to be around 45 years old. His ID was “Strategy” and had a very elegant aura. However... there was something very bureaucratic about him. He split the crowds and walked up to the stage, “Good morning ladies and gentleman, I am Liu Gong, one of the members of the China Virtual Board. If you don’t believe me, then you can look it up.”

Wan Er looked down and quickly looked him up. A sliver of shock raced through her eyes, “Liu Gong, he’s the Head of the China Virtual Board. He’s a high level official...”

I chuckled, “We can’t offend someone like that. Otherwise you’ll be forced to wear small shoes throughout the game, slowly dying of pain.”

Wan Er giggled, “Yes, we know!”

Yan Zhao coughed and loudly said, “Old Liu Gong, get to the point. Everyone’s been waiting for a long time. Looks like the impatient ones like Ye Lai can’t wait any longer.”

Liu Gong laughed and warmly said, “Yes, we were the ones that arrived late. I’m truly sorry. Then let me get to it.”

I cleared his throat. It was as though we were about to listen to a speech from a politician. He then said, “The China Virtual Board was founded in 2015. Our main goal is to govern the Internet. Destiny is one of our most important priorities. As everyone knows, we have grown into the year 2017, and the competitions that we can attend are not limited to sports any longer. One of our more important jobs is organizing the Virtual Competitions. And so, for the

sake of the nation's honor and for the sake of our mission, we have made Destiny the Chinese Server Battles HQ. We cannot let down the millions of gamer fans."

He coughed a few times and then continued, "Today, I have invited everyone here so that we may create an alliance. Once the country battles begin, we cannot fight amongst each other any longer and we must face our spear points to the enemy outside. Each guildmaster here is a warrior of Tian Ling City. You are the talent and pride of Tian Ling City. I, Liu Gong, am just a newbie in this game, and already I feel respect and esteem for everyone's strength. Without dragging on, I'll get to the point. Today, I am here for one thing, everyone's vote and support to create an alliance in the Chinese virtual world. Everyone here in favor of this, please raise your hand."

Everyone hesitated for a moment. Liu Gong was the first to raise his hand. Rumor was the second.

Yan Zhao Warrior and Mu Xuan both raised their hands. After all, this wasn't a bad thing.

I thought about it for a moment and raised my own hand.

Soon after, everyone else also raised their hand. It was practically a unanimous vote.

Liu Gong smiled and heartily said, "Thank you everyone for your support. Next, let us pick out the general for the China Battles. Later on in the virtual battles, he will be the one to determine the overall strategy. Every guild that joins this alliance must listen to his every command. This is the only way that the Chinese Servers' strength will grow explosively. Come, let's nominate some people!"

Everyone all listed some names. Finally, the top five names were Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han, Mu Xuan, and I. They were all guildmasters of the large guilds.

Liu Gong continued, "Today, I will bear witness. Everyone vote!"

I rubbed my nose, "Do I need to campaign for votes?"

Wan Er smiled, "Do you really want to become the head of the China Server

Battles?”

I shook my head, “Nope.”

“Then don’t....”

Not far from us, Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han were both campaigning for votes. Fang Ge Que’s subordinate, Enchanted Painting and Lu Chun Yang were both talking about something. Soon after, they each held a vote. Liu Gong himself collected all of the ballots. After a few minutes, he waved his hand over it and the results appeared before everyone——

Fang Ge Que had the absolute upper hand. What I had not expected was that I actually got 16 ballots. That wasn’t bad. Maybe, when [Zhan Long] beat the Greedy Wolf Raiders, we had actually increased our reputation quite a bit? And so all of the medium level guilds had voted for me. That should be why....

Liu Gong smiled at the results, “Looks like the mage Fang Ge Que is truly the king in everyone’s hearts. Right now, I will announce that Fang Ge Que will be the commanding general of the Chinese Servers.”

As he said that, Liu Gong turned around to looked at Rumor, “Besides that, The Chinese Virtual Board’s representative will be Rumor. The guild he leads, Run Like Fire will provide support in the Chinese Battlefields. He will also be our spokesperson and will take on the position as deputy in command. Furthermore, he will represent our voice. I hope that everyone here will support him. This kid is still inexperienced. Everyone here is among the cream of the crop in Tian Ling City and so I hope you will look after him~~”

Ye Lai raised his battle axe and smiled, “Brother Liu Tong, this Liu Chan, who is he to you?”

Liu Gong stiffened and smiled, “He’s my nephew.”

Ye Lai was a very stubborn person and he chuckled, “Oh, so it was like that. You’ve named Fang Ge Que as the commander in chief of the China Battles, and then you set him up with a deputy commander. This means that if Fang Ge Que, the commander, dies in battle, then you’ll send out your crown prince to lead the troops?”

My heart nearly jumped out of my throat. Ye Lai that b\*st\*rd actually talked

without thinking. He's gonna die. He's gonna die....

Liu Gong's face twitched. He then covered some of his embarrassment, but candidly said, "That was never my intention. It's just that our board needs some kind of spokesperson. As long as we have a voice in the matters, we won't go on the wrong path in this new type of game, isn't that right?"

Ye Lai laughed, "Is it possible for a type of game to go down the wrong path? I find this funny. You all want to interfere with our matters. What the f\*ck does it matter to you what we players do in our free time?"

Li Gong was stunned and sternly replied, "Ye Lai, what are you saying?"

I walked up and grabbed Ye Lai's shoulder, "Shut up!"

I then looked towards Liu Gong and smiled, "Ye Lai is a rather hot tempered person. I hope that Mr. Liu won't take it to heart. [Zhan Long] and [Judgement] have already created an alliance, and we will absolutely follow Fang Ge Que's orders. Please, do not worry about that!"

Liu Gong rubbed his nose, "Seeing as guildmaster Xiao Yao Zi Zai said that, then it's fine. Everyone work together and work hard!"

I have cleverly chosen my words specifically for this purpose. [Zhan Long] and [Judgement] may follow the orders of Fang Ge Que, but that did not obligate us to follow the orders of Rumor.

# Chapter 715 - Drunken Spear's Provocation

The meeting adjourned. Liu Gong and Rumor took their Run like Fire players and galloped into the distance. Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han and the others hadn't left yet. I leapt onto my horse and was beginning to leave. Fang Ge Que called out to me and said, "Xiao Yao, don't leave just yet!"

"Yes?" I looked back. Fang Ge Que was generally a very reserved man, and rarely initiated a conversation with people.

With his fan in hand, Fang Ge Que strode over and said, "Let's add each other as friends. In the future when the country battles open up, it'll make communication much easier. I know that this alliance is just for appearances. Later on, when the battles begin, each guild will fight for their own. But, it's good having allies to defend and fight alongside. At least we'll have some sort of treaty that guarantees there won't be anything like internal fighting within the Chinese Server."

I had the same idea, "That's right. However, critical factors are constantly changing in this time. If you want to use the same hierarchy in the military to manage the players it won't be very likely to happen. And so, Head Liu Gong's initial idea started off good. The final decision, on the other hand wasn't necessarily very good."

Fang Ge Que nodded with a smile, "Yes, I noted that as well. And so, while everyone is here, how about we strategize the future battle zones?"

Ye Lai interrupted, "Why are we considering our defenses before we even attack?"

A light seemed to flash in Fang Ge Que's eyes. In a steady voice, he calmly replied, "Military men, before they fight, must always consider defeat. Furthermore, Moon City is already appearing on the Chinese Server maps. This is something that Xiao Yao understands the most. West of Tian Ling City is Moon City, while Flame Cloud City is to our East. It won't be possible for us to hold our middle ground. Once the country battles activate, strong enemies will invade our country. My point is, let's not initiate the attack. If we attack Moon

City, or Flame Cloud City we will have to take the chance to invade and vice versa. And so, we must defend against the first wave of attacks and then take the chance to act. Whether or not we're fighting the offensive or defensive, that is something we'll discuss when the time comes."

Mu Xuan walked over with her staff, "I agree with Fang Ge Que's logic. That seems like the better strategy. However, how do you plan on setting up troops?"

Fang Ge Que took a deep breath and said, "These days, I've been poring over the Tian Ling City Maps. War God River is a natural barrier for us. War God City will slow down the path between Tian Ling City and Moon City. The water flow is very strong and so the only way to cross is in large numbers over the Bridge of Fate. Otherwise, they must build their own war boats. But that doesn't seem very possible. Furthermore, it would waste too much of their time. And so, we need a strong force to guard the Bridge of Fate."

As he said that, Fang Ge Que looked over at me.

I leapt onto my horse and smiled, "I know, leave the bridge to [Zhan Long]."

Fang Ge Que nodded, "Yup. Besides [Zhan Long], the other Ba Huang City central forces should also shift their defenses towards the maps near the Bridge of Fate. The Fierce Wind Forest and God Cauldron Battlefield maps are all over there. However, everyone should keep to the river. Do not pass through the Broken Blade Canyon. That map is too fierce. A few days ago, a hundred man team from [Legend] had passed through there and was instantly annihilated. There is no need to take that risk. In my eyes, that is a forbidden zone."

Looks like Fang Ge Que does not know the thirty seven rule in Broken Blade Canyon. That's fine too, this way [Zhan Long] can hold the Broken Blade Canyon for a little while longer and continue mining materials for creating the strongest weapons and equipment.

"Shua!"

Fang Ge Que reached out and waved his hand, and revealed a large map of Tian Ling City. He pointed at it and said, "The War God River snakes around Tian Ling City. There aren't any bridges east of the War God River, however players can reach Heaven's Question Peak and arrive at the source of the War God

River from there. They can then pass over the river that way and continue moving east. The guilds that train in Jiu Li City and Fan Shu City should start moving their training grounds east. That way we can defend against any invasions from the Flame Cloud City.”

After he said that, Fang Ge Que looked into the crowd and said, “One last thing. Do not try and send players into the War God River. The waves are very strong and the current undercurrent isn’t something a person can swim against. Furthermore, the wind elves will get struck by the flying wind blades above the water. If you go and try out the difficulty of the War God River, all you will be doing is paying the price of a level. I have already personally tried it out.”

Simple grinned, “It can’t be. The legendary Fang Ge Que was actually drowned to death in the War God River?”

Jian Feng Han smiled as well, “You aren’t joking with us are you?”

Fang Ge Que wryly smiled, “Not at all everyone. It’s all true. Just two days ago, I opened up my [Black Tortoise Shield] and attempted to wade through the depths of the War God River. However, I had only made it a third of the way through before my shield had broken. The current of the water deals a mortal blow to players. I had brought two other high level wind elves along with me, and both had been draw into the water. Thankfully, when you’re killed by natural elements, there’s no equipment drops. Otherwise, we wouldn’t have even been able to fish back our equipments.”

Ye Lai added, “Then, I’ll have my players in [Judgement] head towards the Heaven’s Question Peak.”

Fang Ge Que nodded, “On the banks of the War God River, there’s maps like Fire Crystal Basin and Demon Giant Bamboo Forest. Those are great places to grind levels. In addition, the Tian Ling City resources are far more than enough for us to use. Everyone work hard and grind your levels. From now on, let’s try and minimize the internal battles and focus our vengenance on Moon City and Flame Cloud City’s attacks!”

“Ok. No internal fighting is the best scenario!” Soaring Dragon nodded.

Beside him, Not Ordinary coldly laughed, “I’m afraid some people, once they have an internal battle, are destined to lose, isn’t that right?”

Soaring Dragon glared back at him, “Guildmaster Not Ordinary, what a cocky tone. The Greedy Wolf Raiders are no longer unrivaled, isn’t that right? Didn’t they get completely annihilated by [Zhan Long] in the Sword Saint Forest!”

Not Ordinary’s expression was clearly becoming increasingly ugly, “That was only because the Greedy Wolf Raiders had underestimated their enemy. If we had another round, do you think we would have the same result? Besides, the Raiders had lost to the hands of [Zhan Long], not to [Flying Dragon]. Look at you trying to act all high and might. If you say another word, careful of your training grounds!”

“You!” Against a threat like that, Soaring Dragon calmed down and said, “Not Ordinary, aren’t you going too far?”

You Yi coldly retorted, “So what if we bully [Flying Dragon]. What are you going to do about it?”

Behind Flying Dragon, Drunken Spear raised his halberd and leapt onto his horse. He pointed towards the eastern border of the forest and smiled, “Not Ordinary, You Yi, if you have the balls, why don’t we try and train over there? I’m not going to bully you guys. Both of you, come at me at the same time. Let’s see if I can kill you both at once.”

Not that this was a duel between guildmaster level players, Not Ordinary and You Yi both grew cautious. Drunken Spear had already shifted into twentieth place on CBN Battlenet Rankings. On top of that, the fact that a third rate guild like [Flying Dragon] could reach this level goes to show his own battle power. Even if Not Ordinary and You Yi fought together, they wouldn’t necessarily be his rival.

You Yi grunted, “A man would not flaunt his skills!”

Drunken Spear smiled and turned his horse around. He rested his halberd on the grass and said, “Alright then. Give me half a month. If you guys dare come at us again, I, Drunken Spear will welcome the attack of your Greedy Wolf Raiders and see if it will end up like last time!”

Not Ordinary nodded, “Seeing as vice guildmaster Drunken Spear is inviting us, then don’t blame me for [Thousand Burial] defying orders and entering this internal battle.



Fang Ge Que looked a little annoyed. All of the guildmasters of Tian Ling City had very strong personalities. Who would actually avoid an internal battle? PKing in a game was where the true fun was. These people had spent quite a bit of money on this game after all....”

.....

Gripping his fan, Fang Ge Que quietly warned, “Everyone, please consider your situations. Do not bring the level of your guilds too low. During the guild battle, I don’t want to see twenty thousand Level 99 Greedy Wolf Raiders with incomplete equipments try and charge against the Moon City formation. You’ll make us into a joke!”

The Greedy Wolf Raiders had been continuously fighting the Tian Ling City players to raise their own strength, a truth that everyone understood. Fang Ge Que was biding his time, but that didn’t mean he didn’t have prejudices against the Greedy Wolf Raiders. But, there was no point in bringing those up right now. [Legend] didn’t care much for the wolf troop strategy that the Brigade used. Building one’s own strength on the sacrifice of someone else’s growth, that was completely against the virtues of a game.

When I thought of this, I realized that my ideas were a bit soft hearted. I chuckled to myself and didn’t say anything.

Rather, Not Ordinary seemed to hold a lot of respect for Fang ge Que as he said, “I know, the Greedy Wolf Raiders will act appropriately. We will only attack people who provoke us. Do not worry commander!”

Fang Ge Que didn’t say anything and left with Enchanted Painting and Lu Chun Yang.

Wan Er smiled, “Pig, today at noon, the CBN Battlenet Rankings will refresh. Be patient and wait. After it refreshes, let’s go out to eat and then prepare for this afternoon’s test!”

“Got it!”

.....

[Zhan Long]’s grinding center had already begun moving towards the Bridge of Fate in Tian Ling City and so we decided to head straight there. On the way,

we passed through the Broken Blade Canyon, and found out the last time that the Killer Gale had blown through from Li Mu. We then did some calculations and finally made our way through the canyon.

“Why does Drunken Spear think that he will be able to hold off the Greedy Wolf Raiders by himself?”

Wan Er blinked a few times and said thoughtfully, “There’s already over twenty thousand of the Greedy Wolf Raiders now....”

I shook my head, “Who knows...”

Qing Qian added, “Based on my intel, lately Drunken Spear has been grinding levels on Mount Zhi Wu. He discovered a type of mount called “Black Cliff”, a Level 110 Valkyrie Tier Mount. If everything goes as expected, that should be what he was talking about. Plus, I also heard that Drunken Spear has already petitioned to Flying Dragon, asking for 7 million RMB in funds. He’s probably creating some sort of cavalry?”

I was stunned, “If Drunken Spear really worked on this, I’m afraid that yet another cavalry will rise up in Tian Ling City.”

Wan Er smiled, “That seems to be the trend as of late...”

Qing Qian asked, “Brother Xiao Yao, where are we going to grind levels?”

I looked towards Moon City and took a deep breath, “We’re [Zhan Long]’s core strength. How about we check out the maps west of the Bridge of Fate. Then... let’s replenish our potions and bring a dozen man team. Let’s go visit Moon City!”

“What? Moon City!?”

Qing Qian gaped. She didn’t seem to expect that I would make a decision like that.

# Chapter 716 - Top Bow Maker

“Are we actually going to Moon City?” Qing Qian worriedly asked.

“Yup.”

I replied, “If Smile, Apollo and the others have already stepped onto Tian Ling City grounds, then there’s no reason we can’t go over and check it out. At least we’ll get a better understanding of the situation there. Once battle breaks out, then we’ll be able to deal a counterattack to them at any time. [Zhan Long] will become a shield and a sword.”

Qing Qian grinned, “Yup, whatever Brother Xiao Yao says. As long as you give the command, we will go out into bloody battle!”

“Ok....”

.....

Not long after, we reached the Bridge of Fate. It was already close to eleven o’ clock. There were a dozen [Zhan Long] players guarding the Bridge of Fate. They didn’t let any players go past the bridge. Once they saw our party, they all greeted us with a smile, “Hi Guildmaster, Vice Guildmasters!”

I nodded in acknowledgement and crossed the bridge.

Li Mu sent a message. Three thousand of our players were grinding levels in the Spirits of No Return Valley. New Level 2 Hybrid Demon Grave Diggers had spawned in the map, giving plenty of experience and drops. It was a great place for high level players to train.

Seeing as so many people had come, there was no longer any need for us to head over there.

At that moment, I heard a “Di!” A message had arrived from Wolf, “Brother Xiao Yao, where are you?”

“Bridge of Fate, what’s up?”

“Oh, then wait for a small moment. I’m bringing some people over. I have some important matters to discuss!”

“Ok!”

.....

Around ten minutes later, a horse galloped towards the eastern banks of the Bridge. It was Matcha’s white war horse, Moonlight of a Thousand Leagues. Wolf jogged beside her, alongside a few others.

When the group of people stopped before us, I asked, “Wolf, Matcha, what’s up?”

Wolf walked over and pulled out a longbow from his bag. It was a dark red orange shade, “Brother Xiao Yao, check it out!”

I took it in my hand and was pleasantly surprised. This bow’s stats are pretty good——

[Dragon Shadow’s Bow] (Saint Tier)

Attack: 2770 - 3300

Agility: +75

Stamina: +72

Strength: +70

Additional: Increases the user’s long range physical damage by 40%

Additional: Increases the user’s accuracy by 50%

Special: [Dragon’s Shadow], There’s a 5% chance of this effect appearing, dealing three times the damage on the target

Required Level: 115

Creator: Dream of a Thousand Cities

.....

Looking at the stats of the longbow, my voice slightly cracked, “This... this was created by a player? The stats are incredible... d\*mn, it actually has such a strong attack power. Furthermore, it has that [Dragon’s Shadow] effect. If controlled well, an archer could use [Rising Dragon Shot] right after the [Dragon’s Shadow] effect activates. That attack output will be terrifying!

Wolf excitedly nodded with a smile, “Even Brother Xiao Yao you think it’s great too. That must mean there’s no problem. This bow was made by the beautiful Dream of a Thousand Cities. She’s currently the number one bow maker in [Zhan Long]. Using the same materials, her chances of making OP weapons is at least two times higher than the average person. The bow I just showed you is what she normally produces. The strongest [Dragon’s Shadow Bow] has an attack of 3824 and 9% chance of [Dragon’s Shadow]. I think it’s the one that she’s using right now....”

Dream of a Thousand Cities walked over from behind Wolf and smiled, “Guildmaster, do you want to inspect this rare OP Dragon Shadow bow?”

I accepted her bow and glanced at it. I was stunned, “It’s truly amazing!”

Wolf added, “The Dragon’s Shadow Bow is considered a Level 11 Bow creation product. Now that we’ve occupied the Level 11 mines behind the Broken Blade Canyon, making it isn’t a problem and we can create batches of these bows. Every bow sells for around 100G. If Brother Xiao Yao gives us permission, I’ll have Fox start mass producing them.”

I nodded, “Yea, that sounds fine. Just use the funds from Dragon’s Den. I’ve already handed control of the Treasury to Fox.”

Wolf laughed, “Fox was originally an accountant, and he’s very reliable. He carefully records every expense and revenue. Of course, you’ve seen all this. That’s right, Brother Xiao Yao, the mines of Broken Blade Canyon have given us a great helping hand. We now have the top Axe Makers, Gun Makers, Staff Makers, and Armor Smiths. As long as we’re willing to invest, then we’ll have around 20% more godly weapons than the other guilds of Tian Ling City. However, we don’t have any high level Sword Makers in the guild. The blueprints for making swords are just too rare. At the moment, the highest level Sword Smith that [Zhan Long] has is Level 10. He can just make some Valkyrie Tier equipments, nothing in demand.”

I furrowed my brow and said, “That’s something we can’t push. We’ll just have to work hard. As for mass producing equipments, you and Fox can handle the matter. There’s no need to ask for my permission for everything. I need to focus my thoughts on the upcoming battles.”

“Ok. Then Brother Xiao Yao, we’ll head out!”

“Alright!”

.....

I stepped off of the Bridge of Fate with furrowed brows. I was still thinking about the players making equipments.

Wan Er looked into my face. She seemed to have guessed my thoughts and smiled, “Pig, you’re thinking about how blacksmiths are the classes that [Zhan Long] needs the most, isn’t that right?”

I didn’t deny it and said, “The Greedy Wolf Raiders are running amuck in the world, Wan Er, you’ve seen it. Over half of the Raiders are swordsmen. [Skysaker Slash], [Sword Break], and [Flying Sword] aren’t knight or monk skills. Most of [Zhan Long]’s Steel Blade Horsemen are also swordsmen. Swords are the king of all weapons. [Zhan Long] really does need a few high level swordsmiths....”

Wan Er smiled, “If I’m not wrong, you already have someone in mind, isn’t that right?”

I couldn’t help but chuckle, “Yup. [Epic]’s Palace Decree and Palace Spirit. Those two are the best blacksmiths I’ve ever met. They are both heirs to Long Quan County’s Swordsmithing legacy. In the real world, they are both masters in creating swords and in the game they are unrivaled. It’s just they’re both very willful and Palace Decree is extremely loyal. After he entered [Epic], he wasn’t willing to join any other guild. I’ve mentioned it to him, but I was turned down. The only other method would be.....”

Wan ER softly smiled, “Unless you direct some divisions and alliances to go and annihilate [Epic] and kill the [Epic] guildmaster Hermit, and disband the guild, then Palace Decree and Palace Spirit will be able to come join [Zhan Long]?”

I laughed bitterly, “Yup. But if I do that, then there’s no difference between me and people like Not Ordinary and Soaring Dragon. Let’s just see what fate has planned. If this is really fate, then Palace Decree and Palace Spirit will join [Zhan Long]. Having them is my fortune, not my fate.”

Wan Er nodded, “How about I add Palace Deree as a friend so that we can maintain a relationship. Maybe one day he’ll want to switch guilds and I’ll be the first he contacts. How does that sound?”

“Ok, go do that!”

Alright!”

.....

It was about to hit noon and left little time left to grind levels. And so, the three of us wandered around the Bridge of Fate and scouted out the other maps, as we waited for the clock to strike noon. Once it did, I opened up the Destiny Forums. As expected, the battlenet rankings had drastically changed. They’ve probably recalculated and accumulated all of the points from the PKing and the wilderness battles. This was the first time I entered the top ten in the Chinese Server!

Fang Ge Que

Q-Sword

Little Demon

Jian Feng Han

Bai Li Ruo Feng

Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Cang Tong

Ye Lai

Mu Xuan

Simple

The Seventh Tang

Cang Yue

Lu Chun Yang

Yan Zhao Warrior

Yue Qing Qian

Death's Contract

General Li Mu

Drunken Spear

Misty Cloud

General Wang Jian

Huh?!

The rankings had even made me jump a little. Just based off of this one Hero's Wings Tournament, my ranking had actually risen this much. I went from twelfth place to sixth place. I was even higher than Wan Er!

On top of that, Drunken Spear and General Wang Jian were both new players on the rankings. They had replaced Wild Beauty and Swift Thunder. The conflicts in Destiny were just too intense. If you don't keep moving forward, then you end up being pushed back. Those who improve the slowest end up getting pushed to last place!

Beside me, Qing Qian smiled, "Congratulations Brother Xiao Yao, you've finally entered the top ten!"

I smiled back, "Thank you. But the rankings doesn't mean more food to eat. Plus the shot hits the bird that pokes its head out, I hope I'm not rising up too quickly...."

Wan Er grinned, "Wow, you're acting modest even when you've gained so much. Here, how about I give you a beating!"

I laughed, "Alright alright, let's log off everyone and prepare to eat. At the same time, let me see just what battle preparations you've made for me...."

"Ok!"

After we logged off, we decided to eat our lunch in the villa.

When I walked out of my room and arrived in the dining hall, Wan Er was holding two small boxes in her hands. She handed one to me and smiled, "Well, come here. This is the weapon you will be bringing into battle this afternoon..."

I was a little surprised. I opened up the box, only to see black framed glasses.



Unsure of what to do, I put them on. These glasses didn't have any effects, and there didn't seem to be anything special about them. Dong Cheng tilted her head and looked at me. Her eyes seemed to light up as she said, "Wu, this b\*st\*rd is so handsome even when he's wearing glasses, I'm finished...."

I reached out and sat her down on the sofa. I then looked over at Wan Er and said, "There doesn't seem to be anything special about these right?"

Wan Er smiled, "There's a little button at the center of the frame. Try pressing it."

"Oh?"

I pressed the button and a bright blue screen suddenly appeared before me. Wan Er then activated her own glasses and then turned towards the window. A strange thing happened just then, a clear image of the window appeared before me from Wan Er's perspective. No wonder. So these glasses actually had a special use like this. This means that, I can see Wan Er's test?

"So, are you still worried about the test this afternoon?" Wan Er turned around and smiled to me.

I gripped my fist and said, "I'll get A's in every class, I'm invincible now! Only, Wan Er, you didn't pay attention to many of the classes either, are you sure you'll pass?"

Wan Er stiffened and said, "That.... We'll see how it goes....."

# Chapter 717 - I Won't Miss You

Afternoon.

Liu Hua University Freshman Tests. Even when I was against Artificial Humans like You Yi, I managed to stay calm. But sitting here already gave me cold sweat and tremors. I looked at the questions on the test, but all I could do was get more and more light headed. I couldn't understand a single bit of it. For example, the first question was to indicate the sentence structures of the example, whether it was an object sentence, an anastrophe or a judgement—

I, speech cutter.

That and what, pursue.

What promise is not weaving oneself.

.....

The meaning of these sentences.... I could recognize every word, but when they were put together, I couldn't make any of the meanings out. And so, I gripped my pen and made a check beside the question while I slowly deduced whether or not they were apostrophes or judgment sentences. In the end, while I was writing out the answers, Wan Er softly shook her head and smiled, "Sigh, such a big idiot..."

Looks like she can also see the answers to my questions. And so, I reached out and touched the button on my glasses. Wan Er's answers immediately appeared before my eyes. I quickly revised my answers. I then looked to my left. One of the boys in our class was also filling out the sheet. He had a bottle of green tea on his desk. Printed on the transparent label were the answers. Yup, compared to us, that kid's cheating game is too weak!

.....

After a long period of time, finally, Wan Er had finished writing. She patted her hands and smiled to me. I had also finished copying...

Not long after, we turned in our tests. I took a deep breath. Thankfully I don't

have to retake the class. I hated troublesome things like that. Dong Cheng gracefully skipped over after we turned in the test and smiled, “How was it?”

Wan Er replied, “Looks like this pig head can pass....’

Dong Cheng grinned, “Brother Xiao Yao, don’t you think it's a little shameful that you can’t learn this stuff?”

I calmly said, “There are people who major in these techniques. You guys are majoring in the way that ancients talked, I on the other hand specialize in the techniques they used to battle. If we’re talking about the six types of art in the ancient types, Ceremony, Music, Archery, Government, and Math, then look at me, I’m very respectful to others, have a polite and modest personality, so I have the ceremony down. As for music, I believe that my skills are even higher than yours, Dong Cheng. Archery, I’m a well known shooter in the military. And then government, whether it’s riding a horse or driving a car, I’m skilled at both. Plus, I’m very fast at typing. And math, I’m very quick at counting my money...”

Dong Cheng stiffened and gaped, “Then it looks like you really are a man of many skills....”

Wan Er stifled a laugh, “Alright alright, if we’re talking about your ability to bullsh\*t, then nobody can beat Li Xiao Yao. If you do badly on the test then you do badly, there’s no need to find so many excuses. Either way, you made it through today’s test. You’re treating us to a meal today.”

I patted my chest, “Yup. After this, we’ll beat the next test and tonight I’ll take you both out to dinner. Anything you want. Lately, I have some money!”

“Alright....”

.....

The fact that I have money wasn’t false. As the levels of the players increased, Dragon’s Den and National Beauty have had quite a bit of revenue growth. Even though the game operators would not give any chance to make money to the players, the Dragon’s Den and National Beauty gained revenues that were completely within the rules. There were three main ways the Destiny Operations earned money. The first was through selling gaming helmets, the second was through selling game cards, and the third was through service

charges. The money from that many players, every hour everybody uses their card is 1RMB. With all of the Chinese Server Players, that's over 1 million RMB. Just in a single day they would get over 24 million RMB. And so, the Destiny Operations was not lacking in funds. There was no need for them to fight over every single penny with the players.

Very soon, we made it through the second round of tests. This time, Wan Er lent her glasses to Dong Cheng and I copied off of her test. The strategy changed somewhat but it shouldn't affect the score much. The difference between Language and Math tests were that Language had multiple different answers. As long as the content was correct, the teacher wouldn't mark anything against you. If he really thinks there was something wrong with the test that only means that his own academia is very low.

All of the teachers in Liu Hua University were rather old. Their objective was —whatever we couldn't understand was extremely good. And so we didn't have to worry about whether or not we pass. As long as what we wrote was completely out there, then we'll get credit for it. Of course, answers that were completely unorthodox might get extremely high points. After all, who would understand it!

.....

After the test, the two beautiful girls and I walked out of the classroom. I suddenly heard hasty footsteps coming towards us. Tang Qi had caught up to us, and he brought someone with him. Tang Gu was right behind him and he shouted, "Little Li!"

I turned around with a smile, "Glasses Bro, wat's up?"

Tang Gu pushed up his glasses and said, "There's two more tests before the finals are over. After that, there's nearly forty days of winter break. I might head over to Szechuan, so there will be forty days before we can meet again."

I replied calmly, "So we can't meet, that's fine. Not like I'll miss you."

Tang Gu nearly spat out blood from that stab, "You ruthless kid, it's almost winter break. How about we all eat together? Think of it as classmates getting together for dinner. We can do it tonight! The class president talked it over with me and it seems that everyone is in agreement. All that's missing are you, Wan

Er and Dong Cheng.”

When I heard that, I said, “Oh, I see. What time?”

“Tonight at seven. We’ll be meeting at the Misty Cloud Restaurant, 2nd Suite. It’s just outside the school. You’ll bring the two beauties too right?”

I looked over at Wan Er to get her permission, “Wan Er, do you want to go?”

Wan Er sweetly smiled, “I don’t care. I’ll just accompany you. If you don’t go, then I won’t.”

I looked over at Tang Gu and nodded, “Alright then. I don’t have to spend any money right?”

“No need. The class president is paying for 50% of the cost, the rest will be covered by the school.”

“Ok!”

Dong Cheng stomped her foot, “sshle, why didn’t you ask for my opinion. Just what is the meaning of my existence to you?!”

Wan Er laughed, “Alright alright now. You’re getting free food, why are you complaining....”

.....

And so, we set aside our leveling and prepared to set out together. We were getting together for a class reunion. Even though Wan Er and Dong Cheng weren’t very familiar with the other classmates, there was no need really to get dressed up. But, when the two girls walked out of the house, I nearly jumped in surprise. The two were already very beautiful girls, but once they put on high class clothing, they looked even more like goddesses. Tang Qi walked out of the door and saw Wan Er and Dong Cheng. He was stupefied for a few seconds. Finally he rubbed his nose with a smile.

Dong Cheng glared at Tang Qi, “What are you smiling about?”

Tang Qi rubbed his nose, “Little miss is really pretty....”

Dong Cheng crooned, “Unfortunately, I already have someone I like and it’s not you...”

A sliver of disappointment appeared in his eyes but he quickly recovered and smiled, “No matter, I’ll still be able to admire the sight. Maybe one day you’ll realize that this admiring gaze is much better than one which hopes to dominate you.”

Dong Cheng looked over at me, “Brother Xiao Yao, he’s taunting you. Go beat him up!”

I helped Wan Er button up her jacket and then smiled to Dong Cheng, “Don’t try to instigate a fight between Tang Qi and I, I only look at you with admiration, and no lust....”

Dong Cheng bit her lip, “But the gaze which I cast to you is full of lust, then what?”

I tilted my head to Wan Er, “Wan Er, beat her up....”

Wan Er grinned, “Alright now, stop playing around. Let’s go to the dinner.”

“Ok!”

.....

When we reached the Misty Cloud restaurant, the sky was already dark. Several luxury brand cars were parked below the restaurant. In our class, there were quite a few students who came from rich families. People like Tang Gu were considered poor in their eyes. As for me, I was completely penniless. I was a plebeian before these people.

The A4 slowly came to a stop below the restaurant. We were greeted by the vice president of the class, Pan Jia Jia. She was a very pretty female classmate. She was ranked eleventh in the most beautiful girls in class. This ranking was determined on the school’s forums. Wan Er and Dong Cheng were ranked in the top three. While Pan Jia Jia had fairly good looks and a nice background, with the money to dress herself up, there were still limits to her natural endowments. And so, she couldn’t enter the top ten, putting her in eleventh place. And so, she was considered the pitiful eleventh most beautiful girl.

When the A4 stopped, Pan Jia Jia’s eyes could barely hold her disdain. She was probably thinking that my car wasn’t high quality enough. That was to be expected over. The two cars beside me were much better, one was a Porsche

911 while the other was a Audi R8. Just the price of those cars was enough to overshadow my, one month uncleaned, snow white turning gray, A4.

However, once I opened up the door, and the two girls stepped off, the disdain in Pan Jia Jia's eyes disappeared immediately. She knew Wan Er's background, the strength of the Tian Jin Corporation that was behind her. This Tian Jin Corporation's little princess had no need to arrive in a fancy car, otherwise she would've completely beaten every rich kid in this school. Not just Wan Er, even Dong Cheng had the ability to instantly beat them down with her wealth.

"Li Xiao Yao, Wan Er, and Dong Cheng, you've all arrived! Come in! We're all in Suite No. 2!" Pan Jia Jia smiled.

I smiled back and nodded, "Thank you vice president. Then we'll head in first?"

"Go ahead!"

We weren't too familiar so we didn't exchange many words. After we walked in, we saw many familiar faces, but we only saw them in class. We weren't very close with the rest of the class.

There were seven tables total in the Suite No. 2 with ten people seated at each. We took up the fourth one. I brought the two girls along with Tang Qi to sit at a table on the very edge. We then talked while waiting for the food to arrive.

Not long after, everyone had arrived. The class president gave a short speech. Actually, the president, Zhang Jie would count as a tall, rich and handsome. His dad was the CEO of some kind of construction materials company. On top of that, he was relatively tall and handsome. He tried to stir up everyone's emotions now that we were all leaving each other for the long winter break, but unfortunately it was of little effect. Wan Er, Dong Cheng and I were going to live together over the winter break, so there wasn't any worries about not seeing each other.

After a while later, the delicious dishes arrived.

I didn't drink anything and could only think of those maps that were near the

Bridge of Fate in Destiny. The Spirit of no Return Valley had already been opened up, but Blood Demon Forest and the Great Desert were both complete mysteries to us. The monsters were very high level. Li Mu and Wang Jian didn't order anyone to try the maps. They were all waiting for us to scout it out.

After the dinner, quite a few of our classmates were extremely drunk. Some were crying, some were laughing while another few were ruefully sighing. The youngsters were getting in the mood while the young girls were longing for love. Pan Jia Jia was so drunk she could barely stay awake. She just kept smiling while she leaned against Zhang Jie's lap. In the end, they rented out a room in the hotel above the restaurant. Looks like there's a budding romance between them. Or... or it's a one night stand. Who knows!



# Chapter 718 - Blood Demon Forest

That evening at ten we dispersed from the party and drove home. Since practically everyone sitting at our table was a Destiny player, we had a lot to talk about. Wan Er and Dong Cheng happily sat in the back of the car, their faces flush from the alcohol. They were discussing the differences between the Battle Reflux Style and the Pulse Break Method. Dong Cheng hated the Pulse Break Method the most. Once a Pulse Break expert got near her, that meant instant KO for a mage. Wan Er was showing how the Pulse Break Method's interruption effect was too powerful. It practically meant an instant win in solo battles.

Seeing how excited the two girls were, I guessed that they weren't going to sleep any time soon. And so, I suggested that we log on and start grinding levels. The two girls happily agreed.

"Shua!"

When we logged on, we saw that Darling Duck and Qing Qian were both online. We immediately formed the team. All five of us were near the Bridge of Fate. We immediately set out, and headed straight towards the Blood Demon Forest!

Our five man team continued west along the border of the Spirit of No Return Valley. Soon after we continued forward, we met a barbarian that carried a kitchen knife and cut everyone down. It was a Level 130 Titan Tier monster!

The barbarian grew hair all over his body, as though he hadn't evolved. When he noticed us, he charged straight over and leapt up. He raised his knife and cut straight at me, and roared

"D\*mn\*d humans, your greed disgusts me! I will cut you down alive!"

While I was on my horse, I used my Brilliant Flame Emperor and parried the blow!

"Keng!"

Sparks flew and my arm went numb. Motherf\*cker, this barbarian's attack

power was abnormally high. That one cut had successfully cut down 2000 of my health. No wonder Li Mu didn't let the Steel Blade Horsemen advance forward. With one hit it dealt that much damage to me. If it hit the Steel Blade Horsemen, it would cut a whole 5000 from their health. With one barrage of attacks, they wouldn't be able to take it any longer. In a mass barbarian attack, the Steel Blade Horsemen would easily get killed.

I waved my sword and dealt one heavy slice that made the barbarian roar in pain. I thought of the Greedy Wolf Raiders from [Thousand Burial]. They had an advantage in movement and attack speed, but their defense power was at a great disadvantage. It was much weaker than the Steel Blade Horsemen. This also meant that the Greedy Wolf Raiders had to rely on stealing in order to grow. If the Greedy Wolf Raiders were to clear maps, I'm afraid there would be too many problems with leveling up. Just their survival would be a problem. If they met a BOSS, then the Greedy Wolf Raiders would definitely be unable to hold up against it.

.....

After cutting down a group of barbarians, I saw that the map in front of us was completely red. It was our target, the Blood Demon Forest. Wan Er said, "The Blood Demon Forest's level is very high, we need to be careful..."

I nodded and urged my horse forward. Not long after we walked forward, I suddenly saw a crimson monster covered in thorns standing at the edge of the forest. It stood up on two legs like a human, but it had an extremely large head, as though it were a toad. Its eyes were a deep green that stared straight forward. The spiny thorns on the back of its head started to rise up like a terrifying umbrella.

I stared at it and furrowed my brow, "A level 135 Hybrid Demon Monster..."

"A Hybrid Demon?"

Dong Cheng picked up her staff and said, "How come the Hybrid demons have begun to spawn on Tian Ling City's territory."

I replied, "Thankfully it's only sporadic, otherwise if they were to charge all at once, there's no way we could hold the Bridge of Fate. We don't even have to wait for the English Server players to come here and kill us, the Hybrid Demon

army will do their job for them.”

I stepped forward and cautiously closed our distance. Even so, I couldn't see the monsters stats. Either way, this thing must be extremely strong. Based on the reports, [Hero's Mound], [Legend], and [Vanguard] all sent players here to scout the map but they had all been completely annihilated. If I'm not wrong, they must have been killed by these Blood Demons.

“Should we lure it over and try?” I asked.

Wan Er nodded, “Yup!”

From a distance, I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and activated my [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“Peng!”

“11291 ! ”

My damage wasn't bad, it was over ten thousand. Once the Blood Demon took the hit, its health practically didn't change at all. It screeched and bounded towards us. It was a Level 5 Hybrid Demon, much stronger than the Gravedigger Demons. When it was around 30 yards away from me, it stopped and screeched again. The spiny thorns on its opened up and blood splashed onto me. It was a ranged attack! After the hit, my health rapidly dropped. The loss was beyond what I had imagined!

“10442 ! ”

Wan Er gaped, “I'm going blind right? A monster that's not a BOSS actually dealt over ten thousand damage to pig!?”

Qing Qian raised her dagger and calmly said, “That was a ranged attack, it should be a magic type. Otherwise, physical damage wouldn't have dealt so much damage to Brother Xiao Yao's health.”

At that moment, the Blood Demon started to shake its tail like a snake and then charged forward. It waved its thorny arm, cutting right into my armor. Two damage numbers popped up. As I had expected, this monster had two fighting styles. Its physical attacks were far less terrifying than its magic attacks——

“6283 ! ”

“7127 ! ”

However, it still hurt quite a bit. Darling Duck quickly recovered my health. I swung my swords and after a round of attacks, managed to [Drain] back some health. This Blood Demon has at least 2 million health, just as much a vice BOSS. After I killed it, my blade was covered in crimson blood. Darling Duck waved her staff and said, “Such a hard shell... however, it looks like it gives quite a bit of experience....”

I nodded, “Yup, looks like choosing this place to grind levels was correct.”

Qing Qian raised her dagger and stood beside the roots of a large tree. She looked towards on the distance and pointed, “Brother Xiao Yao, it looks like something is happening over there. I see a flag that’s from the Xia Yu Army, just south of the Blood Demon Forest. On top of that, it looks very tattered, as though a battle had occurred.

I felt an idea pop into my head, “Let’s look to see if there’s a quest waiting for us. Let’s go and check it out!”

“Ok!”

All of us dashed forward. Looks like a fierce battle did occur in the southern area of the Blood Demon Forest. Around a hundred Xia Yu Army soldiers were fighting against seven Blood Demons. That’s right, there were only seven Blood Demons there, but they still managed to completely dominate the army. Several battle axe soldiers had already died under the hands of the Blood Demons.

“For the honor of the Second Prince Owen, Kill!”

One of the NPCs looked like he was a Squad Leader roared. However, the situation was not in their favor. The soldiers were continuously dying one after another. They were already starting to lose their battle power.

I gripped my sword and charged forward. I could already see a small map within the larger map. Just south of the Blood Demon ahead was a large tree map called “Xia Yu Army’s Fort” Yup, so this was where the Second Prince Owen’s army was camped. No wonder the Tian Ling City nobles were so worry free, they had stationed such a strong army to guard beside the Bridge of Fate.

They really don't have to worry about any military movements from Moon City.

“Help them!”

I raised my sword and rushed over. I carefully aimed at the Blood Demon with the lowest health and charged at it. My Ancient Heavenly Tiger let out a roar and pounced on the demon alongside me. In a short ten seconds, we dealt over 40,000 damage, killing the Blood Demon!

Behind me, Wan Er and Dong Cheng had followed behind as ranged and close combat support. We quickly killed the second Blood Demon.

The military officer NPC standing on the hill laughed, “Where did those adventurers come from? This is great! They'll help us kill those evil Blood Demons. I will definitely let the Second Prince Owen know of your contributions. At that point, I promise that you'll immediately be promoted three times and become the most honored adventurers in Tian Ling City!”

I grinned. We were here to get a quest, who wanted a reward? Well, with a reward... that would sweeten the deal....

“Battle Axe Camp, assist!” the NPC officer commanded.

Ten buff warriors carrying battle axes charged out. They roared and swung their axes at the Blood Demons, assisting our attack. Now that I, the human meat shield, was the tank, they had much less pressure. And so, the seven Blood Demons were quickly killed while the Xia Yu Army had lost thirty soldiers.

The squad leader NPC commanded that the corpses be cleared away as he walked over and said, “I am the Patrol General of the Outer Borders, Bai Li Ren. Thank you for your help. If you hadn't given us a hand, I'm afraid that the worst would've happened.”

I smiled, “It was nothing. That's right, this Blood Demon Forest, did it originally have these Blood Demons?”

Bai Li Ren shook his head, his eyes filled with terror, “Originally, there were a few Blood Demons in the area, but they were extremely weak. Our thousand man battle axe camp was enough to clear them all out. However, this past few months, these Blood Demons seemed to have been summoned by a mysterious power and became several times stronger. Furthermore, they can now use

Blood Curse magic. My most elite battle axe camp wasn't even enough to deal with them. The Second Prince Owen commanded us to check out what was happening in the Blood Demon Forest, and that we had to clear them all out. However, the monsters here are much more terrifying. If we were to kill them all, then the Xia Yu Army would lose at least ten thousand men. That's a loss that we cannot take."

I replied, "Maybe adventurers can help you with this."

Bai Li Ren stiffened, "Really?"

I nodded, "I'm a man of my word!"

Bai Li Ren excitedly replied, "Alright... then let me go and ask for permission from my commander. If you guys really clear out all of the monsters in the Blood Demon Forest, then the empire will definitely reward you well!"

I smiled, "Yes sir!"

"Follow me to the base and await further instruction!"

"Yes sir."

After walking forward for a short distance, the majestic military base appeared before us. Bai Li Ren's army was camped on the outer edge. He then led his horse towards the center. After twenty minutes, we finally saw the officer come back. He held a golden scroll in his hand and smiled, "I've obtained the command. Receive your quest, adventurer!"

I nodded, "Yes!"

In the next moment, the system bell sounded——

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, you have received the SSS tier Main Quest [Clearing Blood Demon Forest]. The Empire has already sent a command. All adventurers can enter the Blood Demon Forest and must clear out all Blood Demons within 48 hours. Anybody can participate. The final rewards will be determined by the number of blood demons killed, damage, and heals!

"Got it!"

Once I received the command, I turned to Wan Er and Qing Qian, “Let’s have Li Mu choose the most elite players in the guild and meet us in the Blood Demon Forest. This is a rare chance for [Zhan Long] to level up as a guild!”

Wan Er smiled, “Yes!”

## Chapter 719 - Black Flame Set

We entered the forest from the south. As we walked, I passed the map's coordinates to Li Mu, Wang Jian and Matcha with orders for [Zhan Long]'s members to assemble in 100-man parties and come clear the map. I also posted the Blood Demon's stats in our chat. Essentially, every party needs our Steel Blade Cavalry to tank as well as sufficient healers to avoid mishaps like getting instakilled.

.....

"Crunch....."

My horse trotted its way forward through the shrubbery. Stalks of plants bore reddish bell-like berries that swayed as the hooves passed by, and created the illusion of nonexistent bells that rang. This Blood Demon Forest appears to be devoid of any other living creatures. Hares, deers and whatnot must've been hunted to extinction by the Blood Demons already. It's quite perplexing how such a large forest can be populated by only Blood Demons. What do they even eat? [Destiny] has been designed to imitate real life. Whether they're NPCs or monsters, they all need to eat for sustenance. If it's not vegetation, then it's meat.....

A bit farther ahead, three Blood Demons appeared together in a small clearing.

I quickly drew my Dragon's Reservoir Sword, "There's three!"

Seeing that I wasn't gallantly charging ahead again, Wan Er giggled, "What, you're scared already?"

"Of course! If by chance, their magic attacks got a critical on me, I might end up instakilled. We'll be better off confirming our strategy first. I'll start by drawing all their attentions. Dong Cheng, you [Sleep] the one on the left. I'll take middle. Wan'Er and Qing Qian will stun the one on the right. Call all your pets out to help me kill."

"En!"



I had the reins in one hand and sword in the other, I confirmed my trajectory and let loose ——[Charge] !

Whoosh!

My blurry figure shot off like a streak of light and brutally crashed into the torso of the middle Blood Demon. The grotesque visage of the other 2 instantly turned towards me as they began to attack. However, Dong Cheng finished her chanting right at this moment and the leftmost one immediately fell into a slumber that will last 7 seconds. I promptly threw out a chain of [Combo] + [Great Realm of Desolation] + [Strength of a Thousand] while enduring the attacks of the remaining two. My HP may be going down in chunks but Darling Duck's ability isn't lacking either. One heal after another landed on me, quickly creating an equilibrium point.

Wan Er appears at this time. A quick [Gouge] stuns the one on the right. Then with a slide step, she closed in on the middle one; [Blade of the Gods] + [Twin Blades Unity] + [Revolving Strikes]! With the damage of the overlapping skills stacking on top of that from the pets, this middle Blood Demon's health was dropping in chunks now. While this was going on, Qing Qian is effectively locking the right Blood Demon in a Stun state. Both the girls are considered role models of the Assassin class. The number of people in the China server that can compare to them when it comes to the finesse of utilizing crowd control techniques can be counted on a single hand. With them around, leveling becomes so much safer.

The first Blood Demon was quickly finished off. The left one has already woken up by now and its razor-like claws are tearing away at my armor already. I didn't bother with any dodging maneuvers and just let it hit. Anyway, Darling Duck can heal and every time I take enough damage equivalent to 100% of my HP, my defense goes up by 1%. Under such intense leveling conditions, increasing my defense to 200% shouldn't be difficult at all. Once I hit that point, I can basically just ignore their melee attacks. Not to mention, there's definitely a Boss in this map that I'll need super defense to tank.

A minute and a half later, my sword dealt the finishing blow to the third and final Blood Demon. Unexpectedly, as it died, it cried out, "Curses! I did not hide "it" well enough! This is bad....."

Thump!

Along with 7 gold coins dropped a dignified black chest plate. My heart skipped a beat. I instinctively knew this must be good stuff. Riding up next to it, I bent over and flicked it up with my sword then caught it and called up its property window..... This is really good stuff— —

**【Black Flame Chestplate】(Valkyrie Tier)**

Type: Heavy

Defense: 1100

Strength; +80

Stamina: +78

Agility: +75

Additional: Increase user's base Magic Defense by 30%

Additional: Increase user's base Physical Defense by 25%

Additional: Increase user's max HP by 4000

Set Piece: Black Flame Set • Chest

Introduction: Black Flame Set, The Heaven's Blade Da Lun of the Hybrid Demon Kings have always hated humanity. It's said that he himself was once the sovereign of a human empire but that has not stopped him from desiring the complete annihilation of the human race. Da Lun collected fire-type black steel ore from all over the continent which he ordered a famous craftsman to utilize. The result was a batch of the [Black Flame Set]. This armor is incredibly resilient against all types of blades; a must have if one plans to live on battlefields. Da Lun might have ordered the Blood Demons to make camp near the [War God's River] but, since, they are foolish creatures and chose to carry this important shipment on their bodies. Upon death, there's a certain chance that Da Lun's painstaking effort will end up in another's hands.

Required Level: 115

.....

Seeing this Heavenly-tier set piece, no sound would come out of me. Instead,

bewilderment blocked off all thoughts. This is just a level 115 equipment. It's also only Heavenly-tier. But once this set was completely gathered up, its stats might even match those of Li Mu and Wang Jian's. If we're to add our [Steel Blade Cavalry] to the equation..... do I even need to describe the defensive and offensive power that would come of it?

Eagerly tossing the armor into my inventory, I gleefully spoke up, "Alright, let's clear this up right now. The equipments we get from killing Blood Demons and Boss are left up to dice rolls, but all [Black Flame Set] pieces goes to me!"

Darling Duck couldn't hold back giggling, "Chief you battle maniac! Are you thinking to mix the Steel Blade Cavalry + Black Flame Set + Frostform Sword for a "min-maxed" heavy cavalry regiment?"

"That's right. Smart Ducky. That's exactly what I'm planning. Once these 3 are mixed together, they should possess enormous battle potential. And think..... once we have a sufficient number of people equipped as such and every one of them has an [Anti-Magic Shield] on, they'll be able to tear through the enemy spells and ammunition. This will be a more direct and effective method against our enemies. Also..... if we're to focus all of this on the Moon Elves within our Steel Blade Cavalry, that'll be even more perfect. Offense and defense in one. Enough to swagger through Tian Ling City!

Dongcheng snickered, "A battle maniac indeed..... But, you can rest at ease. Your little sister Meng Yao is already level 113. It's only a day or two more of work to reach 115. There's already a Steel Blade Horse saved for her. Frostform Sword is not an issue either. All that's left now is how long before her big brother gathers a full [Black Flame Set] for her....."

Wan Er chuckled as well, "No matter what, I don't think Piggy here will be satisfied with letting his little sister use a Heavenly-tier weapon like the Frostform Sword right?"

I too laughed a bit here, "That's right. After I've gathered a complete [Black Flame Set] for Meng Yao, I'll be paying a visit to all the main cities to look for high end weapons. I'll never let her use just a Heavenly-tier sword!"

"Oh right, once the [Moon Elf Brigade] is set up, who'll you pick to lead them? Meng Yao or Yue Yao Yan? Yao Yan is already level 120 now; highest out of all

the Moon Elves in our cavalry group.....” Wan’ Er suddenly changed topics.

I pondered for a bit, “Nepotism is not allowed. Yue Yao Yan is the one best suited to be the [Moon Elf Brigade]’s No.1. It’s still too early for Meng Yao. Let her experience a few of the game’s real wars first. We can consider this topic again after she’s been polished up. Needless to say though, I have absolute confidence in her abilities. It won’t be too long before she becomes one of the pillars of [Zhan Long].”

Wan Er nodded her approval, “En. Let’s continue killing the Blood Demons. You have the highest Charisma out of all of us so the chance the set drops for you is higher. The more Blood Demons our party kills, the more set pieces we might get!”

“Kay!”

.....

The 5 of us quickly entered even deeper into the forest. There’s definitely more and more Blood Demons as we move in. They’re pretty much all in groups of 3-5 at a time. Good thing our group members are strong enough. I would tank 2 of them at a time while my Ancient Heavenly Tiger and Purple Kirin Dragon take 1 each. Wan Er and Qing Qian will take turns stunning the last one. Dong Cheng’s [Sleep] would be used at her discretion. This method is relatively safe and steady aside from how easily the pets might die from consecutive critical hits. With [Flame Armor] for protection my Ancient Heavenly Tiger was still okay, but the Purple Kirin Dragon had bit the dust once already; that broke Wan Er’s heart. And so, we decide to have Dong Cheng use [Sleep] to fill in that gap instead of having the Purple Kirin Dragon be a lone tank.

Our progress was extremely smooth. In less than 10 minutes, another set piece dropped; a pair of wrist guards. It went straight to me. Seeing this, Wan Er spoke up, “You have 2 pieces of the set now, see what the set bonus is like?”

“Eh?!”

“Hurry up!”

“Fine.....”

I took out both pieces and held them up. Strands of light floated out and

formed the property window——

### 【Black Flame Set】

2 Piece: Attack Power +45%

3 Piece: Defensive Power + 70%

4 Piece: Attack Speed + 50%, Magic Defense +200%

5 Piece: Max HP +20000, Attack Power +100%

6 Piece: [Black Flame Ward] - An independent shield formed of black flames that surrounds the user. Reduces all incoming damage by 30% regardless of type and element. Permanent effect. Unlimited durability.

.....

“This.....”

Upon seeing this, even my throat went dry. Swallowing a gulp of drool, I took another look at my [Hidden Dragon Armor],[Divine Suppressing Dragon Armguard], and [Yuan Rong Warboots]. I felt the impulsive urge to replace all these Saint-tier equips with the Heavenly-tier ones. All the items I’m wearing carry with them various special abilities and Rage Skills. The [Black Flame Set] definitely can’t match up to them in that area but its base stats are simply just incredible!

Dong Cheng blankly blinked a few times then asked, “Don’t armor sets consist of only 5 pieces? Why does this one have 6?”

I was at a loss myself, “No idea.....”

Two minutes later, a burst of luck netted us another piece and an answer. It’s a [Black Flame Cloak]. This pure black cloak is quite eye-catching. Red embroidery adorned its surface. It also had a faint but noticeable glow. Hehe. I can imagine it already. If those Moon Elf beauties with hot figures like Yue Yao Yan and Meng Yao were to put on a completed [Black Flame Set], with their bare thighs out in display, it’s sure to be a feast for the eyes.

At this point, I couldn’t help but slap my head a couple times. What am I even thinking? Meng Yao is my little sister! Yue Yao Yan is Wan Er’s close friend! I’d be better off imagining how Wan Er would look in the set instead! With this

notion in mind, I looked towards Wan'er instead. Our beautiful Missy's pair of snow white legs are just stunning under the moonlight and the cut of [Bu Lianshi's Winter Garment] is quite stylish. When wrapped across that lavish pair of hers, the sight is enough to make people forget how to breath.

"D...Dummy, what are you looking at!" Wan Er warily looks at me.

I put the cloak into my inventory and forced out an awkward laugh, "Nothing, nothing. Let's keep killing the Blood Demons. They're so loaded....."

"En!"

Wan Er is normally a really intelligent girl; just that fooling her... doesn't seem to be difficult at all for me.....

# Chapter 720 Good Walks, Evil Leaps

Our 5-man group rampaged through the Blood Demon Forest and sent the brainless Blood Demons scurrying all over the place. My Dragon Reservoir Sword and Brilliant Flame Emperor had cut down numerous Blood Demons which were basically unbeatable existences here. It was only after we'd obtained the 9th piece of equipment did we collect a whole set. With a full set already completed, I got word from Li Mu and the others. A troop of around 7000 [Zhan Long] members were approaching, and will be entering the map in 100-man parties for maximum efficiency and safety.

With people like Li Mu and Wang Jian handling things, we shouldn't be needed over there. I lead my group of young maidens deeper into the forest instead. Just as Wan Er suggested, to not make full use of my 506 points of Charm is simply a waste. The number of Blood Demons is limited and there's no knowing if they'll respawn again. So the more I kill, the more sets that [Zhan Long] will likely obtain.

Once I posted the full set properties in the guild chat, everyone became tongue-tied——

Li Mu: "Holy Crap! What the hell is this!? Where'd you get such a fine set?"

Wang Jian: "Those stats...just brutal....."

Yue Yao Yan: "....."

Me: "Hehe. It's a specialty product of this map. You guys send word down to the others. Any and all pieces of this [Black Flame Set] that drops cannot be claimed by any individuals. The guild will buy out every piece for 2000RMB each. Anyone that violates this order will be expelled on the spot!"

"2000RMB per piece!?" Li Mu faltered, "...Xiao Yao.....you know... I don't know if I should say this..... [TL Note: Roughly \$300 USD at the time of writing.]

"Shoot." I answered him.

Li Mu continued "I've always thought of you as my own brother. But no matter if it's Dragon City or National Beauty everything is a result of your sweat

and blood; no one can deny that. The thing is..... you've been dumping all the profits from both of them right back into the game instead of taking any for yourself all this time. Have you not thought about preparing a dowry for when you marry Wan Er later on? I mean, we understand. You're putting all your thoughts into the wellbeings of our comrades and the guild but there's no need to take it so far! You should put some more considerations towards your own future. I'm saying all this from the standpoint of a brother so I hope you won't mind the frankness."

I paused for a second, then a heartfelt smile surfaced from my chest, "Nothing to it. No matter if it's [Zhan Long] or Dragon City that is becoming stronger, those are my rewards. Speaking of which...aren't dowries prepared by the bride's side? Why should I worry about that....."

Wolf snorted in glee, "Goddamn. Xiao Yao-ge\* is planning to marry into money? Sis-in-law you hear that?! He's planning to marry into your money! Does your dad know?"

TL Note: This is an affectionate term for older male peers, often looked up to. Similar to Onii-chan

Qing Qian cracked up too, "So mean! That's just making Cang Tong-jiejie\* marry for free....."

TL Note: This is an affectionate term for older female peers, often looked up to. Similar to Onee-chan

Wan Er, who was beside me, was already blushing to the very tip of her ears, "Wh...when did I say I'm gonna marry him..... Hmph!"

Old K sniggered, "Oh... it's not Guildmaster? Then are you gonna marry me or Fox?"

Wan Er went pale, "...I'll marry him....."

Everyone else immediately broke out in roaring laughter; even I couldn't resist sneaking in a chuckle or two. Her already red face became a shade darker from shame as she gave me an evil eye.

"Jerk. Only good for embarrassing me. Hmph!"



I did not say anything else and simply carried on killing while carrying a grin on my face.

.....

The Blood Demons were worth a surprisingly abundant amount of EXP and had great drop rates to boot. That made the grinding even a pleasure of sorts. Our group has abandoned any notions of sleep. By 4a.m., Wan Er, Dong Cheng's and my inventories were filled to the max with Black Flame Set pieces. Between just the three of us, we should already have at least 50 completed sets. The estimated value of these sets shouldn't be low at all; at least 100 grand for each one. If you think about it, we're actually getting a pretty sizable income from the game like this.

Near 5 a.m., we ran into another group from [Zhan Long]. Wang Jian, on top of a Steel Blade mount, rode at the front and upon seeing us, delightedly laughs.

"What a coincidence! Xiao Yao, you guys are here too!"

"Wang Jian, have you collected a complete set yet?"

"Ah yea, we have. About 10 sets so far....."

"Couldn't bring yourself to abandon your Rage skill equipments, eh?"

I gave him a knowing smirk.

He sheepishly laughed a bit, "Yea, I got 3 pieces of gear that carry a Rage skill. Crowd Control, offensive and defensive abilities. Really can't bear to part with them. Also, my leg guards are Celestial-tier; they're even harder for me to give up."

"Take off your current gear and put on a set. Just let us see what your stats will be like?"

"Sure!"

Since Wang Jian already had a complete set on him, with a "Kacha", his entire outfit changed in an instant. A pure black armor that releases energy ripples that resembles black flames certainly looks imposingly impressive. With a wave of his arm, he calls out his stat window for us to view, chuckling, "I'm a full

strength build. Weapon and accessories has been unequipped. This is the pure stat boost from the set!”

【General Wang Jian】(Platinum Swordsman)

Level: 122

Attack: 3971-4240

Defense: 9221

HP: 37860

MP: 7720

Charm: 197

CBN Battle Ranking: 20

.....

Seeing that he can achieve this kind of stats with just the armor, I contently smiled, “If you add on the stats from your weapon and accessories, your base attack should definitely near 10,000 with defense probably around 9500. When mounted, your HP should break 40,000 for sure with MP around 8000. That should be enough for you to spam skills now.”

Wang Jian nods and equipped everything else, “It’s just as Xiao Yao-ge said. My HP is around 47,000 now; even higher than with my real equipment. Just a pity there’s no Rage skills whatsoever. But this [Black Flame Ward] ability is quite neat. Reducing all damage by 30%... it’s simply perfect for the charging cavalry classes.”

I agreed with him, “Do a headcount of how many Moon Elves there are within our [Steel Blade Cavalry]!”

He paused, then cautiously asks, “Xiao Yao-ge, are you planning on hooking up with all our Moon Elf players? I mean... all you gotta do is send them a whisper..... I don’t think there’s even a couple Moon Elf girls within our guild that hasn’t thought about getting intimate with you.....’

I began choking and coughing out of thin air, “Fuck! What the hell are you even thinking, you little punk!? I’m talking about forming a [Moon Elf Regiment]

within our [Steel Blade Cavalry]! To be the blade that cuts into enemy mage formations when we're at war!"

Wang Jian slaps his thigh, "Ooooh, so that's what you mean..... Woops, I thought... Hehe....."

Wan Er scoffed at me from the side, "Hmph!"

I returned a helpless smile, then continued to give Wang Jian new arrangements. When a piece of the set drops, there's no need to decide ownership on the spot. All of them are to be stored directly into the guild bank and I'll be deciding who will be their eventual owners. [Zhan Long] has never requested anything from its members in exchange for the spoils of war. It's all up to their contributions to the guild and personal abilities. Guilds like [Vanguard] and [Heroes Tomb] actually required their members to exchange a set amount of gold + contribution points for their set equipments and mounts.

What's laughable is a guild like [Wrath of Heroes] that actually requires its members to directly inject gold into the guild bank for the right to obtain a set and only the one who gave the most would get it in the end. This sort of reward system was just preposterous and absolutely worthy of everyone's ridicule. The world isn't stupid and its people aren't blind. It's painfully obvious just which guilds are worth their loyalty and dedication and which aren't.

.....

Before we knew it, it was already almost noon. However, there still seemed to be a substantial amount of Blood Demons in the forest. We already had Wolf send people over to help us clean out our inventory several times now. Roughly guessing, by the time we finish clearing this map, we should have at least a full 1000 Black Flame Sets. This figure is kind of frightening but at the same time, it serves as an even greater incentive for us to carry on with this.

What worried me though was that with each piece was priced at 2000RMB, meaning our expenses would go over 10 million RMB. Between Dragon City and National Beauty, our total wealth on hand was only around 10 million. Was this even a good thing anymore?

Luckily, under Li Mu and Wang Jian's encouragement, many of the players that might potentially receive a set agreed to forgo their share of the money.

That saved me a ton. With this, expenditure will only be around 7 million. It's still painful though. But if I think about it, once [Zhan Long] really does form a group of 1000 Steel Blade Cavalry geared in the Black Flame Set, I have complete confidence that just this group of 1000 can sweep away the Greedywolf Brigade that's 10x their numbers.

The [Greedywolf Brigade] only has so much offensive power. It might not even be enough to break the combined defense of the Steel Blade Cavalry + [Black Flame set]. If pitted against a sufficient number of Black Flame Steel Blade Cavalry, they probably won't be able to do anything other than get cut down.

.....

On the other hand, Fox oversaw the continuous task of taming Steel Blade mounts while Yue Yao Yan supervised the farming of Frost Swords; there's word that we already have more than 2000 swords. Just like this, [Zhan Long] was secretly operating on three fronts with a complete monopoly of the Steel Blade Mountain, Broken Blade Gorge and Blood Demon Forest. In a sense, our cavalry's place on the throne as Tian Ling City's No.1 cavalry regiment should be immovable. I truly believe that, no matter what Enchanting Art, Lu Chunyang or Q-sword do or how hard they work, our Steel Blade Cavalry will definitely be the strongest within Tian Ling City.

After killing the nth Blood Demon, I opened up the mission window. The individual kill count listed on top and I'm leading in first by a long shot——

1. Xiao Yao Zi Zai Kills: 2774

2. Cang Yue Kills: 1239

3. General Li Mu Kills: 772

4. Cang Tong Kills: 711

5. Lika a Flame Kills: 544

.....

Our 5-man group is moving independently so the high kill counts are understandable. As for Li Mu, his dps ability is getting better and better so it isn't surprising. Xing Lie, however, gave me a scare. This kid has just joined the

guild not long ago and he's already showing great promise. A kill count of 544... it's not something that can be achieved simply just by gunning for the last hit. This kid's long range dps is definitely terrifying. If it comes to single target focus firing, his damage potential might even be above Dancing Forest and Thousand Suns. That's the No.1 expert marksman of Hangzhou's Protector Squad for you.

With my high kill count, I suppose I should be getting a pretty good reward once we finished the mission. This map is pretty wide though; it might even be a match for the Gale Forest that serve as a natural barrier for Tian Ling City. [Zhan Long] ended up delegating around 10,000 members over here to grind all night and about 20% of the map still has Blood Demons leftover. Looks like we might still get quite a few more sets.

We couldn't stay much longer though. It was approaching noon fast. We needed to quickly log out and have lunch before the testing started; only two more exams before winter vacation officially begins!

...Hmmm... the term 'winter vacation' seems pretty foreign to me..... Oh right, the last time I had a winter vacation was when I was thirteen and in middle school! Because of that female classmate bullying incident, I threw a brick that hit the self-proclaimed class bully Long Dongqiang in the head and turned him stupid so I withdrew from school. Then lying to Auntie, I left the city and end up joining the Peaceful Life Sect of the Zixia Caves in Hunan. It was all so long ago now that I think about it. No wonder people say life is like a song with all the highs and lows; the upbeat and downbeats.

.....

Afternoon.

The exams went as smoothly as before. The testing site had, in fact, implemented signal jamming devices. No phone could receive a signal at all. But the glasses produced by the TianXin Group were simply just OP. The shortwave frequency basically masked the transmission of the glasses' signals. As they say, it's difficult to be a good person but simple to become corrupt. And so, I've managed to safely cheat my way through the exams this time, spared from the torture of repeating a year.

# Chapter 721 - Verdant Pear

Now that the exams were done with, instead of going online, we all chose to sleep until 11 at night to renew our energy and concentration. It's also about time the Blood Demon Forest mission comes to an end as well.

Logging in. I emerged from the pillar of white light in the center of a forest. Not far from here, I could even see a group of Steel Blade Cavalry hurrying about. Looks like there's still some remnants of the Blood Demons around.

Wan Er and Dong Cheng logged in simultaneously. Qing Qian and Duck, these two girls, had much better endurance than us. Once they saw that we had logged on, they immediately left Li Mu's group and joined ours.

"How are things going along?" I greeted them with a chuckle and asked in chat.

Qing Qian craftily giggled, "Much smoother than we had expected. The Blood Demons are just about done for. Also, Li Mu and the others found a level 130 Divine Tier Boss. We took about 50 casualties but still successfully killed it. It even dropped a Ghost Harvest bow that Forest-jie\* won in dice roll."

\*TL Note: A term of endearment for an older female peer, literally translated as Sister

"Ooooh, that's great. We came online just in time to turn in the mission!"

"Yup!"

"Oh right, what about the Black Flame Set? How many did we get in total?"

'About that.....' Qing Qian appeared from amidst the trees and ran towards us, eyes twinkling merrily like stars, "After a total count, we have a total of 1154 complete sets. How's that? Even better than what Xiao Yao-gege's\* expected right?"

TL Note: Term of endearment for an older male peer. Literally translated as Brother

Genuine joy arose in me, "Ah. I really didn't expect to get this many. Qing

Qian, do a headcount of how many Moon Elves there are in the Steel Blade Cavalry! Make them top priority when distributing the Black Flame Set!”

Qing Qian promptly answered me, “Already did. There are 701 Moon Elves in total. All beauties.....”

I laughed, “OK, I’ll leave the task of sending out the sets to you. Make sure all of them also get a Frostform Sword and a Steel Blade Mount to complete the set. As for the accessory slots, have them get 1-2 Rage skill trinkets and/or ones with the HP Drain effect. Basically have them copy the conventional Battle Reflux style gear. In the future, the Battle Reflux style will definitely be the true overlord of the battlefields!”

Qing Qian grinned, “Yup. Got it. I’ll do just that.”

Just then, a chime resounded in the air. It was the system notifying us that the SSS-rank mission has been completed. All participating players are now required to show up at the Xiayu Army’s encampment and talk with their logistics officers in order to receive their rewards. I mounted up and hurried in that direction with the other four girls. Even after being offline for so long, I still firmly sat in the number one spot for kill count. And since I’m also the same person that triggered the mission, I’ll definitely get the best reward; I just don’t know what it’ll be like.

Li Mu. Wang Jian and Matcha also lead their respective shares of [Zhan Long] players in the same direction. This huge group of people all exited the forest’s south entrance down a winding route and made a beeline straight for the encampment. This Blood Demon Forest has been wiped clean and the system already announced that it’ll refreshing the map; but the next batch of monsters to show up won’t be the Blood Demons anymore. That means, the 1100+ sets that we’ve gathered are all that is in existence. It was an exclusive privilege that only [Zhan Long] had. Even if other maps could also drop high end sets, there won’t be any more of the Black Flame Set.

After a short distance, we could see the flags of encampment wave in the air. Tian Ling City’s war flags were the emblems of the royal family. Just by looking at them, I could feel the savagery and violence emitting from their symbols. Furthermore, since this Xiayu Army was the self-proclaimed second greatest

army in the Empire, the military prestige that it bore was even more oppressing.

Just outside the encampment, ten logistics officers were awaiting us; the quest turn in icons distinctly floated above them. Oh, the system mainframe was pretty considerate to us.

I rode up to the front and took out the scroll, “Officer, we’ve returned after completing our mission. This is our contract. The Blood Demons of Blood Demon Forest are no more!”

Shock flashed across this NPC officer’s eyes, “...Kid, looks like I really underestimated you all. For humans to actually be able to wipe out those terrifying demons..... Seems it’s true what they say about a talented generation... Take this, kid. You were valourous in your battles and was the greatest contributor in this mission. I believe this reward is most suited for you. It used to be the Princess’s personal mount but now it’ll belong to you!”

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations, you’ve successfully completed a SSS-rank storyline mission and have earned the following rewards: Current Level +70% EXP, Charisma +27, Gold +17,823, Large Increase to Prestige in Tian Ling City. Additional reward: 【Verdant Pear】(Divine Tier Boss Mount)!

.....

Fuck, it’s actually a mount?!

I quickly brought up my inventory window. It’s true. A shimmering snow colored mount crystal sat right there in the corner. I pointed at it and its stats window pops up, which gave me a shock. This mount’s stats does not lose out to my Flying Scythe War Horse in any way——

【Verdant Pear】(Divine Tier Boss Mount)

Strength: +220

Stamina: +215

Agility: +210

Spirit: +207



Attack: +80%

Defense: +120%

Movement Speed: +275%

Maxi HP: +8000

Mount Toughness: +55%

Mount Stamina: 170

Stamina Recovery: 0.4/minute

Required level: 115

.....

An image of the mount floated inside the crystal. It would be a completely pure white horse if not for the tufts of fine hair around its hooves being a clear verdant green; looking like four fresh flowers growing among a field of pear blossoms. It's offensive and defensive capabilities and everything else were already heads and shoulders above the rest in the current stage, making it a top class mount. It definitely lived up to its name's meaning of "the pear blossom that blooms only on the battlefield"!

I couldn't suppress my glee... m\*therf\*cking hell yea! Originally, I was simply just expecting a piece Divine-tier equipment or something. Never would I have expected it to be a mount again. For the heavy armor class players, nothing is more important than an excellent mount! Clothes make the man, stats make the mount... that's so true!

The problem now is, my Flying Scythe War Horse isn't any worse than this Verdant Pear. Also, the Flying Scythe War Horse's intimidating appearance suited me, who has been labeled as a battle maniac by Wan Er, better. As for Verdant Pear... it was obviously a girl's mount. Opening up my friends list, I saw that my lil sis was already level 114; wonder how much longer until 115... I'd be better off saving this Verdant Pear for my own little sister. To give it to anyone else... I really just can't bear to do that. Everyone wants a mount like this but there's no market for them, it is literally a priceless treasure in the current stage of the game. But since I plan on making my lil sis into one of the pillars of the

[Moon Elf Regiment], this is a price I'll have to pay.

"Meng Yao, what are you at? How much longer before you level?" I sent lil sis a PM.

She quickly replied, "97% now! I'm killing a boss in the Spirit Valley of No Return... Bro, I'm the main tank! I'll level up to 115 for sure after killing it!"

I couldn't help but chuckle, "OK, pass me the coordinates. Stay where you are after killing the boss and wait for big bro!"

"Kaaaaaay!"

.....

Seeing my excited behaviour, Dong Cheng jabbered, "This guy must've gotten a reeeally good reward....."

I smirked, "That's right!"

"What is it?" Wan Er spoke up.

I shared Verdant Pear's stats with them, "Meng Yao has always wanted a pure white horse for mount and as her big brother, I haven't been really looking for one. The reward this time came at a perfect time. With this, Meng Yao's stats should get a pretty big boost."

Wan Er faintly smiled, "En. Springtime has arrived for [Zhan Long]'s [Moon Elf Regiment]!"

I turned around to look at Wang Jian and stretched out an open hand, "Get me a Black Flame Set!"

He stiffened, "Uh... What for? Xiao Yao-ge, you shouldn't be needing these lower level equipments....."

"It's for Meng Yao. I just happened to get my hands on something I needed to give her."

"Oh. Got it!"

Wang Jian quickly traded a set over to me. Then turning around, I looked at Wan'er and softly spoke, "Wan Er, take Dong Cheng and Qing Qian to play around for a bit. I'm gonna go give Meng Yao her new gear."

“Go already! Shoo! Dong Cheng and I will go grind some EXP for level 126 ~”

“Mmm!”

.....

With a light pat, my Flying Scythe War Horse immediately shot off towards the north like lightning. The current Blood Demon Forest was blocked off by a barrier that cut off all players so I could only take a wide detour. Luckily, my mount was fast enough. Plus, once it was stacked with the bonus from my Yuanrong Warboots, we crossed through the wilderness like a gale of wind. In less than 10 minutes, I reached the valley. Here, a new type of mob had been spawned as well.

Making my way to the given coordinates, I could see a giant beast lying on the ground in the distance. It's a Saint-class Boss and already dead. Most of its killers have already dispersed but Meng Yao, outfitted in a suit of fiery red armor and mounted on top of chestnut horse with a yellow mane, remained at her spot. On her side were two players from [Zhan Long]'s First Division Guild. Both of the youngsters were guys; and apparently at her every beck and call. Guess this can't be helped. Meng Yao is, at the same time, charming and attractive with a bright and pleasant personality. On top of that, her figure is superb. For people to fall for her is as normal as breathing.

“Meng Yao!”

I cried her name from afar as I galloped over and dismounted with flip. The moment she saw me, Meng Yao ditched both her suitors and rushed over as well. She slid off her mount and spreads her arms to give me a fierce hug before looking up from my embrace with a pouty look.

“Bro, it's too hard to even catch a glimpse of you ingame!”

I stole a glance at her level, “Level 115 now. You're catching up pretty fast. Soon you'll be able to tag along with big bro to go leveling!”

Meng Yao's smile became extremely sweet, “En! But I'm worried my stats are too weak and I'll become a burden to bro...”

I gently counter her worries, “Aren't stats just the result of your equipments? Well, no problem. Very soon, Meng Yao will become a first rate player too. With

your talent, it won't take too many days."

As I spoke, I pulled out the completed [Black Flame Set] from my inventory, "Come. Try this on!"

"En!"

Meng Yao equipped the set onto her alternative gear slot and switched over to it. With a *kacha* sound, her entire look underwent a huge change; the low tier fiery red set had transformed into a set of ink black Black Flame Set. When equipped by female characters, the appearance of Black Flame Set went through several changes. The design became even more striking and detailed. On top of pauldrons, grew several elegantly curve-shaped protrusions that served as defensive spikes. Linking ink black scales wrapped around her already ripe young woman torso. Another ridge formed below her twin peaks pushing up like overlapping mountains while her abdomen remains flat like the plains. A slender pair of legs with half exposed thighs would catch anyone's eyes and never let go. And on top of the shield in her hand, the flames that formed the [Black Flame Ward] circled around her. With a magnificently decorated cape billowing from behind, Meng Yao, at this very moment, truly looked every inch the part of a high level female beauty knight.

## Chapter 722 - Abuse of Power

“Wa, so pretty....”

I could tell from Meng Yao’s face that she really liked this equipment set. She held the horse’s reins and smiled to me asking, “Brother, am I pretty?”

I smiled, “Yup, my Meng Yao is becoming more and more beautiful. Wonder when she’ll get hitched with a husband~”

Meng Yao blushed, “Brother, you’re teasing me again. I’m only nineteen, gosh. I’m not even at the age for marrying. Besides, what kind of brother are you, always trying to get his sister married. Brother, tell me the truth, do you think I’m dead weight that’s holding you back and that’s why you’re always trying to marry me off, or....”

She mischievously smiled and then whispered into my ear, “Or is Brother and Sister Wan Er in some kind of special relationship, and you’re afraid that I’ll be a third wheel in your love world?”

I stiffened and then smiled, “What are you talking about?”

Meng Yao had seen right through me and she stuck out her chest, “He he, I completely understand! Brother, don’t worry, this winter break I won’t come to bother you. Even if we’re watching a movie, you just have to give me a bucket of popcorn and I’ll quietly watch. I promise I won’t look at whatever you guys are doing...”

Flabbergasted, I messed with her hair and said, “Alright already, where’d you learn to tease me like this? Also, I’ve got another gift for you, you’ll definitely like it.”

“Oh, what is it?”

The moment I put the Verdant Pear’s crystal in her hand, Meng Yao froze. After a few seconds, her eyes slowly lit up with excitement, “Ah? What... what a pretty mount. It’s a Divine Tier BOSS mount. Wu.... it’s even a white horse. Brother, where’d you get it?”

I smiled to her and said with a hint of pride, "It's a reward from an SSS tier main quest. I think I was the only one that got a Divine Tier reward. Well, do you like it?"

Meng Yao nodded, "Yup, I love it!"

As she said that, she was already beginning the mount contract. The crystal melted away and a mount appeared before her. It was the Verdant Pear. Meng Yao leapt onto the horse. With one hand holding a shield and the other a spear, she smiled to me, "Brother, how is it?"

I replied, "What about the Iron Umbrella of the Moon Elves?"

"It's been melded with the shield. In reality, my magic defense is already up a lot."

"So it was like that...."

I smiled and said, "[Zhan Long] will be creating a Moon Elf Knight Corp, Yue Yao Yan will command it and Meng Yao, you'll be the Deputy. Remember to support her well and study a lot under her tutelage. She is quite remarkable at commanding."

Meng Yao nodded, "Understood. Don't worry brother, I won't let you down."

"How much health and defense do you have right now?"

"49,000 health, 10400+ base defense, how is it?"

I took a deep breath, "Wow. Just that one Valkyrie Tier armor set's defense actually brings you higher than my defense...."

Meng Yao grinned, "Brother! I'm a knight, I have the shield to add on to my defense, whereas you're a swordsman. All you have are your two swords. If you had a shield too, I'm afraid that your defense power would surpass mine by at least a thousand points!"

"Oh, that's true too...."

At that moment, two of Meng Yao's subordinates rode over. They were both part of the Steel Blade Horsemen. As they rode up to us, they addressed me together, "Guildmaster!"

I nodded, “Hey. Are you all Meng Yao’s friends?”

“Yes sir. Guildmaster, we’re actually both Meng Yao’s classmates, students of Xia Men University. We’re about to go on winter break, so we’re going to spend these days training with Meng Yao.”

I warmly smiled to them, “Ok. Thanks for looking after my sister!”

Meng Yao pouted her lip, “Brother, I don’t need them to look after me. Now that I have Verdant Pear and this Black Flame Set, I can already solo grind....”

I couldn’t help but lightly scold her, “What’s this, are you going to eat and not pay up? Don’t forget, just who was it that grinded your levels up to 115....”

The two Steel Blade Horsemen gave a knowing smile and didn’t say anything.

Meng Yao pouted again, “Hmph, Brother only knows how to bully me. You just wait, in a few days I’ll be coming back from finishing all of my tests. That’s right, Brother you’re living with Wan Er now right?”

“Yes...”

“Then I’ll come over and visit you guys.”

“Alright then, come on over!”

.....

Right as I was talking with Meng Yao, I suddenly spotted a cloud of dust rise up in the distance. The person coming clearly had a lot of strength and power. He was riding a Steel Blade Horse and had a sword in hand. On his shoulder was the Zhan Long elder insignia. It was General Li Mu. At that moment, the two Steel Blade Horsemen behind me both shouted, “Brother Li Mu!”

Li Mu was number one in the Valiant Bravery Camp, and in their hearts, there wasn’t much of a difference between his position as leader and my own. Li Mu was second only to me in terms of prestige. It was just as Qing Qian had once secretly said to me that if I weren’t at [Zhan Long], and if Li Mu was more hot-blooded and had the ambition, then the leader of [Zhan Long] would’ve been Li Mu.

“What is it?” I walked up and asked.

Li Mu furrowed his brow and said, “Just south of the Broken Blade Canyon in the Fierce Wind Forests, Ye Lai brought around 500 of [Judgement]’s players and seems to be confronting the thousand men that Rumor had brought from his Run Like Flames guild. It seems that they’re fighting over some kind of a mount. D\*mm\*t, Ye Lai that b\*st\*rd. He’s got so much fire in his belly. He definitely won’t step aside for Rumor, that pampered crown prince. What do we do? If they actually end up fighting, then the balance of power in the Chinese Server will become all muddled again!”

I furrowed my brows and gripped my hands, “D\*mm\*t. The whole business with the Greedy Wolf Raiders hasn’t calmed down yet and now this Rumor is setting off another thing. The Chinese Servers really can’t get any peace and quiet. It’s one thing after another!”

Meng Yao smiled, “The Chinese Server has a lot of people and a lot of land, which naturally comes with many conflicts. Brother, how about you take some people over and check out the situation!”

I nodded and said, “Li Mu, gather all of the Steel Blade Horsemen in the area. We don’t need too many, just around five hundred. Afterwards, follow me and let’s go check it out. [Judgement] is our ally. I’m not going to let anyone else abuse their power and ride on Ye La’s head. Not even the f\*cking, Virtual World Department Head’s nephew!”

“Yes sir. Everyone’s ready. There’s a total of 800 Steel Blade Horsemen. Three hundred of them are the Moon Elves that you like. Yao Yan is among them too. Should we set off now?”

“Ok let’s go!”

.....

When Li Mu, Meng Yao, and I arrived at the Bridge of Fate, we saw that all 800 of the Steel Blade Horsemen were ready for their commands. Yao Yan stood at the head with her long sword in hand, and had donned the Black Flame Set. I could see the designs of the Iron Umbrella etched into her shield. Looks like it already has the Iron Umbrella’s attributes now that it had melded together with her shield. She smiled to me, “Guildmaster, are we fighting?”

I nodded, “Let’s go!”



I patted my horse and sped forward. I rode at the very front while the eight hundred Steel Blade Horsemen thundered behind me. All eight hundred of them were wearing the Black Flame Set. Qing Qian was very effective in completing her asks. She had probably distributed the equipments as soon as she received them. These eight hundred were all [Zhan Long]'s elite forces and so, they were Tian Ling City's most elite battle power.

The Steel Blade Horsemen moved extremely fast. We sped past the Broken Blade Canyon and through the Broken Bone Shrubbery. Just a little further south and we would reach the Fierce Wind Forest. However, the Fierce Wind Forest was a vast map, there were even several medium sized maps within it. Plus, there were several places to grind levels. Based off of the coordinates that Li Mu had given me, Ye Lia was in the Needle Leaf Forest. I could see several Frost Beasts in the forest. As I got closer, they looked less like beasts, and more like, sheep! Sheep that were as tall as humans!

"Sheep!?" Li Mu couldn't help but laugh, "You're kidding me. Ye Lai that b\*st\*rd, is fighting with Rumor because of mountain sheep?"

Matcha pulled on her reins and said, "Yup. However, these aren't cute and happy little sheep. These monsters are called Frost Battle Rams. They're a species that are naturally talented in battle. The map north of the Fierce Wind Forests spawn these mounts. There's around a 2% chance of a Level 1 Mount appearing. They're Level 110 Saint Tier mounts. I believe the stats also give a 10% [Drain] effect. Otherwise they would never be that worth it. Did you think that Ye Lai was some kind of an idiot that would offend Rumor over some sheep?"

I smiled, "To be honest, with the fiery personality that Ye Lai has, even if it were just over some sheep, he would still get into a fight with [Run Like Flames].... Last time, you guys didn't see what happened at the General Appointment Stage. Rumor had such an aloof attitude, all because he has an uncle who is the Department Head of the Virtual World. It's like he actually thought he was the crown prince of Tian Ling City!"

Li Mu frowned, "What the f\*ck, I despise trash like that."

I nodded, "Same, and so does Ye Lai. But, Ye Lai's personality is truly fiery, I'm

worried... we should hurry!”

“Yes!”

.....

The Steel Blade Horsemen charged through the forest and very soon we saw hundreds of blue and orange dots in the forest in front of us. The orange dots were all players from [Judgement], to show that they were our allies.

“Hua la!”

I was the first to burst out of the shrubbery into a large clearing. It was surrounded with short brushes and small trees. The leaves of the weeds were extremely wide and were the Frost Mountain Rams’ favorite food. This was also the center of where all of the Frost Mountain Rams spawned, so it was naturally where the conflict was also centered.

In the clearing, it was clear that the battle had already begun. Ye Lai raised his battle axe and rode on a battle horse. He coldly looked in front of him at his opponents. He didn’t say anything but I could see the blood on his axe and the bodies of several players on the ground. That was probably the masterpiece of Ye Lai. All of the people that had died were from [Run Like Flames]. In terms of battle power in the game, Rumor’s players were far weaker.

.....

Rumor had a very ugly expression. He raised his flaming blade and shouted, “Ye Lai, what is the meaning of this? Is the Chinese Server Alliance just some pretense for you? Don’t you know that you are basically starting an internal war right now? Besides, now that your guild is acting against [Run Like Flames], does this mean you are breaking the treaty?”

Ye Lai coldly smiled, “[Judgement] has held this forest since three days ago. What are you doing here. You just happened to discover that the Frost Mountain Rams spawn here, so you want to take a little sip from the cup as well?”

Rumor fell silent for a few seconds and then said, “I was never trying to fight with you over these Frost Mountain Rams. All that happened was that a few of the squad leaders in my guild were passing by and happened to tame a few of

the Frost Battle Rams, that's all. I think you've misunderstood."

Ye Lai roared, "Misunderstood? Your, 'few squad leaders' brought four hundred people and tamed several of the Frost Battle Rams, and then happened to kill a hundred of [Judgement]'s players? [Judgement] has always quietly grinded levels in Tian Ling City without voicing a complaint. We've never provoked anyone. And now [Run Like Flames] wants to battle with us. How is [Judgement] not going to respond in kind? Come. If you're men, then bring all of the [Run Like Flames] players and battle it out with [Judgment]. Whoever loses gets out of this forest without another word!"

"You!"

Rumor's face flushed red, "Now you're just bullying people with your strength!"

## Chapter 723 - So Scared!

“What do we do, Chief?”

Under the chilly atmosphere, a team leader from [Run like Flames] with furrowed brows creasing up his forehead and wielding a lance from atop his mount spoke to Rumor.

“Ye Lai is adamant about not letting us off? Fuck. This is just too much! Who says only [Judgement] people are allowed to PK us and not the other way around? This is tyranny!”

Rumor’s visage went through several changes in the blink of an eye, “Be patient. We’ll retreat back 100 meters. Don’t start anything with [Judgement] for now. There’s no need to to engage in direct combat with them.”

“Ah. You mean?”

“You’ll get what I mean very soon.”

.....

Still hoisting his battleaxe, Ye Lai unflinchingly remained where he stood. His eyes retained their iciness as he glared at this 1000-man group from [Devour like Flames]. It’s unmistakable just how infuriated he was feeling. His fiery temper always had a short fuse but one aspect of him will never change. To him, the people of [Judgement] weren’t just comrades; they were just as dear to him as real siblings would be. Now that these very people had suffered at another’s hands, it was only reasonable that his rage would correlate appropriately.

“CLANG!”

The battleaxe heavily struck onto a protruding rock, and split it cleanly in two. Amidst the shower of sparks that ensued, Ye Lai growled, “This will be the boundary line. If anyone from [Run like Flames] dare cross it... murder him. Bastards want to dance all over our heads? Keep dreaming!”

From afar, Rumor returned a chilly sneer, “Better hope you don’t eat those

words, Ye Lai!”

With a frown on my forehead, I used the reins to urge my horse forward out of the woods.

“Am I too late?”

Seeing it was me, Ye Lai immediately broke into a laugh, “Xiao Yao! Why’re you here?”

“Got whiff of a big battle about to happen so I’m here for the show... and to see just who would dare to start another mess here in Tian Ling City after we’ve all signed the coalition treaty.”

Ye Lai ground his teeth, “[Run like Flames] came here to compete with us over the [Icy Battle Rams]... Humph! They lost in mob clearing speed so they turned the blades onto us. What are we? Toilet paper!?”

[TL Note: toilet paper = can cut as many squares as you like]

I didn’t give any reply but turned towards the bunch from [Run like Flames] instead.

“It was [Judgement] that started everything! Why’s the blame being pushed onto us? Fine, since I had everything that’s happened recorded, I’m not afraid to debate this face-to-face. Don’t forget, Ye Lai. It was your guild’s Assassin Jing Ke that made the first move!” Rumor matched Ye Lai accusation for accusation while coldly gloating.

Ye Lai became livid once more, “If it weren’t for YOUR people verbally degrading Jing Ke’s girlfriend, he wouldn’t have done that!”

“Wait, just what happened exactly?” I was surprised by the revelation.

Ye Lai forced himself to calm down and continued, “Couple hours ago, a pretty tough Sacred rank Boss spawned in this area. Unfortunately, it was discovered by people from both our guilds. In order to avoid another conflict, we agreed to cooperate and kill it together. Jing Ke and his healer girlfriend were coordinating with a group from [Run like Flames]. During the fight, she made two mistakes while healing and they led to the deaths of a Knight and a Swordsman. Afterwards, that bunch from [Run like Flames] began to pile it on

her with outright insults like ‘garbage’, ‘hussy’ and ‘slut’. Motherfuckers drove her to logout in tears. If I was Jing Ke, I would’ve done the same!”

“So that’s the case……” I muttered through gritted teeth.

Rumor had his horse canter over and spoke up, “As we’ve started talking, Guildmaster Xiao Yao, please be our witness. Those were simply words induced by blind anger, that’s all. Why should something like that lead to conflict breaking out between our guilds. As the Guildmaster of [Judgement], Ye Lai failed to properly rein in his subordinates. Shouldn’t he share part of the responsibility?”

The corner of my lips rose into a faint sneer as I directly glared at Rumor and clearly enunciate every line and word.

“This is a game. It’s meant to be separate world for people to relax and enjoy themselves. I’ve always despised ‘keyboard warriors’ that can only insult people in a game. As long as she didn’t do it on purpose, then on what basis do you get the right to demean her like that? You might group people as good or bad by their gaming aptitudes but a person’s moral character should never be discriminated like this. Do you think that being better at the game than her gives you that right? Take a look in a mirror! Just who the hell do you think you are?”

“Rumor! Your subordinates harshly humiliated that healer for just a couple of honest mistakes yet you laid all the blame on them for retaliating. You say Ye Lai failed to rein in his men? Then what about yourself? Am I allowed to accuse you of promoting unruly behaviour from your subordinates and picking a fight with [Judgement]!?”

“You...!”

Rumor looked as if petrified on the spot, unable to comprehend that I would give such a speech. He’d become completely speechless. After a while, he finally spoke through grating teeth, “I’ve heard before that [Zhan Long] and [Judgement] are on the same boat. I should’ve known... But still, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, I never would’ve figured you to be so unreasonable between right and wrong. Do you realize that your words are trampling all over our coalition treaty!?” [TL Note: and yours aren’t?]

I burst out into laughter from the hilarity, and looked towards the sky, “If there’s such a thing as true justice in Heaven, I’m sure a bolt of lightning would’ve struck the petty and hypocritical you to death long ago.”

Li Mu trotted forward as well and laughed, “Rumor. Just take your men and leave. This place had, long ago, been claimed by [Judgement] as their leveling spot. If you want to share an already claimed map, then you must compromise with them. That’s the rule. If you can’t, then scram. Keep being stubborn over these [Icy Battle Rams] and you’ll just smear more crap over your title of the Chinese server coalition’s deputy commander.”

Rumor’s pupils suddenly contracts and a faint sneer appeared, “Is that so? Well I’m not budging an inch today. I’m staying here and I’ll wait for the chance to make everything right!”

“Oh?”

My eyes narrowed threateningly as I boldly drew my sword and bluntly growled, “Steel Blade Cavalry, arms out! Defend our comrades from [Judgement]. If anyone from [Run like Flames] dare to make a move, then retaliate. Put the bullcrap like his ‘deputy commander’ status out of your minds. If there’s trouble to be had, I, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, will deal with it!”

“.....” Ye Lai didn’t say anything but gratitude could be seen in his eyes.

.....

Strangely, Rumor no longer made any more moves or replies and only waited quietly where he stood. However, Meng Yao rode up to me, shrewdness glimmering in her bright eyes, “Big Bro, he seems to be stalling for time!”

I gave her a quick nod and whispered, “I’ve already seen through him. Still, we must interfere in this matter today. Rumor is relying on being the nephew of China’s Virtual World Affairs Department Head and his appointment as the deputy commander of the coalition to make an example of [Judgement]. If Ye Lai retreats today, then [Run like Flames] is certain to start swaggering in Tian Ling City. This so called ‘Run like flames’ really will burn through Tian Ling City like flames!”

Then Yue Yao Yan rode up, “Chief, should we delegate more of the Steel Blade

Cavalry over here?”

“That would be for the best. Have them do their grinding in the Shattered Blade Gorge and be ready to coordinate with us at all times. And be on the lookout for the tornado downburst.” I gave my assent.

“Understood!”

Shattered Blade Gorge is less than 10 minutes away from here by horseback. While the 800 men behind me were the elites, it’s still far from enough if pitted against tens of thousands.

.....

With a word from Ye Lai, the players of [Judgement] continued their grinding and taming. As for me, I moved our people over to the edges of the forest. Rumor’s staying? So am I.

About 20 minutes later, Matcha sent me a PM, “Boss. Based on reports from various players leveling in the forest, we’ve discovered the presence of the Greedywolf Brigade. More or less, 5000 of them are making their way through the Bone Breaker’s Woods. They seem to be aiming straight for us.”

“Eh?”

I began frowning, “Dammit. What’s Rumor planning... could he be the one who called [Thousand Burial] over?”

In [Zhan Long], Wang Jian’s the one most capable of a calm judgement. After a moment a silent thinking, he spoke up, “Boss, after the so called ‘coalition treaty’ was made, the Greedy wolf Brigade hadn’t gone around pillaging anyone; you can’t even consider them as raiders anymore. But Unordinary and You Yi, with their bloodlust, probably can’t hold themselves back any longer. I think that Rumor is precisely making use of this one point. With his position as deputy commander, he can deploy the Greedy wolf Brigade to suppress [Judgement] and even attack [Zhan Long]. He can provide a valid excuse and that suits Not Ordinary just fine. The number of Greedy Wolf Raiders under him is increasing by the day. There’s no doubt that he’ll want to use this conflict to empower themselves once more. And to have their names resound throughout Tian Ling City again.”



A faint jolt went through my body, causing me to brandish my sword and cut down a nearby tree, “Li Mu. Assemble the entire main guild at the Bridge of Fate area. Prepare for war!”

“You’re certain?”

I gave him a curt nod.

He grins, “Okay! All we need is your word. Our boys definitely won’t say otherwise. I’ll go delegate our troops.”

.....

Matcha suddenly sneered, “Boss. the Greedy Wolf Brigade ran into a roadblock in the Bone Breaker’s Woods!”

“Wait what?” I received another surprise, “Those Greedwolves are being so audacious... just exactly who has the guts to block their way?”

“Take a look!”

With the wave of a hand, she shared a video with me. Well it’s definitely within the Bone Breaker’s Woods; can’t mistake those lush greens and shrubbery. Aside from that, like locusts, the Greedy Wolves were clustered up as far as the eye can see. In the heart of the woods though, was a sea of blue. Ah it’s [Legend]’s Earth Bane Oxen, one of Tian Ling City’s elite cavalry forces. Enchanted Painting had her sword in hand as she rode at the head of 2000+ Earth Bane Oxen. Her pretty little face was clearly broadcasting an air of mockery as she chuckled, “Yooooo, just where might Guildmaster Not Ordinary be going in such a hurry?”

Axe in hand, Not Ordinary spoke up, “The Chinese server’s Coalition Deputy Commander, Rumor, had suffered an attack in the Gale Forest. [Judgement] has purposely broken the treaty so we’ve received orders to come as reinforcements to ensure his safety. Miss, please allow us through. If we end up being late to the battle, I, Not Ordinary, can’t handle the responsibility.”

‘Oh?’

Her lips curled up into a sneer, “So [Run like Flames] is picking on [Judgement] in the Gale Forest?”

Not Ordinary froze. “Wait, let me make it clear. It is [Run like Flames] that is being bullied by [Judgement] in the Gale Forest! Ye Lai has always been unruly and bossy, never acknowledging other people’s existence. Now, he’s even purposely making things difficult for the Deputy Commander in the Gale Forest. We’ve been summoned to have our presence even things out. Please Miss, we’ve chatted enough, open the path; let my 20,000 men through, thanks. We’ll treat you to dinner some other day!”

Enchanted Painting propped herself up on the Earth Bane Oxen’s horn lazily as she played with a strand of hair, and looked completely the part of a seductive courtesan, “That just won’t do~ I’ve also received orders from the Chinese server’s Coalition Commander, Fang Ge Que himself, to guard these woods and not let anyone who might threaten the peace of the alliance through. Personally, I want to you guys pass by but I also can’t handle the responsibility. I’ll have to ask Chief Not Ordinary to please take a detour~”

“YOU!!”

You Yi drew his sword, “Enchanted Painting, you’re doing this on purpose aren’t you!?”

“Oh my! The Greedywolf Brigade are finally setting their sights on [Legend] aren’t they?”

Enchanted Painting’s voice wasn’t particularly loud, but a firm will backed each word, “Xuanyuan Feng, send word out! Have the 3000 Earth Bane Oxen riders to the west come back us up. Oh and the 10,000 [Legend] members that are leveling in the northeast too. Let them know that [Thousand Burial]’s Greedywolf Brigade is really frightening and they want to bully us. I’m feeling really nervous right now... and really scared!”

.....

Xuanyuan Feng: “.....”

Not Ordinary: “.....”

# Chapter 725 Who's the Scumbag!?

“Get closer!”

As Li Mu charged, he stabbed his spear into the body of one of the Fiery Greedy Wolf Raiders, and drew out a spring of blood. He laughed, “Well, these Greedy Wolf Raiders aren’t that much! And here I was wondering what everyone was freaking out about!”

Wang Jian, Old K, Matcha, and Death God’s Elegy all activated their [Flying Sword]s. One after another, their skills activated in the crowd. The Greedy Wolf Raiders were already unable to endure the momentum from our original charge, not to mention that a large part of the [Zhan Long] players were now outfitted with the Black Flame Sets. The Steel Blade Horsemen caused even more incredible pain with their [Blazing Flame] effect!

You Yi stood at the center of the crowd and saw that the situation was falling out of their favor and immediately shouted, “Do not panic! Concentrate your fire power. Create five man teams and spam your [Flying Sword], [Skyshaker Slash] and [Battle Axe Throw] skills on one Steel Blade Horsemen. We’ll kill them one by one!”

The Greedy Wolf Raiders acted quickly and each picked up their weapons. They were starting to more consciously focus in on us with the concentrated firepower tactic. One after another, battle axes and swords flew into the crowd of Steel Blade Horsemen. In seconds, screams flew into the air and the sound of more clashes rose up into the air. Death God’s Elegy and Yue Yao Yan were among the crowd that was targeted. Each of them shuddered as they sat on their mounts, and took the hits. The Black Flame Shield of the Black Flame Sets were now truly coming into effect. Like that, they took the fierce attacks head on. With a wave of their hand, they all cast [Cleansing Wind] and other recovery type spells and took a gulp of health potion and continued to duke it out.

Along the entire frontline, only Call Me Master, Minimalist, and Yue Shao Chen, were somewhat successful with their concentrated firepower. They killed a dozen or so Steel Blade Horsemen. However, that barely had any effect on us.

On the other hand, the Steel Blade Horsemen that were fitted with the Black Flame Sets had reached an almost unbeatable state. Like that, they ripped apart the Greedy Wolf Raiders' formation. After a wave of iron hooves stomped across the ground, they left mountains of corpses in their wake.

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and activated [Sword Tempest]. My Brilliant Flame Emperor quickly completed nine revolutions of [Blade Spin] and was whirling back towards me. "Pa!" I grabbed the hilt from the air and charged forward. I swung both swords, and cut down people left and right. Blood splashed forth from all directions. A dozen of the Greedy Wolf Raiders had already been pushed into critical health from my attacks. Then, with another charge from the Matcha, they could only look straight at death.

Within the crowd of players, a white horse charged to the front. It was my sister, Li Meng Yao. At the moment, she was also wearing the Black Flame Set and she rode on the Verdant Pear and carried a Frost Sword in hand as she cut through the crowd of Greedy Wolf Raiders. Both her advances and her retreats were extremely calculated and concise. Looks like this little kid has worked hard and studied the recordings of the top notch players. With her advances and retreats, she could keep herself safe while dealing effective and explosive attacks to her enemy.

"Lock onto the team leader of [Zhan Long], Xi Yao Ge Jin!"

Minimalist raised his sword, his eyes filled with killing intent, "That Xi Yao Ge Jin is Li Xiao Yao's sister. Killing her will deal a blow to [Zhan Long]'s morale!"

In the area, a dozen or so Greedy Wolf Raiders all charged at Meng Yao. Before they got close, a couple were already launching their [Battle Axe Throw]s at her. Meng Yao did not panic at all. Instead, she raised her sword and halted her advance. Right on her spot, she cast [Heavenly Shield Wall]!

"Clang Clang Clang!"

"2731 ! "

"3220 ! "

"3327 ! "

.....

Unfortunately for them, Meng Yao's defense was just too strong. Furthermore, the Black Flame Set ignored 30% of damage. If the Greedy Wolf Raiders wanted to kill her, then it would be a nearly impossible task.

"That group of trash actually dares to bully guildmaster's sister!"

Yue Yao Yan passed by Meng Yao and lead a group of Steel Blade Horsemen as they charged at Minimalist and the others. Looks like Meng Yao's relationship with other players in the guild was pretty good. Everyone was taking care of her.

I urged my horse forward and cut right into the crowd. [Zhan Long] had only used five thousand of their Steel Blade Horsemen. We hadn't moved any of our other troops. Just like that, the Steel Blade Horsemen had shaken the Greedy Wolf Raiders, and turned the tides of war against them. Especially with the thousand that were fitted with the Black Flame sets who lead the charge. They had reinforced the endurance of the formation's defense. No matter how fast or how powerful the Greedy Wolf Raiders' attack was, it was pointless if they couldn't break through our defense!

I looked to my side and saw that Ye Lai was also charging at the Greedy Wolf Brigade with his thousand [Judgement] Frost Battle Rams. The Frost Battle Rams had a 10% [Drain] effect and they were particularly good for drawn out battles. Furthermore, there was a chance that the target of their attacks had a chance to decrease the target's movement speed by 30%. And so all of the Greedy Wolf Raiders that fought in close quarters with the Frost Rams were covered in a thin layer of frost, which decreased their movement speed, therefore decreasing the momentum of their charge.

"Kill!"

Ye Lai stood at the very head of the team and swung his fiery battle axe and killed a Greedy wolf Raider with one [Holy Flame Cut] and let out a roar. Ye Lai galloped forward through a rain of blood. He raised his arm and raging flames rose up around him. He had entered a whole new state. He raised his battle axe again, and in that moment, he had cut down another dozen players. The Frost Rams pushed forward with their guildmaster. The Greedy Wolf Raiders couldn't hold them back.

.....

“F\*ck....”

In the distance, i could see Rumor’s expression growing uglier. The sword that he held in his hand trembled with anger, “The Greedy Wolf Raiders... Aren’t the Greedy Wolf Raiders undefeatable? Then... then why is it that they can’t charge through the [Judgement] and [Zhan Long] cavalry?”

The Tyrant of Western Chu coldly laughed, “That’s just Not Ordinary blowing extra steam. How are the Greedy Wolf Raiders strong?”

Little Piggy grit his teeth, “It's not that the Greedy Wolf Raiders aren’t strong, it's because the [Zhan Long] and [Judgement] cavalry were too strong. Especially the [Zhan Long] Steel Blade Horsemen. All of the players on the front line are wearing the same set of armor. I can’t tell what set it is, but its defense is abnormally high. Normally the Greedy Wolf Raiders would be able to break through their enemy’s defense and easily obtain victory. But now, the Steel Blade Horsemen are at a whole new level. They can already hold off the charge from the Greedy Wolf Raiders, now all they’re wasting is time....”

The guildmaster of the [Knights Templar] raised his sword and grinned, “Looks like [Thousand Burial]’s undefeated Greedy Wolves cannot handle [Zhan Long] and [Judgement]. Vice guildmaster, based on what I know, Enchanted Painting and Xuan Yuan Feng from [Legend] are grinding levels nearby. Why aren’t we bringing them over to suppress the rebels of [Zhan Long] and [Judgement]?”

Little Piggy couldn’t help but smile, “Shang Li, do you really think that [Zhan Long] and [Judgement] are rebels? This is just a game. Aren’t you thinking of yourself as too righteous? These wilderness battles are completely determined by strength. It has nothing to do with destroying rebels at all.”

The [Valley of the Gods] guildmaster Lu Dong Bing raised his brow and said, “Little Piggy, which side are you on? Are you secretly one of [Zhan Long] or [Judgement]’s people? Why do I think that you’re trying to help them?”

Little Piggy retorted. “Smile from the British Server has already brought people and trespassed into the Tian Ling City territory. The armies of Moon City will invade us any day. I don’t think that now is a good time to have internal battles. Besides, based on what I understand, it was [Run Like Flames]’s players

who first shamed a female [Judgement] player and that's what lead to this PK. Both in terms of public and personal, we're not in the right. We could have avoided this entire battle, so why must we fight!"

As he said that, Little Piggy immediately grit his teeth and said, "Let's back this up. [Zhan Long] and [Judgement] are both the strongest battle powers in the Chinese Server. In the future, our main forces in the country battles will be them. And now that war is upon us, we're setting ourselves up to fail. I have no idea why we're doing this, nor do I know why we're going after the [Zhan Long] and [Judgement]!"

"Little Piggy!"

Rumor couldn't help but raise his voice and order Little Piggy to stop talking. He coldly glared at everyone and said, "Seeing as we're all standing here, then I ask everyone here to understand just what your position is. Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Ye Lai have amassed their power in Tian Ling City for a long time. They're like warlords, they have no respect for the alliance. If we don't punish them today, then I'm afraid that in the future country battles, they won't follow commands. They may even seek asylum with the enemy and become an enemy combatant!"

"Ha....haha...."

Little Piggy laughed and gripped his musket. A sliver of despair flashed in his eyes and said, "Is this the f\*cking idiom, the crafty blocking the road?"

"Who are you calling crafty?" Rumor's killing intent rose. Behind him, a group of [Run Like Flames] players all nervously gripped their weapons. It was as though they would jump to action with a single command from Rumor and cut Little Piggy to pieces.

Liu Ying finally spoke up and roared, "Little Piggy, that's enough. Do not contradict the Deputy Commander any more. This won't benefit you or our guild in any way!"

Little Piggy said, "Brother Ying, are you sure we have to fight amongst ourselves?"

Liu Yin nodded, "The arrow is already notched, we must send it out!"

Little Piggy smiled and leaned his gun on him and straightened out the bullet strap on his shoulder before saying, "Alright then, let's do this slowly though, I'm getting a little tired."

As he said that, Little Piggy turned around to leave. The sight of his lonely back looked incredibly desolate. He was the vice guildmaster of [Wrath of Heroes], and now the [Wrath of Heroes] could be considered a strong and well trained army. Their guild system had been reinvigorated and systemized. These were all due to Little Piggy's hard work, but in the end, he and Liu Ying were not on the same track.

"Vice guildmaster!"

A dozen [Wrath of Heroes] players chased after him and said, "Vice guildmaster, I'm leaving with you!"

Liu Yin got angry, "All of you, stand still. Have you forgotten who the guildmaster of [Wrath of Heroes]?"

Little Piggy bitterly laughed and turned around, "I'll go and scout out the map by myself. You guys go back and follow your commands. You are all part of [Wrath of Heroes] main force. Remember your responsibilities. Don't be selfish like me."

"Vice guildmaster...."

The group of [Wrath of Heroes] cavalry stood there and quietly watched Little Piggy disappear into the forest.

What a bleak feeling.

.....

Little Piggy couldn't change anything and the battle continued. Furthermore, Rumor could now see the limits to the strength of the Greedy Wolf Raiders. He looked back at the guildmasters and said "Let's not give [Zhan Long] and [Judgement]'s Cavalry groups a chance to rest. The Greedy Wolf Raiders will soon retreat, who will go after?"



## Chapter 726 - Provoking the Wrong Man

[Valley of the Gods] clearly didn't want to go. Lu Dong Bing rubbed his nose and said, "The main force of [Valley of the Gods] was mainly made up of mages and archers. We're much better suited for city battles. Large scale charges aren't towards our advantage. Rather, I think our brothers from the [Knights Templar] have strong warriors and cavalry. At least 50% of their troops are knights. This time, they've brought out at least thirteen thousand cavalry players with them. They are the best pick for this battle."

Shang Li shuddered and glared straight at Lu Dong Bing, "Why do we have to be the first to charge?"

War Tent chuckled as he stood behind Lu Dong Bing, "There's no other choice, blame yourself for bringing so many people!"

Shang Li trembled. After a few seconds, he suddenly smiled, "If it's like that then... Deputy Commander, I have a suggestion."

Rumor's curiosity was peaked and he smiled, "What is it?"

Shang Li replied, "The Greedy Wolf Brigade is rumored to have 20,000 cavalymen, each stronger than the next, but even like that, they are losing in this battle. Just from this, you can see that the [Judgement] and [Zhan Long] cavalry aren't some pushovers. Against a strong enemy, we can only stake it all in one attack. So how about this, why don't you hadn the command of the [Valley of Gods] and [Wrath of Heroes] cavalry type players to me. Then, with [Knights Templar]'s 15,000 mounts, we can all charge together. With all three of our great guilds, we'll have at least 30,000 mounts. Then, we'll have Not Ordinary's Greedy Wolf Brigade charge one more time. We'll definitely be able to defeat those Steel Blade Horsemen and Frost Battle Rams with one strike!"

Rumor was at least the child of an official, and was just as ignorant and incompetent as any other kid, so he was someone who never had his own opinion. Once he heard Shang Li's suggestion, he immediately broke into a smile, "Ok then, we'll do just that! Lu Dong Bing, Tyrant of Western Chu, don't be so nitpicky. Everyone just charge all together. We won't let [Zhan Long]

break through!”

He didn’t even give Lu dong Bing or Liu Ying a chance to refute his decision. The three guilds were going to charge with all of their cavalry.

.....

On the battlefield, the Greedy Wolf Raider were being pushed back. With the glory from their older days, Not Ordinary and You Yi were hoping to defeat [Zhan Long]’s Steel Blade Horsemen in a head on battle. Never would they have managed that the Steel Blade Horsemen were like a strong wall in the face of a storm. No matter how hard they tried, they couldn’t even make the wall tremble. There was no way they could continue to drag this battle on. Either way, the Greedy Wolf Raiders had suffered the most in this fight. Sick for you, Yue Shao Chen and Shu Yan had all died in battle and the Greedy Wolf Raiders did not have the same spirit and drive that they had before.

D\*mmmit, keep charging!” Not Ordinary’s battle axe was dripping with blood, and he was still unwilling to admit his defeat. He continued to command his troops to try and turn the tide of battle.

Behind him, You Yi shouted, “Boss, Rumor is commanding the Greedy Wolf Raiders to retreat!”

“What?!”

Not Ordinary’s face twisted with rage, “Just what right does he have to command me to retreat! Aren’t we doing well enough on our own?”

You Yi said, “Rumor said that the Greedy Wolf Raiders haven’t had any success even after fighting for so long. If we continue this, then we might even be completely annihilated. So, he wants us to retreat and switch over to the combined cavalry of the [Knights Templar], [Valley of the Gods] and [Wrath of Heroes]!”

Not Ordinary grit his teeth, “I f\*cking fought for so long and I’m just going to sit around while I hand over all of my efforts to someone else? No, if I don’t completely shred all of [Zhan Long]’s Steel Blade Horsemen, then I will not rest!”

You Yi was starting to panic, “Boss!”

On the side, Call Me Master added, “Guildmaster, it doesn’t look like many of the Steel Blade Horsemen and the Frost Battle Rams are actually dying, rather, the Greedy Wolf Brigade is decreasing at an alarming rate. If we continue like this, then we’ll truly lose all our strength. If every Greedy Wolf Raider loses 1-2 pieces of equipment like this, then we won’t have any chance at victory the next time we see the Steel Blade Horsemen. If we preserve our strength, there will always be a chance for us to rise up again. Let’s retreat for now and let the three other guilds try and fight it out!”

Call Me Master’s words made sense, plus Not Ordinary always had a soft spot for girls. And so, he nodded and shouted out, “Alright, Retreat!”

.....

In reality, if the Greedy Wolf Raiders didn’t retreat, they would’ve lost terribly. Their forward wall had pretty much been completely annihilated. The entire frontline was littered with the bodies of the Greedy Wolf Raiders. Piles of potions and equipment were scattered around the battlefield. Just looking at it all made my heart itch to pick them up.

As I saw the Greedy Wolf Raiders retreat like the tide, I raised my blade and shouted, “Don’t follow them. Let’s take a quick break. The next wave of troops will come soon!”

Ye Lai swung his bloody battle axe over his shoulder and laughed, “Beautiful! We fought beautifully! We just gotta fight those Greedy Wolf b\*st\*rds head on! D\*mn, they really thought that they could defeat us with numbers!”

I nodded with a smile, “Yup!”

On the side, Li Mu was counting up our numbers. He replied, “In this battle, the Greedy Wolf Raiders lose 13,721 players, while our Steel Blade Horsemen lost less than a thousand and Ye Lai lost around two thousand. Ha ha, we must’ve completely broken their confidence in this battle! Let’s see if they dare and provoke [Zhan Long] ever again after this battle!”

Previously, the Greedy Wolf Raiders had relied on their advantage in numbers. They didn’t even worry about the [Zhan Long]’s Steel Blade Horsemen. Now though, with the Black Flame Set and the Frostbite Sword’s might, the Steel Blade Horsemen managed to deal an enormous blow to the

Greedy Wolf Raiders' main force while only suffering minor losses. This battle must have truly made Not Ordinary lose confidence. After this battle, the Greedy Wolf Raider's legendary name will be broken. From today onward, people will remember that [Zhan Long] had used five thousand Steel Blade Horsemen to completely crush twenty thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders.

I smiled and said, "Yup, everyone fought beautifully. Thanks for the work, but... we must continue. The next wave of their alliance will be upon us soon!"

Li Mu raised his eyebrow and said, "If they come at us again, they'll definitely have the advantage in numbers. Should we use our ranged players now?"

I nodded, "Yes!"

.....

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and shouted, "Steel Blade Horsemen, advance forward a hundred meters and create a line defensive formation!"

In the distance, Rumor and Not Ordinary clearly didn't expect the Steel Blade Horsemen to push forward. They couldn't tell what was going on and their cavalry slowed down their advance.

Riding on my Flying Scythe War Horse, I lead the advance. Following right behind me, Wan Er, Dong Cheng, and Dancing Forest led the rest of our main force, and provided support from right behind the Steel Blade Horsemen. Our Cavalrymen spread out their formation. Like this, we'll have the support of our mages and archers. Furthermore, we'll have the heals from our healers as well. Under those conditions, our Steel Blade Horsemen can put aside all their worries and fight with all they've got!

To be honest, everyone knew that Rumor's [Run Like Flames] was a no namer in Tian Ling City. It was a small guild that couldn't even be considered third rate. However, he managed to become the Deputy Commander purely based on his connections, and was now the second most powerful person in the Chinese Servers. Of course, now, he needed some way to prove his strength, otherwise nobody would give a sh\*t about him. And so, [Zhan Long] and [Judgement] were to become the chicken that was sacrificed for the monkey. Unfortunately for Rumor, he picked the wrong people. He had thought too simply of this game. This wasn't a world where a second generation official could flaunt his

power.

This was where the future hierarchy of the game was determined, through strength and brothers!

.....

After a whole thirty minutes passed, finally, the four guilds finished their preparations. Shang Li, War Tent and Liu Ying lead their three armies to advance while the Greedy Wolf Raiders had revived quite a few of their forces and made up a ten thousand man team. One team of five thousand was lead by Not Ordinary and was going to ambush the left flank while the other five thousand man team was lead by You Yi to do the same on the right flank. Their strategy was too obvious. They might as well have sent a battle notification to us.

I flicked my hand, and shook off the drying blood on my Dragon Reservoir Sword. Even I wasn't too clear on what we were fighting for. The battle before was to test out the battle power of the Steel Blade Horsemen with their Black Flame sets. As for this battle, was it just an internal conflict?

I looked to my side and saw that Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K were all excited for the next round of killing. As the commander of three armies, I couldn't say bullsh\*t like I didn't want to fight. And so, I waved my sword and roared, "Prepare for battle! Let's show those trash what true power is and see just who wants to flaunt their strength in Tian Ling City!"

Those words had actually been directed at Rumor. I could already tell that when the country war opened up, this Rumor will definitely try and interfere with the battle strategies as the second most powerful person. However, he himself is completely ignorant and unskilled. All he really has is a special position. He would only bring more harm than good. However, this was someone that Director Liu Gong had put in here as some kind of representative of the Virtual World Committee. In their eyes, I'm just some warlord who amassed large armies. There was nothing more that needed to be said, all I could do was kiss up to them. Everything was for the honor of the Chinese Servers.

.....

Hooves crushed the leaves on the forest ground. The advance of the three guilds had begun. [Zhan Long]'s Steel Blade Horsemen each raised their swords and shields, and took a defensive stance.

Dong Cheng and Thousand Suns' net of firepower quickly descended upon our enemies. One after another, [Magma Abyss]es and [Lightning Eagle Formation]s appeared on the field. Shang Li raised his spear and shouted, "Careful of the magic attacks!"

Unfortunately, a group of [Knights Templar] men had charged right into the net and were blasted to pieces!

"Shua!"

The moment Shang Li had charged out of the firepower, he suddenly took a bullet to his chest. Blood spurt forth. It was an attack from Xing Lie. "Peng peng peng!" His musket fired three times and Xing Lie's three hit combo had shot off 30,000 health from this [Knights Templar] knight. After he lost too much health, Shang Li fell off his horse and retreated with his shield raised. Rage flared up in his face, "What the f\*ck, what kind of attack power is this? Isn't [Zhan Long]'s musketeer too OP?"

This was just the first face to face meet and yet the guildmaster of the [Knights Templar] was nearly killed in one hit. This was enough to disturb the three guilds. There was no way they could break through the sturdy wall of the Steel Blade Horsemen. One after another, the [Knights Templar] swordsmen used [Blade Rush] to try and pierce through our formation, only to be killed by Wan Er and Qing Qian who were waiting behind. Once the swordsmen left their formation, they all died.

"Peng peng peng..."

Sparks flew as the enemies rammed against the Steel Blade Horsemen. Even so, they didn't move a single step. Rather, it was the [Knights Templar] who ended up being pushed back and then got hit by our archers, musketeers and mages. Very soon, a pile of corpses lay before us.

In less than five minutes, Liu Ying raised his sword, the muscles in his face twitching. He turned around and shouted, "Retreat! If we continue this, we're just running towards our deaths!"

With Liu Yin's shout, all of the other guilds also lost interest in this battle. After all, it was just walking towards their own deaths!

.....

Rumor raised his sword and suddenly held off the retreating troops with a group of people. He roared, "If anyone dares to run away, kill them all!"

Liu Ying roared, "You dare. Why don't you try!"

Rumor was finally at a loss. It seems that he finally realized that he had just provoked someone he shouldn't have.

# Chapter 727 - Compromise

“WHAT TO DO?! What should we do now.....” Rumor lifted his long sword as he stood in a corner, his spirit clearly shaken.

The Guild Leader of the [Knights Templar] urged his horse over and shouted loudly, “ Deputy Commander, if you continue with this killing, we will no longer have any negotiating grounds. What Tyrant of Western Chu said does have some logic to it. Furthermore, this is a civil war, there is no need to kill every single one of them!”

Rumor pulled on the reins but he was unable to stop halfway. There was no choice. It was he who decided to attack [Zhan Long] and [Judgement], these two big guilds. Originally, he thought bringing along 20000 Greedy Wolf Raiders along with three other large guilds with three times the number of players as compared to the two guilds would ensure victory over them but who would have thought that [Zhan Long] and [Judgement] would be so powerful and unyielding which caused Rumor’s initial plan of displaying his strength to all go down the drains.

At this point of time, Rumor couldn’t advance nor retreat. To stop halfway was also out of the question.

[Valley of the Gods]’s War Tent lifted his battleax as he charged forward, and roared at the top his lungs, “Deputy Commander, give us an order!”

The colour of Rumor’s face turned darker. He probably wanted nothing more than to dig himself a hole to die in.

At that moment, Not Ordinary had just commanded his Greedy Wolf Brigade to retreat. He was clearly annoyed, after all, he knew that defeating [Zhan Long] would be impossible today.

Call Me Master raised her spear and lead the Greedy Wolf Raiders. She wiped some blood off of her snow white thighs and said, “Deputy Commander Rumor, we’ve suffered too heavy of losses in these past few waves. In the end, this is just an internal conflict. We’ve already shown [Zhan Long] our stance, there’s



no need to sacrifice every last one of our soldiers. Let's stop this battle already. As long as Deputy Commander agrees, then I'll go and talk it out with Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Ye Lai!"

Finally, a reasonable person had appeared among the five guilds. Rumor glanced at Call Me Master and felt that she understood his intentions. Finally, he nodded, "Ok, go. If Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Ye Lai agree to stop this battle, then we will too. We've suffered quite a loss in this battle, so we'll count it as a warning!"

Call Me Master's lip twitched, the smile disappeared as quickly as it had come. She bowed and said, "Yes sir, I'll go tell him that. Deputy Commander, wait for my return!"

As she said that, Call Me Master turned around with her spear and brought a team of Greedy Wolf Raiders and dashed towards the chaotic mess between [Zhan Long] and the [Knights Templar]. Light flashed everywhere and the grass had been dyed red with blood. If [Zhan Long] lost any Steel Blade Horsemen, it was one death for every five from the [Knights Templar]. Otherwise, they would never be able to kill a single Steel Blade Horseman.

Corpses were littered around. Even Call me Master couldn't help but raise an eyebrow. She charged through the group and raised her spear while she shouted, "Guildmaster Xiao Yao, Guildmaster Ye Lai, I have something to say!"

"Pu!"

Li Mu pulled his sword out of the chest of one of the [Knights Templar] which brought about a splatter of blood as he laughed, "Isn't that Call Me Master? Wang Jian, charge with me! Let's go and capture that girl. I heard that her legs were extremely long!"

Wang Jian was speechless.

I quickly interrupted, "Wait, don't attack. Maintain your positions!"

Once everyone heard that, they immediately stopped their advance. Call Me Master took the chance to walk over and say, "Now that we've reached this point, all of our guilds have taken heavy losses. Deputy Commander believes that if we keep this up, we'll only end up losing on both sides. And so,

Guildmaster Xiao Yao, must this battle continue?”

Old K coldly laughed, “Look at the body count on the field. I’m starting to think that if we continue this, it won’t be a lose lose situation, but rather you guys losing and us winning!”

One Second Hero picked up his spear and chuckled, “That’s right. And, it’s even with the five guilds all ganging up together. You guys tried to beat [Zhan Long]’s prestige in Tian Ling City, well dream on. You’re just a pack of newbies!”

Call Me Master’s expression fell, and she seemed a little awkward and embarrassed, as though she didn’t know what to say.

I quickly walked forward and cut One Second Hero off, “Alright already. Either ways, this is an internal battle, there’s no need to fight until we all guard the bodies. [Zhan Long] still took quite a few losses. If Rumor wants to stop the battle, then let’s allow the five guilds to retreat!”

Call Me Master’s heart leaped, “Really? What about Guildmaster Ye Lai?”

In the distance, Ye Lai raised his bloody battle axe and said, “[Judgement] and [Zhan Long] will both take a step back. If Xiao Yao says that, then [Judgement] agrees.”

“That’s great! Then let’s stop this battle!” Call Me Master excitedly said.

I shook my head, “There’s more. If we’re going to stop this battle, there must be some conditions met!”

“Conditions?” She was stunned.

I smiled back, “But of course. Otherwise, the brothers of [Zhan Long] and [Judgement] that have died will have died for no reason. Why did we have to fight this? It’s not because we were trying to show off. It’s not because we had to suppress that Deputy Commander. It’s because our friends have been humiliated and our dignity has been provoked. This wilderness battle was started because some players from [Run Like Flames] had cursed at one of the female players from [Judgement]. And so, why don’t you bring out those people so that they can publicly apologize to her. Otherwise, I will summon all five thousand of the high level NPC soldiers from Dragon’s Den to come here to Mount Zi Wu so that they can engage with the five guilds at any time. Even

though we don't have your numbers, I will make sure that not a single person from the five guilds leaves this map alive."

Ye Lai couldn't help but smile, "That's right. If you don't apologize, then the brothers of [Judgement] won't rest!"

Call Me Master grit her teeth and nodded, "Let me bring this up to Rumor!"

Not long after, the female player from [Judgement] had come over as well. It was a Level 115 Healer. She appeared extremely shy and really did look like a newbie. She was pretty cute. No wonder Jing Ke liked her.

The members of [Run Like Flames] were already starting to argue. Those people, under the command of the Deputy Commander were probably fairly arrogant. To make them apologize was not going to be an easy task. Today we must get an apology though. Otherwise, Rumor with his attitude, would continue to try and create more waves in this world.

After a whole fifteen minutes, just as Ye Lai and I were starting to get impatient, a group of people from [Run Like Flames] had walked out. Rumor brought over three players; two swordsmen and one knight, their expressions extremely dark.

Rumor didn't have a great expression either. He rode over and said, "Alright then, it was wrong of my people to curse at your players. I've already brought them over. You guys... you do what you want!"

One of the knights looked to be around thirty. He pierced his halberd in to this ground and gripped it hard. He stared right at Jing Ke's girlfriend and indignantly said, "I'm sorry. I shouldn't have cursed at you. My apologies!"

In the end, the girl was scared stiff. How could she say anything in response?"

"Shiiiiing ! "

I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword. " Pa!" I stabbed it right into the grass a meter away from him and shouted, "Is that the attitude you should have when apologizing to someone? Say it one more time, and more heartfelt!"

"You!"

The knight glared at me, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, do not cross the line!"

I raised my hand and pulled out my Brilliant Flame Emperor and roared, “[Zhan Long], prepare to advance!”

Li Mu, Wang Jian, Matcha, Meng Yao and the rest all pulled out their weapons. In that moment, Rumor’s expression grew uglier and he grunted, “Old Beard Liu, you really need to fix your attitude. Hurry up!”

This time, the knight didn’t have the same indignation coloring his tone. He lowered his head and said, “I’m sorry. I shouldn’t have cursed at you. I’m really sorry, please accept my apology.”

These people probably had never apologized to anyone before. His voice was even shaking. I smiled satisfactorily. Seeing that they were improving, I said, “Alright then. How about we bring this situation to a close?”

Jing Ke appeared beside us with his dagger and graciously looked at Ye Lai and I, “Thank you....”

Rumor, on the other hand, angrily turned around and took his people. The five guilds slowly retreated and dispersed and this battle had come to a close.

.....

Ye Lai raised his battle axe and walked over, his expression extremely grateful, “Xiao Yao, I really gotta thank you this time. If [Zhan Long] hadn’t arrived so quickly, d\*mn, today’s situation probably wouldn’t have ended so easily. Rumor, that b\*st\*rd, has no skills, but his ability to incite war really is top notch. He managed to bring in [Thousand Burial], [Wrath of Heroes] and all those other chickens over here. Their battle power was truly strong.”

I smiled, “It’s no problem, we’re brothers. If [Zhan Long] was being bullied, I know that [Judgement] won’t sit back and watch.”

Ye Lai nodded, “That’s right, that’s exactly what it means to be brothers. That’s right, did you really bring over five thousand NPCs from the Dragon’s Den to reinforce us?”

“Nope, I was bluffing. If I didn’t, do you really think that Rumor was the type to lower his head and admit to his wrongdoing?”

Ye Lai laughed, “D\*mn, you’re too sly!”

I smiled back, "It only works on certain people. Alright then, you guys get some more of the Frost Battle Rams. I can tell that those mounts are extremely strong in battle. The Chinese servers going to need a branch of Battle Rams. That way, we'll be able to create a strong offense and defense."

Ye Lai nodded. Then, he seemed to hesitate a little before asking, "Once the country battles start, I'm not worried about the Chinese Servers' battle power. After all, with [Zhan Long], [Legend], [Hero's Mound] and [Vanguard], we'll have no problem with our strength. I'm just worried about Rumor. That person is a wild card. Later on, if he tries to mess up the command, what will we do if he exposes our backs to the enemy? That'll truly be a disaster."

I took a deep breath, "Yea, I was worried about that too. But.... there's no need to worry too much. When the time comes, we'll act as we see fit. After all, there'll always be a command that we don't agree with. Besides, Rumor is at most an inspector. He's not some king. If he really messes with the commands, then we'll just kill the inspector. It's not as though that hasn't happened before..."

Ye Lai chuckled, "I was thinking the exact same thing!"

.....

We took a final count after the battle. Most of [Zhan Long]'s losses were from the Steel Blade Horsemen. We had lost over three thousand players. However, there were over ten thousand Greedy wolf Raiders corpses and twenty thousand normal cavalry smattered across the battlefield. Especially the Greedy Wolf Raiders. These Steel Blade Horsemen had managed to charge through the battle, and even with the smaller numbers broke through the legendary Greedy Wolf Raiders. This is the true meaning behind our battle today.

In the blink of an eye, it was soon night time again. "Di!" I received a message from the little miss Wan Er, "Get ready to eat. Later on, we'll discuss when we go over to check out Moon City!"

"Ok!"

# Chapter 728 - Twenty Horsemen from [Zhan Long]

That evening at seven, I walked towards the dining room.

For dinner we had four different dishes and a soup. Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Tang Qi, Qin Wen and I all sat down at the dining table. Normally our meals weren't extravagant. After all, we didn't care that much, as long as the food was good. Besides, our hearts weren't set on our food, but rather on the game. Dong Cheng and Wan Er were both excitedly talking about the battle in Gale Forest. They were so lively and energetic that Qin Wen widened her beautiful eyes and said, "Wa, sounds like it was very eventful...."

Tang Qi held up his bowl and said, "Xiao Yao, are you guys not even the slightest bit worried about that Rumor? Even though that kid doesn't have any real skills of his own, and he's arrogant, he's still the nephew of Liu Gong. [Zhan Long] and [Judgement] just have too many guts. You guys are even willing to offend someone like that. Aren't you guys worried that the Director will make your lives difficult?"

I smiled, "Then so be it. [Zhan Long] has no regrets. Besides, this game in itself is a battle to see who will rule the world, there's no need to bother with the details. A game is like a dream! If the Director really feels offended by [Zhan Long] then he can do whatever he wants against us. [Zhan Long]'s players only know how to fight with their fists, and not their words!"

Qin Wen giggled, "I really admire Xiao Yao's words. A game is after all just a battle field, it isn't a battle over political power. If that Director wants to try and bring politics into the game, then he's just slapping his own face. That nephew, Rumor, of his really deserves it. However, it's best if you be careful around people like that. You'd much rather offend a gentleman than offend a piece of scum."

I nodded, "Ok I got it."

Dong Cheng added, "Actually, what I'm worried about the most is for

someone like Rumor to stab us in the back. Otherwise, I'm not afraid of anything else."

Wan Er looked at me with a smile, "Yup, Dong Cheng's right. Even though Liu Chang could only gather together mobs of people, all of those people just happened to have history with [Zhan Long]. And so, they had two reasons, to fight under the flag of Rumor, the Deputy Commander, and to deal pay back to [Zhan Long]. I'm afraid, that as long as Rumor says the word, guilds like [Flying Dragon] will listen to everything he says. At least, during the country battles, they won't listen to Pig's commands, but rather choose to follow the orders of Rumor, the Deputy Commander."

Tang Qi added, "That is exactly where the most critical problem lies. If it was just one [Flying Dragon] or one [Thousand Burial], then it wouldn't matter, but when they come together, that's at least twenty thousand soldiers. If you think of it that way, then it's a terrifying thought."

I thought about it for a moment and said, "Ok. Let's keep a close eye on the movements of Rumor and the rest. I believe that they won't try anything against [Zhan Long] and [Judgement] anytime in the near future. We'll think about the country battle when it comes. Besides, in reality, once the country battles open up, I wasn't even planning on relying on Rumor and the rest. The vanguard will be [Judgement], [Zhan Long] and [Prague]!"

Dong cheng nodded with a smile, "Yup, Xiao Yao's right. After all, those are the only guilds that are relatively steady."

Tang Qi added, "That's right, I just head the little miss mention is. You were saying something about how you guys were making a team to enter the borders of Moon City for a scouting, is that right?"

I replied, "Yup, you've got some pretty good info there."

Tang Qi chuckled and awkwardly rubbed his nose saying, "Actually, you guys aren't the only ones. Q-Sword already made a decision just this afternoon to set out tonight. [Hero's Mound] has a total of ten ten man teams that are going to enter through the No Name desert. They're going to check out what the server is like over in Moon City. Besides, I heard that Fang Ge Que, Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior and the rest are also personally bringing people to go and check

out Moon City and Flame Cloud City.”

I smiled, “Looks like everybody can’t hold back their curiosity any longer. The country battles function hasn’t activated, so we have to go and check these places out early on and form our strategies.

Tang Qi said, “Yup, as Sun Tzu said, know yourself and know the enemy. Either way, that’s what Q-Sword said. Besides, just this afternoon, I heard that some Flame Cloud City players have appeared on the Flame God Mountain Range just east of Fan Shu City. The Indian Servers main city is on our southern border. Unfortunately, there are a lot of Indian players. The Chinese servers at most have 12 million people, but the Indian’s are even scarier, they’ve got over 300 million!”

“Yea.....”

I furrowed my brows and said, “Even though the Flame Cloud City’s map is large, I’ve heard that over 50% of it is complete wasteland. The amount of monsters that spawn are far lower than Tian Ling City’s and they don’t have as many small maps within the big maps. I heard that a lot of people, after leveling up to 110, have to rely on killing normal monsters to grind their levels. And so, even though the Flame Cloud City has a lot of players, once the country battles open up, they will undoubtedly try to expand and make Tian Ling City in the North and Port City in the South West their biggest targets. Port City is Japan and Korea’s city. It was already fairly conflicted, after all, they’re both rivals. After the Country battles open up, there’ll definitely be a show to watch.”

Wan Er smiled, “At least Tian Ling City won’t end up having to face an enemy on both fronts, right?”

“Hard to say. If Moon City and Flame Cloud City have some kind of an agreement and decide to carve up Tian Ling City, then we’ll really be in danger.”

“Then... what do we do?” Wan Er was a little stunned.

I couldn’t help but smile confidently, “Don’t worry. Port City, Nine Heavens City, and Swamp City won’t sit aside and watch Tian Ling City get destroyed. They’ll definitely try and find a way to maintain the balance of power. On the plus side, Tian Ling City’s positioned on the northern corner, with its back to the sea. We won’t have to worry about fighting a two front battle. Either way, we



can think of Tian Ling City as our military base and slowly expand from their. We may even be able to conquer the continent.”

Once Tang Qi heard this, he started to get a little excited and grinned, “D\*mn, now that you’ve said that, even I’m starting to get a little bit excited. Can our Chinese Server really unify all seven of the big cities?”

I replied, “I don’t know, but all of these matters depends on the individuals. Either Way, that’s not what I’m thinking about.”

“Then what are you thinking about?”

“The world!”

“.....”

Tang Qi took a deep breath, as though he was meeting me for the first time. He carefully studied me. After a few seconds, he finally said, “Li Xiao Yao, you really are an incredible b\*st\*rd. If you’re even thinking about conquering the world? Then I’m afraid with your resolution and the strength of [Zhan Long], then the only person who can really achieve that is you, and not Fang Ge Que.”

Dong Cheng was also catching on the excitement and asked, “Oh? Tang Qi, why do you think that Li Xiao Yao is more likely to do it than Fang Ge Que?”

Tang Qi rubbed his nose a little more and awkwardly said, “I don’t know, it’s just what I think. There’s one thing that Li Xiao Yao has that Fang Ge Que doesn’t, but just what it is, I can’t explicitly say.”

Wan Er giggled, “Don’t think too much about it. Anyways, it’s still early, and Li Xiao Yao, that kid, is too lazy. IF you want him to lead troops to dominate the world, it’d be strange if he doesn’t complain at least a little.”

I was speechless.

Dong Cheng finally asked, “Then when are we going to the British Server’s Moon City?”

I thought about it for a moment and said, “After we finish eating, we’ll go to sleep and wake up tonight at midnight. Then, we’ll get online and set off!”

“Oh, that early? Why’d you choose that time?”

“That’s simple. There’s an eight hour time difference between Britain and us. Britain is eight hours behind us. So, if we leave at midnight, it’ll take us no more than six hours to pass through the desert. That way, we’ll arrive at the borders of Moon City at around seven. By the time we enter Moon City, it’ll be around eight. At that point, it’ll be exactly Britain’s midnight. Most of the players will be asleep by then, making our mission much more smooth. I don’t want to face some kind of British main forces. Last time, Smile and Apollo were already pretty thorny. There’s no need for us to sacrifice a level for nothing.”

“So it was like that.... “Dong Cheng’s eyes stared lovingly at me. This wench has really sunk low.

.....

After we finished eating, I forced myself to sleep, even though I couldn’t. I finally fell asleep in a daze. Not long after, I was woken up by my alarm. It felt as though four hours had passed the second that I had closed my eyes. It was midnight. Wan Er and Dong Cheng had both woken up. We all logged on. Tonight, our long trek was to begin.

Actually, just passing through the desert would take 6-7 hours of our time. Using that time to grind levels would be much better. But, seeing as the country battles were about to start, there wasn’t much time left for us anyway. Tang Qi was right, knowing ourselves and our enemies would help us win a hundred battles. [Zhan Long], as one of the main guilds in the Chinese Server, had to take the responsibility of doing these tasks.

“Shua!”

We appeared in the middle of Tian Ling City, only to see that the guild was extremely lively. There were a ton of people online in the middle of the night. On top of that, the moment I logged on, I heard Matcha’s voice in the guild chat go, “No, I want to go too. Grinding levels every day is so boring!”

Wan Er replied, “Matcha, listen! Be good and stay in Tian Ling City to lead our troops...”

Matcha was silent.

I asked, “What’s wrong?”

Wan Er helplessly smiled back, "That... I told everyone about five man team to Moon City thing. In the end, I've met some opposition. The more they talk about it, the more logical it seems. They want to bring a few more people."

I was speechless.

Li Mu said, "Guildmaster, if you just bring five people, then the enemy can use any hundred man team to finish you all off. I suggest that you bring a few more people with you. Otherwise, I am definitely going.... Even if you don't let me, then I'll sneak off on my own. Don't you dare say that I'm going against the guildmaster's orders, you know I don't fall for that. Besides... you understand...."

I replied, "Alright alright, you've got the guts...."

Wang Jian then cut in, "Brother Xiao Yao, I want to go too! Matcha wants to go too! I feel like she isn't just being willful either, but is doing it to preserve our stamina and movement. Brother Xiao Yao, you know what's it's like. The Knight players can bring one person along with them on the mounts. You're gonna have to bring some healers and mages. If you meet any knights from Moon City and we can't beat them, at least we'll be able to run away right? How about it. This suggestion isn't just some willful comment. We'll just leave the grinding and the quests to One Second Hero and Death God's Elegy."

I thought about it for a moment, "Alright then, but we cannot bring too many people. Otherwise, it'll raise some suspicions if we do provoke a battle. How about this, we'll bring a total of forty people. Twenty mount type players. That way, it'll add up to twenty mounts."

Li Mu clapped his hands, "Alright then, twenty knight players is twenty knight players. Twenty of [Zhan Long]'s Steel Blade Knight Riders is enough for the Moon City players to feel intimidated right?"

I face palmed, "If you don't shoot off your mouth, we might actually have a chance to win this country battle..."

Wang Jian laughed, "Then let's get ready! We're about to set out! I'm getting really excited for this!"

Matcha giggled, "Me too."

.....

I shook my head at them and went to fill up my potions. What a group of battle crazies and they're all finally getting the chance to step onto Moon City's territory.

# Chapter 729 - Arriving at Moon City

Wan Er and Qing Qian decided on the people coming to Moon City. Wang Jian, Old K, Matcha, Dong Cheng, Yue Yan, Ling Xiao Xie, and Moon Feather were all coming. Meng Yao tagged along as well. Of them, only Meng Yao, Matcha and I did not have a Steel blade Mounts. The rest were all part of the cavalry. Of the twenty horsemen, fourteen of them were dressed in Black Flame Sets while the rest were all outfitted in higher level armor that had better stats. I could just imagine how strong our battle power was.

Besides the twenty horsemen were Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Qing Qian, Dancing Forest, Xing Lie, Thousand Suns, Darling Duck, Thousand League and the other support class players. All forty of the players were part of [Zhan Long]'s strongest players. This scouting trip was similar to when Smile had entered into Tian Ling City's territory. The only difference was that we still didn't know what our end would be. Either way, it wasn't too good. Right now, there were conflicts that occurred between all of the major cities. A scouting mission was like firing off shots!

.....

We all gathered at the north gate of Tian Ling City. I rushed over on my Flying Scythe Horse. Around 50% of my bag was filled with potions. The empty spaces were for picking up equipment.

In the plaza, Wan Er, Qing Qian, and Li Mu had all arrived and every one of them were extremely excited. Well, I'd be lying if I said I wasn't excited to go to another city.

"Everyone match up with a mount then." I smiled.

Li Mu excited said, "On the mounts, you can only have a boy and a girl, or a girl and a girl on the same horse. All of you pair up. Which girl wants to sit with me?"

Dancing Forest giggled, "This.... There shouldn't be any, right?"

I laughed, "Hurry up already, we don't have time for this."

Qing Qian blinked a few times and cleverly said, “Meng Yao, why don’t you take me?”

Meng Yao smiled, “Come on up!”

Meng Yao reached out and pulled Qing Qian onto her horse. Qing Qian wrapped her arms around Meng Yao’s thin waist and grinned, “Wa, Meng Yao has such a nice waist, it feels so nice...”

Meng Yao blushed, “Qing Qian, stop messing around!”

Darling Duck raised her staff and looked around, “Wu, all of the boys look devastating. I wanted to ride on Guildmaster’s Flying Scythe War Horse. Unfortunately, it won’t be my turn. What should I do... I don’t want to sit on Li Mu’s horse, it’s too ugly....”

Li Mu patted his Steel Blade Horse’s mane and retorted, “All of the Steel Blade Horses look the same, how can one be uglier?”

Darling Duck replied simply, “I was talking about you....”

Li Mu glared at her, “Either way, at least I’m better looking than Old K!”

Old K hung his battle axe on his horse and he roared, “D\*mn it, can we not drag me into these all the time? I haven’t said anything! Just you wait, let’s just wait and see. Whichever girl doesn’t have a horse to sit on can sit with me.

Wang Jian laughed and waved his hand to the group, “Scar, come over here!”

Amongst the group of people, a level 119 female mage walked over. She had a perky chest and I immediately recognized her. It was the beautiful girl that we met at pool while we were in Shanghai, Star Scar. Wang Jian that kid was pretty effective, looks like they’re together now. The moment Star Scar lept into Wang Jian’s embrace, several of the male players revealed a jealous look in their eyes.

I reached out and grabbed Wan Er’s hand and pulled her into my lap. The beautiful little miss blushed but didn’t say anything, afraid to attract any more attention already. If she did, it would make her more likely to attract fire. After all, as the vice guildmaster, she’d feel even more embarrassed when people joked about her.

Yue Yao Yan, on the other hand, was much more easy going. She reached out

and invited Xing Lie to join her. Xing Lie obediently sat behind the beautiful knight and stiffly sat there, afraid to put his arms around her waist. He was probably afraid that this guildmaster of [Zhan Long:Defense Army] would stab her spear right through his chest if he tried anything with her.

Darling Duck finally sat on Dong Cheng Lei's horse while Thousand League sat with Old K. Finally, all that was left was Li Mu blankly staring into the crowd, looking for someone. Dancing Forest finally picked up her bow with a green face, "D\*mmit...."

No other choice, Dancing Forest could only sit on Li Mu's horse. However, after she sat behind Li Mu, she reached out and grabbed his shoulder saying, "You are not allowed to suddenly stop. Don't think that stopping would give you the chance to feel my chest...."

She had hit the nail on its head. With a straight face, Li Mu rubbed his nose, "Little Dance, just what kind of a person do you think I am. You know, I'm known for being an upright man...."

Dancing Forest smiled, "Yea right!"

Li Mu was speechless.

.....

I sheathed my Dragon Reservoir Sword and reached across the beautiful little miss' thin waist to grab the reigns and smiled, "Alright now. Everyone, let's set off. Everyone follow me and try not to be too conspicuous. Our mission is simple, scout out the Moon Cty maps and draw out our own map of the place. That way, we'll have an easier time with future plans!"

Xing Lie was a little shocked, "Boss, what are our future plans?"

I calmly replied, "Attacking Moon City."

Xing Lie cursed under his breath, "D\*mn..."

Li Mu wryly smiled. He probably had the same idea as me. As a man with incredible strength, who doesn't want to make his mark in this chaotic world? You'd be lying if you said that you had never thought about it. Even someone like me, who spends his life carefreely and avoids conflict with others wants to

one day become the king of the four seas. I've pretty much already set on that path.

Dancing Forest sat behind Li Mu and gripped his cloak. In a situation where the horse was galloping, Li Mu's throat was being strangled by the cloak. His face was bright red as he begged against the wind, "Little Dance, softer...."

Dancing Forest smiled, "Guildmaster, actually, if we download their maps from the British server, that's enough...."

I shook my head, "Not exactly. It's just like our Chinese Server, not all of the maps are public knowledge. Think about it, Shattered Blade Canyon, Flaming Desert, Blood Demon Forest, Giant Demon Bamboo Forest and the other maps are known only to a few of the Chinese Server players, but the big maps don't have any details or markings. All of the guilds have been hiding them away. Moon City is Britain and France's territory, it's definitely not a peaceful place. We can only go out and look for our own information on these maps."

"Ok, that makes sense!"

.....

As I hugged Wan Er and charged ahead, my Flying Scythe War Horse dashed through the Gale Forest. We stopped for a moment to figure out when the killer wind would pass through the Broken Blade Canyon. There was still ten minutes before it would pass through. The speed of the Steel Blade Horsemen was enough for all of us to pass through without a problem. And so, we pass through the canyon and entered the Bridge of Fate. The twenty mounts were moving at a good pace. It had only been thirty minutes since we had set off from Tian Ling City and we had already reached the Blood Demon Forest.

The light from spells burst throughout the Blood Demon Forest. There were already new monsters that were spawning there. Several of [Zhan Long]'s players were grinding there. After that, we passed through the Spirits of No Return Valley. The maps ahead of that were getting more and more faint. Finally, it was all covered in a thick fog. This meant that the maps further west hadn't been scouted out before. We could still see the marking for Moon City on the bigger map. It was extremely far away. Even if we eventually have a country battle, just going to Moon City would be an expedition that would take



a lot of energy.

“Wu wu....

The hooves of our horse's broke through the silence of the forest. As we continued forward, the trees became more and more sparse and the climate became warmer. The fierce sun hung in the sky. Wan Er leaned into my chest and held her iron umbrella over her shoulder, and covered us from the sun light. Otherwise, as a moon elf, she would lose health under direct sunlight. Among our team, Yue Yao had also pulled out her iron umbrella. The sight of a young beautiful girl galloping across the desolate plains with an umbrella raised was also a wonderful sight in itself.

After a few more minutes, we entered into the Nameless Desert. It looked as though it had no end. This map was around twenty to forty times the size of Tian Ling City and it was named “the Desert”. It would've been a pretty good place to grind levels, unfortunately, not a single blade of grass could survive here. There wasn't even an oasis here, much less monsters.

[Zhan Long]'s twenty horses galloped across the map, and left behind a cloud of dust. After fifty minutes of riding forward, we finally met the first monster in this desert. It was a Level 130 Thunder Tier Sand Scorpion. It was a low level monster, and was easily killed. It was close to an hour after we had entered this map and we had finally met the first monster. It was as though a male student had been locked away for three years in an all male school and he had seen the first girl on the street. How could he not be excited.

“Ji ji....”

The poor Sand Scorpion screech in pain as it was chopped to green pieces of meat. It didn't drop anything except for twenty silvers. That ended up being picked up by Wang Jian that shameless b\*st\*rd. However, Star Scar seemed to praise his actions. I was starting to think that those two should just get married.

As we continued forward, day turned to night and the difference in temperature in the desert was just too great. During the day, you could cook an egg on the ground, but at night, it felt like our water would freeze. All of us were sneezing under the moonlight. After three hours of moving forward, the game finally turned back into daylight and we still hadn't met a single player.

Very rarely were there any Chinese players that would be this bored as to spend half a day trying to reach Moon City. After all, it could all go to waste when they die.

“Ji ji....”

We heard another screech. A monster had crawled out of the sand once again. This time it wasn't a Sand Scorpion but rather a monster that let off a golden shine——Golden Scorpion. It was a Level 4 Hybrid Demon. Wow, this dessert actually has Hybrid Demons. Lord knows how many armies these Hybrid Demon Kings have!

“Kill!”

I pulled out my sword and charged forward. My first round of skills had sliced open the shell on the Golden Scorpion. Wang Jian, Matcha, and Meng Yao all went in for the kill. Wan Er leapt off the horse and activated [Blade of the Death God]+[Twin Blade Harmony]+[Chain Attack]. After a flurry of skills, the Golden Scorpion screeched and fell to the ground, dropping a golden helmet. Wan Er picked it up and smiled, “A Valkyrie Tier helmet, Golden Helmet.... It's a part of a set. It's stats are pretty similar to the Black Flame Set!”

Li Mu was stunned, “Oh? Doesn't that mean that we can get Golden Sets from killing these Golden Scorpions?”

“Well, let's see what the drop rate is like!”

.....

We continued trekking forward. There weren't dense numbers of Golden Scorpions and it took a while to find a single one. Killing one didn't get us many drops either. I imagine that in order to get one set of Golden Armor, it would take a lot more than just patience.

As we continued forward, we didn't stop to admire the scene before us, after all, there wasn't much to look at anyway.

At around 7:00 CST, we finally reached the end of the desert. As we continued forward, the Moon City zone appeared before us!

.....

A thick forest was just ahead. I dashed forward on my horse with a smile, “Moon City, we’ve arrived!”

Matcha opened up her tool box and smiled, “Check out your tool boxes and calibrate your compasses. It’ll reconfigure our maps!”

## Chapter 730 - Bad News

On the border of the desert after we walked into the forest, the scenery gradually became more green. The soft sand also gradually became more firm and moist. As we continued forward, we still didn't meet a single player. This map was on the frontier of Moon City. It was at least an hour away from the main city. Most players wouldn't walk so far to grind levels. Besides, the level of the monsters here weren't low, which made it more dangerous to grind levels here. Only middle to high level players would come to such a distant map to grind.

.....

Our twenty horses charged forward for some more time. The greenery around us become thicker and more dense. An enormous valley appeared ahead of us. It was the first map that we had come upon since entering Moon City, Moon Valley. The valley itself was very lengthy. It guarded the borders of the city and was very close to the desert. This map was the only way we could reach Moon City from Tian Ling City. Furthermore, it was immense; similar to Ba Huang City's Fire Stone Canyon with layer upon layer of smaller maps. It was as though it was a never ending map. Furthermore, there was a diverse group of monsters and was a main grinding map for players.

"Moon Valley?" Matcha furrowed her elegant brows and continued to study the system map, "Guildmaster, are we just going to walk straight in? If we go any further, we may end up meeting several Moon City players."

I gripped my reins and smiled, "Let's go and maintain a low profile. Even if we do see any Moon City players, we'll do all we can to avoid them. Let's take this chance and walk around the map. We didn't come here this time to kill people but rather to get a better understanding of Moon City. That way at least we'll have more preparation. At least we won't be caught too off guard during the country battles."

Matcha nodded.

My Flying Scythe War Horse lowly whinnied and stepped down into the valley.

Hooves clattered against the rocky slope. Behind me, Matcha, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Meng Yao and the others followed close behind. Now that we had entered a Moon City map, we already assumed a battle stance. Everyone had already pulled out their swords and cautiously glanced around. After all, this was enemy territory and we were the outsiders.

“Grr...”

Right in front of us, a couple of tigers roared. They were Level 137 Titan Tier monsters. No wonder there weren't many people grinding levels here. The monsters were terrifyingly strong. Even we would feel some pressure if we grinded here. As usual, I let my Ancient Heavenly Tiger God charged forward to clear the path. Titan Tier monsters had a ten hour spawn rate, which meant it's been awhile since someone's been here. That was good too, at least we were somewhat safer here.

As I dashed forward, I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and “Ka ka ka” I threw out three slashes. Li Mu and Wang Jian each used a [Blade Rush] and cut down the tigers. Our group swept past, and left behind the three tiger bodies. They didn't drop much so we didn't bother to stay.

I lowered my voice, “Let's draft out a map so that we can take note of the details about Moon City. If Tian Ling City ever decides to launch an attack on Moon City, then Smile and the rest will definitely work the geography to their advantage. If we don't take the time to understand these maps, then we'll definitely be at a disadvantage.”

Li Mu shuddered and smiled, “Haha, you're really thorough.”

As we continued forward, the path became more precipitous. Even the Steel Blade Horses' speed was being affected. However, Matcha was drawing out the maps very well. She noted everything from the topography to the structure of the ground and the lakes that lie within the valley. This Moon Valley was actually split into five different smaller maps, each with a different terrain. If we hadn't walked in, we would've never been able to tell.

.....

As we continued, Wan Er suddenly narrowed her eyes and said, “Careful, there's people ahead!”

“Ok!”

I leaned over and hid in the brush. We were completely covered in the bushes and I activated [Camouflage]. There were around twenty people ahead of us in the forest. They wore the Moon City insignia on their shoulders. Furthermore, there hung a three colored French Flag beside the players’ names. They were like us. The moment that we entered Moon City, everyone’s ID had a Chinese flag right beside. This was a way to tell the difference between players.

Old K walked his horse over and gripped his battle axe. He excitedly whispered, “They’re French players, and are all around level 117-120. They aren’t too high, should we go over and cut them down?”

Li Mu grunted, “Guildmaster, what do you think?”

I glanced around and said, “Let’s not fight and go around them. It’d be best if we don’t exchange blows with them. Once we fight with them, then the French forums will immediately blow up with our location. That would only lure thousands of armies after us and we’ll never be able to complete our scouting mission.”

Li Mu nodded, “OK!”

I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword and tugged on my reins. My Flying Scythe War Horse slowly backed away and went around the group. The nineteen horses behind us also followed behind me without a sound. These were all [Zhan Long]’s core players and so naturally they wouldn’t botch up things. Even Old K, that bad tempered kid, quietly went around with me. The discipline of a guild was extremely important.

Before we had walked very far, “Sou!” a [Fierce Ice Arrow] suddenly shot above my head. I quickly halted my horse and heard a “PA!” as Wan Er opened up her Iron Umbrella to block the arrow. I looked around, only to see a blonde Level 121 archer sitting among the tree branches. He shouted, “Everyone be careful, a group of Chinese players are here!”

At that moment, another voice sounded out, “Gather around and surround these Chinese players!”

Hooves pounded the ground and the entire forest shook. Several dozen Moon

City French Cavalry players charged over. My heart panicked for a second. Now that we were found, there's no way we can avoid this battle. I immediately swung my blade and roared, "Blitzkrieg them!"

Wan Er quickly slid from my lap and picked up her dagger, and entered into [Stealth] mode. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Matcha all turned around and charged at the first group of people they saw. In total there were around 30-40 French players, and none of their levels were very low.

"Kill!"

At the very front, a French player with a red beard raised his battle axe. He charged his battle horse towards us with a roar. Fury lit his eyes as he roared, "These Chinese players don't take us Moon City players seriously at all! Did you think that Moon City was your backyard, somewhere you can carelessly come in and out of?"

Without another word, I dashed forward to meet his attack. I threw my Brilliant Flame Emperor. "Pu Chi!" it pierced through the chest of that Level 122 Berserker, and drew out a spurt of blood and dealt fourteen thousand damage. I then flicked my wrist again and the moment that I got close, I suddenly grabbed my sword from the air, and threw a few simultaneous slash. I sliced right through the berserker's chest!

"13221 ! "

"15873 ! "

With a wretched roar, the berserker fell off his horse. He couldn't even defend against one round of attacks. I didn't hesitate for a second and raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword, and threw a Seven Star Fragment Slash into the crowd. Right after that, I activated my [Sword Tempest]. Hooves thudded across the ground and an icy whirlwind swept through. Everyone around me was sealed in [Ice Domain].

Li Mu and Wang Jian then pushed forward and swept out their swords. [Combo], [Skyshaker Slash], and [Covering Sword Slash] danced through the crowd, and killed another group of people. Wan Er, Qing Qian, and Wolf would appear behind the enemy mages and archers. A bloody light flashed and they were all killed. Wan Er's attacks were especially strong. She didn't even need to

break through their [Mana Shield], as she relied solely on her Defense Break stats to kill the mages. She was practically the bane of all mages.

Dancing Forest and Dong Cheng lead the ranged attacks, and focused their firepower on each player one by one and killed them off. Magic wreaked havoc in the forest. Xing Lie raised his musket and “Peng peng peng!” fired off his shots. Almost every hit dealt over ten thousand damage. He really deserved his reputation as [Zhan Long]’s number one musketeer. His shots were both accurate and timely. Of course, Fox’s ability to manage was far better than Xing Lie’s. Each had their own special skills.

.....

We struck hard and fast. Within three minutes, we had finished the battle. After counting the bodies, there was a total of forty four bodies from the French players. As for whether or not there were any assassins that had escaped, we weren’t sure. If an assassin wanted to run, you couldn’t catch one no matter what you tried to do.

“Let’s go, our location’s been revealed!” I commanded.

Matcha and the rest nodded and quickly cleared the battlefield before we dashed towards the north.

Ten minutes after we left, we had reached the northern end of Moon Valley. In the distance, we could see the white snowy ranges of Ice Ridge mountain. It was the same Ice Ridge Mountain that ran through Tian Ling City and Ba Huang City. This mountain spread across thousands of leagues, and completely separated the South from the Hybrid Demon Territory. Thanks to this natural defense, the Hybrid Demon Kings have yet to invade the Southern Territories.

The Steel Blade Horses moved incredibly fast, even if our position was revealed, that didn’t necessarily mean that we would get caught. After all, there were few mounts that had the same speed as the Steel Blade Horses, especially if they wanted to chase after us and go in for the kill. First they would have to consider their own strength. The players of Moon City weren’t idiots, they wouldn’t sacrifice themselves for nothing.

.....



When we left Moon Valley, we made it to a grass plains. It was the Breezy Plains just east of Moon City and was just as vast as the Moon Valley map. A light breeze brushed against my face, fluttered my cape behind me. Li Mu and Wang Jian were chuckling as they admired the scenery. The setting sun over the west gave off a warm light.

Matcha widened her eyes and said, “Breeze Plains is extremely open. If we do end up fighting here, this map will likely be dyed red. After all, this is the most suitable place for the Steel Blade Horsemen to fight. The guilds of Moon City and Tian Ling City won’t let this map slip by. I can already just imagine what it’ll look like when it's torn by war....”

Matcha was one of [Zhan Long]’s most important commanders. Her understanding of topography and her sensitivity to its effects on battle were not much inferior to my own. There was no way we could ignore her words.

.....

Right at that moment, Dong Cheng narrowed her eyes and shouted, “I have some bad news!”

# Chapter 731 - The Hand of Waterloo

“What’s the bad news?” I asked.

Dong Cheng replied, “I just got a message from Tang Qi that idiot. Apparently 120 of [Hero’s Mound] cavalry players had been surrounded on Breezy Plains. Moon City’s [Dawn] guild had used five hundred cavalry to completely destroy them. They moved incredibly fast and surrounded [Hero’s Mound]’s players on three fronts. Q-Sword seems to be in some trouble. Nevermind it's ok, we’ll just ignore them....”

“Huh? Ignore them?” I couldn’t tell if I should cry or laugh, “[Hero’s Mound] is one of the Chinese Server’s top guilds. If we just leave them to die, then it’ll affect our morale when the news gets back to our players. Seeing as we’re already here, then we’ll just give them a hand!”

Li Mu raised his sword and cut in, “Bro, the Breezy Plains are enormous. All I see is grass. I don’t see a single [Hero’s Mound] player.”

I nodded, “Ok, Dong Cheng, where’s Tang Qi!”

Dong Cheng replied, “He’s just south of us, around ten minutes away.”

“Then let’s hurry!”

I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir sword and smiled. In order to explain everything, I added, “We only have forty players, so we need to be conscious that if we can save the [Hero’s Mound] players, we will, but if we can’t, then we’ll rely on the movement speed of our mounts and run away. Later on, we’ll act as we see fit. Pay attention to the team chat for any of my orders and don’t get too deep into the battle.”

Star Scar said, “Brother Xiao Yao, don’t worry, we understand. We also know that it’d be impossible for the forty of us to completely destroy the five hundred cavalry. [Dawn] is the French Server’s number one guild, and they will not be weak.”

“Exactly. Let’s go!”

.....

We dashed forward. Wan Er was thrown back into my chest from the force of the inertia. She blushed and opened her mouth, as though she wanted to say something, but nothing came out.

As we sped up our advance, the wind on the Breezy Plains also steadily grew. The heavy hooves of the Steel Blade Horsemen pounded against the ground. Everyone had entered a full out gallop state. Within a few minutes, furls of dust curled up into the air. There was a group of people fighting right before us. Among them were several players that carried the Chinese Flag next to their names. It was the players from [Hero's Mound]! They only had 70 mounts left and were completely surrounded by 400 of the [Dawn] mounts. I could faintly see Q-Sword charge against the crowd. But as before, he could not pierce through.

[Dawn] was using a Mobile Encirclement type of strategy. There was a total of three layers to their formation. It was a simple yet effective strategy. It was like a large millstone. When the [Hero's Mound] players charged outward, they would be crushed to bits like a speck of grain. Even though Q-Sword had killed several people at once, he still couldn't kill them all and was at a loss on how to proceed.

"D\*mn...."

Old K's eyes widened, "So even Q-Sword would have a day like this? He looks pretty pitiful. There's so many [Hero's Mound] players on the ground, this is great...."

Li Mu said, "How should we proceed?"

I grit my teeth, "There's no other way but to fight them head on. Once we've been trapped by [Dawn] then it'd be hard for us to even try leaving. We can only charge straight ahead and bring the [Hero's Mound] players out. As long as we can make it out of this forest, then the [Dawn] players won't be able to chase after us. Everyone follow my command and charge with me! I will use [Thundering Heavens] to open up our path and make a break in their formation. Afterwards, we'll charge right in and help the [Hero's Mound] players retreat. Once they reform their formation, I'll activate [Ice Domain]. Wan Er, use your

special skill [Heaven's Lullaby] and stun them all for as long as you can!"

"Yes!"

I clicked my wrists and my Dragon Reservoir Sword began to glow. I charged forward on my horse while the nineteen horses behind me also dashed forward. The [Dawn] players were at the height of their excitement in this massacre. Only the outer circle had noticed our people. However, they probably thought that our numbers were too few, and didn't pay much attention to us. All they did was send out thirty players to go and deal with us.

"He he!"

I couldn't help but chuckle. These French players are actually looking down on our twenty horsemen! Then it's about time that pay for that mistake!

"Kill!"

I threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and swung out both swords. I surged forward in a spiral motion, cutting through the crowds. Blood and flesh flew into the air. Li Mu and Wang Jian each let out a flurry of skills. Added on with Old K's [Whirlwind Slash] and in the blink of an eye, we had cut down all thirty of the horsemen. But the players from [Dawn] really were pretty strong. Even after we threw a heap of AOE attacks on them, a dozen still charged at us after being showered in blood. They didn't seem affected by [Zhan Long]'s battle power in the slightest.

I swung my blades and cut one of the knight's shields right in half. I urged my horse forward and was already beginning to deal my attack on the edges of the formation. Now that I was faced with these moving players, I waved my hand and activated [Thundering Heavens]. The skies immediately darkened and bolts of lightning surged through the clouds and struck the ground. Countless lightning dragons burst through the ground and dealt an onslaught of damage.

"D\*mmmit!"

One of the team leaders roared, "That person's skill is incredibly strong, hurry up and avoid it!"

But all was too late. Twenty people had died under my [Thundering Heavens] attack. Plus, my Dragon Reservoir Sword's [Kill For Blood] had reached forty

levels, which increased my attack power by 40%!

Among the crowds, a person suddenly roared out, “Expand the circle! Cut off their escape route!”

A line of golden words appeared above the person’s head. I knew with a single look that he was a reputable player in Moon City——

Hand of Waterloo LV 126 Star Flame Swordsman

City: Moon City

Guild: [Dawn]

Position: Guildmaster

French Battlenet Ranking: 1

.....

Motherf\*cker, it’s the number one player on the French Battlenet. Who knew the first enemy we meet in Moon City would be such a strong opponent!

Under the command of the guildmaster of [Dawn], a group of people charged at us, and filled up the opening that I had made with my [Thundering Heavens]. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old K were not going to sit by and watch. Li Mu swung his sword and shouted, “Ram them! Protect the [Hero’s Mound] players’ retreat!”

Matcha, Meng Yao and Wang Jian all charged forward, and used their Steel Blade Horses to ram into the enemy. In the end, bangs rang throughout the battlefield. Looks like the horsemen of the [Dawn] guild were still slightly lower than ours, as they were pushed back several steps and blocked by the [Zhan Long] horses.

In the distance I shouted, “Q-Sword, what are you waiting for? Take your players and retreat! There are more and more of them!”

Q-Sword grit his teeth and pointed straight at the opening and roared, “Retreat! Don’t fight with them any longer. Brothers that have died, wait to revive after they’ve left!”

.....

“You want to leave?!”

Among the crowd of people, Hand of Waterloo steered his black battle horse faster than them. With a shout, he shocked one of the [Hero's Mound] knights and struck his sword right into the knight's shield. "Keng!" He knocked away the shield and roared, "GTFO!"

The shield was knocked away. Hand of Waterloo immediately activated [Blade Rush] and then followed the attack with an SS tier combo — [Dawn Slash]!

Four continuous attacks landed on the knight's chest, immediately emptying his health. He then leapt up and threw another combo followed with a final [Sky Shaker Slash]!

"Peng!"

"17271 ! "

The enormous damage number had shocked even me. Just how high was that b\*st\*rd's attack power? He was actually able to cut down that much health from such a high leveled knight? Even if that was a combo, that last attack shouldn't have been that heavy, right?

"Chase after them!"

Hand of Waterloo chased after them. His bloody blade was like the hands of fate, which cut down the [Hero's Mound] players that lagged behind, one by one. It was as though he was displaying the strength of the French Servers to us.

.....

"Let's go!"

Q-Sword raised his sword and shielded the retreat of his players. There were more and more [Dawn] players that were gathering in the area. [Hero's Mound] players were continuously falling off their horses and dying. Several of the twenty knights that [Zhan Long] had brought were also down to critical health. Thankfully nobody had died. However, Hand of Waterloo was already catching up. If he managed to reach us, then the consequences would be dire.

"Shua!" Wan Er slid from my lap and softly said, "Pig, I'm going to hold off those swordsmen. You go and attack Hand of Waterloo. After holding them off

for ten seconds, use your skills to stop them and then run!”

“Ok!”

I gripped my sword and charged at Hand of Waterloo. My beautiful girlfriend then picked up her dagger and charged at a group of French Swordsmen. The moment she clashed with them, she had immediately blocked a [Blade Rush]. Her beautiful figure spun in the air and the three attacks from [Blade of the Death God] had landed right on the swordsman’s neck. It seems that he was ranked forty seventh on the French Battle Net, but he was still killed in that instant.

She then turned around and pulled out her Iron Umbrella. “Keng keng!” sparks flew and she had parried off the other attacks from the swordsmen. Wan Er waved her hand and activated [Arrival of the Death God]. She flew up while maintaining her balance. “Shua Shua!” her dagger flicked through the crowd, and cut into each of the players’ necks and wrists, and aimed precisely at their weak points. However, Wan Er’s body nimbly dashed from side to side, dodging all of the attacks. In reality, it was her Mind reading skill at play. After all, she could guess the next moves of any non expert players.

With the cover from Wan Er, I charged right at Hand of Waterloo. The two of us didn’t try any tricks and just fought face to face. “Keng!” I felt my wrist go numb. Hand of Waterloo slid back half a step. A sliver of shock raced through his eyes, as though he was stunned that someone as strong as I was in the Chinese Servers.

“Not bad!”

Hand of Waterloo had actually gotten more excited. He whooped and suddenly threw another faster attack. I didn’t even have the time to react with my Battle Reflux strategy. A flame appeared on his blade, it was the SS tier skill — [Star Flame Slash]!

The skill dealt five attacks. I managed to block some of the strikes with my Brilliant Flame Emperor. I then immediately threw out my Dragon Reservoir Sword in a stab!

“Pu!”

“9179 ! ”

He frowned. I quickly followed the attack with a Level 12 [Combo]+Level 12 [Sword Tempest]. Hand of Waterloo’s defense was pretty good. He managed to take that many hits and still not die. He gripped his sword with both hands and threw another heavy attack, [Star Flame Slash]!

“12211 ! ”

Such a fierce attack! I felt a shudder run through my body. At the same time, I knew that my chance had come. I suddenly grabbed his wrist guard and pulled him towards myself. At the same time, light began to glow under my feet and I activated [Strength of a Thousand Men] + [Wind Blade] at the same time.

“Not good!”

Hand of Waterloo had a stunning reaction time. In that moment, he activated [Blade Rush], dodging my [Strength of a Thousand Men]. At the same time, he activated [Star Flame Shield] and a golden light enveloped him. Not far from me, I heard Wan Er’s voice, “Hurry up and leave! You can’t kill him!”

I nodded and retreated. I reached out and pulled a critically wounded Wan Er onto my horse. I used [Charge] right into the opening and dashed out with the [Hero’s Mound] players. We had successfully shielded their retreat!

.....

[Ice Domain]!

[Heaven’s Lullaby]!

After the two skills activated, all of the [Dawn] players were frozen in place. I could see the look of determination and unwillingness in the eyes of Hand of Waterloo. He grit his teeth as he was frozen in place.



# Chapter 732 - Rubble Forest

“Hurry up!”

I slapped the back of my Flying Scythe War Horse and brought Wan Er and galloped into the distance. I raised my left hand and sent my Brilliant Flame Emperor flying forth. It spun several times in the air from the [Blade Spin], and forced the Hand of Waterloo to hang back rather than catch up after us.

.....

Before us, [Hero's Mound] only had 40+ people left. They were battered and exhausted. Even though they had killed quite a few of the Moon City players, they themselves had suffered losses that exceeded half of their forces. Their morale couldn't be very high after that episode.

“Continue south!” I shouted from a distance.

Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K and the others charged forth on their Steel Blade Horses. Q-Sword, Sword Tears, and Jian Tan didn't seem to have any objections either and followed behind. Clouds of dust furred behind us. It was the players from [Dawn]. Once they catch up to us, we'll all definitely die. However in the distance, I could already see a forest at the end to the Breeze Plains.

We maintained our charge for another five minutes, and finally reached the forest that I had seen. However, it was only until we had gotten close that I realized it wasn't any forest, but rather a stone forest. This map was called “Rubble Forest”. It was a landform with high stone pillars that had thick green vines climbing along the sides. Each one was like an enormous tree. That was why it had looked like a forest from afar. The terrain was very similar to the Stone Forest in Yunnan, but it was much more precipitous and daunting. After our dozens of riders entered this forest, we could only feel the pillars grow more stern and bony. It was as though we were surrounded by hidden enemies.

Li Mu turned around and looked into the distance with a smile, “The French players aren't following after us. Looks like even they know that they won't necessarily have the advantage by fighting with us in this Rubble Forest.”

Wang Jian replied, “I was actually hoping they’d have the guts to chase after us. I did not feel satisfied after that battle. That Hand of Waterloo had killed over five of the core players of [Zhan Long].”

Q-Sword’s expression was not very happy. However, he still walked forward and said, “We had a total of 120 cavalymen and 200 others. We were originally planning on scouting out the topography and the different monsters that are here in Moon City but we had never expected to be targeted by a super guild like [Dawn]. By the time we wanted to retreat, it was all too late. Hand of Waterloo is truly a fearsome player. Not only was he strong on his own, he’s also very good at commanding troops.

As he finished talking, Q-Sword looked to us and sincerely said, “Thank you, friends of [Zhan Long], for lending a helping hand. If you had not acted, then we would’ve been doomed. Thank you all!”

I sheathed my Dragon Reservoir sword and said, “There’s no need to be so polite. We’re all Chinese players in Moon City. There is no reason for us to stand by and watch you all be killed. That’s right, after [Hero’s Mound] entered Moon City, did you obtain any valuable information on their maps?”

Q-Sword nodded, “Moon Valley stretches a long distance and is incredibly vast. It’s also where the Moon City players that are between Level 120-150 grind. And so, if our players from Tian Ling City want to enter Moon City, than we are bound to encounter some obstacles. South West of Moon Valley is a natural lake called Mirror Lake. There are water monsters within the lake that range from Level 130-145. They are all Titan Tier monsters. One of the monsters is called a Turtle Dragon. It had enough power to flip a boat. You must be careful when you are down there. After you enter Mirror Lake, you must avoid boarding a boat.”

I took a deep breath and said, “Ok, understood. What are your plans after this?”

I shook my head, “No, at most we’ve walked half of it and only managed to get a fleeting glance at the map. We didn’t dare stop. Otherwise, if we were spotted, I’m afraid we would’ve never been able to leave.”

Q-Sword smiled, “Then this is farewell?”

I replied, “Yes!”

Not far away, we could hear Tang Qi’s voice echo, “Miss Yue Er!”

Dong Cheng looked over and pursed her lip, “Well, you’ve even managed to get yourself a beautiful horsewoman. Tang Qi, you’ve got great luck with women, how about you just enjoy it~~”

Tang Qi was a Feng Shui Master, and wasn’t able to ride horses. All he could do was sit with someone else in order to keep up with the group. And, the person that was transporting Tang Qi was one of the [Hero’s Mound] main guild’s team leaders. Calling her a beauty wasn’t overstating it. She was around a 7. But, it did look like the knight was pretty nice to Tang Qi. She didn’t even say anything when he held on to her waist.

When Dong Cheng said that, Tang Qi immediately added, “Little Miss, it’s a misunderstanding. Let me explain it to you....”

Dong Cheng was starting to panic too as she raised her staff and shouted, “Hey, don’t you misunderstand anything either. I am not jealous. Really. I am, from the bottom of my heart, really wishing you happiness.... I already have someone I like. Besides, I don’t like fall back guys....”

Tang Qi was speechless. Q-Sword wryly smiled, “Alright already. Let’s go. What’s [Zhan Long]’s next plan?”

I waved my hand and said, “This Stone Forest seems to be very big. We’ll continue walking through it so that we can record the map. At the same time, it’s a good chance to see what drops here. Besides, we can’t let those Moon City players get all the benefits.”

“Ok, I was thinking the same. Work hard then!”

“Got it!”

Q-Sword turned around and pulled out his sword, “Push towards the north east toward Moon Valley! We’ll have the brothers that died in battle meet us there after they revive. Let’s avoid as many delays as possible.”

“Yes!”

.....

Seeing the [Hero's Mound] players leave, I didn't say anything more. Even though there was history between Q-Sword and I, after the country battles open up those would all fade eventually. Besides, the [Hero's Mound] players really do have a lot of guts. They got into a battle with only 120 knights against the French Server's number one guild. They had lost close to 80 horsemen, but I could see from the past scene that [Dawn] had lost quite a few players to [Hero's Mound] as well. This was also probably one of the reasons why the Hand of Waterloo was so dogged. He had been bullied by foreigners in his own territory. That kind of a slap must be avenged, or else he would never be able to keep his spot as FBN number one.

Rubble Forest, I stood on the outer border of the Stone formations. I had yet to walk in, but I could already feel the sharp edge of this map. In the distance, I saw some two meter tall stone men slowly moving around. They were like enormous icicles, however, their top halves were covered by green vines. On top of that, moss grew along their arms. When they saw me, their green eyes immediately turned furious and they made their way towards us. Even though they were moving at full speed, it would take them a year to travel the distance that my horse could travel in ten minutes, walking.

"Limestone Men, Level 135 Titan Tier monsters," Matcha happily reported, "Are we going to grind levels here?"

Li Mu smiled, "Well, hy not. After all, everyone is here."

I thought about it for a moment and nodded, "Ok then, let's grind levels. Little Wolf, Qing Qian, and Wan Er, you three assassins should alternate in scouting out the situation here. Another three knights should also head out and roam the area to make sure that everyone is grinding safely. If any large groups of Moon City players come our way, we'll immediately retreat. There's no point in facing them head on. There's too few of us and it won't be worth it.

Old K waved his hand and smiled, "Actually, we should've brought all 6000 of our Steel Blade Horsemen over. D\*mn, in this Rubble Forest, we'll just go all out and fight a battle with the [Dawn] guild. Let's show that b\*st\*rd Hand of Waterloo the true strength of the Chinese Server and teach them a lesson!

I chuckled, "Alright already, stop thinking about that. If six thousand steel

blade horsemen all came over, then that'll probably be when the country battles officially open. After all, you guys know that it takes around seven hours to pass through the desert. That's more than enough time for the Steel Blade Horsemen to grind 40% of the experience for a new level. There's no need to waste that kind of precious time. Alright already, let's stop wasting time. Everyone spread out and prepare to grind levels!"

"Yes sir!"

Star Blade and Moon Feather both charged ahead into the stone forest on their Steel Blade Horses. They began to scout out the situation in the area. Wolf and Qing Qian also headed out. Wan Er jumped out of my lap and off my horse. She picked up her two daggers and took the task of leading the teams for killing monsters. Of course, in terms of killing power, Wan Er this Hermit God was much stronger than Qing Qian and Wolf. Besides, her defense power was incredibly high, and being a tank was well within her capabilities. To tell her to scout the area would be too great of a waste.

.....

Our group then began to explore the area. Our thirty players formed seven small teams. I took Meng Yao, Dancing Forest, Thousand League and Lin Xiao Xie to make a four person team. When we began killing the Limestone Men, we noticed that their defense power was pretty good, but it wasn't enough to completely block our attacks. On top of that, its attack power was extremely pitiful. It barely scratched my armor.

Not long after, Li Mu suddenly said, "What? These Limestone Men actually drop armor sets?"

In the team chat, he shared the states of a wrist guard that was a part of a set, the Limestone Set. It was a Level 118 Emperor Tier Armor Set. However, the stats were much weaker than the Black Flame Set. If we manage to complete a set, it would still be a very high level armor at this stage in the game. At least, it was much stronger than the other Emperor Tier, Valkyrie Tier and Saint Tier equipments.

I cheerfully smiled, "Then let's keep killing! We'll try and clear out the entire map. Looks like we're the first group of people in this map. I wonder why....

Haven't the Moon City players come to this Stone Forest before?"

Matcha said, "Boss, the Stone Forest is too far from Moon City. Moon City has several forests just outside of it. Besides, the Graveyard is a perfectly suitable place for grinding levels. And so, the Moon City players have never been here before. The [Hero's Mound] players had been attacked by the [Dawn] players in the Breezy Plains near the Rubble Forest area. I'm thinking that [Dawn] wasn't fast enough. Hand of Waterloo was most likely originally planning on clearing this map, but in the end, they had encountered the [Hero's Mound] players, messing up their plans. It's highly likely that that is what had happened. "

I couldn't help but feel amazed, "Then we should hurry. [Dawn] can come here at any moment!"

"Yup!"

## Chapter 733 - Stone Tigers

I am simply unable to predict every single event correctly, and the movements of the [Dawn] guild are one of the them. An hour later, we received information that the Hand of Waterloo led his remaining 700+ members of the [Dawn] guild into Moon Valley. Originally, the plan was to kill off the remaining survivors of [Hero's Mound]. Who would have thought that they would run into a group of members from the [Legend] guild that just returned from Tian Ling City. Fang Ge Que personally led the team with the three great generals: Enchanted Painting, Lu Chunyang and Xuan Yuan Feng. Together with 200+ Earth Bane Horsemen, he charged into Moon Valley and fought a battle with the members from the [Dawn] guild. Both guilds suffered equal losses but perhaps it was due to the fear of the vanguard led by Fang Ge Que and Enchanted Painting, that Hand of Waterloo led everyone to retreat to the Breezy Plains and adopted several defensive positions. As such, the [Legend] guild didn't dare to be careless as they stayed at Moon Valley to train their levels and explored the map.

However, based on my inference, the [Dawn] guild members are not reckless men. Seeing as they knew when to retreat and when to advance, it was obvious that they wouldn't have submissively given away Moon Valley to us Chinese players. The next move in their plans would probably be to unite the players from England and together in one big army, force their way into Moon Valley, and force us Chinese players to the borders and eventually expel us into the wastelands.

If Fang Ge Que hadn't arrived to help, I fear that the [Dawn] members could have just accomplished the mission with just the 700+ Moon City horsemen they had. After all, the 120 horsemen from [Hero's Mound] were just simply unable to stand up to the might of the cavalry of the [Dawn] guild.

In this way, this unexpectedly gave [Zhan Long] an exceptionally good chance to train levels. We had very few people, just barely 20 mounts. As there was no need for us to join in on the fun at Moon Valley, we might as well go to Rubble Forest and sweep the area clean.

As we trained our levels, we also paid attention to the information from the outside world. Flame Cloud City, south of Tian Ling City, was also beginning to move. An unclear number of Flame Cloud players had entered into the southern territories of the War God's Map. They fought against our players in areas like Panlong Peak and Starry Moon Swamp. Ye Lai lead five hundred of his Frost Ram Horsemen over and split up with [Legend]. Main players like Scholar, Drunken Moment, and Dawn of Purgatory lead a thousand of their horsemen into the Panlong Peak area. Apparently, they had already fought against three hundred of the Indian players from Flame Cloud City. Each had their own victories. Just based off of their current attitude, Flame Cloud City really was the most average of the cities. The Indian players' plans and thoughts were already known by everyone.

Thankfully, the Chinese Server was well reputed for their strength. [Legend] and [Judgement] held fort in the south. No matter how strong the players from Flame Cloud City were, they still wouldn't be able to break through our defense. Besides, the country battles had yet to open. Even if they fought their way into Tian Ling City and killed the king, they still wouldn't be able to invade the city. The Indian players weren't idiots, they wouldn't try something like that.

Once I thought about that, I let out a long sigh. I'm afraid that the upcoming battle won't be changed by anything. All that [Zhan Long] can do is prepare as much as they can. When the armies come, we can only do our best to hold them off like a dam and we are going to be the soldiers of the future country battle. The sole reason for [Zhan Long]'s battles was for the sake of China's honor!

.....

"Ka cha!"

My Dragon Reservoir Sword sliced through, and cut the Limestone Giant in half. It cried out and finally fell to the ground. After it had died, it dropped a pair of Limestone boots. Wan Er smiled, "Your luck isn't bad today, you got another pair of boots~"

I smiled and urged my horse forward. After walking around another stone pillar, I saw another group of Limestone Giants that had just spawned.



However, right as I turned around, I felt a shudder run through my body, but it had nothing to do with the Limestone Giants.

“Pig, what’s wrong?” Wan Er had noticed my expression and softly asked.

I opened my mouth, but couldn’t say anything. All that I could look at was the purple vines on the pillar. I reached out and pointed at, excited saying, “That... isn’t that....”

Wan Er was startled, “Purple Spirit Grass!”

I nodded, it was the Level 12 Herb Purple Spirit Grass. We had searched all over Tian Ling City, looking for this herb. Now that we were in the Rubble Forest, we actually managed to find such a precious herb!

.....

“Wan Er, what level is your alchemy and herb picking skill at?” I asked.

“Level 11, I haven’t reached Level 12 yet....” Wan Er said with a red face, “I’ve been spending all day playing with you guys, wasting a lot good opportunities for grinding skill levels....”

I was a little speechless, “Alright. That Purple Spirit Grass is mine!”

I rushed forward and leapt off my horse. I leapt up and plunged my Brilliant Flame Emperor into the pillar. Afterwards, I carefully picked the herb. “Ding!” My herb picking experience increased a bit. I put four bundles of the herb into my bag. Afterwards, I looked up to look for some more. The herbs grew sparsely. I had to climb up a few more meters before I could find the next group. As before, I picked some more.

This area spawned the Purple Spirit Grass. Every pillar grew around 3-5 bundles of the herb. And so, I stopped killing monsters and started gathering the grass. I waited until Li Mu and Wang Jian had completely killed all of the Limestone Giants. Around then, I had finished picking all of the herbs in the area. I had a total of seven stacks, around 694 herbs. That was around enough to level up my alchemy.

I rode on my Flying Scythe Horse and turned around to ask, “Who here has alchemy pots?”

From the crowd, Yue Yao Yan added, “I brought some. Guildmaster, how many do you need?”

“However many you have!”

“I have 200 stacks of them, each with ten pots. Pay up....”

“Alright....”

I bought all of the alchemist pots from Yue Yao Yan and then borrowed some Dragon Spit Grass from Wan Er. I then immediately began making the new pill. Purple Spirit Grass x3, Dragon Spit Grass x4 and Alchemy Pots x15. In the next moment, the alchemy pots and the ingredients all disappeared. A few Purple Spirit Pills appeared in my hand. At the same time, I heard a bell ring——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, you’ve created [Purple Spirit Pill]x5, Because you are the first player to make the Purple Spirit Pill, you have received the reward: Charm x20!

.....

Another 20 charm. Now I had a total of 553 Charm. Getting the charm was an extra bonus, but the stats were pretty great. I can tell from the monster drop rates.

As I stood there, I used up all of the alchemy pots. I had created a total of 500+ Purple Spirit Pills. I then smiled, “Come come, everyone who witnessed this get’s a split of the profits. Everyone gets ten Purple Spirit Pills. You have to save it though, I’m not sure you’ll get any more in the future....”

Li Mu laughed, “Purple Spirit Pill, does it have good stats?”

“Check it out for yourself!”

I threw the ten pills over to Li Mu. That kid looked at it and shuddered——

[Purple Spirit Pill]: Instantly recovers 10,0000 mana and 20,000 health points. Cooldown: 30 seconds. After taking this pill, the user’s MaxHP and MP will increase by 40%. Furthermore, it will increase the user’s attack power and magic power by 10%. The user must be level 120 in order to use.

.....

“D\*mn....” Li Mu gulped. I could see a fiery excitement growing in his eyes as he coarsely said, “That’s too OP.... it recovers 20,000 health instantly. Not only does it recover our points and health, it also increases attack power by 10%. This is completely unfair. Is this the pill of immortality! Xiao Yao, can I have another hundred pills?”

“F\*ck off....”

I continued dispersing the Purple Spirit Pill. I gave ten to each person, leaving myself with a little over a hundred. I gave some more to Wan Er and Dong Cheng. After all, those two girls live with me. If I didn’t give them some more, then I’m afraid that I would be nagged to death. Of course, they could also wait upon me and do my every bid. Who knows.

After I completed everything, I continued forward. All of the monsters outside of the Stone Forest had been mostly cleared out.

Not long after, we entered the central area of the map. Screeches sounded throughout the map. I urged my Flying Scythe Horse forward and went around a pile of rubble. Only then did I find out that there was an enormous valley at the center. There were numerous monsters in the valley. Just a bit ahead of me was a fierce tiger. Unfortunately, it wasn’t the normal colorful tigers we see in real life, but rather a mossy green and grey Limestone Tiger. It must’ve been brought to life by magic.

I felt my heart jump a little. I glanced behind me and asked, “Is there anyone with a mount crystal?”

Qing Qian sat in Meng Yao’s lap and smiled, “Brother Xiao Yao, I have some, a total of forty. What is it?”

I lowered my voice and said, “I have a feeling that this “Ancient Stone Tiger” monster can be made into a mount....”

Li Mu smiled, “Then why don’t we hurry up?”

“Yup!”

.....

Everyone pushed forward and cleared out the stone tigers one by one. After killing around a hundred, the first LV 1 mount appeared!

Qing Qian handed a mount crystal to me and began to tame the stone tigers. In the end, it succeeded in one try. The stone tiger cried out and brushed against my leg. The Ancient Stone Tiger roared, as though it was trying to get more affection.

I wasn't planning on taking this mount so I tossed it over to Wan Er and said, "Later on, Wan Er, you decide on who gets this mount. How about we take a look at its stats?"

Wan Er nodded and waved her hand over it. The Stone Tiger's stats appeared before my eyes. It was a Level 120 Saint Tier Mount. It was another level above the Steel Blade Horses. On top of that, its stats were also far over that of the Steel Blade Horses——

Special Attribute: Green Cliff Shield, Increases the user's defense power by 80%

Special Attribute: Petrify Attack, Every ten attacks, the user will deal an attack with a [Petrify] skill. The effect lasts for five seconds

.....

"D\*mn...."

The little beauty raised the mount crystal and looked at me for a long time, "The great system overlords seem to be putting us Chinese players at a disadvantage, isn't that right? Such a strong mount is actually spawning in Moon City...."

Li Mu grit his teeth and said, "That Petrify skill is just too great, it's practically a bug. D\*mmit, if all of the Steel Blade Cavalry had that skill, then wouldn't we be undefeatable?"

Wang Jian and Matcha were both speechless.

Everyone here had been through a hundred battles in the game so naturally they understood the strength of the Petrify. Furthermore, this skill allowed the Petrify to work after only ten attacks. If the Steel Blade Horsemen had that

Petrify effect, just what kind of an effect would that be? We'd be able to break through formations and cut through armies easily. We could break through anything using that Petrify. It seems as though anything is possible.

.....

"Let's hurry...." I gripped my Dragon Reservoir Sword and said, "Let's try and get more of those Stone Tiger mounts before the Moon City players find out..."

It was at that moment which I finally regretted not bringing all 6000 Steel Blade Horsemen. If I did have that many mounts, then these mounts were nothing. But now, I was realizing that [Dawn] was our [Legend], which must have a powerful cavalry as well. Once it's been brought to us, then it will definitely becoming something we must consider.

# Chapter 734 - Holy Dragon Cauldron

This time everyone was pressing their luck. We had logged on at midnight and it was already noon of the second time, yet nobody had logged off. It was a though everyone had a fire in their hearts and didn't feel tired at all. It was probably because they were playing in another country. Besides, the resources in the Stone Forest map were extremely fertile. Besides the Purple Spirit Grass and Stone monsters, there were actually Level 1 and Level 12 mine deposits that spawned all across here. We picked some while we were there. Old K and the others all had skills in mining. Just during this map, they were able to level up their mining to Level 12. The country battles were near at hand, and in our eyes picking everything wasn't plundering their resources, rather just us gaining an advantage by striking first. These mines will eventually become powerful tools in the chinese server.

Moon City's ambition was clear. Smile had lead his team of players to "step" into Tian Ling City. While they may have said that Moon City wasn't there to attack Tian Ling City, I'm afraid that even Smile and Hand of Waterloo don't believe in those words. Seeing as we'll end up fighting each other anyway, then there's no need to pretend. Attack first or else be attacked!

.....

In the middle of our journey, everyone logged off to eat some food, go to the bathroom and what not. It was three in the afternoon. We logged back into the game and the twenty horsemen of Zhan Long contained to clear the Stone Forest map. It was large enough for several thousand players to farm for over 24 hours. Unfortunately for us, we brought too few people with us and can't clear the map by ourselves. Even though each one of them can hold off ten at once, there were still only forty of us. And so, we picked out the more dense areas with monsters, mine deposits and herbs and didn't step foot on any of the more open spaces. Matcha, on the other hand, flapped her wings and flew into the forest to look for more stone mounts. Whatever we can bring with us, we have to do what we can to make sure it doesn't fall into the hands of the Moon City players. I was especially cautious about the stats that the stone mounts

presented. Matcha was like me and understood what I was thinking. And so, she spent her focus on finding those mounts.

Still, we had too few people and there was no way that we could hear the entire map. As soon as one of Moon City's main guilds find this Stone Forest Map, then the Stone Mounts were as good as gone.

We continued like this all the way until five in the afternoon. Finally, we had cleared out most of the Stone Forest map and we had basically completed our map of Moon City. If we launched an attack from Tian Ling City, then even though we don't know much about the map on the way here, we'll know everything about the enemy's territory. At least we'll be very familiar and won't be easily ambushed.

Of course, while a man can plan, the real job is up to fate. When the battle actually breaks out, who knows what will happen?

.....

"Bother Xiao Yao, careful!"

Qing Qian flapped her wings and flew into the sky with her dagger raised. She climbed onto a tree that was dozens of meters tall and said, "The players from Breezy Plains have finally come. Its [Dawn]. Hand of Waterloo is personally leading the army. It looks.. It looks like there are at least a thousand horsemen. I saw it on the Moon City Forums. [Zhan Long], [Legend], and [Hero's Mound] have all caught their attention. [Dawn] isn't the only guild, even the [Thunder God] guild is starting to move. The [Thunder God] guildmaster Smile is leading around three thousand players into Moon Valley to chase after Fang Ge Que and Enchanted Painting. Hand of Waterloo is leading a thousand horsemen to scout out Stone Forest. Behind him are another five thousand. This time, Hand of Waterloo is going all out."

I pondered for a moment and looked at everyone before saying, "Brothers, are you tired now? If you are, how about we just go back to our city."

Li Mu raised his sword and shook his head, "Not at all! This is a rare opportunity. If we don't spend three days and three nights here, then how could we say to leave? Haha, what does everyone else think?"

Dancing Forest raised her bow and smiled, “That does sound interesting. Seeing as we spent seven to eight hours to get here, then we shouldn’t go back so easily.... Moon Valley and Stone Forest have such vast maps, we won’t necessarily run into their main forces. Let’s continue walking around and see what other goodies we can get?”

I nodded, “Then how about this, we’ll continue grinding levels until ten at night. After that, everyone log off to take a break and eat some dinner. Then, get some rest. Everyone log on tomorrow at ten in the morning and we’ll continue to draft a map of Moon City.”

Everyone nodded. Old K raised his battle axe and smiled, “Then where do we go now? How about we set up an ambush here and give our French friends a little surprise?”

I gaped at him, “You want forty people to ambush a thousand man cavalry?”

Wan Er grinned, “You’re thinking too much. Let’s go and head south of the Stone Forest. Let’s go and see what map is over there! Li Xiao Yao’s alchemy and medicine skills have almost reached Level 13. If we can gather some more of that Purple Spirit Grass and rush it to Level 13, then we’ll get OP medicines! This is a great opportunity, we can’t lose out on it.”

“Yes!”

.....

We continued forward. On the way, our players attacked every LV 1 Stone Tiger so that we could seal it. We kept this up until we finished all 200+ of our pet seal stones. After that, we killed all of the LV 1 Stone Tigers that we saw. We weren’t going to leave a single one for the [Dawn] players. Normally, the first time that a map is spawned is when the highest spawn rate for BOSSes and Lvl 1 pets was. After that first spawn, the chances of it spawning again are dramatically decreased. Killing the Lvl 1 Tiger is just to pull the carpet out from underneath them.

We continued killing monsters, picking herbs, and mining materials as we advanced forward. When we reached the border of the Stone Forest, we finally heard a “Ding!” When I was about to use up all of my Alchemy Pots, the system notified me: Congratulations, you’ve leveled up your alchemy skill! Since you



are the first player to achieve Level 13 in Alchemy, you have received a special reward——[Holy Dragon Cauldron] (Vice God Item)!

“Huh?”

I widened my eyes. At first I thought that I had gotten it wrong. What’s a Vice God Item? Logically speaking, this game has also reached Level 150. There shouldn’t be any godly items that are released yet, right?!

I quickly opened up my bag and found a bright glowing cauldron, resting in the corner of my bag. I pulled it out and placed it in my hand. I could feel a soft godly aura floating around my hand. Wan Er had seen the same thing on the same. She was extremely clever and had already guessed it, “This... This is the reward for Leveling up to 13?”

“Yup.”

“What are its stats?”

I reached out and waved my hand over it, sharing the stats for everyone to see in the sky. Everyone was stunned——

[Holy Dragon Cauldron] (Vice god item)

Strength” +500

Stamina: +500

Additional: Increases the user’s MaxHP by 10,000

Special: Increases the experience gained from creating pills by 50%

Special: Loyal Heart, Increases the effects of pills made by this cauldron by 50%

Special: Limitless, There is no end to using this cauldron for making pills.

Special: Protector, Holding the cauldron in the user’s bag, never to be dropped. As long as the Holy Dragon Cauldron is in the bag, then it will never be dropped. In addition, the Holy Dragon Cauldron can be used to store herbs, at most a thousand

Required Level: 125

Bound Player: Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Godly Weapon Number: 0271

.....

I nearly jumped from looking at the stats of this Holy Dragon Cauldron. It can actually raise my stats when it's in my bag. Especially that ten thousand added to my MaxHP, that is too OP. Plus, any pills made from that Holy Dragon Cauldron has an added 50% increase in their effects. Just what kind of thing is this!?

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Dragon Knight)

Level: 128

Attack: 10516-13153

Defense: 10173

Max HP: 65857

Magic: 14050

Charm: 553

CBN Battlenet Ranking: 6

Having the Holy Dragon Cauldron increased my stats by a large amount. Especially my health. While I'm on a mount, it's already at 65,000. Not many full health knights had even reached that level. On top of that, my defense far surpassed their's and my attack power was only growing even more. No wonder these enemy guilds are always trying to kill me first. As a warrior with both attack and defense, I was everybody's worst enemy.

I opened up my Holy Dragon Cauldron and made another Purple Spirit Pill. Of course, the new Purple Spirit Pills were even better——

[Purple Spirit Pill]

Health Recovery: 30,000

Mana Recovery: 15,000

Upgrade: 60% increase to MaxHP and MaxMP

Creator: Xiao Yao Zi Zai

Required Level: 120

I threw this new pill that I had made to Li Mu. Li Mu speechlessly caught it, “D\*mn... a pill with a thirty second cooldown actually has such an OP effect. If we continuously used the pill, who would be able to kill you?”

I nodded, “And so, after we get back to Tian Ling City, we should focus all of our efforts on finding that Purple Spirit Grass. However many we find, we’ll use. I will make sure to get it done before the Country Battles. It’ll become a recipe that only [Zhan Long] has.”

Wang Jian laughed, “Yup, Brother Xiao Yao is right. That’s exactly what we should do! We’ll give every Steel Blade Horsemen around 10-20 of these Purple Spirit Pills. Then, if we use it with the normal Level 12 Purple Spirit Pills, the Steel Blade Horsemen won’t be killed unless there was an insane amount of firepower concentrated on them. Otherwise, it’d be hard for them to even be able to kill themselves!”

I nodded, “Yup. Let’s keep this up!”

.....

As we pushed forward, we continued killing the monsters along the way. Not long after, around a thousand yards away, a group of [Dawn] guild players had appeared. Hand of Waterloo stood at the very front. One of the swordsmen raised his halberd and said, “Guildmaster, the Chinese Server CBN Battlenet Ranked sixth, Xiao Yao Zi Zai is leading some people here. There’s also the pretty girl Cang Tong, who's ranked seventh on the CBN Battlenet. How about we go and kill them all!”

Hand of Waterloo furrowed his brow and shook his head, “No, don’t go over there. It’s too far. Their horses move faster than ours. We’ll never be able to catch up to them. Besides, based on my information, this Stone Forest Map has Level 1 Stone Tigers that spawn here. They must have caught quite a few. Next is up to us!”

“Yup!”

.....

I could hear their conversation from afar and felt my heart grow cold. How do

they know that we caught several Stone Tigers? That's right, there should be several Moon City assassins in the area. They must have been watching our every move. Thankfully Fang Ge Que and Q-Sword were controlling their power. Otherwise, why else would I have the opportunity to pick so many herbs.

"Not good, they're sending people over!" Li Mu looked at the distance and gripped his sword.

In the distance, around two hundred horsemen from the [Dawn] guild were coming. Just based off of those numbers, they could finish us off. Hand of Waterloo on the other hand didn't come along. Looks like he's very confident in the strength of his guild.

But right at that moment, another variable came into play. A bell sounded by my ear——

"Ding!"

System Notification: Please note, an ancient general has appeared in the Graveyard of Gods in Ba Huang City. Kill him and you will have a hundred percent chance of getting a Country Weapon!

"Country Weapon?!"

I widened my eyes and glanced over at Wan Er. Wan Er was also gaping, "Why would a country weapon appear at a time like this? And... and it's actually within Ba Huang City territory? Wouldn't we need body doubles for this?"

Qing Qian gripped her fist and said, "A country weapon, what's up with that?"

Li Mu said, "Normally speaking, the number of country weapons that appear in the game are extremely limited. A country weapon that has spawned in the Chinese Server is already very special and Ba Huang City has one now... We should go back to the city and fight for that weapon!"

I looked at everyone, "What does everyone else think?"

Dong Cheng smiled, "We must go back to Ba Huang City and fight for that Country Battle. If [Vanguard], [Hero's Mound] or the Greedy Wolf Raiders take it then we'll end up at a disadvantage.

Wan Er added, "Then let's go back!"

I nodded, actually just what kind of an effect will one country weapon have in the grand scheme of things? However.... Seeing as it's a country weapon, then it will become a pillar of support for the players. And so, we cannot allow that weapon to fall in the hands of others, or else it will affect the morale of our soldiers. We must go back!

And, right at that moment, I heard another bell, nearly taking my breath away  
——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Please note, an ancient general has appeared at the bottom of Mirror Lake in Moon City. Kill him and there will be a 100% chance of receiving a country weapon!

“D\*mmit....” Li Mu facepalmed, “Their not letting us f\*cking live. What should we do, should we fight for it?”

I looked at the distance and saw the players from [Dawn] guild charging at us. And so, I couldn't help but smile and said, “Fight. Besides, if we go now, we won't be there in time. We might as well just give the Ba Huang City country weapon to Fang Ge Que and the rest. As long as it remains within the Chinese Server!”

“Alright, to Moon Lake!”

I tugged on my reins and ignored all of the monsters and ran straight towards the Mirror Lake Map. Actually, we weren't far from the Mirror Lake map. After a few minutes, we charged out of the Stone Forest. A soft breeze brushed against the surface of the lake, giving a sense of peace and tranquility. However, several French players were charging right behind us and so we had not reached a “state of peace in heart and mind”.

“Mirror Lake, where is it?” Li Mu asked.

I shook my head, “Who knows... maybe we have to hold our breath and find the map at the bottom of the lake?”

“The players from [Dawn] are here!”

Qing Qian pointed behind us. Just as she had said that, a cloud of dust rose

from the Stone Forest. Hand of Waterloo must have seen the system notification as well and was bringing a thousand of his [Dawn]'s most elite players here.

Wan Er wrinkled her brow and said, "That's not good. If we let Hand of Waterloo bite onto us, then how can our forty players fight against them? Besides, the BOSS will definitely be strong. We cannot take them both on by force.

Old K was stunned, "Then what do we do?"

I made a fist, "In a fight, even a disadvantage can be turned into an advantage. Follow me. Everyone turn off their name icons."

"Wouldn't the enemy still be able to figure out our names?"

"At most that will only work for individual people. There's no need to think too much about it."

"....."

I tightened my hand around Wan Er's waist and urged my horse into a gallop. With a whoop, I charged right into Moon Lake. At that moment, I felt a wave of cold water envelop me, like a refreshing cool bath. "Wu" Wan Er cried as she was brought into the water. After all, the swimming function had yet to be activated by the system. I took the Flying Scythe Horse in with me into the bottom of the lake. "Peng peng peng!" I heard behind me. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, and Meng Yao had all entered the bottom of the lake and like me, none of them floated to the top but rather walked on the bottom.

The sunlight was scattered by the water and created a wavy pattern on the floor. The originally still lake was now broken into waves by the rush of our players. [Dawn]'s players were around a thousand yards away. They would still need a few minutes before they could reach this map. The lake would calm down within that time. Furthermore, we were all of high level and could hold our breath underwater for 20 minutes. And, the flow of this Mirror Lake's water was very soft, unlike the harsh and bitter cold War God River. I'm afraid that we wouldn't even last a minute under the pressure of the War God's River.

There was no way to say anything under water, and so I typed into the guild

chat, “Nobody emerge and follow us forward. There were some high level grass on the western border of the Mirror Lake. We’ll hide out over there and wait for the [Dawn] players to enter the water. Then, we’ll ambush them there and take the Country Weapon.”

Old K could help but smile, “F\*ck, you crafty b\*st\*rd... wuwu....”

Dancing Forest replied, “Old K you idiot, you didn’t swallow some water when you spoke, did you?”

Wang Jian said, “Ha ha, Old K’s intelligence really is his weak spot.....”

Old K was speechless.

Qing Qian squinted her beautiful eyes and said, “How far?”

I replied, “Don’t worry, it’ll be soon!”

Meng Yao added, “Slow down Brother, I can’t see you anymore.”

“Got it”!

I gripped Wan Er’s waist and grabbed the rope of Meng Yao’s Verdant Pear and walked her forward. After all, she was my sister. She was going to act a little spoiled around me. And, now that I had a girlfriend like Wan Er, Meng Yao was already bringing it in a lot more. If she was anything like she was before, then no matter how generous Wan Er was, she’d still walk away in a fit of anger.....

.....

Close to 15 minutes later, we reached the western bank of Mirror Lake. We had been moving stealthily under the water, so there wasn’t much danger. But, as I looked at a distance, I saw an enormous black monster slowly moving at the bottom of the lake. It suddenly charged at us. It was a monster with a long neck and scissor like pincers growing out of the top of its head. It’s black beady eyes stared right at us. Its body was like that of a cockroach and two snake like arms with sharp blades at the end grew from beside its neck. It looked like there was poison on the ends as well.

“It’s a Shelled Dragon!” Li Mu clenched his teeth, “It’s coming right at us! Prepare your defenses!”

I quickly turned my horse back into the water and typed, “No one activate any skills! The light is too noticeable and we’ll attract too much attention. I’ll grab the Shelled Dragon while everyone else use normal attacks against it. Dong Cheng, don’t attack. You’re skills are all magic attacks, creating a magic circle on the surface of the water.”

Everyone nodded.

I was the first to charge over and take on the Shelled Dragon. It raised its terrifying head and charged right at me. “Hua!” I swam right at us. “Ka ka” the pinchers crossed and I quickly grabbed a hold of them. Once I did, I found out that its entire neck was covered in a rock hard shell. Furthermore, it seems that the information that Q-Sword had given me was wrong. This wasn’t a Titan Tier monster, it was a Level 6 Hybrid Demon. Motherf\*cker, just what is a fierce monster like this doing at the bottom of the lake?

I waved my arm. “Shua!” my Dragon Reservoir Sword flew out in a stab. The Shelled Dragon’s two arms were already twisting towards me. It suddenly wrapped around my arm. My movements underwater were far slower, how could I match against an absolute powerhouse like this? As it trapped one of my arms, its other arm suddenly shot towards me again.. This time, it dealt a fierce slice towards my shoulder!

“Pu pu pu....”

Blood flowed into the water. Even my defense couldn’t stand against this Shelled Dragon’s attack! One after another, damage numbers flew up——

“7193 ! ”

“6127 ! ”

“8122 ! ”

.....

Darling Duck quickly raised her staff and I shouted, “Don’t heal me! I’ll drink potions!”

As I was typing, I quickly drank down a Level 12 Purple Spirit Pill and recovered all of my health. At the same time, I pulled out my Brilliant Flame



Emperor with my left arm and cut into the Shelled Dragon. Wan Er swam out from my lap and pulled out both daggers. “Ka Ka KA!” she cut into the Shelled Dragon. Li Mu, Wang Jian and the others also pulled out their weapons and charged over. Everyone began hacking at the Shelled Dragon. The lake water was turning red from the blood. None of us used any skills, or else our movements would be too conspicuous. If anyone was looking from a distance, they wouldn't even be able to see the red water here.

The shelled dragon really was a very terrifying monster, especially if I were fighting alone at the bottom of the river and in a circumstance where I couldn't use any skills. Luckily, there were several others with me. In a fit of fury, the Shelled Dragon finally died and its body began floating to the surface. I quickly typed, “Don't let it float to the surface or else we'll be exposed!”

Lin Xiao Xie quickly grabbed the Shelled Dragon's tail and dragged the body back. She raised her halberd and “Pu chi!” Pierced it through its body. After that, she nailed it to the bottom of the lake and turned around to look at me, “Guildmaster now what do we do?”

I pointed to the right and said, “There's a dense thicket of watergrass over there. If we go there, our red names won't appear and it won't show up on the map. We'll take a breath of air there and continue in the water!”

“Ok!”

We all surfaced on the right flank and looked towards the distance, only to see that the [Dawn] players were also charging into the water. However, not long after that, a scream rang out. A black snake like figure twisted around, grabbing onto the players. The water around them was dyed red. There was no need to think otherwise, there must be several of the Shelled Dragons there and the [Dawn] players must have bumped right into them!

One of the team leaders raised his bow and shouted, “SHIT, it's a Shelled Dragon! We bumped into a nest of Shelled Dragons. Guildmaster, what do we do?”

Hand of Waterloo charged right into the water with his sword raised and shouted, “Don't hesitate and kill them all! Xiao Yao Zi Zai and the others must have already entered the underground palace. That country weapon belongs to

France! We cannot let the Chinese players take it! Otherwise, that'll become my life's humiliation. Let the British know and have them bring people to help us!"

"Yes sir!"

.....

Blood and waves continuously unfurled in the water. Who knows how many Shelled Dragons were in that water. A thousand of [Dawn]'s horsemen were in that water and who knows how many of them had died. However, the Hand of Waterloo was a very determined man, he probably won't give up very easily. We only needed to continue waiting. When the Country Weapon appears, we'll attack then. Otherwise, it'd be suicide if the forty of us tried taking on them.

Logically speaking, the moment the country weapon drops, there shouldn't be an easy way to take it back to the city or log off, otherwise there's no chance to fight for it. The system won't let such a great opportunity pass. And so, we can only gamble on that moment. Gamble that the [Dawn] players will try to protect the Country Weapon and leave. The moment that they leave is the moment that we strike!

Thankfully, there was still a distance between Mirror Lake and Moon City. In the thirty minutes it takes for them to get back, there won't be too many people who come here. That will be our moment.

Around twenty minutes later, a bell rang out in the sky——

"Ding!"

System Notification: Player "Hand of Waterloo" has successfully obtained the [Lion King's Shield] (Country weapon), in the next ten hours, any player who carries the Lion King's Shield will not be able to enter any cities or log off. Dying, or logging off will force the player to immediately drop the Country Weapon. In the next ten hours, the country weapon will become a normal weapon that can be equipped and traded. The current location of the player, Hand of Waterloo is [Mirror Lake] (2767, 11202)!

# Chapter 736 - Defeat the Many with the Few

“Come out!”

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and tightened my fist with a smile, “Lion King’s Shield? Moon City’s first country weapon was actually a shield. He he, interesting, interesting....”

Li Mu wiped away some of the water grass from his face and said, “The location has already appeared, should we move now?”

I looked into the distance and then squinted, “I think, we’ve been found....”

Wang Jian yelped, “What?”

Right at that moment, I heard another bell. The system notified that the Lion King’s Shield had shifted over to the player “Afternoon Knight”. I did a quick search and found that Afternoon Knight was the [Dawn] guild’s vice guildmaster. He was a Level 125 Concealed Class Horseman. Looks like Hand of Waterloo is planning on letting that knight protect the Lion King’s Shield for ten hours. Afterwards, he’ll use it for himself.

.....

On top of Moon Lake, a large group of [Dawn] guild horsemen swam over. Their horses’ heads rose above the surface of the lake and they were heading straight towards us. They quickly let out a whinny. Surprise shook Wan Er’s face and she shouted, “They didn’t find us, they’re planning on climbing ashore on the western bank. Are they planning on going towards Moon city from there?”

“That can’t be right.” I furrowed my brow and said, “They aren’t going to Moon City. They’re planning on going to the map to the west. I believe there’s a wild map over there with dense forests. Hand of Waterloo is planning on hiding in that forest for the next ten hours. That way, the Country weapon will forever remain in the hands of [Dawn]. There’s no question about it, that Afternoon Knight must be the one with the highest HP and defense!”

Dong Cheng pouted her lip and said, “It seems that they’ve already noticed us. What do we do? There’s so many of them. There’s at least five hundred in

the water. I'm afraid that once we face them, we'll all die!"

Wolf asked, "Brother Xiao Yao, what should we do now?"

I tugged on my horse and retreated several steps, "Retreat back into the reeds. If they really have found us, then we'll just have to fight them on with force. Even if we fight for our lives, we have to get that Lion King's Shield...Before, when I was in the service, I heard that the British royal family was represented by the lion. This Lion King's Shield is similar to the emblem of the British Monarchy. If we can get that, how great would that be...."

Matcha nodded and retreated her mount, "Everyone, carefully hide. Keep tabs on the location of that Afternoon Knight!"

"They're coming!" Dancing Forest had already notched her arrow and prepared her attack. A group of forty players were lying low in the dense reed. The people in the distance didn't necessarily find us.

The [Dawn] players' goal was too obvious. As they were moving through the water, they were ambushed several more times by some Shelled Dragons. Several dozen knights screamed in the water. One of them shouted, "Guildmaster, should we finish off these Shelled Dragons first? They're too vile. Just how many of our players were killed by them!"

Hand of Waterloo furrowed his brow and said, "We'll compensate them very well for their losses. We cannot stop here. Do not let these distractions slow down our advance!"

Beside the Hand of Waterloo was a player dressed completely in black armor who carried a golden Lion crest Shield. He looked energetic and strong. It was that Afternoon Knight. He was a young man around twenty five years old. He smiled and said, "Guildmaster, check out those reeds out front. I think there's some people. They must be the Chinese players, right?"

"Well well, were they planning on ambushing us?"

Hand of Waterloo purposely used his public chat and shouted, "Get ashore and clean them out! Protect Afternoon Knight and clean out the chinese players on the bank. Just what kind of waves are a couple dozen players trying to bring up in Moon City. They're just looking for death. They're really not showing any

respect to our Moon City players.”

“Yes sir!”

A group of [Dawn] players charged onto the shore and turned their horses around. The battle horses created ripples. Very soon, at least a hundred people had already rode ashore. They swung their weapons and charged ahead. One after another, the [Flying Sword]s flew through the air, cutting through the brown reeds. “Keng keng keng!” the blades rammed against Yue Yao Yan, Matcha, and Meng Yao’s shields, creating sparks. War had been declared.

When I thought of the upcoming battle, I never would have expected that Hand of Waterloo would pay so much attention to the twenty [Zhan Long] horsemen. He actually let Afternoon Knight and his Lion King Shield actively fight against us. Against this hundred [Dawn] players, I didn’t have much of an option either. I pulled out both of my swords and shouted, “Lock on to your targets and focus your firepower. We’ll kill them one by one. Once we make contact, retreat. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Matcha, Yue Yao Yan and I will go together. The five of us will take the rear. Everyone follow my command and prepare to retreat into the forest on the west.”

“Yes sir!”

As everyone replied, I had already charged ahead. I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw a slash right into the crowd. I dealt a crowd multi tens of thousands of damage. Right after that, I pulled out my Brilliant Flame Emperor, and let loose a whirlwind into the crowd. I had killed the first three [Dawn] players in one sweep. Right behind me, Dong Cheng, Dancing Forest, Thousand Suns, and Xing Lie dealt ranged damage from behind the protection of the knights. In the blink of an eye, another ten people fell under our net of firepower.

“Kill, kill them all. Charge through!” Hand of Waterloo raised his sword and charged ahead. That a\*\*hole really isn’t afraid of death at all. He raised his [Star Flame Shield] before him and threw a Star Flame Blade right into my shoulder!

“Keng!”

“10127 ! ”

Under the attack, my health plummeted but I still didn't give way in the slightest. My shoulder slightly fell under the attack and our horses collided. I then rammed my other shoulder into his chest. I turned around and threw a [Fierce Ice Blade] into his back!

“13281 ! ”

“Huh?”

Hand of Waterloo clearly hadn't thought that my attack power had reached his point. Right as he turned around, he was caught right in the middle of my [Great Realm of Desolation], which dealt another 14,000 in damage. That, along with the firepower from Dong Cheng and Thousand Suns, Hand of Waterloo's health dropped to 30% in that moment. I raised my blade and quickly retreated, and I heard a yell, “Afternoon Knight, you go in front of me and lure the damage! Everyone else, charge from the flanks!”

Afternoon Knight raised the Lion King Shield and smiled, “Alright!”

As he said that, he charged ahead. He shot forward like a blade. Moon Feather reacted quickly and rose up. However, she couldn't hold against the attack and was stunned by a [Brave Ram]. She retreated several steps. A couple of the enemy's horsemen charged into place. With a [Blade Rush]+[Battle Axe Throw], Moon Feather was forced even further. There was no more time left, she was being battered by different combos and skills. Her Black Flame Shield was broken. She cried out as she fell off the her horse as she died.

Li Mu and Wang Jian roared and charged forward. [Skyshaker Slash]+[Covering Slash]+[Halberd Whirlwind] all exploded against Afternoon Knight. Right as each attack hit, a black energy shield appeared. He had activated his skill [Thunder Armor] and [Heavenly Shield Wall]. To top it off, he hid behind the Lion King's Shield to avoid the attacks. The damage numbers flew up, and shocked everyone——

“912 ! ”

“1008 ! ”

“1327 ! ”

.....

Afternoon Knight's total health was just over 60,000. In the end, Wang Jian and Li Mu's attack barely tickled him. Matcha nearly fell off of her Thousand League Moonlight in astonishment. She gaped, "Isn't that a little too exaggerated? There's one that dealt below a thousand damage. D\*mn... just what is his defense!?"

Xing Lie and Dancing Forest both concentrated their attacks on this country weapon bearer but heaven knows just how much defense that Lion King's Shield had added for him. Even their attacks probably only dealt around a thousand damage or so.

I grit my teeth, "Release all of your attacks on Afternoon Knight. His [Heavenly Shield Wall] cool down only lasts for twelve seconds. It would be too late to kill him then either. Carefully pick your targets. Darling Duck, revive Moon Feather and prepare to retreat!:

As I sent out the commands, I set up an Azure Dragon Crossbow that shot into the crowd of [Dawn] players. At the same time, I swung my blades and dove into the crowd. Now that I had the [Cursed God's Effect], any player that was killed by me couldn't revive for sixty minutes. That skill was a great skill, especially for a time like this.

Wan ER, Qing Qian and Wolf and charged into the crowd, stunning and controlling the enemy's knights. Mirror Lake's peace was almost completely broken by us. Countless [Dawn] players charged at our group, both in the water and on land. A large part of the map was dyed red from the number of enemies in the area. There was no way we could drag this battle out.

.....

"Ha ha, go die!"

Afternoon Knight raised his halberd in one hand with his Lion Shield in the other and was at the pinnacle of attack and defense power. Like that, he charged into Li Mu, landing a [Skysaker Stab]+[Flame Axe] onto his shoulder!

"7213 ! "

"6981 ! "

Looks like that b\*st\*rd's attack power isn't anything special. Li Mu didn't

seem to be afraid in the slightest. He immediately raised both swords. Finally, after the [Heavenly Shield Wall] disappeared, he was able to break his defense

——

“4033 ! ”

“3541 ! ”

Still, the damage was low from his other defense stats. To top it off, that Lion King Shield must have impressive stats. Otherwise, he wouldn't be able to lower Li Mu's damage by so much. I then charged forward. From the flank, I was able to push Afternoon Knight backwards. I then raised both swords. “Ka ka ka!” I dealt four quick attacks, each striking upon the Lion King Shield and bringing out damage——

“7712 ! ”

“8011 ! ”

“7839 ! ”

“7732 ! ”

.....

On the blink of an eye, Afternoon Knight's health dropped to nearly 50%. The Azure Dragon Bow had shot him in the chest, leaving only around 30% of his health still intact. He quickly retreated and shouted, “That Xiao Yao Zi Zai Chinese person has such a high attack power... Hurry up the charge and kill them!”

I raised my blade and killed another two people. I then shouted to everyone, “[Zhan Long] players, don't fall prey to the battle. Retreat. Follow my orders. All of the previously listed players, hold the rear!”

Li Mu, Wang Jian, Matcha and Yao Yan followed me and protected the rear. Every one of us had at least 50,000 health and a base defense of 10,000. At least we wouldn't get insta killed easily. The rest lead their horses and charged towards the distance while we covered for them.

“Peng!”

Icy energy spread out from under my feet while my Ancient Heavenly Tiger



roared and pounced on a person before following us towards the west and retreating. Wan Er swung her daggers, stabbing two knights before activating [Absolute Step] and catching up with us. With a leap, she jumped back into her spot in my lap. She then turned around to smile to me, “Based of my estimate of our damage output, we aren’t completely hopeless in trying to steal that Lion King’s Shield.”

# Chapter 737 - Losing A Treasure to Carelessness

“Too bad, they have too many people. If there were just a few less.. Then we’d actually have the opportunity!” I clenched my teeth.

Wan Er nodded, “Don’t be so stuck on this, and hurry up. Run for your life first!”

“Ok!”

The twenty [Zhan Long] horsemen galloped ahead of us. We left a trail of smoke and dust in our trail. [Dawn] players were right on our tail. Unfortunately for them, they couldn’t catch up to the speed of the Steel Blade Horsemen. There was no way, after all, most of the players that Hand of Waterloo brought with him were mount type players, but they hadn’t brought as many assassins with them. And so, they lacked the control players necessary. Naturally, they wouldn’t be able to deal much impact on our team, nor could they catch up with our Steel Blade Horsemen.

.....

Hand of Waterloo followed me very closely. Comparatively, his battle horse was pretty good, but he didn’t seem to be aggressively chasing after me. He had experienced my attack power before. As long as I had the chance, I would deal a round of skills and some normal attacks. I’m afraid that he’ll only be able to keel over and die.

The cloud of dust behind me became more and more dense. I felt my heart grow cold. Motherf\*cker, there has to be at least three thousand [Dawn] players that were chasing after me. Do they really have to go to such lengths for twenty horsemen?

“Is [Dawn] really so powerful in Moon City?” Li Mu asked as he ran. He furrowed his brow, “It’s like they’re gods. D\*mm\*t, just when are they going to give up!”

I pointed to the front and said, “When we hit that forest, don’t stop. Maintain this speed, all the way until we pull further away from them. After that, we’ll find a chance to get that Lion King Shield!”

“Yes sir!”

This forest really had a nice sounding name. It was the “Rose Forest”. It sounded very romantic. In the distance, I could see thick bushes of fiery red roses growing along the border. Normal roses are a deep crimson, and roses that were a fiery orange like this were rather rare. However, these were even more beautiful than the normal red roses. I lead the charge. “Hua la!” I rushed into the Rose Forest. At that moment, a monster charged out of the ground. It was a Level 134 Forest Wolf. It had charged right at my Ancient Heavenly Tiger while we continued rushing forward.

“Look, there’s people on the right!” Qing Qian shouted with a smile, “This should be our chance, after all it’s a new factor!”

Just as she had said, there was a large group of red dots in the northwest that was heading towards us. I saw a flock of birds fly out from the forest. There must be over a thousand people. Very soon, we could hear the sounds of hooves. A group of elite warriors on horses rode over. All of them had the same insignia on their shoulder, a hammer. It’s the players from [Thunder God]!

Leading the group was a Level 123 Berserker — The Executor, one of the team leaders. There were countless players behind him. At least two thousand of [Thunder God]’s horsemen had caught up to us. Every one of them clearly had the intent to kill, but none of them paid any attention to the twenty of us. The Executor only looked into the forest behind us and roared, “The target is moving this way. D\*mm\*t.... The Lion King Shield belongs to the British Server. Hand of Waterloo had actually stolen it for himself. He’s taking it too far!”

Another swordsman pointed at us and said, “Squad Leader, there’s a couple dozen Chinese horsemen over there. What do we do. Should we finish them off first? Those people... they look like they’re Chinese Server... that Xiao Yao Zi Zai, isn’t he the one that defeated you and the guildmaster?”

Executor pondered for a moment and smiled, “Nevermind, let’s ignore them for now. What are those two dozen going to do. Those should be the ones that

were forced out of the Rose Forest by Hand of Waterloo. If we leave them be, they might even come into use later on!”

“Good move Squad Leader!”

.....

I waved my hand and commanded my players to retreat. The twenty horsemen of [Zhan Long] all retreated into the dense forest, and took advantage of the environment to hide ourselves. Even though there were small dots on the map, at least we could give ourselves a sense of safety.

“They’re here!” The Executor shouted.

“Hua la! Hua La!”

With a plethora of crashes, the thousands of [Dawn] players had charged out of the forest. Once Hand of Waterloo charged out of the forest, he shouted, “D\*mm\*t, why’d we run into them!”

But it was too late for them to avoid them. The Executor raised his battle axe and shouted, “Guildmaster Dawn, it’s been awhile since we last met, isn’t that right?”

Hand of Waterloo rubbed his nose and smiled, “That’s right. It’s been a while. Has my old bro been good?”

The Executor coldly smiled, “Good? Of course I’ve been good. It’s just that, the British Server’s country weapon has been taken by the French. Smile is very mad and has commanded me to immediately come and take it. Otherwise, I’ll be kicked out of the [Thunder God] guild, I think my old friend, Hand of Waterloo, won’t make my life hard, will he?”

Hand of Waterloo chuckled, “Oh? Smile actually threatened to kick you out? Don’t worry old friend, as long as you give the word, then [Dawn]’s gates will always be open for you. There’s no need for you to suffer that kind of treatment!”

.....

Eavesdropping on the conversation, I couldn’t help but chuckle. All of the words had been translated over. Looks like the system writer has a

northeastern accent.

“Keng!”

One of the swordsmen from [Thunder God] pulled out his long sword and calmly said, “Squad leader, what else is there more to say. The French are clearly trying to steal our Lion King Shield.”

The Executor raised his battle axe, “[Thunder God] prepare to advance. Our reinforcements are almost here. Today, right in this spot, we will fight [Dawn] to the death!”

“Ha ha...” Hand of Waterloo’s clever eyes stared directly ahead. He maintained a terrifying calm as he slowly pulled out his sword and smiled, “Looks like our brothers from [Thunder God] aren’t planning on giving us this respect. Then... having Moon City’s two greatest brothers in arms face each other on opposite sides for a country weapon. [Dawn] players, heed this command. Prepare for battle and kill all of [Thunder God]’s players. Do not worry about their reinforcements. Our main forces of fifteen thousand will be here in twenty minutes. Kill them and leave no mercy!”

Finally, the two biggest guilds in Moon City had formally declared war. I’m thinking that they have had quite a few conflicts before this, it’s just that the Lion King Shield was the first time they had a reason for battle. There was no other way after all, the two war zones were stuffed together in the same city. Nobody would bow their heads to one another. Only having a country weapon would give one side the power to speak.

.....

The sounds of iron hooves beating the ground arose. [Dawn] had initiated the charge. Hand of Waterloo had also noticed that the upper leadership, Smile and Apollo, were both not here. The current branch wasn’t even [Thunder God]’s main forces. And so, they planned on cleaning them out in one wave of attacks so that they don’t survive long enough for Smile to reinforce them. That was the best plan of action for [Dawn].

“Peng peng peng...”

This was the classic European style of fighting. Both sides clashed, which

made it difficult to distinguish who was on which side. What I admired most, however, was the player with the Lion King Shield, Afternoon Knight. The man was just too fierce. He carried an extremely OP shield in his hand and yet he didn't hesitate in the slightest. He carried that shield and went straight into battle. Furthermore, with the healing from three other healers, he could keep fighting without any fear!

For the sake of Afternoon Knight, [Thunder God] ended up putting in most of their firepower, however they still couldn't kill this man. Rather they ended up taking even more losses. Hand of Waterloo charged forward in his formation while [Thunder God] would be able to defend for a moment, but then got broken apart. Executor had died in battle, instantly killed by Hand of Waterloo.

“Pu Chi!”

A long halberd plunged through the body of a swordsman. Afternoon Knight had sent the man flying as he laughed, “You trash. You want to use the Lion King Shield for yourself, even though you have such poor skills?”

Once the [Thunder God] players heard that, they actually became even fiercer. After all, they were the number one guild in the British servers. Even though their main forces weren't here, there was no way they could allow the dignity of a top guild such as there's to be tarnished. Humans were always a strange creature. Sometimes, one's dignity was above all else, for the sake of upholding that honor, they would be willing to pay anything.

No matter the commander of the three armies, the ambition of the soldiers will never change!

.....

In the blink of an eye, Afternoon Knight's eyes turned red from all the killing. That b\*st\*rd really is crazy. He was a little like [Zhan Long: Division Three]'s Death God Elegy. They were all the type that would bathe their enemies in blood on command. They were loyal generals that have pledged their lives!

Both side's losses were disastrous. When [Thunder God]'s three thousand players had been killed, [Dawn] only had around 700 left. Fifty had lunged at Afternoon Knight at once, and tried to kill him in one last charge. One side had gathered its energy for a last stand while the other side was doing everything it

could to make sure that the Lion King Shield wasn't dropped.

Right at that moment, Afternoon Knight suddenly stared right towards us. He smiled, "That crowd of Chinese bugs haven't left yet? Brothers, follow me. Kill them all!"

Hooves stepped onto the grass. Less than a hundred people were charging at us. Afternoon Knight's eyes were crimson. He was probably thinking that his Lion King Shield was undefeatable.

.....

"Keng keng..."

I pulled out both swords and shouted, "Little Dance, use [Shield Break Shot] to lower Afternoon Knight's defense. Xing Lie, use all of your prided defense break skills. Wan Er, Qing Qian, use your [Armor Loss] skill as well. After that, use all of your finishing moves to attack. Afternoon Knight knows his own advantage. He'll definitely use his [Heavenly Shield Wall] to attract our firepower, and give his brothers the opportunity to kill us. So, we'll do exactly what he wants. When his [Heavenly Shield Wall] is down, we'll kill him off!"

"Alright!"

.....

Only 20 yards between us, Dong Cheng waved her staff, and dealt a [Lullaby]. One of the berserkers in front of Afternoon Knight was halted in place. Afternoon Knight couldn't stop his horse in time and "Peng!" rammed right into the berserker. The clash created chaos and confusion.

"Nice!"

I dashed forward, taking Afternoon Knight by surprise. He went into defense mode right in place, and slammed his Lion King Shield into the ground as he activated [Heavenly Shield Wall]!

"Shua shua shua,...."

Dancing Forest activated her [Shield Break Shot], and stacked it five times, which created an overall 22.5% decrease to his defense. I lunged forward and swung both swords. [Strength of a Thousand Men]+[Combo] both exploded

forth, which dealt four strikes at once. In the end, I still wasn't able to kill him. His mysterious defense was just too high. However, Wan Er and Qing Qian had arrived at that moment. They waved their dagger, activating their [Armor Loss] skills. Following that, [Blade of the Death God]+[Grip of the Firefox] landed. I could feel my heart rise up to my throat. Afternoon Knight's health had hit the bottom!

"Peng peng peng..."

Li Mu and Wang Jian had both ended up receiving the attacks from the other [Dawn] players, but none of them could get across. After all, this was our territory now.

.....

"Gloop...."

Afternoon Knight quickly gulped down a health potion and then cast a [Cleansing Wind] to add health. Dong Cheng's [Thunderbolt Finger]+[Magma Abyss] both flew over while Dancing Forest's [Meteor Shot] and Xing Lie's [Armor Piercing Bullet] landed on Afternoon Knight's chest at the same time. The situation was incredibly difficult for him!

"My god..."

It was at this point that Afternoon Knight had awoken to his mistake. But it was all too late.

I raised my sword and cut him down. Before waiting for the equipment and potions to drop, I caught the Lion King Shield in the air and dropped it into my bag. I then shouted, "Retreat!"



# Chapter 738 - Shield of the Prideful

“Ding!”

System Notification: All players, please note, the country weapon Lion King Shield has been taken by the player “Xiao Yao Zi Zai”. His current location is in the Rose Forest (2128, 8191). Within the next 9 Hours and 17 Minutes, you must kill this player in order to get the [Lion King Shield]. Good luck!

.....

The almighty lords of the system must be thinking that I have lived for too long. Every three minutes they would report on the coordinates of the Lion King Shield. Matcha, Li Mu and I were sprinting out of the Rose Forest. This was not our territory. The best method of course would be to dodge everyone we could and enter into the desert and hide out there for the next nine hours. At that point, this country weapon will be the Chinese Servers! One piece of equipment isn't actually much, but it will boost the morale of the tens of millions of chinese Players!

Behind me, Han of Waterloo lead a large group of players and chased after us, even after he had practically used up all of his strength. Unfortunately for him, most of their cavalry was not on the same level as the Steel Blade Horsemen. Few people had mounts that surpassed the Steel Blade Horseman's speed, and none of them dared to charge over by themselves. They had all witnessed the strength of [Zhan Long]'s elite players. And so, Hand of Waterloo wouldn't dare act carelessly. He could only follow us from a distance. He was most likely calling in more reinforcements and trying to find a way to lay siege on us.

“Full speed!”

I held tightly onto Wan Er's waist while I urged my horse forward. I sped ahead towards Mirror Lake. Behind me, Li Mu, Matcha, and Meng Yao had all caught up. There was no need for us to go around. What we needed to do was take the fastest route through Moon Valley and leave the Moon City territories.

“Guildmaster!”

Li Mu galloped forward and smiled, “Hurry up and show us the stats for the Lion King Shield. He he, it’s just too OP. We were actually able to steal it from all of those French players. That Hand of Waterloo must be so mad that he’s about to explode!”

I smiled inwardly and pulled out the Lion King Shield. I waved my hand over it, showing the stats in the team chat. This Lion King Shield was one of the French and British server’s weapons

[Lion King Shield] (Country Weapon)

Defense: 2750

Strength: +240

Stamina: +237

Agility: +235

Magic: +230

Additional: Increases user’s defense power by 70%

Increases user’s MaxHP by 30,000

Special: Shield Energy, raises the user’s magic defense by 1200

Special: Shield of the Prideful, Gives a shield effect to all friendly players within a thousand yards. Increases their defense by 4,000 and their magic defense by 800. Lasts for ten minutes. Requires 120 rage points, Cooldown: 4 hours.

Special Status: Country Weapon - United Kingdom

Special Status: No level limit

Required class: Knight, Monk

.....

“D\*mn....” Wang Jian furrowed his brow and said, “What an insane stat. Those must be god tier stats right? Jeez, so this is the legendary country weapon. Its stats are really terrifying... Well then, why didn’t Afternoon Knight that idiot use that [Shield of the Pride] special skill? Its so strong and increases defense by so much. I;m afraid that no players would get killed with that skill in

effect....”

I smiled slightly, “Did you not notice? This special skill requires 120 rage points. Normal players only have around a hundred rage points. Without special equipment, you couldn’t reach 120. And so, the Afternoon Knight can only relish the fact that he has it. Thankfully it’s like that, or else I’m afraid that we won’t be able to fight Afternoon Knight....”

Dong Cheng blinked a few times and smiled, “To be honest, it was a little hard even before. This shield adds 1200 points of magic defense. It’s not just a hundred, it’s a whole 1200 points. My [Thunderbolt Finger] wasn’t enough. That shield really is powerful...”

I carried the Lion King Shield and said, “I’m a swordsman, I can’t use this shield. How about a knight take it....”

Li Mu licked his lips and said, “Most of the [Zhan Long] vanguards are knights. Matcha, Yue Yao Yan, Tang Xing, Meng Yao, Tearless. One Second hero that idiot is back in Tian Ling City. Who do you plan on giving that Lion King Shield to?”

Wang Jian smiled, “Meng Yao is Brother Xiao Yao’s sister. Of course he’ll give it to her. Otherwise, Meng Yao will beat her brother up later when she goes back to Su Zhou, Ha ha....”

Meng Yao stiffened and widened her eyes, “No, I wouldn’t do that. Besides, my level isn’t high enough. Give it to someone else. I don’t want it. Plus, that Country Weapon is so precious, if you give it to me, it’ll be too much of a waste.”

I thought for a moment and said, “Based on battle contributions, Matcha is unrivaled. She is one of [Zhan Long]’s top commanders. If we give this Lion King Shield to her, we’ll increase quite a bit of her MaxHP and battle power. Let’s just set it like that, I’ll give it to Matcha.”

Matcha was stunned. She spun her horse around and mumbled, “Boss? You.... are you sure that you want to give that Lion King Shield to me? I... I’m afraid I won’t be able to fully protect this country.”

I smiled, “That’s fine. Then I’ll just wait ten hours. If we successfully hold this

Lion King Shield, then I'll give it to you to use."

Matcha nodded, "Ok, thanks boss! I... wu, I will definitely be loyal to the country and make contributions to the guild...."

I couldn't help but grin. Matcha was already a very cute girl. In the end, after spending so much time in [Zhan Long], she's learned how to joke around with everyone, she was even getting a hang of everyone's sense of humor. No wonder so many boys from the main guild were happy to grind levels under Matcha's direction. Matcha's position in the guild was no longer any lower than Wan Er or Dong Cheng, the two goddesses.

.....

As we sprinted forward, we soon entered the Moon Valley. Originally, there weren't many players in front of us. However, before long, small groups of Moon City players would appear before us. There were more and more gathering in this map. The rest had learned to group together to attack us. After our twenty horsemen cut down around a hundred or so people, our advance had slowed down quite a bit. Behind us, Hand of Waterloo was leading two thousand of [Dawn]'s players and charging at us!

"Pu Chi!"

My blade pierced through the chest of one of the knights, and cut him apart. I furrowed my brow, "There's no end to them. We can't continue like this. Sooner or later, we'll be stuck here until we die. Let's hurry up!"

Yao Yan replied, "We've been using [Charge] and [Haste] this entire time. The Steel Blade Horses' stamina is down to 10%. If we run any further, we can only jog. If we stop killing people, we'll be able to recover some stamina. There really isn't many options in this scenario."

I glanced back at the thousands of players from [Dawn] and clenched my teeth, "We can't. They'll reach us within three minutes. There's at least ten minutes of road left from the eastern side of the Moon Valley!"

Wan Er played with her dagger as she sat in my lap and smiled, "Then there's no other way. All we can do is battle it out with them here and now. Otherwise, not a single one of us will make it out!"

I nodded with clenched teeth, “Ok! Matcha, take the Lion King Shield. Later on, when we turn around to face the [Dawn] players, use the [Shield of Pride]!”

Matcha was stunned, “But boss, I don’t have 120 rage, I only have a hundred max...”

I took off my Halberd Battle Knee Guards and tossed them over to her, “These Knee Guards will increase your maximum rage by fifty points. When you're done using them, hand them back to me. Otherwise, I won’t have any knee guards.”

“Yes sir!”

.....

Everyone turned around. This was a decisive battle. This would decide whether or not we can hold our position here and recover stamina for our mounts. The [Dawn] players were the same. Otherwise, we would’ve been able to leave them here and pulled the distance between us even further apart.

“They’re here!”

Li Mu gripped his heavy sword and coldly smiled, “This [Dawn] guild really is a crazy dog. They won’t let go of the thing they’re biting. Motehrf\*cker, I’m putting it all on the line!”

I nodded, “Yup, but don’t get too into it. We’re only resting for a little bit. There’s no need to dive too deep into this battle”!

“Yes sir!”

.....

In the distance, Hand of Waterloo was already dashing towards us. Rage filled his face as he shouted, “Break them apart and kill them!”

Thunderous hooves beat the ground. [Dawn]’s players were using the last of their horses’ stamina to activate a charge. I glanced over at Matcha and said, “Now! Use the special skill on the country weapon!”

Matcha nodded and raised the Lion King Shield. She suddenly rammed it into the ground. A golden light rose from around her and spread out a thousand yards. All forty of [Zhan Long]’s players were enveloped by the image of a

golden tiger. This was the effect from the [Shield of the Prideful]. It increased our base defense by 4000 points and our magic defense by 800 points and lasted for ten minutes!

In that moment, I felt a strong energy rise up around my body. Yup, my base defense had risen four thousand point. This was almost as if I was carrying an iron shield. On top of that, even our mages, leather assassins, and archers had the same defense. They weren't just relying on the Steel Blade Horsemen for defense now. Even they could openly attack.

I stood at the very front of the crowd and raised both swords. I slid forward, which brought me right to Hand of Waterloo. I immediately used [Blade Rush]!

“Keng!”

My Brilliant Flame Emperor brought out sparks as we clashed. I had knocked Hand of Waterloo's attack away while he had only dealt 971 damage to me. Hand of Waterloo's eyes nearly rolled out of their sockets in surprise, “What... how?”

That's laughable. Now that my base defense increased by four thousand points, even I was terrified of my overall defense. Furthermore, I had my [Thousand Layer Cliff]'s hundred stacks and my [Wall of Dou Qi]'s 200% defense effect. I'm afraid that in this world, besides Matcha, nobody else's defense was stronger than my own!

.....

Wan Er raised her dagger and charged forth. Her snow white hands flashed as she dealt a [Combo], and knocked several of the [Dawn] knights backward. In the distance, the archers that targeted her actually only dealt 500 damage. Those [Dawn] archers nearly cried out with actual tears. Is this the defense that an assassin should have?”

Li Mu and Wang Jian had both spread out and begun dealing their attacks. This was the moment that the [Zhan Long]'s twenty horsemen dealt their counter attack, but we couldn't be too optimistic.

The number of [Moon City] players around us was growing. The magic and arrows were starting to grow more and more dense. Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Old

K all had their health plummet and then jump up again.

.....

At five minutes in, Li Mu immediately said, "It's time to go!"

I swung both swords and killed the enemy before me before lowering my voice and saying, "Old K, Yue Yao Yan, Meng Yao, protect Matcha and leave. Li Mu and the others will take the rear!"

Matcha didn't hesitate for a second. She knew what she was to do as a superior strategist. She grabbed her reigns and dashed away under their protection.

# Chapter 739 - Zhen Yue Blade

“Hong!”

[Halberd Whirlwind] wrecked havoc among the crowd, killing a group of [Dawn] players that were at critical health. Wang Jian, Li Mu, Dong Cheng, and Moon Feather knew that they probably weren't going to be able to leave. After Wan Er and the rest protected Matcha and the others left, the five of us faced the army.

“Kill, we must kill that Xiao Yao Zi Zai!” Hand of Waterloo's eyes were icy cold. We had killed his people and plundered the shield from his guild. This was a debt that was not going to be easily wiped away.

Magic and arrows descended upon us. We didn't even get the chance to raise our swords in defense. And like that, the horde rushed into us. I gave the Ancient Heavenly Tiger the kill command. Now that I had 800 more points in magic defense, all of the [Lullaby]'s that the Mages were shooting at me had Missed. Of course, it was still not good to underestimate the damage that magic dealt. Some strong mages were able to deal three thousand damage. Thankfully for me I had the 20% [Drain] that allowed me to continuously fight.

Moon Feather was the first to fall under the pressure. She grunted and fell to her death. She had even dropped a pair of wrist guards. They were from the Black Flame Set. That wasn't worrying however since there were several back ups in the Dragon's Den storage.

Cang Lei swung his battle axe and roared, as he charged into the crowd. He had cut one of the shield carrying knights in half. That b\*st\*rd's attack power was extremely fierce. Even I would feel danger when I saw him battling. Thankfully, he wasn't [Zhan Long]'s enemy. Otherwise, an enemy like that must be the first to be killed, or else he'd deal serious damage

Li Mu and Wang Jian's teamwork was also very admirable. They both advanced at the same time and dealt attacks left and right, killing the [Dawn] players as they switched off.



Hand of Waterloo suddenly walked off in rage and stabbed his sword through Dong Cheng Lei's chest. Then, a field of [Magma Abyss]es exploded underneath him. Dong Cheng Lei had died on the spot. Wang Jian turned around and roared, "Ah Lei!"

I clenched my teeth, "Continue charging towards the east. Do not hesitate!"

And like that, the three of us continued fighting towards the north. Star Blade and Cang Lei had both died. Luckily, Wan Er who was with me and Dong Cheng who was with Li Mu were both safe.

.....

"Brother Xiao Yao!"

Wang Jian threw his battle axe, as he hacked down a swordsman. Blood splatter was all over his face. He laughed, "We've killed enough people. Li Mu and I don't have many [Charge] skills left, but Brother Xiao Yao, you have the [Dragon's Hook]. Escaping won't be a problem for you. There's no need for you to die with us. When you find the chance, run!"

My brows creased even further, "Let's kill first!"

"Yes sir!"

Very soon, the ten minute effect from the [Shield of the Prideful] was up. Even so, we continued our forward charge. Everyone had killed over several hundred people and I had reached the limit of the [Kill for Blood] on my Dragon Reservoir Sword. Hand of Waterloo continued running after us. Even after several attempts to kill him in one wave, we still failed. That b\*st\*r\*d's ability to survive was abnormally strong.

I watched as Wang Jian's health emptied out and he died, losing a level. Right as he was about to die, he shouted to me, "Brother Xiao Yao, you are the spirit of [Zhan Long], you're not allowed to die!"

Li Mu swept out his sword and cut down a dozen people before he died in the grass of Moon Valley. He hadn't dropped a single equipment.

I clenched my teeth again. He had been with me til the end. But it was just as Wang Jian had said, there was no need for me to die here. I gripped my sword

and charged forward I used [Haste] and urged my horse forward. At the same time, I raised my hand and used my [Seven Star Teleportation].”Shua!” I teleported away towards the Yao Guan position, and then the Tian Quan position. In that moment, I had surged forward twenty yards. I then used [Blade Rush]+ a Normal attack, and instantly killed an archer. My Ancient Heavenly Tiger roared and activated [Burstfire Raid] in order to cover for me. Behind me, a group of mounted players had already locked their charges on me.

“Hmph!”

I raised my left arm and activated my [Dragon’s Hook]. “Peng!” it pierced through the cliff on the border of Moon Valley. Both person and horse had dissolved into light and dashed forward, as I was dragged forty yards. A large MISS popped up behind me. I glanced behind me and saw that eight of [Zhan Long]’s players were left behind in corpses. Later when everyone had left, they could revive.

.....

I opened up the big map and found Wan Er and Matcha’s position. I had my horse go full speed ahead, and ditched the horsemen from [Dawn].

The hot wind of the desert brushed against my face. I said into the team chat, “Li Mu, Wang Jian, Ah Lei, have they left yet?”

Li Mu replied, “Nope. We’re waiting for them as spirits. They’re guarding our corpses. Looks like we won’t be able to help you guys in the future. Good luck!”

I then asked, “How’s Matcha’s side?”

Matcha quickly responded, “We’re moving forward. Boss, how about you?”

“I’ll catch up to you guys soon. Don’t wait for me.”

“Yes sir!”

.....

Very soon, I suddenly heard a bell right through the sky. As a Tian Ling City player, I soon got word of the country weapon that was in Ba Huang City—

“Ding!”

System Notification: the player “Emperor Dragon” has successfully obtained the Chinese Server Country Weapon [Zhen Yue Knife]. In the next ten hours, any player carrying this Zhen Yue Knife is not allowed to enter a city or log off. Death and logging off will result in losing the country weapon. Within these ten hours, if the country weapon is equipped or traded, the player’s position will be reported. The Emperor Dragon is located at [Holy Bone Pagoda] (Seventh Floor 277, 202)!

.....

“D\*mm\*t....”

Li Mu couldn’t help but smile and say, “The Chinese Server Country Weapon has such an impressive name. Zhen Yue Blade. He he, but how did a second tier trash like Emperor Dragon take it?”

Dancing Forest explained, “That’s simple. There are no constants in battle. Unfortunately, that has allowed emperor Dragon to pick up that Zhen Yue Sword from the BOSS. But, I know that he won’t be able to keep it for long.”

“Zhen Yue Sword... “

I grunted, “It’s an attack type Country Battle. That’s way more worth it than this British Server’s Country Weapon. I hope that we can keep it. At least within the Chinese Server.”

“Yep!” Wan Er added, “Jian Feng Han and Ye Lai are both within Ba Huang City. They most likely won’t let the Zhen Yue Sword fall into someone else’s hands?”

Before I could even respond, there was another notification. Emperor Dragon had been killed and the second to hold it was the beautiful guildmaster Gong Zi Yin of Moonlit Lake. Gong Zi Ying wasn’t able to hold it for longer than a minute. It traded hands again, to the beautiful knight “Wild Beauty”. Wild Beauty and Wild Swan were both the vice guildmasters of [Appearance Alliance]. They were both valuable generals under Mu Xuan. Looks like this time Mu Xuan is the one acting.

Very soon, Wild beauty had died as well and the Zhen Yue Sword fell. Finally, a somewhat powerful player had picked it up——Xuan Yuan Feng, the rumored

number one knight of [Legend]. During the Hero's Wings tournament we had also witnessed the stamina of Xuan Yuan Feng. There wasn't much to worry about with him carrying it.

However, I was too idealistic. The moment that Xuan Yuan Feng crossed Mount Zi Wu, he was suddenly ambushed and the Zhen Yue Blade had once again exchanged hands——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Players please take note, the country weapon [Zhen Yue Blade] has been taken by the player “KING\_MYRA” (Port City). His position is Mount Zi Wu (1274, 9273). Kill the player within the next 9 hours and 41 minutes and you will obtain the [Zhen Yue Blade]. Good luck!

.....

“F\*ck....” I gripped my fist and said, “It's someone from Port City? How did someone from Port City manage to get into Ba Huang City.... Who's that MYRA?”

Qing Qian fell silent and said, “Brother Xiao Yao, do you really not know who MYRa is?”

“No...Before when I was serving in the army I knew the Girls Generation, but other than that I don't know much about the famous players from Korea....”

“This idiot...”

Wan Er cleared her throat and said, “She's like a god in Korea. During Korea's [Conquest], the core players had all become KINGS. One them, KING\_MYRA was a vice team leader. She's an assassin type player and is known as the queen of assassins in the Korean Servers. She has a lot of fans in China alone. If you don't believe me, just ask Wang Jian and the rest....”

Wang Jian was lost in thought as he smiled, “Before I did like MYRA a lot, she was really strong and pretty....”

Star Blade asked, “And now?”

Wang Jian laughed, “Now, well now I only like you...”

Star Blade grinned, “Smart move!”

I was speechless.

Old K then interjected, “How can we let a Korean player take our Chinese Server weapon. D\*mm\*t, I won’t take this sitting down. Let’s, let’s go back to the city and kill that MYRA and take back our Zhen Yue Blade!”

Wan Er then said, “Then what do we do about the Lion King Shield? Don’t forget, that’s also a country weapon...”

Old K was speechless.

I calmed them down and said, “There’s no need to go back. Our mission is to protect the Lion King Shield. As for the Zhen Yue Blade, believe in the strength of Fang Ge Que and Q-Sword. I believe that they won’t let us down. They must be returning to the city and chasing after MYRA right now. She’s an assassin, but her movement speed doesn’t match that of a horse rider.

Li Mu nodded, “Guildmaster you’re right. We must believe in [Legend] and [Hero’s Mound].”

.....

After a few minutes, MYRA had already taken the Zhen Yue Sword to the Bridge of Fate. We couldn’t help but start having doubts. What the f\*ck is this girl doing? The Bridge of Fate isn’t in the direction of Port City?!

Qing Qian clenched her teeth, “Smart. Looks like this MYRA is planning on using the desert map to escape the chase from the Chinese server players. That’s smart.”

Wan Er’s beautiful eyes lit up, “Maybe, there are reinforcements within the desert. This time, the country battles are near and there have already been quite a few foreign players within our borders. This is the precursor....”

I replied, “Quick, check out the situation in Tian Ling City. Go and see what Fang Ge Que, Enchanted Painting and Ye Lai are doing. How could they let MYRA, an assassin take the Zhen Yue Blade? Aren’t our players at the Bridge of Fate? Hurry up and let the players in the Blood Demon Forest know that we must keep the blade!”

Li Mu nodded, “Understood. I’ll have Chen Yong take care of that!”

“Ok!”

.....

Unexpectedly, around ten minutes later, we suddenly heard One Second Hero’s voice——

“D\*mm\*t! I’m pissed. They actually won’t let [Zhan Long] anywhere near that Zhen Yue Sword!”

I was stunned, “Who won’t?”

One Second Hero replied, “The people chasing after MYRA!”

“Just who?!”

“Knights Templar, Valley of Gods, Wrath of Hero’s and that vice commander, Rumor. They said that they’ll go and do it themselves. D\*mmit, those b\*st\*rds, are they just going to let MYRA take off with our weapon!?” One Second Hero was so angry his voice choked.

.....

I pondered for a few seconds and said, “Yong Jie, immediately lead some Steel Blade Warriors after MYRa. If Rumor tries to stop you, just kill him. We must keep the Zhen Yue Sword within the Chinese Server. Otherwise, I’m holding you responsible!”

One Second Hero stiffened and grunted, “Yes sir!”

# Chapter 740 - Frost Forest

In the middle of the night, the harsh sands made it hard for us to keep our eyes open. I urged my Flying Scythe War Horse forward. I pulled over my hood to cover my eyes and said, “What’s going on in the back?”

Matcha raised her Lion King Shield and said, “We’ve sent out around twenty assassins to scout out the area around us. We haven’t found any Moon City players as of yet, but I know that Hand of Waterloo wasn’t going to give up easily. They’ll get here sooner or later.”

”

I nodded, “Let’s continue advancing at the same pace. As long as we can reach the Blood Demon Forest in the Chinese Server, then this Shield of the Lion King will become a national treasure of the Chinese Sarver.”

“Yup!”

“Is there any news fro Li Mu and Wang Jian?”

“They’ve both revived and are rushing over right now. They’ll reach here in thirty minutes.”

“Yes, that sounds good!”

Right at that moment, we heard the voice of the One Second Hero over the guild chat, “Enchanted Painting is bringing a troop of [Legend]’s Earth Bane Horsemen to attack MYRA up front. They should be able to get it! After MYRA activated [Absolue Step], her movement speed accelerated, and was even faster than our own Steel Blade Horsemen. Guildmaster, once MYRA is killed by [Legend], should we try and fight for that weapon?”

I furrowed my brow, “What does everyone else think?”

Li mu chuckled, “A treasure belongs with the deserving, as long as we fight hard enough, then getting that Zhen Yue Blade wouldn’t be anything hard. Xiao Yao, what do you think?”

Wang Jian then said, “That depends on what type of path Brother Xiao Yao

wants [Zhan Long] to walk. The path of the virtuous, or the path of the tyrant?"

Wan Er smiled, "I think that based on his personality, he'll pick the first option."

I smiled, "Alright... let's look at the situation. If [Legend], [Hero's Mound], [Prague], and [Judgement] all want the Zhen Yue Blade. Then we shouldn't go and fight for it. If the Zhen Yue Blade is in their hands, then it will only add to the strength of the country. However, if Rumor and the others get that Zhen Yue Blade, then we must fight for it."

Old K gripped his fist and said, "Little Li, you need to think about this very carefully. If [Zhan Long] gets that Zhen Yue Blade, do you think that Fang Ge Que and Q-Sword will watch as we slowly climb our way up? I think, that's a little soft hearted...."

I refuted and said, "Yes, if I order the thousands of troops under [Zhan Long]'s disposal to fight to the death against [Hero's Mound] and [Legend] for the sake of one Zhen Yue Blade, then what difference exists between Jian Feng Han, Q-Sword, and I? Even though that Zhen Yue Blade is a country weapon and is a rare blade, what about it. My greatest weapon is the thirty thousand brothers of [Zhan Long]. But, once we pit ourselves against [Legend], and [Hero's Mound], then I'm afraid that every [Zhan Long] brother will lose a level and several pieces of equipment."

Dancing Forest smiled and said in the guild chat, "May I say something?"

Li Mu replied, "Go ahead."

Dancing Forest's warm voice rang out as she said, "Maybe, in your eyes, Li Xiao Yao is acting too merciful right now, however, that is what I think is the true look of a king. Every move Li Xiao Yao makes is for the sake of protecting [Zhan Long] and the Chinese Server. His methods are incredibly profound. It is because we have a guildmaster like this that we accept him wholeheartedly. Its because of him, that we are willing to fight with our lives for [Zhan Long]. That Zhen Yue Blade, if [Zhan Long] has it, then that would be the best scenario, but if we can't, then we don't need it. After all, it isn't much."

Li Mu stiffened and then smiled, "Yup, Little Dance is right. That Zhen Yue Blade isn't as important as we think it is. It is nothing compared to the one level



sacrifice from all of [Zhan Long]’s brothers.

.....

One Second Hero smiled and said, “Well well, aren’t you guys generous. Seeing as it's like that, how about everyone take a look at the Zhen Yue Blade’s stats. How about we discuss after we see it.”

As he said that, One Second Hero quickly copied the image of the stats for the Zhen Yue Blade into the guild chat. As the image was processing and appeared before everyone’s eyes, the entire guild chat went silent——

[Zhen Yue Blade] (Country Weapon)

Attack: 7400-9500

Strength: +270

Stamina: +265

Agility: +255

Magic: +250

Additional: Increases the user’s attack power by 120% and attack speed 70%

Additional: Ignores 40% of the target’s defense power

Additional: Grants a 50% chance of ignoring the target’s defense skills

Special: [Strength of Weapons], Decreases the weapon’s dulling speed by 70%

Special: [Unbroken Blade Slash], deals 40% splash damage to all enemies within 5 yards of the target

Special: [War Song of Zhen Yue], a battle song that awakens the heavenly soldiers. Increases the base attack of all friends within a 1000 yard radius by 4000 points. Duration: 10 minutes, Consumes: 120 Rage

Special Attribute: Heavy Armor Players

Special Attribute: Country Weapon - China

Special Attribute: No level limit

.....

“So how about it?” One Second Hero chuckled, “Now do you think that it doesn’t matter if we have the Zhen Yue Blade or not?”

Li Mu’s eyes nearly rolled out of his head, “That....”

Wang Jian wiped up some droop, “What the f\*ck, it's so strong... Brother Xiao Yao, say something.”

What could I say? I gulped and said, “This Zhen Yue Blade, if we get the chance to take it, then we should try. There’s no need to be polite...”

One Second Hero added, “MYRA is about to enter the Blood Demon Forest. The brothers in Spirits of No Return Valley say that they saw a group of Korean players going over. They’re all from the King team, part of the [King Nation] guild. There looks to be around three thousand of them. They really have a lot of guts. They must’ve came here along the southern banks of the War God River and Pan Long Peak and then passed through the Forbidden Ice Plains to get here. Looks like those Koreans have long been interested in our maps.”

I clenched my teeth, “Then why are you spitting so much crap? Hurry up and attack them! Get that Zhen Yue Blade!”

One Second Hero retorted, “You think I haven’t tried? There’s too many people.... Q-Sword, Enchanted Painting, Ye Lai, Wild Beauty, and Jian Feng Hand have all brought their players to the Bridge of Fate. I even heard that quite a few people were blown away by that Killer Gale in Broken Blade Canyon, haha....”

I was a little speechless. It took all of my will to stop myself from flying back to Tian Ling City. I didn’t dare leave, however. Because, one if I leave, that would greatly decrease the protection we had on the Lion King Shield. Nope. We can’t leave. Even if it means that we can’t get that Zhen Yue Blade. At the very least we can’t let the Lion King Shield fly away as well.

.....

Within the desert, a branch of troops appeared very quickly. They were players from the British Server Moon City. There looked to be around seventy of them. For the sake of pursuing us, their battle horses had already used up all of their stamina. In the end, they were all killed by Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, and

some others. Without any losses we had killed all seventy of them. This slightly delayed our schedule but we continued to run forward. MYRA carried the Zhen Yue Blade and was dashing towards the desert. If all goes as expected, then MYRA was most likely running that way to escape for her life. And, if she's lucky, she might not even meet us. That, however is a very slight possibility.

Just as I was thinking about that, I heard a bell. Good! The Zhen Yue Blade has changed hands!

“Ding!”

System Notification: Players, please note. The country weapon [Zhen Yue Blade] has been taken by the player “Enchanted Painting” (Tian Ling City). Their current location is Blood Demon Forest (3211, 2712). If you kill this player within the next 8 hours and 57 minutes, then the player will drop [Zhen Yue Blade], good luck!

.....

Enchanted Painting really deserves the name as Little Demon's sister. In terms of skill, she's already one of the top in the Chinese Server.

However, we were only able to celebrate for three minutes before another bell rang. Enchanted Painting had died and the Zhen Yue Blade was taken by something else——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Players, please take note, the Country Weapon [Zhen Yue Blade] has been taken by the player “Cang Cheng” (Tian Ling City). Their current location is the Blood Demon Forest (3124, 2473). Kill this player within the next 8 hours and 54 minutes will drop the [Zhen Yue Blade]. Good luck!

.....

“F\*ck....”

Li Mu widened his eyes, “Cang Cheng was able to kill Enchanted Painting? What kind of joke is that?”

One Second Hero gruffly said, “D\*mmit, who knows. Cang Cheng tht b\*st\*rd suddenly brought a whole team from the [Hero's Mound: Division One]

charging into the forest from the north. The archers continuously stunned Enchanted Painting while the knights bore with the charges from the Earth Bane horsemen's attack and stole the Zhen Yue Blade. On top of that most of the players that Cang Cheng had brought with him were all Greedy Wolf Raiders!"

"Greedy Wolf Raiders?" I was stunned, "Aren't the Greedy Wolf Raiders solely owned by [Thousand Burial]? Are you saying that the honeymoon period has come again for [Thousand Burial] and [Hero's Mound]?"

Wan Er softly smiled, "That sounds about right! That's right, One Second, where is Cang Cheng taking the Zhen Yue Blade?"

One Second Hero replied, "He's running towards the west. It seems that he's planning on going into the desert."

"That idiot!"

I clenched my teeth and gripped my fist, "Does he not know that the [King Nation] guild has three thousand players waiting for them in the desert?"

Matcha said, "He knows. However, he probably doesn't want to look back. Once he does, [Legend], [Vanguard], [Hero's Mound], and [Prague] will do whatever they can to make sure that Cang Cheng doesn't keep that Zhen Yue Blade. And so, entering that desert might be his last chance to carry the zhen Yue Blade."

One Second Hero asked, "Guildmaster, I have four thousand Steel Blade Knights pursuing him now, should we continue?"

I nodded, "Do it! Go full speed ahead. If you can kill him, then kill him and get that Zhen Yue Blade. The worst scenario would be if the Koreans get a hold of that!"

One Second Hero grunted, "Understood. I'll do everything I can!"

.....

The situation was growing graver by the second. The Zhen Yue Blade was changing hands too quickly. For the sake of that precious blade, a lot of people had already sacrificed their lives. But, that was unavoidable. This country

weapon had incredible stats and its could go to any class. Meaning, as long as the user was a heavy armor type player, then they would be able to use the full might of the Zhen Yue Blade. That means, even I, as a swordsman, could use this sword without any obstacles.

The Greedy Wolf Raiders were traveling fast. In a short period of time, even Jian Feng Han and Q-Sword were starting to lose them. This only made me feel even more anxious. Zhen Yue Blade, those stats are right there. It's practically the perfect weapon for both solo and team battles. If it falls into the hands of the Korean players, then in the future battles, they'll be able to use that Zhen Yue Battle Song where all players within a thousand yards get a four thousand increase to their base attack. Who will be able to stop them within those ten minutes? I'm afraid that even our Steel Blade Horsemen would be cut to shreds.

Within the next twenty minutes, another bell sounded. Finally, Wang Ze Cheng had been killed. Plus, what had made me even more frustrated was that it had fallen into the foreigner's hands once again——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Players, please note, the country weapon [Zhen Yue Blade] has been taken by the player “Frost Forest” (Port City), they are currently located in the Desert (274288, 173263), Kill this player within the next 8 hours and 37 minutes and you will receive the [Zhen Yue Blade]. Good luck!

# Chapter 741 - Desert Chase

“What’s going on?”

I asked in the guild chat, “Where’d that Frost Forest come out from?”

One Second Hero’s voice trembled, “D\*mmit.. he’s a Japanese player!”

“Wha?!”

Li Mu roared, “We let a jap take our country weapon? Yong Jie, how useless are you?”

Yong Jie exploded then, “What the f\*ck do you think? You think I want this? Cang Cheng that motherf\*cker is ahead of us with his Greedy Wolf Raiders. Enchanted Painting, Jian Feng Han and the others are close behind. Before them are the four thousand Steel Blade Horsemen who even got the chance to get close to that Zhen Yue Blade. That Frost Forest is a swordsman that rides on a dragon type mount. When Cang Cheng’s health had dropped to critical levels, he charged forward and plundered the blade and then flew off into the sky. What was I supposed to do?!”

I quieted them down, “Stop arguing. What’s most important now is to get that Zhen Yue Blade back! Yong Jie, take the Steel Blade Horsemen and split them up into four teams of a thousand people to entrap that Frost Forest. Either way, no matter what, we must take that Zhen Yue Blade back. If the Japanese take the Chinese Country Weapon, that will be the ultimate embarrassment and we will be to blame.”

One Second Hero nodded, “Ok, understood!”

I continued, “Continuously report Frost Forest’s position. We’ll secretly enter from Moon City’s territory and outflank them. Good luck. Maybe we’ll even be able to get the Lion King Shield and the Zhen Yue Blade!”

Li Mu nodded, “Yes sir!”

Wang Jian smiled from the side and lowered his voice, “In the end, Brother Xiao Yao is still the one that can remain the most calm. Just now, Li Mu and

Yong Jie nearly panicked...”

Li Mu rubbed his nose in embarrassment and chuckled, “Caring can create confusion. I was just feeling indignant that the Zhen Yue Blade had been taken by the Japanese. Yong Jie, my apologies, I shouldn’t have acted that way towards you.”

One Second Hero, “That’s fine, just treat me to some beer later on.”

“OK ! ”

.....

Our party continued forward. With the Steel Blade Horses’ speed and stamina, we easily had an advantage over most of Moon City’s horses. Around four hours after we had left Moon City, no one was able to catch up behind us. Even Hand of Waterloo seemed to have given up on the pursuit after the Lion King Shield. When we took a good look at the situation though, he probably hadn’t actually given up. He wasn’t the type to do so. Otherwise, how else would he have been able to sit in the seat as number one in the French server.

The Lion King Shield had already been in our hands for close to five hours. We were practically counting down the minutes.

Even though we had been online for so long, nobody seemed too weary. With the excitement from two country weapons, it seemed that everyone had limitless energy.

In the blink of an eye, another hour passed. The rising sun peaked over the eastern horizon of the dusty desert. Countless figures appeared in the distance. They looked to be the Steel Blade Horsemen from our guild. There was a total of two thousand of them, lead personally by Death God’s Elegy. From a distance, that [Zhan Long] division guildmaster waved his weapon and laughed, “Guildmaster, the Lion King Shield really is with you guys!”

I nodded with a smile. I finally felt a sense of grounding in my heart. With the protection of two thousand Steel Blade Horsemen, this Lion King Shield was practically ours!

“Now what do we do?” Death God’s Elegy raised his spear and gave a command to his two thousand soldiers. He smiled, “Should we head back to

Tian Ling City, or?”

Without any hesitation, I replied, “Let’s not go back. Rumor, Jian Feng Han, and Q-Sword won’t let [Zhan Long] safely get back. Death God, lead your two thousand Horsemen to protect Matcha and continue roaming the desert. Avoid any and all grinders. If you really can’t avoid them, then kill them as fast as possible. Have the rest of the [Zhan Long] players all enter the desert. Our top priority is protecting the Lion King Shield!”

Death God’s Elegy sternly replied, “Guildmaster, don’t worry. I will not dishonor my mission!”

Qing Qian asked, “Brother Xiao Yao, then what do we do?”

I replied, “Divide out four thousand of the Steel Blade Horsemen. We’ll go after Frost Forest. We must get them to drop that Zhen Yue Blade! We must!”

Death God’s Elegy replied, “It won’t be that simple. Frost Forest holds the number one seat in the JBN Battlenet Rankings. He’s level 127 and is the guildmaster of the number one guild in Japan, [Casualty]. I heard that [Casualty] already has five thousand men in the desert. This time, they’re really planning on fighting to the death!”

“That’s just five thousand”

I turned around and looked at everyone with a smile, “Would four thousand of [Zhan Long]’s Steel Blade Horsemen really be afraid of five thousand of theirs?”

Li Mu raised his sword and laughed, “Kill them all and get that Zhen Yue Blade!”

“Yes!”

.....

We split up our teams and went on our mission. Death God’s Elegy lead two thousand Steel Blade Horsemen to protect Matcha back towards the north of the desert. Li Mu, Wan Er and I lead another three hundred Steel Blade Horsemen towards the east. We continuously collected Steel Blade Horsemen that we passed by. Our numbers were growing bigger and bigger. By the time



we met up with One Second, we already had three thousand with us. Then, with a few more of [Zhan Long]’s high level mounts, we had five thousand people total. We split up into three teams and galloped through the forest. We held a trident formation to strike at the people holding the Zhen Yue Blade.

Battle horses dashed across the sand. As I pushed forward, I asked, “Yong Jie, tell me a little more about this Frost Forest!”

One Second Hero gripped his halberd as his cloak fluttered behind him. Even though he had a slightly chubby figure, the armor in the game was able to make him look handsome and fit. He stared forward and smiled, “In the Japanese forums, it’s rumored that Frost Forest is a ‘Great Dragon Rider’, however, I’ve noticed this detail. His mount is called a Ren Dragon and is a Ghost Harvest Tier BOSS mount. It’s actually an earth dragon that has two wings on its back. It’s the lowest level flying dragon type. The highest it can fly is a hundred yards. It can’t even enter the cloud layer. If it flies for too long, it can’t even maintain 40 yards of altitude. And so, pursuing that Frost Forest isn’t impossible.”

Li Mu gripped his fist, “Alright then, that sounds easy. As long as we set up a giant net over the desert, then we should be able to catch a big fish like Frost Forest. As long as we force him to use up all of his mount’s stamina then we’ll be good!”

I nodded, “Li Mu’s idea sounds viable. Let’s do that!”

As I said that, I opened up my map and said, “[Hero’s Mound], [Legend], and [Judgement] have been pursuing him from both flanks. We’ll cut in from the west and break his escape route.”

“Yes sir!”

.....

We all dashed forward like crazy. This was collaboration of every guild in Tian Ling City. Fang Ge Que, Q-Sword, Simple, and Ye Lai had all taken the initiative and reached out to me, sharing their coordinates. This time Tian Ling City had at least thrown a million soldiers into the desert. It was mission critical that we get the Zhen Yue Blade back in time.

The five thousand Steel Blade Horsemen from [Zhan Long] raced across the

desert. Around an hour later, we suddenly saw a cloud of dust rise up before us. A large group of mounted players were charging from the north. All of them had the Port City symbol floating above their shoulders. Furthermore, you could see the Japanese flag next to their names. It was the players from [Casualty]. There looked to be around two thousand of them. This wasn't all of their main forces.

"Its part of the main forces from [Casualty]. What should we do?" Li Mu asked.

I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and chuckled, "Seeing as we're face to face, follow me and leave no mercy! Kill them all!"

"Yes sir!"

A group of Steel Blade Horsemen pulled out their weapons and laughed. Clearly, fighting Japanese players was one of the greatest excitement they could experience. On top of that, for quite a few of the five thousand Steel Blade Horsemen, this was their first time seeing Japanese players. It was easily understandable why they'd be so excited. Besides, there wasn't much more to say about the history between our countries, all there was left was to kill!

Hooves beat against the ground. [Casualty] had already noticed that some horsemen had appeared on the horizon. All of them were slightly shocked, but quickly reacted. One of the Level 125 Knights raised his spear and shouted, "The Chinese are here. Kill, Kill them all!"

It was the exact same as my command!

.....

"Shua!"

My Flying Scythe War Horse let out a long whiny as it activated a charge. My sword slightly trembled before arcing out in a [Blade Spin]. I then swept out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and let out a [Sword Tempest]+[Seven Star Fragment Slash]. My blades cut through their flesh, as blood spurted out. My Ancient Heavenly Tiger leapt out into the crowd and charged alongside me. Wan Er pushed herself up with her hand on my shoulder. "Pa!" she flew up into the sky, using her [Hermit God's Arrival] skill. She then used her [Blade of Death God]

and cut down two knights with one hit. Even as an assassin, this kind of attack power was just too OP.

Li Mu, Wang Jian and Yao Yan all urged their horses forward. In terms of ramming and strength, [Zhan Long]'s Steel Blade Horsemen were completely in the advantage. Add on to that, our [Halberd Flame] effect only gave us even more of an advantage. After one round of charges, there were at least three hundred bodies left in our tracks from the [Casualty] guild. The Steel Blade Horsemen that had been outfitted with the Black Flame set were even more courageous. The Black Flame shields hadn't even broken after the first charge.

Glancing around, the team leader knight of the [Casualty] guild's face was practically green, "Oh no, these players, they're some of the main forces of the Chinese server. Such a strong charging strength and defense power.... Immediately retreat. Our task isn't to become entangled with them here!"

.....

Old K raised his battle axe and cut right into the crowd. He whooped, "What the f\*ck, you want to leave? What kind of bullsh\*t do you think we Chinese players are, so as to let you leave our territory whenever you want?"

I nearly fell off from my horse. Let's not talk about the fact that Old K's like a battle god right now, but the fact that this dessert` isn't the Chinese server's territory either, right?

Li Mu raised his sword and shouted, "Kill! Don't let a single one of them escape!"

The Steel Blade Horsemen all charged ahead. The two thousand [Casualty] players didn't even have the strength to hold us off and were completely defenseless before the massacre that the five thousand Steel Blade Horsemen laid. After twenty minutes of fighting, two thousand bodies lie on the ground of the desert. Darling Duck and the other healers quickly revived the four hundred of our players that had died. We swept the battlefield and continued forward towards the target location.

.....

In less than thirty minutes, we met another team of players. These were from

the [Dawn] guild of Moon City. There were around 1500 of them. Hand of Waterloo had personally lead this team. That b\*st\*rd had finally caught up. However, once he saw the scale of our army, Hand of Waterloo's face had turned green, "They came so quickly! Retreat! No... immediately use your [City Return Scrolls]!"

# Chapter 742 - Millennial Dynasty

By the time we reached the area, the one thousand five hundred mounts of [Dawn] had already pulled out their [City Return Scrolls] and returned to their home city. The originally man covered desert was now left barren with only a hot breeze and the scorching sun. All of [Zhan Long]'s players were stupefied. None of us had imagined that Hand of Waterloo, the number one player in the FBN Battlenet Rankings would be so quick in his command to retreat

“Pft....”

One Second Hero chuckled, “What Number one player in the French Servers? What kind of a coward is he? He didn’t even try battle against us before heading back to the city. Looks like the day that Tian Ling City takes over Moon City is coming soon.”

Li Mu replied, “Not necessarily. I actually think that this Hand of Waterloo is rather terrifying.”

I nodded, “I agree. He understands when to retreat. He immediately understood that he couldn’t match his opponent and was able to decisively determine when to retreat. It was clean and precise. This kind of an enemy is very terrifying. If our positions were switched and it was [Dawn] who had more players than us, then without a thought, the Hand of Waterloo would not have let us leave. Looks like this time, the Moon City players have already given up on chasing after the Lion King Shield.”

Wan Er smiled as she sat in my lap, “The Lion King Shield gives protection to at least ten thousand of [Zhan Long]'s members. Even if the elites of Moon City came at us, we still wouldn’t feel any fear. Besides, [Enemies at the Gate], [Blood Contract] and [Judgement] have all sent out a group of their soldiers to grind in the desert. They can provide reinforcements for Matcha and the rest. The Lion King Shield is too far from its home city, The Moon City players can only sigh at what they once had.”

Wang Jian raised his sword and carefully examined the map. He suddenly exclaimed, “A group of people have appeared just south of us. They’re all red

dots. I don't think they are Tian Ling City's people. They're getting closer and closer to us. What should we do?"

I saw the same thing, "They seem to be coming for us. There's quite a few of them too...."

"They're here!" Li Mu roared.

I pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and shouted, "Line up and prepare for battle! Charge with me!"

The Steel Blade Horsemen all pulled out their blades. Of them, the thousand with the Black Flame Sets had a black haze surrounding their figures. Our morale was now at its peak. No matter who was coming at us, we were ready for battle!

.....

On the horizon, we saw a large mass of horsemen coming towards us. I watched from afar. Their equipment and mounts all looked pretty good, but still slightly lower than the quality of [Zhan Long]'s equipment. On top of that, they all had a Korean flag beside their IDs. It's the Korean players from Port City. There looked to be around four thousand of them. They didn't have as many players as we did. All of them had the same symbol on their shoulders. I could read it from a distance. It was the 'Millennial Dynasty' guild.

"What an uncommon guild name..." I furrowed my brow.

Wan Er grinned, "Idiot, stop teasing me...."

Li Mu smiled as well, "I just did a quick search. [Millennial Dynasty] is the number two guild on the Korean Servers. Yup, their battle power should be pretty good. Even though it may be a little weaker compared to the heroes of Tian Ling City, they were still coming after [Zhan Long]. We had just killed that many Japanese players from the [Casualty] guild. The Koreans and the Japanese shared the same city and probably have a lot of alliances. They must be coming after us."

"Yup!"

I could already analyze the situation very clearly. Standing in the front row of

[Millennial Dynasty] was a knight that went by the name of “Liang Heundeullim”. He urged his horse and dashed forward. I could see the symbol of vice guildmaster floating above his shoulder. The vice guildmaster of [Millennial Dynasty] had arrived. Even if this wasn’t their main force, it must be fairly similar to this. Not bad, this will be a good chance for [Zhan Long] to sharpen its blade once more.

I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and smiled, “Brothers, charge together and slaughter them!”

The sounds of hooves rumbled across the desert. After a few seconds, the five thousand [Zhan Long] knights assumed their [Charge] positions. The thunderous hooves shook everyone to the core. Just based on the sound, we could already tell that we overpowered our enemy.

.....

Around a hundred yards out, Liang Heundeullim suddenly raised his halberd. He stared at us with a fiery rage and shouted, “Brothers of Millennial Dynasty, Kill! That group of people ahead are ranked fifth in the Chinese guild rankings. Kill them all! Defend the honor of our Millennial Dynasty! Take revenge for the morons from [Casualty] and show those idiotic Japanese players who the real undefeatable ones are!”

I clenched my teeth and said in the team chat, “Let’s kill that moron quickly! He’s so obnoxious!”

Li Mu nodded, “I was thinking the same!”

“Haha, agreed!” Wang Jian replied with a smile.

When there was only thirty yards between us, I dealt the first blow. I had activated my special skill—— [Defeat the Dragon]!

“Shua!”

In that moment, Liang Heundeullim was dragged to my side. “Peng!” My Flying Scythe War Horse rammed into Ha Liang’s battle horse. In the end, it sent them flying backwards again. I swung out both swords as I charged towards him. Liang Heundeullim quickly raised his shield and activated his [Heavenly Shield wall]. I then followed the attacks with [Strength of a Thousand Men]+

[Combo]+five normal attacks. My strikes created sparks each time they clashed against his shield and Liang Heundeullim's health quickly dropped to 30%. Even while he had a [Heavenly Shield Wall] up, he couldn't take much more than a round of my attacks.

Wan Er leapt out from my lap. A pair of wings grew from her back as she activated her [Arrival of the Hermit God]. "Keng!" Her dagger rammed against the shield. The beautiful vice guildmaster threw a kick with her long slender legs, and cast aside his shield. She then used [Twin Blade Harmony], and pierced right into his chest!

"Gah...."

Liang Heundeullim let out a groan and was instantly killed. Wan Er remained afloat in the air. Right as my horse passed by her, she grabbed my shoulder and spun around, and sat herself behind me. She hugged my waist and smiled, "Hurry up and charge!"

.....

With Wan Er and my teamwork we had killed vice guildmaster of the [Millennial Dynasty] guild in little more than a few seconds. This had stunned the Korean players. Clearly, I had achieved the purpose of my strategy. Instantly killing Liang Heundeullim had greatly affected the morale of their army. Even though the Steel Blade Horsemen weren't afraid of these players, this strategy would minimize our losses.

In the next moment, our horses clashed. "Peng Peng Peng!" The sound of screams and bodies crashing filled our ears. Lances, swords, and blades continuously clashed. The sound of blades cutting through metal and flesh was unbelievably cruel. But it was also one of the main themes of this game. The fact that this [Millennial Dynasty] actually dared to use four thousand men against five thousand of [Zhan Long]'s was enough to show that their strength was pretty good. The moment that we clashed, we had actually lost a dozen of our Steel Blade Horsemen. However, the enemy suffered multitudes more losses than we had.

The Japanese guild [Casualty] had taken a great loss due to us. The Koreans must have thought that we had won using our advantage in numbers. They are



probably thinking that [Zhan Long] is just ranked fifth in the country servers, and logically speaking, shouldn't be very strong. And so, the Koreans decided that if they used similar numbers against us, and they won, then they would have a greater say in matters at Port City, and even if they had lost, they would at least be of the same position as the Japanese.

Unfortunately for them, Liang Heundeullim had miscalculated. Due to the lag on his reports, the information he has on [Zhan Long] was only limited to the guild rankings, but those were only the last round of decisions. These past two months, [Zhan Long] has made leaps and bounds in its growth. Whether it's in numbers or in battle power, we've made incredible process. The rankings were still being calculated, but [Zhan Long] must have advanced to the top three guilds.

.....

As we were in the midst of the charge, I suddenly heard a notification. It had come from the beautiful vice guildmaster of [Vanguard], Simple, "Xiao Yao, is [Zhan Long] fighting against the Korean guild [Millennial Dynasty]?"

I was stunned, "Yea, we just went against them. What's up?"

Simple asked, "How many of them are there?"

"Around five thousand, why?" I asked.

Simple anxiously replied, "This [Millennial Dynasty] is really arrogant. Around half an hour ago, they'd already destroyed several of the guilds in the Chinese Server. Of them, there was a team of two thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders from [Thousand Burial]. Also, they had destroyed a thousand seven hundred from [Epic]. One of our five hundred man teams was also annihilated. On top of that, I heard that small teams from [Legend] and [Judgement] were also defeated by them."

I was stunned, "This group of trash doesn't look that strong, right?"

Simple smiled, "You're leading the [Zhan Long] Steel Blade Horsemen right? I'm afraid that the only people in Tian Ling City that can say the Koreans aren't that strong might be you guys. When they entered the desert, there was around eight thousand of them. After killing around ten thousand of the

Chinese guilds, they only have five thousand left. That's right, how many Steel Blade horsemen are you bringing to this battle?"

Without thinking, I replied, "Four thousand. On top of that there are some other mounted players, bringing the total to around 5500."

Simple smiled, "Then I don't have to worry any more. Kill! Teach those Koreans a lesson to never think about leaving their Port City again. They didn't even bring any healers. The distance between the graveyard and the desert map is incredibly far. They won't be able to revive in a short amount of time. Every one that you kill means one less of them! Tell me what your coordinates are. I'll have the nearby [Vanguard] teams assist!"

I replied, "No need. You guys focus on centralizing your forces. [Zhan Long] has around five thousand here and we've brought a hundred healers with us. Even if we die, we can revive them. Let [Legend], [Judgement], and [Appearance Alliance] be more careful. There has to be at least two million players in this desert. I think that the Indian players from Flame Cloud City have also heard the news and made their way here. There's only a few hours of travel between here and Flame Cloud City. If they found out that the Chinese Server has a Country Weapon Blade, they won't be able to sit still on the sidelines."

Simple replied, "Understood. Good luck!"

"Thanks!"

.....

I looked up. After the millionth time I raised my bloody sword, I had cut down another one of their swordsman from his horse. I urged my mount to continuously charge. Wan Er had already left my horse and was now dashing through the crowds with her dagger raised. The light that reflected off of the blade was incredibly terrifying and bloodthirsty. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Yao Yan, Old K, and Meng Yao had all cut into the enemy lines, not letting up on their fierce attacks. Faced against this group of terrifyingly strong [Zhan Long] players, [Millennial Dynasty] could only try their hardest to deal damage. However their attacks weren't enough. Each time, their lines were broken by our charge and thrown into chaos.

# Chapter 743 - Caught off Guard

Around thirty minutes of fighting later, the battle finished. We could no longer see the red Korean names on the map. On the other hand, several of [Zhan Long]'s Steel Blade Horsemen had forgotten to use their Pardon Cards, and had themselves turned into red names. Four thousand [Millennial Dynasty] players' were now corpses, and lay on the ground. After they had been defeated, there wasn't any chance to escape. The Steel Blade Horsemen moved faster than all of them. Even if they had tried, they wouldn't have been able to escape.

.....

Everyone quickly swept the battlefield. I then picked up my sword and examined our losses. Yao Yan lead her horse over and said, "We've lost 1200+ people. That [Millennial Dynasty]'s battle power is rather significant."

I nodded, "I ordered the healers to hurry up and revive everyone. Let's leave soon and continue south. Let's go and stop his escape route."

"Yes sir!"

The light from revival spells being cast flew up into the air. This skill was special to the Chinese Server Healers. In the west, this belonged to the Clergy class and was called [Resurrection]. Each had different characteristics, however the basic idea was the same. The hundreds of millions of skills in the game were all unique in their own way.

.....

Time passed by quickly. By the time we finished some more teams from foreign servers, Frost Forest had already roamed the Great Desert with the Zhen Yue Blade for four hours. There was still five hours left before that blade becomes his. Once it had passed the original ten hours that the system had set, then he would be able to return to his city and enter the Safe Zone. At that point, I'm afraid the Zhen Yue Blade will no longer be fated to return to the Chinese Server.

I was feeling a bit anxious. Li Mu and Wang Jian were even more so. As we ran through the desert, we were constantly running towards Frost Forest's coordinates.

"We're almost there!"

With the hot wind against his face, Wang Jian pointed, "Based on the last published coordinates of the Zhen Yue Blade, Frost Forest will appear here!"

I swept out my blade, "Spread out the formation!"

Five thousand of [Zhan Long]'s horsemen all spread out, creating an enormous net. This way, as long as Frost Forest entered the net, he won't be able to escape no matter what.

On top of that, Frost Forest will definitely recognize the [Zhan Long]'s insignia. After all, he was [Casualty]'s guildmaster. [Casualty] had suffered an enormous defeat to [Zhan Long] and as a result had two thousand bodies lying in the desert!

The sand rose in the wind as [Zhan Long] spread out its formation. The scene was a weird phenomena. If Frost Forest could see it, she'd probably jump in surprise.

.....

"Di!"

I received a message from the guildmaster of [Judgement], Ye Lai, "Xiao Yao, are you guys going after Frost Forest? Spread out your lines, don't concentrate in one area, otherwise you'll never be able to catch up. I brought seven hundred of my Frost Forest Rams to chase after him, but I only managed to see his back. As long as [Zhan Long] can stop him, then in less than half a minute, I'll be able to kill him from behind!"

My heart rate started to spike and I smiled as I replied, "OK, understood. Goodluck!"

.....

The Zhen Yue Blade refreshed its location every three minutes. However, three minutes on horseback was a rather long distance. That was what worried

me the most. There was no way to estimate just where that Frost Forest was going to appear. He was the number one player in the Japanese server, reasonably speaking, he shouldn't be idiotic enough to go in a straight line. If that were so, then he wouldn't have escaped pursuit for the past four hours.

"He's here! Right there!" Wang Jian suddenly shouted into the team chat.

I quickly looked in the direction he was pointing at. Just as expected, a figure flashed past in the air. It was running right towards the right wing of the Steel Blade Horsemen. I, coincidentally, was on the right flank. D\*mn, this was the perfect place to stand!

"Throw a net and trap him!" I shouted.

Wang Jian took a team of horsemen as they charged over. In the distance, they immediately activated their [Charge]s. That Frost Forest looked to be young man around twenty five years old. He had a long and thin face. His gaze was strong and determined. I could tell at a glance that he wasn't any ordinary person. He was mounted atop an obsidian dragon. He held a chain in one hand. He suddenly lifted the reins and laughed, "The morons of [Zhan Long]!"

"Grrrr....."

The dragon let out a cry and flew up into the air, around forty yards above the ground. In the end, he had dodged all of the [Charge]es from Wang Jian and the others. In a rage, Wang Jian swung his sword and shouted, "[Flying Sword]s bring him down!"

The Steel Blade Horsemen all threw out their swords. The attacks flew about. [Flying Sword] has an attack range of 15 yards, and would never have been able to reach the dragon's position. On the ground, Dancing Forest jumped up from the back of Li Mu's horse and pulled on her bow. "Shua!" She shot a [Meteor Shot] at the dragon. This was an aimed attack.

Frost Forest tugged on his reins and flew in a jagged path, dodging Dancing Forest's [Meteor Shot]. All we could do was watch as he flashed past over our heads!

I was too far from him, around three hundred yards. I used [Haste] and [Seven Star Teleportation] together but I was still unable to catch up. All I could do was

watch as Frost Forest flew forty yards above us. On top of that, the dragon flew 1.5 times faster than the Steel Blade Horses. No matter what, we couldn't catch up.

"Keep chasing!" I shouted my command. Even if we couldn't catch up, we still couldn't give up.

Wang Jian clenched his teeth, "What the f\*ck is up with this, there's actually flying type mounts? That's too shameless. If that's the case, isn't the Zhen Yue Blade going to go to the Japanese?"

Dancing Forest squinted, "Not necessarily. Don't panic just yet. Let's keep chasing after him. The dragon's normal altitude is twenty yards. He's now flying at 40 yards, which is pushing the stamina of his mount. As long as we can force him to keep it up, then the moment that he uses up his mount's stamina is the moment that he's gonna have to face his execution."

Li Mu nodded as he ran, "That's right. We'll chase him at full speed. We cannot let Frost Forest get even a chance to breathe!"

.....

We continued our pursuit. In the distance, I could see Ye Lai split up his team of [Judgement] players. After a few minutes, I could even see Enchanted Painting and Q-Sword. At least half of the famous ranked players on the CBN Battlenet was here, chasing after Frost Forest. This number one Japanese player is getting a lot of respect right now.

Of course, everything was for the sake of the Zhen Yue Blade. Otherwise, nobody would chase a shorty like him.

.....

In the blink of an eye, three hours had passed. There was only two hours left before the Zhen Yue Blade completely slipped out of our hands. There was only one hour left before the Lion King Shield was ours. The shield itself was still in the possession of Matcha and had around twenty thousand [Zhan Long] players protecting it. [Judgement], [Enemies at the Gate] and other fellow allies had all sent players to protect it. It was on the scale of around fifty thousand elite players. The Lion King Shield was held tightly in [Zhan Long]'s hands. The only

variable in the equation was now the Zhen Yue Blade.

“Shua!”

I brought up the map for the desert and looked at it in frustration. Frost Forest had already took us around three full circles around the center of the desert map and he’s still not a bit tired. Motehrf\*cker that b\*st\*rd is too cruel.

The dragon’s flight speed was incredibly fast. No matter how I tried, I couldn’t catch up. That dragon could fly to an altitude of forty yards, a range that most player attacks couldn’t reach, other than my [Dragon’s Hook], [Grip of Purgatory] and [Defeat the Dragon] effects. Otherwise, there was no way we could keep him in one place. And yet, every time, I’m not anywhere in the dragon’s flight path. In addition, Frost Forest’s information was pretty up to date. It seems that each time he was purposely trying to avoid me. That man was like a pile of muddy sand, and I couldn’t hold onto it no matter how I tried.

I watched as we continuously circled the desert. I suddenly had an idea come to me. I looked down at Wan Er and said, “Wan Er, go onto Yao Yan’s horse. I’m going to leave the line!”

Wan Er was stunned, “Pig, what are you doing, leaving the line....”

I replied, “If I don’t leave the line, then I’m afraid that the Zhen Yue Blade will never fall into the hands of the Chinese server. Motherf\*cker, even if the Koreans or the French take the blade, I will at least endure that. But it just cannot be the Japanese.”

Wan Er blinked a few times and smiled, “Alright, I understand. Good luck!”

“Yup!”

Wan Er leapt over to Yao Yan’s side. She hugged Yao Yan’s thin waist while I bid farewell to Li Mu, Wang Jian and the others and charged out on my own and summoned my Ancient Heavenly Tiger.

.....

I looked at the map and urged my horse forward. Around twenty minutes later, I reached no man’s land. I couldn’t see a single figure in the map. However, this was the exact place that Frost Forest had been taking the Tian

Ling City players in circles. Even though there wasn't a hundred percent chance that they were going to pass through here, but this was the conclusion that I came to after the three circles that he had taken us in. Each time, he ran a larger circumference, around 300 meters wider. Based off of this, he should appear here!

I leapt off my horse and put it away into my mount space. Afterwards, I raised my two swords and dug a hole into the ground and hid myself in the sand. The pit was around a meter deep, leaving only a small space for me to breathe. This way, if you were looking from above, there looked as though nobody was here.

The sand was burning hot from cooking under the sun. I was starting to drip sweat from all of the heat. I felt as though thousands of ants were crawling on my body. However, for the sake of this Zhen Yue Blade, I continued hiding.

After a few minutes, I heard the sounds of hooves pounding in the distance. Countless Horsemen were running towards us. There seemed to be people who had ran right over me and didn't notice. However these people weren't Frost Forest, because their names were green. They were most likely the players from [Judgement], and [Legend]. Frost Forest was riding his dragon and his spot looked 50% larger than that of other players.

I continued waiting. Around fifty minutes later, the Steel Blade Horsemen were less than ten minutes away. I felt my heart tighten. It was now! A red dot flashed past on the map. It was larger than the normal players and it was red. It was Frost Forest, no doubt about it!

I could feel my heart in my throat. I nearly forgot how to breathe. The dragon had flown exactly as I had predicted. It was around a hundred meters away, but that was enough. Frost Forest that b\*st\*rd saw me every time he turned and every time he would be over two hundred yards away from me. This time he was close enough!

.....

Right as the dragon flew over me, I suddenly leapt out of the sand. I looked up and saw the dragon's figure flash right over the sun. My body began to heat up and my dragon power rose. I activated my special skill—[Dragon Transformation]!



In a flash, I had obtained the ability to fly and I stepped into the air. I activated my [Haste] and quickly flew at the dragon. I raised my hand and activated [Seven Star Teleportation] in the air. This time I jumped right into it, flashing forward. Frost Forest looked back and saw me, his face filled with shock, “D\*mm\*t!”

The dragon’s speed wasn’t much higher than mine when I was using the [Dragon Transformation]. I raised my hand and activated [Dragon’s Hook]!

“Pu”!

The Dragon’s Hook pierced right through the chest of the dragon. I pulled backward and the dragon wailed, and rammed right into me. In that moment, I activated[ Combo]+[Strength of a Thousand Men] and let loose onto the dragon’s abdomen. In that moment, Frost Forest’s health had dropped to critical. As he was flying, he had no way to defend against my attacks and quickly pulled on his dragon’s reigns.

I grabbed onto the dragon’s leg, and made him flip. I then threw several cuts with my right blade, and drew more dragon blood!

“Son of a b\*tch!”

Frost Forest roared. His health was close to disappearing. He activated a special skill, and let a golden light wrap around his body. It lasted for fifteen seconds where he wouldn’t receive any damage. He had also cancelled the [Battle Dragon] effect. He raised his Zhen Yue Blade and let a[Combo]+[Combo]+normal attack.

I hadn’t completely expected the force and didn’t realize that I wouldn’t be able to hold against the attacks of the Zhen Yue Blade. I shuddered and grabbed my arm, activating my own invincible special skill that lasted for 25 seconds!

Frost Forest quickly drowned a health potion. “Peng!” he fell to the ground with me. I grabbed onto him. “Peng!” my knee smashed into his stomach. Even though this didn’t technically deal any damage, it was enough to deal some pain. Frost Forest went after me with the Zhen Yue Blade raised and, jammed it deeply into my shoulder. However, with my Invincible body effect, he wouldn’t be able to kill me.

In the next fifteen seconds, I raised my hand. Frost Forest was already trying to retreat. However, when he looked up, he saw a fierce attack coming right at him from above. Both of my blades had cut into his body. With my Dragon Transformation, my attack was too strong for him. All he had was the strength of the Zhen Yue Blade, but still couldn't block my attack. He fell to his knees and died!

“PA!”

I raised my left hand and grabbed the hilt of the blade!

The Zhen Yue Blade was mine!

.....

I summoned my Flying Scythe Horse and ran. In ten minutes, it was mine!

# Chapter 744 - The Treasure Blade is Mine!

“Whinny”

The moment a hundred or so Korean Port City players appeared before us, my Flying Scythe Horse immediately halted. It raised its hooves and reared up. I pulled the reins hard and turned my horse around. I then switched the Zhen Yue Blade into my second weapon and put away my Brilliant Flame Emperor. I looked at the Korean players and quietly smiled. They were all players with mounts. Looks like they didn't bring any archers, mages, or musketeers with them. That meant that I wouldn't have to worry about any [Lullaby]es or [Scatter Shot]es. Yup, now's a good chance to test out the sharpness of the Zhen Yue Blade. Let's see whether or not this blade is worth the pursuit of players from across the world for ten hours.

.....

I heard Li Mu's laugh in the guild chat, “He he he... good job. Guildmaster really got the Zhen Yue Blade! Motherf\*cker, I knew it. No matter how strong that Frost Forest is, he isn't on par with Li Xiao Yao!”

Wolf whooped, “Brother Xiao Yao is incredible. The Zhen Yue Blade is now [Zhan Long]'s! It'll be ours in seven minutes!”

Wan Er grinned contentedly, “He he, this is great.... Matcha has the Shield of the Lion King and now Pig has the Zhen Yue Blade. This time [Zhan Long]'s expedition into the desert has really come to a great end!”

Qing Qian replied, “Brother Xiao Yao, did a lot of Korean players appear in front of you?”

I nodded, “Yup. I'm planning on taking the Zhen Yue Blade and trying it out against them. I want to see if this blade is really as amazing as the legends say it is!”

Qing Qian was a little speechless, “Alright then... Brother Xiao Yao, be careful. Li Mu is bringing two thousand Steel Blade Horsemen over right now. He'll reach you in three minutes. You have to hold out for the next three minutes!”

I laughed, “Don’t worry, I’ll be careful!”

.....

I glanced at my stats again. After I equipped the Zhen Yue Blade my base attack had reached 17000. On top of that, my defense was now 10173. With my 20% [Drain] effect, and the strength of my Zhen Yue Blade and the Dragon Reservoir Sword, this group of Korean players was nothing. Besides, they were all between Level 110-120. At most they were second rate among the Korean guilds.

In the distance, a Level 120 Knight dashed right at me in a straight line. He cheered, “Look! That’s Xiao Yao Zi Zai. The Xiao Yao Zi Zai that took the Zhen Yue Blade from Frost Forest! There’s still seven minutes left. If we kill him in the next seven minutes we can get the Chinese country weapon——Zhen Yue Blade!”

“Kill!”

A group of Korean frontliners all slapped their horses and charged at me. I didn’t hesitate either and charged forward on my mount. I activated [Wall of dou Qi] and [Frost Armor] and summoned my Ancient Heavenly Tiger to help. I then raised my Zhen Yue Blade before my chest while my Dragon Reservoir Sword was unsheathed and steady at my side. Even though I usually used sword type weapons, I still understood the concept of using all kinds of blades. After all, in real life, when I was younger and training under the old geezer, I had to learn everything from knives and spears to swords. I was a master in eighteen different weapon styles. Plus, knowing the characteristics of different weapons in real life did help in the game.

The moment that our horses clashed, I raised my Dragon Reservoir Sword and threw a [Seven Star Fragment Slash] into the crowd. At the same time, I swung my Zhen Yue Blade. One of the knights raised his shield to parry the attack, only to have his defense completely shattered by my attack power. “Ka Cha”. The shield broke in half under the immense force, and it immediately lost all of its effects. I then stabbed my sword forward, and brought him to his death.

“Ah Xi!” one of the swordsmen was stupefied as he watched his friend died. He probably never thought that their knights weren’t even able to hold two

attacks against me.

I laughed and activated my special skill—— [Zhen Yue Battle Song], and increased my base attack power by 4000 points. At the same time, I maintained my horse's [Charge] speed and swung my Dragon Reservoir Sword in several cuts and slashes. I raised my left arm. The Zhen Yue Blade's energy wrapped itself around me. I threw the sword out, [Blade Spin]!

“Roarr....”

The Zhen Yue Blade was incredibly sharp and slashed its way through the crowd. Terrifying numbers flew up one after another. Not only were the Koreans terrified by the number, even I was stunned by its effectiveness——

“20128 ! ”

“24231 ! ”

“22429 ! ”

.....

After I activated the [Zhen Yue Battlesong] BUFF, I was now dealing twenty thousand damage. In that one charge, I had already killed thirty people. They on the other hand were dealing a negligible amount of damage to me. The damage I received was immediately recovered by my [Drain]. I didn't even need to use any potions or my [Cleansing Rain].

This group of Korean players didn't seem to even have the mood to beg for mercy. Every one of them stared at me with wide eyes. Even though the Zhen Yue Blade was right before them, they didn't have a single chance to get it. On top of that, I gave off an imposing aura. As I gripped the Zhen Yue Blade, I looked incredibly strong and impressive. It was as though I was taunting them. The Zhen Yue Blade is right here, if you want it, come and get it!

After half a minute, one of the Korean players turned around and began to run. I could hear his voice in the wind, “He's not even human. We can't kill him! This is suicide!”

Once he left, everyone else followed behind. In the blink of an eye, around 70-80% of them were gone. I didn't even have the chance to chase after them.

There was no point however. Killing them wouldn't have given me any satisfaction.

Soon, Li Mu and Wang Jian had brought two thousand of their Steel Blade horsemen over. They lined up in orderly rows. On the other side, another group of people had come. They were players from Tian Ling City. [Thousand Burial], [Wrath of Heroes], and [Run like Flames] the three guilds had all come. There were around four thousand of them. Rumor, Not Ordinary and Liu Ying were among them.

"Motherf\*cker, what the f\*ck are [Run like Flames] and [Thousand Burial] doing here?" Li Mu raised his brow with a smile, "There's only three minutes left before the Zhen Yue Blade belongs to us. Are they throwing in one last attempt in the last minute?"

I only smiled and didn't say anything. I raised the Zhen Yue Blade and stood before the Steel Blade Knights, ready for their attack.

The [Thousand Burial]'s two thousand Greedy Wolf Raiders acted fast. In the blink of an eye, they were before us. Minimalist raised his sword with cold eyes, "F\*ck, the Zhen Yue Sword was really taken by Xiao Yao Zi zai!"

You Yi clenched his teeth, "If the Zhen Yue Blade really stays with [Zhan Long] then that would be a huge blow to us!"

Call me Master raised her elegant eyebrows and smiled, "Of course it is a blow to our strength in terms of civil war, but now that the country battle scare was drawing to a close, I don't actually think it is a blow. The Zhen Yue Blade is with China. That's not bad, at least it's better than the Japanese taking it."

Not Ordinary asked, "What do we do? There's still three minutes..."

Tyrant of Western Chu smiled, "Trying to steal it now is too late. Besides.. There are a lot of Steel Blade Horsemen there. Cang Tong, Cang Yue, Li Mu and Wang Jian are all there. It'll be hard for us to even defeat them, much less take the Zhen Yue Blade. Besides, the Zhen Yue Blade is in Xiao Yao's hands. I'm afraid that when we actually fight, we'll all be cut down by him."

.....

I laughed as I watched the scene unfold. I didn't bother to comment and just

rested the blade on my horse's back. I carefully studied the runes on the blade. On one side of the blade, there was a picture of a mountain while the other side had the image of a dragon. It looked strong and awe inspiring. Just from its cover, it did indeed look like a godly weapon. The stats within the sword were actually very similar to a godly weapon. Generally speaking, a weapon characterized as a godly weapon was fairly similar. Besides, compared to the godly weapons, a country weapon was much more renowned, only making it even more attractive.

The three minutes flew by very quickly and a system notification sounded through the desert sky——

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations [Xiao Yao Zi Zai] has successfully obtained the [Zhen Yue Blade] (Country Weapon)!

.....

Everything was set. At that moment, Ye Lai and Jian Feng Han had charged over with their players. Ye Lai was grinning widely. Jian Feng Han, on the other hand, had a rueful look. After all, we were rivals. Now that the Zhen Yue Blade was in my hands, Jian Feng Han had less than a thirty percent chance of winning against me in a solo fight. This was a truth that he could not accept.

“Congratulations, Xiao Yao!” Ye Lai urged his horse over and swung his battle axe in celebration, “The Zhen Yue Blade is now in the Chinese Server. With you in possession of the Zhen Yue Blade, then let's see who dares to act out against the Chinese Server!”

Behind Jian Feng Han, Simple leapt off her horse. She raised her staff and smiled, “Yup, congratulations guildmaster. Also, thank you for successfully keeping the Zhen Yue Blade within the Chinese server!”

Jian Feng Han furrowed his eyebrow and said, “Sister Jun, you....”

Clearly, Jian Feng Han was still hesitant about his sister Mu Rong Jun having a friendship with me. After all, [Vanguard] had officially declared war on [Zhan Long].

However, Simple looked at the big picture and didn't respond. She smiled and

noded to me. I gave a nod back.

.....

Right at that moment, Rumor walked forward with his players from [Run Like Flames]. He quickly closed in with his hand on his hilt. He looked at me and said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, thank you for obtaining the Zhen Yue Blade for our Chinese Server. This blade is a country treasure, and is the honor of our Chinese Server. Seeing as this is a treasure of the country, as a Chinese player, I believe you know what you should do with it.”

I raised my eyebrows, “And what is it that I should be doing?”

Rumor smiled, “For example, say you had found a fossil in your backyard. Should you keep that for yourself? That’s an item on par with a national treasure, so naturally, it can’t belong to any one person individually.”

I instantly understood what he was talking about and smiled, “Well well, are you to tell me to give the Zhen Yue Blade to the country storage?”

Rumor nodded, “That is about right.”

I couldn’t help but laugh at the hilarity of this situation. I glared at him and said, “This so called ‘national treasure’ must be handed over. Then let me ask, if I hand it over, just who am I handing it over to. Your bag?”

Rumor coldly smiled, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, do not be so arrogant!”

Finally, Ye Lai couldn’t resist any longer. He raised his voice, “Rumor, if you have the guts, why didn’t you try and take the Zhen Yue Blade from the Japanese? Do you even have the ability to?”

Wan Er raised her dagger and walked forward, “That Zhen Yue Blade was taken back by Pig when he put his life on the line. Just what right do you have for taking it?”

.....

“Pa!”

I threw the Zhen Yue Blade out and it landed right in the sand. It brilliantly flashed in the light. I raised my hand and pulled out my Dragon Reservoir Sword and flashed a murderous smile, “Rumor, if you want to take the Zhen Yue Blade,



then come and take it. However, you're going to have to ask my Dragon Reservoir Sword for permission first, Ha..."

## Chapter 745 - New Attack Style

The hot wind brushed past, and made the Zhen Yue Blade waver slightly. In the distance, I could see Rumor swallow hard. His eyes greedily stared at the blade. He wanted to go up and grab it, but he clearly had some hesitations. After all, even if I didn't have the Zhen Yue Blade, I had absolute confidence in the fact that I could kill him. The me without the Zhen Yue Blade could still lay waste to those [Run Like Flames] members without breaking a sweat!

.....

Every fiber in Rumor's body was telling him to get that Zhen Yue Blade. After all, it was a peerless weapon. Once he took it, he could equip it and rise to a new level, that was without doubt. Unfortunately for him, he had to go against the savage Steel Blade Horsemen. He then glanced at the fearsome glint of my sword. Even if Rumor wanted to grab it, he didn't dare to. But at the same time, he was unwilling to admit defeat. He clenched his teeth and shouted, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, what is the meaning of this. I told you to hand the Zhen Yue Blade over to the country, not because I wanted it for myself. Just what kind of a person do you take me for?"

Skeptical, I smiled back, "So you weren't? Alright then, where do you think I should take the Zhen Yue Blade if I want to hand it over?"

Rumor coldly looked at me and said, "Based on contributions, whoever has the given the greatest contribution to the country deserves that blade!"

Li Mu couldn't resist anymore and coldly laughed, "Then what will you do if our guildmaster doesn't hand the Zhen Yue Blade over? Are you going to take it by force?"

Rumor replied, "Are you saying we shouldn't? I have numerous Tian Ling City guilds supporting me. Do you really think we would be afraid of a small [Zhan Long]? Don't forget, I am the deputy commander of the Chinese Server. I have the power to use their military!"

At that moment, someone in the crowd whistled, as though ridiculing

Rumor's words.

Jian Feng Han and Q-Sword looked up at the sky, as though they weren't particularly buying his words. Only leeching guilds like Not Ordinary, Liu Yin, and Lu Dong Bing would agree with that.

Right at that moment, a group of people suddenly dashed forward from the mass of soldiers. They were all riding oxen. It was [Legend]'s Earth Bane Oxen Horsemen. Enchanted Painting, Lu Chun Yang, Xuan Yuan Feng and the others were all there. Fang Ge Que sat behind Enchanted Painting. He gripped his fan and jumped off of the horse. With a [Dimensional Leap] he appeared before Rumor and I. He smiled, "I think that we need to put this Zhen Yue Blade into deeper consideration!"

"Oh, Fang Ge Que is here...."

Rumor stiffened slightly and looked over at Fang Ge Que. He immediately cut down on his threatening manner. Fang Ge Que was widely recognized as the number one player in the Chinese Server. Furthermore, he was the commander of the battle forces. In terms of both position and influence, he was far above Rumor. And so, he said, "Seeing as the commander has arrived, how about you tell us, just how should we deal with this Zhen Yue Blade?"

Fang Ge Que let out candid smile and opened up his fan. He glanced around at everyone and said, "I was able to take the commander position without much work, but at the same time I feel somewhat ashamed to not fulfill the duties of this position. Seeing as Liu Chan is asking me, then I'll give my five cents...."

He then looked over at [Zhan Long] and smiled, "It is as Liu Chan had said, this country weapon is a treasure that should be shared by the entire server, and should be given to the person that deserves it the most. And so, Xiao Yao Zi Zai should hand it over to the country storage. At the same time, this Zhen Yue Blade is a rarely seen holy weapon. Leaving it in storage would be too much of a waste. And so, I suggest that we give it to the person with the greatest contribution to the country before the country battles. Xiao Yao Zi Zai had fought with [Dawn] guild in Moon City and managed to take the Lion King Shield. He then went to the desert and fought hard against the Port City Korean

and Japanese players. Let me ask, in Tian Ling City today, who can rival these contributions? And so, I suggest that the Zhen Yue Blade go to Xiao Yao Zi Zai. After all, he fills all of the qualifications!”

Once Fang Ge Que had finished his speech, he had left everyone shocked. I finally understood why Fang Ge Que was so popular in the Chinese Server. This level of decisiveness and intelligence had to be praised!

Rumor stiffened and said, “After all of that, the Zhen Yue Blade still ended up in Li Xiao Yao’s hands...”

Not far from us, I saw Mu Xuan arrive in front of us. Her elegant long robe fluttered in the wind. She raised her staff with a smile, “Fang Ge Que’s words are both reasonable and backed by logic. Besides, he’s the commander, and holds the most power. I think that deputy commander Rumor wouldn’t ignore the grand scheme of things and disobey a command from his commander, is that right?”

Rumor felt a migraine coming. Mu Xuan had hit the nail on the head.

The guildmaster of [Appearance Alliance] smiled, “Li Xiao Yao is [Zhan Long]’s guildmaster, and is a rising star in the CBN Battlenet Rankings. Having him hold the Zhen Yue Blade is the best fit. I agree with the ultimate decision.”

Goodbye Tears raised his warblade and rubbed his bald head with a laugh, “That’s true. I think that it’s a good choice too. It is suitable that the Zhen Yue Blade go to Xiao Yao Zi Zai.”

Don’t Be Foolish pointed his spear and asked, “Doesn’t Xiao Yao Zi Zai use a sword?”

North Pole rubbed his nose, “Mind your own beeswax!”

.....

Everyone broke out into laughter. I on the other hand was feeling some gratitude. At the most critical moment, even [Vanguard] had come to support me. Even though I had planned on fighting for this Zhen Yue Blade with force, the best outcome would be if I could take the blade without fighting. Now that the country battles were upon us, I didn’t want my Steel Blade Horsemen to take any losses.

Rumor finally let out a sigh and said, “Seeing as everyone agrees, then I have nothing left to say. This Zhen Yue Blade will stay in Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s safekeeping. I hope that you can use it to guard the gates of the nation. Do not let everyone down!”

I immediately straightened up. I could tell that the time to make myself clear had come. I pulled the Zhen Yue Blade out from the sand and resolutely said, “[Zhan Long] is a guild of the Chinese Server. We will fight with all we have for the Chinese Server’s honor and territory, even if it means losing every drop of our blood, we will have no regrets!”

Rumor nodded in satisfaction and said, “Alright, everyone, this meeting is adjourned....”

Fang Ge Que had already pulled out his City Return Scroll and smiled to me, “Good luck!”

I gave him a nod back.

.....

Everyone returned to the city. Of course, there were those who loved to fight. For example, Ye Lai, Misty Clouds, Han Bei Song, Jian Feng Han, and Yan Zhao Warrior. Yan Zhao had arrived a bit late, and weren’t able to see the drama unfold. He said, “Li Xiao Yao, you just got the Zhen Yue Blade, do you not want to try it out? Let’s go, and bring your Steel Blade Horsemen. I’ll go with you to the southern section of the desert to hunt. There’s at least thirty thousand Indian Flame Cloud City players who have illegally seized that territory. Let’s go and teach them a lesson!”

I shook my head with a smile and wearily replied, “Not this time Uncle Yan Zhao. Our [Zhan Long] players have been online for 20 hours. If we keep this up, we’ll all die of weariness. Any more and everyone will just drop dead. You guys go and play. [Zhan Long] is going to return to the city and rest!”

“Yup, alright then!” Yan Zhao looked over at Ye Lai and the rest and said, “Ye Lai, do you guys want to go with [Prague] then?”

Ye Lai laughed, “With [Prague] breaking the enemy lines and [Judgement] cheering, then I’ll bring my people along!”

Yan Zhao knew that a hot blooded man like Ye Lai wouldn't be able to sit on the side. He patted his horse and laughed, "That's no problem! Bring your people and let's go. We'll go and meet those Indians!"

.....

There were fewer and fewer Chinese server players in the desert. I raised the Zhen Yue Blade and looked over at [Zhan Long]. They were still waiting on my command. However, I could see the weariness in all of their faces. Especially for the original twenty horsemen. They'd been on this game for far too long. The server had suddenly spawned two country weapons, and everyone chased after them. Thankfully, [Zhan Long] was able to get both the country weapons. Now, when we walked down our path, everyone would have to make way for us.

"Alright."

I raised my Zhen Yue Blade and smiled, "Let's go back then! We'll just stay out of the action in these desert battles this time. Let's deal with everything tomorrow. Everyone's worked hard today. Time to go back!"

Everyone pulled out their City Return Scrolls. In the next moment, they appeared in the Tian Ling City. It had been a long time since we had seen our home. I quickly equipped the Zhen Yue Blade into my supporting hand. The Zhen Yue Blade's attack power was extremely high. If I use it in my [Blade Spin], then its killing power would be even stronger. On top of that, I could use it to parry attacks and break through defenses. What made me the most satisfied, was the fact that now that I had this Zhen Yue Blade, the chances of [Zhan Long] winning the championship in the Hero's Wings Cup were even higher.

Unfortunately, Matcha wasn't in our team. Otherwise, the two country weapons were enough to wet any cheeks with tears of defeat.

.....

When I arrived at the storage manager, I took out all of the Spirit Stones from my storage. Afterwards, I crushed them and successfully upgraded the Zhen Yue Blade to +7. My attack power increased along with it——

[Zhen Yue Blade+7] (Country Weapon)

Attack: 7400-9500(2590-3325

.....

I had increased its stats by 35%. That was already very successful. Once I equipped it, all of my stats had flipped. Now, it wasn't my Dragon Reservoir Sword that represented my upper limit, but rather the Zhen Yue Blade——

Xiao Yao Zi Za (Dragon Knight)

Level: 129

Attack: 15044-18875

Defense: 10173

Health: 67065

Magic: 15250

Charm:553

CBN Battlenet Ranking: 6

.....

Just what realm of strength have I reached? My attack power was now 18875. With the Dragon Reservoir Sword and the Zhen Yue Blade's double attack power, I'm afraid that just one of them was enough to cut down several dozen thousands of a top tier Tian Ling City player. On top of that, my Zhen Yue Blade had a 50% chance of completely ignoring the target's defense. Once that happens, then I would cut down at least 20,000 health. I was practically a god now.

With the increase of my attack power, my ability to survive was raised even more. Besides my 20% [Drain], my [Cleansing Rain] could heal 18875 health. That was the same as a Large potion. Furthermore, it was a potion that I could drink every seven seconds. That, along with my 67,000 health, it would be hard for me to even try and kill myself.

Standing beside the storage, I satisfactorily looked at my equipment. I swung my Zhen Yue Blade a few times. With this supporting my Dragon Reservoir Sword, I tried out a few of the moves of the Breezy Swordplay. "Shua Shua Shua" I dealt five continuous strikes. I confirmed that the Zhen Yue Blade could be used by anyone. When I swung it, it was very light, but it had a lot of force

behind it. It wasn't much different from using a sword. Using the Dragon Reservoir Sword alongside the Zhen Yue Blade in the Breezy Swordplay was extremely satisfying!

“Di!”

I received a message from Wan Er, “Stop showing off and come eat with us! There's an event tomorrow. We can't spend all of winter break laying in bed like a fish!”

“Alright....”

I was starting to feel like a salted fish after playing in the game all day.



# Chapter 746 - Media Company

When I logged off it was already late in the evening. I drank a bowl of congee, some goose soup and munched on some spring rolls. The chef's cooking was pretty good and everything tasted delicious. Wan Er and Dong Cheng however were both too tired. They quickly ate just a few bites. Wan Er smiled to me, "Alright then, now that Li Xiao Yao has the Zhen Yue Blade, he's even more like [Zhan Long]'s ace. It's time I work harder, all the way until I hit level 130!"

I exclaimed, "Shouldn't you be aiming for Level 150 so you can get your sixth advancement? Why just level 130...."

"You don't get it..."

The beautiful little miss grinned to me, "For other class players, Level 150 is the sixth advancement, but for assassins, it's actually level 130. They released the announcement in the last update. Level 130 assassins now get two new skill books for grinding mobs and BOSSes in the wild."

"Oh? What skill books?" I was starting to get excited.

Wan Er was getting more excited as well as she talked about it. She pouted her lip and said, "[Unyielding Spirit], its an SS tier skill. It allows assassins to become nearly undefeatable for a period of time. Defense power and Attack power both increase exponentially. In addition, during the undefeatable period, the assassin's movement speed increases as well. I won't be much slower than a Steel Blade Horseman. Every second uses up one point of stamina. Every attack I deal increases my stamina by a point. In other words, during a chaotic battle, I can continuously keep it open, as long as I don't die."

I raised my brow, "Is it springtime for assassins?"

Dong Cheng giggled, "Of course. But, the real spring time comes from the second skill."

"Oh, there's another?"

"Yup!"

Wan Er nodded, “The second skill book is a Holy Ghost Tier 1 skill, [Concealed Spirit]. It’s a passive skill. Every time an assassin deals a critical attack, the skill will activate. This means that every time you’re hit by an assassin, you won’t be able to immediately counter the attack. Unless your ability to predict is incredibly on point, or you’re using an area attack, there’s no way you can hit us back.”

I took a deep breath and said, “Looks like it really is springtime for assassins..... That [Unyielding Spirit] is perfect for team battles, and that [Concealed Spirit] is even more omnipotent. Both the assassins survivability and killing power has been raised. Even if you go against a horseman, you wouldn’t necessarily lose. Unless..... You were completely covered by a net of firepower from archers and mages, then you would die.”

Wan Er lightly smiled, “Yup, of course it all depends on the person’s skills. But, [Zhan Long] has quite a few assassins. Qing Qian, Wei Liang, Wolf and a bunch of others. If they can all learn the [Unyielding Spirit] and [Concealed Spirit], then it’ll increase our overall strength quite a bit.”

“A Holy Ghost Level 1 Tier Skill, it shouldn’t be that easy to get right?”

“So, I need to take more quests and kill higher level BOSSes! I’m gonna need you and your Zhen Yue Blade to help me out....”

“Yes yes, will do.”

“Finish eating soon. I’m going to sleep!”

.....

That night, I slept all the way until two o’clock in the afternoon the next day. Unexpectedly, Lin Tian Nan came to visit before lunch. Even though Wan Er, Dong Cheng and I were all caught off guard, we still let him stay for lunch.

As number one in the Tian Jin Corp., Lin Tian Nan’s social status was already in the billion dollar range. But, the sight of him holding a bowl of rice was very similar to a father.

“Wan Er, how have you been lately? Is everything going smoothly in the game?” Lin Tian Nan asked.

Wan Er smiled, “Yup. Everything in the game is going smoothly. We went to the British server and snatched a godly weapon. On top of that, we were also able to snatch the godly weapon in the Chinese Servers.”

Lin Tian Nan smiled and warmly looked at his pearl, “Well well, impressive....”

Qin Wen giggled, “Of course it is impressive. I’ve been frequenting the game forums, and heard that our Wan Er and Li Xiao Yao are both reputable key figures in [Zhan Long]!”

Lin Tian Nan choked on some rice and smiled, “Well, as long as you’re happy. But, you shouldn’t think of the game as important as real life. Qin Wen, as her older sister, you should watch over her more. How can she play so many games that she doesn’t eat or sleep. When you’re young, you don’t know how to cherish your own bodies. By the time you’re thirty, you’ll slowly learn to regret it.”

Wan Er gave a spoiled smile, “Dad, you’re worrying too much. When have I not taken care of myself!”

I didn’t say anything and ate my meal. I smiled inwardly and looked over at Lin Tian Nan. I was starting to think that with his suit and leather shoes, he looked very stylish. However, I could see some white hairs growing. He must have exhausted himself for Tian Jin Corporation, not to mention the fact that he has to spend time caring for his treasured daughter Wan Er. Parents really do have it hard. But, from the looks of it, Wan Er really is Lin Tian Nan’s only source of true happiness. He didn’t put on any airs in front of his precious daughter. Nor did he have any guard up.

.....

“That’s right.”

Lin Tian Nan looked up and his voice became stern, “I’ve already set up the internship situation for you. It’ll be in the Xiaoshan District. It’s a collaborative office set up between Tian Jin Corp and Booster Corp. I’ve already set Wan Er up as a general manager. You can learn a lot from that. It’ll be a great opportunity for your future. Li Xiao Yao, you go along with her. I’ve also set up some responsibilities for you as well.”

“Booster Corp?” Wan Er’s elegant eyebrows scrunched up and she protested, “That’s Wang Ze Cheng’s company, can I not? Hmph, Dad, I’ve already decided, I will not go. No matter what!”

Lin Tian Nan smiled, “Alright already, if you don’t want to go, then don’t. I had already predicted that much. Thankfully, I was able to call Dong Cheng’s father before this. And so, instead, I’ll be setting you guys up with an internship at a Chen Ling media company. Wan Er, you’ll still take on the role as a general manager. Dong Cheng’s company has been collaborating with Song Feng Media Company, and as a result, Shen Lin Media in charge of packaging and distributing celebrity news. I figured that young people would like that kind of work environment. Apparently, quite a few idols and superstars are all contracted talents with Song Feng Media...”

“Song Feng?” I was stunned, “Song Feng Entertainment, why does it sound so familiar”

Lin Tian Nan smiled, “Li Xiao Yao, you know it?”

“Yup.” I pondered for a moment, and explained, “I know. That’s Wei Fan’s company! Mr. Lin, you should know, Wei Fan’s business... Isn’t very clean. You’re planning on sending Wan Er to a place like that to work?”

Lin Tian Nan’s eyes appeared a little prideful as he replied, “Don’t worry Li Xiao Yao. Seeing as I dare to let Wan Er work there, then I will definitely protect her well. Besides, you’re Wan Er’s body guard. Isn’t her safety guaranteed by you?”

I was speechless.

Qin Wen smiled, “Li Xiao Yao, do not worry. Sheng Lin Media seems to all be from the Dong Cheng corporation. Just think of it as her house. Besides, once you enter the company, won’t you notice some of Uncle’s people there as well?”

I furrowed my brow and looked over at Lin Tian Nan, “I just don’t want Wan Er to face any kind of danger.”

Lin Tian Nana softly smiled and gave me a confident look.

“Then, you guys get ready. You’ll begin work tomorrow. I’m not asking too

much from you guys, just that you'll go to work every day from 9 - 12. You can do whatever you'd like in the afternoon." Lin Tian Nan said.

Dong Cheng happily smiled, "Is this what it'll be like, working alongside Wan Er and Xiao Yao...."

I was speechless.

.....

That afternoon, I logged on with Wan Er and Dong Cheng to grind levels. Using the sharpness of my Zhen Yue Blade, I managed to level up to 130 in that afternoon. Wan Er reached Level 129, and was only one level away from getting the new skills.

After we finished eating dinner, the moment I returned to my room, I heard my phone ring. It was a call from Shen Bing—

"Sister Shen Bing, what's wrong. Do you have bad news?" I asked.

Shen Bing giggled, "But of course. I called to congratulate you."

"Oh? What for?"

"He he, shouldn't I congratulate you for snatching the Zhen Yue Blade? Besides, you now have the chance to go to work with your lover Wan Er. Now you'll be together from dawn to dusk. Then, add in a little office romance. Isn't that worthy of congrats?"

I was beyond embarrassed, "D\*mn, how did you know about my internship?"

"Because, that was something that Lin Tian Nan had organized with Captain Wang!"

I exclaimed, "What? Is it their plan to run some interference in their HQ? That... Is there something wrong with Sheng Lin Media?"

Shen Bing replied, "Of course there has to be something wrong with it, we're just not sure how big of a problem it is. You've heard of Tian Jin Corporations Rune System, right?"

"Yea, what about it?"

"The Rune System has been stolen and broken through."

“What?” I shuddered and asked, “Who would dare trespass onto Jupiter’s land? They actually stole the Rune System?”

Shen Bing smiled back, “Exactly. Someone out there has really gotten gutsy and decided to break through the Rune System’s security. However, even though his skills were pretty good, he had underestimated the coding of the Tian Jin Corporation. After they broke through the Rune System’s firewall, he was locked in by Tian Jin Corp’s defense mechanism. On top of that, it’s been confirmed that the ping had come from Sheng Lin Media’s office. It happened just a month ago. HQ has already secretly sent seven others to infiltrate the office. There’s no need for you to know who. But, in the end, this mission cannot go on without you.”

I asked, “You want me to find the person responsible for breaking into the Rune System?”

“Yup.”

Shen Bing continued, “Captain Wang really is savage, putting such a dangerous mission on you. I’m starting to think that Sheng Lin Media is where Wei Fan has been hiding his trump card. The real person behind breaking into and stealing the Rune System is Wei Fan. And so, using Dong Cheng and Wan Er’s internship as a cover, we’ll have them let down their guard. That way you can move around more easily. Otherwise, if we sent you in by yourself, then they’ll immediately get rid of you.”

“Then what about Wan Er and Dong Cheng’s safety?” I clenched my teeth.

“Don’t worry, HQ and Tian Jin Corporation have all sent people.”

“That’s too dangerous. Which idiot came up with such a dangerous plan?”

“Oh, that was Captain Wang. He’s also listening in from HQ.” Shen Bing awkwardly laughed.

Another voice sounded through the phone, “Li Xiao Yao, do you have any objections to my plan?”

I shuddered, “It’s completely foolproof. Captain Wang, you really are meticulous!”

Captain Wang: “.....”

# Chapter 747 - Internship

The morning of the next day, an A4 pulled over beside the Sheng Lin Media building. When I got off, I looked up at the twelve story tall construction. It was a rather unusual architecture. It was completed rented by Sheng Lin Media. Clearly this media company has a lot of strength and influence. Of course, that was understandable. Dong Cheng Feng was not one to worry about money. In addition, with the partnership with Wei Fan's Song Feng Entertainment, renting out a building this large was not strange at all.

"Looks pretty good..."

Dong Cheng was wearing an elegant dress suit paired with a thick down petticoat. She smiled, "Let's go, we just have to report in at the front desk. Wu, our winter break has finally begun, he he!"

Wan Er smiled, "Dong Cheng, why are you so happy about this?"

Dong Cheng replied simply, "Wan Er, you don't get it. I've always been alone, ever since I was a kid. I didn't have many friends. On top of that, Bro was pretty slow. And so, winter break was always boring. I'd spent it all saying at home and playing games. This time, though, is different. There's you and Xiao Yao. So, this will not be a boring winter break."

Wan Er grinned, "Alright then. Actually, I'm the same. My winter break used to be.... Wu, I don't even want to think about it. Let's go in!"

"Ok!"

The two girls didn't seem to be that worried about the hidden dangers of working undercover at Shen Ling Media. I thought about it for a moment and wryly smiled at my trite thoughts. What comes will come, what was there to be afraid of?

Wan Er grabbed my hand and dragged me into the building. The moment we entered, we saw a female holding a stack of documents waiting for us. She was donned in office clothes. She had long hair and skinny legs with a capable look on her face. She smiled to us, "You must be Wan Er, Dong Cheng and Li Xiao



Yao, right? Hello. I am the human resource manager Li Rong. Welcome to Sheng Lin Media. The CEO has been awaiting your arrival. Follow me. Afterwards, I'll set you up with your work."

"Yes!"

Wan Er held my hand and walked towards the elevator. She looked back with a smile and then stuck her tongue out, "It's nothing, right?"

I nodded, "Yup, everything's good..."

.....

The elevator stopped at the eleventh floor. When I entered, I saw that there were only a few people in the large meeting room. Sitting outside was a woman wearing sunglasses who was fixing her make up. Dong Cheng narrowed her eyes and smiled, "Well, isn't that the supporting actress of that really famous drama? What was her name again?"

Li Rong smiled, "Liu Yao?"

"Yea, I believe so...."

In the end, Dong Cheng's voice was a little too loud. That Liu Yao looked right in our direction and took off her sunglasses. Her eyes had a prideful spirit, but she smiled courteously, "I'm not signing autographs today. I have to rush to a photoshoot soon."

Dong Cheng was stunned and smiled back, "Oh, I don't need an autograph. I'm here to intern."

Liu Yao didn't seem satisfied with the answer. Li Rong then smiled, "Liu Yao, this is Dong Cheng Yue, the daughter of the honorable CEO Dong Cheng Feng. This is Lin Wan Er, the creator of "Heart of Time". You must know her."

Liu Yao seemed to be struck by lightning. The pride in her face was completely wiped away. She stood there stunned. Whether it was Dong Cheng's identity or Wan Er's popularity, both were enough to instantly defeat a second rate actress like her. Before the two girls, she was inferior in every way. On top of that, Dong Cheng was the daughter of the CEO. With a single word from her, Liu Yao's career could drastically change.

“Is the CEO in there?” Dong Cheng asked with a smile.

Li Rong nodded, “Yup!”

As she said that, Li Rong walked up and lightly knocked on the door, “Sir, they’ve arrived.”

A voice came from inside, “Oh, let them in. Li Rong, go talk with Liu Yao and the other actors. Tell them to wait outside for a moment. I’ll talk with them about extending their contracts after this.”

“Yes sir!”

Li Rong opened the door and invited us in, “I wish you all a good time working at Sheng Lin Media~”

.....

After we entered the office, I noticed that the room was very elegantly decorated. There was a calligraphy painting hanging on the wall “Work for the People, Work for the Holy, and Receive Enlightenment” . Beside it was a Han Sword. There were carvings etched into the sheathe. There was a light directly above it, shining off of the blade. The hilt was wrapped with cloth, as though it was used frequently.

There was an enormous round table that stood within the room. A male around forty years old sat at one of the chairs. He was wearing a black overcoat and a brown scarf. His eyes were hale and hearty. He smiled in our direction, “You’ve finally arrived. You’re late by five minutes on the first day!”

Dong Cheng walked up, her eyes widened and she smiled, “Oh? Uncle Peng, why’s it you?”

The manager smiled back, “Why wouldn’t it be me? Last time I went to your house, it was to talk with your dad about this partnership. And now you see, he dumped me here in Sheng Lin Media all by myself. Now I’m the only one here to manage such a big company.”

Dong Cheng giggled, “Seeing as the manager is Uncle Peng, then its perfect! That’s right, what kind of a job do you plan on giving me? Apparently....Wan Er’s dad has already gotten in contact with you?”

General Peng nodded, "Yup. Old Tian Nan has reached out to me. Wan Er, you'll be my assistant. Your office will be right next to mine. Little Yue, you've been set up with Human Resources. You can act as a Human Resources Manager for a few days. You won't have to worry about not knowing what to do. Li Rong will be there to help. If you have any questions, go to her."

Dong Cheng happily replied, "Ok. I think I'll be fine. Uncle Peng, don't forget, I've acted as a sales manager before at my father's company...."

"Wasn't that only for three days?"

"Wu, you know too much!"

.....

Even though Manager Peng was only around forty years old, he was certainly charming man. He was able to coax the two girls into a happy mood. I was secretly admiring him. After all, that was a skill too. He must have quite a few female colleagues and friends around him. To top it off, he was the manager of a company like this, and seemed to have a good grasp of the business.

I walked up and said, "Then what about me?"

D\*mn, saying it out loud was embarrassing. What a feeling of ignored existence. Ever since I entered the room, Manager Peng didn't even give me a single glance....

General Peng gave a carefree smile, "Aha, I got caught up talking with Little Yue and Wan Er, and nearly forgot about Li Xiao Yao... don't worry, Old Tian Nan has explained it to me, you're also one of our esteemed guests. What kind of work do you want?"

I was caught off guard, "I can pick my internship? Anything on the backend is fine..."

Manager Peng laughed, "Actually, there aren't many empty positions left. There are only three. You can pick from them. We're short on some manpower in the movies and television department. Things like moving the backdrops and whatnot. We also need a photographer on the third floor. Finally, we've been lacking some manpower in the shipping department. It's mostly sending and receiving files on the eleventh floor."

I rubbed my nose, “There really are a lot of options. I won’t try the movies and television work, it's too far. As for the photography job, that isn’t one of my specialties. How about the last one then. I don’t want to be too far from Wan Er.”

Manager Peng gave a mischievous smile, “Ha ha, so it was like that. Then I’ll let human resources know. Later, Li Yuan will take you to report at your office. This will be a tiring job.”

“That’s no problem.” I patted my hands. It wasn’t like I hadn’t done hard work, this was nothing.

.....

After I left the manager’s office, I walked over to the assistant office nearby. Manager Peng had two assistants. The other one was a woman around 25 years old. She was gorgeously dressed. I could smell the flowery perfume all the way from where I was standing. On top of that, the blouse she was wearing was cut very low. Her originally small chest was practically overflowing out of her top.

Wan Er sat at one of the desks. She then grabbed my hand and smiled, “Don’t worry and go do your job. We’ll eat together for lunch!”

I nodded. While Dong Cheng and Li Rong weren’t paying attention, I leaned over and planted small kiss on Wan Er’s lips. Dong Cheng turned around and stared right at me. Li Rong hid a smile behind her hand. As for the other assistant girl, she flipped her hair and gave a flirty smile to me.

I quickly walked out. When I entered the elevator, Dong Cheng blinked a few times and smiled, “Li Rong, that other assistant looked fairly pretty. Who was she?”

“Shang Yi, she’s the assistant in the CEO’s office. Didn’t you see the sign?”

Dong Cheng bit her lip and gave an evil smile, “I heard... Wu, that Shang Yi, is her relationship with Uncle Peng...”

Li Rong smiled and lowered her voice, “Unspoken rule, do not talk about it....”

.....

Dong Cheng had a large office. Apparently, this Sheng Lin Media has seven to

eight sets and so there were a lot of different interviewing and internship type events. The human resources department was in charge of recruiting, and so naturally, there was a lot of work. Dong Cheng Yue's office was at the end of the large hall. It was a stand alone, which demonstrated how special her identity was.

I sent Dong Cheng to her office and then went to the first floor. The Receiving and Shipping office was on the first floor.

When I entered the great hall again, a couple of security guards walked over and followed me into the office. "PA!" the door shut close. I turned around with a smile, "What, you two kids want to come in too?"

The two police officers tipped their hats and smiled, "Captain Li, you saw through that too easily, haha..."

Those two were none other than members of the Guardian Team. They were all members in my team. One of them was called Liu Qin and the other was Li Tong Lin. Li Tong Lin was pretty strong. He had already broken through the Refined Body Tier and was now at the beginning stages of the Royal Air level. They had even sent him over. Looks like the Captain was putting a lot of weight into this mission. Of course, he had too. If Tian Jin Corporations little miss Lin Wan Er was put in any danger, then the entire HQ wouldn't be able to take that responsibility.

I asked, "How many others are there?"

"Seven or eight. A total of seven of our brothers are here. One of them is a brother on the tech team. He's working in the engineering team right now. Our main mission is to infiltrate the organization and find the core processor of the Rune System."

Li Tong Lin said, "Don't worry about it boss, nothing will go wrong here. Originally, Xing Lie wanted to come as well, but Captain Wang gave him another mission. Soo, haha, that kid's just going to have to envy us.

I nodded, "Leave the operations here to me then. Li Tong Lin, you take care of patrolling the eleventh floor. Best case scenario, you don't leave during work hours. We must protect Wan Er. Liu Qian, you take the fifth floor human resources department. Watch over that place, and send two people to watch

the elevators. Take note of any suspicious characters.”

Li Tong Lin nodded, “Ok. What about you boss? You must have an even more important mission right?”

I smiled and pointed at the mountain of letters and said, “Right now, my job is to send these out... you guys hurry up. Don’t let anyone see that you know me. There are some cups over there. Pour some water and pretend that you came in here to get a drink.”

“Yes sir!”

# Chapter 748 - Flame Hawk Archers

Not long after, a man with a large beard walked in. He shouted at me, “You’re that new kid right? Record all of the names on the received messages. You must send out every document here, today. Organize them all by the type of document and then send them out in the morning. Don’t get lazy, we’re not handing out charity here!”

I nodded, I didn’t even know what his name was. But, seeing as I came here to become a member of the shipping and receiving team, then I will do it with ease!

.....

That entire morning, I pushed the cart across all of the floors, as I received and sent out documents. I was also in charge of refilling the paper cups, printer paper, and ink in each of the offices. I didn’t stop for a single moment, all the way up until twelve. The brutish bearded man let me go on my break and shouted at me, “Youngster, go and get your food. I’ll give you half an hour. After that, get the f\*ck back to work!”

I nodded with a smile, “Yes sir!”

I went upstairs to the eleventh floor so that I could eat with Wan Er in the cafeteria. By the time I got there, I saw that Dong Cheng had arrived as well. And so, we all went to the seventh floor to eat. Li Rong followed along and cheerfully asked how my work was going. She then gave me a second glance and asked, “Li Xiao Yao, are you satisfied with your work? The manager of that department is pretty mean. Everyone calls him Bi Beard. His favorite thing to do is shout at people But, his character actually isn’t that bad, he’s just one of those aggressive types of people.”

I smiled and shook my head, “That’s fine, I didn’t take it to heart.”

Dong Cheng raised a brow, “What? That Bi Beard actually dares to cuss at my Brother Xiao Yao?”

Wan Er was also stunned, “He’s really cussed at you?”

“No, not at all. He was just giving me some work.” I immediately explained it all to them. But no matter how I tried, it was of no use. The two girls looked pissed.

I bought my lunch in the cafeteria and just as I was about to eat, Bi Beard suddenly walked over to my side. He was holding a tray of food. He then glared at me, “Eh? You’re eating that much? Today’s food is pretty good, there’s Yuxiang Pork and Hong Shao Fish. Hurry up and eat. When you’re done, get the f\*ck back to work!”

I nodded with a smile, “Yup, I’ll be as fast as I can.”

“Pa!” Dong Cheng slammed the table and stood up. She glared at him and shouted, “Bi Beard, who gave you the guts to bluff around him? Are you some kind of idiot, trying to piss him off like that?”

Bi Beard stiffened and then looked at the nameplate on Dong Cheng’s chest. The plaque on her chest was extremely noticeable and it was color coded cyan, to represent her manager status. Furthermore, both Dong Cheng and Wan Er had the same plaque. That was the moment Bi Beard realized that he couldn’t offend these two girls. And so, he stuttered, “You guys.... You guys are?”

Li Rong put down her chopsticks and said, “Bi Beard, these two are the new CEO assistant and Human Resources Manager. They’re both Li Xiao Yao’s friends, so, it’s best that you be more polite to Li Xiao Yao. Otherwise... I’m afraid your days as the manager of the shipping and receiving are numbered.”

Bi Beard shuddered, “Yes... I understand....”

I grinned, “There’s no need to be nervous. Hurry up and eat your meal. When I’m done, I’ll immediately head back to work. I won’t leave until I’m finished with all of the work on my hands.”

Bi Beard panicked, “No, I can do it!”

I didn’t respond and just quietly ate my food.

I sighed inwardly, having a friend up there really was nice....

Up there, hey? Why does it feel like something isn’t right?

.....



And like that, Wan Er, Dong Cheng and my winter break internship began. Wan Er and Dong Cheng's protection was left to me this time. Tang Qi that kid went back home to Sichuan. He said he was there to visit his mother. As soon as he was done there, he would take the first plane back.

But, after seven days, Tang Qi had still not returned. He had even called Dong Cheng, telling her that he had gotten together with some old pals from back home. When he was done, he would come back. Dong Cheng told him to take his time and that it'd be better if he just didn't come back at all. She even said that she was perfectly happy being with Brother Xiao Yao. Although, when she said it, she put an emphasis on the "happy", so much that I couldn't understand.

For the next seven days, there wasn't too much happening in the company to keep us busy. After all, the scouting mission from HQ didn't seem to be very successful. They couldn't even find a single hint about the whereabouts of the Rune System's core, and so naturally they wouldn't know where its defense system was being hacked from. Actually, I was already starting to suspect that there was something going on in the twelfth floor. That floor housed the greatest number of servers and software programmers and it was the place with the highest probability of being the source of the hack. Unfortunately, that floor had the highest security clearance. I didn't even get any of their documents, leaving me with no chances of going up there. Nevermind, I'll just wait for the brothers at HQ to break in. My mission was to protect the safety of the two girls and nothing else.

In those seven days, I was able to reach Level 135. I worked in the morning, and grinded levels until late in the night when I went home. My efficiency was terrifying. I managed to sweep through a number of the Tian Ling city maps. My focus continuously shifted between my internship and the game. Wan Er had also reached Level 133. However, even after she had killed several BOSSes, she still wasn't able to get the two skill books, [Unyielding Spirit] and [Concealed Spirit]. On top of that, it didn't seem like there were any other assassins in Tian Ling City that were able to get the skill books to drop. Some people were even starting to doubt that the two skill books even existed.

.....

That afternoon, I had returned from work. After I finished lunch, I relaxed on the couch.

“It's been so tiring at work these days....”

Wan Er stretched out her arm and lazily said, “I’m receiving calls nonstop in the assistant’s office. And to top it off, I have to watch the PDA from Mr. Peng and Liu Yao. It’s really uncomfortable...”

I stood up and walked behind her. I started to massage her thin shoulders and smiled, “How’s this, are you feeling better? Honey, you’ve worked hard today!”

Wan Er started to giggle from my massage, “Idiot, its ticklish and relaxing...”

Dong Cheng was holding a cup of juice and looked over at the two of us, “I predict that that hand will start moving downward and perhaps explore Wan Er’s private areas? You two should be more ashamed, after all, I’m still here....”

Wan Er and I glared at her, “Are we even being inappropriate? The one who needs to get her mind out of the gutter is you!”

Dong Cheng giggled, “Alright alright, its me. That’s right, should we go and clear the Deer Cry Cave? Our levels are high enough. Wan Er is 133, and I’m 132, while Brother Xiao Yao is 135. Grinding Level 140+ monsters should be good enough. If we don’t act fast, I’m afraid that [Legend], [Hero’s Mound] and [Prague] will take it first. So, while they haven’t found it yet, we should clear it first.”

Deer Cry Cave was a type of SSS tier map. It was discovered by Qing Qian and Wei Liang. However, the monster levels there were extremely high. Only a little after entering the cave, Wei Liang was instantly killed. And so, we decided to wait until our levels were higher before we cleared the map. Now was a pretty good time.

I nodded, “Then let’s prepare to set out. It's almost evening, how big should our team be?”

Dong Cheng replied, “A twenty man team should be enough. If we have too many, it’ll be hard to split the equipment. Besides, it’d be a waste as well. Deer Cry Cave is a small map, and isn’t suitable for large scale battles. Taking too many people wouldn’t be practical.”

I replied, “OK, then later on when we log on, you and Wan Er pick the people. Count me in too!”

“Ok!”

.....

I returned to my room and logged on!

“Shua!”

I appeared in Tian Ling City. I first took a trip to the Dragon’s Den and checked on its operations. At the moment, the Dragon’s Den’s revenue was around two million RMB per day. Of them, 30% was spent on taxes. The other 1.4 million was put into the guild treasury. My own revenue came from selling equipment at the National Beauty booth. The Dragon’s Den thus became the strongest fort for [Zhan Long].

I urged my Flying Scythe Horse towards the territory. The Dragon’s Den had already reached a Level 9 City and its production capability was incredibly good

——

Food: 50770/hour

Wood: 50000/hour

Stones: 50000/hour

.....

The growth of the city’s production per hour was increasing at a terrifying pace. Furthermore, we were fast approaching the one million unit limit on the city’s warehouse. And so, I started recruiting more NPC armies. Now it was time to get some Flame Hawk Archers. This type of archer was mounted on Flame Hawks. It was incredibly flexible in terms of battle potential and their killing power was extremely high——

Flame Hawk Archers, City Owner Stats x110%, Requirements: Goldx2000, Foodx2250, Woodx2500, Stonesx2240

.....

Our wood sources had already reached the maximum of one million units.

Without any hesitation, I immediately recruited four hundred Flame Hawk Archers. After waiting for three minutes, I heard screeches echo throughout the sky. Hawks that were wrapped in flames soared into the sky. There was a warrior dressed in red armor seated on the hawk. He carried a long flaming bow. With a hand across his chest, he greeted me, “City Lord, I am at your beck and call!”

I nodded and commanded him to stay on standby. This Flame Hawk Archer had 110% of my attack, defense, and health. It was incredibly aggressive. I had already made my decision, even if it meant leveling Dragon’s Den to Level 10, I was going to recruit five thousand of them. After all, it would require ten days of resources. If possible, I would get ten thousand of the Flame Hawk Archers. When the plan is executed, I’m afraid that their battle power will overcome even our Steel Blade Horsemen!

“Di!”

I received a message from Wan Er, “Pig, hurry up and return to the city. We’re waiting for you!”

“Yup!”

.....

I pulled out my City Return Scroll and returned to the Tian Ling City plaza. As I arrived, I saw Li Mu, Wang Jian, Wolf and the other main characters all present. There were twenty total players present. I raised my Zhen Yue Blade and arrived before everyone with a smile, “Thank you for everyone’s hard work. These days, I’ve been busy grinding levels and working. How has [Zhan Long] been developing?”

Li Mu replied, “Everything is going great, don’t worry. We now have 9700+ Steel Blade Horsemen. We’re just about to surpass ten thousand. Our battle power is incredible!”

Matcha smiled, “Don’t just report the good news and skip the bad news. Boss, let me tell you what’s happening with the other guilds. [Legend] now has over nine thousand Earth Bane Oxen, and isn’t far behind from us. [Judgement]’s Ice Battle Rams have reached seven thousand while [House of Prestige] has over five thousand of their Steel Scale Horsemen. The Seventh Tang recently found a

Flame Crystal Battle Horse in the Flame Crystal Basin. It's a Level 120 Holy Tier Mount. Currently, the [Hero's Mound] has a total of two thousand Flame Crystal Mounts. I'm sure it'll grow even greater very soon."

I nodded, "That's the best. The stronger they are, the stronger the Chinese Server is. Let's go, we're heading to the Deer Cry Cave!"

"Yes sir!"